



A Texas Ranger Hall of Fame E-Book™

INTERVIEW WITH

GLENN ELLIOTT

Texas Ranger, Retired

©2006, Robert Nieman

PROJECT:

TEXAS RANGERS

INTERVIEW CONDUCTED AT HOME OF
ROBERT NIEMAN
LONGVIEW, TEXAS
JANUARY – OCTOBER, 1995

INTERVIEWED BY:
ROBERT NIEMAN
LONGVIEW, TEXAS

Present At Interviews: Glenn Elliott & Robert Nieman

E-Book Project Staff: Robert Nieman, Volunteer; Byron A. Johnson, Christina Stopka & Judy Shofner, Texas Ranger Hall of Fame and Museum staff.



Introduction

Welcome to the E-Book Project of the Texas Ranger Hall of Fame and Museum (TRHFM). The TRHFM, located in Waco, Texas, is the State-designated Official Historical Center of the Texas Rangers. It is operated as a service of City of Waco by authorization of the Texas Department of Public Safety and the State of Texas.

The mission of this project is to provide easy access to books, oral histories dissertations, articles, and other literary works on Texas Ranger history.

Public Domain Works: Most of the works in this non-commercial library are in the public domain and may be freely enjoyed if you follow the conditions listed below.

Copyrighted Works: Some works, which are clearly noted, are under copyright. They are in this library with the express permission of the copyright holders. Please read and enjoy them, but they may ***not*** be redistributed, copied or otherwise used without the written permission of the author or copyright holder.

Conditions & Statements

1. The Adobe Acrobat™ or other file format in which this work resides may ***not*** be redistributed ***for profit***—including commercial redistribution, sales, rentals, or fees for handling, access, download etc. These works may not be modified or changed in any manner without first contacting the Texas Ranger Hall of Fame and Museum.
2. The TRHFM staff has exercised due diligence to determine that this material is in the public domain or to secure copyright permission. If you believe this work is under copyright, and you are the copyright holder, please contact us at **Texas Ranger Hall of Fame, PO Box 2570, Waco, TX 76702-2570** with proof of ownership.
3. You may link to the main page of the library, however, please do ***not*** "hot link" directly to the files or repost them.
4. The author/copyright holder credits and the registered terms **Texas Ranger Hall of Fame E-Book™** the **logo** and name **Texas Ranger Hall of Fame and Museum™** must remain intact and associated with this project file.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 1

ROBERT NIEMAN: My name is Robert Nieman. We are at the home of Robert Nieman of Longview, Texas. The purpose of this interview is to discuss the Texas Ranger's in general and the career of Ranger Glenn Elliott in particular. Ranger Elliott, do I have your permission to review, or to record this interview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes you do.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ranger Elliott you understand that this videotape will belong to you and to me, Robert Nieman?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I understand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And finally Ranger Elliott, in addition to the Texas Ranger Hall of Fame Museum in Waco, Texas do I have your permission to present copies of this tape to other various historical organizations such as museums, libraries, schools and etc.?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You do.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The purpose of this is we're going to discuss the career of Glenn Elliott in depth, his life before the Rangers and on the Highway Patrol and his military all the way to the future. This is going to be a series of tapes. This tape is being done and it's about six o'clock on January 23, 1995. We're not going to try to stay in any chronological order. We're going to let the stories develop as they are, we'll stay in order as best we can. We're going.....anyway as I was saying, some of the cases we're going to discuss we're going to go on and cite and others we'll just talk about here. We'll just take them as they come. First of all, what is your full name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Glenn Elliott. No middle name or nothing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And who was your mother and father?

GLENN ELLIOTT: My father was Dewey Lee Elliott and my mother was Edith Winchester Elliott.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And when and where were you born?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was born August 1, 1926 about 2 ½ miles south of Windom, Texas in Fannin County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In a hospital or in the home?

GLENN ELLIOTT: In a box house.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In a box house. Who was your mid-wife?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...oh the doctor, we had a doctor. Dr. Leeman was ah...lived there in Windom. He ah...he came out and delivered me and ah...my brother went to Dodd City with a neighbor, got him a ice cream cone out of the deal.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was Dr. Windom's first name, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Dr. Leeman?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or Lehmann.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no I don't remember his name....ah....his first name.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who were....do you have any brothers and sisters, in chronological order.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I have oneI have one brother ah...who's four years older than me and he's Dewey Lee Elliott, Jr.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Lives up at Betty.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...where did your family originate from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well my father's ah...people came to Texas from Mississippi, from Alcorn County, Mississippi. My dad was born in Texas, he was...he was born down in the Flag Springs

Community south of Windom, near where I was born. And ah...ah...the ah...two of his oldest bro....his oldest brother and oldest sister were born in Mississippi and the rest of the family was born after daddy came to Texas. They rode a train from Mississippi and got off at Dodd City, Texas. They had some relatives there and they settled there and that's ah....dad....my dad and Sam Rayburn went to school together.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's Representative Sam Rayburn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mr. Sam.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Mr. Sam. And ah....my mother's people came from Kentucky and ah....they were...their names were....her father's name was Winchester , Robert Winchester, and I'm not sure when they settled in Texas. I know my dad was born in 1898 so ah...they ah...his family moved to Texas sometime before that because he had a couple of sister's older than he that were born after they came to Texas, before he was of course. And ah...they've been....they've been here for some time when dad was born.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember where your grand....your grandparents names and where they may have come from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...on my mother's....on my dad's side ah....ah...I didn't know any....anything further back than his parents. And on my mother's side ah....ah....my grandmother was named DeSpain and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's capital DeSpain. And ah...they were ah...ah...she came from overseas over in Ireland somewhere. And ah...I never did know where my grandfather's family originated, I never did look into that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that on your mother's side?

GLENN ELLIOTT: On my mother's side.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what about your grandparents on your father's side?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I didn't know anything about them at all.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did your father do for a living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: My dad ah...when I was born he was farming. And he had just ah...started farming. He ah...when my brother was born he was ah...he and my uncle ran a meat market and cafe and they delivered milk and ice for ah...with a buggy there in Windom. And ah...my brother was born there in town. Ah...but...right pretty close to where the doctor lived, about three houses down from where the doctor lived and ah...of course the doctor lived in the same house all the time he was there you know and ah...but ah...dad started farming about a year before I was born, as I remember it, or started back to farming. But dad...my dad was always active and ah...with people. He...he would sell cars, he'd sell mules, he'd sell horses. He'd trade and ah...but ah...I never did ask him why he decided to go back just to farming. But we...he was farming and raising turkey and we always raised one to two hundred turkeys every year where ever we lived. And ah...he's ah...ah...he worked some for the County Commissioner ah...grading roads with mules ah...during off season and they also had a binder and he cut grain forhe'd cut our grain and then he'd cut the neighbor's grain. With that...you know the old type mule binder where they shucked the grain and ah...I know that he did a lot of this while we lived down south of town.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did he farm?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...cotton, corn, and grain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever get to pick any of the cotton?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I picked a lot of it. I...of course I didn't start picking cotton til after we movedwe lived down there until 1931 and ah...that's the year that ah...I lost my grandmother on my dad's side and she died in 1931 and dad bought....she had a farm out north of town, about a mile north of Windom. And my dad bought out his brother's and sister's and we moved to that....it was a good house over there and we moved over there. But I wasn't old enoughlet's see I was born in '26 and ah...five years old when ah....ah... but I remember you know a whole of the things that happened down there. I know that mother plowed cotton with a riding cultivator, I've...I remember that. And we'd....we'd set....my brother and I and he'd watch after me and she'd bring a pallet and put it down and ...and I'd sit on the cotton stalks and we'd sit there and play while she and daddy plowed. Same way with picking cotton. And ah...I remember I rode to town on the wagon with a couple of neighbors to the gin ah....you know where they'd take their cotton to the gin to be ah...to be ginned and ah....we would ah...ah...had two neighbors down there, one of them was later County Judge and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Choice Moore. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Choice?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Choice Moore, yeah. He ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: C H O I C E?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. He was our closest neighbor ah....south. And he lived with his mother and dad. Ah...and Oscar Moore was his daddy's name and ah...ah...well I can't remember Mrs. Moore's name. But ah...ah... then we had another neighbor that lived on west of us a little ways and ah...he...both of them I remember I rode to town with them at least once or twice and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember the neighbor's west of you names?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah....his name was Epperson ah....Demp Epperson....yeah...and ah...they'd....you know they knew that my brother and I would....we weren't oldwell my brother was....got big enough he could do a little cotton picking, but I wasn't doing much at that time, see I was age five and ah....Choice would always bring us candy. We wouldn't always go to town with them but ah....it was about two and a half, three miles I guess and with a wagon it would take a pretty good little while to go there and back you know. And there's not a whole lot of my childhood that I remember down there other than we always had dogs and I remember that we did ah....my brother and I got out on the creek and the dog killed a skunk and ah....we got all....we got the little ones and got all the smell all over us of course. And ah....we tried to raise those skunks with a cat but ah....and they stayed with us til they got pretty good size and then they got big enough and run off...they leFort...we had 'em out in the barn.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the dog's name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't have any idea what the dog's name was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we...you said you and your brother would sit on the cotton stalks, what kind of games did ya'll play?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I can't remember that. I imagine ah...we was probably playing with empty spools of thread and I remember we used to play...that was pretty interesting for a kid to have an empty spool. Mother did a lot of sewing . Ah...probably a vanilla flavoring bottle for a car or something like that you know and a empty bottle for playing with...like it was a car. And we didn't have any commercial toys to play with I promise you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when you was out in the wagon what kind of games did ya'll play?

GLENN ELLIOTT: When we were out?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well just out in the yard and what not.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well we'd probably hit....my dad played a little professional baseball back when he was a kid growing up andwhen Wichita Falls was in the Texas league. And ah...we always had some kind of baseball and a bat, may be it was....it might be homemade. And ah...we'd play a little ball and ah...and generally just play with the dogs. And of course we all had chores to do too you know and ah...we could bring in wood. We always had a red wagon andand we could haul the milk to the house andand after we moved south of town well I started...I learned to milk a cow when I was...that first year after we moved south...ah...north of town from south well I started milking cows when I was five years old.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did it take you to milk a cow out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, at that age I...we had one pet cow that ah...that's all that I could milk you know. And it wouldn't take long after you learned how to milk a cow. And ah....of course I had small hands of course you know. But ah...but we started milking cows and I guess it was no time ...we always....we had ten to fourteen cows we milked twice a day and ah...there'd be three of us, my dad, my brother and I would do most of the milking. And ah...oh we could....in thirty minutes we'd have all of 'em milked by hand you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was milk time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, before day and after dark most of the time. And ah...especially after we got electricity. And ah... but ah...we...we didn't get electricity until about 1938 or '39 somewhere in there and when REA came and by that time when we moved north of town my dad started...he got on regular with the County and ran a maintainer. And ah...of course my brother and I were big enough then that we could ah...we could plow and do things that needed to be done. And ah...dad ah...worked for the public and then when we got electricity well he started selling refrigerators and radios and electric irons. And he's trade, he'd come home with a calf or

chickens or just anything. He...you know...dad....my dad knew the value of things and these farmers that would want a radio or a refrigerator or electric iron or something after they got electricity and ...and daddy would go.....ah...he was working for an outfit out of Honeygrove, Shelton Hardware. And ah...he would ah...he'd come home with just nearly anything that he traded you know. But he was a good salesman, my dad was a good salesman. He ah...ah...later went to work for Paris Grocery Company ah...and like I say, he'd sold cars before he and mother got married. And ah...his ah... he had a brother there that had a livery stable in town. They traded a lot of mules. Daddy had always kept young mules, he'd ah...ah...he'd train them and would get 'em going good and he'd sell 'em and buy some more you know. And ah...ah...he kept some pretty good lively stock. Ah...I remember one time after we was living north of town, after I got about half grown, well we had one pair of young mules that ah...liked to run, they'd balk when you'd hook 'em to a wagon and then they'dafter you finally got 'em to moving they run away, they'd run with you. So I...see we used to live about a mile from town and I ran those mules all the way to town and W. Leo Daniels was running for Governor of Texas and he was at ah...by this time this neighbor of ours that I used to ride in the wagon with ah...Choice Moore, he was.... he was...been elected County Judge there in Fannin County. And ah...they moved to town and ah... had a nice big two story house there and ah...and ah...W. Leo Daniels was making his speech there on the yard... in his front yard. And had his band there and everything. And I come to town with those mules and I was mad at 'em and I ran 'em all the way to town, which if daddy...I'd of been in a lot of trouble but I was trying to break 'em from balking you know. And...and I circled the square with my wagon so the mules get settled down enough to get on the scales you know. And of course trains come through there pretty regular and we always had a little trouble with our mules but ah...that's an interesting story I remember at the...especially the

politicswas leading the politics. But ah...yeah I was ah...I guess we had a...a...well the year before we moved from down north ...ah...from south of town to north well ah... we had a good crop and I guess that would have been in '30 and ah...had a lot of good turkey and ah...they were ah...bringing a pretty good price and ah...daddy was wanting to buy a car. And ah...a new car...we had some kind of old Model T or something and so he went to Bonham andoh no the guy from Bonham came out with a new '29 Model A Ford, two door sedan. Andenclosed you know, it had...it had windows and ah...so mother and daddy liked it and ah...so he told them he said, well said just tell Fred that I'm going to buy that car andor one just like it as soon as I...at that price as soon as I get my crop in and sell my turkey. So the salesman went back and....daddy's told me this story since, of course I couldn't remember it. But it was an interesting story and ah...he said he went back ah....the salesman called him that night on the phone, we had a telephone, party line you know. And ah...and told him that ah....that the man that owned the Ford Company said, just come on up here and get that car tomorrow and you can pay us when you get your turkey's sold, cause you want it and you've got collateral. And daddy said it started raining the next...after he got back home he said it rained for...the car didn't get out of the shed for over thirty days. And of course he lost all of his cotton, turkey prices went down and he said he had the dickens paying for that car you know and times were pretty tough back then you know. Of course I didn't realize it but...at that age you know, but I know as we...after I got older well I knew that there was lots of things we didn't have. It was...times were bad. But we had a good clean place to sleep and something to eat you know, made it on the farm but we...there wasn't much money around. I guess after....I went to school there at Windom, I started to school, I was five years old on that 1st day of August and I started to school in September. And ah...so

that's the reason I graduated see, I graduated in 1942 and ah...just wet behind the ears you might say.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was...was there...

GLENN ELLIOTT: We only had eleven grades you know in school at that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, your first school, was it a one room school or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, ah...school, we had a pretty nice school there at Windom, it was a brick school. And ah...my first...the first and second grades and third and fourth grades were in the same room. But ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember your teacher?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah...Ms. Wheeler was my first ah...my first and second grade teacher and ah...Mrs. Jacks was the third and fourth and then another Ms. Wheeler was fifth and sixth and ah...and ah...oh I remember all my teachers. Ah...Elmer Riddle...ah...Jim Riddle who was later ah...went to work for DPS, in fact he quit the year before I graduated and went to work as a highway patrolman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did he teach?

GLENN ELLIOTT: he taught math and coached and ah...had study halls. He coached...we didn't have football, we had a good baseball team, basketball and had track. But ah...yeah I remember all my teachers. Ah...W. D. George...well we had several Superintendent's back then but you know, school Superintendent's that might stay five years or six somewhere you know and they'd move on for some reason or other, I don't know why but...but ah...we had a good little ole school there in Windom ah...real good school.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How big a town was Windom at this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: At that time population was over 300, around 325, 330 there in town. But you see what happened then, nearly every farm had two or three families on it. And the farms were not that large. And you know 100 acres or 150 acres was a pretty good sized farm then. And there was at least two families or sometimes three living on the farm that large you know. And most...and...and the ah...population...the greater population around Windom you know was pretty good. A lot of folks come there. We had two cotton gins and a bank and four grocery stores and four filling stations and ah...a blacksmith's shop, a lumber yard, a grist mill. Yeah, we'd shell our corn and take it up there and get it ground into corn meal. And ah...you could get about everything you needed right there in Windom, but....and a big hardware store.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How large was the school?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there was 27 graduated in my class in 1942, which was the largest class that graduated there, but that was a pretty good size class so you can kind of be governed by that eleven grades and ah...so ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: About as many in school as was in the town.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You said ah...you picked some cotton, any watermelons in the cotton bag?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no we ah...we didn't raise many watermelons. That black land don't raise watermelons too good. Yeah, I picked a lot of cotton. Oh I couldn't pick a lot, 400 pounds was about...we had to pick our cotton the, I mean it wasn't like they was full of boles, you may go to West Texas. But our gins ah...ah...wasn't geared for boles and ah...we had to pick our cotton out of the boles. And ah...yeah, I've picked a lot of cotton and carried to the gin and...and even got to Honeygrove, take our cotton seed and oh we'd save our seed til we got a wagon load and then in the late fall we'd haul it to Honeygrove to the oil mill and they'd ah...we'd get a load

of cotton burrs and then trade our seed for ah...cotton seed meal. And that's what we fed our cows while we milked 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: did you get paid any for picking the cotton other than room and board?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No...no. What we would do if we finished our crop then ah...if we picked for the neighbors some, well we got to keep our money, but we'd buy our school clothes with that you know, and use it to go to the picture show or something. Of course you could...you know you could take a quarter and...and I know I started driving a Model A Ford I guess when I was ten years old and ah... you could buy gas two gallons for a quarter you know. In a Model A two gallon of gas would go a long way in a Model A Ford. We spent most of our time going...you know if we went anywhere, there wasn't any theater there. But ah...in the early days we'd have medicine shows come through and...and that was the entertainment we had you know. We had radio, if the old batteries could keep up you know and we'd listen to Lon Bagburn, Amos and Andy and shows like that you know and ah...ah...but after...on up in the late '30's and early '40's we got to go....we'd get to go to Bonham or Honeygrove, one of the theaters because ah...every once in awhile.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was your favorite actor and actress?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh...of course you know I like westerns you know. And ah...tom Mix and folks like that you know. We...kids like us and boys, we like westerns. I guess Gone With The Wind was probably the most boring show I ever watched as a kid you know. Of course I've enjoyed it several times since you know. But ah...I know when it first came out, I think it was what about four hours long maybe, or something like that as I remember, maybe a little longer than that. And our class went to see it ah...I guess it was probably junior or senior year in school, I don't remember when it came out but ah...anyway sometime when we was in school. And it

was very boring to me you know and...it had to be a cowboy picture show or something like that you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well your brother is four years older, did you hang around him mainly. Did ya'll fight any or was he....

GLENN ELLIOTT: We fought ah...right smart, yeah. Ah...ah...and I guess boys do that you know. Because we was ah...we didn't get to play with neighbors much. Our cousins, we had a bunch of cousins, and...and ah...all...nearly all of 'em...al was boys but one, and ah...we'd get together on Sunday's over at my grandmothers or over at their place or over at our place. Our family got together pretty regular, on my mother's side especially. And then I ha...we'd you know play ball and do things. But we didn't have a bicycle...I never...I always wanted a bicycle and a BB gun worse than any grown...kid there ever was, but I never did have either one of them. And ah...we just didn't have things like that, but we...we had a lot of fun you know. But my brother and I did fight quite a bit you know. We got in a fight one time and I knocked him over a turning plow and ah...but hurt his leg real bad, had to take him to the doctor. And ah...I was just lucky because he was bigger than I was but ah...we'd you know, we'd mix it up like brothers do. Ah...but most of the time we didn't have a whole lot of time to fight because most of the time we'd get up in the morning and milk those cows and if the weather was bad ah...we'd work on fence rows or clean out chicken houses and barns and ah...there was always something to do on the farm. Work on fences and there wasn't a whole lot of going to town.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well with all that feeding all those turkeys do you...to this day do you have much use for turkey's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I enjoy a good white turkey breast I tell you. Ah...ah...but there's a lot of story about the...a turkey is hard to raise to start with but they make.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: (unintelligible - talking over each other)

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah...they'd hide their nest and we'd....we of course we raised our turkey's like they raise these ostrich now, they'd...we'd find a turkey's nest and take the eggs out and we had an incubator. And this house we lived in there north of town it was a nice house, my dad hauled the lumber, and with a four hook-up team, from Ladonia which was about eighteen miles from that...but built the house and we moved in it. And that was before...that was when my grandmother bought it from ah...her husband's brother. And it had a small house already and after she bought it well ah...they...they made a two story...built another room on it and then put an upstairs. And that's where we had our incubator and that's where my brother and I slept. We'd sleep up there and that incubator hatching those turkey you know, of course they wouldn't stay up there long. You know as soon as they got big enough to ah...you know mother would...she...I remember she had hard boiled a bunch of eggs, of course we always had plenty of eggs, and we'd chop 'em up and feed those turkey's hen eggs, cooked hen eggs and...and then...til...when they was babies. And then after they got you know big enough to take grain well we started feeding 'em grain and then we'd put 'em out in the pen you know, outside. But we'd keep 'em up...in the house there. Of course I don't know, probably we couldn't hatch over...over 25 or 30 under each incubator you know. And ah...I guess they were kerosene, had to be you know. Yeah, they were kerosene. We had...I don't remember...they was metal and ah...but we'd have to go out and look for turkey nests and ah...and some of the neighbors...I remember one time we had a neighbor that ah...our turkeys got to raiding over his corn patch and...and he came and talked to dad about it. And daddy told him said, no said ah...ah... Bert those turkey's are not eating your corn. He said, and I've put 'em up and ah...cause I want to get along with you as my neighbor, but he said, if you'll come down in hat corn patch right now they're down there and

you know they're there and that's how come you're up here, so let's ...I'll go down there and show you that they're doing you some good. And those turkey's were eating insects. And boy they just was chasing 'em all over the place and the same insects was getting on the corn cob you know. And they wasn't bothering any of the corn you know. And he watched 'em for awhile and he said, Dewey you know, you leave them turkey's alone, he said, you're right you know and ah...and ah...we'll get 'em. Yeah I like to ah...I've almost drown twice in my life. Ah...Bobby I've ah...we had a pool when we first...when..after we moved over there well ah...I guess in ah...oh I don't know, about '36 I believe and ah...we needed water and ah...so daddy had a couple of hired hands on the place and of course he was working for the public and farming too. And ah...we dug a pool down there east of the house with mules you know. I know my brother and I would ride a turning plow, the ground was hard, it was in the fall after we got the crops laid by and ah...they'd plow the ground and then take fresno's and scrapers and move the dirt you know. And we dug a heck of a pool there. And ah...it was pretty deep...and ah...with mules. And after it filled up my dad couldn't swim and ah...we used to...that's where we'd take our bath down there in the pool. And ah...we started to...you know you...everything...some of it had to be a game you know on the farm and we'd maybe race to see who could get in the pool first. Of course we'd go in nude you know and ah...I got in first one time and stepped off and got over my head and ah...of course I couldn't swim and so my dad held on my brother's arm and he was on the bank and my brother got off in the water and I reached and got his arm. But ah...then ah...and I thought I was going to drown, sure did, but you know it's just another part of growing up on a farm is what it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you said you almost another time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I got ah...a storm threw me in a lake up there in Canada, I was in a canoe and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you...what ...about what age were you then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I was...this was after I got grown. I'd been going up there fishing you know with some of my friends and that just happened. well the year I retired.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You still can't swim?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, I learned to swim, oh soon after I nearly drowned. But ah...you don't swim very far in 36-38 degree waters. And I got on a...I got up on the bottom of this canoe up there and ah...we'll probably get to that down...later down. But anyway I ah...it was...a front blew in there and it was cold and the water was already cold you know. And ah...and ah...this caught the front of my canoe and turned it over. And the wind was blowing hard out of the northwest and it was fixing to blow me down across the big lake which was about five miles long and ...and I paddled out on an island. I laid on...finally got up on the bottom of the canoe, I had turned it over a time or two but I couldn't get in it, it would flip back. And I just crawled up, finally got up on the bottom of it and held on with one hand and paddled with the other and got out on an island and about like to froze to death then you know. And ah...wet to the bone and then had to stay out there about nearly two hours.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, we'll come back to...we'll get to that later. Ah...times were hard as you said and there was incredible riches just a few miles away going on down here at Kilgore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever...dad ever say to you or did you ever hear him mention that, well I might go down to Kilgore and get in the oil field?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. But ah...my mother had three brothers that...that were down there. And ah...they was always right up there together you know. My mother's folks lived out in the Spring Hill community, out ah...well we'll go up there and get it...show it to you. And ah...ah...my grandfather on my mother's side had donated five acres of land there to a school and ...for a school and a church at Spring Hill school...church out there. And we didn't know until after my...they all died and my...and ah...well right before my grandmother died she decided to move to town and they'd already closed the church and the school both. The (unintelligible)...shut down and the buildings had deteriorated and ah...I know that ah...they got to looking at the title and these people was going to buy it and there was a provision in there if they ever town...ever quit having school or quit having church that the property reverted back to the Winchester estate. But yeah, ah...my ah...mother had three brothers that left Windom and came to Kilgore and ah...one of them stayed with the oil stuff and the other one was ...turned out to be a pipe fitter. And then the third one he moved back and became a carpenter and ah...so he ah...ah he moved back to the Windom area.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever come down here to visit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, never did, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You was never down here during the boom years?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. First time I was in Longview, Texas was when I came down to look for a place to stay when I was on the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum...ah...you were ten years old at the time of the New London school explosion. You remember...do you remember hearing it on the radio or...

GLENN ELLIOTT: I remember all about it, yeah. And see my uncles were in the...they were down at Kilgore at that time and they...they...they'd come home. And see like I say, we'd always

get together you know at ah...we had a family reunion just as often as a family got together. In fact we'd, like I said earlier, we'd probably eat Sunday dinner with my grandparents or they'd eat with us, and uncles and aunts would all be there, nearly every Sunday. And ah...especially when the out of town folks would come well we'd all get together of course. And yes, they discussed it and they went over there ah...two of them did. I think one of them maybe had already come back home by then. But ah...they went over to the New London school and ah...and it was...of course you know we got the Grit magazine was about the only paper we got, and heard it on the radio. But ah...you know that was national wide. That...that was ...everybody knew about New London school. And yes, I remember it ah...ah...very well.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You said ah...you liked to go to the movies and ah...westerns, did you have any favorites as far as did ah...the Texas Rangers mean anything special to you at that time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, they sure didn't. Ah...ah...you know law enforcement ah...ah...we were...I guess kids of my age were probably taught ah...a little bit, most...a lot of them were taught to be afraid of law enforcement officers, which was the wrong thing to do. But I also felt even after I got old enough to go out on my own, which was too young, but ah...my cousins and some of my friends and I we'd you know, we'd get out and we'd...we might go here and over there. And I always felt a lot better when I got back in my own county. Because my dad and my uncle were both always real active...and the one that lived there in town..but ah... in politics. And they'd get behind the Sheriff and the County Judge and County Commissioner and they'd...they'd go here and haul their hands and somebody else's hands into town to vote, if it was in a wagon or it was in a Model A car or whatever. And we always knew the Sheriff and we knew the County Commissioner and we knew the County Judge you know. And of course our next door neighbor down there was County Judge for I think 39 years or something like that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: His name again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Choice Moore, yeah. And he's dead now. But his wife's still living. And ah...but ah...we was ah...ah...we was pretty close with the local officers. But no, I never did ah...I never entertained...I never thought about being a police officer until ah...and I was in the military police in the Army you know. I just never give it a thought 'til I was approached later by this friend of mine who taught school. But as far as my days...I know the ah...I made...after I got ah...see I graduated from high school in 1942, I was born in '26 so I guess I was 16 years old...I was 15 when I graduated from high school, wasn't 16 until August after I got out you know. And ah...we ah...we was having a we'd have bad crops up there just like they do now you know and ah...I went to ...I went to my dad and ah...ah...there was some guys going to Washington State to a wheat harvest, and ah...they had a '39 Chevrolet truck and ah...it was going to cost us ten dollars a piece to go up there and fifteen dollars to come back in this truck and with a guarantee that we'd get a job in the wheat harvest up there. So I was pretty adventurous and ...and...ah...was ready to get...my brother had already joined the Air Force. Pearl Harbor was December 7 and I think January the...oh about three weeks after Pearl Harbor he joined the Air Force. He was going to A&M and ah...he had that ROTC and all that and he got in the Air Force. Of course I was wanting to get in the Army too pretty bad, but I wasn't old enough. And I knew my folks wasn't going to give me permission to go so ah...I talked...my dad didn't have the money to let me go...to give me, or wouldn't give it to me, he could of probably got it. I went to the bank there in Windom and I had some old...I had hogs I called mine, but they wasn't worth anything much because you know we butchered our own hogs then, we didn't have much beef. In the fall maybe we'd buy our beef at the meat market. But we pulled chicken and turkey most of the time you know and ah...but ah...I went to the bank and tried to borrow I think fifty dollars

from the banker and he asked me, I never will forget it, Mr. Carl Wright he...and ah...he and his wife ran the bank and I said, well I'm gonna...I'm going to Washington State to the wheat harvest and I said, I need to...I got to pay Mr. Chandler ten dollars to go up there and I'd like to have a little money to eat on you know, while I'm going up there and until I get me a job. Well he said, nah we don't...I never will forget he said, we don't loan money to take trips on. He says, if your daddy will come up here and sign your note and you use those hogs for collateral said, I might let you have thirty-five dollars. All right. I said, my daddy's not to cranky about me going, he and I have talked about it and he'd rather me stay at home, but you know I'm a young man and I need to....full of adventure and we hadn't got any crops to get in much. And he said, well get your grandpa, said, if your grandpa will sign your note I'll...I'll let you have it. So I just ah...I went on out and sold my hogs, there was a guy there that...there's always somebody in every community with a pickup and trailer that was going around buying calves and hogs and I sold my hogs and I think I got about twenty-five, thirty dollars and ah...went to Washington. Rode this '39 Chevrolet truck all the way up there. took us a week to get there. And we went to Lacrosse, Washington which was ah...ah...well I guess about 150 miles from the Canadian border, right up where the neck of Idaho goes up beside Washington. And I worked for a German there named Kleinsmith for the first two weeks. Another old boy from home and I kind of buddied up and he's still alive. And I've got some pictures of us that were made up there. Anyway ah...this guy just wanted one hand to work during the harvest. We got up there before the harvest. And it wasn't hard to find a job. We got there on Sunday afternoon and I think I had ninety-seven cents in my pocket when I got up there. And 2500 miles from home and ah...this guy came by and hired ah...us. And we slept in the grain bin. He had ah...he had some old bed springs up there and his family had grown, he'd used to keep 'em in the house, but he had had a

house full of kids by then and I know we threw some one cow hide over those mattresses for a mattress. And he gave us a blanket cover which was a nice one, it was cool up there all the time at night, summer time even. So I worked for him for two weeks and then we was in town and of course he told...he hired the other guy cause he needed somebody to jig sacks. And I wasn't all that big and jiggling sacks of grains was pretty good...takes a healthy man to do that you know. What you do, they sack their grain and then...some of them did, he did his and ah...you'd have to sew the top of the bag and kick it off you know and then they'd come back later and pick it up and take it in. Mainly he was selling most of his grain for seed grain. But I hired out to another guy up at Binge, Washington which was close, it was only about 90 miles from the Canadian border and ah...and he was good...they was good people. And ah...well I've got their name right on the end of my tongue, but ah...I've threatened to go back up there sometime. And...but this guy hired me in ah...in a pool hall there in Lacrosse, Washington on Saturday and I left with him, went home with him. And I stayed in his house, in the basement of his house and I never will forget the next...he asked me that night if I could milk a cow and I told him yeah, I'd been milking ever since I was 5 years old. I was expecting to have to get up and milk cows every morning and night, but didn't care you know, I mean I wanted a job and I didn't...I never have been afraid of work. But ah...anyway we ah...got up the next morning and went to the table and was having breakfast and he told his wife said, ah...introduce...we got in late, she was in bed and...and ah...he introduced me to his wife and said, Glenn's going to milk old Betsy morning but said, you're going to have to milk her the rest of the harvest, we're going to be busy. They just had one cow but ah...his son lived there with them and ah...he was an alcoholic and a college graduate and had three children and he was just sorry. And I hired ...I was a truck driver and I was going to spot...he had two trucks with dump beds on them and ah...he...he hauled all of his

grain to the ah...elevator down at Binge, it was about 6 miles from his farm to Binge, Washington. And ah...so my job was to spot one of the trucks and then load one and by the time I got back to town I'd spot it and the other one would be ready and I'm just back and forth to town hauling grain all day. First week it worked all right but this boy got...he was away from his alcohol, he was driving a caterpillar, pulling a combine. Up there they pulled 'em, it was so hilly that they elevated their combines. They could cut a 45 degree angle and ah...they pulled it with a caterpillar because they couldn't get up and down those mountain...hills. Cause it was pretty hilly up in that country. And ah...one morning at breakfast well that boy convinced his daddy he wasn't going to be able to drive that caterpillar any more on the count of having hay fever, and of course he was a drink. So he asked me that morning he said, have you ever driven a caterpillar before. And I said, no I never have been on one running. Are you afraid to get on it and drive it. And I said, I'm not afraid to if you're not afraid to ride that combine behind me. Because see they had the engines on the combines. But anyway, I...I did about twenty-three days of harvest andand he paid me twenty-five dollars a day and room and board. And man this...that was great money. And I stayed up there and ah...until about September and I went into Lacrosse....and he tried to get me to stay....the morning I...they was going to take me home, well he told me said, my wife would want to offer you a job, ah...I want to talk to you about a job. He said, we like you and he said, you're the kind of boy that ah...that we'd like to have in our family and he said, you know what my problem is. And he said, we'll pay you a hundred and twenty-five dollars a month and room and board and give you a twenty-five dollar a day bonus for every day we're in harvest if you'll stay up here and work for us.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he was paying you twenty-five a day or a week?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Twenty-five a day. Yeah. That was....I never had made over a dollar a day until I got up there. Never had. Ah...and I hired out for fifteen dollars driving those trucks. But we're talking about from day light 'til dark for them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: If you allow for inves...or inflation you probably to this day haven't made that kind of money.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. Cause see that was...boy fifteen dollars would go a long ways then even. But anyway, I got back in to Lacrosse and about the first week in September and I had a pocket full of money and I got me some cashier's checks and ah...and this one other guy still there. And the guy that carried the truck up there sold it and they all rode a train home. So ah...this old boys name was Peck Keel and he was playing poker with some of those old ranchers, he was a pretty good poker player. And I sat around there and him play poker a couple of days and we stayed together in the old hotel down there at night. And I told him I said, Peck let's go down there and pick apples. I said, man I've been talking to guys said we can make some money picking apples. I said, they're paying just about as good money picking apples as they are in this harvest. We didn't have to go 200 or 300 miles I remember. And ah...but he was ready to come home and I was about ready. And he said....and he didn't want to go and he got pretty lucky there in a poker game last night he played and we jumped a train, caught us a train back the next morning and rode a passenger train from Lacrosse, Washington to Wichita Falls, Texas. Got a bus from there to Windom. I got off a bus Bobby in Windom about 12:30 at night, and I had an old metal suitcase, and I had my clothes in it and I had twenty-seven silver dollars in it. They paid off in silver a lot up there, a lot of silver dollars in Washington. Man you go into town and buy something and you get change in silver dollars. And ah...I wish I had some of them now. And ah...they ah...I got off and my....the bus drove off and my suitcase wasn't sitting there. Well

I walked home. When we go up there I'll show you howI got home about 1:00 or so in the morning and they never locked houses then you know. And I walked in the back door and I was about half way up the steps, going upstairs, and my mother called out to me she said, is that you Glenn and....cause it could have been my brother see, cause he was still in the United States. But she...she knew it was me. And they got up and we had a little reunion. Of course she fussed at me why I didn't call, they'd of come got me you know, but I walked home and I didn't even have a flash light, I had to walk around...I couldn't....normally we'd walk through the woods, through the field, but I walked around the road because I didn't have light you know and I knew I could stay in the road you know and get home without falling too many times. But ah...that's...you know that's the kind of life I've....and ah.... I was glad to be home and I was glad to have that money in my pocket too.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How much did you come home with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, I think I got home with pretty close to five hundred dollars.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum. You ah...going back to your school days, ah...what was your favorite course?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I didn't have a favorite course in school I...I don't guess. I was a poor student. I guess you can probably tell that by my interviews. I did not apply myself too good. I imagine PE was my favorite sport. But ah...no I liked math because I liked my math teacher. And I liked science because Iwe had a good science teacher. And ah...and I made some good projects we'd....in science classes. And you know we had access to....on the farm nearly everything you needed for science class you know. And ah...I did pretty good in that but English and speech I...I...my speech teacher liked me and I was...I played the leading part in the junior and the senior play both and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What were the plays?

GLENN ELLIOTT: The Henpecked Husband was one of them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah...oh heck I forget the other one, but we had two plays. And I played the....I played the leading part in both of them. And ah...and I wrote a jingle or two for flour companies then and ah...ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they pay you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I won I think ten dollars once writing a jingle for some flour company. You know they'd usually buy a sack of flour and they'd have a card in there you know and you could write a jingle and send it in and ah...and ah...you know let 'em judge them. And my speech teacher helped me a little bit. She ah....I had written it and I had talked to her about it and she said, well I'd...you know I'd change, I'd do this you know, and so I did. Her name was Iris Lightsey and she was coal black headed, an old maid, but she was school...good speech teacher. And ah...but see I was kind of rowdy and ah...I never will forget, see she wanted me to take these parts in this play but she wasn't sure I'd stay with it you know. And ah...so the Superintendent called me in and told me ah...Mr. George. He said, Glenn ah...ah...Ms. Lightsey wants you to be in that play andand she don't you to learn the part and then decide you don't want it. And of course I told him then I said, well it depends on what part....I....she hadn't even asked me about it. And I said, let me see the book and you know tell her to give me the book and I'll read it and if I like it I'll....if I take on I'll stay. Well you know we was pretty independent then you know as kids cause I could make a living you know. And I did pretty good in math and then of course I was sports. I liked to...I liked to play ball and ah...ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Baseball?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, baseball and basketball both.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What...what did you play?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I played third base in baseball and then I was a guard in basketball and of course ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pretty good hitter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Pretty fair with a stick. My dad you know like I said, I told you earlier, he was a professional baseball player and ah....ah....I did pretty good. Not outstanding. I could ofdad couldn't send me to college. We ah...figured out maybe where I could go to Drones Business College. And ah...I had a cousin that was going there and ah...we'd discussed this. They hadthere was a cafeteria there that ah...they'd hire those kids and ah...I never have been run off from the job in my life. I've never been fired from a job. And I've had...not too many, but you know like...just like up there in Washington and when I go to work for somebody you know ah...and jobs was hard to find after I got out of the...come home from service. And I didn't have any trouble...after I found a job I didn't have trouble keeping it. but I..you know I'd get out there and get with it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was your baseball coach?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well Elmer Riddle was. Jim Riddle was until the last year and then there was a boy named Bertrum ah...that ah...took over the baseball program the last year that we was a senior. And I boxed, I was a...I entered boxing tournaments. And ah...I even boxed some in the service.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And who was your coach?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Riddle. Riddle, he was my coach up 'til my senior year and then this...this young ah...another guy that was...some of Katherine' kin folks, my wife's kin folks. He

got out of school and that was his first year and he ah...everybody...he..he wasn't too tough on being...disciplined the students you know and we just about took him over to tell you the truth.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was Riddle your basketball coach also?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. Yeah, he coached everything you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were you a pretty good basketball player?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was a pretty fair basketball player. I was better with my gloves though, I was a better boxer than I was...

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was your record?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't even remember. I know I won a three day pass, I won my ah...I won my weight division in Fort Mead, Maryland in a boxing tournament in Fort Mead, Maryland ah...when I was in the service. And we got a three day pass to go to new York City, the ones that won the tournament and ah...we got a train out of there and got up to New York and all of us was country boys and never did get ten blocks from the train station, spent one night and didn't even get a room, we didn't have any money, we caught a train back to camp but we'd been to New York you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...who was your favorite teacher?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, Riddle was my favorite teacher and then Ms. Lightsey, I liked her, this ah...this ah...speech teacher. She...you know after I got involved and I saw that the play wasn't you know...it...it basically was comedy is what they were. And...but there was a lot of ah...there's...there's a lot of ah...well one of them was a comedy and ah...ah...I was trying to think of the name of the other one. I think I still got one of those books somewhere ah...in our stuff. Ah...The Henpecked Husband and...was one of them. Yeah, they put talcum powder in my

hair, I was an older person you know and ah...and ah...we did pretty good, we did pretty good with it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...want to go back just a little, fill a couple of gaps here. You said you had three uncles that came to Kilgore in the boom?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What...who...what uncles were those?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...they ah...Leon Winchester and Luther and Eugene.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And which one came back?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Eugene was the youngest one and he..he moved back to Windom and ah...got to be a carpenter.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And one of them was a pipe fitter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: And one of them was a pipe fitter and he...and he settled...later settled in Marshall. They're ah...they're all dead now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Which one was the pipe fitter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...ah...Leon. And Luther stayed with the oil company. Luther fell off of a derrick in Kilgore and...and they...they thought he was going to die for about three weeks. He fell from a derrick ah...sometime not too long after that New London deal. And ah...they had to take bones out of his ribs and rebuild his face. And ah...and he never did look all that good, but he had a good personality. And he was working for Citi Service as I remember and they moved him to Tinsley, Mississippi. And he was managing the yard down there at Tinsley ah...they had ah...ah...that's when people lived on the ah...on the premises you know of these oil companies that would have a yard you know and all their people would live there. And Luther died there in Tinsley, Mississippi and he had worked for Citi Service or Texaco one, I think it was Citi

Service, probably for...well he didn't die 'til about '57 or '58 and he was still working for the oil company at that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...when you went to Spokane ah...who all went with you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: To ah...to Lacrosse?

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean, I said Spokane, to Lacrosse?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there were ah...let's see, I think there was ten of us went. Ah...there was a boy up there at Windom, lets see...well Woodrow Crossman, he lives in Sherman. Woodrow's still living. and then there was a Nichols boy from Windom went and then ah...Mr. Chandler ah...owned the truck, Bert Chandler. And ah...there was a...ah...oh heck I can ah...I just don't remember all...I knew every one of them. Ah...they were all from right around that community there and this was a second time that some of them had already been up there, those older ones. I was the youngest guy that I guess had ever went.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well describe the trip up there, you said it took seven days.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, oh it was...it wasn't too good. We got...I know one thing, we got in to Amarillo, Texas about midnight the night that we left and ah...he had made a shade over the back of that...this was a '39 Chevrolet truck, it had a grain bed on the back. And ah...they didn't have the dump type beds in you know, you...elevators you drive up and they...they elevate the front of your truck and the grain would come out and then they'd let it down you know. And ah...he had built a kind of a make shift cover, but he'd used cotton sack material. And we got into the darnest rain out there on the road you know. So we had to mattresses laying in the back of this truck, we'd slept back there. We...we spent one night at...we stopped in Pocatow, Idaho in an old third rate motel and got us a room...part...about half of us, on the way up there. And ah...took us a shower and then we let the ones sleeping in the truck come in and...and take...and

use our shower you know. That...Crossman, Woodrow and I stayed in the same room and I think there was about half of us rented a room that had a little money and the other half slept in the truck. And then they'd come in and take a shower. But we pulled in under a service station there that was closed, there in Amarillo. And this was one of my first experiences with a police officer and they ran us out. They come in and told us to move on you know. And it was raining, that old thing was leaking just like...you know, just like it wasn't up there. We got out mattresses all wet and got ourselves soaking wet you know. But the next morning ah...we just kept...come on dry...and ah...drove all night. And wound up, I don't know I guess the next night probably we stayed...ah...I guess that was two nights later, but we didn't stop. You know several folks knew how to drive. I didn't never have an opportunity to drive, but most of the folks were a lot older than I was you know and...at least ten years. I was just a kid and ah...just wanting adventure but ah...we spent one night in Pocatow, Idaho and then we drove a couple more nights and we got into Lacrosse ah...late on Saturday night, not too late, and there was an old hotel there that put us up and let us pay 'em in a cafe and they fed us and put us up and signed the tab and paid 'em when we got our first pay check. They was good to us. The folks up there they was glad to see us, cause they needed help. And ah...but ah...that's how I remember it. So it took...it...it was pretty tough.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you carry....

GLENN ELLIOTT: 'til we got dried out good you know. After that first night I don't think we got in to any more rain. I know we didn't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did...

GLENN ELLIOTT: We followed that Snake River and that was a...oh man...that...I believe that was the longest...that old Snake River. You know you'd be going one way and then just double

back you know. We followed that Snake River for...I didn't think we was ever going to get out of Idaho.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well where did ya'll eat, did you eat at restaurants or buy groceries.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no we'd stop and get bologna and pork and beans and ah...I don't think...I think the first cafe we ate in was ah...ah...there in Lacrosse.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...you may have already said but do you remember what kind of....and I've forgottenwhat kind of truck was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '39 Chevrolet.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'll never forget it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You said while you were up there ah...you drove a truck for awhile. Do you remember the type trucks they were?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. They were both Chevrolets. I think one of them was about a '36 model and the other one was about a '40 model. This guy had two pretty...he had...oh he had good equipment. He had a D-7 caterpillar pulling that combine and ah....he had the best equipment that money could buy. He was a big farmer he...we had....he had 2500 acres of grain. We harvested 2500 acres of grain and ah...he made a lot of wheat. And we'd go into town on Saturday night, those old farmers...I didn't play poker cause I...my money come...and I drank a little beer or something....a kid you know. But there was an old woman ran a pool hall there, Pearl's Pool Hall. And I communicated with her. I...I wrote 'em a letter. I sent Pearl a Christmas card, she wanted me to send her cotton. And she was an older woman and she kind of took me under the wing. And they'd have...get in...all those guys would get in a fight or argument sometimes at night andand ah...she ran that pool hall she...herself. And I'd sit back over there

by the stove, an old pot belly stove, and ah...talk to her while they played poker. I went into town with this guy and his son both liked to play poker. And those farmers would get together and she'd charge 'em by the hour you know. And ah...Binge was just a small town, it wasn't much bigger than Windom ah...where I was raised. And everybody knew everybody. Ah...yeah I ah...you see and then the next year I got home, my dad

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when did you...what year was it when you came back?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that was in '42. And ah...and '43 my....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well before we go inlet me go back toI want...one thing I do want to....how big of ...of a position while you were growing up did religion play?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh we ah...that's one thing that I...that my mother and daddy taught me ah...ah...to fear God and to respect elders and to work. You know and that's three...we went to Church ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: What Church?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Methodist Church, we went to Methodist Church.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the name of it do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...First Methodist Church, Windom, Texas. Still built is still there. Still built is still there. And we went...and I'd go to league on Sunday afternoon mainly just, you know I guess probably a kid, just so I could have somewhere to go, cause I could most of the time milk early on Sunday afternoon and go in....you know then stay in town 'til...ah...go to Honeygrove or something you know on Sunday night. But yeah we...we was in Church regular. My grandmother when we'd go to see them we'd go to the Presbyterian Church and ah...they...she helped

ROBERT NIEMAN: You grandmother on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: On my mother's side. She helped found the ah...Presbyterian Church. See my grandmother on my daddy's side died when I was five years old so that's how come we moved. And I...I don't...I remember her, but I don't remember ah...ever going to Church with her or anything like that. I knew we went to Church, I was sprinkled with I probably didn't evenI don't even....I...I vaguely remember, I must have been about three years old. I...I vaguely remember, but my brother and I were sprinkled at the Methodist Church at the same time. And ah...I remember that, but I just remember just a little of it you know. But yeah we was in Church every Sunday. Ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember the preacher?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh we had a bunch of preachers. You know ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anyone you liked best?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I didn't have any preference of preacher back then. I had a guy that taught Sunday school. Ah...this ah...school teacher's daddy that I told you that took Jim Riddle's place, Bertrum, his daddy was an old country man with no education at all. And ah...probably fifth grade. But he knew the Bible better than anybody in that country up there and ah...and was just a down to earth good Sunday school teacher. And I was ah...I'll just...I'll never forget him. And ah...I came back to the Methodist Church, in fact we lived in the Methodist Parsonage, Katherine and I did, after I got back from World War II. And ah...and I was ah...elected Steward in the Church there...Methodist Church before we leFort And...and of course Katherine's a member of the Church of Christ but my kids were born and she was carrying them to the Church of Christ and I was going to the Methodist Church and I didn't see anyI reckoned it was going to work you know so I joined the Church of Christ after we got to Longview.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...finally on your Washington trip, one last question. What color was that old truck you went up there in that time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Black, airplane black.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...through the years ah...after your brother joined the service and you off to Washington and what not I assumed then you and your brother probably never lived in the same house again.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Never did. Ah...we ah...I think we had one fight maybe after that but ah...ah...but we didn't ever...no we didn't ever live in the same house. My brother stayed in ah...most of the time out ...up in Iowa and places...ah...in ah...up that way after he got out of service. And ah...of course I came back home.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where does he live now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He lives up in Betty, up north of Gilmer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Through the years did...would ya'll consider ya'll's relationship close?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We've got a lot closer ah...in the last ah...oh you know twenty-five, thirty years than we've ever been in our lives you know. And ah...we're just real close. And ah...I didn't...we talk to each other and we visit regular and ah...ah...he goes to the farm with me and ah...ah...we go up and visit him. And in fact I took ah...Dennis and my two grand kids up there at Christmas and we just went by. And I stop there when I go to the farm and I'll come back by there. He's lives just a mile off 271 one there and ah....yeah we've got real close. We...we...we were not close ah...before that because we were too busy doing our jobs and working and thenand we run around together some, but my brother ah...ah...had a drinking problem. And ah...he finally conquered it after about twenty-five, thirty years. And ah...we'd go out to partying and go off over at Dennison or to Dallas or somewhere later on andand ah...he you know, he would

drink anything you handed him. And I'd have to help him get in the house and try to hid it with mother and daddy. And ah...and of course most guys that drink too much you know they're always pretty touchy and we'd at least get into it a little bit you know. But ah...but we...we're real close now and of course that's ah....our folks are gone and ah...he's kind of let me run things you know and ah...with the family. And ah...and I guess it's because he's got respect for my judgment you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well good. Well we've got you through 1942. Now let's go on to 1943 after you've come back from Washington.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I got back from Washington and my dad went to ah...work at the Pantexhelp build that Pantex ah...plant out at Amarillo.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what kind of plant is that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's ah...that's out there where they ah...make some of the ingredients for the atomic bomb I believe. And they still do. It's still out there. I think they got a lot of stuff stored. But dad went out there and helped build that thing, he and ah....and by this time my dad had bought a new '40 model Ford. Ah...in fact he bought that Ford before I went out there because I remember when I got back the payments were \$21.00 a month on that car. And I had to make a few payments on it cause daddy was in between jobs and he...but he bought that new Ford. And it was a nice car and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did he quit farming?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. No he never quit farming , he was a...you know how farming is and...and the cattle business too, we'd have....you couldn't get anything for your calves sometimes. A drought would affect everything. Two or three years of dry weather and it affects everything, you know. Cattle business, farming business and it'd affect everything else you

know. People wouldn't buy things daddy was trying to sell. And he was out hustling all the time you know. And ah....finally he went to work for Parish Grocery Company ah...as a salesman. My dad was a good salesman. And ah...like I say, I had to make a few payments on that car. But he went out to Amarillo and worked ah...one...for several months. He and several other guys there. My uncle that's a carpenter and ah...I never will forget daddy said they...they...what they called a ringer, they'd work seven days in a row and get paid time and a half you know. And ah...they would ah...ah...they got their check and one of the guys with him named Mix Richardson and old Mix told daddy said...and when he looked at that check and he grinned he said, Noah Cooper will be glad to see that. That Noah ran a grocery store there at Windom. But ah...I used to ah...I little bit before thisI wanted to tell you ah...ah...a very important thing that happened to me and ah....when Sam Rayburn had come home from Washington, he was Speaker of the House then you know and ah...my dad would go visit him...my uncle. And I'd go with them. And he had a home just west of Bonham out there, big two story house. And ah...I was up with my dad, Mr. Rayburn called daddy and wanted him to come up and meet him up there. I wrote it...I think he wrote it. And ah...he wrote dad a letter, that what it was, because ah...at this time...I have...Sam Rayburn got me an appointment to West Point. I had an appointment to go to West Point. I had an appointment to go to West Point when I got out of school and didn't go. I got married when I was seventeen. And ah...ah...but we went up to Bonham one time and this was about 1942 and Mr. Rayburn was home and he ah...he was...he told daddy to go...and I was of course a pretty good sized boy then you know. And ah...he told daddy that ah...they was going to build two air fields there and one to train pilots. And that they needed some houses built. Needed forty houses right then. And he told my dad he said, I'm going to give you the job. And he said, it's cost plus. And he said, I'll write you up a contract (unintelligible).....and send it to you and

said, you can take it to the bank and said, you need to borrow at least ten thousand dollars to begin with. Well ten thousand dollars was you know, if people had ten thousand dollars in those days you'd think they'd never have to work a day in their life you know, another day in their life. that was a lot of money. A hundred dollars a month was s good job you know, I mean a heck of a good job. But ah...daddy was afraid to do it, afraid to go borrow money and he didn't know what cost was and all that you know. But ah...he talked about that several times and I remember going there with him and he said, man if I'd of taken that, that would have been a good start for me you know. Cause they built about fifty houses there. And they needed a place for these instructors to live, and they was going to train those soldiers. Of course the Air Force people ah...ah...had the barracks for them you know. So right before I got married...Karen and I got married on December 25, 1943 and the first job I had was preflighting those airplanes up there. I went to work at ah...had to be on the job at four o'clock in the morning. And I went up there to one of those fields and ah...and hired out this guy up there and we had to check those planes to see that the hatches were all buttoned down proper and check the wheels for any grease leaks and bearings. And then we'd crank 'em up and...and ah..taxi 'em up and down the runway 'til the oil pressure got to a certain...and then you park 'em. And it was fun, you know, I mean it was cold but ah...we had ah...we had the same kind of clothes that...they furnished us those fleece lined clothes that the pilots wore. And I worked at that for a little while before I went in the service. And ah...well I tell you what I did, I worked at that for awhile and they...oh something happened and they had too many folks hired or something and they ah...they closed down one of the fields and moved everybody up to the other one, they had two fields. And I was at the one that got closed. And then I worked in a hotel for awhile in Dallas. I went to Dallas, Texas to get a defense job. I knew I was going in the service and wanted to go in there. My daddy and my

father-in-law both tried to get me to farm and get a deferment. You know I could of got a farm deferment and I was young and I said, not I don't want to, I want to go in the service. And ah...so when I went in to Dallas to get me a defense job up there, they were advertising for defense people, and I carried my old metal suitcase and hitchhiked to Dallas and ah...and went down to the employment office and told 'em I wanted you know one of those defense jobs. Well where have you worked last they said, and I said, well I've never had a job. I've worked for my dad and ah...well I had had that job but I guess I didn't bring that up because I knew what they was getting at. And they said, well you're going to have to get a release from him. And ah...I said, man I'm married ah...and I don't live with my dad anymore and he hadn't got anything to do with me, I'm down here and I want to go to work you know. And you know how the bureaucracy is, they wouldn't hire me. and they said, if you won't get a release then come back with your last employer and we'll give you a job. So I walked...I'm walking back cause I can't get out of Dallas, I don't even know what streetcar to catch to get back out...you know where it'll go towards Sherman or Greenville. So I'm walk...I've got enough money to catch me a bus back and I'm back over there to the Continental bus station and it's right there on Jackson Street behind the hotel, if you remember where...there in downtown Dallas, behind the Baker Hotel. I'm coming up Ackerd Street there and I run into an old boy walking across the street that was a doorman there at the Baker Hotel. And ah...he was going in the old R & D Cafe there and (unintelligible)...his cafe is right across from the Baker on Ackerd. And I went in there, well he...he wanted to know what I was doing up there and I told my sad story. And he said, well you can go to work here in this hotel if you want to this evening. And I said, doing what. He said, bellhop. He said, they need some bell hops. And he said, you got a good personality and if you don't mind doing something said, you can make more money there than you can at the defense

plant. And you know I went over there and hired up that evening, went to work at six o'clock that afternoon. Never had been in the Baker Hotel or any other hotel I don't guess in my life, you know besides that old three story hotel in Lacrosse, Washington. And I worked there for awhile, several months you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they put you in a uniform?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, wearing a uniform. Had to pay to work , you ah...we had to pay ah...ah...fifty cents a shift We'd work two shifts one day and one the next. Like this morning we'd go to work, work six to twelve, come back this afternoon and work from six to twelve and tomorrow work from twelve to six. And ah...I don't guess I work up there ah...ah...a week that I didn't make two or three hundred dollars.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Good tips.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And you know you was giving people service and ah...and they...they'll be nice to you. And ... but it ah...it wasn't ah...and I went on home...I.I sprained my ankle. It was so busy in those days that you couldn't hardly catch an elevator, even the freight elevator. They had two freight elevators and we rode them most of the time you know, except when we was taking somebody upstairs. And we'd ride the elevator with them unless they had a whole lot of luggage, and if they did we'd take the back elevator. But I would...if I was up anywhere on the 5th or 6th story down, I'd come down the steps. And they had rails and you could grab a step and the rail and I could take one step and hit...in other words two steps and I've gone a floor. And I grabbed that rail and jumped you know and I'd be back down and I'd hit that again you know. And I sprained my ankle one day and ah....so I went home, I knew I'd sprained it bad and I went home and I never did go back, because I...it was getting time to go in the

service and I knew II wanted to go in the service and I just....ah...I knew I wasn't going back there after the war because ah...it wasn't the kind of job that a family man had you know, really.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...let's go back just a little, I might one to...from of course where your from up there, legendary Ranger named Bob Goss is from up there, I'm not going to bother too much with Goss on this because we've covered him extensively in another interview we did in this early years. Ah...you say you were married ah...who was your wife?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Katherine Cooper Elliott, I marriedKatherine and I graduated from high school together and ah...ah...she had ah...her daddy was a farmer and ah...ah...she was born up at Dodd City which is five miles west of Windom. And she movedthey moved to Windom I think when she was in the second or third grade. And she and I went through school, all through school together. She had four sisters and ah...I thought a lot of her daddy too. He was a....yeah her father was a good man, he was just a....just a countryah...his brother ran a grocery store and that helped a whole lot because he....when it was too bad farm why he'd help his brother with the grocery store. And they lived right there in town. And ah...they was a good family. We had lots of fun. Five girls and they allno boys and ah...there's only ah...well there's only three of them living now. There's ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you and Katherine date during high school and....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Yeah, we dated during high school and oh you know how kids are, it wasn't ah...ah...we didn't get serious until I guess tenth grade or something. You know we didn'tand then we'd squabble a little bit then like kids do you know. But ah...I guess that ah..I considered Katherine my girlfriend you know from the tenth grade on. But ah...I always liked her you know growing up together. But ah...we farmed some land the year my dad was out in ah....in

Amarillo. It's down south of town, farmed two places I did and ah...the year he was out there I made twenty-seven bales of cotton and I'm still just a young squirt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You married yet?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah..no, I married that year. Yeah, I married that December.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How big effect did Katherine have on you coming back from Washington?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, a whole lot you know. Cause you know that wasthat deal that man offered me and he told me you know he said, I'll get you a deferment and you can stay right here and farm. And ah...if I'd had any sense at all I'd of wrote her and said, you know I want to send you a train ticket and you come to Washington you know. But ah...cause ah...that was a real good offer at that time. It was a real good offer. Ah...but you know, I'd been to Washington and I'd seen the country and had some money in my pocket. And I'd like to of made some more now, I'd of stayed up there and picked apples for a month...or another month anyway if I got somebody to stay with me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was it that wanted to come back, what was his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it was an old boy his name was Peck Keel. He was...he was sorry. He was...he was twenty years older than I was and had an old crippled arm. I never will forget we...we went to down the rain....to the train station and we wore khaki's. You know khaki's was kind of the thing then even you know folks didn 't have a whole lot of dress clothes and you could look real nice in a pair of starched khaki's you know. And we went down to the train station and he was wearing khaki's and I had on a pair of khaki pants and a sweater. And I'll be darned if a woman asked him if he was a service man and he told her yeah and he got his tickets half price. And I...you know I couldn't lie to that woman, I....and she asked me said, you in the

service too. And I said, no ma'me I'm not. He got....but you know a train ticket ...I think twenty-five or thirty dollars would be what we rode a train from Lacrosse, Washington to Wichita Falls, Texas wasn't much more than that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...when you and Katherine decided to get married did you meet any resistance from either family?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh my mother was ah...she didn't like the idea at all but ah...ah...she...you know she gave in pretty quick after that. And ah...of course she found out later it was probably the best thing that ever happened to me. Cause I was ...you know I had a lot of growing pains andthat and pick up and go to Washington state you know and ...and ah...just seeking adventure well you could get into trouble you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And your sixteen.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...if you wanted to you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...well when did you and Katherine get married?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We got married on December 25, 1943.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where at?

GLENN ELLIOTT: In ah...Ardmore, Oklahoma. She was a....she was....belonged to the Church of Christ and I was a Methodist and it was a Presbyterian preacher married us.

ROBERT NIEMAN: She was married in the Church or in the home?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh at home, yeah. See we could go to Oklahoma and ah...kids couldn't get a license to marry in Texas without ah...taking their parents with them you know. But you could go to Oklahoma and buy a license for five dollars andand ah...we went up there and got the clerk up.....well there was another couple that married up there a couple of years before ah...had told us how to go about it all and the clerk helped us find this preacher you know and all this

stuff. Naw my folks didn't even know we was going to get married. But ah...of course I had to ask Katherine's folks for her hand you know. And ah...but ah...but I was in that...daddy had that '40 model Ford and I'd been having to make the payments on it you know. And I had a little money in my pocket. And it was cold, man the ground the froze solid, and that's the only way you get around up there in winter and....on those off roads when the ground froze you know. And you just go anywhere you wanted to. But ah...yeah that was ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well where did ya'll go on you honeymoon?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ardmore.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Went to Ardmore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. We was back in Windom the next day. You know folks didn't takeyou know you didn't go...you didn't have money to throw away then you know. And of course I'd...by that time I'd already been back from Washington a good while andand trying to farm and trying to do this and that. And I'd gone through right smart....I think I had twenty-seven, thirty is all I had when I got married, something like that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when did you go in the service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I went in the service ah...let's see that was '43, I went in the service in ah....'44.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was...did....what did you do between the service and Baker Hotel?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...I stayed at the Baker up until pretty much when I sprained my ankle and I came back home and ah...and there was a guy that had a pretty good corn crop there and ah...and the guy asked me to help him with the elevator there. They was buying the corn. And ah...I worked there until ah...I went in the service. And ah...just run around town there for nearly nothing you know. And probably three dollars a day something like that. But ah...I knew I

was going and I...and I...we never had established a place in ah...in Dallas to stay. Katherine was pregnant by then and ah...so ah...ah...we just ah...and I needed to be home you know. And ah...we...I knew I was going in the service and I couldn't see any reason for us up and moving to Dallas you know. And then she didn't know anybody up there, didn't have any doctors and she was going to that doctor in Paris. In fact Diane was born in Paris.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what was your child's name, this child?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Glenna Diane, yeah. She was...

ROBERT NIEMAN: And she was born on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She was born August 21st of the following year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: 1945?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. She stayed in the ah...in '44.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '44.

GLENN ELLIOTT: She stayed in the incubator....I was telling somebody about that the other night when we was up in Paris at a basketball game. Diane stayed in the incubator in the Paris hospital for three weeks. She was premature, she didn't weigh quite five pounds as I remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How much premature was she?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Three weeks. And ah...she ah...ah...they charged us three dollars a day, that's what her hospital bill ...Katherine didn't stay but about three days, fourbut Diane had to stay three weeks in the hospital in the incubator, after she was born. And they was charging us three dollars a day. I talked to a guy that ah...goes to Church with Diane, my daughter up at Texarkana, that works at the hospital up there, he said it costs four thousand dollars a day now to keep a kid in the incubator.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Inflation. Or something.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And it was three dollars then. Three.....I've still got the bill, still got the hospital bill.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Three dollars. And then your son Dennis, when was he born?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Dennis was born...Dennis was born in '55 I guess, '54. He's 41. Ah...and I was already working for the DPS then you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is there any other children?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no just the two.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, well going back then ah.....when did you actually go in the service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was..I registered when I was 18, on August 1st. I took my physical the same month and I went in the....I believe ah...September, the last part of September.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And was the Army your first choice?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I tell you what ah...I was trying to get in the....I'd already tried to get in the Air Force. I got interested in those planes that they....bombing you know when I was pre-flighting 'em all. But I couldn't pass the color chart. I guess I was either color dumb...I'm a little color blind, there's some colors that I'll have trouble with. Ah...it's either color dumb or color blind one or some of both. But ah...I knew I couldn't get....couldn't fly. I'd already....I'd already tried to get in the Cadet program. So I had decided I was going to try to get in the Navy. Ah...or the Marines one. But ah...they always ask you, you know, they didn't then, we ah...I went in to Dallas...my father-in-law and my daddy carried me to Bonham when I left to go tobe inducted in the Army. The line...they....they loaded us up on the bus there in Bonham and carried us in to Dallas and we were sworn in. And that's when they ah...I asked 'em for the Navyah Marines was my second choice and they....you know they justthey said, what branch of service you son, you know and that's what I didn't....and they....I never will forget, he stamped

Army you know and handed me my papers you know, and that's the way it happened see. And then they put us on a train, we marched from downtown Dallas there on Commerce all the way down to the train station down there at junction and went to San Antonio.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Katherine with you when you left or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No she stayed in Windom. They ah...see I had to be in Bonham by four o'clock in the morning, bus left at four o'clock in the morning. I got in to Dallas by, you know, seven-thirty I guess. And ah....my dad and my father-in-law went with me, they carried me to Bonham and ah...and put me on this bus and ah....so I went....I went down to San Antonio. We got all of our shots there and then I had my basic training in Fort Hood. And then I got a delay in route from Fort Hood to Fort Mead, Maryland, I got to spend a week at home. And ah...I guess that's the first time ah...well no I'd ridden a train from Lacrosse, Washington to home. But I hadn't been.....spent that much....that's the first time I'd ever been on a train when I rode that train back from Washington, never had ridden....a train come through Windom all the time there but we never did you know even entertain the idea of riding a train. Ah...but I got back ah...got a delay in route to Fort Mead, Maryland and ah...got up there and got in that boxing tournament like I told you and we had a little time to kill and ah...and I won my weight division and ah...got a three day pass and went up to New York, spent one night and come back. And ah...we went on up to Newport News, Virginia, the port of debarkation and we was practicing loading....boarding ship. And ah...you know you hear about folks that ah....and I'm not psychic, I don't even believe in psychic's and ah...but I'm laying on this top bunk of this bed there at Newport News and ah...it was a whole lot like East Texas and ah...upper bunk and a day dreaming. I said, man you know if I....Army was to station me in Paris, Texas you know and I'd be close home and....Army didn't bother me, I you know, I was doing all right, I could do this soldiering. And ah...they

called us out, whistle blew, everybody fall out. And they took everybody under 25 years old and we swapped our mesquitos....our OD's for mesquito nets and khaki's.

ROBERT NIEMAN: OD's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah, brown...ah...heavy wool clothes you know....for khaki's and mesquito nets and boarded a train. And three days later....mornings later the train stopped somewhere during the night and we sleptyou know where they slept on it and woke up and we was in Paris, Texas at the Camp Maxey. And ah...of course we'd already had our basic training. We was pretty tough soldiers and ah...I was either...I'd thought about getting into the ah...ah...Paratroopers. But I was afraid the war was going to be over. And I was wanting...I...I...I kind of wanted to get in the war a little bit. And I knew time...I didn't have time to (unintelligible)....so we got into Paris and we started hit and run warfare, we was ah...they was...you know the Pacific was losing enough of those men of course andand ah....we'd ah...we had a simulated island and we was going in by submarine and we was going to get off and float in and kill everything on the island and board the submarine and leave again you know. And it was...they had this island drawn out just like the island we was supposed to done when we got over there. And they...they harped on us about how you know, ya'll are trained soldiers and don't be afraid to do anything. Well we like to tore the barracks up you know. And those of us sleeping upstairs in the barracks if they hollered, fall out, we liable to come out the upstairs window you know. And ah...and we was there about two weeks and ah...they said, man ya'll, you know, ya'll don't need anymore training. And they sent us on to.....of course I imagine they....but we went on to Frisco and then...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was you able to stay at home any?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no. I went home both weekends you know. And I brought my dad's car back the second weekend. He was...he was between jobs then andand so we had a....I had an aunt that lived there in Paris, my dad's sister and ah...so I left the car down at her house. Cause I knew thatthey couldn't even get on that camp...base then to get it. And doggone good thing I did cause the second weekend ...the second time I come home well I was thinking about having the car to come home the next weekend and...and we shipped out. And ah...so we went on overseas. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ship out from where?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Frisco, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: On...do you remember the ship?

GLENN ELLIOTT: USS Dashing Wave, it was a Merchant Marine ship. There was 2500 troops and half of us had to stay on the deck and the other half in the hole. That's the way we did it all the way over there. Took us 29 days and nights.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hot or cold?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Hot.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Much sea sickness?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well just in Frisco Bay and then ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you get it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Oh man, I get sea sick easy..I...I still would today. I couldn't go...I couldn't go out here on the coast fishing, I'd get sea sick ah...I get air sick a little bit now, much as I fly and not as bad as I used to but I get sea sick just, easy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where did you land?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We landed in ah...ah...New Guinea. And ah...joined a search light....search light company. And then ah...wasn't there just a short time until we came to the Philippines and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Whereabouts did you land in the Philippines?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We landed in Manila Bay. And we went....

ROBERT NIEMAN: About when was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was...ah...it was about three months before ...or four before the war was over I guess so let's say....they dropped the atomic bomb in August....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah....let's see, I guess I'd been therewe'd already liberated Baguio, which is the northern part of the Philippines Islands. That's the.....that's the only recognition that I got that they....New Guinea was already liberated. We ah...we invaded Baguio and I was Military Police and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you were in the search light to start with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and they made a Military Police company out of us, shortly after I got there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And this is while you were in

GLENN ELLIOTT: In New Guinea. And we took our training...we came on....we trained aboard ship. And ah...and then we ah...got in the Philippines there and we went on up to Baguio and ah...and of course Military Police worked traffic you know, that's what they do in invasions. And we...and after we got to ah...all of...well we didn't get 'em all, they was still japs around there you know. But ah...we got everything in pretty good shape there and ah...so we started

practicing and studying for the invasion of Japan. And ah...I was...I went to Kobe, Japan by the way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The one that just had the earthquake.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You were telling me the other night about a building you saw on the news.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. The building was still there. You know what, there was three of us....Kobe was a ...they had a ah...ah...prisoner of wara few...they was holding a few prisoners of war there in Kobe...they had released them by the time we got in there, but they were still there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Americans?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And...well some Americans, some Australian there too, I don't know . And ah...anyway ah...we ah...the Provost Marshall sent myself and ah...ah...two more guys to find us a building. And this building was out of real big concrete blocks, you know like about 18 inches thick. And it withstood the bombing. The windows were all broken out of it just about it, but everything around it was just flat, just about it. And it was still standing and it looked good. And we got in there and...and ah...I went on in and got me a room and ah...I knew we was going to stay there. And ah...in fact there was some pretty good furniture. Now I moved a couch in this room and me and this other guy, (unintelligible)....shared this room. And ah...so I went back and I think we spent the night there, maybe two nights. And we went back and got with out outfit and they was camped outside of town, they was just in tents. And ah...I guess they spent one night, and then anyway ah...we come on into town and theywe went to that building and took it over and got the windows fixed in it and ...and ah...it was...oh it was stout, good

building. It was a three story building and ah...so we just took it over. And that was our company headquarters. And then we ...we used this ah...area down there where the ah...prisoners of war ah....was holding them for our motor pool. But it had a big fence all the way around it. And so we had our vehicles protected you know, from anybody. And ah...of course then ah...ah...sailors and....of course the sailors wasn't coming in then. See the reason....well you had to inland to Kobe because Kobe Harbor was so mined and it took 'em about two months to three to clear the mines out of Kobe Harbor.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's spelt K-o-b-e isn't it, Kobe, yeah

GLENN ELLIOTT: They knewthe Japs knew where the mines were but we hadn't got good communications with them you know. And ah...I was real lucky I met a white Russian family ah...while we was securing that building and ah...they was a man and his wife andsee Kobe before the war was an industrial city and there was a lot ship....and I guess is was the largest ah...bay and even larger than Tokyo bay I understand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I understand it still is.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....they had a lot of foreigners in there and this Russian, white Russian ah...ah...woman's daddy had died. And they didn't have any gasoline to put in the hearse. And they spoke fluent english and ah...so that's the first people.....everybody was hiding then you know, but you know...you couldn't....you didn't see anybody the week or two. You know they just ...seemed like they all went underground after we got in there. But ah...I gave her....I...I got some gas off the back of my jeep and put about three gallons in that old hearse. And the Japs were even using charcoal in their vehicles and some of their trucks, run 'em on charcoal in the end. They was whipped, boy we had 'em whipped. But we didn't know it you

know. But ah...I got acquainted with these folks and they....we used them for interpreters, they could speak Japanese real well too.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where in Russia were they from do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't remember. You know I don't even know if they asked 'em you know. Cause I..I ...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Cause they was Russian.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. Cause it was ah....you know I was...had something else on my mind then I guess besides ah....you know and I'll tell you, I'm not a historian like you are you know, I didn't give a damn where they was from. And ah....but anyway we used 'em. And used them well. But of course you know I got ah.....and they...they opened a business up there later, a tavern. And ah...of course my party and I could go up there anytime we wanted to you know. And ah....and it was a pretty high class and then of course we had ah....we had a lot of trouble with blacks and after the Quarter Master came in ah...we had you know, just the same old thing you know, a lot of racial problems and stealing and we had to put military police on all the trucks. I finally told the Provost Marshall I said, hell send that Quarter Master home, I said, why I think I'd put an MP on the truck well let him drive it. You know, they was stealing rolls of lumber and food and putting it on the black market you know. And beer and when they started coming in and they just steal a whole truck load and go somewhere and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Truck and all.

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah and just....oh they'd bring...they come on back with the truck but instead of going from the ship to warehouse or Quarter Master to unload one of them would just single off and go to the black market and unload it and go back and get another load you know.

But ah...yeah I...and ah...I served with some old boys over and ah...see our outfit was froze, we had some high point people in our....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What do you mean froze?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah..point...ah....we was....you know they was bringing home on the points system after the war and ah....but us being a military police and theythey didn'tthey froze all the point system in our outfit and everybody in the company had to go to Japan. Some of them had been over there for four years. But they still had to go. And we got relieved soon as the ships started coming into Kobe Bay and the replacement troops and we got to come home you know. But some of those guys that went over there with us had been in the South Pacific for four to six months or so you know....four months and more.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you...you...when did you leave Kobe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man I don't know, let's see....

ROBERT NIEMAN: '45 or '46?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Be '46 because I spent Christmas in '45 over there, I know that. Because I spent ah....Christmas....two Christmas' away from home there. Ah...yeah it was...I guesslet's see we went in there like probably in September ah....the latter part of September, October, November and December. Probably January or February I got out of there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what did you sail home on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...we sailed home on a pretty good ship, it was a Navy ship. I don't remember the name of it, we landed in Seattle. But they had pretty good food and we hadwe had...we could sleep. That merchant marine ship was tough. The only....there was ah...there was a marine group on there were gunners. And ah...we were....we ah...they started training us as soon as we got on there for ammunition (unintelligible).... And ah...so the troops would carry the

ammunition and the marines would handle the ah...and the merchant marines they would keep the ship going you know and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why were they training you on ammunition, the war was over?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I mean on the way over.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay, going over, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: When I went over on the...on this merchant marine ship.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Now the Navy ship we came back on....see the Navy they handled everything you know...but I mean on the Navy ships, but on those merchant marine ships they had to put military personnel on gunner crews see.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of guns were they do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh they were 20 millimeter and ah...ah...and they had some big guns on the front and back. But ah...we did....we got under air attack ah...two different times. But ah...it wasn't too bad because ah...ah...the situation was I, you know, I think ah...twice...I know...and then of course that was all because I don't remember (unintelligible)....but anyway we...but ah...it was just a (unintelligible)....they wasn't trying to bomb, I guess they'd already used their bomb on something else you know. Of course they tried to get those transports ah...ah...supplies. Of course we had a lot of supplies on ours. Ah...the USS Dashing Wave. That was the name of it. They played three songs every morning woke you up. The Three Cavaliers, Don't Fence Me In, and ah....gosh I never did think I'd remember....forget those ah...there was three songs they played, the same ones on...on the...on the loud speakers, the same dern songs. It's nearly eight o'clock.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's just see, we got you coming in...we're just about...we'll wrap up here in just a minute for tonight. You get back in to Seattle, now what?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I get in to Seattle and ah...I call home and country boy don't evennot even thinking aboutI think we got in there about ten o'clock at night, I called home and woke my folks up. Katherine stayed with ah...her daddy and them while I was gone. Then I....ah...we caught a train to San Antonio and I got out of San Antonio and I had ah....I got this eye messed up a little bit. There was a heater exploded.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Your right eye?

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah and ah....had started....a growth came on my eye soon after that and it started growing on there. They called it a (unintelligible)....I don't think....it probably was already there. But ah....I never noticed it, so I had to have my eyehad to have it transplanted while I was in.....well they split your eyeball and push it down in there so that I....and ah....but I got to come home first. And ah...ah...and then I went back to San Antonio and had eye surgery before I got out. And an old drunk doctor did the surgery on that, I could smell alcohol on him. And then, you know what that son-of-a-gun did, they sent me to the barracks, got up out of the chair and put a patch on my eye and sent me to the barracks. You couldn't move your head those stitches you know ah....they....I've had it transplanted once since then. But ah...that's what happened to my old right eye, it gets to looking red and then...anyway ah...ah...I went back down there and had eye surgery. But I hitchhiked, and ah...I wouldn't you know...a soldier could get out then and catch him a ride in a Philadelphia minute you know. And you could beat the bus any way you wanted to go you know. So I hit the road and I put my money in my boots so you know, get out there and catch me a ride home you know. And I got home and ah....and jobs were not very plentiful. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this might be a real good place to stop for the night.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When are you mustered out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well '46...it would have been about April I guess of '46, or May somewhere ah...you know. Ah...I think I spent 22 months in service.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was your rank when you came out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was a Staff Sergeant.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why don't we stop here tonight. And that's a good stopping place and then tomorrow night we'll

GLENN ELLIOTT: I can't believe time went by that fast you know it. I know your tired.

Break in tape

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's my son-in-law's old desk chair there. Boy that's the most comfortable thing. I get out here and leave that door open and I roll that....and that's where I sit and watch the news in the afternoon, when I'm up here by myself , in that chair there. I really like it, it is

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is a continuation from last weeks life of Glenn Elliott. We're now shooting at Glenn's farm home in Windom, Texas. And this is Wednesday night, February 1st. Glenn want to go back and cover a few things. You had a few corrections you said you wanted to make from our previous interview.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes I thinkI believe that I....I don't remember but I got to thinking about it later ah....I told you that the short period of time that I worked at the Baker Hotel in Dallas that I was making four hundred dollars a week and I....and it should have been four

hundred a month, which was still good money in those days you know. And ah....and it was real good money.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...couple of things I want to...you did say that when you were in Washington you were making twenty-five per day....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Per day....

ROBERT NIEMAN:plus room and board.

GLENN ELLIOTT:room and board, that's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN:which in....this was in 19...ah...

GLENN ELLIOTT: '42.

ROBERT NIEMAN:okay, which would have been phenomenal money then. Of course....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. I'd....I'd never worked for a dollar a day. I'd never been paid over a dollar a day for labor up until that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And was part of this due to the labor shortage from World War II or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I have an idea that that had something to do with it. But those people up there always paid good wages, because why would people from Texas migrate all the way up there to work if they didn't, you understand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sure.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Andand....and they needed people to work just during the harvest which was from like ah....May until September maybe. Or maybe June 'til September, cause it....the seasons were later up there. I don't even remember what time we left, but ah...I know the harvest was finished here and we didn't make too good a crop that year and ah...and so....but they were....they paid well or people would not ride a Chevrolet truck from here to Lacrosse, Washington to work if they wasn't getting paid for it you know. And....and the guy Ithat we

went with had been up there before you know. And ah...and...and so we knew....we didn't know exactly what we was going to get. And I think I told you I hired out first for fifteen dollars a day and room and board just to drive a truck back and forth. And...and ah...and then this guy got sick, his son, and...and I...and that was the going price for....I'd...I would of driven the caterpillar for fifteen dollars a day. I was tickled to death to get fifteen, but the people I was working for were...they were good solid people. And they said, no we pay...you know...you twenty-five dollars a day to go and run the caterpillar, and that's what you'd get you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you said, when ya'll got up there, there was a large group of you, did all of you work the same place or did you all scatter out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no. Ah...we got there on Saturday afternoon. We left onI think we left Windom, Texas here....I think we left on a Saturday. I think it took us exactly a week to drive from here to Lacrosse, Washington. We spent one night in a motel as I think I told you, in Pocotow, Idaho. The rest of the time we drove day and night. And ah....it took us a week to get up there. And the first job, I hired out with a friend of mine that was raised here in Windom named Woodrow Crossman and we went to work for a German man named Charles Kleinsmith. I'll never forget his name. Short, heavy set German that like to work. He had a baby that wasn't two months old and we'd sit down....we ate at the table with them, we slept up in the grain bin on a set of springs, I'm talking about metal springs with cowhide thrown over for a mattress and some old blankets to cover with and a pillow. And that's where Woodrow and I slept. And Charles would...every...every meal he had this baby would be in there and there's my little....little harvester, you know. He...he was priming that boy talking to him about being a harvester when he was six weeks old you know. And he meant you know, cause the German people are very apt to labor, there's no question about that. And...and ah...they don't mind

working and they're very well disciplined. And ah....and this...but this was funny to us you know because I don't guess anybody in East....down here in this part of Texas ever talked about their six week old baby being a cotton picker you know. But Char....he was sincere about that. And I'll bet you that the kid right now is probably running his daddy's farm for him you know, right today. I would bet in Lacrosse, Washington or out whichever direction it was from Lacrosse where they lived, he's probably that ah....raising grain right now on his daddy's place, there's no question in my mind.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...I want to drop back to your dad. You said you dad played professional baseball.

GLENN ELLIOTT: My dad did play professional baseball for Wichita Falls one season ah....sometime before he got married and ah...after he got out of school. And I never did get the dates but my daddy was a....was good with the sticks. He...I mean he could hit a baseball anyway....any direction. And he's told me a many a time that there's an old barn on the place they lived that ah...down south of Windom where he was raised and said, when they had time he...he'd get an....had an old ball and he'd just throw it up on that barn and let it roll off and he'd hit it. And....and that's what he did and....for his entertainment when he had a few minutes to do so. And I tell you what, I've seen my daddy after he got my age ah....and they moved to Longview in 1956 so daddy would have been 58 years old at that time and a few years later, probably not quite my age but ah....say in his 60's oh....or Dennis, our son, was playing little league baseball. And my dad would coach Dennis a whole lot. And he'd get out there and...and he'd hit a ball, couldn't anybody throwhe'd hit a ball every time anybody throw him one you know, any direction. He'd hit where he wanted to. And he had to come back home. Of course they didn't pay professional players. They....they started out in this area here with...with a

Windom ball team. And they'd beat towns like Paris and Sherman and McKinney and ...and they were renowned. We had some, obviously some good ball players around Windom here. And ah...of course Windom was never large enough to have a football team, we didn't even have a gymnasium for basketball, played out on the dirt you know. Andand....but baseball, boy listen, they shined down at Windom. So dad for some reason or other got an invite to go to Wichita Falls to play ball. And went up there one season. And of course they didn't pay 'em much of anything and ...and ah...and for some reason or other, for family reasons he had to come back home. I don't remember just exactly what he said. But my dad was a pretty good ball player.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What position did he play?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh he played ah...second base. And....but he was mainly good with the sticks, he....he could hit the ball. And of course he was a good glove man too. And my dad was real active here even when we had baseball here, the citizens in the community had to support the baseball team. The school was too poor to buy bats and balls and gloves. If you played ball on the Windom baseball team you had to furnish your own glove, didn't have any uniforms, you had to furnish your own cap. Ah...most of the time you had to go play ball, you had to furnish your own transportation, you know we didn't have a school bus to transport to ball games. But we had a good ball team. Beat some good teams you know. But dad was...dad was a good ball player and he supported baseball. And even after they moved to East Texas, he'd go ...there's so many of those ah...ah...see they had the East Texas league down there then ah...farm teams for Kilgore, Gladewater and Longview all had a farm team for major leagues. And my dad would go to as many of those games as he could.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....back to your childhood some more. Ah....we were talking earlier today about children were raised to....seemed to if you don't do what's right we're going to get that old bad policeman out to get you. Was that ever....how was....was you raised, your attitude towards police?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, my attitude toward police were a little different. I...I've....I've heard people in my time, I never was myself, but I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you wasn't raised that way.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. But I've heard of people that were. See ah....I think I told you in an earlier interview if I didn't, my dad andand his family all were real active in politics. They...they had an active part in election of nearly ever Sheriff or County Commissioner in their precinct, the Sheriff of the county and the county Judge, on every election. And you know I've seen my daddyand of course we had....at one time we hadwell we had a guy living out here in this chicken house who was ah....never been married. We had a house down at the foot of the hill here where another guy lived and then we had a house over here behind this rock pit where another....we had three families living on our farm at one time. And we had a lot of neighbors. And there was a lot of people lived out in the country. And my daddy and my uncle would get behind a candidate and if folks needed a way to the polls they'd haul. Might be a wagon, might be in a Model A Ford, but they'd get 'em to vote.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there poll taxes then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But you had to buy....you had to pay for a poll tax then as I remember it, maybe cost you a dollar.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever hear of your mom or dad....or your dad or any of your uncles paying poll taxes for people to vote?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I never heard of it but I wouldn't be surprised if it might not of happened. But money wasn't all that ah...you know ah...I don't think daddy hadmy uncle....now my uncle ah....would probably would have because ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Which uncle was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Claude, he was the only living uncle that....my dad had three brothers but ah....one of 'em died shortly after his ah....his mother died out here in '31 so he only had one brother left and the rest of them were sisters. He had five sisters. And ah...my uncle was aa disabled veteran from World War I and ah....ah....I know....I found out later in years through my dad that he had been drawing about a hundred dollar a month pension from the government ever since World War I. So he had a little money, daddy didn't have any money. But my uncle always....he had you knowhe was...he was...well a hundred dollars a month then was a lot of money. And he was...he wasand of course they was all proud he was getting it because my dad wasn't old enough to go into World War I, he was just on the verge of having to go. Cause see he was born in 1898 and ah....so ah...my uncle it wouldn't surprise me a bit if he hadn't had people buy their poll taxes. Because they....my folks voted and they insisted that I vote. I voted in every election since....I think I missed getting to vote while I was ah....overseas maybe. Nah...cause you couldn't 'til you was 21 then. And of course I'd already served my time then. But I voted every election I've ever....you know I've never missed.....well I got...I missed one vote one time after I got on the Rangers because I was working a criminal case on election day and didn't get back in time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Republican or Democrat?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Democrat. I've voted for a lot of Repub.....I vote for the person.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you were raised as a.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah I've never voted even 'til today in a Republican primary. I've always voted in a Democratic primary because for this reason, most of the time with your local elections you've got more to say about how things go because there's more Democrats running. And I wanted to be a part of all of it. But then in the general election I...I vote for the person you know. And...but I was raised a Democrat because this is Democrat country up here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was your dad a ah...I'd vote for a yellow dog before I'd vote for a Republican Democrat?

GLENN ELLIOTT: My dad was a yellow dog Democrat until Richard Nixon came along. And my dad thought Richard Nixon and what I told you the day he died, was probably the best president the United States of America ever had. Even after the scandal he got involved in. Daddy thought Richard Nixon ran things like it was supposed to be run.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did your dad work much with ah...Sam Rayburn since he

GLENN ELLIOTT: My dad wasI showed....you know we went down this afternoon and my dad was raised down in.... Sam Rayburn as I think I told you this afternoon, was probably four or five years older than my daddy , but they went to school together. In fact one of my aunts and Sam Rayburn left Flag Springs, Texas in a wagon and drove to Windom and caught a bus to Converse to go to college the same day. And ah...daddy was raised down there with the Rayburns and knew 'em and...and ah....I told you I've been in Mr. Rayburn's home with my dad and he offered him, when World War II first broke out, he tried to get my dad to take abuild some houses up at Bonham for ah....pilot instructors on a cost plus basis and....and agreed to send him the contract to....for he could borrow the money. He had to borrow about ten thousand dollars. And of course that was a heap of money back in 1941 and '42. And ah...and daddy just didn't get into it. But we had ah...the government built lakes down here onon the Red River

at...back in the '30's, '36 and '37. And through Rayburn I know now that my dad had mules leased down there and ah... and we'd go down there every day. In fact my brother and I....and so in '36 I would have been 10 years old and ah...we'd go down and feed the mules andand we....and we started selling coke cola's and tobacco and stuff and ice. And we set us up a tent down and my brother and I ah...worked one summer down there, we'd....and we'd haul....we'd stop in Honeygrove and get a block of ice and some coke cola's and soft drinks and candy and we'd take 'em down there and sell 'em and ah....to those employees down there when daddy would work all day and he had mules down there. And of course we had to haul feed down there in the trailer. And so we got in to coke cola business my brother and I and he was four years older than I, so he'd of been 14 and I'd of been 10. And I'll tell you something that happened down there that time, I'll never forget. We saved our pennies and ah...gave 'em to my mother. And we had nine, almost ten dollars worth of pennies when we came out that summer that we had saved. And my mother bought a linoleum rug to go in the living room of the old house that used to sit right here for....with the pennies that we saved down there that....and you know that's how things were back in those days. So I know dad....I know Mr. Rayburn probably helped dad get on down there you know, get the mules leased down there and....and they paid him to work too you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well in Washington he was universally known as Mr. Sam, did ya'll call him Mr. Sam here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no daddy called him Sam you know. And of course I called him Mr. Rayburn.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We saw there today you were born right across the road from where Rayburn was born.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he still live out there when you were a child? Down south of Windom here.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No....see....no see he was already in Washington then. See Sam Rayburn went to Washington probably in the earlylate 1900's or early '20's I'm sure. I...I'm not even surebut he'd been up there what forty something years when hein 1961 or '62 when he died see so....ah....he'd been in politics a long time. But maybe fifty years, I don't know. But ah...no I ah....Sam Rayburn was in Washington the first time I ever remember going up there and I've been up there when I....to his house with my dad when I was very young.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah....well let's....anything else you want to add on this period?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well were talking about Mr. Rayburn, you looked at the letter there today. You know I...Mr. Rayburn got me an appointment to West Point and ah....of course I don't think you could go into West Point until after you got 18 years old, or as I remember. And by that time I was already married and of course I got an inquiry from 'em and I had to....I returned it and then ah...I found this letter that ah...somebody had written Rayburn that they....I'd returned my inquiry, that I was married and they didn't accept married people in West Point.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They didn't accept married people or people who had been married.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And so they notified him that he...he could make another appointment you know. Which is a....was a standard procedure that they had I'm sure. So ah....yeah, that's how close we were to the Rayburn family. They were a first name basis you know. I'm sure daddy called him Sam.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...want to jump ahead now to your military or ah....forward in your life to your military again. We talked about that briefly. You....you went in as the ah....in a search light and ended up in the MP's.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:but when you joined, did you have any thoughts what branch you wanted to be in as far as infantry, artillery.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was drafted, I didn't join. I tried to join....I tried to talk my parents in to letting me join the Army soon after Pearl Harbor. And tomorrow I'll show you where I was when I heard about Pearl Harbor, right up there in Windom. My uncle had...had a little old filling station over there on highway 82 and there's a house there now, but ah...I had been to Church that Sunday and had come home and we'd had....we ate over at my grandma's or over at one of my aunt's or we ate here, I don't know, and ah...but after lunch I drove up to Windom, my cousin was running this service station for his daddy on the weekends. And they had a guy that worked there during the week, cause we was still in school in '41, see I didn't graduate until '42. And I went up there and stopped to visit my cousin, he had a little old radio up there wasn't big as a cracker box and....but it was on and ah....and it was shortly after noon seemed like, I don't remember what they started broadcasting but I think it was around one o'clock that we heard that Pearl Harbor had been attacked. And that's where I was. And I...I wanted to get in the service, see my brother was going to A & M and he ah...and he joined the Air Force about a week after Pearl Harbor and of course I wanted to go too. But my parents of course had tohad to sign consent you know. I'd had to story about my age. But I was...I could of passed for seven....you can join the Marines at seventeen at that time or Navy you know. But they didn't want me to go in cause my brother was in there and they needed some help on the farm. And I probably was too

young to go, but I wanted to you know. So I was wanting to get in the service. And then of course I made this trip to Washington and I got back and I got married and ah....well I hated to leave my family then kind of. But I...I...I could of gotten...my dad and my father-in-law both were farming and both of them tried to get me to go to farming and...and take my deferment you know and get a farm deferment. But I didn't want to do that, I...I...I did not want toI thought it was my duty and I think most young people at that....in those days did think it was their duty. Wewe was in a war well you know let's go help win the war you know. And that's what I wanted to do. But I waited until I got my draft notice to go in the service. And ah...yes I had my choice when I went....my dad and my father-in-law carried....I had to be in Bonham, Texas at four o'clock in the morning at the bus station. No, at a cafe up there. I think the main cafe. It was right on the square there in Bonham and of course myself and probably thirty other....however many a bus would hold, met there and we got on this bus and we went to Dallas, Texas. And ah....of course it probably.....during that time it probably took three hours for a bus to go from Bonham, Texas to Dallas you know. So we get in to Dallas around seven, seven-thirty in the morning and we're down there at the induction center when they open at eight o'clock andand we get lined up and ah....just like everybody else did and so I got up there and they said, well Elliott you want the Navy, Marines or Army. Well I asked for the Navy and ah....what's your second choice, Marines and they....I'll never will forget this, a guy took a stamp, Army. Next you know. And Iyou know I think they took every soul there that day in the Army you know. And....but they made you think you was given your choice. But ah....and we left Dallas and boarded a train and had no idea where we were going. Woke up the next morning in San Antonio and got all our shots and everything down there and was there for four or five days, a week, sleeping in tents. And ah....then we got on a train one night, seemed like the military always

moved you at night, and woke up the next morning in Fort Hood, Texas. And that's where I took my basic training.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what do you remember most about your basic? Liked or disliked or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....oh well of course you know ah....we were....I guess I was a pretty disciplined boy ah....the only thing I disliked about it, I guess the hardest days work I ever done in my life was a day of KP in the Army. And I'm serious about that. We....you'd start at four o'clock in the morning, you'd wind up about nine o'clock that night. And you scrubbed....at that time we scrubbed all the tables and the floor three times a day with a brush. I'm talking about a hand brush not a....one with a you know....you GI'd the whole....everything three times a day if you was on KP . And washed dishes and cleaned up and ah....and it was a tough job.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was you DI?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't have any idea. I don't....I cannot remember any of that....of course you know....but then we did what we were told to do you know. Do it and....and we'd do you know. You didn't....there wasn't anysomebody looking over your shoulder. I mean we all jumped in there, we knew we had to clean the floor, we had to wash the dishes and we had to brush....scrapewash the tables and mop, and we did it you know. But ah....I took my basic there and ah....I guess the only thing of any significance that happened....I know the first weekend pass that I got, see I was married at the time, first weekend pass I got while I was in the service, while I was taking basic training ah....we caught a travel bureau....there was several of us from up in this area and there was five of us that got together, we rode a bus into ah....from Kileen to Temple. And we got off like Friday afternoon you know , five o'clock whatever time, first pass we got , had to be back in Sunday night by eleven o'clock. So we catch a bus in Kileen

and we'd already heard, of course it's easy for word to get around, you could catch a travel bureau and probably travel about as cheap as you could by bus and get there a lot quicker into Dallas. So we went to a travel bureau office there close to the bus station and the five of us contracted this guy to haul us to Dallas and he was going....and of course he probably left Dallas went down to....and picked up some folks and carried 'em to Abilene and come back that.....anyway he was going to meet us the next afternoon at four-thirty, five o'clock at ah....there at the travel bureau, it was on....I think it was on Ackerd Street and ah....so we get into Dallas andand one of the boys ah....no I believe our families on that trip met us in Dallas. I think my wife met me in Dallas. And I'd worked there at the Baker Hotel and I could get a room real cheap there. And I knew they had the sample rooms where theythe people....you could rent a sample room then pretty cheap but being an ex-employee there they probably charged meor might not have I don't remember. I know one time I spent a weekend there and didn't have to pay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was a sample room?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's where the ah....sample rooms are on the mezzanine floor of the Baker and that's where all the people would come during conventions to show their wares. And if you were in there on the weekend or something when they wasn't having anyany shows....all those sample rooms were full....I mean were empty. And there was just one room with a bed in it and a....andand no furniture. Because they....the room was all set up for people to show their clothes or whatever their wares were you know that they was having in those.....they....this was a regular thing that they' have those shows. Now they got the Trade Center up there to do this you know. But then they used the hotel.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they have a bathroom in the room or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, there's a bathroom, sink, commode and shower. But the part...the room was not furnished with anything but a bed. And ah....and no other furniture, not even a chair. And....but when they....nobody wanted 'em you know to rent 'em, but I knew they was available and the bell captain and the room clerk knew me and they knew they was available and....and I never had any trouble getting a room in a hotel anywhere. And even when I went on the Highway Patrol I...I got into Fort Worth, the Texas Hotel ten, eleven o'clock at night and...and they said, we don't have any room. And I said, I know you got a sample room, all I need is a bed to sleep. Oh yeah, we can...you know come on we'll get you a room you know. So ah....the first pass, we catch this travel bureau into Dallas and ah...and we have a weekend and Sunday evening of course I'm....we were there waiting on him and he shows up and we head back to Kileen and this driver was driving a....I never will forget, he had a '41 Mercury

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it seems like the thing quit on us. Either that or my battery went dead. Battery went dead. That's all right, we'll go ahead with this and then we'll come back and catch up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....and this guy ran a red light, the driver, in Hillsboro, Texas. And ah...of course it was before interstate you know and ah...and the police got after him, he tried to out run 'em. And we hadn't paid him, that's one thing we didn't do, we'd pay when we got to where we were going. And ah...so he....he saw the police was going to catch him so he....he....he ah...convinced us that we shouldn't tell them that he was hauling us for hire. And ah...because that was against the law then you know, we didn't have any ICC or whatever you needed you know. So...he said, if ya'll won't....you could always tell 'em that I picked you up hitchhiking and he said, I ain't going....to know you don't owe me any money. And said ah....and if they let me go you still don't owe me, I'll take you home. But they didn't, they carried him back in, they

put us out there in the damn country, boy I'm talking about out inon the highway. Well five soldiers out there trying to catch a ride, you know normally a soldier is supposed to pick 'em up, but there was five out there and we're talking about it's already dark you know, eight or nine o'clock at night. And we had a little trouble finding....getting us a ride. And then finally there was a First Lieutenant ah....from there at Fort Hood ah....picked us up. And ah....we got inwe didn't get in to our barracks until about four o'clock that morning. In fact they were waking up the KP's and ah....there was another guy in the same outfit I was andand we hid behind the barracks til the guy in charge got back out of sight in the....to the headquarters. So we went on in and I just....we both got dressed in our fatigues and laid down on the bed for thirty minutes I guess and of course they went to call out you know. So ah.....I never will forget, we fell out and ah....and they called our two names and ah....after they called roll call and we answered and they said, report to the company headquarters. And ah...so we did, we went to the company headquarters and ah....there was a....I never will forget, there was a Corporal who was a clerk, little 'ole dried up guy didn't know how to soldier and he was company clerk and I guess regular Army, probably. And anyway ah....he just started chastising us and...and he said, ya'll are restricted....how come you didn't sign in last night, that was the first question. Well, forgot it you know, just forgot to do it, first pass. And ah....so he'd started and he said, well ya'll are restricted for the rest of the time your here and oh he was giving us hell and ah....the company commander came in. I heard him come in the back office and he was back there listening. And I tried to talk to this Corporal and he wouldn't listen to me you know. I said, look you know I said, I'll serve and I'll do what ya'll got to do and I said, I know where we're going when we leave here, I know what we're in here for you know and that's what we're here for. And ah...and I said, I'm married and I...and I said, I'd like to be with my wife and I said, you got folks going AWOL here and I'm

not going AWOL. I said, I'm here to serve my time but I said, I want....I want a pass. Ah...you know I...I can't see why I'm here and that the fact that I didn't sign in before eleven o'clock last night why I should be restricted the rest of the time I'm here from getting a weekend pass, I don't understand that. And finally the company Commander came to the door and....and he....and he asked us to come in his office. And we explained to him what happened and ah....he told that Corporal in our presence he said, you're the company clerk, you don't have authority to restrict anybody to anything and if I ever hear another comment from you well you're going to be back out doing something else you know. Well that made me feel good. Then...but I found out later see that they had posted on the board and ah....I was a....I was an acting Corporal already as squad leader, because I'm born in August and I'm supposed to be a leader. And I guess maybe I...I was a little bit you know. But anyway ah....I was supposed to have been in charge of quarters that weekend and it was on the bulletin board. Well nobody had ever told us anything about you got to go look at the bulletin board before you get a pass. All they told us you got to giveanswer your general order questions to get a pass. Well, I wanted a pass, I didn't go....nobody had ever said, go look on the bulletin board before you get a pass. And...and I....and I explained this to company Commander, I said, you know nobody's told me....he said, you was....you was on the list to be in charge of quarters this weekend, and you took a pass. I said, well you know ya'll gave me a pass you know, and I didn't....nobody's ever told me, I've been in the Army three weeks. And I said, nobody's ever said, before you get a pass go to the company and look on the bulletin board. And I said, ah....captain I'll serve you knowLieutenant I'll serve your....I've serve....charge the quarters, I'll serve MP, I'll serve kitchen duty, I'll do anything you got for me to do but I said, you know I'd like to have a pass every once in awhile to go home. And I'll make you a good soldier. And ah...he said, you go do it you know, so I did.

And the next contact I had with him, we went out on a two week bivouac and ah....I'd been on a couple of weekend passes and I came in and he called me in the office and he said, Elliott would I be imposing on you to ask youI know you'd like to have a pass, we've been on bivouac two weeks, but he said, I need somebody in charge of quarters. I'll do it you know. And ah...before I got out of camp they....they offered me ah...I could have gone to officers training school you know. He...he called me and told me said, you know, I can get you in officers training school if you want to go. And I said....well I was afraid the war was going to be over....I was...I was really wanting to get in the war. I...I...was you know, I was ready. And ah....and so I turned down officers training school because I was afraid the war was going to be over before I got into it. So I went from there to Fort Mead, Maryland, delay in route and stayed up there oh for about a week. Entered a boxing tournament, won my division. We got back and went to ah....Newport News, Virginia to the port of debarkation and we was all going to European theater. And theyin one day they...I think I told you this before probably, but ah...I'm sure I did in the other interview but ah....I'll make it brief. We ah...they called everybody out one morning there and....and we found out later everybody under 25 and ah....and they....we traded our OD clothes and our...our blankets and overcoats for khakis and mesquito nets. And we came back to Paris, Texas and then I think I told you and....and took some hit and run warfare to go to the Pacific. But ah...we was in such good shape and....and everybody had already been through basic and we was all under 25 and like to tore the barracks up and ah....hell they decided that we needed to go on. And they sent us on....we went on to the South Pacific.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, now you did your basic at Fort Hood?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember that Corporal's name that was going to restrict you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No....no.....no way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about your company Commander?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No...don't remember his name. No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have a preference which theater you went to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Europe or the Pacific?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, see we was going to European you know. They didn't give us any.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No but did youif you had your preference.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh (unintelligible - talking over each other).....no huh uh. No. I just....I just thought I needed to get....I wanted to have a part in the war, that's what I wanted to do, didn't make any difference to me which way I went. I wanted to go somewhere, I wanted.....I was ready to go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And did you....but did you want to be in the infantry or the artillery or

GLENN ELLIOTT: I wanted to be in the Navy I thought and then I.....and...but I got sea sick. I...I...found out after I...I'd never been....I've never been out on a boat. I think I'd been in one fishing boat probably in my life. And I didn't know I was going to get sick. But I'd heard, I'd already talked to folks and they said Navy boys have got a clean place to sleep and hot food to eat most of the time. Well that sounded pretty good to me you know. And I know I'm going to get to see some of the world and ah....so I thought Navy. You know and then Marines as my second choice. But ah....no it ah....I was just wanting to get involved. I wanted to have....do a little part, I wanted to have a little something to do with the war. And that's....there at the end you know pretty close.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay now you'reyou're in the South Pacific now and you were at New Guinea?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we...we went by New Guinea and really picked up the rest of these people and went on to same ship to ah....so my time in New Guinea was....was just short. Andand we went right on the same ship on to the Philippines.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you rememberyou ended up in ah...ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Baggio was my ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Baggio (unintelligible - talking over each other).....to Japan.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. We...we...actually we liberated the Philippines. Then we moved back between Clark field and Manila.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you're in the MP's by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...they made a Military Police outfit out of us. And ah...and we took very little training. But we had problems already there in Manila when we got back with ah....ah....that needed a lot of military police attention. Because the troops...there was a lot of troops didn't have anything to do, we...we were at that time making preparations for the invasion of Japan and there was a lot of idleness and ah....of course idleness and you know how....what idleness brings forth. And ah....and we had quite a bit to do in that area. But we waswe was stationed outside ofoutside of Manila, but we'd go in to Manila to do our duties. And we were already have trouble with the Quarter Master and people even stealing then you know, government stuff and selling it on the black market and ah....and ah...but we were....actually our main objective at that time was studying the invasion of Japan and what we....our part in it. And then yes I went toI landed in Locyama, Japan and we went inland to Kobe. And ah....and we were the first troops in Kobe, Japan. In fact our military police company and ah....and

communications were the first people in Kobe. And....and we had to go in and set up a road because the Kobe Bay waswe didn't know where the mines were. They had Kobe Bay mined real well, it was a real important shipping point for Japan. And they had it mined just...I mean they had mines....but they knew where the mines were and they could guide their ships in and out of it. But we didn't know where they were. And I guess at that time I don't suppose the ships were equipped with the proper stuff to tell where the mines were. So we had to go inland to Kobe and then ah....'til the mines....'til they got mine sweepers and then cleared the harbor. And of course I'm sure the Japanese people and the naval people helped 'em later on, but it took three months to clear that mine....that harbor before we got any ships into Kobe. At least three months.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how did the Japanese people react to ya'll?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh...when we first went in you couldn't see anybody. I meant you got....you thought everybody was dead. Of course they had....they had plastered Kobe pretty good. But Kobe is built on aah...surroundedkind of a horseshoe with mountains, and...and the bays out here you know. And ah...they....they pounded Kobe pretty good, but ah....they....they....a lot of it they couldn't get to with the bombers the way they was coming in and having to go out you know. And Kobe....a lot of it was tore up pretty good down around the harbor. But I think I told you and I noticed in this...in this recent ah...picture of Kobe and the earthquake problems that they had over there that ah....I saw this building. I...I've got pictures of it. I saw the building at ah....and....and myself and another guy occupied this building. Ah...and ah...the company Commander sent us in to the Provost Marshall and told us to see if we could find a building. We'd camped out somewhere outside of town there and pitched a tent and ah... and we went in and ah....and found this building. And it was in good shape, great big rock building. Like 18" square concrete....a rock box is what it was made out of it. Metal

windows....also....most of the windows were broken out, the glass panes. But the old building was in good shape and it was a three story building. And it was just what we needed. And so we...we went by and looked it over and of course it had some stuff....junk in it you know. But ah...we decided it was the best building in town. And it was at that time. Kobe wasn't all that big you know. I probably....we wasn't in there half a day you know. And there was three of us that went in, we carried a guy with a machine gun in the back and ah....and I was driving the jeep and there was another guy and ah....so we got....we went back and come on inback in to town, the whole company. And we occupied that building and of course we'd set up communications as we'd come alongand the communications had, the signal corp. So then we started....we had to go back and set up a....a...some of the roads were so narrow that ah...our trucks and nothing.....you couldn't meet anything on the road it was so narrow. And ah...so we had to set up ah...I think three points between Locyama and Kobe ah....to stop traffic...it was one way traffic. And ah...so...so to get our troops and get our equipment all in there and get the rest of the personnel in there we needed you know, the Quarter Master and whatever. And so we occupied, we got Kobe occupied soon that a way. And thenof course we ah...ah...we maintained the...thehad to maintain the road blocks cause we had trucks coming back and forth, but we went ahead and set up our company headquarters there and ah....and operated out of this building there in Kobe.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you rememberwhatwhen did you get in to Kobe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I believe ah....you know I'm not sure. I'm not sure. It had to be in the early fall, probably September.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '45?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And when did you leave?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I left there shortly after Christmas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '45?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now what was your outfit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...520th Military Police....Company. Best assignment in the Army. You...you know ifif... we had a company of people. This was not a division, it's not...you know it's a company. We had a Provost Marshall, who was a Major.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right....I don't remember his name. Ah...you know....ah....and he was the law. I mean he could hang a guy if he wanted to. Ah....an American, if fordesertion or anything. You know, I mean it....the Provost Marshall's stout you know. And ah...and when they said something I don't care if...if...if we gotI might be out there on patrol at night and we had....we had a curfew and had to have to maintain order. And we set up a curfew nine o'clock at night, whatever it was, anybody on the street after that you better get ready to go to the guardhouse. We'd set up a guardhouse in an old prisoner of war camp down there and the motor pool also because it was fenced. And ah....we'd stop officers out there night and if they gave us any trouble, Major, Colonel, whatever, ah...I'm a sergeant in the 520th Military Police and I got the authority to take him to....after....if he's out after curfew, I got the authority to take him to the compound.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Take him in too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and...well in....under what force I had....I needed to use.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever have to use any force?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nah...they...I had to explain it to a few of ‘em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the just regular...you know privates and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh the privates and things theyyou know, most of ‘em , they might be drunk or something and you’d have to tell ‘em twice you know. But they generally understand. We had very...you know, not too much trouble after they found out what was going to happen. But you know officers were...well they were reluctant to take orders from a....from a non-commissioned officer. And you can’t blame ‘em for that. But after you finally....after you sat down and said, you know this is rule you know, if you need....you want to talk to Provost Marshall I got a radio in my pick....in my jeep and I can get him, but you’re going to have to do what I say. And you’re either going to go in or you’re going to the compound and then you’ll get to talk to him in the morning. Which do you want to do, sir. You know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Put the sir on ‘em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...and...yeah, you know and...and ah...of course they....I don’t....they knew high side....they’d try to run a bluff and you know, we’d try to run ‘em today probably you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you develop any best friends or close friends?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I had a guy named Tillman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: T-I-L-L-M-A-N.....from Birmingham, Alabama.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....Richard Tillman. I...I’ve often wondered why I didn’t try to get inI’m sure he’s dead....I’m sure somebody’s killed him by now. Ah....he was ah...I liked him as well as I ever liked anybody in my life. He ah...he’d pick up a Stars and Stripes even when

we...we'd get a few up there when we was...ah....up there liberating in the northern part of Lohan, Baggio and....he'd always read something about Shirley Temple. It wasn't in there. Shirley Temple got married, Shirley Temple had twins, Shirley Temple....you know and he was possessed with Shirley Temple. Of course Shirley Temple was about our age you know. See I'm....I'll soon be 69 and I'm sure Shirley Temple's 68 or 69 years old. But she was in the movies and....and...you know....and as we grew up you know and....and old Tillman he...he was lots of fun. But you know it wasn't in there, nothing about Shirley Temple but he would make uphe'd.... he'd get that Stars and Stripes and he grab it and he'd start reading it you know, make up something that's in it you know. He was....he was a funny guy. Big old blonde headed guy and he turned out to be our first cook. And ah....of course we started getting a few fresh....we'd get some chicken in there every once in awhile and of course you know if you know the first cook and ya'll are good friends well heck ah.... we'd meet somewhere and charcoal some chicken or something you know and have a beer and enjoy it you know, not have to eat itgo in there and eat it however they prepared it you know. So there's some advantage to havingbeing first....being good friends with the first cook. But we were friends before he got to be first cook.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had you maintained contact with him after the war?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No....no...I...I'm sorry to sayI think I told you....

(one side of tape ends)

ROBERT NIEMAN: When was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Probably five, six years ago.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...probably five, six years ago and ah....it was an old boy from Arkansas, I don't even remember his name, I've got it written down somewhere but ah...he always remembered he'd asked me where I was from and I'd say, well I'm from Windom, Texas but I said, nobody knows where Windom is I said, it's close to Honeygrove. Syrup city, sweetest town in Texas. And he remembered that and ah... so he was on his way from Arkansas to California to see some of his kids and he was coming....drove in to Honeygrove here by five or six....oh it's been about seven years ago and stopped at the Dairy Queen over there and he...he saw a sign when come in to Honeygrove, Honeygrove, sweetest town in Texas. You'll see a sign in the morning when we go down there. It's on both sides of town. So he went...they stopped at the Dairy Queen and ate and ah...and he said when he got finished, went up to pay his check it was real quiet in there and he said he paid his check and said he just turned and asked, does anybody in here know Glenn Elliott. He was raised around here somewhere. And said there was a guy sitting there at the counter said, yeah I know him. He said ah...I saw...he's... he's raised over here at Windom five miles west of here. And said, he's over there right now cause I saw him this morning up at Oliver's store. And he directed him how to get out here. So he drove in the yard out there and of course he called me by my first name and tried to carry on a conversation. And I said, pardon, I said, you know it's obvious you know me but I said, I don't have any damn idea who you are. And I said, you...and he told me who he was andand I wrote his address down but it was the first time I've seen him since we....we landed in Seattle when we came back. We came home together. And ah... of course see our outfit was frozen when we went into Japan and ah...there was a lot of folks had a lot of points. We had some folks had been in...ov...in the South Pacific for forty months in our outfit. And I had a few points because ahI was married and by that time I had...had a child. And you got...you got so many points for your

wife, so many for child and so much for every month you served in service. But everybody was frozen in the military police and we had to go on in to Japan and ah...andbut it was a good assignment. And ah... and we had to carry....see we was....we were responsible for carrying ah...and the next town....Kobe and Osaka....ah...there was a train between Osaka and Kobe and ah...and there was a lot of military personnel down in Osaka and ah...so we carried all the military ah....ah....oh I guess you'd call it classified documents, military police would carry 'em, hand carry 'em, between divisions. And but we got to using the train because it was faster. We would drive in a jeep it was about, I don't know, sixty, eighty miles, I don't know what it was, but it was a pretty good drive in a jeep, in the winter time. And Japs at that time had good....their trains were...were way ah....better than ours you know and ah....so we....we'd just go down to the train station and catch a train to there and back, cause they had....they was running regular. And ah....and we had to carry documents back and forth, so we had a good assignment, it was a real good assignment. If I hadn't of been married I'd probably stayed in the service.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay you...you ah...sailed from Japan to Seattle.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you muster out in Seattle?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, muster out in San Antonio. We caught a train from San...from Seattle see to San Antonio, muster out in San Antonio and then I...I get a...my eye injured, my right eye injured while I was in the service and ah...and it caused growth to come on it. And ah...I had it transplanted before I got out of service. I hadn't....I got...I came home and then went back to San Antonio and...but I hitchhiked you know and...you...a soldier could get around good then you know. I mean you get out there and your uniform on, somebody will pick you up, they wouldn't leave you out there on the side of the road at all. And you save time and money both you know.

You...you can make a lot better time hitchhiking than you could riding a bus or train and save you know. And...and I went back and had my right eye...I had a...a growth had come on my right eye and ah...the doctor says it's because of a...I got burnt. But it wasn't bad enough...but I got a lot heat in my face and ah...especially on this side. And he...they said that's what caused it, but anyway they did surgery on it. And ah...I've had it done once since then, but not in the military hospital. And I never did try to draw any kind of compensation. I had a veterans officer one time tell me said, Glenn I can get you a pension for that. And I said, man I don't need a pension, I don't ...you know I get paid...I work every day. And I said, well if I ever lose sight in this right eye and lose my job I said, I'll be knocking on your door. But I said, you know why would I want to get a pension for something that ah...I'm...I'm not disabled, I'm doing my job every day. Well he said, your eye stays red all the time, I've noticed that. And I said, yeah but it don't affect my sight all that much. But it does now, I don't see good out of my right eye at all. But I never entertained getting a pension you know, cause at my age I

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when did you finally mu....when did you actually muster out of the service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I got out ah....probably in ah....I'd say February or March of ah....'46, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, now you're out of the service.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I come back to Windom.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you come back to Windom. And you don't get on the Highway Patrol until?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '49.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So let's talk about those three or four years.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what I did. I looked for a job ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had one child, a daughter.

GLENN ELLIOTT: A daughter, yeah. And ah...I got back home and ah...we rented a Methodist Parsonage here in Windom. And ah....we was paying \$10.00 a month rent. And we had to...it was a big house and we was occupying three rooms of it and we had to have the library and a bedroom, make it available to a student from SMU who was the Preacher. And...and this Church during this time, especially during the war years and after, ah....it wasn't a large enough Church I don't guess to support a Preacher full time, so they...they had got to the point that they were employing student Preachers out of SMU, young men that were going to school to learn to be Preachers. And they'd come down here and preach. So we had to make a bedroom available for him and the study every other weekend, he was coming here like two weekends a month. And we served his breakfast and we did his laundry. And ah....and we rented it for \$10.00 a month, which was a good deal, for him and for us too. And ah...this is the only welfare I have ever drawn in my life and ah...at that time they had a....they paid veterans \$20.00 a week for fifty-two weeks to look for a job. They called it the 52 - 20 club. And ah...so you had to....in order to look for work you had to go to the employment office and you signed up at the employment office then you know, they started this during the war that most of the time to get any kind of job at all you was supposed to go through the employment office. And that's where you went to get your 52-20. So I joined the 52-20 club. And ah...of course while I was looking for work ah...I was out here at the farm. I'd come here every morning and milk cows and help my daddy plow, whatever needed to be done, milk cows in the afternoon and go to the

employment office once a week and see if they had any offers of a job. And of course they'd notify you if they did. And ah...and ah...jobs were not that easy to come by then. Because see I was late getting out of the service, there had been a hundred and ninety thousand people heading back here to North Texas ahead of me you know. And some of them from both theaters and so ah...finally there was a Jackless Power and Saw Company out of Dennison, Texas bought the old Jones Field hanger, Air Force hanger up here at Bonham where my dad had been offered a job to build houses through Mr. Rayburn during the first of the war. And ah...Jackless Power and Saw Company, city of Bonham, sold him aof course the Army gave Jones Field back to the city of Bonham after the war and they sold it to Mr. Jacks for a dollar. And...and he agreed to built an assembly plant there. And so he was building earth boring machines and...which was his best product, it was ...it's those machines that go on back of trucks that ah...that they ah...Texas Power and Light and these people would drill the holes to build....put big (unintelligible) poles in you know. And it was a good product. He had a good...and ah...they assembled them there and then he started assembling a small air cooled engine tractor. And ah...he just made 'em too heavy. By the time he finished a tractor it was about all they could do to pull their self without pulling a mower or a plow or anything. And he struck out on that, but anyway I...I..went up there and they told me they was hiring and... and so I went out for an interview. And of course there must have been 300 people in line and ah...I'll never forget the interview. The first job after I got after I got out of the Army, I guess it had been ah...I don't know how long it had been, I'd been out....I'd been out...I'd began to get concerned, although I was getting the 52-20 and I was milking cows out here and getting all the milk and eggs and butter and...and chickens I needed, cause we raised chickens and I was feeding the family pretty good. And ah...but I needed a job and ah...I was looking for it all this time. And I continued to milk the cows even after I went to

work for Jackless. But I get in line and there's a carpenter...I mean a mechanic in front of me and one behind me in line and they're talking about over-hauling this guys tractor and that's guys Model A and...and they knew each other and by the time I get in line and get in to my interview well ah...guys behind the desk there, Elliott you a mechanic. Well, no sir but I worked on some jeeps. Cause our motor pool sergeant died while we were in route to Japan and they buried him at sea, he had malaria. And ah...so after we got in there and got established well company Commander asked me if I'd take the motor pool over and... and....and he knew I liked to worked and he said, I'll just issue a forty-five and a MP band and he said, you can...ah...if you like....and work at night. An MP but I want you...I want you to take charge of the motor pool because I need somebody right away. So I did, he knew...I liked the company Commander and he liked me. And ah...so...I'd had a little experience in...but then all we'd do if something went wrong with the carburetor on the jeep, we'd put a new carburetor on it and send the (unintelligible)...to the Quarter Master and they'd rebuild it. The same way with transmission, there's four bolts loose and put the transmission in and turn it over on it's side and do that you know. And I did paint 'em and fix 'em up pretty good, I learned how to paint. But anyway ah... I was in there trying to get this job and ah...are you a mechanic, well no sir, but I've had a little experience with doing this and I told him. And...well ah.. you got any tools. Well no sir, but you know if I get the job I'll buy some you know. Well I knew I could see myself striking out on every question he asked me. And I didn't feel comfortable at all so ah...he was a big tall red headed guy named Yarbrough, I'll never forget his name, I can remember his name, I...a lot of those others I didn't name....remember but ah...and he'd asked me another question I didn't do too good on and I finally...I said, Mr. Yarbrough, I just looked up at him, and I said, I need a job. And I said ah....I think I can do anything that you've got to do around here, assembly...but I said, I'll sweep the

floors, I'll clean out the toilets and I'll do anything you got to do and if I don't make you a hand you can run my butt off. And he just dropped his pencil and he said, you're the folks we're looking for, said be here Monday morning at seven o'clock. So I got me a job. Well see I worked there for Jackless for oh ...about eighteen months I guess and ah...and they...they didn't...they weren't successful in their little tractor. We built a bunch of 'em and finally I took over the paint shop, the old paint shop guy got sick and ah...and they...all of a sudden one morning we wind up...we hadn't got anybody to paint anything. And ah...and they started pushing the panic button and ah....and ah...I over heard a lot of the conversation, the foreman and the Superintendent, Mr. Yarbrough was out there and said, well Mr. So and So's sick and ah...and don't look like he's coming back and we've got to have somebody to paint these....we need some of this stuff out today. And ah...and I'm listening, I heard.....overheard this and I'm over there helping build those earth boring machines and ah...assembly and I said, you know I can run your paint shop for you if you want me to. And Yarbrough said, well you didn't tell me you could paint. And I said, well you know you didn't....that wasn't one of your questions either. I said, I told you I'd make you a hand you know. And...and he said, you sure you can do it. And I said, yes sir I can do it. So I...I just went in the paint shop and before they shut down I had three other employees in there working under me. So...and then they shut the plant down there and I didn't even have an automobile, I didn'tI...I was riding with a guy from up here that worked up there. And they...and...so when they moved....they decided to shut down well there was only four of us that they agreed to transfer to Dennison, back to their main plant. Superintendent called me in and said, you know ah...we need...want you to go to Dennison. And I...and you know I'm renting an apartment for \$10.00 a month you know and I don't have an automobile and ah...I...I'm handicapped in several different ways. And ah...and I said, well you know for what kind of pay

you know. By that time I'm making a dollar and a quarter an hour, I started out at seventy-five cents. And ah...when I went in the paint shop well they raised me fifty cents an hour. And ah...I said ah...you know, what kind of compensation am I going to get. You know I said, it's going to cost me more money to live in Dennison, Texas than it is down here in Windom. And ah....so he said, well you know I...I'm sorry we can'twe can't raise...we might give you a dime an hour raise. And ah..so I said, I just can't do that. So he said, well let me ask you this, he said, we've got a truck down here, had an old International truck, and he said, we've got equipment down here that's got to be moved and it's going to take several months to move it. And he said, would you agree to...if we furnished you a truck and to work for us until we get this equipment all moved to Dennison. And said, we'll let you...you know we'll pay...you take the truck home and you come back by here and load it or it'll...and...and haul a load to Dennison and work while they unload it and come back home with the truck that night and do the same thing in the morning. I said, yeah I'll do it. So I went ahead and worked for them until we got it all moved and then ah...and by this time ah...we had a big ice storm up here in 1948 and '49, in fact I noticed the other night, I think a last night, that on February 30, 1949 it was minus two degrees in Dallas, Texas. And ah...and that's....and it was that cold up here and all of the high lines and telephones lines were iced up and broken. My...my folks ah...here and the REA, we weren't in town, but ah...my mother and daddy I think were without electricity for 45 days during that time or something like that before it was restored out here in the country. But us living in town we.. we was...we got electricity ...but of course probably lesswell not....the lines were closer together there in town and not....and of course they....and they restored the towns before they did the country too you know. And of course the city of Windom is not REA it's ah....at that time was Texas Power and Light. But anyway ah...I hired out to ah....an independent telephone

directory ah...company here that had the telephone company and furnished all the oldold twist telephone type you know and the crank. And ah...so I was helping him ah...restore his telephone system while I had.....of course I had the test for Highway Patrol prior to that and ah...twice....and ah....so I guess ah...one Saturday I'm checking the line out here about four or five miles north of town at about dinner time on Saturday and it was bad. And ah....the operator told me that the Chief of Highway Patrol had been trying to get ahold of me and she said....and I'm on top a telephone pole talk....checking the farm....we just hooked up at one of the farmers out that there....and so I talked to the Chief of Highway Patrol in Austin about noon on Saturday and ah....first part of April 1949 and he told me to be in Austin the next morning Monday morning at six o'clock..... be at the academy so I went down on Sunday.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Jim Riddle have anything to doinfluence on you on this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Jim had ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Your old high school coach.

GLENN ELLIOTT:influenced me earlier ah....while I was....when I lived in the Methodist Parsonage, I showed you the other day where my sister-in-law lived, well Jim's mother and daddy had a house right there where their house is. Can you turn this thing off a minute?

ROBERT NIEMAN: We were talking about Jim Riddle.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, Jim was my school teacher and ah...he ah...in high school. He was raised here in this community. And Jim ah....Jim's daddy was a big supporter of baseball and Jim was a high school baseball coach here. And he was a good baseball player himself and loved baseball, even...even after he got to be a captain he'd go to every ballbaseball game they had out there at Midland when that ah....when they had those leagues in Texas you know. And ah....but Jim Riddle was a....taught me in high school and was my coachexcuse me, basketball

and baseball coach and ah...we lived right across the street from his mother and daddy. And after the war, after I got in from the service well of course there's a lot of old folks live here in Windom and I've always beenI've...I've always had a lot of energy. I wake up in the mornings early, I sing, I whistle and it's not unusual for me to leave the house, walk up the street whistling, going to work before daylight even you know. And I just....that's the way I get up now, in the same way. I...I go to the rest home, I whistle and sing and carry on and it's just my nature. But ah... his folks enjoyed that. And ah....and I'd stop and visit with them on the front porch in the evenings, they'd be sitting out on the front porch (unintelligible)....and talk to them a little bit you know and ...and ah...and I enjoyed it. And...and ah...because II thought a lot of Jim and I...and I thought a lot of them. And my daddy liked them and mother, and they were just good...just good citizens. And ah....so....they died....one of them died, I don't....I don't remember which one died first, his mother or daddy and ah....of course during those times ah...we...the body would always come back to the home and we'd set upand all night. And I set up all night with his mother and daddy both cause they lived right across the street from me. And...and ah...and went to both of them's funeral of course and ah....and Jim didn't say anything to me about ah....mention the DPS to me until after we buried the second one, I don't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay he was already on the DPS?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He...he went....yes he....he quit teaching school in 1941. And he and Pat Spear and Bill Curran and every....and Carpenter and oh, there was a bunch of guys that we got in the DPS in '41 that were school teachers, because at that time the DPS was paying \$25.00 a month more than a school teacher, highway patrol. And ah... so we had a lot of school teachers quit and go to work for the DPS in 1941. Well Jim went to work for them and then the war came along and...and he went in the service and he served ah...in the South Pacific. And then he...and

after the war he got back and went back to work and was stationed out of Lubbock. And ah...so...that's where he was stationed ah....when his mother and daddy died and he was still on patrol. And so Jim ah....after we buried the second one well ah...you know after the funeral well we was visiting around the house there like you do and ah... he and I went out on the front porch and to set down where his mother and daddy used to sit and I'd stop and we'dyou know I'd sit and talk....and I said, I've stopped here many an afternoon and your mother and daddy sitting here in a rocking chair on the front porch. And I said, I wished I'd had more time to visit with them but I said, I'm coming in from work and I'm fixing to go out and milk cows you know and ah....and....and didn't have near as much time as I'd like to of had with them. And we talked about it and he said, well Glenn he said ah.....he asked me what I was doing, and I told him. And he said, ah....did you ever think about going to work as a Highway Patrolman. And I said, well I didn'tnumber one didn't think I was qualified, because I...I knew he had a college education, he went to Austin College up at Sherman, and ah....I said, I didn't think I was qualified. And he said, yeah you're qualified and ah....and we need folks like you. And he said, why don't you go home and talk to Katherine about it and ah....and if you're interested I'll give you the address to write for an application. And he said, you can use my name for a reference. He said, I don't know whether it'll help you any or not but he said, I'm a member of the DPS and said, I don't think it'll hurt anything. So I said, well I don't need to talk to Katherine you know. And I said, ah....what....you know....if you think I'm qualified and...and he said, yeah and I said, and I know it pays more than what I'm getting. He told me what they was drawing at that time, around \$200.00 a month and ah....and I never will forget he told me he said, they furnish you a automobile and your clothes. And said that's two pretty good items. And ah....so I didn't even own a car by then....still by then you know because ah...so ah....I got....I just wrote for an

application. And ah...of course I got it. And I sent it back in and II went to Dallas and took the test the first time. And generally at that time there was about five, six thousand people took the test every time for forty people to go to work. And ah....so I didn't get it the first time. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: When was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That was in '48. So ah....the next school they had was ah....they notified me again you know that ah... I think ah....they....they note.....they wrote me a letter I think and told me that I wasn't....I didn't qualify but if they have another school and was....was going to have another school in six months or whatever time and if I was interested I could reapply. So I reapplied. Well the second time I went to Fort Worth to take the test then. And I was accepted.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And this was in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...April of 1949.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So now you're ready to go to Austin to start the training.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you being in the MP's have anything to do....a desire to....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Not a thing, not a thing, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it help you get in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't think it had a thing to do with it. In fact I'll tell you, the department at that time, and I think they're still kind of operating the same ah....maybe not quite as much but, they want to train their own people on their own way. And ah....I think that ah....I got the impression that ah....if you didn't have any experience in law enforcement it probably suited them better. Because they wanted to train their people like they wanted them trained. In other words, I...I think I had a better chance than a City Policeman or a Deputy Sheriff would of had at that time. Now it's not that away. They...they've realized that if they've got guys that

already educated thatand they can bring ‘em down there and teach ‘em how they want it done and it saves a lot of time and money. But during this time they didn’t think that way. And that was to my advantage.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ah....at this time have any thoughts or even desire...or even thoughts about one day being a Texas Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. I had never even entertained the idea of being a police officer. After I got out of the service I...I justthat was a part of my past. Ah...you know and I’m looking forlike I said, if I hadn’t of been married I’d of stayed in the service. But I...I...I was and I knew that I’d have to move around a whole a lot and I didn’t see that being a very family ah....thing to do so I got out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you say....I interviewed Lewis Rigler, a good friend of yours, a former Texas Ranger and I asked him why he got into law enforcement and his answer was very simple, hell I was looking for a job.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That’s what I was looking for.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Said if it had beenif law enforcement, anything, it wouldn’t have mattered. I was looking for a job.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, that’s what I was doing. See I...I was looking...I went to work for Jackless Power and Saw Company, if they’d of paid me ah....you know twenty-five cents an hour more I’d of probably moved right on to Dennison and rented me an apartment and....and stayed with them. I was looking for a job. I...I knew that I had a family, I knew I had responsibilities and I was ready to accept it and ah...and I wanted to....I wanted to go on with my life. And that’s what I was looking for. I didn’t have no burning desire to be police officer, I didn’t....it never entered my mind. Because with being in the military police just came as an accident. And of

course I think I made a good military police officer. Ah...because I was trying to be fair as an MP but still ah...dealing with the military and dealing with a civilian isis two different things you know. And ah...ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what was the date again for the...that you left for the...entered the DPS school?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I entered DPS school on April 11, 1949.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well prior to April 11, 1949 is there anything else you want to add for.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh there's lots of things that happened to me I guess during that time. Ah...ah...I was real proud of the fact that I was elected Steward of the Methodist Church here in Windom. And ah...ah...and I think I had a reputation around here of being you know, a pretty fair guy and you know had worked. I...you know like I told you at the beginning of our...our interviews, my mother and daddy taught me to work and the fear of the Lord and to respect my elders andand that's three great things you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well by this time you were a member of the Church of Christ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I ah....I didn't the Church of Christ 'til ah....our son was 14 years old....13 years old.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you were raised a Methodist right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was raised a Methodist, my wife was raised in the Church of Christ. And we....after I went to work with the DPS well ah...ah...we moved to Longview well my wife....Church of Christ people go to Church every time the doors open and...and that's great. And my wife went to Church every time the doors opened, even walked to Church there, we lived on 110 E. Marshall and didn't even have a car and the Church of Christ was at Second and Whaley, down there by the old high school. And ah....so she'd walk down there to Church. And

some of them would bring her home after dark at night you know, her and Di....she and Diane. And ah....and of course I'm working most of the time you know at night, especially on weekends and sometimes on Wednesday nights I'm at work. But ah....on Sunday morning I'd go to Church with them because ah...you know, why have....you send your wife and daughter off to one Church and you'd go to another one you know. But I didn't everhadn't ever joined. And then we....they moved over on Alpine and built a new Church and ah....and ah....I think we'd already moved out on the Loop.....no we hadn't either, I guess I was baptized there at Alpine, anyway I'd been to a funeral ah...on Saturday, a Justice of the Peace friend of mine died there in Longview and I was pallbearer and went to his funeral and ah....I sat there and listened to the sermon and I got to thinking and I...I said, you know here I am I was raised a Methodist and still belong to the Methodist Church in Windom, Texas and I been going to the Church of Christ with my wife for sixteen, eighteen years and suppose I die tonight, I'm going....I'm going to cause a big problem with my family of whose going to conduct my service you know. And ah...and ah...my mother and daddy are going say, well I think they ought to have it maybe at the Methodist Church and my wife may want to have it at the Church of Christ and I'm going to leave the decision up to somebody else that I ought to be making myself you know. And ah...and you know I thought....you think about a lot of things and....I do at funerals and then when I go to Church. I mean I go regular and I listen to the preacher and I do a lot of deep thinking during this time. And I guess that's what you're supposed to do. So the next Sundaythat...the next day, I don't say anything to my family, I don't say anything to anybody and when they offer the invitation I get up and walk down. And before I get set down my son comes and sits down beside me. And we were both baptized at the same time. Which is a it helped me a whole lot to know that I influenced him ah...you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did this make Katherine pretty happy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, yeah definitely, the whole family of course you know. And ah....cause all of her sisters belonged to the Church of Christ and ah...and of course the preacher....I knew everybody there. I was....they called on me for ah....lots of things ah....that I already startedbeen talking to the classes andand wasn't even a member you know, but I went regularly. And ah....and of course it was the best thing for me to do you know. I should have done it a lot sooner but I just didn't you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it surprise a lot of people there who had seen you going there for sixteen years and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, probably didn't surprise any....I don't know you know....I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean I assuming ...I'm not....I...what I mean, when I say surprised, having gone that long I would assume a lot of 'em probably thought you was already a member.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think probably they did you know. And ah...I tell you what I've done I...I'll never forget....of course I was sprinkled in the Methodist Church when I was very young but I remembered it. But ah....I just casually remember it, I...I...you know I remembered the ceremony. But ah....I had talked to a lot of folks about a lot of different things and ah....I belong to the Masonic order and ah...I've had guys thattrying to tell me about how the Masonic degrees are affecting them. And I had one tell me one time, I never will forget it, shortly after I was baptized, and of course they immerse you in the Church of Christ. You go in....that's the only way they baptist and it's not a sprinkle. And this guy was telling somebody else about how clean he felt after taking the Masonic degree you know, a certain degree in the Masonic lodge and after this guy left he was trying to get him to go through the Scottish Rite and I told him I said, Travis I said, you remember when you was baptized. And he kind of frowned and he said,

yeah. I said, you know you're...you're...and I mean this and I still...I'm still a member of the Masonic order and pay my dues and go occasionally, but I said now do you....did you feel any cleaner after taking the Masonic order than you did when you was baptized. And he had to admit that he didn't you know. And it's a clean feeling you know....andand I think....I can understand now why ah....the Church of Christ insisted that you become the age of accountability before you're baptized. Because I remember, I never felt any cleaner in my life than I did when I came up out of the water. I promise you, I've never....never will feel any cleaner than that. Unless I'm baptized again. I don't think I would then you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When did you join the Masonic lodge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: In 1955 I believe. And ah...and see we was....I was on the Highway Patrol and they had a degree team, it was one of the greatest things that's ever happened to us. And my captain, my first highway patrol captain was very active in the Masonic order and he was very religious man, was a good man. And ah....and I liked...I liked...I didn't know anything about the Masonic order but ah....I finally asked, what you do you know....I'd like to be a member of this, well what do you do. Well you know you have...you just did the first...you made the first step you know. And I'd been working several years there and my partner was active. And ah....and so I joined and we had a degree team and we put on a Master's degree in just about every lodge in Northeast Texas, from Texarkana to Palestine to Terrell and Dallas, we went into Dallas and conferred two degrees. And ah...this was good public relations work for....and we'd do this on our time off you know, at night. We'd do it uniform and ah...and we made a lot of good solid contacts for the DPS. Cause ah...we get members of the lodge on our juries and get their support you know when we needed it. And ah...I had a lot of fun and it was interesting...it's ah...working on the degree team, but ah....while I was on the highway patrol. Then after I got in the Rangers I

didn't have time. I was super too busy then all the time you know. I went to lodge some and I'd go when the Highway Patrol conferred degrees, if I could I'd go watch 'em you know. And ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you belong to any other organizations?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, never...never joined anything else. I never did belong to VFW ah...see I spent most of my time away from home working. And heck ah....you...you just ah...when I had some time to get home why I felt obligated to stay there with my family. If I belonged to some other organizations there isn't no use belonging to 'em if you don't participate you know. And I never did join any other ah....I was a veteran but I didn't ever join the VFW, American Legion or anything cause ah...I wanted to spend as much time with my family as I could. And then most of the time I was gone on something you know, or fixing to go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn we've got you up ready to go to Patrol school, that might be a pretty good breaking point for you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, why don't we stop and we may take up again in the morning if you want to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah that would be great.

(tape stops and this point and then picks up again)

qqq

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn last night we left off you was just getting ready to go to your Highway Patrol school. But first, what was your wife's reaction to you joining the Highway Patrol?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, Katherine of course ah...was...she was glad for me to get a job. She was ah...she had a lot more foresight probably than I did about...she was ready to get out of Windom, Texas. She was...she was ah...they moved here when she was in the second grade and

ah...and she was ready to get out of Windom. She knew that there wasn't a whole lot for us here in Windom, Texas you know, as a career. They either got to go to farming or...there's not that much industry around here and we both knew that, we both knew that ah...ah...and I was looking you know. And ah...but we just didn't have the means to get out here and hit the road or the contacts you know. And ah...and this was a great opportunity for us and she was thrilled about it. And ah...but of course you know in those days you don't ask your wife ah...what you do you know. I discussed it with her, I told her yeah I said, Jim suggested I go to Highway Patrol school. And I...you know and I...I'm going to apply. And of course she was happy about it. And ah...and it was good for both of us you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: All right you go to Austin. You're ready to start your Patrol school.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Go to Austin, ah...I'll tell you a funny thing ah...politics....I'd already been warned by Jim Riddle you know he said, they don't like for you to use politics. Ah...just...they like for you to get in on your own merits. And he said ah...and I'll help you because I'm in the department. He said that's...you know by using my name well they'll contact me and see what kind of boy you are and I'll tell 'em. And...but said ah...as far as using any political influence they don't like for you to do that. Well I'm going to tell you what happened. My dad and mother and Katherine and Diane carried me to Bonham, Texas on Sunday right after Church, about one o'clock we had lunch. And ah...I'd already found out the bus leFort..and already had my ticket to go...ride a bus from Bonham, Texas to Austin and was at the bus station waiting on the bus. And who comes in but the State Senator from Fannin County by the name of Jones, and was a friend of my dads.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...I can't remember. It would be on record. And ah...of course he did not know me but he knew my dad. Well he was glad handed my dad and mother just like politicians do. And so daddy introduced him to me and my wife and daughter. And ah...well, where are ya'll...where are you going Elliott. And I said, well I'm going to Austin to Highway Patrol school. And ah...he said ah...you going to ride the bus all the way down there, said, yes sir. And he said, well just a minute. Of course he knew the guy at the bus station there, he said ah...give Elliott his money back on that bus ticket. And sell him a bus ticket to Gainsville, he and I are going....we rode a bus to Gainsville and got with a State Senator out there whose name I don't remember. And I rode to Austin with them. But listen to this, he don't let me out out there, they carry me right on out to camp Mabry. That's where... that's where we did...that's where DPS headquarters was at that time. An old Army camp out there on the west part of Austin. And we didn't have all the facilities down there now. And Jones was not satisfied letting me out, he goes in with me. And we're talking about this is well eight or nine o'clock Sunday night. And the monitor of the school ah...Sam White was one of the monitors, ah...greeted us at the door. I'm Senator Jones from Bonham, Texas, I brought this boy down here to...oh man I thought they was going to run me off the next day, I'll swear to you Bobby. And...and I told this sergeant after he left, I said...I said sergeant let me tell you how this all come about. Because I...you know Jim had already told me he said, you know and they're just politicians. And I'd met the first time that day. We ride a bus to Gainsville, Texas and I meet another State Senator that I've never even heard of and both of them carry me to Austin, Texas you know. And...and that sounded...you know how would that sound to you if you was monitor of the Highway Patrol school. And ah...but that's how I got started off....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what did the sergeant say when you told him what happened?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He said, Elliott ah...we have to use a little politics every once in awhile gettin' us a raise and he said...or gettin' us something we need. He said, I'll remember this and he said, you may have to be knocking on Senator Jones' door one of these day to see if you can't do something for the DPS. That's what he said.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever knock on the door?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. But you know, prob...I say no, probably I had my daddy to some time or other you know because ah...if we...but...I think as I remember Senator Jones was a good supporter of law enforcement and...and the DPS in particular, all the time. And ah...anything that they asked for within reason ah...he helped with it you know. And ah...so...but this...this is how I got kicked off.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, tell us about the school.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, school was tough. See I'd been out of high school for ah...since 1942. And ah...I'll be frank with you ah...I didn't ah...I didn't read near as much as I should have. I was a doer. I didn't have patience to sit down and grab a book, sit down like sensible people do and read for an hour at a time. The only time I'd read is when it was too bad to do anything else and maybe some at night you know. And...and I wasn't bad about reading fiction then even you know, I just didn't care for it. And ah...so school was tough for me. Ah...I'd been working trying to make a living with a family and so I had to hub it, and I did. And ah...but it was early, we'd fall before day and do calisthenics. Ah... we'd ah...come in and shower and eat breakfast at six o'clock, start school by seven. Ah...had night school like three nights a week and ah...all of us stayed in the same room, big old Army barracks, everybody in the same room. Ah...a lot of physical exercise, which is good. You'd get of the class room and your old mind was so warped and you'd get out there and you'd sweat and run and ah...and boxing. And of

course that boxing didn't bother me. I was a...I knew I...I was good...good with gloves and ah...pretty good. And ah...I know right away they had one guy in there, in our class and I guess he's alive, I asked about him the other day, named Granberry. And ah...he was ah...very active, he...he wanted to be first in everything. And you know there's people like that every...everywhere you go. And ah...he ah...obviously had been putting the whipping on quite a few of 'em with those boxing gloves trying to impress the ah...I guess, or just maybe that was just his nature. And ah..they put me in the ring with him first thing when we started boxing. And ah...and man he tied in on me like he was going to whip me in the first round. And ah...I broke his jaw, and ah...flattened him. And ah..they stopped the fight of course and it quieted him down considerably the rest of the school term. But I knew...I was pretty good with the gloves so I scored good there and I wasn't lazy ah...but I didn't try to be the first one in that run, but I didn't you know, I wasn't far behind the first man. But...and ah...so I could handle all that. Then we had motorcycle training. Well I had never owned a bicycle even. Always wanted one but never owned one. I had ridden one, I had a cousin that ah...had a bicycle. And ah...and then we used to could go to Honeygrove when we was young and ah...they had a skating rink over there. And a lot of the kids wanted to skate but you could also rent a bicycle. And ah...a lot of us would...that didn't like to skate or didn't want to skate would rent a bicycle, kids from school would ride a bicycle around Honeygrove over there you know. And so I had been on a bicycle some but I nev...you know not that much. And I'd never ridden a motorcycle. And ah...so we trained on ah...'36, '37 model Harley and Indian motorcycles. And that was quite an experience. And then we had fire arm training. Of course I enjoyed that. I'd never shot a pistol, never owned a pistol. Only weapon I'd ever owned was a single shot .22 and other than what training I had in the armed services well...and that was not too much with a pistol, until I got in the military police.

And ah...and then not too much then. But ah...the school was good, it was a real good school and it was ah...ah...I think the Department of Public Safety's schools have always been exceptionally good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember the names of any of your instructors?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah I ah...oh yeah ah...of course both of the monitors instructed some and then ah...we had a guy named Hannick, a Sergeant Hannick that taught us driver training and we did a lot of pursuit driving. And ah...well I'd been driving a car since I was 12 years old and in the mud and Model A Ford because we...you know....my dad worked all the time and after he got a better car in 1940 ah...I'd carry the Model A to school every day instead of riding the bus. Because the bus...we started having bus service then, we used to have to walk through the field out over here, but then they got an old school bus and they started picking us up. But by that time I needed to be home as soon as was out. And a lot of times the Superintendent of school would let us farm boys out instead of going to study hall like at two-thirty to three-thirty, they'd let us come on home and we'd get our lessons after dark that night and we'd...I'd plow 'til dark and then....or whatever needed to be done then tend to the cows. So I carried this Model A to school every day and ah...and would come home and go to work in the fields. So I was...I...I was a good driver and had a lot of driving experience. And so Hannick taught us driving and ah...there was a named Gardner, Sam Gardner from Honeygrove, Texas and Sam was a Highway Patrol captain and he taught highway law. And ah...he and my dad, we found out after I got down there, worked down here on these lakes, I told you earlier about ah...dad having some mules leased out to the government down there where they was building these lakes on...on the Red River. And he and Sam worked together down there and ah...and Sam told me that they had a bet, he and dad, about ah...they...they used a lot of oak timber down there building bridges to get in to the dam

and to get around and ah...and he said he and his dad....he and my dad used to bet which one could drive the nail in a piece of oak best, which was hard to do you know. Of course the oak was green mostly then and it was a little easier than it would be dried but ah...anyway I was fortunate there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: A dear friend of yours, Brad Oliver, whom we'll talk about later in your highway patrolman up here we'll talk about in your retirement years about him, just came by and visited us. But you were talking about ah...one of your instructors and your dad that helped build this lake.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, Sam Gardner ah...was an instructor in my school and of course we had...we had several Rangers. Ah....Jim Riddle talked to us, Gonzauillas talked to us ah...ah....we had several folks from lab....this Glenn McLaughlin that's you've heard mentioned and we had a lot of lab....ah...we had a lot of traffic law enforcement, of course it was mainly our ...our course and ah....and highway law. Because we were going out here to enforce the highway law and ah...we had more of that than anything else. But we also had something from the laboratory on everything that they could do for us and ah...finger print, fire arms and the whole works. It was a....it was a good school. And ah...yes ...but most of our instructors ah...were DPS employees. And of course we had one attorney at the DPS at that time and ah....well I can't even think of his name. But he was a good instructor in there. Ah...but this was made up byfrom DPS people you know, sergeants and Captains andthat taught the schools. And of course I later, you know, instructed in schools down there myself you know, accrued schools and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, at that time that you graduated could a person....would he automatically go to the Highway Patrol or could he went into investigation or Rangers or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No this was a....everybody out of my school went in the Highway Patrol. Ah....now your optionsyou had an option of where you go. And I was real lucky there and I can tell that story now without....I...I was sworn to secrecy. One of my sergeant monitors is dead and I think the other one is ah...is Sam Guines.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Grimes?

GLENN ELLIOTT: G-U-WG-W....no wait a minute. I'll try....I got to think of the way he spelled his name. Guines is how he pronounced it and then there's a guy named Jones. And ah...this is another story I can tell you ah...now ah.... I couldn't then but ah....long about the last three weeks of our school they gave us a choice of where to go from the district. Ah...they...we didn't have regions at that time and each captain....they called it a Highway Patrol District. And so...of course my being raised up here in this part of the country....Dallas was the headquarters where the captain was for this area at that time. And of course I had in mind asking for Dallas because you know you wanted to get close to home if you could. And of course we had...we all knew as general conversation that there was vacancies in El Paso and Corpus Christi and Amarillo and places like that, that ah....and I could tell by looking on the map, I was smart enough to tell it was a hell of a long way from Windom, Texas you know. But ah...and my folks was still living here and my wife's folks and ah...so anyway long about the ah....right before we was to....the weekend before we was to make our choice well ah...Guines was the sergeant in Tyler, the Tyler District Sam Guines was and he came to me one night and he said, I need to talk to you some. And I thought I'd done something you know, because the counselors were on us pretty good and ah....he said, now this is on strictly off the record, we're not supposed to do this but he said, ah...next Monday you're going to have to make a choice where you go. And he said ah....I don't know whether you've thought about it or not, I'm sure you have, but he said,

I've got a place for you in our district and I'd like to have you ah....in Longview, Texas. And ah... of course I'd never been to Longview in my life and he said ah....if you think you'd be interested he said ah...if you'd (unintelligible) ...first choice well I think we can arrange it. Don't say anything to anybody about it. No sir, I won't. And...and I have not you know. Oh I've told it to several people in the last few years but anyway ah... the same day or the next day Jones comes to me. Well Elliott I need to talk to you. Where you figuring on asking to be stationed. And this is....this made me feel real good see and ah....cause I got both my monitors is offering me a job in their district see. So...and you know....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was Jones' district?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Waco. And so I know...so I told him I said, well ah...sergeant I said ah...I've talked to my wifeof course I put a little bull on him and...but I didn't want to tell him that I'd talked to Guines, and didn't intend to. And I said, we ah....both decided we'd like to go to Tyler District if we could. But I said, Waco would be my second choice. Because I was smart enough to know here I am a young recruit with the Highway Patrol and I got two sergeants thatasking me to come work in their area and I'd....that would be to my advantage you know to do that. I could get along a lot better, I know 'em, I've been with 'em for two months or better and ah...so ah...when I asked that's the way I put it down, Tyler first, Waco second and Dallas third. Of course I had really intended to do it the other way probably you know. But...and it...and it did work out to my advantage because he told meGuines said I got a man that ah...I think you'd be real compatible with. And we were compatible.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Lloyd Webb. So I was out of...I graduated from the Highway Patrol school and I think we get a ...probably a week or six days .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let...let me go back. Now when you graduated, did they rank you? I mean
.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah we were all just Highway Patrolmen, that was it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean your graduate.....you did...you know first, second, third.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, but I don't evenI can't tell you, I really....I knew I was a long ways from being the top in ah....because I...I wasn't....we had guys like Leo Gossett who was later ah...Director of the Department of Public Safety was in my school and I think he was second and after you get down from the fifth one well you...you quit worrying about it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who were some of the other guys in school with you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh ah...G. W. Burkes who was later a Ranger captain, Johnny Krumnoe, later a Ranger ah...this boy Granberry that I talked about I boxed with ah...oh ah...Butch Albers who was later a Ranger captain in Waco. Butch and I went in the same time. We were a week late ah...that's the reason ah....they notified the rest of 'em by mail I imagine. But ah....ah...Butch Elber and I ...I was first on the eligible list and he was second if anybody dropped out. We did not get in the original school. It had been going on a week when we got there. The school started the first of April and we went in on the 11th actually and ah...which was a....I think they all had to be done on the first which was probably a Sunday. And anyway we got in on a Friday, whatever...we got in on the 11th. So ah...ah...there was quite a few guys in my school that was later Rangers and Captains and whatever you know. And ah...but ah...I don't know where I ranked in school, but I'm sure it was far probably below middle for sure...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, what...what....

GLENN ELLIOTT:cause I'm not bright.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was your favorite parts of school?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...it was all very interesting to me. Ah...if I commit myself to something then that...I'm...I'm...I'm a whole hog you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But did you say though that....you know I...I think I'm going to....I'd like the investigation more orbunco or...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well at that time...of course I think we all were intrigued by the Rangers being there you know. You know we got a guy like Gonzauillas, I'd heard about Captain Gonzauillas and...and I'd heard about ah...Selwin Denson was ah...when I was a young...I worked this area up here as a Ranger. And like I told you my dad and family had always been involved in politics and we knew the Sheriff, daddy did, on a first name basis and of course I did too. And ah...because he'd come by the house, he'd be out here just to visit you know. And then they'd have functions and always ask my daddy and my uncle and include 'em in the function. They was always involved in everything and so law enforcement people I knew in my county you know. And ah...and then I had Selwin pointed out to me as being a Ranger .

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what was his first name again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Selwin Denson, he's still living. He's ah..ah...he retired ah...Ranger Sergeant. And ah...yes I was ah...the Rangers was....was real interesting for us to talk to. But ah...then of course later well I...but I...I had no idea I'd ever be a Texas Ranger. And I wasn't sure that...still sure that I was going to make it as a Highway Patrolman. We had six months probation you know. And ah...and I knew that ah...I was going to try to stay and ...and did you know. But ah...but it was all interesting to me because this is all new you know. Even riding a motorcycle and the only part that I didn't ah...really ah...say that I'd had more or less experience in was the ah...physical part you know, running and boxing and doing those things and

exercising. And ah...of course I'd been in the Army and done all this you know. But ah...cramming for those books ah....was something new for me. So...and I had to get ...get after it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you said six months probation, during that six month period could you be dismissed at will?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah

ROBERT NIEMAN: For no reason at all, if they just didn't like you, just term.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course you know they just you your not going to make it you know and that's it you know. And there was some of the guys that ah....I don't think any out of my school did but ah...I you know, I've seen some...you know we had some people that you could tell...you can't tell in school what exactly what they're going to do or not. I think we had one guy leave our school soon after....but we had another one leave before...after I got there and ah...ah...he was a preacher's son and ah...and of course some of the boys would swear and...and ah....I probably did too you know. But...and ah...but I've tried not to you know. But he....he just decided before school was out that you know this is not for me and he just leFort And of course it was to late to replace him. And ah...yeah you were on probation. And in those days you know if a guy needed firing they'd fire him. That didn't have to mess with it like they do now and record a bunch of letters and things. And those people knew who..who..who would make a trooper and who wouldn't. And they had experience and that's the way the situation...that's the way it should be run today but it's not. In my opinion.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And with graduation did they have speakers or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I think the Director, I think colonel Garrison went....actually he ah...he handed out all the diplomas. My mother and daddy and my wife came down there to

Austin for graduation and ah...and ah...I like I said come on home here and ah...gathered up my stuff and ah...moved to Longview.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well while you was in school did they have classes like in typing or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well ah...no we didn't have typing classes. We had typewriters available down there. I was...I could type, I was a...I could type 120 words a minute in high school and ah...which is unusual for a man and a woman too. And ah...and you know I think I...you know there wasn't anybody that could beat me in typewriting in my...and we had typing in the senior year as I remember. And I was good with the typewriter. I wasn't...I never have too good of a pensman. And my spelling wasn't too good. And ah...and...but I wrote all my reports, themes and things at school on the typewriter. And I could...I could tear that typewriter up pretty good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And now you've graduated and how long is it going to be before you start on active duty?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...a week.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And during that week you move to Longview.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had a...you moved down there, you've told me the story about well just a few minutes ago when Brad was here, Brad Oliver the patrolman, moving down there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...uh huh. Yeah I got ready to move well my uncle ah...that lived here in Windom, Claude, Uncle Claude, daddy's oldest brother and only living brother, he was a...he..he (unintelligible)...he farmed and he had an old '41 Ford ah...ah...I guess two ton cattle truck and ah....so I asked him if you know I could use his truck to move to Longview. And ah...so he..of course yes you know and so Kenneth Oliver, Brad's grandpa, and I'd known

Kenneth, he was raised out here and my dad knew him. And daddy used to work he and his brother when he worked mules on...for the highway department building roads between Honeygrove and Ladonia. And he worked those Oliver boys , they were raised back over in...actually south of Honeygrove. And then they eventually moved down here south of Windom, Kenneth did. And so he was...he had a commercial license and he was driving an old truck for the son of a guy that I went to Washington state with and they was hauling oak timber from the saw mills down here innorth of Honeygrove and selling them to County Commissioners throughout the State of Texas to ah...ah...move that chair over just a hair where that sun's coming in, thank you. And ah...where the ah...and they was selling these ah...ah...oak timbers to County Commissioners to build bridges. That was before the tin horns you know was popular and before they started manufacturing. And way before concrete you know. So ah...Kenneth....I said, Kenneth will you take me to Longview you know and haul my furniture down there. Well of course you know, didn't...wouldn't have thought about charging me anything you know. Of course I didn't have anything to give him anyway probably. Probably bought him a hamburger you know for dinner. And ah...anyway Kenneth moved us to Longview, Texas and we backed up to 110 E. Marshall Avenue and unloaded our furniture in a duplex there and he come on back to Windom.

ROBERT NIEMAN: East or west duplex?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...on the west side. Yeah, hot place. Right on Highway 80, every car between Florida and California passed within 40 foot of my front door.

ROBERT NIEMAN: There was two way then...two...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. First year that I was...lived in Longview.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So did you....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Trucks and all you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you start to work immediately in Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No ah...I was instructed to be in Tyler....well I'll tell you what I did, let me back up a little bit. We had contracted to ah...and moved down here to this...and then I...I...I believe that...I know I did, I came back to ah...to Windom....no I didn't either I went from....I went...I went on to Tyler. Katherine came back to Windom and Diane. Cause I knew I had to be in Tyler for two weeks and stay over there. Because my partner was on vacation, Lloyd Webb was taking two weeks vacation.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But she went ahead and set the house up and all you mean?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Got my house set up, Katherine rode back with ah...Kenneth as I remember now because I was going to be gone two weeks and I didn't want to just move her into a strange town in a duplex and drive off and leave and be gone for two weeks. So I...I think she came back to Windom, I'm sure she did with Kenneth and I went on to...and that...of course I got the patrol car and went on to Tyler. And I was thinking that the captain met me at the bus station but I guess he met me at the...at the headquarters over there because I know I got into town there on Sunday and the captain met me and ah...stayed with me, Guy Smith, first highway patrol captain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this the first time you'd ever been in Tyler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'd been there once before looking...I went over there for Exxon, my brother and I did, we worked down here at Pickton, Texas for a little while right after I got out of service helping build and cracking plant for Exxon.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's a cracking plant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...it's a little refinery. And ah...so they ran out of materials hard to get and ah...we was working for Flure Construction Company, F-L-U-R-E, out of California and ah...and we hired out as iron workers. And...and we worked several months down there and ah...so day we was...the weather got too bad, we was out of material so get five dollars for showing up for work. And if we couldn't work well they'd send us back home, but they'd pay us five dollars, which was good pay. So ah...we went to Tyler and we...we'd inquired around, Exxon was building this plant and they was going to need somebody to help run it you know and they'd just developed that field down there. And ah...so we went to Exxon....Humble...it was Humble and we went to Humble office in Tyler and applied for a job. That's the only time I'd ever been to Tyler. And ah...of course they told us to go get us an education you know, for college and come back and apply and they'd consider us. And ah...so that was my second time to be in Tyler. But I probably wasn't in there...in Tyler two hours first time I was there you know. And anyway ah...ah....after Cap put me to bed...highway patrol headquarters was right on the railroad track and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, he talked to you for two or three hours there that first night?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes uh huh...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anything in particular or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no he just...he was finding out all he could about me and telling me about...briefing me on the highway patrol and asking...he knew about as much about my life....kind of like we're doing right now, we just discussed my past and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this customary for the captain to do that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I doubt it. I...I never heard of that happening before but this...this was a different kind of captain. Ah...he was a great guy, great man. Anyway ah...I stayed there in the DPS office, had a upstairs section and had two beds upstairs and had a commode and lavatory. Had to go...walk up to the fire station which was about a block away, block and a half, to take a shower. But even arranged that and ah...so Monday morning ah...he shows and ah...and we get together and first thing you know ah...the radi...telephone rings and there's nobody out at the DPS radio station and ah...he'd forgotten that the guy that runs the radio in the day time was on vacation too. So he and I went out to the radio station and ah...and he stayed with me until noon and ah...and taught me in four hours how to run a DPS radio station with two teletypes and three telephones. And a guy that had never been in East Texas before. And those old highway patrolmen there told me later ah...I got the directions to an accident they'd ever had you know. Because somebody would call in and say well there's a wreck you know fifteen miles southeast of Tyler on Farm Road 2020 or whatever it was and...and so I'd get a landmark or something, cause I didn't have any idea where this wreck was. But I'd get enough information from whoever called in that...that the highway patrol could find it you know. And ah...it was real interesting, but it was ah...it was ah...probably some of the best ah...experience that I got with the department.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How did that experience relate to you later?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...you know like ah...if I picked up my radio to call DPS radio station in Tyler and they didn't answer I didn't call back for the next five seconds. I'd lay that mike down because I still remembered how busy it was in the radio station. See we had one teletype that each state capitol ... it wasn't...it wasn't like it is now, you can...in a few seconds with this new NCIC system you can get a response. But ah...if I had a highway patrolman call in

checking on an out of state car for theft or registered owner information I've got to go get the chart number one and find out what number to dial to get the state capitol of the state that they are inquiring about. Then I've got to dial this number which is probably a ten digit dial and then I've got to sit down at a teletype....light starts blinking on the teletype and I've got to type out the information I want, whether it's wanted individual or stolen car, to this state capitol. Then I've got to wait of course, it...it don't return automatic like it does now, but then the phones ringing for something else or somebody calls in and wants to find out some out of Austin, then I got to go to the other teletype, key it by dialing and then...then ah...send my teletype to Austin. Then when these come back of course the light starts blinking and you tear off the sheet and you get it recorded and you call whoever had called in. See and it wasn't only highway patrolmen wanting this information, it was Sheriff's offices and police departments in all of East Texas that...they're calling in for information through the DPS radio station. Everybody, anybody that wanted any...none of these people had access to teletypes at that time. The only one in East Texas was in Tyler, Texas. And it was a heck of a job.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did...did during that two weeks did you come ah...have any contact with Rangers or investigators?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...you know I got wondering about that and I don't remember ever having a Ranger during that time call in for anything. And...and I'm sure that they did. But I don't remember, I sure don't. And of course you know it's hard to remember everything, but I know that nothing happened that...that really was outstanding or I'd of remembered it you know. And....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now you're finished in Tyler and you're getting ready to come to Longview, before we ah...stop the tape today, during this time I want to ask if you have any

remembrances of an extremely high profile case that's happening during this same period. Well it actually happened right before this, in '46, the Texarkana Phantom murders.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yes...ah...you know when I got out of service ah...Life magazine had ah...had just run a...when I got home...my...my father-in-law was a good man, just you know, it was hard for me to decide sometimes whether I loved nearly as much as I did my own daddy. And this is true, he was...he was just a good country man. He farmed and...and in bad weather he helped his brother run a grocery store in town, he was always on the election...one of the election judges, he was interested in Church and school and community and ah...he was a good man. And ah...ah...but he was a scared, he was...he was frightened easy and he was nearly almost afraid of his shadow. And...and he raised his girls that away. Ah...you know he had five girls and ah...ever...they...they couldn't hardly get a bad cold and he'd carry 'em to the doctor, because he had a relative that was a doctor here in town. And ah...and when I got home from the service ah...at nights he had...they had all their windows covered during this time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: During the time of the

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...uh hum...

ROBERT NIEMAN:Texarkana killings?

GLENN ELLIOTT: See I..I believe that this...they were right in to this just about the time Iin '46 isn't that right?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well that's when I getting home from the service see. And...and of course everybody around here was excited. My mother and daddy didn't out here you know ah...ah...they didn't cover their windows. But Virgil lived in town, right on the railroad track up there and ah...I showed you yesterday where they....the house was and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just for the record we're not that far from Texarkana here either.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's ninety miles.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT:or so from here to Texarkana right due east. And of course the railroad track goes right straight into Texarkana and Virgil lived on the railroad. And of course there's a lot of people rode the trains and knocked on their back door for food all during the depression (unintelligible). But ah...but they was...when I got home they had their....at night they'd cover their windows with blankets. See then people didn't have drapes in their house and venetian blinds. And they had old window curtains but still you could see around them you know. And... and that's how...that's how the situation was around here. People were....if far from Texarkana ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: A little background on that, the way I understand that case or you can...you can probably explain it better than I can what was going on up there. This was a man that never was caught.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gonzauillas, Lone Wolf Gonzauillas, worked the case and was never able to solve it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, see I've heard Gonzauillas talk about the....Gonzauillas talked about this case to us in ain another school later on, now it may be an in-service school or something because ah...I know he...he and one of the other Rangers would get out and ah...and he'd put on a wig and dress like a woman ah...the upper part of his body. And they'd park out in these areas hoping that this guy would come up you know. And ah...he never did. They....they went to that extreme, they.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the...what was happening the way I understand it, this guy, the Phantom killer was catching kids out parked.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:dragging ‘em out and abusing them and killing ‘em....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right...yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:and he never was caught.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Never was apprehended no, not ‘til today. And they had suspects you know and ah...but ah...they never made a case on it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Of course they ended up making a movie out of it, “The Town That Dreaded Sundown” and so forth and so on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum....yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah...then shall we stop here and next time....

(break in tape at this time)

qqq

ROBERT NIEMAN: We now at my house here in Longview and ah...we had finished your Tyler days. Ah...you said you wanted to put something in on your captain on the highway patrol.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no, my first partner.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Your first partner, Lloyd Webb?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah...ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay well ah...let’s work in from....your coming back to Longview. You’re finished in Tyler. Does Katherine come down and join you immediately?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes Katherine....of course we’d already moved our furniture down here and ah...I think that ah...and know that she and Diane stayed in ah...in Windom because I was

going to have to be in Tyler for two weeks working while my partner...my highway patrol partner that I was going to work with ah...was on vacation, two weeks vacation. So I got my time in over at Tyler and ah...and I'm back in Longview and ah...and ah...Webb got back off his vacation and so we hooked up. And ah...what I was...what I had said earlier to you that I'd like to insert into this that ah...I'd like to think I've had a little success you know in my career and...and...but I contribute ah... a whole lot of it to my first highway patrol partner, Lloyd E. Webb. Because I tell you he was a...Webb was a member of the 1937 patrol school. He had twelve years experience on the highway patrol when I started to work here with him and he and I were partners for five and a half years and then ah...he made sergeant and went to San Angelo and then later came back here and...and was my Supervisor for a few years after that until I transferred into the Rangers. But Webb and I got along real well and with his experience and then you know today....well for instances....well I'm not using....I'm not putting the department down in any way but ah...last week when we were up at Windom well Brad Oliver came by and Brad's a good boy. Well Brad's working by hisself. He hadn't been a highway patrolman for six months yet, or maybe eight. And ah...I had the advantage of having a seasoned highway patrolman to work with for twelve and a half years. And ah...it would be good if we could train all of our people that way. We can't now because of the turn over. Ah...ever..every trooper can't have somebody with that much experience. But it sure was a lot of help to me. He was a very good, seasoned, well respected officer in the area. He was firm but courteous and ah...and I know that he got me started off in the right direction.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was Lloyd from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was raised up here....he was from Houston but his folks were raised over here in Harrison County. He's ...he's kin to a lot of people up here in ah...in this area

over....especially in Harrison County. His ah...I think his ah....mother and daddy had lived in...over here on a farm in Harrison County and his dad went to work for the railroad and ah...they eventually moved to Houston and that's where Webb was educated in Houston. Ah... but ah...his roots were really up here in East Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when you started were you assigned to Gregg County, Harrison County or both or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I was stationed in Longview and at that time...of course the highway patrol back then ah...worked kind of liked I worked as a Ranger, if we had problems somewhere and they couldn't find a highway patrolman we would.....you know, we'd go. Ah...if they had a bank robberies or things of this nature, or man hunts or drownings or....wherever they needed help well we'd go help. And ah...so actually we were assigned to work Gregg County. There was two patrolmen in Gladewater at the time and ah...Pat Spear was one of 'em who later became Director of the Department of Public Safety. And ah...there was nobody in Kilgore ah...we ah...we worked accidents in Rusk County on their....when the Henderson boys was off duty, if they couldn't find 'em and we were charged with ah...accident investigation and traffic supervision between here and Hallsville a lot of the time, in Harrison County. And then of course ah...there was times that ah...that we worked wrecks from Waskom to Wills Point just about it you know...if...if ..on 80 if somebody wasn't available for some reason or other. And they needed a trooper and that's where we'd go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me insert, I failed to, this is Monday, February 6, 1995. Ah...is Webb still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he died ah...early. Webb had a...oh he hadprobably had some type of cancer, but ah...they didn't know then that....I guess in about '65 or '66 he passed away and

ah...died real young. Ah...and ah...he had been...they had been treating here for something, they couldn't figure out what it wasn't ah...and then ah...they...he went down to Scott and White and they diagnosed his case but it was too late, he'd already gotten....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Scott and White in Temple?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So ah...yeah he died too young.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...was it normal...ah you say he was from here but of course you was from up at Windom, did they normally send you away, when you first came on the force, from your home area? For instance we was just talking about Brad Oliver, he's from that area and now then he's been stationed there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well they've changed all that and they should have you know. But that was the policy when I went to work. It was a....they never....very seldom ever sent a guy back to his hometown unless he'd served you know several years somewhere else you know. Ah...I don't know what their....what reasoning they had for this but you know a lot of things change and now ah...even when I trans....asked to transfer to the Rangers they...they even had a policy then of moving a guy all the way across the state every time he...you know if he made sergeant. They got to thinking well he can't supervise the guys he worked around even from the sergeants that made early. But this was wrong you know. If a...ah...Webb and I worked as partners and he was later my sergeant and ah...I...I...you know I had a lot more respect for his judgment than I would a sergeant I didn't even know, you know. And I...I...I knew he used good judgment in things that he did. But they...they changed that policy. It was just a policy that the department developed for some reason or other. And ah...but now like ah....this is probably one of the reasons that Brad is working by hisself so successfully right now because he's in an area that he knows, nobody's got to tell him how to get to Munkstown to a wreck you know because

he knows where Munkstown is located and he...nobody's got to...he knows all the roads, he knows the people ah...they know him and they respect him and the people's going to be sittin' on the juries on these drunk driving cases and ...and it's to his advantage and to the public's advantage for these guys to know their area and know the people in it. And I think the department discovered that several years ago and for that reason they try to have a happy employee and put him as close to home as they can and....and for more reasons than one you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What...do you remember the date of your first day of active duty here in Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I don't, it would be probably about the 15th day of June I would imagine.

ROBERT NIEMAN: 19__?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '49.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '49.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....one thing I want to...it's on one of my projects, we'll cover this and get it out of the way, ah...you were only here during the last two or three years of her career but ah....could you...any thoughts or remembrances of Mattie Castleberry. And at this time is was Mattie's Palm Isle, she's long since closed down the dance hall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. Yeah I had...of course ah...ah...in those days ah...we'd stop there occasionally and when they'd have the name bands. It was you know...it's ah...we were curious just like anybody else. And of course most of the operators, and Mattie included, ah...liked to have a police officer come around. Because ah...less trouble and ah...we were invited. In fact

ah...most of your people that mooned...if it wasn't ...unless it was just the old bar room honky tonk well they was always glad to see an officer come around. And a lot of times those guys run those places was glad to see us. Because those....you know if they get in a fight and they didn't exempt the owner and....necessarily from combat you know. So ah...we had real good rapport with the people here in the County and...and they were glad to see us. So ah...if Bob Wills or somebody like that was playing at the Reo Palm Isle well we'd know about it cause it would be advertised in the paper. And of course ah...and we'd cut through the parking lot more than one time a night because that was our....that's what we were out there for to prevent accidents you know. If somebody saw us go through the parking lot there and they was fixing to get in their car well there was a good chance they'd get somebody sober to drive or they'd...they wouldn't get in their car you know. So ah...that was a pretty good deterrent to ah...ah...drunk driving you know. So we...we went ah...ah...yeah we'd go out there and of course I met Mattie but I ah...I can't....I've been trying to figure out just exactly what she looked like and it's been so long you know I...I probably wouldn't even recognize a picture of her.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was visiting with her granddaughter, Martha Josie, up here between Marshall and Karnack and I finally found...after researching the old gal for two years finally found a picture of her. So...okay Glenn, you're in Longview, I've got my little personal thing out of the way ah....what was your first case that you remember. Or do you remember your very first case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, no I don't remember my very first case. We were...I'll tell you, during this time ah...the Gregg County Sheriff's office ah...staff was short. They had ah...two men working at night most of the time and on weekends sometimes they have four. And ah...in the daytime ah...they were thinner than that you know. And they would ah...so we were out on patrol

all the time. It was not unusual for the Sheriff's office to call us ah...and say there's a disturbance out at so and so's. I think the first case that I remember that we got called on was out in the White Oak area and ah...we were on patrol and just happened to be ah...out in the Greggton, Gladewater area on Highway 80. Of course you know 80 carried all the traffic then and ah...that was before interstate. And ah...we got this report that there was a disturbance out at White Oak and there's some shots been fired in the...in the White Oak area, I don't really think....of course White Oak was not a city then. But it happened it was out on the old ah...ah...Gladewater highway around ah...LaFamo's out there, which is a landmark out there and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a...oh I think was...at one time it was a honky tonk maybe. But ah...we got out there and it was a family dispute and this ah...this guy's ah...he killed his father-in-law and he was laying in the yard and of course we arrested him and ah...and called for the Sheriff's office to come on out you know. And we preserved this crime scene until they got there and of course during these days ah...there wasn't near this scientific crime scene investigation conducted as there is today. Although I had been trained in school you know and my partner had been trained, so we...we knew enough about working criminal cases, although we...our concern was traffic, that we....we did preserve the scene and the weapon and we arrested the guy. And of course this was before you had to read 'em their rights you know and all this. And he told us basically what had happened and we made notes you know. And of course had to testify later in court. That was the first case that I remember working ah...and it wasn't long after that 'til ah...I know ah...it was still before ah...we was still driving a '48 Ford I remember that because ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that '48 Ford your first car?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. Yeah ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me ask you, before we...how was that car equipped?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...it had ah...my partner had bought a heater to put on it. The State didn't even furnish heaters until 1950. And...'49....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of heater?

GLENN ELLIOTT:'49. A...a gasoline...I mean a ah...water heater. It had a water heater on it and...and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What, did it set in the floor board?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it was up underneath the dash on the passenger side. And ah...it was a pretty good heater, had a fan behind it you know and it was hooked up to the water system, water would circulate through it you know. And ah...and then in '49 they....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The car's water system.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. And in 1949 they bought a...they bought...they installed gasoline heaters on the cars they bought, first heaters the State had bought. And they...and they were...we didn't have a '49 Ford but ah...some of the boys did and ah...they were hooked up to the carburetor. And ah...operated off of the carburetor some way and you'd get into a high speed chase and you'd have to turn the heater off and you'd have problems like that. But ah...I know the...one of the main cases that...the first maj...what I call major cases I was...was ah...I had let my partner out at home, we worked nights most of the time there, all the time ah...because if we went to work in the daytime and we was always subject to call at night we'd just have to work day and night both. So generally we'd go to work at two in the afternoon and work 'til about two in the morning. And on weekends we might work 'til three or four. But ah...I remember one night ah...Katherine and Diane was probably gone, I know they were gone to visit their folks,

and ah...and they did this pretty regular cause they was kind of homesick and down here ah...and this was all new to us and I'm gone at night all the time so....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How did they get up there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh ah...somebody probably came after 'em. Because ah...by this time...no cause we didn't even buy a car 'til about '50. And I imagine some of the folks came down.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wasn't a bus or train?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no they was...there was too much between here and there that...

ROBERT NIEMAN: We just run out tape. Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: The...the bus connection between here and where we lived were not too good, you'd have to go through Dallas or Greenville and it would take all day to get there on the bus. But anyway, I had let my partner and he lived out ah...north part of town. That's how come we settled out there so we ah... we...I bought a lot probably three blocks from where he lived and ah...because....

ROBERT NIEMAN: From Ruthlyn where you live now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. Because ah...we got called....we'd get called out at night and we lived in the same...well anyway...practical to have to drive all the way across town to you know get your partner to go to a crime scene or a wreck or whatever you was getting called out on. So he was already settled so I thought it was the best thing for me to do was try to settle close to him which we did. But I was coming to town...we were...at that time we were living at 110 E. Marshall, right on Highway 80, and ah...I decided to go by the Hollywood Cafe, it was one or two o'clock in the morning and eat me a bit and ah...maybe sleep late the next morning you know, or at least sleep 'til after breakfast. I pulled up down....I was going down Fredonia street and ah...got to the Post Office there and I was fixing to cross Methvin and it was ah....the light

was red and I was sitting there waiting for the light to change and there was a guy that drove some the south ran the red light, pulled up and stopped beside me. And I told him I said....of course our old...that old '48 Ford it was black and white had that...and it's ah...it was black with a white strip all the way down the side and...and well marked, had the two spot lights and two red lights on the top and ah...and several antenna's, because we had ah...three different radio's in it at that time and not too good of communication on any of them except the local one. But anyway this guy recognized it as being a police car and ah...he...he told me he said, there's a guy killing another one down on Tyler street and ah...told me where (unintelligible)...Bluebonnet Cafe. And ah...so right away I call...I just picked up the mike and...we all, the city and county and all of us were on the same frequency at that time and there wasn't that much radio traffic. Although we had different dispatchers but ah...we was all on the same frequency and ah...37.260 I think is what it was. Anyway ah...I called for a city unit and told 'em what this guy had told me and by that time well I was already around there. I turned west on Tyler street and I could see 'em out there fighting in the street, well actually just laying in the street. And ah...I pulled my car over on the wrong side of the road because ah...and jumped out. And this guy got up and he was stabbing this guy laying on the ground and ah...on the...on the ah...concrete...street. And ah...it was an awful sight, laying out in the street and he ah...he ran up the steps...stairway, went upstairs over this old cafe and I caught him about three steps up I guess. And ah...of course I had my pistol out...and...in the hallway...and ah... I knew he had something in his hand but I didn't know...I never did get a good look at it. But I subdued him and ah...brought him back out in the street. Just about the time I got him down I guess ah....in the stairwell, well two policemen came and ah....Roy Stone and ah...Elmo Crocker. And Crocker we just buried him last month and Roy's still here, he later became a Police Chief here. Anyway we got him out and ah...and they

found he had a 10 1/2" boning knife in his hand. And he had stabbed this guy 47 times with that knife. And of course he was plumb...plenty dead. But ah...I may...I testified in court in that case and the...and this guy that was doing the stabbing was around, oh as I remember he was...I thought he was so old a person then...he was around 60 or better. And this was two guys that ah...Greeks that were partners there in that cafe and got into a dispute over money or something and got in a fight and just...well he just killed him out there. And we...we got a conviction. I never will forget R.L. Whitehead was the District Attorney here at the time and ah...I got to hear the...of course you know in court you don't get to hear anybody else's testimony and very rare that you do. They have a ruling so...and they did in this case. And of course that's the...the defense has an edge on that because if I sat in there and listened to somebody else testify well it might bring back something to my memory or I might be inclined to testify the same thing this guy did. But anyway I got to hear the argument and I never will forget ah.... of course I was just young and I was taking all this in and I was pleased to get involved in somethingarrested somebody cause that's what I was getting paid for you know but ah...that had committed a crime like that. But Mr. Whitehead in his argument he told the jury he said, ah...he pointed to me out there and he said that Highway Patrolman sitting right out....right there on that second row, said ya'll heard his testimony. And he said, he could have tried this man from that hallway the other night but he brought him here to you and he wants the citizens of this county to say what kind of punishment this man gets you know. And they stuck it to him. I don't remember how much time he got but he got a heap. And of course that impressed me somewhat you know. Because here I am I'm just still wet behind the ears and I'm getting recognized by a District Attorney they had a lot of respect for.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it ever enter your mind, just shoot him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...I would have you know if he'd resisted but ah...he didn't offer...he had his back turned to me 'til I...I...I popped him up side the head pretty good with my pistol and put him down and...and the fight was over you know. If he'd of turned on me with the knife well you know I'd prob....I'd would have gone with the gun no doubt. But I'm about as afraid of a knife as I am a gun.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of gun did you carry then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We had an old .38 Smith & Wesson that probably was.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Double action?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, 15 years old, 20. Ah...yeah, that's what ah...that's what we was equipped with when we got out of school. I worked that case and ah...oh I don't know ah...gosh there's a lot of them that come to my mind. I know soon after that, pretty soon, in 1950....of course we would get called like I said, on road blocks and bank robbery's. And we was down in Carthage a short time, I know we still had that old '48 Ford and we was setting up a road block down there, they'd ah....a couple of bank robbers down there got ah...one of the patrolmen got after 'em and they ran into a dead end road. They'd robbed a bank down around Houston. They was in a stolen car and ah...they had the money in a overnight, little overnight shaving bag, with a zipper on it. And they ran down the one way road and the trooper, highway patrolman got after 'em and ah....Dorough and Cooper stationed there in Carthage and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Cooper and Dour....D-o-r-o-u-g-h.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Two men?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And they were stationed in Carthage at that time and Cooper shot at this guy, one of them, and hit him on the hand and he dropped the money. But they continued to

run. And they stayed in the woods and what happened was that old Sheriff down there then had a bunch of dogs and we'd used the dogs up here and ah...on lots....lots of times if they needed a dog they....now they can call the penitentiary. But then a bunch of these country Sheriff's had their own blood hounds and they were pretty good dogs. Anyway they got after 'em and the water was real high and we set up a road block. Of course we was on the road block all night Saturday night until about four o'clock Sunday afternoon. Ah...we....we'd just go into an area and seal it off and stay there 'til they was caught. And ah...and they...they caught 'em late that afternoon, the dogs got 'em, they was down in...the river was up and they couldn't get across the river. And we was just stopping everybody that was going in and out warning 'em and checking vehicles of anybody that looked suspicious, in the truck and what have you coming out you know. But that was just routine for us you know. But they was long assignments. But ah....you...you know it's something we did that was a service to the public.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well on your....on road blocks and surveillance's and what not, ah....would you liken it to say military guys that are on guard duty or something, I mean, just talk about the weather to the presidents and just everything in between or...I mean that would have to get kind of boring.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, well of course here's what you do....of course even back then traffic was pretty good. That was Highway 59 and ah...and you didn't get to bored out there cause there was truck....a lot of truck traffic coming through there and all...you know you're there all night long. But yeah, you talk about anything to stay awake and ah...and you see you'd be surprised at that instances come along that would interest you. And ah...and it...we made ah....you have to make a little fun out of everything that you do or you wouldn't enjoy it too much if it was just ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Any of these interesting things you can talk about?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...I won't even get into it. But you know you could see about everything there is to see out there. But we were....all of us though were wanting to catch those two thieves you know, those robbers. Because that... and everybody down there wanted to make the arrest you know. And that's the way a bunch of officers are and that's the reason...that's what motivates you to stay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you did catch 'em?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Caught 'em yeah. And then ah...I remember another ah...I guess ah...just shortly after '50 because I know we got the...we got the first ah...we got one of the first Interceptor Fords that ah...the State bought. Ah...and probably the first ones as far as I know that were manufactured. Ford manufactured a Interceptor Ford in 1950. And we got one of them, my partner and I. I think he kind of hated it because we got it because I was young and I loved to chase those speeders, of course this was long before radar and you had the ah...physically ah...out drive the guy you was after you know and then clock him in order to issue a summons. And ah...I noticed shortly after we got this '50 model Ford that we ah...we had a trooper shot up in ah...Red River county....no in Bowie county, near Bassett, Texas and killed him, his name was Hannah. And ah...of course during those times we didn't wait you know for somebody to tell us where to go, if wewe heard Hannah was shot and started up there. And of course as soon...we hadn't got out of town good probably 'til the radio station in Tyler was instructing us what was going on and...and ah...and wanting to know if we were in route and telling us where to go you know. And I know we got up there and ah...and this guy was seen crossing the highway, just as soon as we got in to the area. And we just jumped out of our car and we got with one local Constable I think up there in Bowie county and ah...and another highway patrol.....two highway

patrolmen, I guess that was just five of us. And we...we stayed after that guy down a railroad track oh I don't know, probably six or seven miles and maybe more and ah...I know we...we ran into a railroad crew and they told us he just was ahead of us you know. And he knew...we was pretty close behind him and ah....and just before night well we flushed him out down there. And we could hear the big ah....of course we didn't knowwe wasn't....didn't have him in our sights but we saw where he went off of the railroad embankment and up to the field and we was just turning off and we was close enough that we could hear the fireworks and he got into a gun battle with ah....Jim Ray and a bunch of the other troopers that were up there by that time that lived a little further away than we did. And...and we'd been down in...we'd been in the woods all day that day, muddy and ah...we got an old colored bootlegger there, he had a bunch of dogs around his house, I never will forget this Constable ah...I said, well ah....I asked him I said, how do we get out of here and he said, well it's gonna be....it's a good ways over there where we heard that shooting and he said, get out here to the road we got to go another direction as I remember it anyway ah....this ah...I said, well we'll get this guy here to get that pickup and he can haul us....oh he won't, he's a bootlegger and he won't...and you know he's not going to do anything for an officer. And ah....I went up on his porch and knocked and he come to the door and I said, partner we got down here on official as far as your concerned and we're down here looking for a guy killed a highway patrolman, right now need some transportation out of here. And he grabbed his hat and said, yes sir, I'll take ya'll anywhere you want to go. And he hauled us out to town and of course we had to get...we made a big circle and come back and got our car. But it was just about night. But these were the kinds of things we did on patrol. And ah...gosh I've ah...like I said, we've answered a lot of calls with the Sheriff's office and ah....and I'll think of a bunch more things that we'll probably talk about it. But you know it just has to come to your

mind. But I worked with Webb for 5 1/2 years and then we ah..... ah....then I was with a boy named Walker, Kenneth Walker. And I got out of school and ah...Webb made sergeant and went to San Angelo and they sent Kenneth Walker up here for me to break in and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was he from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was ah...from Nacogdoches.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he any relation to the Kenneth Walker, the attorney here in town now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: County....former County Judge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no he wasn't any kin to him. And ah...Kenneth was going to school down there at Stephen F. Austin and working for the Fire Department. And seemed like he was raised somewhere down in that area there, I'm not....I don't remember for sure just exactly where. He lives in Corsicana now I understand. But anyway, Kenneth worked with me for a couple of years and ah....and then they opened up a station in Daingerfield and so they wanted Kenneth to go to Daingerfield. And...and he got a rookie highway patrolman and then I got Howard Alford, Slick Alford and he was just out of patrol school. So I broke Howard in and ah...he and I worked together for several years, up until....I went on the Rangers in '61. So I guess it was '57, '56 probably when Howard came out of school. And ah....he and I worked some pretty interesting cases together. I think I've told you about one. We were ah...and by that time had ah....we had troopers in Kilgore and Gladewater both and ah...so our area wasn't quite as big. And ah...sometime after...before I transferred to the Rangers ah...I think in '57 after Howard had about a years experience well we ah...Webb came back here as sergeant and he was trying to help us get a little more time and not have to work so many hours. And so he got us another vehicle. So we worked by ourselves. And ah...we'dwe'd work splitwe'd work

ah...weeks, one week nights and one week days and we'd lap over some. And that got....we could spend more time at home with our families at night that away you know. And...and it madeand we wasn't getting called so much because like I'd go to work at say eight in the morning and work 'til six in the afternoon and Howard would come to work at four in the afternoon and work 'til two. And then we'd swap on Sunday's. And the Sunday well I'd get off at eight Saturday nighton Saturday's and Sunday's we'd work from ten to eight I think it was ah...when we was working days and I'd get off at like eight Saturday night and wouldn't have to go back 'til four Sunday afternoon. And then I'd work nights for a week. But anyway, Howard and I were working a case one time and we stayed busy all the time. We stayed busyah...back in my earlier days I think the first year I was here we had nine drunk pedestrians run over and killed between Longview and Greggton. You know just a solid line of honky tonks out there and ah....and it was right after the war andand there was a lot...a lot people...and this was the only wet area then well in.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Between Longview and Greggton?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. See Gregg County was the only wet area, Texarkana, Arkansas was the closest place north. Ah....Shreveport, Louisiana closest place east. Dallas was the closest place west. Houston was the closest place south you could buy alcohol. Well people flocked in here pretty good. And ah...they...and they'd just make these old honky tonks and these drunks would go....leave one of them and maybe start across Highway 80 to another one and get run over you know and killed. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had nine killed in how long a period?

GLENN ELLIOTT: In a one year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I mean that's just

ROBERT NIEMAN: About what year was that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Been '49 and '50 I think. And that was just drunk pedestrians. Now we...we had others killed, we....in automobile accidents I mean where there would be more than one vehicle involved. But we was just having a heck of a time with drunk pedestrians. And my partner and I decided that ah...that we just...we'd put as high as 30 drunks in jail a night. Just patrol up and down 80 and one...see one out there...come out bounce off....when he fell off the front porch or out of the front door and on that parking lot well he was our babe, and we'd just grab him and take him on down and put himsave his life. And ah...we had...it..it was...and a lot of people wanted to fight you in those days. And it was ah....you know it...it was pretty tough around here. And ah....of course those guys had just come back from combat you know and maybe forty months or forty-eight months overseas fighting the enemy and come home and get drunk and still have a little fight left in them. And I never will forget one night ah...my partner....of course we...we got along real good....but we'd get at each other every once in awhile. We were down at the Hollywood Cafe, Webb and I, and ah...oh it was two or three o'clock in the morning and I think everybody we accosted that night wanted to fight, they justand they'd do you that away. And ah....we'd just bring 'em on in you know and...and use whatever force was necessary. And ah....I told him, I made a statement that morning I said, man this has been a tough night, and it had been, we'd got one old boy I think our first....early that afternoon, an old guitar picker and some of Elvis Presley's bunch, because he was down in here that...during those days. And...and he was all hopped up and he had ran everybody out of one of the toughest honky tonks on 31, actually it was the highway between here and Kilgore then, and we went out there.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Elvis had?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Elvis had?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Elvis had been out here I say but ah....some of his bunch.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh.

GLENN ELLIOTT:oh yeah, he'd played in these old joints.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, but I mean, he'd run everybody out of this honky tonk?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but it wasn't Elvis. I don't know who it was, I don't remember the guys name. But he was a band player and he got hopped up and he just ran everybodyhe was standing in the door and everybody else out on the parking lot. And he was pretty tough and ah...I know I talked him into the car. I know we got up here in town and we had a lot more trouble out of him and that was early then and it just went down hill I think the rest of the night. Anyway, I'd told Webb that morning I said ah...it's been a tough night. And I never will forget he said, well you think it's tough here tonight you ought of been here with me during World War II. He didn't go in the service, he had a family already and he was a police officer and exempt. And I never will forget my reply was I said, well if you think it's tough here during World War II you ought of been with me in the South Pacific. He never did mention that anymore. But anyway, we get on back to ah....when Howard got here ah...I don't know, Kenneth and I ah...I would have to go back a long ways to remember us getting in anything you know, over exciting. Ah...you know, we probably worked....got involved in quite a few things and naturally would. But ah....I know when....when Howard hadn't been here long 'til this ah...we got a call at the ah...there had been an Arlington police officer kidnapped. He had gone to a family disturbance up at Arlington and he walked up on the porch and ah...the male part of the disturbance had

ah....walked up on him with a shotgun and kidnapped him and was forcing him to drive him to Mississippi, that's where he said he was going. And they left Arlington andand ah...of course the police were alerted. I think maybe the officer talked to 'em on the radio, I don't remember all the details. But ah...anyway this ah...by the time they got out ofthrough Dallas they had ah...he had been shooting at some the policemen following them. And ah....ah...we had two patrolmen stationed in Terrell at that time, two in Terrell, two in Mineola and two in Gladewater and two in Longview and two in Marshall. And he had shot the windshield out of the patrol car ah...in Terrell, they had stopped in Terrell and bought gas and left without paying andand he was still holding this policeman at bay. And ah....so...they had set up a road block and ah....the Police Chief in Arlington was ah...he was on the telephone telling them not....you know to pull the road block, not to stop his car and let them go. So finally ah....they had got up about Mineola and we began to hear about it on our radio. We was busy ourselves, we'd just arrested a guy that had ah...torn up the Ranch House on 149, had him stopped at Highway 80 and Tyler Street and he had....he had just really had himself a big time down there and tearing things up. We had a little trouble with him as I remember. And ah...but a couple of deputies by about the time we got him stopped because they were the ones that got the call and ah...all the disturbance happened inside the club down there and they....so we turned them....him over to them and ah...well we actually gave 'em the option. Said, we got this guy and he's drunk and he's driving a car and of course ya'll have got a disturbance on it and he needs to be put in jail and ya'll want to handle him or do you want to go over here and try to stop this car that's got this kidnapped policeman. Well they decided to put him in jail. So we ah...we went on to Gladewater and ah...the captain, by this time our captain, highway patrol captain name of Glenn Warner and Captain Warner had ah...he was at the radio station by then and we were....we were in Gladewater by that time. And I

don't know where the Gladewater highway patrolmen were that night but they wasn't working. Probably they might of been off for some reason or other, I don't know. But ah...I know we had some reason for being out there by ourselves and they were not there as I remember. And ah...captain told us not to let that ah....vehicle leave this district, that was our instructions, that was the only instructions we had. That was enough of course. And ah...so we had already stopped in Greggton and called our sergeant, he'd already gone home for the night, it'sit's getting up probably midnight or so. Webb had been out I know but he....seemed like it was a holiday, I know it was the weekend but ah....anyway we got over there and ah....I stopped a couple of a...we stopped two truck-trailerstruck tractor-trailers right at theeast of the entrance to the Gladewater rodeo, there's a high mound on both sides of the road....railroad track over on the south side and pretty good mound on the north side just about identical.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And this was about what time again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, it was....I don't even know what timeI don't know whether it was the winter, summer , spring , I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No I mean in the day.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, it was late at night. It was twelve, one or two o'clock in the morning. And ah...this was right after reorganization and we had just got our captain. And ah...captain Smith had...he was re....he had...they had made him regional manager and moved him to Dallas. So Warner was sergeant up in Dallas and he made captain and came to Tyler. And the Rangers at that time were still under....were under the regional command, they hadn't been changed. And I know ah...when we got....when we apprehended this guy oh there was five or six Rangers behind him and ah...but see everybody was...he was coming down 80 and Jim Ray was stationed in Tyler at the time, Red was in Mt. Pleasant but they didn't get notified in time to get in front of

him. They ...they cut across and fell in behind. But anyway ah...we got...I got these trucks and I got Howard and then ah....there was a couple of patrolmen from Gilmer came down and ah...I know they got there right before this guy did. And so we....we had all that rodeo ground out there to park the cars in, in front of him....his front of him and we didn't want to you know have a bottle neck there. So I got them to direct all the cars that was coming down 80 just into that rodeo ground and there was plenty of parking places out there and we just had everybody go just as far back in there and park 'em as they could and so the highway would stay clean. And..and ah...so by the time this guy ah...who had the policeman....and the policeman was driving and he was driving a '57 Plymouth. I never will forget and they was sailing down through there and of course ah....I had my patrol car parked in between these two trucks. There wasn't any way for him....so we could get an ambulance in there if we needed it. Well actually it's if he ran in there and wrecked out or whatever. We had it pretty well planned for no more time than we had to plan you know. And ah...but anyway they ah....this...ah....this city policeman saw the road block and recognized it as such and got on his brakes and those old Plymouth's had pretty good brakes on 'em, that's about the only thing you could count on as far as I was concerned as a police car. But he stopped, I never will forget, he slid that car down and ah....the front end of it was down and when it came up it...it...the bumper on the back of one of those trucks creased the hood and ah....I had a 10 gauge ah....double barrel shotgun, it belonged to Webb and I think his grandpa gave it to him and ah....well I was in the ditch there where I knew he was going to stop, I knew he wasn't going any...any further. That was the end of the road for him because we had those trucks jackknifed and he was not going to climb those banks and he was going to fast to stop up there to turn into the rodeo grounds.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How fast would you guess-a-mate he was going?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well however fast that old '57 Plymouth would go. Probably 90 miles an hour you know. But ah...and there were vapor lights there where we were. There was a vapor light right...right over ah....us and ah....and we was well illuminated. And anyway, he got on his brakes and by the time he got stopped well I had that door open on the passenger side and that 10 gauge pointed at that old boy. And I hollered for the policeman to get out and ah.... on the other side but he just froze. I was afraid the guy was going to start shooting and I knew if I had to shoot that guy that that 10 gauge was going to get that policeman too probably you know at that close a range. So ah...but the guy threw his gun down and his hands up. But that policeman just froze on that steering wheel, I never will forget, he just....he couldn't move. And I know he was scared to death. And he was still holding on to that steering wheel when I drug that boy out of the car.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What...what kind of gun did the guy have on him, pistol or shotgun?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Shotgun. Yeah, he had a shotgun. And he had disarmed the policeman, he had his pistol too. But he had shot....when he was shooting at the guys following him he had shot the back window out of this.....out of this patrol car and he was shooting out the back window you know. He wasn't sticking his weapon out the window he shooting just out....he had already shot the glass out of the back of the Plymouth. We carried him on down to Gladewater and like I said, there was a bunch of Rangers. I think ah....I think Jay Banks was in the....was in....I know he came on down there, Jay was there. And ah....because he...if there was any excitement you know Jay Banks would want to get involved in it if you could find him. And ah...I know he and Red and Jim as I remember were there. And ah...seemed like another Ranger ah...too out of Dallas was there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who...who was the Ranger stationed in Longview when you first.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: We wasn't....didn't have a Ranger stationed here. I was the first Ranger ever stationed in Longview.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Ah....the people that you were sending up into the rodeo grounds, did you have any trouble keeping them up there and them not wanting to come down and watch?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...no, you don't you know....general rule, folks are going to come around an auto....an automobile accident, they want to see the blood and all, but they don't....they don't care about being too close to where they think some gun fire is going to happen.

ROBERT NIEMAN: One of my favorite sayings is, people love the sight of blood just so it's not theirs.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well ah...my partner used to say, there's sporting blood turned to something else. Hell ah...no we didn't have any problem with them. But of course I...see the...the troopers that was working the traffic and I guess Howard was up there and I'm not sure where everybody was, but I know I was the senior officer there and ah....I guess and ah....and...and anyway the captain had instructed Howard and I not to let 'em go any further. And Howard was a rookie and II had seven, eight years experience and I took over I guess is what you'd say. And ah....so I knew I was going to be sittin' right there where the action was. So no doubt I sent Howard up there to help direct that traffic.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how long did it take you to get the guythe officer out of the car?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, you know I don't know. I care...I took charge of the prisoner and I know, I never will forget this, this trooper from ah....Terrell that ah....ah...he grabbed at me you know and he was mad enough to....andto want to kill him you know. I had to calm him down a little bit and tell him I said, now wait a minute now you know now this guys under arrest and you know and it's ah...and by this time of course just people....just....people behind me and of

course we didn't direct anybody into the rodeo ground after we got him stopped you know. Cause most of them was officers for a good while. But there was a lot of people there and of course we'd already stirred some interest there in Gladewater and a lot of these people was listening to this and some of the news media was there already and ah...it didn't take but just a minute, but I did have to calm this guy down a little bit. And ah...and we carried him on down to Gladewater and ah...and I guess the Rangers carried him on back to Dallas because I don't think we ever put in the Gregg County jail.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you know whatever the disposition of the case was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I have no idea. I have no idea. He was ah...I know that ah...see we were in Upshur county....ah...rodeo grounds in Upshur county.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gladewater is?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I didn't know that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, part...see part of Gladewater is in Upshur county , part of Kilgore is in Rusk county and part of Longview is in Harrison county. But we were in ah...we were in Upshur county. But I know....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pat Spears there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no Pat had already been promoted ah....by that time and ah...see Pat was ah...he was probably a lieutenant or captain one by then. lieutenant anyway out probably in Amarillo somewhere.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....the officer that was killed, Hannah. Do you remember his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I sure don't. Ah...and I probably got the chaparral somewhere that's got that in it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll try to find out later. Ah...when you joined the police, how were from the State's stand point, how was you equipped? You said you had a .38 double action, what else had they give you? As far as handcuffs and uniforms.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well uniforms, oh we had handcuffs and ah...yeah we had handcuffs and ah...yeah we had handcuffs and I think we had a set of leg irons. Ah....we ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they furnish your uniforms?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah they furnished us....furnished us uniform and a sam brown belt and we wore caps. When I went to work we wore wool uniforms year round, long sleeved, solid wool shirt and solid wool trousers.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Tie?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Tie.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Stayed cool in the summer.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Everybody wore....everybody dressed the same and weand ah...we wore 'em year round. And it washeck it was up inI'd say in the '50's, the mid '50's before we changed uniforms. We went to a cotton shirt, still had to wear a tie.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you wear boots or shoe or...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we wore...started out wearing shoes but ah...they developed a slip-on boot, a round toed black boot soon after ah...soon after I went to work and it got real popular.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that a knee boot were the pant legs went inside or...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no, we....you wore the pant legs outside and they were ah...probably only 10 ah....10" tops probably. Ah...it was kind of on the style of a...of a boot but it was a...it

looked dressy and ah...it just saved you a lot of time because it was not unusual at all for me to get out of bed, get a call at night and get dressed and probably driving 100 miles an hour in less than five minutes. Course I wouldn't wear a tie, wouldn't put a tie on when you get called out a night. But you just grab your clothes and they was right there by the bed, throw your boots on and button your shirt as you went out the back door and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Away you went.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and your gone you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How was Katherine reacting to the late hour nights?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Katherine was ah....sleeping probably ah...I thought she was you know. I...I probably didn't worry about enough how she reacted because I'd already chosen this for my profession and

ROBERT NIEMAN: How about your daughter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Diane tells me lots of stories now about remembering being...me waking her up at night or hearing the phone ring and of course Diane knows and ah...too even after my Rangers days that ah...that I got lots of calls. And ah...and it was not un....and I never did say no you know I'd...let's go. And ah...so she knew that and ah...I never got any unfavorable reaction from any of my family. They ah...they knew it was my career and they knew I liked what I was doing and it was putting bread and meat on the table. So ah....that's the way it was. I never discussed ah..Katherine...the neighbors would ask Katherine ah...well Glenn got called out last night, I heard him leave you know and what...what was it you know. And they'd call the next and maybe I'd already be gone you know. And I said, I don't have any idea, I'll have to read it in the paper andbecause I didn't discuss my...anything I worked on at home, never did discuss it . I'll tell you something else that happened while I was on the highway patrol that ah....that was

probably as big a shock as I've ever had happen to me. Ah...I was patrolling out on Highway 149.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Get this tape over.

GLENN ELLIOTT:I was patrolling out on Highway 149 one afternoon and ah...I drove up on an automobile accident just about where 16th Street used to come out on 149, down there ah...oh it's pretty close to where Eastman Road comes out down there now yonder 259, whatever that road is that goes to Daingerfield, where they got the new intersection down there. And ah...one of these cars well the motor was running ah...and it's just happened, still smoking, everyand people still in the car. I had just...didn't see it when it happened, I saw the....I saw a bunch of dirt and debris and I knew it was a wreck. So I got on down there and I guess I was probably a quarter of a mile away when it happened. And ah....this motor was running just wide open and ah....the car was smoking and I tell you I reached in the car and turned the ignition off. There was three people in the car, one passenger in the front was partially out on the ground on the other side, I reached and got the....turned the ignition off and opened the door of this car, and I'd already called for an ambulance cause I could....before I ever got out of my car I could tell it was a pretty bad wreck and ah....heck of a wreck. And the driver of the car got out before I recognized it being my dad and my mother was completely scalped from....I didn't even recognize her, her scalp was torn off and back from right just above her eyebrows all the way across here, blood all over her face. And the other lady that ah...was a friend of theirs and they was....they were all working down at ah...Resistol Hat Factory here in ah...down on 149, they'd just got off from work. And ah....there was a service station there ah...where this street came out into 149 and this lady had pulled out of this service station down the shoulder going the wrong way and cut out in front of my mother and dad and they...she...they hit 'em head on. And there I

was out there with my mother and dad and ah....ah...and a pretty bad wreck and I'm having to cope with it myself and handling it on it. Of course I wasn't...after I'd discovered who was there I went back and called for some more help of course you know. Because I...my main concern was to get on to the hospital and get to see about them and....but I couldn't leave out there unless I had somebody to take over. But 149 is a....I guess there's a lot of experiences down there and you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, wait a minute, wait a minute, how did your mom and dad get?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they got...they did good, they stayed in the hospital a good while, knocked my dad's teeth all out just about it and broke some ribs for him and he had some cuts and some scrapes on his face. And my mother they sewed her back together and she picked glass out of her skull for the next six months you know, it would work it's way out you know. And ah...but they got...they did good from the wreck and the other lady was....did all right too, she....they were all employed down there. She....she was riding with them and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the people that hit them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...the people that hit them ah....she got all right too, this lady got all right. And ah...it all worked out pretty good. But ah...it was a...it was a pretty

ROBERT NIEMAN: I...I bet it was a shock.

GLENN ELLIOTT:exciting shock and moments for me. And then I had another experience down on 149 and ah....I think two days before Christmas, probably the same year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What year was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think it was '59, cause it was shortly before I went on the Rangers. I know ah...I got ah...I had a drunk driver stopped on 149 just before I got to the river bridge. And

it just....it was four lane all the way to the river then, they had just completed that four lane road and had a four lane road and a fifteen foot improved shoulder. Beautiful, until you got right down to the river bridge and then it all come into two lanes there at the river. And there was a big old bridge kind of like that one between here and Kilgore and ah...I know I had this drunk driver stopped. And I was working alone and it was ah...it was after....it was eight or nine, ten o'clock at night, I don't remember, somewhere in that area and ah....I got this old boy I had stopped....oh you know we always stop behind everybody and ah...I pulled up beside of him and probably blew my siren or flashed my flashlight, blew the horn or something. Got his attention, turned the light on him andand he pulled over and on the improved shoulder and I pulled....I dropped in behind him because that's...you just learned to do that you know. It's...it's easy toif you know what you're going to do very few of thoseespecially drunks react fast enough that youah...they'll stop in front of you know. And ah...I dropped in behind him, he pulled over and stopped and I pulled off, I had two wheels off of the improved shoulder, we're talking about that's a four lane highway with two fifteen foot improved shoulders and I got two wheels off the shoulder. And I stopped behind him and I knew him, I'd put him in jail before. And he was drunk. And the old boys name was Sanders, I never will forget his name. And ah....I handled him....see I can tell you a Ranger story about him. Anyway ah...ah...I got out of the car andand got him out and ah....he had him some...he had some Christmas presents in his pickup and this was two days before Christmas and I got hisI got him to stand in....I had him standing over on the side....off of the highway in front of my car, in between my car and his pickup in the light. And I told him I said, you just stand here Sanders, I'm going to get your gifts because somebody's going to steal them. So I got his Christmas presents out and put them in back of the patrol car and then I walked up to the ah....to look in his pickup and he had a piece...a bottle of

whiskey laying in the front seat. And of course I'm going take for evidence cause I'm going to file on him for driving while intoxicated. And ah...I'm standing on the ground andwith the door open on his old pickup and I'm reaching in there to get this bottle and another drunk driver comes out ah...of town and I guess he's going to followI had the lights on, on my patrol car, it was a '59 Ford, and he drops in behind me and is going to follow me across the bridge I guess. And he knocks....he hits about....the patrol car in the rear and knocks it into the pickup and then knocks the pickup forward and I'm standing there, I'veit knocks me out in the highway. And there's a lot of traffic out there and I've got the cap to that whiskey bottle in my hand and it knocked me out in the highway and it.....and....and I don't know I think part of the pickup hit me, well I know it did, I got hit in the side and I got skinned up pretty good. And....but I you know I got up because I knew I had this drunk and now I got other problems. And ah...a Sheriff from Carthage came by and ah....Johnnie Spradlin. And ah...Johnnie ah...called in for some help on the radio and he stayed there until the deputies got there and helped work traffic and helped me. I...I wasn't you know....I was just bruised up, I wasn't....I was still....I...I went ahead and arrested both of these guys. I already had one of 'em arrested and ah...so I got some help out there and ah...I remember I got on to the hospital and ah...George Tape, one of my doctors, and George was there at the hospital and he may have been on call that night. Because you know back in those days whenever we...we'd go to the hospital didn't have any trouble getting a doctor. And ah...anyway George ah...got through....got....I got up there and he says, I'm going to put you in the hospital. And you know, this bruise here on your side don't look too good and I said, no you know, it's to close to Christmas and I'm going home you know. And ah...so I did you know. And ah....I never will forget, the next morning I got up and ah...I was passing blood pretty good in a couple of places and ah...neither one of them was too good a place to beblood to be going

and ah...so anyway ah...but I come on to town and filed my complaints anyway. And ah...because I you know, I worked sick and hurt and ah...you have to and everybody I guess. But I got up there and I got my complaints filed andand I'm still having trouble and ah...so ah....I call George. And George and I were friends, he used to ride with use some when Webb and I worked....first worked patrol, right after he got out of medical school. And ah...George ah....I never will forget I said, doc I need to see you ah....I'm having some problems. And ah....I'm not your doctor, that was his answer you know. And I said, look I didn't call you up to....for a bunch of BS I said, I've got some problems. I...you going to let me treat you or you going to treat yourself. I said, well I want you to give me a diagnosis anyway. He said, you get to the emergency room. I told him why I was doing. So I stayed in the hospital that Christmas and that was...of course Dennis was about five or six years old by that time. But that's one of my Christmases. Got shot, I had a bunch ofyou know a bunch things like that happen to me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You got shot?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I said, one of my Christmases I got shot.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....but that was interesting you know to me and ah....I later...he thought my spleen....had some spleen problems and ah...I was just ah....two days after I got in the hospital it cleared up whatever my problem was so it wasn't anything serious. But I didn't want to go to the hospital you know. I didn't have any....ah...that was ah...I thinkI know I guess I took one day sick off from the State after that plum up until I retired.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was only sick one other day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: In 1959.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the disposition of the guy that hit you? Do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, he never did get tried. Ah...it was one of those things and ah....ah...the other old boy, the funny thing about him he ah...he hired a lawyer and ah...his lawyer....he claimed he got...he passed out, he fell down and didn't nothing ever hit him. He wasn't never touched by either vehicle. And I remember he got more money....he got the biggest part of settling with the insurance because he hired a lawyer to sue the insurance company, was the one that got him out of jail. Well I never did hire a lawyer, I never did entertain the idea of suing anybody but I know he wound up with a pretty good bit of money. I want to tell you a story about him. He ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....the guys name was Sanders.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this Sanders, his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...oh I can't remember his first name. Ah...I liked him you know all right, but he was just an old log hauling guy, toughed out from down around Tatum, Texas who like to drink you know. And if he's still alive he's probably still drinking. But here just a few years ago, oh I say a few years ago, probably ten, there was a guywe had two Mexicans robbed and murdered down at Easton, shot with a shotgun. And ah....there was a little dispute at first about which county it was in. It was right down on the Harrison, Rusk, Gregg county line and it was....Easton's a colored community down here. I don't know whether your familiar with it or not, down on the Sabine River. And the extreme east end of Gregg county and ah...Easton proper is in Gregg county, but down on the river where this happened there was a little question at first whose jurisdiction it was. But anyway it wound up Gregg county was...all of them was

kind of working it, but it wound up we proved it was in Gregg county. But ah...we got....I got to working with ah...Larry Smith and ah....Hartley, Ken Hartley, two investigators here and we got to....we got a break on it. And there was a girl down at Tatum that ah....young girl had just signed her son was penitentiary, he'd been to the pen already for something and ah...he was in town there and they all at that time were gathering down on 42....ah..43, that highway between Tatum and Henderson and under a bridge down there and partying a lot at night and that's when they first started....first beginning fill that plant down there at Texas Electric. And ah....this girl said this boy earlier in the day was broke and later showed up down there with a couple cases of beer and carried her into Longview and bought her breakfast and had a hundred dollar bill or two in his pocket. And of course we knew how much money these Mexicans had because some of their associates said they hadand ah....we developed this guy a suspect and ah....and he had car trouble and he went up to....while he was down there, went up to a colored house, he and another boy, younger boy. And we interviewed the guy that he talked to and he later identified him in a picture line-up. And ah....so we arrested him and ah....and we're down at his daddy's house ah....to get a consent to search. He told us he shot 'em, he admitted the crime and told us he used his daddy's shotgun. I think it was a .410 gauge shotgun. And we later made 'em on....on the ejection mark and firing pin....ballistics we....and we went down to his house and I didn't realize that whose boy it was. I knew his name was Sanders, but there's a lot of Sanders down there. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Sanders was the colored guy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, white. And ah....we ah....we get down there and I recognize him. And we're trying to....and Hartleywe got his son with, he's already confessed to killing these Mexicans and named his accomplice. And we may have got the accomplice first, I don't

remember just how it come. But anyway ah....and we're down there and got have a consent from the father to search the house you know because ah...really it's his home, but I think it's sons home too but we felt like it would be better to get the consent from the father. Well one of the deputies went in and he was giving 'em a hard time andand this deputy he was from Pennsylvania....Hartley was.....and ah....he still works here. He...he reminded me later....I know he asked me later that night he said, you know what you told Sanders when he was raising cain with me in there about searching the house. And I said, I don't have any idea. He said, you just looked at him and told him to simmer down. And ah...and I said, did he. And he said, yeah heand ah...and I went ahead and explained to him what we was doing down there and he gave....and he signed the consent and we recovered a shotgun, it was right up there on the wall, hanging up over the bed. And so we got the shotgun and ah....and of course we carried it to ballistics and made.....made a murder case....have to you know corroborate what he had already told us. But ah...you know what....sometimes some things will come back to you you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and that'she made this remark ah....and he said, why I can remember you when you wasn't nothing but a little old highway patrolman. Of course he was drinking that day too and that's what this Sanders guys, daddy of this boy said, I remember you when you wasn't nothing but a little old highway patrolman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Laying out in the highway. Ah...let's go back just a little bit, a couple of things. Go back to your original time when you joined, you had tear gas canister, I....did you have tear gas or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah we...mainly I think....we didn't have a canister ah...I think we had a canister in each district probably. We....we wasn't all that well equipped. We had ah...these tear gas and smoke bomb things that you could throw with your hand, you know you could throw one through a pretty good screen or a window. But we didn't...each car didn't have ah...a..ah....weapon to shot those canisters. Each....ah....we wasn't equipped that well. We had a first aid kit ah....we didn't even have cameras ah....'til later. Ah....we wasn't equipped all that well.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about a rifle or a shotgun?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we had a shotgun. Ah...we didn't have a rifle.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have a raincoat?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No not at.....not issued.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I assume since the car didn't have a heater it surely didn't have an air conditioner.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....see the State didn't air condition a car until 1967 is the first air conditioned car they bought, '67.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....you mentioned several times the ah....Hollywood Cafe. Where was that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the Hollywood Cafe was on Tyler Street right behind the First National Bank, just east of the First National Bank between there and Fisher Hardware. Ah....right in there where the furniture store is, there's a furniture store there now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That Broadway Furniture?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right in there. The old Hollywood Cafe right there and ah...it had been there for years and ah...folks were good to us. Ah...we'd ah....we'd go in there at night, late

at night and we might have to pick a few ants off the pie but ah....for the pie was....if it hadn't been sold by two o'clock in the morning well ah....the guy running the cafe was liable to just saywell I got you a piece of pie here, this ain't going to sell anyway, I'm going to cook some more tomorrow and I think....I don't know what it was but....they was....most of the people were glad to see us. See...see this guy he'd get a bunch of the drunks would come in there after those old joints closed, to eat supper and if they got a little rowdy why he was always glad to see a policeman in there. Because he didn't sell alcohol. And ah....he just sold food. And ah...we'd go over there and we'd go down to the TP Cafe

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was down at the junction see. There used to be an old hotel, the TP Hotel down there, all the railroad stayed there. And ah...in the early days and there was athere was a cafe stayed open 24 hours a day see. Cause that's where we'd have to go because the average restaurant closed you know one o'clock in the morning maybe or twelve.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there a cafe in the old Hilton Hotel?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah, but it wasn't open at night. Yeah they had athey had a restaurant there but ah...oh they'd shut down you know eight or nine o'clock and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You was talking about all the railroad men hung out down at junction. Did you ever know an old railroad detective named John Spence?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was called Texas Slim.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I didn't know him. I think he was a little bit before my time, but I've heard a lot of stories about him. But ah...we'd go down there to....there's a Greek in the old TP Cafe I don't know...we'd go in there many a times to eat a short stack and ah...my partner knew

him real well and I was always amused and ah....we'd start to use some syrup and ...and ah....Webb would holler at himat the Greek and say, ah....I think Miticlos was his name and ask him, what's wrong with the syrup. He said, too much of the water Mr. Webb, said, just a minute I'll get you some good syrup. And he'd water that syrup down you know and he'd go back there and get us some regular syrup you know, before he'd throwed water in it. But ah.....ah...we got acquainted with all those people and people around there knew us and respected us and it was...it was ah...it was fun.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever eat at the old Ethel Hotel? I understand they used to serve ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I've eaten at Ethel's out on Mobberly ah...later ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I heard they serve home style is all.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh, yeah. In fact I've had dinner out there since....after I got onin the Rangers. I don't think I ever ate there as a highway patrolman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The reason I was asking, I know Mattie Castleberry used to eat there all the time and they said the bands always stayed there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. We ah...ah....Triangle Restaurant was here then and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was out on Highway 80, there's a Mexican place there now, it may be closed . It was aoh it's out there ah...it was one of the nicest....the nicest restaurant in town probably at that time. And ah...and then Johnny Cace came here about the same time I did. He was down there on Green Street by the railroad track you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about Curly's ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Curly's was a good place to eat and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was Curly's last name do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Smith. Yeah, Curly Smith.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That was out there about ah...

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was on 80 in the curve out there going west, right before you get to Gilmer Road out there and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had the Lake Lamond Club.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Lake Lamond....we never did go in there. They had...they had...we never did go down there. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the Lake Harris Club?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. No, we'd never go around those places much. There was a....well it was a little bit off the highway you know and ah...we tried to stay on the main highway so we could see our car and you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Mattie's serve food?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Mattie didn't serve food. Ah...I...I don't think of anywell she couldno, I know she didn't, no Mattie didn't serve food. They always had....they'd sell out of ice you know andand folks would go in and have their mixed drinks and whatever, I'm sure she sold a ton of beer out there you know in her day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...when did you build your home?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I built my.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's up on Ruth Lynn.

GLENN ELLIOTT:in 1951, we moved out there in August of '51.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And that was from 110 E. Main?

GLENN ELLIOTT: East Marshall.

ROBERT NIEMAN: East Marshall I mean.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Diane started school down in ah....it was a...it was a school right behind the hospital there. In fact the school system still operates those buildings in there that they later tore down. That was Diane's first school. And then ah...when we moved out to ah...on Ruth Lynn she went to Judson.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I guess that was out in the country then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: There was only three houses between my house and town on McCann Road. McCann Road was just a little oil road at that time and ah....probably not two cars a night pass there after ten o'clock you know. And ah...and we moved out there '51, in August of '51 I think is when we moved in there. We....I had bought that lot and ah...I bought house at a saw mill in Pritchard, Texas and had it moved down there. And Katherine and I did all the ah.... oh I did most of the plumbing and all the painting. And ah...we hiredPat Spear and his brother Causby was teaching shop over at Gladewater and he was an electrician and he worked in the school system and Pat was a patrolman over there and later Director for the Department of Public Safety and ah....they wired my house and he and Causby bought one just like it and moved it on a lot out at Greggton for an investment for a rent house. And I painted it in exchange for them wiring my house. And ah...you know we had to improvise in order to get by.

ROBERT NIEMAN: One other thing I want to touch on tonight, and then we'll ah....two things.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah it's close to time to shut down isn't it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...at your mom and dad's wreck, how long was it before they recognized you and what was their response?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, you know ah...I don't think my mother ah...knew anybody. Ah...mother was pretty well knocked out, she went into the windshield and ah....and she was semi-conscious but she....she was pretty much out. She was laying in the seat mostly . I think my dad recognized me after ah...he probably recognized me before I did him. I was trying to....my...his head was clear but ah...you know ah...I'm sure daddy recognized me before I did him. I mean he had his teeth knocked out, he head was bloody and face was bloody and ...and ah....and I didn't have any idea who it was 'til....you know when I first saw him. And ah...of course I was concerned about....I was afraid that engine was going to catch fire see and that was my first thought, I got to cut that engine off cause if it was to...that carburetor....something happen like it is and it catches fire well I...I got to get these people out of here. So I...that was the first thought for me to get that engine shut off. And I did. And ah...and then I started noticingI probably didn't even pay any attention to whether they was black or white or brown you know. Ah...because I knew I had to cut the engine off in the car and so I did you know. And you just do things like that and instinct you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the last thing I want to touch on tonight, you mentioned briefly and I've always read it's one of the worst things that policemen possibly work, is domestic troubles, where a husband and wife are into it and you touched on one of those briefly and that was the boy killed his father-in-law. Ah...did you have to do much of that on the highway patrol?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well not a whole lot but you'd run into some of it. And of course the same way that's what happened up there at Arlington you know. This policeman had gone to a domestic disturbance and he just gotand....and that's what started all that. But, oh I've ah....I've stopped ah....what you find is that the people are arguing and especially if a man and wife doesn't get along too good and they're going down the road or something and youand

he's liable to maybe.....by the time you stop him he's already mad andand ah...and it's tickling his wife to death probably that he's got stopped and he knows it and they get a little biligerent sometimes. I had one one time that I never will forget.....of course we generally get them as far away from the people in the car as we can. And I stopped this guy and he had his wife and kids in the car with him and they were arguing and he was driving fast and driving all over the road and he...I think he was hitting at his wife. And I could see it through the back of the glass and I finally got him stopped and...and he just started raising cane with me and I got him out of the car and got him back to back. But ah....and I never will forget ah...I wrote him a ticket, for whatever...maybe one violation speeding and...and warned him for driving and occupying two traffic lanes or driving on the wrong side of the road, whatever. Cause I never did give too many multiple tickets, but the main thing you want to do is just get somebody'sto straighten up and start driving right. But anyway, he told me ah...he said, 'well you can write that ticket out, but I'm not going to sign it'. And I said,' well I've got to write it out anyway, may as well go ahead and do it out here'. And I said, 'I've got to offer....give you an opportunity to sign and ah....because ah...you sign your promise to appear in court, it's not a plea of guilty or anything', so that's...you know, that's how we told everybody. And then he said, 'well what are you going to do if I don't sign'. I said, 'well I'm going to take you and place you in the custody of the Sheriff'. I never did tell anybody I was going to put their ass in jail you know. I'd generally tell 'em I was placing 'em in the custody of the Sheriff and that sounded a whole lot better. 'Well I'm not going to sign that ticket and I'm not going to jail'. And he said, 'if you try to...ah...try to put me in jail you going to wish you hadn't'. And generally you can kind of get firm with somebody about that point you know. And I remember very well distinctly, I...I just looked at him and I told him I said...by this time they'd issued us a .357 magnum and ah...I told

him I said, 'partner', I said, 'I've ...this is a .357 magnum I got here in my holster'. And I said ah...'I don't want to have to use it'. And I said ah...'you got your family there in the car' and I said, 'if you...I'm going to take you to jail or somewhere, if you fail to sign this ticket'. And in fact I said, 'I've about made up my mind to take you anyway'. I said, 'you know go...just about let your mouth overload you back end'. And I explained to him I said, 'it don't make a very big hole in you where it goes in', but I said, 'it's going to look like hell where it comes out'. And he said, 'officer', he said, 'if you'll accept my apology and let me sign that ticket I promise you I won't never give you any more trouble'. When we take up again, I just thought of another case ah...that happened to me ah...when I was working by myself, early, and ah...this was about 1950, and well I can tell it to you right now if you want to do it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We got...I was on...it was on Rockwall, out here at Rockwall Place on Hwy 80 ah...I had met this ah...Mercury automobile that...I mean driving like he was drunk and down that...between there and town I'd turn on him, I stopped him right there at Rockwall Place. And he pull off the shoulder of the road...and...on the shoulder of the road, and stopped and at that time Hwy 80 was recessed pretty bad. I don't know whether you remember those days or not, but 80 used to be recessed all the way to Gladewater and they had ah...drainage. Water would run down the highway and it would run into drainage ditches on the recessed side and the shoulders were up four or five inches above the pavement. That was the way it was designed, concrete, and it was a good highway. But anyway I'd stopped this guy and he had two occupants in the front and I got the driver out and I told the occupants to stay in the car. I'm by myself. And he was drunk and he's a big old boy and his name was ah....well I didn't think I'd ever forget his name ah...I haven't forgotten it, I'll think of it before I get through talking....Sanders...no Sanders

was a guy down here ah...he was from Daingerfield, Texas. Anyway ah...I...I saw he was drunk and ah...I got his driver's license and put it on my clipboard and...and I said, 'well partner you've had a little too much to drink and I'm going got have to take you and place you in the custody of the Sheriff, now come on around here and get in the car'. So I reached and got him by the arm and when I did well he swung at me, he just...he just blocked off and swung at me. And he just barely caught...I dodged and he just barely caught me on the side of the face. And ah...and I popped him one and he just...he just went parallel with the ground and

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did you hit him with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: With my fist. And ah...that's the only thing I had handy. And ah...and time was pretty important you know and he done missed me one lick. So anyway, I put him down and didn't...didn't handcuff him and he was out, you know he..he was....and so I got....went on down, he was laying there and he's off the highway, so I got the other two guys out of the car and check them. And they was kind of constable drunk I guess you would call them, but they wasn't all that bad of shape. And I got the keys out of his car and locked it up and I got them to help me load him in the car. And I loaded him in the front seat of the patrol car, and I didn't handcuff him. Ah...I didn't handcuff too much then and I always....I still kind of contend if your going to have trouble out anybody your going to have it when their hand...when you start putting handcuffs on them. I could usually talk a guy into jail without any problem at all you know. Carry on a conversation with him about something all the way up there and...but ah...this guy he was.... he was out, so I should have handcuffed him as I found out later. But anyway I did...I got them to load him....help me load him in a car and this ah...another guy came by that recognized 'em and he was from Daingerfield, in a pickup. So I let these guys...he said, 'I'll take 'em home if you'll let 'em go', and ah....so he was sober, so I let them go with him. So I had his car locked...I

locked his car up and had the keys and so I make a U-turn to go back to jail....I'm headed west. Well we drop off a little bump and we come back up and bump the other side and when I did well he started coming to and was rubbing his face. And he had blood...I busted the hide on his head when I hit him and ah...or he busted it when he hit the ground or something, but he was bleeding a little bit, but not bad. And ah...he saw that blood and ah...he was about 6'4" and weighed about 220 pounds and had the biggest dern feet I ever saw. He just put his...swung his back against the door and if he'd had cuffs on that wouldn't have made any difference unless I'd cuffed his feet too, and he started kicking me.**Error! Bookmark not defined.**

ROBERT NIEMAN: What happened...did...was there a cage between the front and the back like they have now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no. I had him in the front seat. There wasn't....this was before cages, this is 1950, they didn't put cages in Sheriff's cars until '70's probably, Highway Patrol car either....anyway, late '60's. Anyway ah...well I had to stop. And I stopped and grabbed the keys out of my car and ah...and got out and grabbed him by the foot and drug him out. I thought well, you know I can't....I ain't going to be able to handcuff him in that car and I ain't going to be able....I sure ain't going to fight him in there you know...so...because he's kicking the hell of me with them boots. And I drug him out and ah...and he and I got...well I think I was doing most of the fighting but...I know I hit him, as soon as he got out and he stood up.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: With your fists again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...oh yeah, I didn't....you know I don't know....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Old boxing days.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I didn't carry anything else with me but my flashlight and they was....we had to buy our own flashlights and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No nightsticks?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nah, didn't issue a....and I had a slapper at that time, but it's probably hanging on the door handle, I never did like to use it unless I needed it. Anyway, I never will forget, I hit him and he started falling backwards on....out there and we....this is Hwy. 80 about eight o'clock on Sunday night. And I looked up and he's got my pistol in his hand. And I saw that pistol and I felt and I didn't really know when it went out of the holster. And I jumped and fell on top of him and grabbed the barrel of that pistol with my right hand, this 4" barrel, had it in my right hand and I fell right on top of it. And we...he was fighting and I'm fighting and I'm staying on top of him and I'm holding that pistol and finally ah....you could hear cars...wheels a crying and you know...on both directions. I mean we're talking about eight o'clock on Sunday night on US 80, the only traffic between Florida and California you know and all the local traffic too. But anyway, to shorten the story a little bit, I finally reached down and cocked that pistol with my left hand and I told him and I said, 'I've got this pistol partner'. And then I had it stuck right in his ribs, he was laying on his back and...and ah...I had it right in his left side. And ah...in his right side. And I'm right on top of him and I said, 'I'm fixing to pull the trigger of this pistol', and I said, 'I'm going to get some lead in my hand out of that cylinder', but I said, 'you going to get a bullet right through you damn stomach if you don't relax right now and throw your hands back behind you head'. Well he did and then I handcuffed him and carried him on in to town. But that was a...you know, that was a touchy time of a evening for me you know. And I had a little blood on me by then see. Some of it was mine. And you know that old boy later got....he was...he was mad...he...he ah...a policeman went to arrest him on a disturbance in Lone Star one time after that and the policeman shot him three times in the chest with a .38 and just patten' the place and cussing the policeman telling him to shoot him again. And then after that he

got caught ...he got over here in a fight down here in Death Valley on Hwy 80 and ah...he got his throat cut. And there was two Highway Patrolmen out of Gladewater drove up and one of 'em grabbed him by the veins and ah...and ah...and ambulance got there and he stayed with him until they got to the hospital and he started fighting the doctor when he got to the hospital. And the doctor had...finally told him he said, 'you gonna die if you don't hush up and let me sew you up and I ain't gonna fight you to save your life'. And....but that's the kind of guy he was. He was just bad.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I hope not.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll stop it at that, for tonight.

Tapes ends at that points and then picks up at a later date.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay we're....this is in our continuing discussion of Glenn Elliott's life. This is...is made at our home again in Longview, Texas, my home, I'm Bobby Nieman and this is ah...Wednesday, February 15, 1995. Glenn, let's talk about some of the Commanders you worked under.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well when I started ah...of course Colonel Garrison was a Director of the Department of Public Safety and ah...he was the first Director. And then ah...he passed away and by the time that he....after he got ill well ah....Joe Fletcher was Assistant Director and Joe had ah...ah...quite and took over the ah....Southwest Cattle Raisers Association down in Fort Worth and was Director of it. And so Pat Spear was...by that time had worked his way from a Highway Patrolman in Gladewater to Regional Commander and ah....and he was selected as an Assistant Director. Then Colonel Garrison died and ah...Pat was appointed Director. And he served until ah...he retired and Adams, ah...we got an FBI agent who was ah...actually about third in

command at that time in the FBI in Washington and maybe second I...I'm not sure. But he had worked his way up pretty high and he had retired from the FBI and ah....ah....Clements had just been elected Governor and he appointed Adams and this is....we got our first outsider. And then after Adams ah...ah...came well ah...Leo Gossett was Assistant Director under Pat Spear and so Adams stayed a few years, I'd say four or six years, I don't know how long he stayed. I got to where I liked him. He...he...he was ah...he had a lot....he was a whole lot like Colonel Garrison as far as....he had a lot of....all of his career was in working criminal cases. And no disrespect to Colonel Spear but all of his career was traffic. He was a good guy, good man and a good director but he ah...he didn't....he didn't have any experience in criminal cases other than the routine criminal cases that we'd get involved in as Highway Patrolmen. And ah...so we had two Directors that had a lot of experience in criminal work and that was Colonel Garrison and Colonel Adams. And then after Adams left the department he didn't...I don't think intended to work that long when he agreed to take it...and ah...Gossett was made Director.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this the same Gossett you went to school with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes, he had been ah...so Leo and I had a lot in common. We went through Highway Patrol school together and he worked his way up in the department through the ranks, in traffic, and ah...they were both ah...ah...I never had any problems at all with them you know, anything that we wanted that they....we needed that they could get us well they...you know they'd go for it. But neither one of them had been down in the trenches working in the criminal cases and they were not familiar with them and I'm sure that they....and they did know the traffic and they knew people and I just had real good relations with them. I...I had an experience with Colonel Garrison one time, show you what kind of leader he was, I guess he was probably the...the strongest of the ah...(unintelligible) and as far as I'm concerned because....well I have an

idea he was that kind of a guy. He was a...he was a tough individual but ah...he ah...he....you know, come up through the ranks and come up during a time when things were tougher you know and so we had a call one time to ah...meet the Colonel at the Gregg County Airport at four o'clock in the afternoon or whatever. And my partner and I, Lloyd Webb, and we was on the Highway Patrol and so we of course called our captain, Guy Smith in Tyler, and told him about it and cause that was common thing to do you know, your captain wants to know when the Colonel is coming in. And if he don't already know, well he should know you know. So..and he didn't have...he didn't know at this time. Well it just so happened that ah....that Mr. Carl Estes who owned the Longview News and Journal here and we got with Carl real well ah...and every once in awhile he'd tried to....you know he...he was...he was a very impatient individual and ah...sometimes you'd have to explain something to him that if he thought he was right and you knew he wasn't and after you explained it to him well he'd accept it. And ah...but maybe he was mad...but anyway he had ah...ah...Captain Smith had ah...been making some civic talks over ...and to City clubs in the Tyler area and we was having a lot of fatalities between Longview and Kilgore at that time on Hwy 31 and they called it "Bloody 31". And I never will forget, captain had made a remark at this civic talk that ah...there's blood running down one side of 31 and whiskey down the other one. Of course Gregg County was a wet county and a Smith County was supposed to have been dry and ah....but ah...Carl was ah...had been previously been married to the lady that owned the Tyler paper as I remember it. And he had moved over....they had divorced and he had moved over here and ah...and bought this Longview newspaper. And there was a lot of competition between the newspapers and of course Tyler paper had written this ah...story about captain Smith talking about the fatalities on 31 and Carl didn't like it. Because it was a...he thought it was a reflection on Gregg County and of course Carl just...he had a burr

under his saddle most of the time anyway and he wrote a burning editorial. Well the first thing he called captain up and eat him out on the telephone and then he put an editorial in his paper that...that...about this speech that Guy Smith had made and referring to Gregg County and...and he was insinuating that the Highway Patrol should be more diligent in their work and probably cut out these fatalities. But he was not invited to the party. Ah... and Carl was hosting a party out here at his ranch at ah...on 149 that he had just bought and Eastman... for Texas Eastman people. And they had just ah...ah...started moving their people in here and Eastman was beginning to expand out there and ah...and so Carl had invited the Governor of Texas and all the Senators and Representatives that he could get his hands on to come. And nearly all of them had come that he called because he owned the newspaper you know and they were politicians. And...and he had a pretty good ah...ah...line of politicians that's already accepted to be here. So he had called my partner and I to...he wanted us to provide security and work a little traffic out there if need be and ahand this was good that we knew that because it was a busy highway, but.....and too, to pick the Colonel up. So we called our captain and after we got the message that the Colonel was coming and what time to be at the airport, so Captain Smith met us out at the airport and here comes the Colonel in, they flew in from Austin and of course was going to fly back that evening. And so we kind of...he got off the plane and we had a ordinary custom handshake and....and visit there outside awhile and ah....so the Colonel says, well said ah...'Let's get on to the party because we've got to get back to Austin'. Something was going on that he needed to be back and he said, 'Guy you ride in the back seat with me and we'll just all go in the same car and the pilots will stay here'. And ah...so Guy Smith told him he said, 'Well I'm not invited'. And ah....well he said, 'What's wrong'. And he said, 'Well Carl's made at me'. And he said, 'Well I want you to go, so come on go with us'. Said ah...'You need to go this is your district'. And he

said, 'Well Carl may ask me to leave'. And the Colonel just looked at him and he said, 'Well we go together, we leave together'. And he meant it you know and ah....now that was pretty stout. And of course ah...ah...my association with Colonel Spear I...you know I...I guess I can't think of anything that I didwe were down there on aon a deal that....a shooting we had up here at Dallas, we had to go down and make reports in Austin about that. And of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This was after your a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: After I was a Ranger.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: We're going to talk about it later, that's on the ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. But ah....that's the only time I was ever in the Colonel's office on official business and ah....Colonel Spear. And ah....and Adams ah....he did a lot for....for the Ranger service.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he try to FBI it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, he...he brought some of the FBI ideas with him. They ah...ah....we changed his mind on a bunch of it pretty soon. He found out that ah...that we were....we knew what we was doing and ah...and he could see thatto a lot of his thoughts that he brought down from the FBI and some of them he didn't. We changed the report system and ah...of course this was in the Rangers ah....when I was in the Ranger field but ah....he was ah...I know I was at a function one day and ah....one evening and I was fixing to have to fly to Austin the next day to carry some evidence down there in a murder, double murder case down there in Marion County and ah....and the plane was going to come through and pick me up out of Dallas. Well by this time we're carrying our own mail ah...we had decidedthey found that we had so much mail and driver's licenses and all the divisions of the....down to the Rangers, Narcotics and

Intelligence that they could fly it down there in a twin engine plane cheaper than they could send it by US Mail. And then of course....oh and bring mail back you know they.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well would it just stop at like Longview, Tyler.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, stop at Waco, yeah and they'd fly out of Dallas to Tyler and then to Waco and then to Austin. And come back the same way. And well of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it come to Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, didn't come to Longview. Because see the district office was in Tyler and most of the Sergeants and and people out in the field would take their reports into....into Tyler see, by automobile. And ah...it was a big thing and a lot of driver's license had lots, just lots and lots of stuff. But anyway it justifies me flying down there in a DPS plane. Any time we wanted to go to Austin on mail days if there was a seat available on the plane well that's great you know. So I had called and asked for reservations to catch the DPS plane in Tyler so I could make a round trip to Austin that day, I'd been just.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it make this round every day?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. I think twice a week probably, maybe once a week, I'm not sure. I...but...anyway this was...I was going the next day. Well at that time we had ah...we had a lab there in Tyler and ah...ah...we had two guys there that were trained in ballistics, but we didn't have any equipment for them to check ballistics with. At the same time we had equipment in Houston and Lubbock and ah...nobody trained to use it, just sitting there. Well that didn't make sense to me and I'm out here trying to help you know, the citizens of this state, do my job and so I got on....I got over at Tyler and I said ah....to who was in charge of the lab, I said, 'Why don't we get that...some of that equipment up here'. And....'Well we don't have room for it'. And...and he didn't want it, it was obvious. So the Colonel, Colonel Adams, at this retirement party there at

(unintelligible).... he ah....he ah asked me if there was anything he could do for me. Well you know it's a perfect time to spring this trap on him and ah...and he was sincere about it. And ah...I told him just what the problem was. I said, 'You ...I don't know whether you know it, I know you don't know it'. But I said, 'We got two people in Tyler trained to do ballistic work, we got equipment in Houston and Lubbock and nobody trained there to use it'. And I said, 'I suggested over at Tyler that we get it and they tell me that they don't have room for it'. And I said, 'Left me with the impression that they didn't want it over there, the guys in charge of the lab'. And I said, 'We need it'. And I said, 'I'll go get it if you'll authorize it'. I said, 'You know, I'll go to Houston, it's closer to Houston than it is Lubbock'. I said, 'I've already checked and I can carry it in the back of my car and I'll....you know, we need it over there'. So he said, 'Let me check into it'. And it was the next Monday I get a phone call about eight o'clock in the morning and...and ah...'This is Adams, you know that conversation we had in Waco Friday night, or whenever it was'. 'Yes sir'. He said, 'That equipment will be in ah...Tyler the first of the month'. And he said, 'Your not going to have to go get it'. Said, 'They'll get it up there'. So, they did. And then see everybody in East Texas could take their ballistic....and still do. And it saved a whole lot of doggone time. And then of course Gos...Colonel Gossett ah....Leo Gossett and I wewe just got along great you know all through our career. And I followed his career and been real proud of him andand ah....he acted like he was....thought I was doing a pretty fair job, so that's my association with the directors up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about ah...some of the ah....let's don't get into the Rangers right now, but what about some of your....you've already told how highly you esteem Guy Smith, what about some of your other Commanders on the Highway Patrol?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...Glenn Warner was my next captain and ah...I guess ah....I've only had....I've had three Captains that seemed like they were overly concerned about.....I've always liked to work. And Guy Smith and Glenn Warner, they was Highway Patrol Captains, and they was the only two Highway Patrol Captains I ever had, and Bob Crowder was the first Ranger captain I ever had, all three of 'em told me on more than one occasion that I was working harder than I had to you know. And ah....cause I did, I just....I'd just get out there and get after.....and still do you know. I...I...it's just my nature.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I've been up to your farm and I know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's just my nature. And ah...but....I...I...you got to appreciate that when your boss comes to you and tells you says, 'Glenn you don't have to work so hard as your working, you don't have to if you don't want to'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anything special with Warner that you had that.....or a case or

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there's ah...I don't guess we got.....did we get into the case ah....the ah...yeah we did, didn't we, about the kidnapped policeman out of Arlington, didn't we go over that?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yes, and that you and Slick worked, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, well this is....see, Captain Warner had just come to this district as captain and ah...I don't think he'd even got his family moved to Tyler. And he's the one that....he drove....he heard about and they'd been communicating with him on the radio. I think it was on a Sunday night probably and it was after ten, eleven o'clock at night and he had gone home. But he got....he got out and went to the radio station and he had just got to the radio station and I appreciated thisyou know I...we finally had a direct order from somebody thatwho was our boss. And he called us and he said, 'I don't want that car to leave Texas, period, ya'll take

care of it'. Well see, that's all we was waiting on, you know, for him to say. And....and he probably didn't have to say it anyway, because ah...but what was happening, the police chief in Arlington, I think as I've brought out, that washe washe was wanting to let this guy go right on to Mississippi or wherever he wanted to go, just keep a driving you know, and leave him alone. And ah...so ah...but Captain Warner had other ideas and heand his was the best one.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if he hadn't of given you that order, if you hadn't of contacted him, would you have worked under the assumption, we're going to stop this car cause somebody took....no one has told us not to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, certainly, yeah. But see they had already set up about two road blocks though and this Chief had...had got on...he was on the telephone calling and...and they was pulling them off you know and ah...and it would not have surprised me if...I guess if I'd of set a road block up and the Police Chief from Arlington had got a hold of the radio station in Tyler and if there wasn't somebody with authority there and said ah...don't stop that car, let it go and probably I...you know, it's his car and his man and ah...we was out there trying to assist. But I...Captain Warner made the right decision. He was a good captain, he was a real good captain and he had worked his way up through the ranks and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you know if this Police Chief tried to get a hold of Warner to tell him to

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think Warner....he...I'm sure that they talked. I have an idea that he probably called the Chief right then and told him said, 'We're fixing to stop that car, this is going to end right here, this is ridiculous'. And I'm sure that he did, I don't know that he did but ah...I...this was normally how the Department of Public Safety operates you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what was Warner's first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Glenn.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn. And where was he from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, he was a sergeant in Dallas when I first met him and ah...I don't know where he's from ah...his...he raised his family there in Tyler. He's got a son that's Church of Christ preacher, still preaches over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Captain Warner's still alive, yeah he's still in the Tyler area over there. And ah...I see him at the...at the East Texas Peace Officers fish fry's when they have 'em in Tyler.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Does he make it to the shoot, the Ranger shoot?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah he comes...no he don't come to the Ranger shoot ah...we shoot ah...a bunch of the retired DPS employees shoot up at ah...at ah...Midway, between Gilmer and Pittsburg. That's where all of the DPS people in East Texas do their pistol training. And they...on a certain day they make it available for all retired DPS personnel that want to keep up their commission to go up there and shoot. And the only reason I don't go up there and shoot of course is the fact that I want to be with the Rangers, and I do go up there sometimes, but just to see everybody. And ah...but most of the retired DPS people, all of them Highway Patrol and License and Weight and Driver's License and MVI and everything they go up there to shoot. And ah...but I always shoot with the Rangers. But we ah...I see them occasionally. But he was a good captain. That's the only two Highway Patrol Captains I've had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You've got some other things here...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...we were talking the other night and ah...I...I think of something nearly every day ah...ah ...I think we talked about that old boy getting my pistol and this all happened on 80.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: See...we had a...Hwy 149 was a busy road. After Lake Cherokee ah...was opened up down there and ah...seemed like things just started popping down south of town and we had a lot of traffic on 149. And we spent a lot of time down there. Other than 80 well 149....our accident experience had gotten kind of high down there and ah...but one day in particular I just thought about some instances where you know, it was pretty life threatening. Ah...we were on our way...John Ben Shepherd's home was in Gladewater, Texas and he was Secretary of State. This had to be 1949 or '50 and ah...he was here ah...and we picked him up at the airport and he'd spoke to a civic group here some...in Gregg County somewhere. Could of been the Chamber of Commerce or anything, I don't know what it was, but it had to be a...it had to be a noon deal because it was in the daytime. And we were...he had flown up from Austin and was going to fly back and we picked him up at the airport, brought him into town and ah...and went to the luncheon with him. I'm sure it would have been a luncheon because ah....and we was taking him back to catch his plane and it was probably 1:30 and we got down on to 322 and 149 and there was a propane truck had ah...was coming down 322, been over in New London I imagine to fill up a propane somewhere in that area, come in the back road and...cause their ah...their plant was out there on 149, I think still out there. And he ah...ah...the brakes went out on his truck and he tried to make turn, that dead end street 322 there and ah...and he overturned. And ah...and when he did well his ah....the gasoline carburetor or something caught fire and nearly.... and it was a gasoline truck and ah...it caught fire but the ah....the automatic valve the

propaneof course we were trained you know in school what to expect in...in propane, especially in East Texas you know, a lot of gas being transported on highways and (unintelligible)...and those things have got to have those automatic valves and if they go off and catch fire well it's no problem, they'll just burn out you know, sit there and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Like a flare.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So this one was burning, the flare ah...the escape valve ah...on this tank was blowing good, you know it just....you could hear it, it was burning and shooting the flame up you know, ten or twelve, fifteen feet in the air probably. And I'm sure it would of taken an hour or so to burn out, or maybe more at that pressure...it size, whatever, but ah...but this gasoline had catch the truck on fire andand we'dmy partner and I and somesome other man helped us, I don't know who it was. We got the guy out of the truck and I remember hiseven his billfold was so hot nearly burning your hand and he...he later died, the driver did. And ah...but we got him out of the truck and...and...and got the fire put out on him. He lived for awhile. And ah...so ah...the truck was burning.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How did you get the...just....how did you get the fire out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Just....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, on him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Roll him in the ground and you know and ah...throwing dirt on him and...and....and hitting him with anything....I guess, well I don't know whether I had my coat, I don't remember just exactly. I know we got the fire out. And ah...and so my partner said, 'Glenn you...I'm going to run John Ben right on to the airport and I'll be right back you know, and you can just work the traffic here and get...looks like this valves going off like it's supposed to and I'll be right back'. So he went on and carried John Ben to the airport and ah...cause he had

another appointment in Austin or somewhere else and ah...so about the time....they hadn't got gone just a...not anyways until this guy and I decided to take this black guy further away from the truck. He was on the...on the same side of 149 as the truck was, laying on the side of the road. The ambulance....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is the driver?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And the ambulance hadn't got there yet. And ah...it was obvious he didn't have any broken bones, but he was...it was mainly the fire was the cause....of course he was....he was just burned bad. So we....we picked him up and carried him across the highway and got him further away from that truck. I was concerned about the truck to tell you the truth. And by this time the dual wheels ah....on...on my side had caught fire from the gasoline. And they began to burn pretty good and had been. And this was when we decided to move him, when they caught fire. And the fire department hadn't got there yet. So we...I hear them coming so I...I get him...we get him over on the side of the road and I get out to get the traffic....had the traffic all stopped on both sides. Well I've got to make room for this fire truck to get in there and I get this done and I don't know, for some reason or other I'm back down there within fifty feet of that truck I guess, or seventy-five and out in the road of course and...and directing traffic and ah...and the heat from those dual tires burning ah...caused the tank to split on my side. And ah...I guess the only thing that saved my life was this truck when it was upright it had ah....this plated steel fender skirts built down both sides and they could open up and had doors in thereI mean places for the hoses and things in there and it looked real nice. Andand when it was turned over well it was just a well underneath there you know. But that tank split I think, seemed like I remember about four foot on that side right...right as close to those tires as it could get you know, I mean that's where it split where the most heat was. And that gas just came my way of

course and hit...it hit that steel, couldn't go through it and then it went straight up. But it was so hot that burned all the hide off of my neck and the back of my ears and it blistered my back, except where my Sam Brown belt was crossed. And of course we was wearing wool shirts then, had on wool trousers. It didn't blister my legs as I remember because my trousers were pretty heavy. Butand then I just....it either knocked me down or I fell when it exploded. I knew what was happening and I...when Inext thing I know I'm just face down on the highway out there you know. And ah...it was a pretty close call.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you go to the hospital?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, stayed out there and worked traffic. Went on in later and ah....to check on this boy and they put some stuff on me there at the hospital, but probably worked the rest of the day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was anyone else hurt? Passing cars or anything?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no. I was the only one out there. The fire truck was just about at the end of the river bridge and ah.... and I had already stopped all the other traffic, I wasn't going to let anything come either way and stopped 'em at a reasonable distance back and forth on both ways. And actually the way that gas came....and this was just a split second thing you know. It...you can imagine when a four foot split comes in a tank, it's not going to take long for that gas to get out of there. And it just shot....just....I'm talking about it went up in the air, I don't ah...I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it disintegrate the truck?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No it didn't. It didn't. Ah...it ah...the damage...all the damage it took waseven....even the steel where it hit I guess it was just...it was coming out in so much pressure that it just hit it and it just went right on up in the air. I don't know how it happened but ah...if it had come on my way I...I wouldn't be sitting here talking to you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....that's ah....I've hadI've had another fire case there on 149, I was chasing two young boys, college boys, one time in an Oldsmobile convertible and they was trying to out run me and they lost control down on 149 and turned it over and it caught fire. And it had already....it had thrown the passenger out on the driver's side and ...and I thought it had turned over on him, but ah...for some reason or other he must have fell and the top, it being a convertible, it didn't hit him. I think one of the seats may have caught him and....and I got the driver out andand got him....got 'em both by the feet and drug them away just as that...that....that Oldsmobile exploded. And....and the carburetor had caught fire and it was back when they first got those four barrel carburetors and a lot of gas in those and then by that time the whole car just went up in flames.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember about when this was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, no. I...it waswell it was in the....probably mid '50's because it was ah...well I was working by myself for some reason or other. I guess my partner was on vacation, I remember I was by myself.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about this ah...the one we was just talking about....do you....it...'49 or '50, do you remember about what month?

GLENN ELLIOTT: When they

ROBERT NIEMAN: The propane truck.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't have any idea. It had to be in the summertime I'm pretty sure. Well I don't know it could probably could have been....this.....in this down here you know how the seasons are it was ah....they would normally not have been hauling a whole lot of propane in the summertime I wouldn't think then. But ah...at that time ah...ah...the propane tank

was up thereah....about where 1845 comes in to 149 they....right in that area there. They moved it out later on out 149, way out there but ah....ah.....but this ah....I don't have any idea. I could probably....well I done got my Highway Patrol report so there's not much way of telling about that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You mentioned ah...this one deal with Carl Estes. Of course he was an extremely powerful person here in Gregg County and ah...well all of East Texas. Did you ever have any other dealings with him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I had a dealing with Carl one time ah...he ah...ah...he was always calling onon us for things and ah...and....but he was not unreasonable about things he'd call on us for. For instance he had cattle on both sides of the road and he would not move those cows across the road unless we were there, because he was afraid of a lawsuit and ah....he'd have his hands all out there and we'd prearrange it. And generally we'd move them early in the morning you know, on a weekend. And ah...he'd call and we'd go out there and block the highway for a few minutes until they got the cows across and things like that. And Carl was a....he was always nice to us. He'd want to do something for us you know, for helping him. And ah....they only time I ever had any problem with Carl at alldidn't have any problem then, he had a friend that ah....was involved in an automobile accident. And he ah...he ran over aa pulp wood truck. And there was a young student at LeTourneau College was married and had two boys and they were riding with him. And they'd been out ah....cutting pulp wood and loading it. And he was trying to work his way through school and was hauling a little wood. And ah...this guy ran a stop sign and ah...hit the ah....tandem wheels on the left side of this truck and the truck was going south on Airline and ah....this friend of Carl's was going west on Hollybrook. And ah...he went through the stop sign and ah...hit this truck justthe front of his car....just right center of those

wheels and turned it over and it caught fire. And it burnt this guy....the kids didn't hurt them too bad. And ah....well Carl was real....he was a...he was a very compassionate man to tell you the truth. And I'll show you how compassionate he was when I get in to this story a little bit. But this happened on a Saturday and it was ait was a holiday weekend as I remember it, because my folks were out of town visiting. And ah....Sunday morning Carl calls me at home and ah...he called this guys name and said, 'I understand he's been involved in an accident'. And I said, 'Yeah he has'. And he said, 'Well, Glenn I want you to....can you come out here I need to talk to you'. I said, 'Yeah, I'll come out there in a little while'. I said I was getting ready to go to Church. And I...but I went on out there, whatever time it was and ah....we set and talked about it. And he asked me if he was drinking and I said, 'Yeah, but I don't think I'd make a drunk driving case on him because he wouldn't give a blood test and he was injured'. And I said, 'I'm going to file on him for aggravated assault with a motor vehicle', because hehe violated the law and ran a stop sign and hit this car...truck, turned it over and caused injury and so that was...I could prove that case without any problem at and I also could prove he was drinking because I could smell it, but he wouldn't consent to blood test.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were you on the Highway Patrol still?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So ah...no Carl and I never did have any problems after I got on the Rangers, no we didn't have any problem then much. But what happened in this case ah...we set there and talked about it and he seemed to be well satisfied and I went on about my business. And the next day it was ah....Monday, I'm up at ah...but the car was towed in, both of them, the car and the truck both was towed to Tommy Carlisle's garage here in town, they had a wrecker, both vehicles. And I was up there to ah...check something on the vehicles or take a picture or something, I don't remember what my business was. And I got out of my personal car,

I was in my personal car and ah...I heard Carl a talking, he and this guy out on the parking lot. And ah...where the car...where the vehicles were and ah...Carl...I could hear...he was very loud when he spoke most of the time you could hear very well, and he...I remember distinctly him saying ah...he called this man by his name and he said ah...'Well you convinced me that Glenn Elliott don't know what he's talking about'. And he said, 'He's just as wrong as he can be'. And he made two or three other gestures and I just walked out there and kind of...well you know, now's the time to ah...get this settled and we got...and I said, 'Well Mr. Estes', I said, 'I heard my name called out here'. And I said, 'I thought I better come out here and defend myself'. Well he called the man's name and he said 'You know he's an attorney', he was an attorney and he said ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: The other guy was an attorney or Estes?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum....no the other guy. And he said ah...'He is...he got an all together different story than from what you got to say and I'm...and he's convinced me that you're wrong'. And I had a law book there in my...in my car for some reason or other and a highway law book. And I said, 'Hold on just a minute'. And I went up there and got this highway law book and ah...I might not...I guess I was probably in the patrol car, cause I probably would not of had a highway patrol law book in my personal car. But I went and got the law book and I squatted down in the dirt and I drew an intersection and ah...and I said I...I...both of them I said, 'I want ya'll to come here'. And I said, 'Now here's the truck right here'. I said, 'The damage is to the left rear tandem, here's the vehicle right over here'. I said, 'You can see the imprint of those tires here in the grill and on the hood of this car'. I said, 'The vehicle is going south on Airline Road and there's no stop sign on Airline Road, it's the thru traffic.' 'Mr. so and so is going west on Hollybrook, there's a stop sign there'. It was down, I think his car hit it and

knocked it down but I said, 'Let's just play like the stop sign was down already'. And I said, 'Let me read you a little law'. And so I read the law where it says that if two vehicles approach an intersection about the same time that you must yield to the vehicle on the right, if there's no traffic control. If there is traffic control well I read him where your supposed to come to a complete stop and yield right-of-way to any vehicle in the intersection or so close thereto that it might become a hazard. So I quoted the laws to Carl and then I showed him again, I said, 'Now is there any question in either one of ya'll's mine that this truck was in the intersection before the car was, there's no skip marks, he don't even get on his brakes'. And I said, 'By this...him hitting the rear tire and the truck....the front of truck's already gone by and if he'd of been a split second later he'd of missed it completely'. So I said, 'Who do you think was in the intersection first'. So when I got finished with that Carl just turned to him and called him by his first name and he said ah...'You better go hire you a lawyer'. Said, 'Your not smart enough to represent yourself'. Said, 'Mr. Elliott will you carry me back to my office'. He didn't even ride back to town with this guy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you feel like saying who this guy was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't want to say, he's...he's dead and his wife's dead and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh that's fine, I didn't....

GLENN ELLIOTT:and there's no...really not any need to bring his name in to it. But anyway Carl gets in the car with me and then he says, 'Let's go out there to that intersection'. He said, 'You didn't find any whiskey in his car did you'. I said, 'No'. He said, 'Well he threw it away, he threw it out in the woods'. And he said, 'I can tell you right now what he drinks'. And we got out there and we found a bottle of whiskey with the brand....of course he'd already told Carl I imagine that he threw it out. Well I couldn't use it you know in the case but...because ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You couldn't of fingerprinted it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I probably could have ah...but I didn't. I didn't need it really because it was you know...the evidence was there and he was drinking and I could testify to that and so could the doctors. But anyway ah....we went on and Carl says, 'Let's run by Sports... (unintelligible) a minute. Said, 'I want to go to Sport'. And we went out there and he bought he and I both a dozen quail, frozen quail. I carried him to the office and...but that's the kind of guy Carl was. He would of...if I'd of let him, if I'd of been quiet and not taken the time to explain to him, he of probably still to his death, probably thought that I was wrong you know. But ah...I thought, well this is the time to get this straightened out right here you know. Because I didn't want the guy on the newspaper from Longview to crucifying me over something that didn't...I didn't need. And he was...he was that sensible, if you set down with him, if Guy Smith would have probably come over here and said, 'Carl let me come over there and talk to you', you know and....but he could of probably ironed that out, out there. But Carl was quick to...to jump on something, but if you set him down and...and in a firm way and polite and explained something to him, well he...he'd...he'd grab it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's...let's go back to accidents, you related to me earlier today an accident where your....you had an hysterical girl involved.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah this was...this is part of the rewarding part of being a...it's not a rewarding part to witness an accident or anything, like pulling those two guys out of that car, I felt real good about that. But I gave one of them a ticket you know, after he got out of the hospital, cause he was trying to out run me. But this...this case I was talking to you about ah...today...mentioned to you....we were....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember about when?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, it was some time in the '50's, early '50's ah...or late '40's. Because we were chasing a drunk driver and I was still working with Lloyd Webb and Lloyd was a Highway Patrolman and he and worked together 5 1/2 years as partners. And I was in the lead and ah...driving and we was chasing this drunk driver and he was speeding and just driving all over the road. And we'd met him somewhere between East Texas Motor Freight and Longview, we were going back in towards Longview and that was Hwy 26 then and it was just a two lane highway between Longview and Kilgore.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that 259, now 31?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And it was Hwy 26 then. So we had to make a U...of course had to make a U-turn and....and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, we had to stop there and change the tape.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was ah...and we overtook this car somewhere between...around East Texas Motor Freight. And he was...he was driving just as fast as he could, I don't know how fast. But ah...we had some traffic but it was late at night and ah...somewhere in there in that flat, just about where ah...Judge Smith's office is, where the old TV station used to be, somewhere right in that flat there he ah...he got....ran across the road and hit a car head on. And ah...there was two young teenagers in it and I'll never forget, it threw....torn the front seat plumb out of this car. And ah...it...it....and we're witnessing it, we're...we're not too far behind. You know, probably less than a hundred yards behind I'd say and ah....by this time. So of course we get out and this little....this girl, there's a boy and a girl in this car, and she...it was...and it was so quiet you know after the collision made a terrible noise and this is late at night and there's not any traffic and there's just ajust a death of quiet right after the accident. And the she started screaming. By the time I got out of the car, time we got out of the car, she was just screaming at the top of her

voice just.....just.....just a continuous scream. And I never will forget I...I know I went right direct to her and ah...I had a flashlight and of course we always....and I put under my arm. Being a Highway Patrolman we could always put a flashlight under our arm and we could set there and write a ticket and hold the ticket book in one hand and write it with the other one and the flashlight be shining right on it. And I just automatically threw this flashlight under my arm and bent down over her to try to help her. And I...and I spoke to her I guess and...but I know she opened her eyes. And I could tell she wasn't looking at my eyes, she was looking at the shield on my cap, we wore cap then and we had a state of Texas shield on our cap on the front and it had Department of Public Safety written on it. And ah.....she ah...she just quite screaming and said, 'Thank God'. Ah...and never scream....and you know I told her I said, 'We got an ambulance on the way out here now and you know you've settled down and you're not hurt all that bad, and doesn't appear....you're not bleeding, you may have a broken bone'. And I said, 'We're going to be right here where we can take of you'. And she was content. You see this is aworth my whole career just about it you know. Cause that girl could of died of shock there right away if somebody hadn't of been there to give her some aid. Because you know a lot of folks die from shock.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you charge the boy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah. We charged the guy with drunk driving and ah...we ah....as....we ah....talked him into giving a blood test and he...I think he was way up there almost to the passing out stage as I remember. And then I think we sent him to the penitentiary as I remember, I think it was a second offense drunk driving against him and we got some pen time. We had a....R.L. Whitehead was District Attorney during that time and Mr. Whitehead was ahe was tough on prosecuting drunk drivers. And ah....yeah we got that old boy some pen time.

I had another fire deal I was going to tell you about too that ah...was interesting. You know we get to meet a lot of people. But in my early days as a Highway Patrol there was a well blew out up at Hawkins, Texas and caught fire and it was right downtown Hawkins. It was a...oh it was just about two blocks off of 80 on the Farm Road that crosses there in Hawkins at the traffic light. And ah...it was our duty a couple of nights, or probably three or four nights, that we went up andand we had to block traffic and keep folks out of there. And Red Adair had his team up there from Houston. And I guess he was just getting started good in the business then. But ah...we got to meet all those guys there at the cafe there in Hawkins, they'd come down there to eat 'em a bite in between getting their equipment in there and all. But ah...we were up there when theythey capped it, my partner and I was. And that was pretty interesting and of course it was hard work....long....you had to stand out there all night and work traffic on Hwy. 80 which was the main artery at that time you know. And ah...we had to keep traffic moving because it was visible for miles you know, just the well blew out and it was just burning like the dickens you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of person was Adair as far as talking to you or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, yeah he was....he was pretty talkative ah...of course most of those oil field people were you know. But he didn't....he was business like. He was up there andand he'd come up there to the cafe and maybe get something to eat and ah....but ah....they...they were ah.....ah....they were friendly type you know. And these guysof course we was there because they didn't want to get anybody else hurt you know. But this is just another....we hadthis was another duty as a Highway Patrolman back in those days and I guess they still do it you know. They would have to but....because you got a traffic problem. It wasn't unusual for us to go places like that you know and do things and it was interesting.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Speaking of duties, what about ah...the duties where you weren't so much life threatening, such as working with kids and schools and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, of course we....yeah, we went to ah...ah...we....we made all of our schools at least once a year and talked with the kids and ah...and we....they'd have bicycle contests and things of this nature and we'd judge them. And school bus drivers would have aah....some type of driving ah...contest maybe and we'd help judge those. And ah....patrol duty was ah....then, I'm sure it's the same way now, of course I've been out of the traffic so long but ahwe always, or should have always known who we were working you know and we were working for the public. And the public.....there's a lot more to being a law enforcement officer than enforcing the law. We'd....I carried a gas can in the back of my car all the time ah....people would run out of gas well I'd....I'd have a can there and just pour gas in their car and let them reimburse me for two gallons of gas and get 'em started and go on down the road. And we'd stop you know and have.....folks would have car trouble and ah....that was....that was our duty you know. And then just like our civic duty to ah...ah...go to these schools and Churches or whatever, I used to go to Churches when I was on patrol...but vacation bible school talked to the kids and ah...ah...and you know another thing that we did back in those days and now you....my partner and I caught a lot of stolen cars in this area here. Cause 80 was hot you know and coming out of Louisiana and over this away. And now you see 'em catching these drug dealers you know and you wonder, liked down at Carthage these boys down here are just doing a great job and over at Marshall and a lot of other places that ah.....profiling the people in the car. Well we did on stolen cars. What their doing with drugs right now is, they'll stop a vehicle and just like we did, we'd stop a ve.....you could tell if a guy fit the car or not you know. Maybe somebody driving down the road in a brand new Oldsmobile and ah.....with Mississippi license plates on it and no

clothes hanging up in it you know and maybe two people in there and both of them need a shave and their hair cut or wouldn't be dressed to fit the car. And maybe you stop 'em for a traffic violation and get to open the trunk and the spare tire and wheel's gone you know ...and you know....and so you get one of them.....one of us would get the driver out and talk to him and the other one would go up and talk to passenger and you ask the driver, 'Well where you headed partner'. 'Well I'm going to Midland to my mother's funeral.' And the other old boys tells my partner that they're going to Abilene looking for work you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Not even smart enough to compare stories when they get stopped.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and it's...it's just what's happening now in these drug cases. This is how they pro.....that's how they get these guys. Ah....'Well, where you going'. 'Well, we're on our way to North Carolina, we been down at Houston looking for work'. And then the other one willyou can get.....you'll get 'em crossed up because there's no way that you can....if a guy starts lying and you ask 'em enough questions apart and you gonna catch 'em you know. And ah...we....we catch a lot....a lot of stolen cars. And back in those days see, we didn't haveradio communications wasn't that good. We didn't have this national information crime center and sometimes it would be days before we'd even get a report. And guys would tell us, 'Yeah I stole the car'. And you know, we'd call and them 'em well we got your car thief up here you know. And it maybe never even had been reported stolen....it hadn't got in the system yet. If you called the state capitol down there well probably by then they had it you know. But ah....we didn't have a system like we have now. But ah....that was some of our duties as a patrolman, we just ah....and it's a.....it's an art to it and....but it was interesting see, it...it made your day good and it was something else that we should of been doing. Let's see are we still on?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, we just went back on. The only other one I had for tonight Glenn was a Lake Cherokee drowning incident that you worked, that you talked to me about earlier today.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we...ah...we worked the first drowning that Lake Cherokee had when I...ah...and it was after I got...Lake Cherokee was already open when I...when I came to Longview. Seemed like they...they must of opened it about in '48 as I remember, I'm not sure. But I know it was the first drowning and ah...it was just off the pier at ah...at the Cherokee Club. And this is where we...we set up our command post there at the Cherokee Club. And ah...Noble Crawford was Sheriff and he was down there because this was a...ah...one of his citizens and it happened in his county ah...cause it was just off the pier there. And ah...of course everything on this side is in Gregg County and the south side's in Rusk County you know. But we looked...we...it was cold, it was Thanksgiving and ah...we ah...well we went to drowning every.....anywhere any time there was a drowning in the Tyler district and the Tyler district was large at that time, it went all the way to Palestine south to Center and to Texarkana and west to ah.... ah....Van Zandt County, including Van Zandt County. And ah...we'd go to drowning everywhere. We had equipment available that people had made for us and we had boats and motors and we'd get out there and just drag you know, until we could find the body. And then we eventually got some driving equipment. I've ah...we got an old air tank and a mask and I've been....I put that air compressor with a gasoline engine in it in a boat and get out there and fall off in that water and get after it you know and start finding these bodies. And ah...but this one down here we found...we didn't have our air tank then but man it was cold. I remember that ice was trying to form on the ropes and we gave up about....just about dark ah...that first night. And we spent the night I believe down there at the Cherokee Club, they put us up down there. And I

think there was four Highway Patrolmen there and ah.... and several deputies and we had about three or four boats. And generally the Game Wardens would....well they were always active in that, we didn't have that many Game Wardens then, but the next morning we found the body before noon and ah....and recovered it. And that....you know that's good, cause families.....drowning is aof course any death is a terribly....accidental ah...death of any kind or regular death is bad, but ah...it just seemed like when that old body is laying out there in that cold water you know, it just....the family is going to hang around down there until they find it you know. And it just works a hardship on

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this a boy or girl?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a man, it was a man, he was fishing by himself, just stood up in the boat I guess and fell out and the water was too cold and he had cramps and somebody saw him from the Cherokee Club. But this was not unusual for us to go anywhere, I'm talking about if there's a drowning and they.....and the body hadn't been found in a day or two well we was there helping look for it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What would you do just drag and drivers, did you try dynamite ever?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. No, no, huh uh. No, we'd just drag and we'd just ah...most of the time we'd find the bodies before they'd come up you know. Cause in the winter time the bodies stay down a long time you know. We didn't have that many lakes in the area then and the smaller lakes....the smaller the lake of course the easier it is to find 'em you know. Ah...did we....I don't know, did we put anything about ah...on here about ah....us working a little bit in that wild cat strike they had up at Lone Star Steel, the first one they had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What year was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let...let me....what year was this drowning do you...well you said '48...or '49.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It had to be '49.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay....Thanksgiving.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was probably the Thanksgiving after I came here because I ah....I remember we still had that old '48 Ford and I'm sure that's when it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Of course I'm...I bet you they got the records down there at that Cherokee Club.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Now then on this....this was not the big '57 strike your talking about.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, the '57 strike....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That Jay Banks was involved in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah...but ah...we would...I had already asked to transfer to the Rangers and...but I was a Highway Patrolman but the first...the main thing that we did as patrolmen ah...the first night of the strike they...all of the employees that were out on strike....there was three gates....no there was just two gates at that time I believe and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you remember the specific reasons for the strike, what...if...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh there was some....the union didn't sanction that strike. The employees got...oh you know every strike the employees get upset at theat the company about something andand ah...I don't think the union...they had not...I don't think they had...it was...it was a wild cat strike so obviously they just walked out. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. And this is in '57?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember about what month?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's....I believe it was in the winter time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I'm not sure. Ah....but I know this, this was my first experience with anything like that and ah...they asked my partner and I to go up there and to help....there was two Rangers up there at that time, that night. And this is before Jay Banks got down there. Red Arnold was up there, he was stationed in Mt. Pleasant and Jim Ray was stationed in Tyler. And as far as I know they were the only two Rangers up there that night. And I think there was only...my partner and I was probably the only Highway Patrolmen there. Ah....and I know that we went...there was...oh they had four or five thousand employees out on strike and there must have been two thousand of them at this gate, this south gate. We didn't go to the main gate, we drove up from Longview and we met Jim Ray at the south gate and ah...and another...Red was with somebody at the main gate. I never did know who was up there with him. But I know there was just three of us officers there at that gate.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you know Red and Jim before this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah I knew Red...see Jim and Red were both Highway Patrolmen. Jim was stationed in....in...in this Company, he was stationed in Athens. And he was in our...in this district when I came on the Highway Patrol. Now Jim went to the ah...Korean Conflict and he...he was in reserve...after World War II he got in reserve, he was an officer. And ah...he got recalled to the Korean Conflict for a short time in about '54 or somewhere I believe. He wasn't gone...I guess...is that when the Korean.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, '50 to '54.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah...he was gone about two years I think, during that time and come back. But Red was stationed in Greenville. He was a Highway Patrolman stationed in Greenville. And Red was raised here in Longview and his folks lived over at Hallsville. And he'd come here two or three times a year and he'd always come to see us and visit. But I know we got up there and there wasn't nothing but solid people up and down that..(unintelligible)...this...this sides of this road and all along the fence and had the...had the street...the road blocked going into the plant. And Jim had showed up with a court order from a District Judge and this is twelve, one o'clock at night and ah...instructing them that they could not have but two people picket the gate at one time and they'd have to permit traffic to go in and out. And this is things that they did then and I guess that they still do, it's a court order from a District Judge. So we were down there to help Jim serve the court order and help preserve peace. But it was a pretty rowdy bunch and ah...I know there was three of us and I'm not exaggerating, there was a lot of people out there, you couldn't even count 'em. Just...I'm talking about for a quarter of a mile up and down that fence and just solid. And we got up there to the gate and ah...I know that ah...Jim asked for a spokesman...after we got...we met there...we had radio contact with each other, and he asked for who the spokesman was and some guy walked out there and said, 'I am'. And he said...well he read this court order to him and he said, 'This is a court order that ah....from Judge So and So and issued a certain time and ya'll picket here, no problem, but you can't have but two people'. And he read the deal to 'em andand this guy turned around and told the rest said, 'Well we're going...this is what we thought was going to happen'. And they disbursed. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: To your relief?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah...you know, it was...it was...it was ah...could of got nasty up there. Three against two thousand and we, you know, we wasn't going to leave I know...I knew that, I didn't know what we was going to do next, but I knew we wasn't going to leave.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well one Ranger, one riot didn't mean a whole to you did it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you know that...of course I had already asked to transfer to the Rangers in '56 so ah...then when Jay gets up there and they start having all these problems and they blew up this gas line and it's going over to Pittsburg and ah...and they needed a little help....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did they blow up the gas line?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they thought they was blowing up the main gas line that furnished Lone Star Steel with all their gas. And actually they blew up the gas line that furnished the city of Pittsburg all of it's gas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And this was in the winter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, this was in the winter. This is what really broke their back because there was so much sympathy from the people, the hospitals over there, the Churches didn't have any gas and it was cold. And ah....they just...they just...sympathy worked against them. And ah...and of course they didn't know they was blowing up the pipeline for the city of Pittsburg. And they thought if they could put Lone Star out of the gas business it would have shut 'em down you know. And this is what broke it but we...I worked up there....I was already working up there in that area ah...we was staying over in a little old 4th rate motel over there at Hughes Springs ah...Highway Patrolman from Mt. Pleasant and myself, James Mayes, he had asked to transfer to the Rangers too and he nev...he finally made sergeant and didn't ever transfer. But ah...then oh we...we worked patrol at night and take calls on some of the problems and ah...just do whatever...Arthur Hill was a sergeant up there in charge and Jay didn't spend that much time

up there until about the end of the strike. It seemed like we was up there oh...not over three weeks I don't guess. I don't think the strike lasted that long after they blew up that this pipe. But we...I helped make an arrest, Jay and I did arrest one of the guys and then Jim and I finally ah...broke one of them and he....

ROBERT NIEMAN: From blowing up the pipeline?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...uh hum...told us all...who all was involved and then he kind of froze up on it before it was over with and then....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did he freeze up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, Jay...Jay Banks came down there to...I had to go...we had him...he had already told us all his involvement and who all was there. And ah...and we...we...Jim didn't have a statement form and of course I'm just a green behind the ear Highway Patrolman and I sure didn't have any criminal statement forms and...and ah...so I went up to the office...and we maintained an office there at a motel there in Daingerfield, same place we did next we did and ah...and got a statement form. And Jay was up there and ah....and I said, 'Yeah he's straightening his business out'. And ah...Jim was fixing to type a statement and he just put this ah...form in the typewriter and we'd kind of roughed it out on you know, paper. And I was talking to him, Jim was taking notes and ah...he ah...Jay came to the door and made a remark or two, I don't remember exactly what it was, but that guy just froze up and he said, 'I don't...I don't want to make any statements, I need a lawyer'. And ah...of course then if they asked for a lawyer well you had to get 'em one you know and make one available to them. Of course....and that ended it all, we never did get a statement from him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When was your first dealings with Jay Banks?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, Jay had ah...prior to that they had a ah...we had a shooting into a ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let me...let me back up here, I got ahead of myself. Did we finish...what else...let's finish up this....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah that's it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, cause ah...see after this they all...after this gas line and we arrested these guys and ah...and it broke....everybody went back to work except those guys that were involved in...you know some of them they didn't hire back, you know, the ones that....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well were ya'll ever able to prosecute the people that....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, huh uh. They never did ah...well let's see now...wait a minute, I know we didn't prosecute this guy because I would of been....I would of been up there to testify and I wasn't. Ah...no I don't think they have....they may have prosecuted two of them because the one that bought the one that bought the dynamite in Fort Worth....I'm not sure...I'm not sure. But I know I didn't have to go to court and I don't remember the details, I sure don't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you want to talk about Jay now or do you want to wait until your Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I can talk about it...I can tell you...you asked me the first association with Jay, I had ah... ah....I had met Jay several times at some police functions. Because I went to all them police functions, East Texas Police Officers Association, if the Sheriff's Association met in this part of the country down here, which they rarely did, but ah...and...but we had even in those days we had more meetings with officers than they probably have now because we were struggling trying...you know there wasn't that many officers. And ah...trying to get acquainted

and trying to establish a better rapport and trying to get more contacts and....and ah...I've always enjoyed being around a bunch of officers so I went to all these things and Jay did too. Marshall would have one over at Roseboro Springs every year and a big fish fry and the Sheriff would invite the Rangers and all the adjoining Sheriff's and I'd always go....we'd go over there and ah...ah...and then we al...and then of course East Texas Peace Officers was organized right after I went to work, I'm a Charter Member. And our first meeting was in Rusk, Texas and Frank Brunt was Sheriff and I made all those meetings and Captain Smith was one of the first...he was a Director and he was the third or fourth President. And ah...and Jay was always there, Jay ah...the Rangers ah...professional Ranger Captains ah...made most of the functions and ...cause they're around officers they're going to be dealing with. But Jay came...worked another case here where some guy shot into a colored honky-tonk down here on 149 and this was our area. And I think we was the first officers down there. They just drove by and shot into the eave, didn't....I don't think they hurt anybody. But it was back...back when they first started having some racial tensions you know, these sit-ins and ah...the blacks had started going to the ah...ah...white restaurants and things and ah...and of course we worked a lot of them. We was over at Marshall and had a big...a lot of problems over there, we were working places you know...going in there and just sit and they wouldn't...they'd just sit in there. And ah...and of course they were arresting 'em then you know, not for going in there but for sitting there and...and....and disrupting business you know. And ah...so I was around Jay a right smart and I'd already made up my mind I wanted to be a Ranger see, so I know that I want to exposed myself to all the Rangers that I can you know. And ah...and this is what I did. Because at that time ah....the Rangers pretty well picked who they wanted in their company and I still don't think that's not a bad idea you know, but they don't do it that away any more.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you talk to Jay about being a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yes, definitely, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did he say to you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, Jay....we got to the point....yeah he encouraged me, encouraged me always. But in 1958 we were....East Texas Peace Officers Association met in Houston and I went down there for the convention, my wife and I. And Jay....they had a ah....the Captains were meeting down there and the DPS Commission was meeting, and this wasn't unusual because they liked for as many of the Captains to come to these meetings, it...it was real important then, I don't think it seems like it's that a way any more, that you go to these functions you know where the other officers are. And I assume that Colonel Garrison probably just called for...told....got a hold of the Commission and said why don't we meet in Houston and East Texas Peace Officers meeting, we need to have a directors meeting and we all...the directors too, and I'll set up Captains meetings and Captains....Ranger Captains and we'll maybe for some of the Highway Patrol Captains you know and ah....but anyway....we got down there and they went upstairs....going upstairs to ah...ah...decide who....they had a Ranger vacancy...one vacancy. And ah...Clint Peoples was a captain of Company F and he was supposed to have got this Ranger and Clint and I got along good. And ah...and we still...we always got along good, Clint and I did. And in fact I...I...I never had any problem with anybody besides a few old thieves. Ah...but I know Jay Banks came by....he had already me, he said 'Clint's supposed to get the Ranger'. But said, 'We've had all these problems up here at Daingerfield and I need another man'. And said, 'He's about conceded to let me have this man and if I get a man, you've got a job'. And then Clint came by and told me the same thing. I visited with both of them down at Houston, sobut this just so happens that was aoh this was pretty much of a political appointment and

ah....they appointed a Sheriff down there in that area around Woodville somewhere and ah...a Ranger took time and ah....he was friendly to Governors and he was a good officer, good officer and made a good Ranger. But I didn't get it and then ah...and then by the next ah...time that I get a shot at a Ranger vacancy in Company B well Jay had already resigned. And Captain Crowder had come back from Lubbock. Well I had met Captain Crowder on over at Marshall ah....at some of the sit-ins there in the '50's and ah...but I didn't know him as well as I did Jay. And ah...and so I...and Captain Crowder....this vacancy arose and he...he got a guy out of....who was out at Lubbock who was a sergeant in License and Weight and ah....made him a Ranger. And of course I didn't blame....you know I couldn't blame him for that because he knew him a lot better than he did me and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if you don't care Glenn, on Jay Banks I'd like to start with him next time, because he's a legendary Texas Ranger and I want to go real heavy into Jay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah I can ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...a couple other questions I have and then ...and then....you've still got some things on your list?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think I've pretty well gone over these. I've got another list started somewhere.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I don't think it's about my Highway Patrol, but this is a ...ah...I pretty well went over all of this I guess.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well then I just have onedid you have kids, or anybody , did they like to run from you? You know they'll.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, these....you know thesewe always had guysI ah...you may of...I don't know whether you went through all those notes or not....I....we had a hot roder here and he tried to out run me one time. And...of yeah, we had always....see they had....back in those days ah....everybody's car was just as potent as ours. Now the first Ford Interceptor that the State bought us in 1950 and they was pretty good cars, but prior to that we had the same kind....we just had a stock car you know and that's all we had. And you just had to out drive 'em, you couldn't.... you know, that's all you could do you know. They had just as...some of 'em had better cars then we had, most of 'em did you know after awhile. And yeah, we'd have folks try to out run us all the time and every once in awhile one of 'em would you know. And we didn't have Troopers in the next joining station like we used to, didn't have radio communications like we got now you know. We had radios but they wouldn't go all that far and ah...ah...oh yeah, you'd have folks try to out run you and that...that was not uncommon.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah...during this period ah...late '40's, early '50's , there was a radio show on that ah....well the....early to mid '50's I'm sorry, starring Joel McCray with ah....M.T. Lone Wolfe Gonzauillas was the technical advisor....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:radio program, ah...*Tales of the Texas Rangers*, do you remember that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, you know I didn't have a TV ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this was a radio show he had, TV and a radio show.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, seemed like there's both...yeah I....well I didn't...I don't think I ever saw any of them on the....heard any of them on the radio. But even....I bought a second hand TV, we did, from a Motel here, finally got us a TV and got a antenna and I got to see some of those ah...a few of those shows that he directed on TV, Gonzauillas. I don't think I ever listened to any

on the radio. Ah...I did, yeah, but I don't remember too much about 'em. I...I never have been much....I don't watch thisI don't watch any of these Ranger programs or police shows, all that shooting andand chasing and it's just embarrassing to watch....I...I just ...it's just...it just makes me mad you know. Cause nobody operates like that you know. And ah...and ah....you can't...you know you wouldn't if you could and ah...and it's so unreasonable and I just didn't watch 'em you know, I just didn't watch any of 'em. I'm just not one of those kind.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I tell you what let's do if you don't care, let's stop and next week we'll finish up with you Highway Patrol and if you don't care we'll talk about some Rangers that ah...you didn't work with, as Rangers, that were still very influential in your period, like Banks and Gonzauillas and Goss and some of these others andand get ready to get you in the Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that's good.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well it's...I just now looked at this...the first ah...ah...I went to two air crashes I guess. But the first crash that I...just as soon after I got here on patrol we had a...oh American Air Line I think, plane crashed between Marshall and Waskom one Sunday in a rain storm and we went over there. You know ..this was something...it was unusual for us up here and ah...I got into several aircraft, three that I can think of right now. That one where everybody was killed ah...and it was a twin engine plane, just about the biggest one they had then, this was in the early '50's. And then another plane crash that...we were working a drowning out here on the Sabine River and it was bad weather and I saw an explosion in the air on the north part of this district and ah...from out there. And we got...I went to the car and got on the radio and called the radio station here and local Sheriff's office and they didn't have anything and we call...we established radio contact with Tyler and then in a little while well Tyler called back and said

there's a...yeah there's been a big plane crash up near Daingerfield and ya'll go up there and....cause we had a lot of officers here. So we went up there and ah....piece of this...there was three aboard that plane, it was a military plane, and they'd...they ah...bailed out and ah...got out some way. Of course they...they wouldn't talk about it, but we found where the plane crashed and gosh it...the old engine was just buried in the...in the...plumb into the ground you know. It was a big son of a gun. And then ah...well after I got in the Rangers, we'll get into that, I went...had to do some fingerprinting and go down to a big bad air crash down between here and Waco. And that was something else that I noticed on here that I forgot to mention, the fact that we did do a lot of air crashes and some of them were pretty good sized. Just...you know, just anything just about...you'd get into you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wherever they sent you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's right. Well we didn't have to be sent, we'd go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or whatever, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know you see something like that, I saw this explosion up there and man that whole...just a big old ball of fire way up there and see we're out here on the Sabine River and this thing happened up north of Daingerfield, northwest of Daingerfield. And it was just a ball of fire in the air you know and ah...and you knew something...and the star falling you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And tornadoes you know, gosh we've ah...I know one day we...one night we got called to go to Hughes Springs to a tornado and this was exciting as you...you know everything seems...but we was already working you know. So we tear out and Tyler calls us and says, 'There's a bad tornado in Hughes Springs and all communications knocked out and they've

got...got the Mt. Pleasant unit on the way down there and ya'll get up there and do whatever you can to help the people and help the Sheriff up there and...and let us know what's going on when you get there'. So...and the weather was bad of course and here we tear out and we get up just north of Diana, we go through Diana and we get up there and there's a flap up there, you just go over a hill and...and there it is you know. And I topped that hill, and I was driving, and ah...we was driving that old '48 Ford and ah...that was road was covered with water, I'm talking about...and a lot of it. And of course there wasn't any way to stop it. And I hit that water and water came up through the floorboard of that rascal and it got to missing and carrying on, but we luckily got through that water and that probably took four or five miles to get that old engine running again. But we get on up a little bit further up the road, three or four miles, to cut off to go to Hughes Springs and we establish radio contact with Mt. Pleasant boys and they had a brand new '49 Ford and they had encountered the same thing, but when they hit the water it tore the radiator out of their car. And so they were disabled, they called us and told us, 'if ya'll...we're going to have to....ya'll are going to have to come get us or something because we can't go any further'. And they'd hit water and so we finally got to...I think somebody we had made contact with the Daingerfield Sheriff's office and of course Hughes Springs was in Cass County and ah...they was right on the line. So they'd agreed to go out and get Jay and them at the...they wouldn't of been much...they wasn't a whole lot of good to us not having a car you know because we...we was going up there to try to make sure people was all right you know and get some help. But ah...went to...we'd get to go to a lot of tornadoes you know and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that Daingerfield has really figured in to your career right....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I got to where I don't even like to go through there you know. Had a lot of good folks up there but ah...mainly that strike is what kind of turned you against things and

have to stay up there as long as we did you know. It's just a...and we'd get to one and those people were....I just couldn'tI never...you know I don't guess I'd make a good union man, obviously I wouldn't because I was always too concerned about getting that pay check. And I don't...you know I...every job I've ever people's treated me as good as they told me they was going to, they paid me what they agreed to when I went to work you know. And every job I had I was glad to get you know. And ah...I was happy to have...have something to do.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Have a pay check.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Never did think about walking off from one. Never did walk off, never was fired from a job. We can shut down now and take the rest of the day off.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 2

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, this is Monday, February 27, 1995. Glenn, you were rather ah...shall we say, well known for your driving. Did you ever have any accidents?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I had one moving traffic accident all the time I worked for the Department of Public Safety and I...and this was after I had got on the Ranger Service. I had a lot of near misses I promise you that much. But I...I guess ah...I can contribute my...I had a lot driving experience, I started driving a Model A Ford when I was about twelve, thirteen years old and ah...because ah...we'd work and that's ...I'd go to school in the car you know and come home and work on the farm and ah...I had a lot of driving experience and ah...this was fortunate. But I had one moving traffic accident in 1963 and ah ...and I shouldn't have been ah...it shouldn't of happened. And I was going into Kilgore and it was four lane highway between...up to Rabbit Creek, you know where Rabbit Creek is over there and it's now 259, just as you get into Kilgore right before you get to the Ramada Inn there. All right, it was four lane from there on in to town, but it was two lane the rest of the way. And we was working this Sanho Cave business over there and I'd been to Marshall to get me some clean clothes.

ROBERT NIEMAN: About what year was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: This was '62 or '63. And ah...and we were living in Marshall at that time and I'd run out of clean clothes and I went over there to get some laundry and...and ah...was on my way back to Kilgore. And I'm in the inside lane and there's two trucks and trailers in the

outside lane ah...and it's raining and there was a Nash station wagon....I remember just as vividly and ah...there was two ladies and several kids in this Nash station wagon following this truck. And I'm in the inside lane and I'm just about... oh this ah...I guess she was about a cars length ahead of me in one lane and I'm in the other you know and I'm just going along....I'm probably fixing to pass, knowing me like I do and..cause I knew I was under control. But just as this truck/trailer cleared the intersection where 31 comes in to 259 over there, of course it's all 31 now, well this Cadallic came through a stop sign, slid through a stop sign, just barely missed the rear bumper of that truck. I thought he was going to hit truck. The first time I saw him, the truck..you know had...it was truck...it was van type, I can't even see west, I can't even see towards Tyler. But just as the back of that truck passed then I see this Cadallic and he...I thought he was going to hit the truck. Well he didn't, but the Nash station wagon hit him right in the rear door and just spun him around right in front of me. And I...I could have gone up on the median but there's cars coming from the other direction. I had time to think and to react but I...I had to make up my mind, not only you know...you can't...I just got to hit him. So....and I didn't hit him all that hard. But that's the only moving traffic accident I had. I got run over...I was stopped ah...three different times and got run over.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You told us about one down on I think 149.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I had another drunk driver stopped out on ah...ah...Lake Lammond ah..that cut off between Hwy. 80 and ah...and ah...and it was 26 at that time, right on the..the..the lake there, the dam, Lake Lammond Dam.

ROBERT NIEMAN: There where the Highway Patrol Headquarters is at?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, on the way over there to the road.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lake Lammond Road I think they call it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. It was just a little ways off of 80. And ah...one morning...oh it was one or two o'clock in the morning, I was working by myself and I was ah...I was cutting across from 80 going over to 26 to work traffic. We tried to stay out of the city all we could.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Are you in the Highway Patrol now or Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah...this...I...when I...just as I started up ah...got off 80 I saw this car parked on...on Lake Lammond Road headed north there towards 80 and the lights on and it was stopped on the highway. And it was late at night and I just pulled up right beside of him and ah...stopped and shined my flashlight on over and I could see the guy was passed out. And just as I shined the light on him well he come to a little bit and started trying to start the car. And I thought, my goodness you know, I can't...I got to get out here and keep him from starting that car and getting out on Hwy. 80 and getting run over you know. So I just threw my car in park and....well actually it was standard transmission...I know anyway I...I...set the brake and put it in neutral and left my lights on, jumped out, got his car keys and ah...out of the ignition, cut the motor off and ah...and just as I got the keys out of the ignition I heard this car turn off of 80 and he was...oh he was skidding, his wheels was sliding and made right smart a racket. And this young boy was home on leave from the Navy, and I never will forget it, and he was...I wasn't a hundred yards off Hwy. 80 I don't guess, just about a hundred yards, you know where Lake Lammond....anyway, that rascal thought...didn't know I was stopped and...and the lights was on this others guys car and he..he tore...he hit my car, of course I wasn't in it. And didn't do...he...he almost stopped it, it didn't do that much damage. And then I got run over again ah...at ah...Hwy.

80 and Fredonia Street. And my partner and I...I was still on the Highway Patrol and we had been to ah...up to Orr City to serve a warrant.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was your partner?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Lloyd Webb. And I was driving and we had pulled up there to the traffic light and it was red, on Judson Road, and there's a city bus setting right in front of us and we was waiting for the light to change. And there was a kid worked for a radiator company up there on the highway, I never will forget, on 80 and it was the first time he had driven. And he was in a pickup and he made a left turn off of 80 onto Judson Road going north and he never did straighten up, he hit the back of the city bus with part of his pickup and hit us with the rest of it, parked behind him. And that's ah...that's the times that I...and plus I think we've already gone over the time I got run over down here before Christmas you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And then there was one other time you was riding shotgun, I think with Kenneth Walker you told me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I was riding with Kenneth Walker and we had a ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Highway Patrol still?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, a '53 model Ford and ah...we were on 1845 out there just in that curve ah...by Swepeco. Of course it wasn't near as nice a road now...then as it is now. It was a two lane road at that time. And we were cutting across....80 was under construction and ah...we were going over on 80 for some reason or other and we was right in that curve up there above Swepeco and ah...this car was coming the opposite direction and I could...it was raining, raining real bad and ah...and ah...I remember that I had to tell Kenneth twice to get off the road. He...he saw it, I could tell he react...he saw it but he wouldn't....you know he started braking, slowing down, in fact we were I guess practically stopped when we got hit and I kept telling him, I said,

‘Get it off the road Kenneth, get it off the road’. Well of course we was...the road didn’t have any shoulder on it at that time, it was muddy, it had been raining. But anyway, that guy he saw us, he realized he was in....on the wrong side of the road just before he got....long enough that he adjusted and of course he went into a skid and instead of hitting us just direct head on well he...the side of his car just...it totaled out our ...that ‘53 Ford. But ah... it didn’t...it knocked...it bruised me up a little bit, both of us hit the ah...the sun visors and that was before seat belts of course you know. And ah...but ah...and the guy was drunk and we...we arrested him for drunk driving. But that’s ah...that’s the only accidents I’ve ever had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well other than the one down on 49...excuse me...where you were hurt pretty badly, ah....nothing you know major, major, but you were certainly...bad enough to go to the hospital and what not.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn’t even go to the hospital that night.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, well you ended up there, you ended up there though.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Doctor wanted me to, but I...you know, was hard headed and ah...yeah, but....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But on the others?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I wasn’t hurt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No one was hurt?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. No I never did....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...you were rather...this...I wasn’t...well we might as well jump right on in to this right now, ah....you used to allow like four hours to go from here to Austin.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh three hours and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You were noted for either going you know, two speeds, dead stop or throttle flat up against the fire wall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I drove fast, I had a reputation of being a fast driver and I was a professional driver and...and I'm the kind of guy that ah...that likes to get things done. And the more I can...you...you and I have been together, you know how....we was up at Dallas, we didn't anything to do but what we wanted to the rest of the day, but I can't...I'm not a guy that going to set around and wait, let's go do it you know and...and we'll find something else to do after while. And ah...I'm not a setter around and I...and I...I'm a...I guess you'd call me a man of action you know, because I...I just go do it you know. So it's not unusual for me to go to Austin and back in a day you know. And then it's not un...you know and I can drive to Austin in four hours or less you know. And did many a times. And ah...because it's just you know, I'd hook 'em. And if you move, as you well know....and I don't stop unless I've got to buy fuel you know and ah...it's a...I've left here a many a time and ah...well I've...I had to go to Monahans to court several times on two different cases out there. And I'd leave here after Church on Sunday and I'd be in Monahans before night you know and it's ah...it's the other side of Odessa about sixty miles.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you tell a good story, and we won't tell the whole story, just enough to make this one make sense right now, but we'll get into it later. When you first became a Ranger you had to live over at Marshall and that you'd requested to move back to Longview and they let you and you'd told the Sheriff that you could be in Marshall within twenty minutes.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And you had a case, I think, come up around Waskom was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was down at Jonesville ah...it's between Waskom and Karnack and ah...ah...the Constable got called and ah...down there and ah....that ah...from the owner of a store...he had a silent alarm from his store went off in his house and that there's somebody in his store. So the Constable responded to the call and ah...we got over there and there's two burglars there and one of them had shot him. So this is around twelve, one o'clock in the morning and they called me of course and said that this Constable had been shot over at Waskom and told me where it's located. And ah...Interstate 20 had just opened then between...it was just open from Longview to Greenwood, Louisiana. And it was ah ...ah...I hit 20...I got up, lived out there north of town, I'm oh, I guess five miles from the Interstate where I live, anyway I...when I went under Hwy. 59 in Marshall well one of the Deputy Sheriff's that worked Harrison County, I saw his car coming down the access....I saw this car coming down the access road but....and I could tell it was a Sheriff's car because it was well lit...the intersection was. But I got...I went on by before he...before he went by and when I exit off of Interstate 20 on Hwy. 9 in Waskom, that's the best way to get there, and ah...the quickest way and I exit right behind the Sheriff. And so I followed him on to the crime scene and ah...he got out of his car, he was a little slowEarl's a big guy, Earl Franklin. And I was already on the ground of course and he(tape ends)....well anyway Earl.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn just a second, we probably lost a little on that tape, let's back up to where he...you know you drive up behind the Sheriff.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I drive up behind the Sheriff there as he gets to the crime scene, I...I didn't try to pass him, of course the roads crooked and I wouldn't have anyway, cause I recognized his car. And ah...when we got out to the crime scene well like I said he...he's pretty good sized guy and he was a little slow about getting out and Earl's....that was he nature kind of, he didn't move

all that fast, but he was a hard working Sheriff. And he said, 'Well you told you could get over here in twenty minutes but you didn't tell me you'd beat me to the crime scene.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did...would Highway Patrolmen give you a ticket?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. All right, see I was a Highway Patrolman, they all knew it you know and they knew...the Highway Patrol knew we had work to do you know. And ah...and everybody knew that...I had a...I think I maintained a pretty good reputation as being a working Ranger. And this patrolmen would hear me....a lot of them would have scanners at their house, they'd hear me in the mornings, they knew I went to work every morning at seven o'clock and...and maybe they'd be working twelve, one o'clock in the morning and...and they'd know I was still out and they'd know I hadn't been home you know. And...and...and I guess they knew that I ought to be home and they knew I was on my way home you know. And ah...no, it was not unusual for them to...and most of the time I just picked up my mike you know, cause sometimes I've...I've popped through radar you know rolling and ah...I've had two or three tell me that I was the first one that ever you know, hit the peg on 100, as fast the radar units in that time would register, I don't know what they register now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well on your Ranger cars did you have lights, flashing lights?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean that you could stick on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, no, no I wouldn't...I wouldn't ever run to an emergency, I just...just drove that way you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah...did you ever have anybody try to use you for a front door?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, yeah I had a lawyer one time from ah...told me later, I didn't know it. I passed a lawyer from Marshall going into Dallas, I was going up Interstate somewhere around

Tyler somewhere and I...and he said he dropped in behind me and followed me all...tried to. It was pretty...you know, I'll tell you what it's...it's hard to keep up with a guy that's in a hurry you know and ah...unless your a professional driver. And ah...I'd look ahead all the time...I..I'll tell you what I'd do ah...Bobby and this is not unusual, I've got 82,000 miles on my pickup right now and never had the brakes relined and I had 'em checked about 10,000 miles or back and the guy said they had...still had about 75% of the brake. I drive ahead, I know how to drive. I don't use my brakes, I look way up ahead of me and I take advantage of...I'll pass a guy on the right just as quick as I will on the left on a four lane highway. Now I'm not going to let him run over me cause I..I'm not going to pass him on a bridge that away you know. But ah...ah...I..I just...I look ahead and I just keep a rolling you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever get reprimanded?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...ah...G.W. Burkes, the captain, one time ah...of course he...he was...he would reprimand you pretty regular anyway but he's...he didn't mean too much by it. But ah...when they first come along with this 55 mile speed limit well ah...they kind of...kind of got down solid with it and they thought that nobody should drive over 55. And G.W. was just as fast a driver as I was and I knew that and he knew that I knew it. And ah...so he told...he made an announcement at a company meeting one time said, 'You know, anybody gets a'....Highway Patrol's got a form, a 10 something or 9 or something, I don't what the number of it is, never did pay attention to it and ah...that they write up if they stop us....some other DPS employee for speeding and don't give 'em a ticket, but the write...some of them will write it up. And ah...he said, 'Well if you get one of those written up on you well we're gonna give you three days off without pay'. And I said, 'Well you know if get that...that happens a time or two I'll probably slow down'. Cause I...but ah..I'd of kept on working you know, I wouldn't of got paid for it. You

just couldn't ah...I guess Bob Mitchell paid me...I don't know whether you listened to that tape or not, but Bob Mitchell paid me about as good a compliment as I thought I had all the time I was in the Rangers when I retired. And Bob said he was just...he had just come to Tyler as a new Ranger and when they cut down on us for working ah...ah...seven days a week, you know we worked six days all the time, we always worked Saturday. And I never did have but one day a week off until way up after I'd been in the Rangers. And ah...they announced one time at a company meeting that ah...that we could ah...we didn't have to work Saturdays anymore, take off Saturday and Sunday both. And ah...so Mitchell asked me if I was going to take Saturday's off. And he mentioned that at my retirement party. And I said, 'Mitchell I just can't get my work done on ahlike it is and I'm working six days a week and ah...all the time and I can't have...I'm behind all the time, I got too much to do. And I said, 'I'm going to keep working'. And he said, 'Well, when are you going to make out your reports'. And I said, 'Well I'll do that on Sunday while I rest'. You know, and I generally did you know. I made my reports out at home, but ah...I considered that a compliment. I...I know a lot of folks think well you know Glenn's crazy, he worked all the time. But you know I enjoyed my work and...and I needed...I thought I had to get out there and get after it. And ah...I was handicapped like I've told you from my education, so I had to make it up some way. So I hit the road you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn let's get...let's start moving you towards the Rangers now. Ah...any particular reason you wanted to be a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you know I think I told you, I don't think we've got this on tape probably, did we talk about the '57 strike up there at Daingerfield on tape?

ROBERT NIEMAN: We talked about it just briefly.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, of course ah...I had got interested in the Rangers because Jim Ray and Red Arnold and ah...and Rigler ah...Lewis Rigler ah...was good to me and I had watched them and of course I had some of the older Rangers before, like Selwin Denson and I'd seen Selwin up at Bonham. He was stationed in Greenville at one time before I went to work for the DPS and I was quite impressed. Somebody had pointed him out to us as being a Texas Ranger you know and I remembered him. And then of course my...my school teacher, Jim Riddle, ah...who was on the Highway Patrol when...when I went on patrol and had encouraged me...and...and Jim had transferred to the Rangers. And I'd see him occasionally in Austin and other places you know and ah...so I just ah...I knew that I didn't want to be a Highway Patrol my entire career. I was either going to have to make up my mind to take the test for sergeant and try to advance in the Highway Patrol or get in the Rangers, which I had considered. So I think in...somewhere in about 1956 ah...I decided I'd apply for the Rangers. At that time all you do is you just write a letter to the Colonel. And ah...but I was in Austin, I think I was down there picking up a new '55 Ford. We was...generally the State would buy the cars when the new models come out you know. They'd wa...in ah...cause they could get 'em cheaper you know and ah...I...I was down there picking up a new Ford and I carried my letter in to Colonel Garrison's office. And his door was always open for anybody. I'm a Highway Patrolman stationed up here in East Texas and I hadn't seen the Colonel I don't guess three times since...or half a dozen times since I've gone to work maybe. But ah...ah...anyway, I went in his office with this letter and I gave it to him. I told him I was interested in the Rangers and I knew that I couldn't get the next appointment and knew it was popular, but I wanted....but I would like to be considered for future appointments. And ah...I never will forget the Colonel thanked me and he said, 'You know Glenn most folks hear of a vacancy and they come down here and want it you know, and apply

for it and they're upset because they don't get it. And he said, 'You're the first person that's ever come in here with the attitude that you've got and knowing that you are not going to get the next appointment and not even expecting it and..and ah...and...but you're interested'. And he said, 'But I'm going to promise you that you'll be considered as a Ranger in the future'. Well that's all I wanted you know. I went on back and did my job, I was happy, I was a happy Highway Patrolman. But that's...I...I...got interested and then of course this '57 strike came along and I got an opportunity to work with the Rangers up there for some time. They...ah...they sent me and Jay Mace, a Patrolman from Mt. Pleasant, and we worked together. And they intended for us to ah...ah...their intentions was that when they first assigned us, Jay Banks was captain of course, and Arthur Hill was a sergeant and they had ah...ah...they was working their people too much and there was a lot of activity up there and they needed some help. And I think from what I...ah...a conversation I had with Jay and Arthur Hill when I first went up there was ah...that maybe they was considering putting us in the plant. We was in an unmarked '52 Ford that belonged to the Safety Education man, four door sedan, black. And we was checked in an old hotel over at Hughes Springs, old third rate motel and stayed over there two or three nights. And they planned on us going over and applying for a job and they was going to hire us, it was going to be prearranged with the company. And we was going to work internally for intelligence information mainly. And there was so much going on, Arthur Hill ah...I know one day we went by there and he called us and wanted us to come by and ah...and there was a big 4 x 8 scab sign up on the post there in Avenger and he knew was a spending a lot of time out at night just being available for anything that happened you know. And I never will forget, old Arthur ah...it upset him when I brought in I think, but ah...ah...he said, 'I want that sign over there at Avenger'. Had a great big 4 x 8 piece of plywood nailed to a high line pole on...right on the right-of-way and

ah....named all the scabs that was working in the...that lived in Avenger. So that night, oh twelve or one o'clock, well I pulled up under that sign and...and ah...had a crowbar I'd borrowed from somebody and...and ah...I just got up there and took...on top of the car....took the sign down and...and ah....we tied it to the car and carried it up there and then threw it out up there by the office, and the Rangers was officing there at the motel. And never did say anything to anybody about it, just threw it out there beside the deal. Next morning well Arthur's hollering you know and he come in and he wanted us to get that sign, he was afraid somebody was going to see it up there you know. And I thought he wanted it you know and that was what he said you know. And ah...but I didn't understand, he just wanted it down you know. But anyway we...we folded it up and disposed of it somewhere else. But any...that'sthat's how I got interested because I lived the way they was working and ah...and criminal works...I knew it was interesting and I'd...we'd worked some criminal work as a Highway Patrol, but not many. And ah...and like I say, I knew that I wasn't going to chase spears the rest of my career cause I was..you know...you...you don't mind...I never mind driving a car 100...as fast as it would go, but it's kind of hard to set over on that right side when a rookie out of patrol school is driving one as fast as it would go. You don't know what kind of driver he is you and you're setting over there in suicide seat and it's not very comfortable. And I was wanting to get away from that part of it. I...I...if I could of worked by myself, stayed on the Highway Patrol, I'd of been very...I'd of been a happy individual til retirement time probably. But I knew I couldn't because they was...I was having to break somebody in every two years you know, a new rookie out of patrol school and that's not easy. It's....it's a challenge.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you was extremely lucky to keep...for you to have Lloyd Webb breaking you in for as many years as you did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, I...I...see this is...this is something I just don't understand now. Course I understand that they can't do it because we got...we got two highway patrol schools going down there right now in Austin and there's over a hundred people in each one 'em and when they get out ah...there will still be vacancies, they won't even fill the vacancies we got. So we're...we got such a turn over and ah...we got...and...and...and they increased the numbers so much you know. We got rookies breaking rookies in you know, which is not really good. I hate to see it but they've got to do it you know. But I got interested in the Rangers that away and then I worked up there in '57 and I think I've told you maybe but ah...Jay Banks and Clint Peoples both had noticed....I had got their eye just a little bit I guess and they both promised me a job in the Rangers if...and they had a vacancy come up and I missed it and ah...in '58.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was that vacancy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, the legislature had just ah...increased the Rangers from 50 to 51 in 1958. And we found out later that it was kind of a political deal. They had a guy in mind down there that they wanted to make a Ranger and he was a good one, he was a Sheriff down in deep East Texas and ah...he was stationed down...I mean he lived in the county where the Governor had a ranch and...and ah...and he was good hand, he was a good man, a good cattle investigator and a good...well he was just a good all around hand. So....but none of us knew that see. This was all....it was known in Austin but ah...Jay Banks didn't know it and Clint Peoples didn't know it. Clint was supposed to have got the man and by this time ah...Jim Riddle had made sergeant. And ah...so they was going to replace Jim and ah...but Jay was having all this trouble with ah...up there and then ah...and there was a lot of...Company B was a busy company. There was a lot of tougher people that was living in the Dallas/Fort Worth area and Longview and Kilgore and...and ah...Tyler was growing andand ah....and there was a lot of....a lot of burglars

over around Sherman/Dennison area, safe burglars, andand they was hitting a pretty good swath in to Dallas and over towards Shreveport and we had a bunch of criminal elements in Shreveport and Dallas was working together you know and there was a lot going on up here. And Jay wanted another man. So Clint had just about ah...agreed to let Jay have the vacancy because his work load wasn't as bad as Jay's was and ...and ah...but didn't either one of them get it see. So that'sI miss that....I'd of been on the Rangers three years earlier if that would of....if they'd of let Jay have the man, or Clint either one you know. Cause they both promised me that....we was at the East Texas Police Officers Associationa meeting was in Houston at the Rice Hotel and ah....the Director was there and so was the Commission, they met down there. And they made an appointment down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you even regret not working under Jay Banks?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I'd of like to work under Jay ah....I know I would because I...I...you know I worked under him up there in that '57 strike but ah....I didn't....I never regretted it. I'd of like to....Jay was a tough, hard working guy. He'd ah...but see I liked to work so I think that's why he was attracted to me as he must of been because Jay wasn't the kind of guy that would come tell you, if I get a vacant....if there's a....if I get demand you've got a job, unless they meant it you know. And he told me that. So ah...it made me feel good and you like to work for a guy like that, that puts it on the line to you. But I don't think it would have been any different than working for any other captain because ah...they....Captains let you work like you want to anyway you know. They...I never did...I've worked for several Captains and none of them told me how to work, you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So....ah...so when do you apply for the Rangers again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't apply again. Ah...you just only apply one time. And ah...then they...ah...ah...they passed a...a...we got a letter back I think in the late '50's or early '60's that ah...that we should renew our application each year if we're still interested. So I did that, this was just a standard form that everybody in the department got if you was wanting to transfer from Drivers License to Highway Patrol or Highway Patrol to License and Weight or whatever. They...they decided that ah...and...that...they passed a rule that you had to update your application every year if you was still interested. So I did this at least once or maybe twice. And then ah...the legislature in 1960 ah...passed a ah....they ah....increased the size of the Ranger force by ten, effective the next fiscal year which was September of '61. So I'd heard about...this was you know...this...this made the new and of course you know we was interested in what the legislature did all the time, the laws they passed and....and whether we got a raise or not you know, because that's how we'd get our raises and the legislature just meets every two years. So...unless they appropriate a raise for us for both years, well we know we're going to go two years without a raise and we all...we know what we're going to get you know because it's...it's ah...it's written into the laws. So I kept up with what the legislature did and I was real enthused when they decided to increase the Rangers by ten people. So I had....I'm sure that I renewed my application then and then ah...and I tried to spend ah...by this time well of course Jay had left and ah...and Bob Crowder was captain of Company B again. And I didn't know Captain Crowder like I did Jay. I had met Captain Crowder over at Marshall when we was having some of the racial problems there in mid '50's and ah...right after Jay left really and I guess it was late '50's. Ah...because ah...well no, I'll tell you this was before....I met Captain Crowder before he made Regional Commander and see he was captain of Company B and then when they reorganized in '57....so these were in the early, earlier '50's, like '55 or '56 somewhere in there. Ah...maybe '53

or '54. But anyway I had met Captain Crowder but I didn't know him that well you know and I didn't have time to spend much time with him, because we was over there....assigned over there to do a job. And... but after he came back toafter Jay left and Captain Crowder came back to Dallas, well every time I'd get a chance to go into Dallas well I'd go by andand talk with him you know. And then I had ah....I'd see Jim Ray and Red Arnold on a regular basis and their activities and mine throughout East Texas here. And then I'd see Rigler occasionally and I kept letting them know how bad I wanted to be a Ranger you know. And they'd...and of course at that time and they would at company meeting well they'd discuss it you know. Well you know, we're going to get a Ranger and maybe two, actually Company B got two Rangers, Charlie Moore and I both went to work at the same time, both assigned to Company B. And ah...so they discussed who was....they thought was going to be Ranger. Well Charlie was stationed there in Dallas, he'd see Captain Crowder every day you know, or two and ah....I'm out here in East Texas and wasn't seeing him four or five times a years you know, if I saw him that often. And ah...I knew that I didn't have as good a shot as Charlie did and ah...but I kept on trying and that's how I got it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And where were you assigned?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I was assigned to Marshall, yeah ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And who did you replace here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well they....they ah....I didn't replace anybody. This...this area was empty at that time. There had been a boy stationed at Marshall, E.J. Wimberly, and E.J. was a cousin of Jay Banks. And ah...E.J. ah....oh he just didn't work out too good over there at Marshall and...and ah...for some reason or other. And he was not happy down there. He was raised up aroundin Wise County. And he was wanting to get back up that away, so Jay

moved him to Fort Worth ah....from Marshall and...and leFort...I don't think he stayed over here but about a year probably. And ah...and things wasn't working out real good for him over at Marshall and ah...soand he wasn't happy as I said, so he....they transferred him to Fort Worth at his request. And then he quit when Jay Banks well he quit. So ah....ah....he had been the only Ranger ever stationed in Marshall. They had worked Marshall out of Clarksville or Jacksonville oror Tyler but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was there a Ranger in Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Ah...when I came here there was ah....Jim Ray was in Tyler and Red was in Mt. Pleasant, Frank Kemp was in Paris, Lewis Rigler was in Mt. Pleasant....I mean in Gainsville and ah....G.W. Burkes was in Fort Wother and the rest of the Rangers was stationed in the Dallas office. See there was only eleven of us in the....in the Company.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So Longview and Marshall, Texarkana was void of.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Station Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So ah...then I went to Marshall and ah....because Marshall had asked for a Ranger. The Sheriff and the District Attorney both....Charlie Adams was District Attorney and Earl Franklin was Sheriff and they had asked for a Ranger. And ah...of course I know when Colonel Garrison and told me that I was going to be accepted in the Rangers and this was kind of funny ah....he said can you.....the phone rang in my ah....at home and ah....one morning I....we generally worked nights mainly on the Highway Patrol so it....because we have to work day and night both if we didn't andso we'd take any of our calls....we didn't get many wreck calls in the morning you know and ah....so I was home one morning when the phone rang and that's ah....he said, 'This is Colonel Garrison, can you keep a secret'. And I said, 'I'm the

best hand you got'. And he said, 'Well ah...you're going to be made Ranger'. And he said, 'But I want to make the announcement from down here at Austin'. And he said, 'I've got to wait until this Carla',..... this storm Carla was hitting the coast down there and...and excuse me, and he said, 'We're having a lot of problems'. And he said, 'It may be detained a few days'. And I said, 'Is it a fair question to where I'm going'. And he said, 'Well you're going to be stationed somewhere in Company B'. And of course that please me because it....so I didn't ask anymore questions. And I didn't even tell my wife. He told me not to tell anybody and I didn't tell anybody.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How did that make you feel, knowing you were going to be a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it made me feel great you know. And ah...and I wanted to tell everybody in country you know, but I...I...I wanted to please my boss too you know. Sobut this is funny, Charlie Moore came down and Charlie knew see and Carl called him and of course the captain knew it was going to bewhose this man's going to be, the Colonel called him. So Charlie comes down to Longview and he comes out to see me and ah...and catches me I think he calls me on the radio and he and another....and Charlie was in intelligence then. And he and an intelligence agent from Tyler was over here and they...I met them and when Charlie first questioned me, 'Have you heard anything'. 'Not a thing'. And ah...and I lied to Charlie and of course he said, 'You haven't heard anything'. I said, 'No, you know something that I'm supposed to know'. And he wouldn't tell me if he did you know. So ah...so left Charlie....I never told Charlie. Charlie Moore didn't know that I knew because I sure didn't tell him. Because ah....anyway, we....he and I went to Austin together when ah....cause he had to turn his car in and we both went down there and picked up some old wore out cars and went to school too in Austin. So ah....and we was down there to be swore in you know. We...I actually went down

with Charlie on a Sunday and I think we were sworn in on Monday. And I didn't take my family down there with me because ah.....well I had to ride with Charlie and he had a little old Ford Coupe and he didn't take his family. So he turned it in and ah...we....they issued me a '59 Ford that Red Arnold had already worn out and ah...it had about 100,000 on it and I think I put about 60,000 on it before I got me a new car. But ah....that's how it came down.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what did ah...what was the pay when you joined the Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know Bobby I...I don't even remember. It ah...I don't remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there any special....was there any benefits like hospitalization and ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course we all got the same hospital insurance see, all the DPS employees have hos...yeah we had hospitalization and ah....and ah...we had our....having a car furnished was worth something. And of course we didn't have a clothing allowance then, they....they....they added clothing allowance later. But I don't even...I don't have the slightest idea, somewhere around three....I'd say three....three hundred and....a little better a month probably is what we was drawing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how long were you in school at Austin before you came to Marshall?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what I...ah...we didn't go right to school. We got sworn in and then ah...I went to Dallas ahI was instructed to come on to Dallas from Austin and I was supposed to spend a month in Dallas and ah... working out of the Dallas office and working with different Rangers and....and reviewing reports and familiarizing myself with the report procedures and the office there in Dallas and getting acquainted with the officers up there. Because I...it was very valuable to me cause I spent a lot of time in Dallas ah....a lot of time in Dallas. Because we had a lot of safe burglars and armed robbers. And Will Fritz and Walter

Fannin was the captain of the burglary and theft division, Will Fritz was homicide and robbery of the Dallas Police Department. And Bill Deckard was Sheriff up there and Deckard had a real good ah...rapport with thieves and a lot of good informants and ah...I spent a lot of time in Dallas. But the first monthand I don't think we had a school til we'd been on about a month, I spent...I was supposed to have spent in Dallas but these folks down here in East Texas got to hollering for some help andand I'd come home on....some on weekends...most of the time on weekends I'd come home. And ah... I got involved in two or three little old things down here and it'd keep me a day here a day or two and the captain found out that ah...that these folks was going to call me and ah...so I think I only spent two weeks there in Dallas and he said, 'Well you know, you go on down there and go to work you know'. And....so that's what I did. And then we had...we started going to school because ah...we had just a basic investigative school and I expect I was in school quite a bit the first year you know or the first two. And of course we had...we went to school regular every time there was something knew you know we....trying to get updated or trained for whatever it was. And they still do that of course and it's good...you know it's good for the department, it's good for the officers. But ah...I got my feet on the ground pretty solid and I knew the area see andand ah...I knew all the local officers and ...and this was a great advantage to somebody that's ah...just falling in and go to work the next day you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was this common practice to take a Highway Patrolman out of his area and put him back in it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...ah...no it wasn't. And you know I talked to the Colonel about that down there when I applied. And ah... and he and I discussed that. And I told him I said, 'You know'. And he said, 'Well you know you'll have to go anywhere in the state'. When I carried my

letter down there and I said, 'I realize that and I'm willing to go anywhere in the state'. But I said, 'You know a guy could do a whole lot better job in the area he's familiar with'. But I said, 'I'll go anywhere'. But I said, 'I...you know...I can go to work down there in East Texas in a weeks time and ...and folks would never know that I hadn't been a Ranger all along you know'. And he said, 'Well he had never thought about that'. But that was kind of the policy for years and nobody ever asked why you know. Even...they wouldn't even send a Highway Patrolman back to his area where he was raised when he come out of school. And they've got away from that now. They know that they train the officer and he'll ...you know he'll arrest your friends most of the time quicker than you would a stranger. You know your friends are supposed to respect you enough not to violate the law you know and if he knows you and he knows your liable to be out there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did...did you have to break in the Highway Patrolman here that replaced you before you became a...had become a full time Ranger or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah, I broke in ah...two after ah....Kenneth Walker and then Slick Alford.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well no, I meant afterokay...you're going to...the Colonel's called you, you're going to be a Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But do you have to train someone?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No they...see ah...there was...there was....I had a partner then and by the time I made Ranger we hadthis ...this station was so active and so much going on that ah...that we convinced ah...the sergeant and the captain thatand both of us had quite a bit of time on and Howard had been working ah...about ah...four years I guess, three years ah....and he

was a good hand. So we convinced 'em to get us two automobiles and ah...let us work by ourselves. So we split ah...we...we...one of us worked days and the other one worked nights. And we'd...we'd have it overlapping from like four 'til eight at night and ah....during the week well I'd work...like I was working days, I'd work from eight to six Monday, Tuesday, and Thursday and take off Wednesday and then work ten to eight Friday, Saturday, and Sunday, ten in the morning 'til eight at night. We worked ten hour shifts. And then ah....the night man would come on at four in the afternoon and work 'til two in the morning. And then when we'd work 'til two in the morning we'd go back to work at ah...ten Sunday morning. And we'd work a week nights and that away the guy that was working nights I could get off on Saturday afternoon at eight and you wouldn't have to go back to work 'til four o'clock Sunday afternoon you know and you get a pretty good long day off, plus another day too you know. So we convinced 'em that we could work that away and that sure did helpwork to our advantage and ah...so they...they just sent another trooper up here ah...somebody transferred here, I think Billy Davis came here. I know he did because he...he got my car.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how did Katherine and the kids....Katherine and the kids like it when you became a Ranger respond to it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...they...they...didn't bother them and they was tickled because they knew I wanted it and ah...ah...I was...you know, police work kept you away from home all the time anyway. It's a terrible thing for a married man to be a police officer, especially in my day. Now they...you know, they work shift work and they just work eight hours and they got all this comp time and ...and holidays, they've added...no telling how many holidays they've added to it and...and vacation you know and all this and these guys don't to...that many hours now. You know they still got a tough job out there while they're out there but they don't have to work the

hours that we worked. They...they don't...wouldn't even think about working those hours you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...I think we have failed to mention in here, during this period while you're in the Highway Patrol, you have a son born.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Dennis was born in ah...ah...let's see in '50 ah....'53 I guess, '52 or '53 and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember the date off hand?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, he was born April the 15th ah....19...I've got the date but the year's got away from us, I guess it's ah...it's '53, because he'll be 42 I think his birthday. Yeah, Dennis was born and ah...of course Diane, our daughter, was...we had....she was born while I was in the service. So ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is she married by this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no, Diane didn't marry until ah....she's ah...gets out of college. She agreed that ah...well she did too. I tell you what happened. Diane...she promised me that she wouldn't marry until she got out of school. When she went she wasn't even thinking about marriage, but I said, 'You know Diane, we want to send you to school'. But I said, 'We know how that goes'. And I said, 'I'd like for you to get an education because you need one, even if you don't ever have to use it you know'. And so she agreed and the year that she was a senior....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where did she go to school?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She went to North Texas at Denton. Not the women's school but to North Texas State. And the year that she ah...ah...was to graduate well she married in December and graduated in May I guess. And ah...but they...she and her husband ah...Ronnie, asked me you know, he had already graduated and got him a job and he agreed to live in Denton, he was

working in Dallas but it was out in the northwest part of Dallas and ...and he was going to continue to live in Denton so she wouldn't have to drive back and forth. And...and of course he was going to pay for all the expenses for her you know and all that. And I said, 'No we got that worked out', her mother and I said, 'You just make it available to her and we'll see....and we'll see that she goes'. So ah...yeah she ah...she married in December before she got out of school.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what year was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...'64 I guess.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay...ah...now you're still living in Longview at the time you become a Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And...but you're going to have to move to Marshall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I agreed to...ah...the captain....I told him I had a little problem. Diane was a senior at Judson High School and ah...and she was finish that year...that school year. And so I asked the captain if I could stay in Longview until she graduated. I said, 'My family's got to stay'. I said, 'I can go to Marshall and get a room if you want me to'. But I said, 'You know if you'd let me I like to stay there in Longview'. And he said, 'Yeah, Marshall's your station'. He said, 'You can't...you can't ah...draw any per diem from being in Longview if you know...if you live there'. And see we had a...we had a per diem allowance that we could draw when we were out of town you know, for lodging and meals. And of course I would never have thought about doing that you know. But anyway I...he let me stay here until ah...Diane got out of school. And we moved ah...the first of the month after she got out in May and we moved to Marshall in June.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '62?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '62.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you sell your house here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, kept my house. I'm still living in the same house since ah...ah...my mother and daddy moved in it. They were renting an apartment here and ah...they had moved to Longview in '56. So we moved to Marshall and ah...and ah...I stayed over there until ah...Dennis went to school in Marshall one year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How'd he like that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Dennis...well he was young enough at that time, it didn't bother him a bit you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now where did you live over there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We lived out between Hallsville and Marshall. Judge Sam B. Hall was the District Judge over there ah...Sam Hall, Jr., his son, was later United States Representative and then he was a United States District Judge when he died last year. Sam Jr. had just moved into town, they lived about five miles out of Marshall on Hwy. 80 and Sam had moved into town and bought a house there in Marshall and they had three daughters and Madeline was meeting herself going back and forth. And we went to Church with the Hall's some and...and I'd known Judge Hall ever since I'd been on the Highway Patrol because we worked Harrison County a whole lot and I was in and out of the courthouse. Anyway that had ah...found out that I was a Ranger of course and ah...I'd been by to see him, testified in Court in over there a time or two and he had ah...when I told him I was...what...when we was moving and he started inquiring about what kind of house we needed. And of course you had to know Judge Hall and 'Well I'll get you a house, just come on over here'. 'Well how much you pay in rent now'. And I'll never forget, I said, 'Well Judge I own my house'. 'Well what's your house payment'. I said, 'Fifty-five dollars a month'. He said, 'Well that's what we'll rent you this house for'. Finest people you'll ever

know in the world is the Hall family and they just....they was good neighbors and Sam Jr.'s kids spent about half the time....their time, they'd come out there and see their grandma and grandpa and come on over there at the house. It was just oh probably two hundred feet apart, on the same side of the road. And we enjoyed living over there and we'd probably still been living over there but ah...ah...of course Diane gets into college and ah...and we find out that Katherine's going to have to go back to work. She was working for a doctor here in Longview and loved it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She was working for Bud Calkwit and ah...and a Dr. Dean, a bone specialist. And she quit and ah...and they called and wanted her to come back in about a year. And ah...and she hadn't found anything over at Marshall and she had to go to work. So I...I talked to officers over there about moving back to Longview and they said....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who did you talk to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I talked to the District Attorney and the Sheriff and I said, 'I got a little problem, I can't get my wife a job over here'. Marshall didn't pay quite like Longview did and....and the doctors over there didn't need anybody and that was her....she was a nurse specialty. And so ah....I said something to the captain about it and he talked to the Colonel and let me move back to Longview. I continued to work the same area you know. And it...it's...you know you work for an outfitthe DPS is a good outfit you know and ah....I think ah...I still think if a guy does his job well they'll....they'll do what they can for him you know. And they always did for me I know that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn that's...why don't we call it a halt and then next week let's ah....let's start getting down into some case histories.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that's good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, March 6, 1995. This is a continuation on our series of interviews with Glenn Elliott. First thing I want to do Glenn is, you found a document that I want to read intowell I'll just read it into it. It's from....it's dated May 16, 1949 and it's from the Department of Public Safety, it's addressed to Mr. Glenn Elliott, Student Patrolman, Texas Highway Patrol Training School, Camp Mabry, Austin, Texas:

Dear Sir:

Effective June 1, 1949 your station will be Longview, which place you will be headquartered until further advised. Captain Guy Smith, whose headquarters is in Tyler will be your commanding officer and you should report to him for further instructions. Your salary will be \$230.00 a month, effective June 1, 1949. Your attention is called to regulation 20 (f), page 29, Texas Highway Patrol manual which provides a penalty of dismissal for failure to report a change of address or telephone within 24 hours to your Chief and captain under whom you are working.

Yours very truly,

Homer Garrison, Jr.

Director

Signed by W. J. Elliott

Chief, Texas Highway Patrol

Of course copies went to Captain Smith and other pertinent personnel. I suppose you are not related to Mr. W. J. Elliott?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Wasn't any kin to Walter. I think you've heard my story about talking to him when.....I think when I was....when I was accepted you know ah....I talked to atop

a telephone pole. And he was waiting there in the office for me in Austin. I think we have that some where on tape.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think we already have it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn you're in the Texas Rangers, and you are still living in Longview, you haven't moved to Marshall yet, but you're ready for your first case. Let's talk about it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Marshall was my first station. I found some....I found my weekly reports and the Rangers made weekly reports, still do. And ah....of course at this time I was having to make my own reports. We eventually got to where to could ah.....and my first weeks work ah....I ah....I worked ah....73 hours, drove 653 miles, that's probably one of the least miles I've driven. But what we did, I spent the week in Austin, most of it. I went to ah....as I told you earlier I think in the conversation, Charles Moore and I went on the Rangers at the same time. Charlie was an Intelligence Agent stationed in Dallas and he was accepted in the Rangers the same time I was and he had a vehicle assigned to him through Intelligence that he had to turn in, in Austin. So he drove to Longview and picked me up on Sunday, October 8th and we proceeded to Austin and we were in Austin Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday and returned on Saturday ah....and we were attending school down there at the same time that we were ah....accepted in the Ranger service, an in-service school. And weoh it was different subjects that we studied ah....ah....instruction, policy and procedure of the Rangers and report writing and ah....ah....things available to us through the ah....laboratory down there and things of this nature at the school that we did. The first case that I worked.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember, what was your pay as a starting Ranger, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't remember, I truly don't remember. There's a letter somewhere, there's got to be that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll find it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I'll find it, I ah....there's a letter somewhere that tells in there and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now briefly, you worked 67 hours that first week, were you paid over....were you paid overtime?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no. We didn't ever....we....I never did get paid any overtime. Yeah, I worked 73 hours

ROBERT NIEMAN: 73 hours.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And at that time they didn't worry about overtime or worked over 40 or not.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, oh I never did worry about overtime myself. There was a lot of them that did and some of them still do and ah....but it...no, I didn't....you know I was so happy to be a Ranger, I didn't....you know I was happy to have....I was happy to be a Highway Patrolman and ah....and being out working did not bother me one bit, I mean I never did....I never was a clock watcher you know. Just get out there and do the job because tomorrow it'll be something else you know. Ah....I....the second week ah....I was in Dallas ah...ah...we returned from Austin on Saturday and I got Sunday off and the second week I had toI was instructed to report to Dallas and I only worked 72 hours that week and drove 985 miles. And ah....I was in the Dallas

office working on ah...ah....looking at other Ranger's reports and ah....ah....well the first day I was in Dallas I...I'd forgotten about this, Ranger Burkes came into the office and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: G. W.?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I assisted him interrogating a boy named Stanley Beaty and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ba...?

GLENN ELLIOTT: B E A T Y and we took a voluntary statement from him regarding some burglaries of athe Branding Iron Cafe in Clarksville, Texas. Ah...G. W. was ah....at that time was stationed ah....well he'd been....I believe he was stationed in Greenville, he hadn't moved to Fort Worth yet.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When did G. W. become a Ranger, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: G. W. was a Ranger about ah....two years before I was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: About '59 approximately.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And ah....then ah....the second the day I was in there I was studying this....and looking at reports and the sergeant, Lester Robertson and I got called out about 6:30 p.m. that same day and ah....we was on a kidnapping in Rockwall County. And we worked until midnight and ah....and then the next day we followed up on it and ah....Price was the Sheriff over at Rockwall at that time and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you have his first name there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no, but I'll think of it ah....because I knew him, I worked.....we used his jail a whole lot cause it was a lot easier gettingand he...he was...he worked with the Rangers real good and he was an old time politicking....poli....poli....political Sheriff. And ah....but it took even in those days it....in the early days it took an hour or two to get somebody in and out of that Dallas County jail, it was a busy place. We could run over to Rockwall and I

could put a guy in jail there and the Sheriff would meet me at the door and I wouldn't even have to go in the jail if I didn't want to. Call in and say, 'Sheriff I got two prisoners over here and I'd like to just leave there overnight'. And he'd say, 'Yeah just bring 'em on or I'll meet you', you know. And ah....but anyway we were over there and we worked that night on that ah....on this kidnapping and it ah.... I noticed from the reports that ah...ah....the victim showed up at a hospital in Mt. Vernon and it was ah....ah...an estranged wife of....and her husband was the one that had picked her up and he was later arrested ah....in Arkansas and ah...she dropped the charges. And then on Friday of that week we went down into ah....ah....Wood County and had a company meeting that a friend of ours, H. H. Pit Green's place up in Wood County and ah...then I got to go on obviously to ah....home for the weekend because I noticed on Saturday I worked in the office in Marshall and ah....and then I had a conference with the District Attorney over here ah....in reference to some of my pending ah....drunk driving cases you know I....they....we were constantly in court you know and I had some.....I had some cases that I had filed as a Highway Patrolman that I had to dispose of you know, after I got into the Rangers.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now let me ask you, let's go back to the kidnapping, this is a federal crime, did you become exposed to your first federal

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I don't think ah...ah....Price wasn't bad about the FBI, he liked to work with the Rangers and ah...ah...very seldom.....you know the....ah....she was not carried across the state line. In order for it to be a federal offense a victim would have to of been transported across the state line. What happened was she wound up in a hospital down at Mt. Vernon and her husband went ahead and left the state, but he was apprehended and then she refused to file....ah...to take....follow through with the charges you know, which is not unusual in a family disturbance. But ah....that's how a lot of officers get hurt you know, in family disturbances and

it's real paramount at the time and then when you get in there and you're liable to have to fight 'em both you know before it's over with. But ah....then we gotI noticed from looking at my reports and I guess I should of marked these things ah....I'm back in Dallas the next Monday and my third week I only worked 68 hours and drove 605 miles. I.... I guess I wasn't getting cranked up, I had to work with Ernest Daniels some. But I'm back in.... I go back into Dallas on Monday and ah...ah...and continue to work in the office up there, do whatever they want me to do and study reports mainly. I...I went.... I was reading every Ranger's report and especially the ones that I asked the captain....the sergeant, who the people were in Company B that made the best reports. And our friend, Jim Ray, over at Tyler was one of them. And ah....and I would....I'd look into some of Jim's major files and read them, just sit there and read them religiously, just like reading the Bible. And ah...and I'd make copies of some of them for reference. And ah...this is ah... I got more..... I got the best information on how to write a report that a way you know, because I wanted to know who the captain and sergeant thought wrote the best reports and then I wanted to try to copy after him if I could you know. And he and G. W. Burkes and ah....and one other Ranger there ah....in Tyler....in Dallas company made the best reports and ah.... I'm trying to think who that was. But ah....anyway ah.... I would make copies of their reports. And I noticed here on Tuesday, on the third week, I guess it was the first.....well of course I worked that case over there, that kidnapping, but that....that you know , that was not a case , it...it...we....we worked two days on it and the lady said she didn't want to pursue it anymore so we quit. But we get a call from a Ranger in Amarillo, Texas and ah....he says that he lost a I-beam, which is ah.....at that time theft over \$50.00 was a felony offense, ah....from Pantex, Texas and that was a college town. And ah...he suspected that ah...a salvage company in Fort Worth, Texas had something to do with the theft because they were tearing a building down at this college on a

contract basis and hauling....they bought the brick, tore this old building down. And ah....so ah... I remember this just very well, we went to Fort Worth and Ernest Daniel and myself, and ah....we contacted the guy that owned the....the company and ah....wewe had already talked to a couple of guys, truck drivers there while we was waiting on him and ah....and we had pretty well determined that ah....they had brought this....these I-beams down. And they were using the I-beams toas they tore the building down, they'd removed the I-beams from the upper stories and they'd use these I-beams, they'd lay 'em down and slide brick down on their truck and they was hauling the brick back to Fort Worth. And what they did, they'd just load the I-beams up and haul them back with 'em you know. So this guy said that you know, that the employees felt that he had bought 'em and yes they're here and ah....and I didn't steal 'em and I was going to haul 'em back out there when I went after another load you know. And so there's another case that was resolved without ah....but this was a college, a state college out there and this was why the Rangers was involved in that because the college personnel called the Ranger out there. And of course during this time that I was in Dallas it was the frontier day in Fort Worth, like they're having up there ah....I guess their having one up there, some kind of something they have up there now, but at this time....during these times Fort Worth had a (unintelligible) gambling , they liked to gamble and ah....and so I was working with one of the old hands, Ernest Daniel, and Ernest ah....was a good hand and ah....and I was just doing what Ernest told me to do. And ah....of course I...I'll tell you a story on this right here. Ernest was not bad about writing reports, he'd been on the Rangers a long time and he was kind of coasting and so we go over there on this I-beam case and I come back and I'm....I'm wanting to impress somebody, I'm wanting to do good and I'd made proper notes I'd thought and ah....and I wrote a report. I dictated to the secretary there, cause the secretary was there every day and she....and I...I told her it was to

Captain Crowder and with a copy to ah...ah...Kelly Rogers, a Ranger out at Amarillo, reporting on a...on what we'd done and giving names and dates and...and descriptions of the I-beams and etc. So ah... I told her when she wrote the report I said, 'Sign Ernest's name to it you know'. Because I'm working with Ernest you know, I'm just a new Ranger. Well Ernest wasn't bad about making those reports like that. And ah...but she did and ah...it was very comical, the next day we ah...Ernest and I was in the office and ah...Captain Crowder told Ernest he said, 'That was a good report you wrote on that theft yesterday Ernest'. And of course he didn't even know what he was talking about you know. It was pretty comical but ah...anyway it.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you take the credit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, huh uh, captain knew Ernest didn't do it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know but did Ernest.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Ernest ah...Ernest just grinned you know and he said, 'Glenn did that captain'. And ah...but we were working ah...that day, we went over there, the second day we went to Fort Worth ah...ah...we...we stayed over there until 2:00 a.m. ah...checking for gambling around this ah...around the Fort Worth area. And Ernest knew where theand ah...this was just frontier day and we was just over there to make sure that everything was running all right. And ah...and I noticed on the Thursday of that week that ah... I was back in Longview ah...for a jury trial on a felony drunk driving case and then ah... I got to stay over here that week. See I was I was intending to ah...ah...my ah...instructions were to stay in Dallas for a month you know. But ah... I get down over here to come back to court or something, I'd get involved, because on Friday the Sheriff from Harrison County had writtenhad called and ah... ah...wanted me to help getinterrogate a guy on a swindle case and get some handwriting from him and things of that nature. So ah...this is kind of the way it ah... I

started. I ah...it was ah... I was supposed to have ah....stayed in Dallas but it just didn't work that way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I got off down here and I don't go back to Dallas anymore after the first ah...two weeks.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let'sbefore you move back to Longview now, let's ah....let me ask a couple of questions about this time here. You said you picked out like Jim Ray and what not, some of them for good reports.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you develop any ah...right off the bat....or ah...relatively quickly, any kind of heroes, guys that boys this is really the type Ranger I'd like to be?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you see ah.... I developed a hero because ah....if it hadn't of been for Jim Ray and Red Arnold and Lewis Rigler, I probably never would of been a Ranger. I...I.... I'm going to be honest with you. And Jim in particular. Jim gave me a lot of good advice. I...I.ah....see I ah...I'd been told andand hadn't....had not used any political pressure whatsoever and ah...and....ever, you know that's ah....to try to get anything in the DPS and ah...and get by merit you know. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Of course with your contacts with Sam Rayburn alone would of got you anything you wanted.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it could have at a federal level see probably, the only thing you hate.
.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think his power reached everywhere.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, cause you know we've gone through the fact there I had an appointment to West Point you know and ah....and ah....and I found a letter today from ah....I think I.....maybe I showed it to you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I've seen that letter.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, the war department....a copy of it that ah....that they had written.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But his power reached anywhere he wanted it to reach.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but ah...there was a guy that was trying to get on the Rangers and ah... from the East Texas area during the time that I was trying and he was a personal friend to the Speaker of the House of Representatives. And he was using all the....all of the ah...political clout that he could to try to get to be a Ranger. And I was having to compete with that, but I didn't know it see. And ah...and of course the guys that were already in Rangers they was listening, you know I don't get to attend the company meetings and I don't to hear what's said and I don't....and ah...I'm just our here a Highway patrolling and trying to be a Ranger you know. And ah...so Jim told me that ah...you know that youyou know try to get...you're going to have to get busy and ah...you're in trouble you know if.... cause that boys putting a lot of pressure on. So I....you know I just did the best I could but ah... but as far as my heroes are concerned, a question you asked, but Jim was my hero because I....see I worked with Jim in the '57 strike and he and I worked together, we were sent back up there together and I was instructed to report to him in Tyler and did, and he and I went to Daingerfield and followed through on some things and even after the thing was settled up there in '57. And of course I....I....I'd rubbed elbows with Red and now Rigler was stationed off up in Gainesville. But for some reason or other Rigler and I hit off real good when we first met. I didn't know Lewis and ah...ah...that well and ah....but for some reason he and I just hit it off I guess. Because I wasn't close to any other Ranger, even Burkes was a Ranger but he hadn't been a Ranger

long enough to you know, he was just getting his feet on the ground good and ah...I didn't call on G. W. any, other than you know, I knew that G. W. knew me and....and like we've discussed before, back in those times ah...they'd discuss at a company meeting, well who do you...you know, what about Glenn Elliott you know. Well if I got Jim standing up for me and I got Red standing up for me and I got Rigler standing up for me.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well where's Riddle?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well Jim is stationed in Breckenridge at that time, he's in the Lubbock company.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:as a Ranger. And of course if I'd of been trying to go to that company out there....see the captain's picked the people they wanted you know. And...and let's just face it, the Colonel didn't care if...he wanted the captain to have the man he wanted you know. Because the captain knows more about who he needs in his company than the Colonel does you know. And I'm sure that the Colonel would probably oh...you know a political pressure might have a little something to do with him down there, but ah...not a whole lot. He...he wanted the captain to get the man he wanted because he wanted....he knows if the captain's got the man he wanted and then if he don't pan out well you know, you asked for him you know and you fire him you know, whatever. But ah...ah...they were my heroes and I know they took up for me at the ah...at the ah...company meetings and ah....and when my name came up as a prospective Ranger. So yes, they ah....of course they were my heroes. But mainly I ah....I wasn't reading Jim's reports because he was my hero, I was reading Jim's reports because the captain and the sergeant told me that he made some of the better offense reports and case reports that were sent in. So I wanted to be a...I wanted to be a good

Ranger and I was reading them to learn, not because of my....any ah...respect I had for Jim, because they was recommended to me and I knew he was a good hand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now you talked about doing some gambling raids in Fort Worth.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we didn't do any raids, we....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, working them.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN:but this is just after the fallout from Jay Banks....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:and this same gambling where he had left the Rangers under a cloud supposedly because some of his....allegedly because of some of this gambling. Was there still fallout coming down about this, cause this happened.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't think so. I think this was a pretty common thing that ah...that was ah....always happened over at Fort Worth. I...I have an idea that ah....and I don't know this to be a fact, I have an idea that Jay Banks sent Rangers over there to look after gambling when he was there ah....to make you know....we just....and I feel like that Captain Crowder did the same thing. But I don't know that that happened. But I know that we were over there, Ernest Daniel and myself and we spent several days over there, and nights, during this time just....Ernest knew where the problem spots were. And then at that time....and I guess from....from the conversation I got that it was not unusual for...you know, for 'em to get a little bit...just wanting to have gambling just about everywhere during this frontier day you know. Just maybe have a...a dice game set up out at the carnival or something you know, whatever. And this is what we was out...up there for and we didn't have any problems. I think as I remember, there was two or three games that was going on up there that...games of chance that they was paying that ah...that Ernest recommended they shut

down. And of course I was just there was a silent partner you know and ah....watching and listening and if Ernest needed any help well I was...you know I was going to be available of course.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now you joined Company B in '61.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now there's just been a tremendous conflict between Bob Crowder and Jay Banks, is there any of this....is there Banks people in the....versus Crowder people in the company, is there still some of this fallout falling?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. I tell you what, this...the controversy that you're talking about, I think you're reading more out of Jay Banks' book than you are out of ah..ah...anywhere else because ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: True.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah...I didn't see any controversy as far as I was concerned. I knew Jay and I knew Captain Crowder and I really don't thinkI think from...from reading Jay's book, I think captain....Jay blamed Captain Crowder. But what had happened was, Captain Crowder was captain of Company B in 1957 ah....he had been stationed Lubbock and he liked Lubbock. He was a....he loved to play golf and ah...and they owned a home out at Lubbock that they never had sold. And he had moved to Dallas from Lubbock ah....I guess he was a Ranger sergeant Lubbock obviously, and I didn't go back that far to check into it, but I know to Dallas as captain. And he never did sell his house out at Lubbock because he was renting his house out there to some of the other Rangers that was ah....had to go to Lubbock. And ah....the department reorganized in 1957 and they asked Captain Crowder, or he asked I don't know which, to be Regional Commander. I have heard that the Colonel wanted him to be a Regional Commander out of Lubbock.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Garrison?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Colonel Garrison. And so...and of course that was a raise in pay and ah...and he could move back out to Lubbock and his home and by this time though he's bought a place there in Dallas. Ah...so I don't know the details behind all this but I do know that he voluntarily, either asked for or the Colonel asked him to take the Regional Commanders job in Lubbock and he did. Well you see when they first reorganized, the Rangers were directly under ah...the Regional Commander. The six Regional Commanders and...and was supposed to have been over all DPS employees, that didn't last long. And ah...but Captain Crowder went back...he went out to Lubbock and was Regional Commander. Well, whatever happened to Jay Banks and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah...Jay then becomes captain of Company B?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Jay becomes acting captain as according to this book I read, now I don't think he was ever ah...actually made captain from what I understand. I thought he was, I thought he...they called him captain and ah...but then he commanded the company but I...from his book it sounds like to me that he was an acting captain. But ah...anyway this went on for a couple of years I guess ah....'56, ah....'57, '58, yeah and I think Captain Crowder came back about two years later. So Jay....whatever Jay Banks got into that caused him his problems with ah...with Austin and his job well for some reason or other whether it was Captain Crowder wanted to come back to Dallas as captain or whether Colonel asked him to or whether it was some of both, he returned to Dallas as captain of Company B. And ah....this as I've told you earlier, knocked me out of getting a Ranger appointment because ah...they ah...they had a vacancy ah....Jay had a cousin named E. J. Wimberly, and I think I told you , he was the first Ranger stationed in Marshall as far as I could find out and he stayed over there awhile. And E. J. was a...oh I don't know what happened but he....ah....he moved to Fort Worth and he had a place up in Wise County not far out of Fort Worth there, pretty good ranch that he had inherited from his folks I think. And I don't know whether he moved back

up there to be closer to it or whether he moved back up there.... I don't know what reason he moved back for, but anyway he moved back to Fort Worth. Well when Jay quit he quit. And ah...so ah...that left a vacancy and Captain Crowder came down and heand that's when Frank Kemp made Ranger and was stationed in Paris. Frank was a License and Weight Sergeant out at Midland. And he and Captain Crowder became friends while captain was Regional Commander and Frank ah...they ah...they played golf together and they visited in their homes together and they were real good friends. And I liked....there was no way I could be upset because Frank got to be a Ranger but if Jay Banks would of stayed in Dallas I'd of got Frank's appointment, that's what it amounts to. But that didn't discourage me that much because I still wanted to be a Ranger and so I just kept on plugging you know and I got....and tried my best to get acquainted with Captain Crowder the best I could you know. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But there wasn't any comm....cause I know Rigler was definitely a Jay Banks fan.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well....Rigler and Jay got along good but ah... I think Rigler and Crowder got along better.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I think that's right, I think you'll find that's true. Icause Rigler worked under Crowder you know as a....before he went out there and ah....Rigler was a dependable hand you know, I mean Rigler was the kind of guy that ah....you know, he's loyal to whoever the boss is and ah....and you know if you're a working man you've just about got to do that you know. And ah....ah....I've always I never did have a Highway Patrol Captain or sergeant that I didn't do like he told me to and you know, as best I could. And ah....because I wanted to stay and ah....and I knew he was the boss whether it had been.....so I thinkand Rigler was that way. I.... I know

Rigler and Jay got along fine but I think you'll find that Rigler, and if you ask him he'll probably tell you he and Crowder got along better.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. So there wasn't any kind of Crowder man and Banks man and...and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: As far as I was concerned when I came on I know that I had heard through ah...ah...some of the other Rangers that Jay had suggested that the Rangers quit when he quit. But Wimberly is the only one that did. And ah.... I think Wimberly was kind of sliding on thin ice at that time himself probably, I don't know. But everybody else stayed in the company.... no it was ah....you know, they had to work you know and ah...and needed a job. And they fell right in behind Crowder just like ah....and some of 'em, like I said, most of 'em had worked for Crowder before he left you know. I think Red moved up here in 1956 and that was right before Crowder made Regional Commander, so Red worked for him awhile and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jim Ray did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Jim had worked for him awhile and ah...and of course Rigler had worked for him and Ernest Daniel and ah...Bob Badgett. Bob Badgett is the one I was trying to think of awhile ago. Bob made a good report, he made a real good report, very thorough. And ah....he wasn't as ah....oh I didn't ah.....Bob was pretty much of a loner and ah.... I tried to work with Badgett some while we was up there. And he discouraged it you know and ah.... I just mentioned the fact I'd like to go out with him one day....but ah....to him, I didn't say anything to captain about it. But ah...of course I was working with Ernest and ah....Charlie Moore was kind of.....he was working with the sergeant, Lester Robertson the sergeant, and ah....so we kind of....that's the way we was..... I don't know why he didn't call Charlie that night, he called me out, but I imagine it's because he knew I was in a....up there sitting in a motel room by myself and Charlie was home with his family, but

that's a good enough reason. So ah....but no ah.... never in my tenure time.....from the day I first started til I quit did any conversation come down in front of me that ah...you know, I'm a Jay Banks man or I'm a Crowder man or I'm a so and so. The Rangers just.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was the Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think they kind of pulled their self above that you know and whatever the situation is well let's work at it and if it changes well let's....let's keep on going you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. All righty....let's go back to cases.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....this may take a little while, II just I... I know....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Take your time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I know we haven't got time to go through all these ah....reports this way but tonight we probably will and II'll go back through some of the others. But I noticed when I start my third week that ah....that I was in.... I was over here in court in Longview and testified and ah....then I go to Marshall meet with the District Attorney over there and ah.... I go to Carthage and contact the Sheriff down there because I need to let these folks up here know that I'm available you know, that I'm working. And ah....then I get involved in a sucker rod theft ah.... which is oil field related and ah....and ah.... I work down onon the Wednesday of that week I'm down at Linden and ah....and working for a theft of some sucker rods for Pan American Oil Company and ah....and then ah...I'm back into Dallas on Thursday of that next week and ah.... I contact a special investigator up there named Fred Prestige, who was a former Sheriff over in Sherman and ah....seeking some assistance in recovering a truck load of sucker rods. And ah.... I find myself checking junk yards and things of this nature and ah....that week and this just kind of ah.....then on Saturday ah....ah.... I meet with the Sheriff and District Attorney and we ah...ah....they've got three subjects that need to be run on a polygraph the following week in Dallas and they ask for my

assistance. And that week I worked 65 hours and driving 849 miles. And now I'm getting up to about my 1,000 miles a week the next week and 76 hours and I go to Dallas and transport four colored subjects to Dallas for a polygraph test. And ah....we ah...and I work with the District Attorney and the Sheriff and ah....and then the following day, and this is Dallas and back you know, we do a whole lot of that, I'm...I'm leaving Longview going to Marshall and ah...and Fedway when it just opened up downtown Longview, it was down there where the Atrium is now, I know....you wasn't here when they had the Fedway store down there. Nice....it was a nice store. And ah....they had a shoplifting and I heard it on my radio and fell in behind some black people from....they was out of Dallas, right over here by Pete Jennings place and they threw some of the clothes out. I...they recognized me as an officer I guess and I stopped them and arrested them ah...for ah...ah...theft from Fedway and of course recovered the property and ah...and ah....filed the charges here in Gregg County, cause that's where the theft happened. And ah... and the next day ah...I'm in Dallas again ah...and we're ah...we're still pursuing the ah....the theft case there in Harrison County that we went up there the day before on. And ah....I'm back in Marshall the same day and ah... ah....working a ah....on assault to murder for the Longview PD and ah....I'm over in Hallsville interviewing some people and we arrested this guy and found out he was wanted in Big Spring. Ah....this is just kind of routine stuff, it's every day it's something else you know, unless you get....but see right then I was not all that involved in any particular case and

ROBERT NIEMAN: You're still doing a lot of Highway Patrol wrap ups there too, clearing the court.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, going to court, yeah and ah....conferring with the District Attorney in different cases. And ...but generally weour DWI cases we got pretty good you know ah...got 'em disposed of pretty fast. And they'dgenerally when you have a....a....a court docket you get a

lot pleas of guilty and maybe try one or two. I notice on Saturday of that week I'm up in Upshur County working with Sheriff ah...ah....Posey Seagull on a theft of some jewelry ah...ah...it's a shoplifting thing. And ah....and I carried some people up there and ah...and I....to be identified. And ah....I'll probably get down here in the next set to where we ah...now we're into November and ah....I'm up in Cass County working with Bill Doudt and get acquainted with him and still trying to clear these jewelry thieves that we had up....they'd been going around shoplifting jewelry out of jewelry stores and Cass County had had a problem similar to that and I carried some photographs up there and got one of them identified. Ah....attended a bank robbery conference that next week and we'd ah...was involved in a Highway Patrol Captain, Captain Crowder and during these times ah....ah....we were kind of scattered a little bit thin you know and ah... they....we had plans for bank robberies especially. There was a lot of bank robberies then and we'd set up road blocks you know. And ah....this was a coordinated effort between the Rangers and the Highway Patrol Captains andand ah....we knew where to go and ah....ah...you know in case of a bank robbery in our area we'd try to get out and as far away from the actual scene as we could and set up a road block and try to seal the area off and it was pretty effective. Ah...ah....and we did a whole lot of that during those times. And ah....ah...we did a lot when I was on the Highway Patrol. Ah...that same week ah....ah.... I got involved with Gregg County in some theft problems and ah.... I think we're about to get to the saddles here pretty soon.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, now what date again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: On the 11th and 18th of 1961 ah.... I was ah....well on the 17th let's see ah.... I was in the Gilmer area and I knew I was going to have to go on to Bonham and ah.... I left Gilmer

to Bonham and contacted the Sheriff up there regarding security measures to be taken in the Bonham area due to the President and Vice President and other dignitaries being in Bonham on the 11th and 18th of '61, to attend the funeral of Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn, so obviously he was buried on the 18th of November 1961.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll get into that in detail next week ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: So I'm in Bonham on the 18th, I spent the night there on the night of the 17th and ah....my report reads that ah....in Bonham as instructed by Captain Crowder assisting local officers with security problems at the Speaker of the House Sam Rayburn's funeral. Left Bonham to Marshall. So that week I worked.....only worked 69 hours and drive 947 miles.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn what....when you came up here, what were your counties?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....when I was first assigned I had Gregg, Panola, Harrison, Marion, Cass and half of Bowie County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, and how many Rangers were there in 1961 after you were

GLENN ELLIOTT: There were 61 in Texas. And we had ah....10 in our company I guess at that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....and of course we....you know we squared out pretty good there. And of course like this assignment up there at Bonham course that's all I said , that's all I write in this report about being in Bonham, you heard it right there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And then did you have a horse?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. I didn't have a.... I had access to a horse. They...they....they....that was a requirement. I was told that you don't have to own a horse but we'd like you to have access to one. Well I had a lot of friends round here in the horse business and ah....that had horses. Travis

Beavers was a Buick dealer here and Travis and I were real good friends and Jack Phillips over at Gladewater and Ralph Prince was a District Attorney and he....everybody had horses. David Moore would....and I'd known 'em all you know and I could get a horse any time I wanted to and a horse trailer. Now we had....we all had trailer hitches on our cars during those times. And ah....but ah...at one time I guess not to many years before that, they wanted the Rangers to have a horse you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, during Gonzauillas' time he required all the Rangers to have a horse and a horse trailer.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he of course resigned in '51, now then when he was captain he required all Rangers to carry two pistols, did....was this still carried over into your time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no. No, nothing was said aboutin fact we had to furnish our own fire arms when I went.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what did you carry?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...well the first ah....weapon I carried was a .357 Magnum and I'll tell you why, they ah....some of my friends here after I was accepted in the Ranger service well my friends got together and we had athey gave....we had a little party down at the lake, fish fry and ah....and ah.... I got several gifts and among those were a suit of clothes and a pair of boots and a hat and a gun belt and a .357 Magnum and ah....so ah....that's what I carried. Ah...and I had a .38 Super that I carried some.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that an automatic or a revolver?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's an automatic. And it....the .38 Super prior to the .357 Magnum was probably the hottestyou know the best weapon. It...it had a lot more ah....ah....velocity than a .45 but it was built just like a .45, same frame. I'll show a....I'll bring my pistol our here and show you

my .38 Super. Ah...it was a gift ah....back when I was on the Highway Patrol and ah....from a guy that gave it to me. And I carried it some ah....a lot as far as....when I was in dress you know, wore a suit to court and things of this nature. Ah....and ah....but most of the time for the first year or two I carried this .357 and then I got....later on got to carrying a .45. And ah....but....and then they issued a .357 finally after a few years they issued us a .357 and I bought my issue gun when I retired, they had some otherwe could.....we could buy ourone of our weapons if we wanted to for whatever the going price was. But ah....that was the first weapon and no...nothing was ever said about carrying two pistols. In fact nobody in Company B carried two pistols that was visible. And ah.... I I think I showed you, I've got one picture of ah....me with two pistols on and it was made during the Lone Star Steel strike, but that was for show only and G. W. brought 'em down there, Burkes he was stationed in Fort Worth and he had an old pair of thumb busters he'd picked up somewhere and he and I were.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Thumb busters are single action

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. He and I were about the same size in the waist so I I I get his gun belt and put it on and the sergeant takes my picture. And I.... I said, 'Well I look like I'm a Ranger, I'll have my picture made with two guns on'. So that's how that come about. But ah....no we didn't ah....nothing..... I tell you what, I never had any instructions on how to dress ah.... I tried to dress like the rest of the Rangers in Company B. That's what it when I went into Dallas I'd wear a business suit, that's what Captain Crowder wore ah.... I wore a gun belt a whole lot because all the....all the field Rangers wore a gun belt and most of 'em in the Dallas area did. Captain Crowder a lot of times wouldn't, but ah....everybody else pretty well wore gun belts and ah....so I tried to confirm conform with ah....ah....whatever the Company did because I wanted to be a member of it, I wanted to be accepted you know. So ah...and ah....so when....like I say, when

we were in town we'd wear business suits and we was out in the field we'd wear khaki's or whatever we wanted to wear you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Appropriate for the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But I wore Khaki's a whole lot and ah....and see I had a lot of these ah....in the winter time I had a lot of these old Highway Patrol trousers that was solid wool and all you had to do was take the stripe off the side of 'em. And man they made good western clothes, they was good looking and good wearing. And I had another friend here that had bought me ah....ah.....a suit out of that same material, a short jacket. I used to wear a short jacket a lot, it looked good ah....ah....Gonzaullas wore a short jacket .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kind of like an Eisenhower jacket?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. And ah....a short jacket looks good with a gun belt, looks real good. And ah...and this guy had ah....ah....oh this prominent manufacturer and I'm trying to think of the name of it....anyway....clothing manufacturer, they made some real good clothes andand Durwood Bell is who it was ah...used to own Bell Transport here. I'd ah.... I had worked a case for Durwood and ah....theft of tools, and gone up....got up to Fort Worth and recovered some of this....a bunch of tools that was taken out of his warehouse and ah...and got some of them back and ah....and anyway well Durwood wanted to do something for me and you know, eventually I got a call from a man's store here and you know you got you a suit paid for down here. So I ordered one of those short jackets and....and...and it was the same color of the pants that we wore as a Highway Patrol. It was kind of a pink and ah....solid wool and man I got a lot of miles out of that jacket and wore out a lot of trousers with it you know. And it was a good looking jacket, in fact I've got a picture....we're going to get into a safe burglary or two here pretty soon after this and I've got a picture somewhere that I saw here awhile back of ah....there's a safe we recovered up in

Wood that was out of the M. E. Moseley's store out here on Mobberly Avenue and ah.... I had that jacket on and those trousers. And they looked good, they looked good, I thought.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's....let's go on to some more.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Kind of looked cowboy. And ah....well let's see what I did here after Sam....after we buried Sam and I'd like to get in to that a little bit more in the next set or two.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll get into that real heavy next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Cause ah....that was pretty interesting.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me justdon't let me forget to ask next week. Did your dad attend the funeral?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. My dad ah...in fact my dad and mother picked ah....ah....my daughter and ah....and son up and brought them up there. And.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll get into that next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. And my dadof course he wanted to be there....in fact I even got them a place.... I saved them a place round there by the back door, where they could stand and my kids got to see all these same people come in as I did. Well for some reason or other I worked on Sunday after I get back from Sam Rayburn's and which is not un....ah....oh yeah, Johnson's Cafe was burglarized over here and I guess I'm fixing to get into an old boy named James Hugh Leggett that ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that last name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....L E G G E T T....ah....he's in....he's in Clint's book.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, and where was Johnson's Cafe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Johnson's Cafe was sitting right over here on Highway 80, you'll remember where it's at, right over here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah, oh yeah, up here at 80 and Eastman Road.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Harry Johnson, yeah, uh huh. Right ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: 80 and Eastman Road here.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they had a safe in there and ah...ah...and anyway it must have been burglarized on a Saturday night because I'm here on Sunday morning, at 7:00 a.m. I get a call and Johnson's Cafe had a safe burglary. And ah....I don't know, the next day ah....ah....well we went...I was over at Tyler and we thought we had a suspect over there and ah....ah....it didn't work out and ah....I go on to Dallas and spend the night ah....and then I'm in Dallas on Tuesday and ah...I go to Austin and I take some evidence down there and ah...and I'm working with Jim Riddle then again and Bill Wilson. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what's Bill Wilson's purpose?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bill's a....Bill was a Ranger stationed in Austin. Bill went on the Rangers the same time I did and he was stationed there in Austin. And I was....and we had a lead on ah....on who burglarized this place and they had some relatives there in Austin. And ah...really James Hugh Leggett hadn't been worked up to that point to (unintelligible)..anything, I think he'd been arrested down there in Austin. And ah...we....I worked him before any of those people did, Clint and them and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Clint Peoples?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and if you read Clint's and ah...and ah...he's...he's ah...Leggett cleared up a....just...just bunches and bunches and bunches of safe burglaries in Texas ah...when he was caught. And ah... actually I arrested...we did on our case down here, we ah...we made a...what they did, they stayed at ah....over at the Dunn Roman Motel, which is right across the street, and it snowed. I remember very vividly it was snow on the ground that night of ah...of ah...of November

19, 1961, you could go look at the Longview paper and you'll find out it snowed here that day because there was snow on the ground. And ah...what they did, they checked in Dunn Roman Motel and asked for a room on the back and ah...the back area you could pull in and park a car underneath and the rooms were upstairs. And we had interviewed ah...ah...there was....they cut a limb off a pine tree, broke one off, probably was already sagging down and drug it to cover their tracks up in the snow going from Dunn Roman over to Johnson's to burglarize the safe and back. So they kind of left a trail you know, it wasn't to hard to....you know you've heard stories about a guy could....couldn't trace...track an elephant with his throat cut in the snow dragging a cross tie. Well I wasn't quite that dumb an investigator. Anyway we...we....we followed these tracks over there to the....where they drug this...in the snow. Of course if it had kept snowing it would...it would have been good you know, but it stopped. And ah...anyway we interviewed this black porter that ah...checked 'em into the motel and ah...he was talk....he told us several things about....they was driving a Lincoln automobile. So this was '61, I think it was about a '58 or '59 Lincoln. And ah...they had all over the....just like ah...where the trunk key goes in there's a big chrome over that you know and this guy had his key ah....he left the key in the trunk all the time and it was ah...he had it sawed off or ground off where it just looked like it was part of this fixture there. And ah...this porter said that he checked 'em in and he reached in there to get that ah...suitcase out of the back and he said it was so heavy you couldn't hardly pick it up. Of course that's what they had their burglary tools in. And ah...so ah...he didn't get the license number of the car...he ah...I think they wrote it down, they put part of it on there but ah...anyway ah....we developed these people as suspects through that and ah...I'd have to look at my case report but ah...I know that we ah....I find myself down there at Austin and ah...on ah...and ah...he had been arrested down there. We...we identified Leggett and ah...ah...and then of course I carried some evidence down there out of this

safe and some ah...and some fibers and of course always get some of the fire clay you know cause after the....and hopefully iden....hopefully get some out of the (unintelligible)...or somewhere down the line you know, to make a comparison with. And ah...I return to ah...Longview from Austin on Thursday and ah....ah....and we find out a place where he committed a crime over in Harrison County too and ah...ah...I went out on Friday, contacted a Ranger in Sweetwater and ah...and gave him a description of Leggett and told him we had a warrant for him and ah...and I drove on out there and met ah...let's see...no I wired it to him. I wired him the warrant for him. And on Saturday ah...let's see...wait a minute, I must have gone out thereno ah...Graves, I met Graves in Dallas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Graves?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...he was the Ranger from Sweetwater, Gene Graves. He arrested Leggett for us and I met him in Dallas that afternoon on Friday and brought Leggett back to down here. Got home at 2:00 that morning. Saturday I'm back in Longview and I questioned Leggett and ah...we locate his Lincoln by that time and ah...out in Abilene and ah...and we obtain a hand writing specimen from him, because he'd filled out the motel card and things of this nature. I'd worked 95 hours that week and drove 1,335 miles and the next week I work 71 hours and drive 1,303 miles and I'm still working with ah... Leggett. And ah...we make a trip to Abilene and ah...and retrieve this Lincoln and ah....during this time. And ah....we ah...arrest a couple of ah...ah...of his associates. Ah...like on Thursday, November 30th I left Marshall and drove to Abilene, I arrested two guys and came back to Dallas and spent the night and we ah...we got a search warrant and obtained that....ah...seized that Lincoln for implement use in a burglary and brought it back so...and parked it on a used car lot here and had the porter go up there and identify it. He picked it off...and we carried it to the Lincoln/Mercury place down there and parked it on the car lot with some other vehicles and he picked it out as the vehicle that was used in the burglary. Ah...that...you know,

that's real inter...it...it's just....that's makes it....and I'm just getting started you know, I'm just trying to learn how to be a investigator. But I sure did learn....I got...I got my feet wet in a hurry you know, cause here I am working a...you know...nine....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's go ahead...let's jump ahead here and give us...take us all the way through the Leggett....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN:to it's conclusion.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right what happened was, James Hugh Leggett had a...had an attorney out there in ah...in Abilene that's ah...on a retainer all the time I guess cause he's....he was a good fast burglar. And ah... of course his attorney was following him trying to get him out of jail and was getting him out. You know make...bonding him out, he...he never did cop out to anything, we had to make our case on him. But before we ah...ah...I think I made three trips to Abilene in one week out there and ah...I know I made two. And ah...I hauled old Leggett around right smart and ah...we put him in...you know, in Dallas and then brought him on down here and ah...but he eventually made bond in a day or two. And ah...so ah...he got caught when Clint got involved in this thing ah...a few months later, which I'd have to go through my reports to see how many months, but it wasn't too long, til they caught him in the act of a burglary in Austin. And he was just about ready...he was just at the end of this row. He thought he was a...he thought he was going...dying of cancer, I think he just had a stomach full of ulcers from being a burglar you know and running all over the country and not eating proper and being nervous and...and you know. But he thought he was fixing to die of cancer and he got caught down at Austin well he ah....Jim Riddle and ah...Bill Wilson...see I'd already been down there checking on him and they got interested in him and I think Austin police or whoever caught him in this act of burglary and called the Rangers and

Leggett told them he wanted to talk to the Rangers. And he cleared up all of his burglaries in the state. And this is what you see in Clint's book that ah...and they did, they did a good and ah...and of course he...he called...he told me he wanted to talk to me. And ah...so ah...Jim or Bill Wilson one called me and I'd went down to Austin and he told me about...about doing this burglary here and where he...he'd thrown the gun in the lake over between Tyler and Athens. We never did retrieve it, it was an old thumb buster. And that's about the only thing the family really wanted out of the safe, you know, he got some money, some cash of course. And see in these days people ah...ah...left a lot of money in their safes, this was before night deposit and all. But anyway Leggett ah...ah...took some time, I don't know how many, twenty years or something in the pen and he cleared up a bunch of burglars. I brought him back over here later and went down to Austin and picked him up and he...he showed a bunch of places he burglarized throughout East Texas here. He was a real fast burglar, good safe burglar.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he dangerous?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. No ah...no he wasn't, he was not dangerous at all. He was ah...I don't think he was and in fact I've been in contact with...he's called me since he's got out of the penitentiary and the last contact I had with him he was living in Wood County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...he was here oh, before I quit ten years ago. And he said he quit and ah...and we establishedI think I had contact with him a couple of times. He had a little problem up there but it wasn't for stealing. He told me he said, 'You know Mr. Elliott I'm not going to steal anymore you know, and I done got...that's behind me'. But I was ah...I appreciated him calling...you know cause I worked him pretty hard and he never had admitted this safe burglary, he wouldn't admit it, he wouldn't tell you nothing you know, I want to see my lawyer, that's all he

want...all he'd tell you. And...but we'd made a pretty good case against him you know. We'd...we'd ah...had identified his vehicle and ah...we'd made him on handwriting and of course you can't convict on handwriting alone. But it's ...you know... and...and...we'd done the best we could what...you know...no more training than I had had and ah...and I was working with a deputy here that didn't have much more experience than I did at the time. But ah...and I found out early that ah...the harder you work the luckier you get you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, profile some....obviously a killer is dangerous, obviously an armed robber is dangerous. Were burglars on the whole.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well now a burglar will hurt you, a lot of burglars carry weapons.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay Glenn, we were talking about whether...profiling different type criminals like a burglar, are they normally dangerous or

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'd say the average burglar is not dangerous. But I've talked to...you got to realize now, I've worked a lot of damn burglaries in my time. And I've had a lot of 'em tell me and probably Leggett, I can't ah...I'm not sure about him, but I know he took this pistol out of this safe over here and I know he threw it away because he...he...there was no reason for him to tell us he threw it...you know most of the time if a burglars going to tell you anything at all you know, he's going to tell you everything. And he was doing this at the time and they'll tell you that, yeah...you know, I had a pistol but you know I'll shoot up in the air and try to get an officer to go...run for cover so I can get away you know, but I'm not going to shoot at anybody. But see back...even in my day we had some hon...what we called honorable thieves you know and there's not many of them now I don't think. In those days you could pretty well tell by looking at a safe who did it you know. And ah...ah...because they'd leave their trademark. And you knew the thieves and you knew that ah...and I didn't have any problems at all about going after 'em you know, but I

didn't expect any problems out of them. Because they...your old thieves back in those days were...they didn't want officers after 'em you know. I mean they...they expected 'em to arrest 'em for a crime, but they didn't...they didn't want to be guilty of shooting at an officer or killing an officer, because they knew that probably that was going to mean the ends of things for them. They could go in and serve their time in the pen and get out you know. So I'm not...I'm not saying that burglars didn't carry guns, and a lot of them did, but I've had more than one tell me that, that's why they did do carry one, they'd say, 'Well you know if the police come down on us well I might shoot a few times and they're going to run and get behind something and give me a chance to get away and I'm gone you know'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well where would car thieves fit into the scheme of...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well...of course I...my partner and I, when I was on the Highway Patrol, probably recovered about as many stolen cars as anybody in Texas, unless it was some folks out of...we had a couple of men out of Van Horn that beat us every year. Ah...cause they had two cross roads out there you know and people coming out of Houston and people coming out of ah...Louisiana and Mississippi and Florida. But we caught a lot of...and I...I don't remember...I don't remember ever catching a car thief with a gun you know. Unless somebody was stealing a car to rob a bank or something you know. Which was not unusual. But your average car thief is stealing a car for transportation you know, in those days, that's what they'd steal 'em for.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think...you know, obviously a bank robber you'd consider dangerous.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, sure.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...what about like a...a...bunco artist? Ah...you know a guy running a con on somebody.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, no those guys wouldn't...most of them don't even know how to shoot a gun you know, they...they're...they want to wear some fancy clothes and fancy jewelry and you know and ah... yeah you could generally ah...there's some old bad characters you know. You and me was talking about the Bonnie and Clyde type people you know and we still had some of them. But they were identified, we knew who they were you know. Back in those days, even in my early days, it was...it was highly unusual for black people to commit armed robberies. You know they just started doing this in...in...after I got...you know we didn't have a whole lot of black people committing armed robberies. And they knew a lot...they...thief was a very popular thing for 'em but not to many of them would commit burglaries, at night especially you know. I don't know why but ah... ah... of course I nev... I guess that ah...I just never have been the kind of guy that gets excited about ah...somebody carrying a gun or if I'm looking for it...but I just...I never did let it bother me ah... and I guess I should have probably cause ah...but I didn't. But it was ah...a lot of these people would carry guns, course you know and like I say, thinking they was going to get away you know. Just reach and get a gun and shoot it once or twice and...and if the officer starts running for cover, well I'm gone you know. But ah...they was ah...the days of shooting officers I think that ended way back there you know. I think a lot of people...a lot of old thieves had probably died because they reached to get a gun maybe get an officer thinking he'd jump and go hide or something you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he didn't.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and he didn't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn, why don't we start next week with a....

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that's good.

ROBERT NIEMAN:with Sam Rayburn's funeral.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we'll get that ah...what we'll do is get that ah...ah....now look it there, that's just a.... you know I'm glad I kept these reports because ah...you know a lot of folks don't believe when you say ...and you know we'll get into the next week, look it there, there's 15...there's 1,385 miles and a 79 hour. I've not worked a week less...you know I'm averaging over 70 hours a week, you know, every week I'm talking about. Now I mean you just...you look...you just...well there's one that's 66, but that's December see. That's...that's....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You're slacken off that week.

GLENN ELLIOTT:that's Christmas...that's Christmas week, December 23rd.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Slacken off that week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And then look here the next week during Christmas I didn't work but 58 hours but I drove 856 miles. And ah...this is ah...this is...this will be a safe...my first safe burglary here. Ah...we'll get into that ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we're still recording here, let me...with all these hours, how was your family responding to this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, of course my family was used to me working all the time. I...you know I had to work all the time. When I was...when I...when we first got married ah...I worked all the time, I'd go out and milk cows, my mother...help my mother and daddy milk 12 to 14 head of cows in morning and I'd go work all day and come back and milk those cows that night and the same way after I got out of the service. So ah...ah....I worked all my life and ah...that's....you know my family knew that was...I had to you know. Two hundred and thirty dollars a month, what the heck you talking about man.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, March 27, 1995, it's the continuation of a series on the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn we're going to talk tonight about...to start with ah...your duties on the work

of...on the funeral of Sam Rayburn. But before we start on that, you were a pallbearer I believe for a legendary Texas Ranger named Tom Hickman, Captain Tom Hickman. Ah...that was in 1962?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right. I was looking through my reports ah...over the weekend in trying to make preparations for this and I for some reason or other I must have laid that....anyway on January 30, 1962 well I was in Gainesville, Texas and of course how we did those things then, we showed our meeting as having conferences because you don't ah...go in a State automobile to a funeral and you know and it looks better on...you know anyway. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who were some of the other Rangers there, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh let's see ah...here it is right here, Tuesday, January 30, 1962 started work at 7:00 a.m., quit work at 2:00 a.m., left Marshall 7:00 a.m. to Gainesville, 11:30 I'm in Gainesville receiving instructions for department policy and procedure from Colonel Garrison, Colonel Fletcher, Captain Crowder. I left ah...Gainesville back to Marshall. This is how we showed...so this is the reason I know that that's what we was doing in Gainesville that day, it had to be.

ROBERT NIEMAN: With that many Colonel's and all there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right, right. Everybody there but ah...and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you served as a pallbearer.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Served as a pallbearer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm sure Lewis Rigler did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Rigler did and ah...and ah...ah...Jim Ray and Red Arnold and a couple more of Company B members were pallbearers. And we just went up there and back the same day and buried him. We went by his house, Hickman had a...he had a house, an old ah...old type, log type, western type home. And he had a lot of his old saddles and stuff in there, it was...boy it

was...somebody, I don't know what happened to all his stuff but ah...it was something else I guarantee you, it was some kind of place.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Speaking of Tom Hickman, former Ranger at Kilgore we talk about a lot in the past is Bob Goss.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was a man unto himself, a story unto his own, but ah...a friend of ours, Wes Whatley, who knew Goss probably as well as anybody ever knew Wes...ah Bob Goss, said there was only two Rangers that ah...Goss respected and one that he was almost in awe of. The two he respected was ahah...not surprising Frank Hamer, the killer of Bonnie and Clyde.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The other one may surprise you a little bit was ah...Hardy Pervis.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah...Pervis was a hard working Ranger.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we're talking Hardie, Sr.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...I'm talking about Hardie, Sr. ah...ah...he was ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean, just for the record, we're talking about Hardie, Sr.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....and I think Goss would...I think Bob Goss would admire anybody that worked, cause he didn't have a lazy bone in his body. I'm going to tell you something, Bob Goss was not lazy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the one that he was almost in awe of was Tom Hickman. But...okay, let's go on to ah...ah... Sam Rayburn. Ah...but before we get into him, there's one question, I want to go back to Jay Banks, there's one question that I failed to ask that I should of asked when we was talking about Jay Banks earlier. Did he ever talk to you about the statue that was graced along Love Field for so many years, I don't even know where it's at now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it's ah...it's back in Love Field again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It is?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Jay ...I've heard Jay talking about that but he ah...ah...I don't remember just exactly ah...but it was copied from him, that was obvious. Everybody knew that you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he had to be proud of that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh and we all were you know ah...we all were. We were proud of it you know and I think all of the Department of Public Safety was. And I'll tell you what, Jay Banks looked as much like a Texas Ranger's supposed to look than nearly anybody you'll ever see that ah...that ah....was a Ranger, because he sure as heck...youyou know, if you're going around picking out Texas Rangers, well you liable to pick Jay Banks out you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Unlike Rigler and Max Womack.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah that's right. See Rigler you know I...you...I think I told you and this is funny, old Rigler I've....he showed up there at GainesvilleI mean at Sherman one time, met me up there one time and ah....and it was aold Lewis had on a short sleeved polo shirt and ah...and didn't even have a hat on. And I said something to him about it, it offended him. Of course Lewis was quick to temper. And ah....and I just said, 'Hell I thought you was a Ranger you know'. And why he said, 'I...you teach me how to dress like one, I'll teach you how to act like one'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay let's ah....Sam Rayburn, on November 18, 1962.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's what I was looking for, right here it is.

ROBERT NIEMAN:ya'll buried Sam Rayburn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's right, Bonham, Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...let's ah...tell us in your own words just what happened and some of the difficulties and ah...so forth and so on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I was ah... I see here by my reports that I was sent up there on Friday the 17th and ah....and I conferred with the Secret Service and the local officials there in Fannin County. And ah....this is ah...ah...what we do is ahand this is not unusual, it's a common thing you know, it...when you got dignitaries, federal dignitaries coming in an area well of course the Secret Service it's their responsibility. And....but of course the local folks have got a lot of pressure on them too, because they don't want anything happen, they want everything to go off real good. So we met with the Secret Service and of course theyeven then they was stillthey ah...they got better with their identification, but they had ah....identification tags for folks to wear for different areas you know and ah....and we met with them and found out what the itinerary was and how they was coming in. The President landed I think in Dallas and the Vice President landed at Pearing Field in Sherman, Pearing Air Force base. And ah...one of them ah....landed in a football stadium, Bonham football stadium and the other one landed out at City Park or somewhere I believe.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think they landed at the golf course. I think that was....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Golf course okay, well yeah that's right cause.....

ROBERT NIEMAN:that was the Vice President I think landed, I'm not

GLENN ELLIOTT:right, okay. One of....one of them landed in one part of town and one in another and ah...and of course that's the way they'd operate you know. And ah...and they allwe....the Rangers of Company B was assigned tothe ones that were there, and I don't even

remember how many of us were there, but ah...I know that ah...the Colonel was there, Colonel Garrison was there. And ah...the Chairman of the DPS Commission was there because ah....see I'm a rookie Ranger here....here it is what November of '62 and I was...I...I went on the Rangers in September of '61 and ah....and I'm still wet behind the ears. And ah....but we were assigned this ah...the north back door to the Church there in Bonham where the funeral was at. And ah....this is where all the dignitaries came in and out, that's....and their the only people that could come in and out of that door.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what are we calling dignitaries?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...we're talking about the President, Vice President and the Cabinet and....and ah...the whole works.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about his family?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh the family ah...I tell you, Mr. Rayburn didn't have much family, he out lived most of his family. I think he had a brother and a sister. See he...he was never married. Well he was married and it was annulled, they were married about a week and it was annulled. Ah....ah...the family was ah...ah...out shadowed you know, so much bynobody I don't think was even paying any attention to the family you know. And in fact I don't think there was much family . Of course itSam Rayburn's family was everybody that lived in his district you know. And especially his district and mainly Texas you know. And then of course he was just about as (unintelligible) ...about the United States as I guess as he was Texas after he been up there so long . But ah...but we provided security on this north door. And I think I told you before it ah...that Harry Truman drove up there in a car and got....Harry Truman wouldn't fly and he didn't want the Secret Service ah....protection either after he was out of office. And he rode a train to Dennison, Texas and got one of his old friends to bring him down there and he drove up there in a '55 Buick

Roadmaster, I...I remember it just as clear and parked downjust ...the street just a little way from the door and come walking by himself, his friend stayed in the car.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What color was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you know what, I don't think it was black. I.I...and I've thought about that, I think it was a green color, which was kind of unusual, still...you know, '55 they started getting some color. But it seemed like to me it was ait was a greenish color car. Ah...but before the funeral was over, I was assigned to go then down to the cemetery and...and make sure that...that didn't anybody get in a certain area at the cemetery and...and...to assist officers down there. And there was some officers there and there was an area directly behind the grave site there ah...and they had the tent set up around it. But there was an area cleared out and roped off in there for ah...these same people that went in through the back door to stand you know. And ah...of course they had TV cameras set up down there too just like they did at the Church you know. And ah...so I left before the funeral was over. And there was another thing that I remember very, very vividly, there was a....as I left to go get in my car, I went down there by myself, and ah....and I...of course we'd already knew exactly where to go to the cemetery and we knew...we knew the whole...I..that's what I was sent up there the day before to find out exactly what was going to happen you know. And...and ah...but there was a dove, a white dove, setting up on top of that Church. And this is November and it was...it was pretty fallish, but it was a beautiful day as I remember it and of course nearly everybody in Bonham wanted to be there. They had...the streets were lined with people. Sam Rayburn did a lot for Texas you know and he did a lot for Bonham, Fannin County. And there's all kind of lakes built down there, up and down the Red River and two Air Force training places there in Fannin County, one in Bonham and one out north of...further up north of Bonham. And ah....Sam Rayburn did a lot for his area.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mr. Sam.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Mr. Sam. And I was...I went on down to the cemetery and ah...ah...and stood there and I remember...of course I...I had never met Mr. McLaughlin and he was the...he was the guy that was the Chairman of the Commission when Jay Banks got in his little problems, whatever they were. And ah...he and the Colonel left early too, left the Church early and whoever was with the Colonel, I don't remember, I guess the Assistant Director with probably with him too, it would have been Joe Fletcher. And ah...ah...they...they drove up down there and I recognized the Colonel of course and Colonel Fletcher and ah...so I motion for them to come on up there and of course...and they brought ...they had the Commissioner with them too. And so ah...of course I knew I was going to take care my boss you know and...so of course they stood there with the rest of these people that....from...that had come in from the Capital, and Washington and some of the VP's and the former President's and past Presidents. So ah...and then we got...we stayed there on hand until ah...they got airborne and ahgot out of there and then I returned to my station that night.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....what was your...you said the traffic was heavy, but did you get to... from your station while you were still there, did you get to hear any of the funeral services?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I didn't. I didn't get to hear any of it. I stayed outside, there wasn't room see....from...right inside the door was the front seat to the Church and the front seat was to my right, like I'm looking in the back door and the...and the ah...podium was to the left and...and...and Mr. Rayburn's casket and there was probably ah...oh 8 foot area to walk in between 'em, that was it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: The Church was full see, I mean the Church was....they had a speaker outside, yes they did, they had a speaker outside and I did get to hear some of it, but I don't remember a cotton pickin' thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had...you had a unique...as far as the ah...officials, law enforcement, you, the Secret Service and FBI, whoever else may have been there, but you had...of all of these people, you had a unique relationship.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'd known Mr. Rayburn, yeah ever since I was a kid you know, he'd ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: We've discussed it other...earlier times.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah...I'd been to his house with my dad when I was very small back in the '30's. My...see my dad and my uncle went to school with Rayburn and one of my aunts walked....they...they came out from Flag Springs, Texas in the wagon and....and ah...and caught a bus there in Windham to Commerce, Texas where they went to college. One of aunts went to school, graduated from high school with Mr. Rayburn and went to college with him over to Commerce, East Texas State. And we had the Rayburn's and they were raised right down there in the same area where I was born and where my daddy was born.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You was born right across the street from where he was born.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And ah...so we'd had a good relations with the Rayburn, it's kind of just...just family folks you know. And he'd come home and he'd call my dad and ah...and he'd offered my daddy some pretty good things I mean ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we've covered some of those.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The houses and...but did you...do you remember, did you have any special thoughts at the funeral.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, I did I guess ah...I had to you know. But I'll tell you another thing, we were ah.. we was concerned that something might happen and you know under conditions like that, you get a Church full of people like we had there in Bonham, Texas and you

don't want anything happening to them and you're pretty alert about what's going on outside you know. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's see, you had President Truman there, President Eisenhower, President Kennedy, Vice-President Johnson, and I saw a picture in a newspaper in one of your scrapbooks, it looks like the Secretary of Defense McNamara was there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...Nixon was there if I'm not mistaken.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Richard Nixon.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And of course ah...ah...there were...I believe there were five present or past Presidents there if I'm not mistaken.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that would be...you'd take Truman, Eisenhower, Johnson, Kennedy and Nixon, that would be five.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's right. It's ah....it's in those...some of those stories that written in the paper. And in this ah...in this scrapbook there, there's a...a DPS Chaparrel that's got some pictures in it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...you know, I wish that I'd of....

ROBERT NIEMAN: There's a real good article in one of the Chaparral's on the funeral I read.

GLENN ELLIOTT:I wish that I had of....you know at that time I didn't have any idea, I was just trying to be a Ranger you know, and I could of got pictures, I could of got hard copies of pictures up there just as easy and in fact my family was there. My dad was at the funeral and he brought my wife and two kids were there. And in fact I let them...after we got everybody in we let people line each side of the sidewalk back there, coming into the Church, you just had to keep the walkway...it was a real...it was probably a six or eight foot walkway out there and that's where they

always brought all the caskets in and out of that door, that's what their designed for I guess, and anyway my kids were there and they got....they got...and this...I got...I got to thinking that I know that they had it on a speaker outside.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They didn't get inside the Church?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No the Church...see that...it was a pretty good sized Church...well you and I went by there you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But it's ah...the same...that building hasn't changed a bit since the funeral.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...is it at this time you met of course Eisenhower and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well now I didn't...I had...I met Eisenhower before that, I met Eisenhower when I was a Highway Patrolman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and ah...I didn't get shake hands with every President up there at that...most of my hand shaking with the Presidents was either before or after that. Now I did greet Mr. Truman and it seemed like Johnson made it a point to ah...shake hands with...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Truman didn't touch you or anything...I'm just being funny.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No....ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know, Truman's reputation.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah...he was a small man you know and ah....I know Johnson came by and shook our hands. I don't think Kennedy did at that ah....but I had...I had shook hands with ah..ah..Eisenhower prior to that when I was on the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's the circumstances around that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he came to the Gregg County Airport ah...ah...Earl Hollingsworth in the oil business here ah...got him down here one time after...before he elected President and after. Ah...and ah...then of course I was saw ah...I saw Eisenhower, of course it was back before the handshaking, while I was in the service. He came to ah...you know I was in the occupation of Japan and I was Military Police and ah...he visited Japan see ah...right after we occupied it. Because ah...I think ah...oh, if I remember history correct ah...ah...McArthur was already having a few problems ah...some way with Washington, I don't...you know and he was kind of like Patton, he didn't care whether he had problems or not I think. And ah...they...Eisenhower came over there and was in our area, came to Kobi, Japan and ah...and of course we were charge of security, the Military Police outfit, and I... I got to spend some time with him then, but just...I was just around pretty close you know. And I'm sure I snapped a salute or two when I first saw him and when he left you know. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you see McArthur also?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes, oh yeah, I..I'd been around McArthur see ah...when...when we first ah...when we came back from Baggio into...we went out...we was out there close to Clark Field and ah...that's where ah...his headquarters were out there at that time. And I...I'd...yeah I'd been around close enough to see him you know and of course several times. But ah...he was ah...he was a very important person you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And not so for Eisenhower. Eisenhower was a...you'd think he...you know he'd act more like an enlisted man than he did a General. But ah...of course McArthur was not that way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But, let's go back to the funeral and then I do want to come ahead on the Presidents again, but let's go back to the funeral. Now the article I read in there said that ah...ya'll knew a few days before Rayburn died that his death was eminent.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...did that get down to you...to your level?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. We...we were instructed at some meeting, I can probably...back before this maybe at Hickman's funeral or ah...which was just...it seemed like...well it was in January wasn't it, this was in November, sometime or other at a company meeting or something, we'd already been instructed that ah...that you know, Mr. Rayburn was going to die, everybody knew that. And ah...and that there was going to be...they was going to bury him in Bonham, that was his wishes and ah...and that we'd be called on to ah...to assist you know, security....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, when did you start getting involved with the Secret Service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Just the day before, yeah. Now they had been down there, I think the captain had been over there with them, they'd been there a couple of times surveying the scene. And of course we used a lot of department people now. The Highway Patrol ah...probably played a bigger role in it than we did truthfully, because they...they had more people and of course...and...and they was on the escort on the road and we just had...I'm sure there's a Ranger at each of the locations where they landed in the helicopters. I don't think there would have been on at Pearing Field or at Love Field where they landed but ah...we had Rangers at each one of the places where they landed a helicopter there in Bonham. And ah...and probably with each one of the Secret Service agents that were on the road you know. Of course they had their own vehicles you know and all this. But ah...yeah we...ah...but I noticed in my report the first time I went up there the day before, went to Bonham to day before, and spent the day up there with the Secret Service and the Sheriff and the

Police Chief and ah...and we'd have meetings and we'd...they'd line out what each person was going to do you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you mentioned there that there was probably more Highway Patrolmen there than there was Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Rangers probably got more write up, did this cause any kind of conflict?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no...had a...well they got a pretty good coverage, the Highway Patrol did. I'm...I thinkI think Leo Gossett was probably captain of the High....of the Highway Patrol in Dallas maybe at that time, or lieutenant one and he later became Director. But ah...oh we worked together, the Highway Patrol and...you know...cause we was...all the Rangers was ex-Highway Patrolmen, so you know, there's not much reason for us to have... worry about anything. Cause we was all...every....every ... every Texas Ranger up there in the Company at that time was a former Highway Patrolman.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Getting back to the ah...ah...Secret Service, did they, you know, did they say, this is what you're going to do or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN:well, who was in charge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: They were, they were and they should of been, justifiably so. A Ranger don't like to say somebody else is in charge I don't guess but ah...they were and we recognized that and we were there to help them. Of course if a Sheriff had some idea that he wanted done well we'd probably you know, we of tried to negotiate between the two of them. But ah...no it was their responsibility and we're just there to assist them, that's what it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah...what about the...the infamous or legendary, whichever word you want to use, Washington Press Corp?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They're all over the place.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but you know what ah...they ah...they were not out of hand. Ah..I see...of course this was ...now this has been several years ago, you got to remember that too and ah...I think that the Press Corp and everybody else was probably more disciplined back in those days and much more than they are now. Wouldn't you agree?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah...ah...we did not have any problems at all. I know ah...this area that I talked about, there didn't any press come in there and I...and they were instructed not to come in there and they didn't try to come in there. If they had I wouldn't of let them you know. But I didn't have...you know they were out in the street, but they...they...they knew that they couldn't come in that area, they ah...and there were signs up out there you know and barricades.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Most of them did. But there is instance of three I believe, there was word that ah...pictures of Rayburn laying in state was not to be taken and three, I believe photographers, broke those rules and their cameras and film was confiscated. Was you aware of that or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, that didn't happen in my presence, so they must have been inside the Church for some reason or other.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm not really sure if it was in the Church or if they....didn't he lay in state at the State house for awhile?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm not sure, I'll have to check....

GLENN ELLIOTT: It didn't happen....it did not happen there at the ah...at the...at the Church and they didn't come in and out my....ah the door we were on and I don't know where it happen. It may have been....probably in Washington or somewhere.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'll have to check that out to make sure exactly where that happened.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....because we didn't have any problems with them down there, cause I would have remembered that cause I'm....I'm not a great lover of the press anyway.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have ah...as you was driving home, back to Longview...or Marshall I guess at that time....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:that night, did you realize then that you had really been in the presence of ah....of history with all those Presidents and a legend...probably the most powerful Speaker of the House that's ever been, probably ever will be.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know it didn't ah...it didn't phase me one bit, I...I probably thought about my dad losing a good friend you know, that's probably what I was thinking about, because I...I...I know my dad thought a whole lot of Mr. Rayburn. And ah...that's ah...no doubt what I had on my mind. Because I...the dignitary part of it, it was a day's work for me, and of course it was an honor to be up there. And it was an honor to be around all those people, but they didn't influence me that much, I...I'm just not that kindI don't know why, I just don't seem like I'm turned on too much by that kind of stuff.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was Rigler and Jim Ray up there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'm sure they were, I can't remember who all was up there, I just really don't. I know that ah....I feel like.... see there wasn't but eleven members of our companythere

wasn't but eleven in our company at that time and I feel reasonably sure that all of them were up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anything....that pretty well knows...all I know to ask on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah we got ah...we got Rayburn pretty well covered. Cause it's just...it's pretty simple you know, it was.... the Speaker of the House dies and they bring his body to home and bury him and have a nice service and ahthey borrowed the Church, I forget what denomination he was, it probably says in there somewhere. But ah...it was the largest Church in Bonham and that's how come they have it there. And ...and ah...and the service was short at the cemetery and it was over you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's skip ahead, you.... you have ah...in your career shaken the hand of every President from Truman through Bush.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And we've talked about Truman, we've talked about Johnson and Eisenhower ah...where did you shake the hand of John F. Kennedy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: John F. Kennedy was at ah...in Dallas, at the...ah...no wait a minute, let's see....yeah, uh hum. I shook.... Kennedy had been in Dallas.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This was not the fatal

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it wasn't....it wasn't the fatal time, it was another time that ah...I'm sure it was Dallas because most of the time....they got out in the field, Nixon was here in Longview, most Republican would come....most Republican Presidents would come....come down this way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Does that include Ford?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah. But we....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Reagan?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Reagan, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Bush?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Uh hum. And...and Nixon.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Nixon.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I...Nixon I...I remember distinctly shaking Nixon's hand in Dallas. Ah...Nixon was ah...he flew in to Dallas on one occasion and he had a press conference, of course most of them did, they had....as soon as they...they had press conference first or last and they'd go to whatever function they was going to, but they always went to the press conference you know. And most of the time a press conference was first because they had arranged their schedule toand they get a lot of press before the incident and the press would cover the incident, whatever it....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just in time to make the six o'clock news.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, whatever they were there for. And I know that I shook hands with Nixon and in fact I think I shook hand with Nixon twice, once here at Gregg County and I went aboard Air Force One out here and ah....but ah..... in Dallas, and Kennedy was in Dallas and Johnson, you know, why I've ran into Johnson quite a bit, once in....and see we was ah....we provided security for the dedication ofthat LBJ Library in Austin when it was completed. And ah....and I know Johnson was there and ah....and he got around....he came to Texas quite often you know. And ah...it seemed like that ah... I made one trip down to the ranch down there for some....something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: On the federalize?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah....and I forgot what that was. But ah....and Reagan I've....I've....I know I helped Reagan once, it was....see during the '60's and '70's ah....particularly ah....they was

having quite a bit of problems around you know, riots and colleges and things of this nature andand all of a sudden they....and then of course they'd have a few attempts of assassinations I guess and they got awful conscious of the fact that something might happen to the people and they got all the help they could get, they hadthis is not only the Rangers and the DPS and...but theythey solicited help from all the local officers and ah...the city and the counties and everything you know. I know when Bush was down here once he landed at Gregg County and had a press conference and a little rally out there and then he drove.....we drove him to Marshall and he spoke over there at the Civic Center. It was a brand new building. And ah...of course we had Harrison County people and Gregg County people and Longview police and Marshall police and the Rangers and the DPS providing security for him because he had to go in a motorcade from Gregg County Airport to Marshall

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you go right down I-20?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And ah....soand we went to the Civic Center and ah....see they...they was making pictures then and ah...ah...he wanted his picture made with the common people, most of them did. And the Secret Service had offered me pictures, I could of had pictures with him, you know. But I just didn't...at the time I was interested in something else you know. And...but ah....most of the time when we'd provide security ah....like several times in Dallas, for instance I was ah....one time up there with ah....one of them, I stayed with the airplane and ah...myself and some of the Dallas officers and the Secret Service people and provide security to the airplane and not let anybody around it. And ah...that's when I went....like you know, you getthey'll let you go in you know. So I go on the plane you know and of course they're all just alike you know, but they just got different name....numbers on them you know. But ah...ah....we had different assignments and then ah...another time when Nixon went downtown well we....we went....

I went withI was with a Secret Service agent as I remember and we wentwe went with the press conference and to whatever the occasion was, I think it was a money raiser or something, maybe he was talking to a bunch of people, I don't remember all about it. But ah.... I was right along for the whole show that time. And ah...so....you never did know what you was going to do until you got there you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about Carter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, ah...let's see, Carter....yeah I got....where did I see Carter, let's see I'm trying to think..... I was thinking about him being up at Dallas, but it wasn't Dallas. Well, hum, yeah I remember Carter pretty well. I was a little disappointed in...in the way he....you know he...his appearance, seemed like it disappointed me. But II'm think, he didn't come here, so it probably was in Dallas or Fort Worth area. But I remember he had a pretty handshake, you'd think that he was a...he wasn't....you know he acted like the kind of guy that would just throw a limp hand out there to you, you know, but he was a....of course he was a military man wasn't he?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, Annapolis.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Back to Kennedy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I just swear that ah...I...Kennedy was in Dallas but ah...I'm trying to think, it could have been Austin.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's go to the fatal weekend. Where...did you work...was you over there then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I tell you, I was in Dallas. Red Arnold and I were working....and I need to get back on...do you remember the date on that, that was '63 wasn't it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: November 22nd or 23rd one.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Of '63?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh huh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I hadn't got....'62 is as far as I go in my reports but I'm....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, we'll come back to that later then, we'll come back to that later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...we were up there working a criminal case, I know that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let's come back to that later because I...we'll want to maybe go into that case just because what happened at the same time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...let me....well I'll write that down...ah...November the what?

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was the 22nd or 23rd, I don't remember right off hand Glenn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Of '63. Yeah it was a....cause I got on the phone...well we'll get back...we'll get into that, but I ...I played a part in the thing but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, well we'll get into that a little bit when we get into '63. Ah...was Billy Sol Estes....it was in '62 or in that area I think.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Billy Sol Estes was ah...ah...well let's see ah...I thought I made a note of that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's just go...what have you made notes on and we'll just....we'll just go from there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well let's see, Hickman's funeral we talked was on January 30th....all right, the slant hole business we was talking about earlier started ah....the first time I got involved in this, according to my reports, was February 12, 1962 and I was assigned to ah....for ah...to the District Court in Rusk County for security purposes and they was trying a guy named J. D. Matthews who was an employee of ah...Exxon Oil Company. And this Matthews was an investigator and ah...and he had been working undercover trying to identify these people who were whip stocking these wells. Exxon knew that the....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, what's whip stocking?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Whip stocking is ah...ah...you can get a permit...well let me back up, for instance these offshore drilling rigs, they'll set up out in the Gulf and they'll probably drill four or five wells from one platform and they'll go down 1,000 feet or so and they'll drop what they call a whip stock in there and they can direct that bit, from one location they can bottom the hole out here a half a mile away if they want to, this direction or that direction. And ah...this is...it's legal, you know you can get a permit to drill if...if...for instance some oil company, some geologist, found a pool of oil right directly under the city of Longview or under the Sabine River or under a school house or something, well they can...they can get a permit if they can show just reason to deviate....drill a deviated well, which is...they set the...they set the drilling rig up four, five or ten blocks away and ...and bottom that hole anywhere they want it by use of a whip stock. And ah....and of course ...and these whip stocks were started out in California on offshore drilling rigs and these...these people in the oil field here found out that ah....they were available. Okay these...this oil patch had already started depleting, because it used to be pretty wide you know and there was a pretty good vein of oil all the way from down in the lower part of Rusk County all the way up into Upshur County. Andand of course the major companies pretty well had it all leased up you know and they had drilled wells back in the beginning and ah...and ah...and made good wells. And as the oil depleted and started coming in to on most...you know the outer edges of it the first ones to slow down you know and the pools still here you know, but it's getting narrow. But ah...these independent companies...these major companies would give up these leases when the oil...when they quite producing, maybe making three or four barrels a day or something like that you know, it wasn't practical to operate them. Well they'd give up their lease. Well when the lease expired well ah...the independent's came in and no doubt they were...this was conspiracy and

ah...they ah...would release these properties from the owner and say they was going to...and get a permit from the Railroad Commission to re-work the wells, that's what they were doing. And of course there's a man working at the Railroad Commission that ah...they had in their pocket and ah...and he wo...and when they'd go in to get a permit to re-work the well ah...well they'd just go down in it and put that whip stock in there and drill out under the big oil patch and they'd hit a flowing well.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did ah...this Railroad Commissioner, was he ever indicted or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was indicted and tried, I don't remember....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no I sure don't. But I..I'll have it in my records somewhere probably. Ah...but he was ah... he was in charge of the Commission office in Kilgore. And see to...to ah...ah.. they have a wire line that they have to check and a well can't...they have to check it for deviation. And he approved all these ah...ah...all these checks. The well can't be over so many degrees off you know or they...the Railroad Commission can't approve it and of course he'd approved all these wells that they had...that they had dug and they'd whipped stock them. And they was getting...they got pretty strong with... well this guy, back to this trial, this guy Matthews was down here ah...as I said, working undercover for Exxon trying to identify these people because they was...they was just ripping...you know these people had given up these leases and they was just getting right in there and getting all that good oil and...and they knew where it was coming from. In fact they drilled into the casing of one of Exxon's flowing wells, they busted the casing on it. And the...and their well...and their drilling rig was sitting a half mile away over there you know, or a quarter of a mile and whatever. But ah...and it was costing them a lot of...that was a lot of expense to Exxon and they just shut their well down you know, I mean it was a flowing well and they busted the casing

on it. And...and ah...and these people were pretty brazen about all this and of course they had....what they had done, they'd come in and ...and offered and sometimes accepted the County Commissioners and the County Judges and District Judges and some...some DPS...I...my partner and I, when I was on the Highway Patrol, we had....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lloyd Webb.

GLENN ELLIOTT:we had a guy who was a friend of ours and independent oil business and ah...he offered us a piece....he said, 'Well Glenn and Lloyd we're making some good wells and if ya'll want to invest a little money in it well you know, get you some...you can get yourself \$2,000.00 or \$3,000.00, well we'll cut you...we'll cut you in on it and let you buy some piece of the action'. Well of course we didn't have that kind of money you know. But we had one License and Weight guy though that was stationed in Tyler that ah...his parents had just died as I remember it, and they lived down in Cherokee County and he ah...ah...mortgaged their farm that he'd inherited and bought in and ah...and it wasn't 30 days after he'd done that...or may of...well, the well had been completed about 30 days I think and ah...and we shut 'em all down and he just...he lost all of his investment you know. And he...he thought it was legitimate you know, these people were business people you know and ah...they just offered...but they was just giving them....most of them were trying to get some influential people involved in it, thinking well you know, give a Highway Patrolman a piece of it...or sell him a piece of it and nobody will ever do anything you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, we....this was not isolated incidents, this was...happen massive was it not?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Every Ranger in the State of Texas worked on this case at one time or another.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, well what happened was, after we got into this thing it...it was ah...it...I tell you what it got, this trialafter this trial ah...February 12, 1962 and this guy by the way was acquitted, he was found not guilty of ah.... he got into a....he and this ah....whip stock guy got drunk, ah....this was what was in the testimony and I think it's probably true, in a motel there at Henderson one night andand....and they got to....and this gun went off accidentally according to Matthews and of course the other guy couldn't testify cause he was dead. And ah...and I noticed that ah...we got into full swing on this investigation along about June of '62. So about four months after the trial it...it....ah....the information started developing and....and ah.... I see where....and then ah....of course they had so many of them up and down , on both sides of the field, and ah....but mainly on the west side and they even got up into Wood County, around Hawkins, and drilled a few up there. But ah....we had to get all the Rangers in here because each well that we suspicioned and ah....and it was obvious which ones they were because there was wells that was not making enough oil, the major companies was operating them and ah....to keep producing them and then all of sudden they got a permit and somebody else leased the land and got a permit to work the well over and they started producing. And some of them was flowing wells andand ah....but they was showing them as on pumps, but they didn't even....wasn't even...didn't even have a meter out there, had electric motors on them, but didn't even have a....didn't...wasn't even hooked up to electricity, because they was flowing wells, didn't need any electricity. So it was pretty obvious what...what was going on. And ah...so we started testing in order to make a criminal case, the Attorney General....Will Wilson was the Attorney General then and of course Will Wilson was wanting to run for Governor of Texas and ah....and most Attorney General's do you know, that's a stepping stone. And ah....but he got real involved in this thing and ah....and spent a lot of his own....I mean he was up here himself working a whole lot. And ah....ah....they ah....in order for us to make a

criminal case ah....we had to check those wells for deviation. And to do that you had to pullyou had to pull the ca....the tubing and the sucker rods and what ever(side of tape ends)

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay

GLENN ELLIOTT: As I say, Wilson was ah....ah....he was calling the shots because ah....we're talking about three different counties being involved and ah....and ah....local politics too you know and he was calling the shots so he...he was.... we was meeting with him and doing whatever he instructed us to do because he was the State's lawyer you know. And ah....and he says we need to test these wells and wire line them, well ah....we hired....got some rigs, I think we had at least five rigs working then and ...and ah....work over rigs and these guys were afraid to go out there because these people were....there was a lot....you know you can imagine how much money was involved, we're talking about, I think, around 300 wells as I recall right now, that's a lot of oil wells you know. And ah... so these guys agreed to go out there and work their rigs and the State was paying them and of course they was penalizing these people, there's a penalty goes along with the Railroad Commission for violations and these folks had to pay a lot of penalties. I think that's about the only punishment they got. But anyway they ah....ah... they didn't want to go out there and work around the clock without some protection, because these people were upset, they didn't want....they come out there and tried to run them off their leases and you know, tell them to leave, that the lease belonged to them and threatened them and all this kind of stuff. So ah....Wilson, General Wilson, agreed that ah....orand says that he'd liked to have two Rangers on the rigs, each one, while they was working. So of course at that time there were only 62 Rangers in the State of Texas see and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did that include the officers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. We had all of the Rangers just about it, except a few of the Captains, were up here several times during this time, this thing lasted almost a year. And ah...and we'd just send 'em outor we'd go out, I've set on some of them myself, but mainly I was helping Jim Ray with the investigative part of it andand I was.... I was familiarizing myself pretty....it's pretty hard to find these leases a lot of them. And ah...but I knew where they were and the Railroad Commission had maps and ah...so we'd get a bunch in here....ah...Rangers, and they'd come in on Sunday and the others would go home on Sunday and...and....and I'd make out the schedule and ah....and carry the Ranger and show them where they was to go you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was ah....was Allee here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no, Captain Allee wasn't, ah...little Allee was here, his son and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:very few of the Captains came, I don't think ah... I believe.... I know all the Sergeants came and I don't think any of the Captains except Captain Crowder and of course he was around most of the time....ah....Bob Crowder was. But ah....anyway, Wilson then decided later on, I think some time in ah....he had a Senate hearing where he had all these people appearing in Dallas and testifying under oath, which was popular during that time you know, it's ah... I think it's when it started. And ah....so it was my duty to serve the subpoenas you know and ah....we subpoenaed all of the people that ah...directly or indirectly involved, invest....investments or whatever toto this ah....Senate hearing committee ah...in ah...Dallas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was there a master mind behind this or was it just.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah, there was athere was a....there was two or three that I think started it. I think Jack McCubbin, Cadillac Jack McCubbin of Kilgore, probably got credit because Jack had quite a few of them as I remember. And ah....but it just got so popular and there was a

bunch of independents here and they all saw a chance to make some good easy money and....and they all just....they just kind of like ah.... I think Jack was telling everybody what he was doing because ah....he was not a bashful individual. And ah....and the rest of them just kind of caught on andand started leasing up this land themselves you know and ah....and everybody was wanting a piece of the pie. And it was pretty good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well.....well the payoff's had to be tremendous, I mean all these crews they had to know what was going on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, oh yeah. Well I am sure.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean when you get the amount of pipe they was putting into the hole

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah, yeah. You got a well that's supposed to be 3,000 foot deep and you got 5,500 or 7,000 feet of pipe and tubing in it well it's pretty easybut most of thosethe crewsI think the only people that was getting paid anything extra was the guys doing the whip stocking because ah....most of those guys were tickled to get to work you know, they didn't care if they workedthe deeper the hole the longer they worked. Of course we interviewed a bunch of those people you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: There had to be a lot of politicians being paid off.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there was ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Police.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well ah..... I don't know....see very few people suspected. I doubt that any of the police got paid off on this thing. This was such aah....if the Railroad Commission is not going to help you , if their not complaining, then how....who you going to get to find out you know what's going on. And...and....and what....and here's the thing aboutand the oil patch has always suffered and I call it suffered, most of law enforcement has got so many things that they'd

rather be working on as theft of oil, or theft from oil equipment. And....and nobody's complaining, why don't you catch somebody for stealing oil or why don't you catch somebody for stealing tongs or why don't you catch somebody for stealing this or that, when there's murders and rapes and robberies going on every day you know. And ah....in defense of law enforcement, I'm sure thatthat they were good to law enforcement, these people..... I knew....heck I knew nearly all of them in ah....on the Highway Patrol. And I'd gone to bar-b-ques and fish fry's that they'd given, not knowing that they was I didn't have any idea there was anything.....such thing as a crooked oil well until I got on the Rangers and...and this ...this killing happened over here at Henderson andand all this started coming out in the trial over there, what they was doing and...and ah... and trying to undercover this deal. And this trial really broke it open, especially when this guy was acquitted, because he was an employee of one of the major oil companies. And ah...and ah...after he was acquitted then theythey solicited our help and then we started interviewing people that worked on these rigs and...and....and they told about how many pieces of pipe went in the hole you know, because after you start talking to them well.... and I think Wilson subpoenaed a few of them you know, in under oath and ah....and we started getting into it. I didn't have any idea it was going....like I said I was offered.....my partner and I when I was on the Highway Patrol, was offered a piece of some....of some them. And if we'd had the money we'd of probably jumped at it too you know, cause the people were making good money boy. But neither one of us had any money to invest, cause we was towe had....we were just barely raising our kids you know and living from one pay day to the next. But this all come about and thenand Wilson of courseand like I said he subpoenaed up all these people and we subpoenaed all the local officers here, I think one of the District Judges and ah....and a County Judge and all the County Commissioners and ah....it seemed like ah... I don't know whether it... I don't think they ever proved that....maybe one of the

Commissioners may have had some interest in one but ah....you know it would be kind of like I explained to you earlier, I could of had an interest in one and never known what I had an interest in you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah, uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Cause if a guy comes to you and says it's been successful and he's done drilled four or five good wells over there and, well Glenn I'm fixing to drill another well you want a piece of it, so he...you know...and make a little income, well if a guys got money he's foolish not to jump in it. And they may have known it, but it's hard to prove ah....it's not to hard to prove that the operator didn't know what he was doing because here....very few operators are going to pay for 7,000 foot or 5,000 foot of pipe to go in a 2,500 foot hole you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And he's got to prove those invoices you know so it don't take very much ah....you don't have to be no genius to....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Figure that out.

GLENN ELLIOTT:figure that out you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this lasted about a year?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. They subpoenaed these folks and had their hearings in ah....Wash....in ah...Dallas and then they tried this Railroad Commission man. We didn't get a whole lot of help out of ah....our local ah....people and there was a couple tried and acquitted and then....then they just started making them pay penalties. And ah....so they collected enough money I guess in penalties to pay for all of the ah....work that they done checking the wells and seeing that....proving that there was thievery. And of course then they shut them down. And then of course these guys would come in, in the meantime after this thing got into it and they saw what was fixing

to happen, well they started junking their own wells. They'd....they'd pull the tubing out and throw a bunch of iron in there you know, in the hole so it couldn't be checked you know. And...but ah....it all stopped, it all....I guess most of them got shut down, they might still be one or two out there somewhere you know as a hot well.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But did anybody go to jail?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nobody ever went to jail. Nobody ever went to the penitentiary.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did that aggravate you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....

ROBERT NIEMAN: All that time and effort and the Rangers and

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah....I don't know that it aggravated me too much. I...I've always said that ah...thought that if I do my job ah....and then if somebody comes along and has got something to say about it, I say well you know, look here, here's my reports, here's what I did now you need to go talk to the District Attorney or you need to go talk to the District Judge and ask them, you know....it...it's their time to answer a question. I'll answer any question you got, if I made a mistake you know, get on me about it you know and then I'll tell you if I made a mistake. But I said, you know I hadn't. And most of my District Attorney's will tell you this....I....everyone I ever worked with I guess and I'd go to them and them you know, I said, here it is and you know, I think I got a case and....and ah....and it's yours now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you hear any of the other Rangers, I mean being drug all the way from El Paso and I mean....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, well those guys that were coming in here...of course they didn't....after they went home they didn't probably....they didn't take the Longview paper you know, of course ah....Wilson was getting quite a bit of state publicity though, cause the TV was

going strong then. And ah...of course he got beat you know, he...he ran for Governor and got defeated and ah....and I'm sure these people pumped a lot money trying to beat him you know and it was...it was effective. Because they made a lot of money out of those wells, there was some of them pumped a good while.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well....well I was just thinking you know, somebody get drug in from Amarillo or El Paso or Brownsville, away from his family, he works up here and he spends all his time here and does all this and nobody even spends a day, that would have to aggravate him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Oh it...it's....well it's....it touches a sore spot all right. But you know, you can't....you can't be fretting about that because if I'd....if I did that well I'd of been crying all the time. Because we...you don't always get done what you want done you know. And ah....I've said this a many a times, and you just remember this, by the time a guy got....gets to the penitentiary, the average guy, he's at least a three time loser before he ever makes the first trip to the pen. Oh we've heard these people crying, well this poor guy this is the first trip, he don't need to go, but most officers will give a guy a chance you know. And then ah...then the court will give him a chance you know and...and ah...and then he'll probably get probation the next time you know. And so he....the District Attorney is what I'm saying will give him a chance, so by the time a guy gets to the penitentiary a lot of times he's already a three time loser you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Paul Harvey says in the Rest of the Story, that they don't point this out.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....we get through that....I....you was asking about this Billy Sol Estes thing, we can cover it right quick if you want to before we quit.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I noticed that that trial.... I was in Tyler on September 24, 1962 ah....for the Estes trial.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That was in Tyler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Tyler, Texas in District Court. And what this was ah....Billy Sol Estes had committed all this crimes out in West Texas, but it was ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Thankless area?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and El Paso and Midland and Abilene and Odessa and out in that....in the Permian Basin area and ah.... and he'd got to a lot of those people out there in investments you know in the fertilizer business as I remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was he doing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he was ah....he was in...as I...of course that's been a long time since that trial and I didn't work on the Estes case any, because he didn't violate the law. I don't think he even had any investors down here in this part of the state. Most of them were from Dallas west. And ah....he was ah....got in the fertilizer business and was furnishing these tanks for these farmers you know, with liquid fertilizer and when it got to be popular. And ah...it was a fraud case and he just....he built up an empire and he had a lot of false stuff you know, on the books that didn't exist.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What he wasn't producing the tanks or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and...and ah...and so he just beat a lot of his investors out of a lot of money.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wasn't he involved somehow with Lyndon Johnson?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...they tried to drag....drag Lyndon Johnson into it....into the trial as I ah...but Lyndon may have been one of his investors at one time, I...he was....of course he was a contributor. He was a big political contributor, no doubt he contributed to Lyndon Johnson's campaign. Ah....he was ah...ah....he was a con man, Billy Sol Estes was, but ah...there's a picture in

that deal there where Ernest Daniel and myselfah....and the District Judge over therethis was one of the first cases in Texas that was tried where they allowed cameras inside the courtroom.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And now it came to Tyler ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: On a change of venue. Ah...ah...a change of venue is ah....like if ah...I'm charged out in Pecos, Texas for a crime and it's ah....been a lot of publicity about it, which there was about Billy Sol Estes, he was a big Church worker and a big political contributor andand slapped the politicians on the back you know and wined 'em and dined 'em and all this good stuff. And ah....so there was a lot of publicity out there in West Texas about this case, so his defense lawyer who....the lawyer that was representing him, asked for a change of venue. And ah...so they moved it all the way to Tyler, Texas. And of course it was such a well publicized case and made national.... because ah...Johnson was I think....name was mentioned in it and some more politicians. And ah...and I can't recall their names but ah...anyway the Judge out there sent it down here to Tyler to be tried. Well ah....I guess thatI know they did then, the ah...oh there's a senior Judge usually picks who tries the case. And he usually picks the place where it....where it goes you know. But they decide to move it to Tyler, Texas and so the Judge that was assigned to the case asked for some help ah....from the Ranger service and this is not unusual. Because he was...he had decided to let cameras inside the courtroom.

ROBERT NIEMAN: TV cameras?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and regular cameras. And ah...and ah....so it seemed like there had been a threat or two made too on Billy Sol's life. But as I remember he was out on bond, but he might not of been, I'm not positive. But ah...anyway we were there strictly just to provide security in the courtroom, to do what the Judge.....if he wantedif the camera people didn't do like he told them to, get 'em out of here you know. And that was his instructions to us, we met with him in his

chambers and he wanted....he wanted everything running quiet and peaceful in the courtroom so Billy Sol could get a fair trial. And he was tried and convicted as I remember, over at Tyler. And it lasted the biggest part of the week I believe and ah....I didn't ah....check the dates I was over there, but I know I was over there several days. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now this is Federal or State court?

GLENN ELLIOTT: State court , yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I ah....it would have been unusual for usalthough I've ah....had some District Judges toFederal District Judges to ask me to be in a courtroom when they sentenced some people, they had some bank robberies that we had worked and ah....that was not unusual. But most of the time the Marshall service provided the security and the FBI, but the Marshall service it was their duty to provide security for the Federal Court. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now....Sol Estes didn't discriminate, like you said he was very active in the Church. I understand hehe took them just like he did anybody else.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah, he'd get....he'd get the ah....the elders in the Church and ah....and a lot of them still believed in him you know. And even after he went to pen, he got out and he....he preached some when he was in the pen and then of course he...I think he went back again the best I remember about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think he is, I...I hadn't heard anything about him and ah....I guess I would because you know I...I...being in the courtroom with him for a week over there and he was a very personable guy you know, he didn't....I mean he wouldn'the didn't act like a criminal you know. He was just a con artist you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He wasn't....he was a con artist, he wasn't ahe wasn't a shooter or anything like that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No uh huh. Uh huh, no he wasn't plan....I don't think he'd think about taking somebody's life or something like that. No he was just a....

ROBERT NIEMAN: '62 was certainly an eventful year. Ah...Sam Rayburn and Billy Sol Estes ah....ah....the slant hole drilling .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bobby, when you go through my reports, by the time we get through 1987, you're going to find out that every year I had in the Rangers was eventful. I...I never will forget when ah....when ah....Griffith came down here to....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ronnie.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ronnie. Came down hereand they let him....he was stationed in Dallas and he was going....I'd already decided I was going to retire and I'd announced my retirement, so captain asked me if he.....minded Ronnie coming down here and working with me for two or three months before I quit. And I said, 'No I'd just be glad for him to'. Andso he could get his feet on the ground and ah....Ronnie hadn't been here....he....he moved his family down already and ah....and ah....so about the first two weeks ah....we'd just....the phone was ringing all the time and ...and ah....the last....this night we got called out about midnight I guess. And of course I...I'm known for getting around I I get over to the..... I said, 'Ronnie I'll just meet you over there'. And there was a Highway Patrolman had stopped ah....two dope peddlers out of ah....Tennessee, over on Highway 59 and ah....and they tried to disarm him and he shot one of them and the other one got away. And ah....so I...they called me and I called Ronnie and told him I said, 'We got a problem over at Marshall on 59'. And I said, 'Just meet me over there at the scene'. I told him how to get there. Well I...I got I guess I got over there an hour or forty-five minutes before Ronnie

did probably. He shaved and dressed and I just jumped up and put on a pair of khaki's and my gun belt and the shirt I wore the day before probably and hooked 'em see. And of course Ronnie was getting....he was kind of new on the job and he come over there looking nice and had his necktie on, which was good, he looked a whole lot better at six o'clock that evening than I did. But ah....and he asked me that....we...we wound up with that deal some time that night, nine or ten o'clock that night, andand we....we apprehended the guy that had got away, found the dope, had a crew come out at day....right after day was working a bunch of disabled people picking up cans and scrap, they found ten pounds of marijuana that this guy had jumped in the car, the one that had got away, and had driven a ways and threw it out and ah....they were brothers as I remember, the guys that were involved. Anyway, Ronnie asked me he says 'Is it always this busy over here'. And I said, 'No sometimes it's busier'. Let's shut down, what do you say?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'll tell you what I'll do, next week I'll just go.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, this is Monday, April 3, 1995, continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott, Texas Ranger. Glenn let's ah...let's talk ah...ah...I guess....I don't know how much of a scandal was involved in it, with ah....Peppy Blount was elected ah...as a write in candidate and I guess Earl Sharpe fell from grace and...and can you give us some background on that and is...what it was about.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I'll tell you....of course ah...I don't know, it...it was a scandal, I guess some people called it a scandal, that's...that's how come Peppy to get ah...to get...to even decide to be County Judge. I don't think Peppy had that...he'd been in politics though before that and ah...as a State Representative, a young man right after he got out of the service. But ah...I think the citizens just talked Peppy into running. Judge Sharpe, and Earl Sharpe was a friend of mine, and ah....he

was a good man and a good Judge. And he ah...but he got involved in this ah...deviated oil well, like a bunch of other folks did, as we talked earlier. And ah...Judge Sharpe either got some bad advice or took some bad advice and he ah...he kind of made himself scarce. Because they'd...I'd been trying to subpoena him and ah...and of course his health got bad for one thing and of course I guess nerves and him being a...he was a good politician and a good well respected man of the community and still is.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, his health's real bad I understand, I hadn't seen Judge Sharpe in several years. But anyway, he got involved and then he ah...I tried to serve a subpoena on him several different times and he...I found out later he went off up to the Mayo Clinic and spent quite a bit of time up there. And ah...so finally he came back down here and ah...to appear before the Grand Jury here, local Grand Jury, and ah...and found out that he was in town and before the Grand Jury. When he came out of the Grand Jury well I subpoenaed him to a Senate hearing up at Dallas. And I don't...I think for health reason he never did get to go, I think Judge Sharpe by that time would of gladly stood up and told anybody what his involvement was. But ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: About when was this going on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this was in ah...ah...November of 19...November the 7th of 1962 is when they had the election so this was...so the slant hole business started early in '62 you know and ah...so...or I'd say about mid...probably in the spring of '62 is when it started, the main part of the investigation. And ah...of course this was an election year and Judge Sharpe did not have an opponent and ah...and never did you know, I don't think anybody and...but the general...the ah...primaries had already completed see and then it was general election time and of course and...and all this came up and of course he got a lot of publicity about it you know. And as I told

you earlier, Will Wilson was the Attorney General of Texas and he was having these Senate hearings in Dallas and it was a...truthfully ah...it turns out that it was kind of more political, I think, now than it was in...of course Will Wilson was not a lazy guy and ah...and he was a kind of a crime buster. But ah...of course everybody's got a motive...he... you know at the Senate hearings a lot of testimony came out in it up there and nobody every got convicted of perjury as far as I know or anything. But ah...it made a lot of news, and a lot of news. So anyway Peppy...I'm sure that some of the citizens...I know that much of the citizens of Gregg County encouraged Peppy to ah...to have a write in campaign for County Judge and he did. And ah...it was ah...ah...put together pretty good. Peppy spent some money and he spent a lot of time and he did a good job at what he was doing. I don't remember how much time he had, because I was busy working, I...and trying to do what I was getting paid to do and ...but to make a long story short, Peppy had... staged his write in campaign and they had the election and it looked like it was a landslide for Peppy. Well the election Judge here was also a friend of mine, Frank McNatt. Ah...Frank was a good guy and an honest guy and he was....when some of the votes would come in to Peppy, just Peppy Blount, some of them would say R. E. Peppy Blount and some would just say R. E. Blount, so they started counting the votes and...and they got...ran into a snag cause they couldn't decide ah...cause technically ah....according to the election Judge the vote supposed to...the names supposed to be his...as it was entered on the ballot to begin with see. And they all wasn't that a way. So they got to trying to figure out...they was going to have to get some advice from somebody and ah...which would of been Secretary of State, you know, handles the...the...all the voter irregularities and whatever for Texas. So they decided about ten or eleven o'clock the night of the election that they were not going to ah...ah...announce who was going to be Judge until they got a ruling on whether those votes were all legal or not you know, the write in votes. So ah...then the people that were

supporting Peppy got antsy and they just thought....they thought something was going wrong and that they may be trying to do something with the ballet's you know or what have you. And ah...so they went to ah...ah...David Moore was the District Judge then and they went to David and ah...asked him for an order to...for me to seize the votes. Well, nobody said anything to me about it yet and I'm on assignment on over at Kilgore and I'm taking care of the office over there, we're...we're right...we're still in the middle of this slant hole investigation and...well, we may not be in the middle we're probably along closer to the end of it but anyway, I was over there assigned to man the telephone and take care of the office and assign the troops and to take care of any trouble that existed. And so ah... I...my phone rang over at the motel about oh, eleven - twelve o'clock I guess and I was already in bed and ah...they told me that they had a court order and of course I told them you know, I gave them my captain's number in Dallas and I told them to call him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt you, since this was a County election, why wouldn't the Sheriff have served this court order, why was the Rangers called in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I never did ask anybody that. When they went over to get the court order they insisted that it be ah...these people that were wanting it issued were insisting that ah...that I be the one that seize the records. And this is not...this happened quite regular and I'm....and the Sheriff was pleased with it, they didn't....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was the Sheriff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Noble Crawford was Sheriff. Ah...I'll get to that in a minute. I...I didn't even call Noble that night and ah...I didn't call anybody. The captain called me eight o'clock....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Crowder?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Crowder. They called Captain Crowder and ah...ah...he called me and told me just to go on over to Longview and he said ah...'Don't worry about the office'. And he said, 'If you have to seize those votes you might want to bring 'em back over there and if you don't well just do whatever you....'. You know that's the way the captain would do it, just use your own judgment. Well I get over to Longview and ah...and of course the news media is there and ah...and the halls full of people and they serve the court order on me, the Deputy's did, two of Noble's Deputy's served the court order on me and said I was responsible for the votes and their locked up in the ah...Clerk's office, County Clerk's office and ah....Buck Birdsong. And ah...I said, 'Well, I'm not going to accept responsibility for something that ya'll say is locked up in there in that office'. I said, 'If I accept responsibility for the votes you're going to have to put them in my hands and then I'll...I'll...I'll accept your court order'. Well they had to get Buck Birdsong out then and Buck had the trouble....news people were around there and Buck was nervous...Buck's dead now...and ah...he...took him thirty, forty-five minutes to unlock the dern door. But you see my problem was, there was windows along the south side of that office and it was on the first floor and ah...you know, and here I am accepting responsibility for something that...that I don't even know exists true....I mean I know there's some votes somewhere but I don't know where they are. So...and I did what I thought I should have done and what I'd do again. So anyway, the Highway Patrol Sergeant was up there, Lloyd Webb by then, and I guess he was up there when I got there. And Webb had an office directly across the hall from ah...Birdsong's office and there wasn't any windows in it and there was a door, one door, and ah...he had a couch in there. Well I'd...it didn't take me long to...I'm not a rocket scientist but it didn't me long to figure out, cause I'd...I...you know I went full blast all the time, I was tired, needed some rest, going to work the next day and knew it. And ah...so finally Birdsong got the ah...the door unlocked and I just asked Webb I said, 'I need to use your

office tonight'. And he just hand...pitched me a key and ah...I just unlocked the door and we carried the votes across the hall, laid them on his desk, I shut the door and slid the couch in front of the door and laid down and went to asleep.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask...now Webb of course was your earlier partner.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I thought he had transferred out of Gregg County. Did he get transferred back in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Webb...what happened was, when ah...when he sergeant he went to San Angelo, but he ah...that was before we reorganization and he had already prearranged with Chief Elliott that...that they were going to put two Sergeants in each Highway Patrol Company after reorganization. And ah...or maybe a little bit before. Anyway ah....Webb knew he was coming back to Longview and he went out to San Angelo and stayed about six months and then came back here as a Highway Patrol Sergeant from the Tyler District, and then we got two Sergeants. So then by this time...by...he had got him an...they had changed him on over to Longview and put him in an area office. So he was stationed back in Longview again. And ah...that's where he wanted to be all the time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So that's ah...and he was good to work with, old Webb and I got along until the day he died. And ah...he ah...anyway, I used his office. And then the next morning then ah...of course everybody knew what was going on and most folks knew I was an early riser, I've always ear...got up early. And about five-thirty the next morning I heard somebody knock on my door. And ah...I was already up and in fact I...I was up and dressed, I don't think I ever dressed, I just laid down with my clothes on, I didn't have a tie, I had a coat, I shucked it and my gun belt and just laid

down on the couch. And anyway, it was the Chief Deputy, Horace Riley, ah...he had me some bacon and eggs and hot coffee from the jail. Knocked on the door and brought me my breakfast. I ate my breakfast and ah.... andand asked him to stay there while I went to the bathroom to wash up a little bit. And ah....so then ah... I got a hold of the election Judge, I should of called him that night, I didn't, II was....that's one of the mistakes I made ah....cause he was a friend of mine and ah....he was a little upset. He...he heard about it, he got down there about seven o'clock, six-thirty or seven and he was a little tore up about it. I had to set him down and tell him, I said, 'Now Frank, look a here you know I'm working, tending to business and they called me out here'. Andand I said, 'Yeah I should of called you last night and told you I'd seized the votes'. But I said, 'It wasn't my idea to seize the votes'. I said, 'You got somebody to get on, well you go over there and crawl on that District Judge that issued the court order'. You know, I said, 'You and I are friends and out of courtesy I should of called you, but I didn't and I can't redo it you know'. And then I walked on down..... I turned the votes over to him, got a receipt and that's what I was instructed to do. And ah....so I turned the votes back over to him and they went back to the Clerk's office. So I went on down to the Sheriff's office, by that time the Sheriff was there, and I set right on the edge of his desk and told him and I said....and of course I didn't sleep all that good that night, I'm a light sleeper anyway, but I rested a little, but I was tired and I said....and I told Noble what happened and I said, 'Now you know I guess I should of called you last night, but I didn't see any reason to waking you up, your Deputy was here and they served the papers on me'. And of course Noble said, 'Glenn....oh Glenn I'm glad that you were doing it you know, so that way I'm...I'm....nobody can accuse me of getting involved in this thing'. You know, cause it was a political deal. But Peppy was elected and ah....ah....they agreed that ah.... I think the ruling was that regardless of what they wrote on the ballet, they wanted Peppy Blount to be Judge or they wouldn't have written his name

down there. So they...they just finally agreed that all of the ah....they counted all the votes, regardless of how they were written. So that's ah....then I went to ah....ah....this is in November of '62 and ah....on December ah.....January the 31st of '63 I went to Austin and testified in the Grand Jury down there. And ah....and they indicted Judge Sharpe for evading ah...a subpoena I think is what it was, but nothing ever came of it, it was ah... he ...he went down too. In fact I passed ah....he and his ah....whoever was with him, on the way down there, I got up and drove down one morning, I think I came back the same day, which wasn't unusual for me. But ah...of course Judge Sharpe never did try to get back into politics and his health was bad and ah....at that time. But I think he regained his health pretty good, but he...he's....he hasn't been real well since this thing happened. And I don't know that.... it probably contributed to his bad health some. But ah.... I always.... I had a lot respect for Earl Sharpe, still do. Ah....then ah...of course Peppy made a good Judge you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But he did not get re-elected?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, just there one term, yeah. And I can't....of course you get me and politics, I can't tell you about politics all that much. I'm a poor politician.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah, I know what you mean.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So ah....whatever, but Judge Sharpe didn't ever entertain of getting back in politics. Of course his son's County Judge now.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and ah...doing a good job. And I knew both of his boys. And in fact I tell you what I did while ah... I went to his house several times ah.... I think that ah....well it was implied that ah....General Wilson thought that maybe we weren't diligent in our search for....and I wasn't the only one that we trying to serve Judge Sharpe, there was two or three other Rangers. But I just knew the area and I knew everybody, I served all the County Commissioners right after

Commissioners Court but one and he was out of pocket and I served him later at his home. And ah.... but I went to Judge Sharpe's house several times and I knew Judge Sharpe, I knew his family well enough to know when he come back to Longview, I'd probably find out about it. And I just told his wife and his boys you know, that I wasn't coming back to embarrass them anymore there at the house and to tell the Judge when he comes back to let me know some way or another. And sure enough I got the message that he was going to be either back in town and going to testify at the Grand Jury the next morning, Gregg County Grand Jury, and he'd be available after the Grand Jury for me to serve him with the subpoena that I had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You were....you mentioned Noble Crawford, ah....what was it.... I guess each Sheriff you worked with, was there similarities or was each one a whole new ball game?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they was kind of like Rangers, they ah....every Sheriff was different you know. Noble was a good politician, he was a real good politician. And Noble...he was ah....he....he was hard on his men but he was good to his men you know. And ah....but Noble would ah....he was careful about who he hired and mainly would hire local people because that was ah....get more folks to voting for him that way you know. And Noble was different, he ah... Noble didn't work ah....after I came here he didn't work any....he was mainly the administrator, took care of the job like that and left the other part to his officers you know. I didn't have any problem getting anything that I wanted out of the Gregg County Sheriff's office, or any other Sheriff's office really that I've ever worked around, just about all of them. Every once in awhile you get a different....a Sheriff would come in with some new ideas and think that he was doing you a favor you know by calling you in on something. Well I had more to do andand if you didn't you could just a little a bit and find plenty to do you know. But I liked to work in every County that I had assigned to me because you could....you find that ah....when you make your rounds ah....you need them all. You know, it's

real important to have good relations with ah...all the...all the officers around because you can just do more good that way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's see, you worked here with Noble Crawford, Welch and what other Sheriff's in Gregg County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....Bobby Weaver, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And then ah....well let's just talk about the Sheriff's in general ah....you told me an interesting story or an amusing story earlier tonight on a Harrison County Sheriff.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Earl Franklin ah...Earl Franklin was a good Country Sheriff, Earl didn't ah...he...he was....he'd work ah....he'd work on criminal cases, he's one of the few Sheriff's that....well there's a lot of them that like to, but Earl liked to get out and work. He....he...the office just eat him up, kind of like it does....does me. And he liked to get out andand get after it and he liked to go. And he and I worked a lot of cases, we'd....shoot we....we hit the road regular, cause he knew I liked to go. And we'd get the job done. Earl....he loved to take a drink and ah....well we gonna....we'll be getting into murders here before long and ah....cause there's a bunch of them coming up, but ah....Earl and I worked a murder and ah....ah....we went to ah...there was a ah....soldier killed over here on..... I don't think we've taped any of my murder cases have we?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No.

GLENN ELLIOTT: There was a soldier ah...dumped out on the side of the Interstate while it was under construction over ah....down at Scottsville. And I guess that's the first major murder case that Earl Franklin and I worked together. And we call it a major murder case because what you call a murder case or we call a murder case, where somebody's murdered and you know who did it you know and....and ah....it's kind of like ah....they used to call the black murders, misdemeanor murders you know. You know I mean those...not a....no disrespect, but that's just kind of the way

they handled them. You know if it was family....but Earl and I worked this case together and just to show you how we got cranked off pretty together and ah...he'd ah...ah...he called me right away and ah...had the body over there and man it was tough, it had been laying out....it was the 4th day of July and these guys went fishing and found the body over there and it had been laying there two or three days or four in a hundred and three or four degree weather. They found it early one morning and the dern.....we brought the body in to Marshall and I tried to fingerprint it. Sullivan Funeral Home had it and we put it out in their garage, in their old garage, not theirnot their best garage and.....cause it smelled so bad.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was it recognizable?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. It was just swollen, you couldn't tellyou couldn't even estimate his age hardly. And ah....to ah....and we got one of those big 4 Foot fans like ah....ceiling fans you know, I mean a house would have them....and they had it mounted and a box built around it, got that fan and turned it on and tried to blow that smell away and tried to fingerprint the rascal and couldn't and the old skin was just slipping and sliding and coming off and first one thing and another. And we finally cut his hands off and put them in a gallon jar, sealed them and I carried them the Austin and ah....and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where did you get the jars?

GLENN ELLIOTT: From a cafe. Had mustard or mayonnaise or something come in 'em, I think it was a Neely's or somebody over there, Brown Pig or somewhere. And ah....anyway, we got 'em down to Austin and I learned how to do it then you know, because I hadn't ah....we put rubber bands around each one of the fingers and inserted them with liquid and tightened 'em up a little bit and we got his fingerprints.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's go ahead, do you want to cover this case thoroughly now or do you want to wait for....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I can wait, but I just I was just.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: If you want to wait well.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:to get into it, well...but I....tell you aboutI was getting around to tell you about Franklin. Yeah, because we need tothere's two or threeI want to tell you some.... I want to give some good murder cases on this thing and then you can pick out the ones you want. But Earl and I....do you want me to tell the story about he and I in Fort Worth?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We were up at Fort Worth, I think this was in about '64 or '65 and ah....the Nation....they was having a National Shrine Convention up there. And I was to ride a horse for a friend of mine that....whose daughter was getting married here, Travis Beavers, and ah.... I agreed to ride in the parade Saturday for him. And I was up there in Dallas working a criminal case and so I drove on over to Fort Worth and got over there just before news time at night and I was going to stay in the same motel room where Travis and Frances was....ah...had been occupying. And they come home to get their daughter married, Ellen, and ah....so I I check in and ah....turn the news on andthe ten o'clock news and I see they got a jail break in Marshall. And this is typical for Earl Franklin, I mean everybody in Marshall knows him, he's a tough good guy but he...he just he'd tend to business when he got ready. Anyway well ah....they ...in a few minutes my phone rang and I'd just checked in, they knew I was an officer and they said, 'Do you know a Sheriff Franklin'. And I said, 'I sure do'. And they said, 'Well we got an emergency call for him'. And I said, 'Well I don't have any idea where he's at'. And I said, 'Wherever the Shrine activities are for tonight, that's where he'll be'. Cause Earl liked to have a good time. So ah...he ah...they said, 'Well

they're having a dance down at...some place on Fort Worth Avenue'. And I said, 'That's where you'll find him'. And I said, 'Well call me back and let me know what he said'. Cause I ...I thought maybe Earl might say, 'Well let's go to Marshall'. And you know, if I had to I'd hook on that horse trailer and come on down here you know and gone to work. But after awhile, thirty or forty-five minutes, well this switch board operator at the motel there called me back and she said, 'Well we found Sheriff Franklin'. And I said, 'What did he say'. And he said, 'If they called back, you tell 'em me and the Ranger will there in a day or two and catch 'em'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they catch 'em or did ya'll?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No ah....ah....they caught 'em, but ah....they caught ah....they caught up around Terrell, between Wills Point and Terrell. They wrecked a car out up there later and it was some boys from Talco and I'll get into that later on. They wasthis was bank burglaries they was committing you know and I

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, we'll cover those later. What other....so what was all the Sheriff's do you remember that you worked with in Harrison County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...of course ah....Barry Roseborough was Sheriff over there and Barry was ah...he was just, well Barry was one of the kind of Sheriff's that ah....he was just hard to put your finger on. He'd ah....he was...he was....he wasn't really a lawman you know. There's a lot of Sheriff's that's lawmen. Earl Franklin was a lawman, he...he...you know, he...he was...he..he was real interesting. But Barry was...you know the kind of....and Barry would....wanted things to go smooth and he was pretty grouchy and ah...just...just...just his nature you know. Earl Franklin was Sheriff...Earl Franklin.... Earl Elliott was a former Highway Patrolman, he was Sheriff over there for awhile, just one term. And he's the one that built the new jail and they needed it. But ah....they

spent so much money that that beat Earl. And then ah...after Franklin was Shivers and ah...I had worked with Shivers as a Deputy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his first name, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...N. F., initials N. F. Shivers. Ah...he was from Karnack, he's still living and ah...ah...Fletcher, they called him....F was for Fletcher, I don't know what the N was for. Ah...he ah...I worked some criminal...ah...Shivers and I worked....Shivers was a field Deputy stationed down at Karnack and ah...ah...Earl had hired Barry Roseborough, the former Sheriff, to work for him. I don't know what the agreement was or anything but they was in a run off together maybe or something, I don't know what happened. I...I didn't let politics bother me like that anyway, cause I didn't care. But Barry was still a pretty grouchy old ah...bookkeeper and he was keeping books. And Barry got some of his money and Harrison County money crossed up. And Earl didn't fire him and he was going to wait for Grand Jury hearing and it beat Earl later down the line. He was...he thought Barry was doing a pretty good job and...and it was alleged that Barry was ah...a lot of guys would come in there and pay a DWI fine and...and he'd write them...he'd write two receipts, he'd give them a receipt for whatever, two fifty, three hundred dollars and he'd write one for the County for a hundred and fifty or something. And...and ah...that was what...and he ah...eventually made some restitution to the County and of course ah...and then...but it just got Earl, he...he should of run him off and he didn't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did anybody do any time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did anyone do any time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Ah...anyway Shivers was elected Sheriff and I had worked with Shivers as a Deputy and ...and ah...in fact we...we...we got a murder case down there that we'll

discuss which Judge Roe, you've heard me tell about that and they thought he had a heart attack and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Down at Uncertain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah...so Shivers was the next Sheriff I worked with over there and then ah...then Odom ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Frank Odom? No ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....Bill.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Bill Odom.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Was ah...elected Sheriff or appoint...I think maybe Fletcher may have resigned and Odom was appointed, I'm not sure, I don't remember. But I never did have a whole lot of trouble ah...I worked with Odom, Odom was just a little bit different you know. He was ah...and he.... (tape ends) Did you turn it on?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, we're on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Odom was a Police Chief over at Marshall when we was having all the college problems over there and ah....and everywhere you know, college campuses. Andand ah...and he quit, I didn't think he'd ever get back into law enforcement again, it was just a lot...you know there was a lot of stress in law enforcement. But ah...I forget what he..oh he went in the pottery business and then the pottery business went sour and ah...and he had to go back into something, so he'd been in law enforcement all his life. But I've worked with all the Sheriff's over there and...and Panola County has had a bunch of Sheriff's. And now Marion County didn't turn over as...or Cass County or Gregg. Ah...but Panola County would elect a Sheriff pretty regular down there, every two years...every two terms. And you know back in...well I guess in the early days they were just two year terms you know. For the Sheriff they eventually made it four.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Any particular favorite Sheriff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...I had a bunch of ah...of favorite work Sheriff's. Earl Franklin was a work Sheriff, I liked Earl Franklin, I liked to work with him. Ah...Johnny Spradlin down at Carthage and A. C. Heningan was two Sheriff's down there and now I knew the old Sheriff down there ahead of him, Corbett Akin. And Corbett was way back in the old days and he was one...we used Corbett's dogs all the time. I got some pictures I think in one of my scrape books, you've seen those dogs we had up here. And ah...we used them on a manhunt up here a time or two and heck I followed 'em all over Panola County down there on manhunts looking for bank robbers and everything else you know and jail escapees. And...and ah...but I didn't ever....Corbett wasn't a Ranger....wasn't a Sheriff while I was a Ranger, he was Sheriff while I was a Highway Patrolman. But A. C. Heningan worked for him and ah...and Johnny Spradlin ah...I never did...I don't think he ever worked for Corbett. But ah...most of the officers down at Panola County would come up as Deputies you know and get elected Sheriff. But we had a...there was a Hunt that got elected Sheriff down there and the Hunt family was in Panola County, a lot of Hunts down there. Ah...I worked with him some but ah...ah...mine and his personality wasn't ah...wasn't exactly a conflict in it, it was just kind of hard to....and everyone in awhile...a lot of the Sheriff's would get elected and they...they want to do things, they want to...they want to...they see what you've done and...but they want to do it. And ah...and some of them can and some of them can't you know. And ah...ah...and then there's old Sheriff's like Frank Brunt who was down at Rusk, Texas who had...just a good, solid Country Sheriff. Tatum Brown over at Henderson, Texas, I mean just good, solid...you...you could call 'em and if you wanted to put a thief in their jail, 'Yeah, bring 'em on over here Elliott', you know and 'There won't nobody know he's here unless you want 'em to'. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had a...you had real good relations with ah...police over in Rockwall didn't you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, oh yeah. The Sheriff over there at Rockwall ah...he...he was ah...ah...he had some controversy going too, but ah...ah...he...boy he was a lot of help ah...Price was his name, J. W. Price, I believe. Oh, I just...I tell you what, I made all...I made the Sheriff's conventions every year if I could and this was our vacation. I'd ah...I'd...I'd ask to go to the Sheriff's conventions, cause Woody Blanton up at Sherman, Texas...I learned a lot working for old Sheriff's like Woody Blanton and ah...he and Lewis Rigler were real good friends and ah...I've been up to Sherman a few times and he let me stay in the Grand Jury room. And back then you know the Grand Jury used to...they had jury rooms and ah...like now they take...like that jury going out at California on O. J., well back in those days the jury slept in the courthouse. And ah...they had ah...and they'd feed them there, maybe take them out to a cafe at dinner. But ah...ah...and I've been in and out nearly every jail, in fact I've ah...I think there's only been about nine ah...courthouses in Texas that I haven't been in officially.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Out of?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Two hundred and fifty-four. And that's pretty good. And ah...but if you work you know and you get out and stir well you're going to be getting in those places you know. And ah...some...some Sheriff's would have their bird dogs in the cell you know...and...out there in West Texas and some of them would have their feed, their horse feed, and ah....some of them would have...be full of prisoners you know. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this is a good time to bring up....you talk about all the different Sheriff's and yeah bring 'em on in, ah...what about the Merry-Go-Round?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I've...you know I got to play in the Merry-Go-Round a little bit but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Explain for future listeners what the Merry-Go-Round is.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, this was something that ah...that the public didn't frown on but the lawyers did. But ah...ah...for instances ah...I left here one time and...and we...you know when you get some known people that don't do anything but steal, everybody knows they steal, they don't have any visible means of support....you can't do it now and ah....but we could do it then. And ah...we could take a prisoner and put him in jail somewhere and not call his lawyer that same day you know and when you got back ...eventually got where you was going with him and a lot of times we'd be...and especially the Rangers and we was...I guess the Rangers was the ones that did it the most. But ah...if we start working with an old thief and he's been pretty active all over the state, well we're eventually going to wind back up where we....the warrant was issued for his arrest to begin with. But we might not get there for two or three days and...trying to clear up some business and maybe this Sheriff in Dallas wants to talk to him and maybe the Sheriff in Abilene wants to talk to him and...and so if I arrest him in Big Spring well I'm going to stop in Abilene and...or Sweetwater and by the time I get to Longview it may be next week you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: If this guy should be a drug addict or an alcoholic, I imagine....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....

ROBERT NIEMAN:DT's are running pretty good.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, but you know most of the time, I'll tell you Bobby, we'd ah...I got...I guess the best thing that ever happened to me one time, I was...I was moving one from ah...Terrell, Texas to ah....or Houston and ah...for the Rangers down there and I agreed to meet 'em in Nacogdoches and ah...and this old boy, we got in to....we got him down to Nacogdoches and he

cleared up a bunch of cow thefts and all them horse thieves and thefts and saddle thefts around...all over the eastern part of Texas from the Red River all the way down to below Houston, around Sugarland and as far west as Coffman County. And ah...the next day he's in jail in Houston and I think I'd got home about three o'clock in the morning and my phone rang about six and it was a television reporter from Houston. And he said he had just interviewed this guy in the jail and he was down there when they brought him in and he claimed that he was mistreated and that he had...his hands was...his wrists were pretty well eaten up from the handcuffs and he had some skinned places on them. And he said, 'Can you tell me what happened'. And I said, 'I sure can'. And this happened, I left Terrell with that rascal and he had checked in up there at the Terrell State Hospital trying to avoid arrest. And you know you can't take one out...and they kept him up there for a week or two and decided there wasn't anything wrong with him and they released him. Well they called Houston and put a hold on him and they called Houston and told him they was fixing to release him. So they called me and...and the Rangers did, and asked me if I'd...they was working with the Sheriff's office down there and asked me if I'd pick him up and meet them somewhere. Because they wasn't going to hold him any longer and they didn't have time to get to Terrell. Well heck, I was in Linden myself and ah...so I head...hooked 'em to Terrell and I got up there in time to pick him up and it was about...oh, late in the afternoon, in the summertime, and I left Terrell and I never will forget, I started getting into Athens, Texas and this guy either faked or he convinced me that he was fixing to have an epileptic seizure. And I had had a little experience with epileptic seizures with...you know in my career already, but not that...I knew I'd had enough that I didn't want him to have a seizure in my car. And he says ah...I says, 'Well what kind of...didn't they give you some medicine for a seizure'. They got medicine and he says, 'Yeah but I don't have any'. But he knew what he...what they had. Well I got into Athens, Texas and ah...Brownlow was the Sheriff

was there and he and Benny Krueger, a Ranger, were...it was just about dark and they was out shooting pigeons on the courthouse square in Athens, Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Benny still active?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah...and I was just lucky, I pulled in on the square there and saw 'em and I was looking for the Sheriff, I was going to try to find him. And I just pulled up there and told 'em I said, 'I got a problem, I got a guy here that says he's fixing to have an epileptic seizure and he knows what kind of medicine he needs and I don't have a prescription'. And the Sheriff said, 'Well the druggist right across the...the drug store's right across the street over here and I'll go in and call old John and tell him to come down here and he'll know what he can give him'. Said, 'We have to buy over here all the time for the jail sometimes and different medicines'. So he called the druggist and it...I guess it was a non-script item, I don't know, but anyway, I wound up with medicine. And ah...but that old boy...before I got in...right before I got into Athens he like to tore my car up. And I'll get back to that. And I was convinced then that he's been having some kind of seizure and he twisted his arms around and he beat his head on the side of the door and I finally got his attention and I told him you know, I had to stop and ah...I shook him a little bit and I told him, I said, 'If you'll just hold on, we going to get you some medicine'. And I did, I got him some medicine down there. And then we...and then I carried him on to Nacogdoches and ah...and he cleared up a bunch of stuff and went on to Houston, and the same night you know. And here we are, I'll get home about three o'clock in the morning and I guess he gets in jail down there about five, because the guy was there and that's about what time he called me I think, five or six in the morning, it was real early. And ah...and those Rangers they hadn't got to bed yet down there and ah...so I told him, I said, I told him my story and I said you know....and he said, 'Well you better talk to these boys down here cause they don't seem to know how he got it'. I said, 'Well he had it

when they saw him you know'. I said, 'You're hearing the story from me'. And he said, 'Well you might ought to call 'em back'. And I said, 'No, you talk to 'em yourself, if you got any questions ask 'em'. I said, 'That's what happened'. And I said, 'There ain't no use me talking to 'em'. But ah....things like this would happen you know and this was good to know the Sheriff's like we...like we did see, because I knew the Sheriff there in Athens and I was looking for him and...and if he'd of been in Longview he'd of been looking for me if he needed some help you know. And this is what I called the way to...the way to handle it you know. Cause I...I knew that I could work with the Sheriff's and did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the police departments?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, we didn't work with...the Rangers....I worked with the police a whole lot, I worked with Dallas police, worked with Longview, I made...worked some good cases here in Longview, we'll get into several of 'em here, these 27 school buses they blew up here in 1970 ah...4th of July, midnight, they called me out, I worked a lot of cases with them here. And ah...what I'd do with cases for people like Longview, they had several detectives you know, City of Longview did and in my rounds I'd go off in Dallas and Fort Worth and Houston and Shreveport and Monroe and...and Manny and Natchitoches, Louisiana and Oklahoma City and...and I knew those boys up there real well, Sugar Smith and a bunch of them up there at the Oklahoma PD and ah...and I'd find out who had committed some crimes in Longview you know. And I'd come back down here and I'd say, 'Well you know did ya'll have a safe burglary or so and so, or did you have this or that you know, well the old boys in jail up at Oklahoma City or he's in jail in New Orleans or somewhere you know'. And ah...this is the way I'd work with most of the city...now they'd call on me pretty regular but ah...I got called on pretty regular from a lot of places. But I started working with the Sheriff's more than I did the police. Now Marshall police used to use me a whole

lot. And ah....but it just seems that ah....I don't know, for some reason or another I was attracted more to work with the Sheriff's than I was the police.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that pretty standard for the Rangers though?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was at that time. It was at that time. Although you know, like I say, I'd go into Dallas and Wills Fritz and them would call me out here in the field, cause they was looking for somebody, cause they wanted somebody to work and help them. And Dallas needed help just as bad as we did you know. And ah...Decker ah...if he needed some help he'd call the Sheriff, but ah...you know if Fritz and them needed some help, they don't know whether...the old says he lives in Longview, he might live in Gladewater or Gregg County you know and there's several towns, and so they'd call me a whole lot. And ah...but they called me because they wanted it done you know and...and your relationship you know. If you...if you knock on their door and you come in their office and you have called on them, well they're going to....you know they're going to call on you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When did they officially put a stop to the Merry-Go-Round?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it kind of stopped itself. I think ah...ah...lawyers got to kind of rising a little bit of cane about their clients you know and ah...and they got...and the courts got more interested in the prisoners rights you know. They got....prisoners got all kinds of rights now you know and...and hell he didn't.... didn't deserve any rights at one time you know. Like I say, if there's an old boy that's out here and not...no visible means of support or anything and he's ah...ah...he's out here tearing the country up every night well, it didn't bother me to have him out of pocket from his lawyer for a day or two. Cause the lawyer is getting with the money he's stealing you know and ah...and unless it was some ...our local lawyers never did give us much trouble at all. I never did have but one case on a local attorney that I can think of and I wasn't hiding the old boy

and it was a...it was a...he was a burglar, he and his partner would go to automobile dealerships, they'd buy an old car, after they got into the money, they'd have 'em some kind of old car and they'd take it and trade it for a new one and they'd pay cash ah...difference, and get a title and they'd always do it on a Saturday and ah...trade on a Saturday morning and come back that night and peel the safe, get their money and what else..the rest of the money that was in there. And they'd always...they knew there was going to be....you know, of course that was back in the early '60's and of course you could buy a good car I guess then for three thousand or four thousand dollars, or whatever. And ah...but they always knew there was going to be that much money in that safe, cause that was before night deposits got popular. And these boys that ah...ah...was doing that and I...one of them, I finally made a case on him and I got a warrant for him for statutory rape out of Nacogdoches County. He had a...he was a truck driver, driving from out of Daingerfield up here and he got a little sixteen year old girl and ah...slept with her in his truck down at Nacogdoches one night, in the sleeper. And I heard about it through the Sheriff in Nacogdoches ah...John Lightfoot and ah...so...and John knew that we was trying make a....they...they burglarized an automobile dealership there in Nacogdoches and one in Lufkin I'm positive. And ah...and we was trying to...I was, trying to get 'em in custody, but I didn't have any....I knew that they had traded cars at both places you know, here at Pegues Hurst Motor Company here in Longview and I knew they traded cars and put...paid cash money the same day that they come back and hit the safe that night. And circumstances were the same in three different places so...but we...that's...we actually didn't have probable cause to get a warrant, cause you know you got to have something other than suspicion to get a warrant. And ah...so I get off down in Nacogdoches and find out where...and I ...and the Sheriff tells me about the parents of this girl and I went to them and got an affidavit from them and filed on him down at Nacogdoches County for statutory rape. And he was living ah...oh he was just

living everywhere, by then he had already quite driving a truck, cause these burglaries.... they'd already burglarized a bank in Lone Star and ah...by then and he was driving a Cadillac, done got out of Fords. And I'm out looking for him one Saturday afternoon and I met him between....he had a sister living up there pretty close to 155, on 259, just north of Orr City. And I met him between New Diana and Orr City and I recognized him driving this Cadillac, it was in the day time, and I turned on him and he recognized me. And he tried to out run me and did to his sister's house, which was four or five miles or six at the most, from where I met him. And he rolled right into her yard and jumped out and ran in the house and I'm right behind him. And I go on in and of course they tell me I can't come in that...you know, so they start hollering and his sister said, 'You can't come in this house'. Well I said, 'I'm already in it'. And ah...'How come I can't, I got a warrant for Buster Cooper for a felony and there he is and come on Buster we're gone'. So I...I brought him back, arrested him there and cuffed him and brought him back to Longview. And I got in down here at Longview five, six or seven o'clock at night and right at that time I had an office up on the third floor and Buster ah...I don't know how we get....I...you know I...you gonna have to be sorry for all this stuff here....I don't know how we got off on this. But Buster ah...ah...cleared his business up with me and it took us the biggest part of the night. Oh yeah, we got to talking about hiding prisoners. I fill out a jail card on him...I got jail cards up there in my desk and...and...I...just he and I up there and I'm up there typing up statements and he tells me about the Lone Star bank burglary and I didn't even know it had been burglarized. And a bunch of others, he cleared his business up. I've made out a jail card, left it laying there on my desk, carried him, got on the elevator and went up to the third floor, and we're talking about twelve or one o'clock at night on a Saturday night. I go downstairs and go home and...and ah...the jail cards laying up there on my desk. Buster's made me a statement, I should have carried him out and bought his supper, you know, but I was too tired.

But I was proud to clear up all these burglaries. And he told me who was with him, boy named Leonard, L. G. Clem and he's in California, all that good stuff. Next morning the phone rings, nine o'clock, I'm getting ready to go to Church, Sunday School, tired, always tired and ah...it was ah...Welby Parish, Welby's daughter just got elected District Judge up at Upshur County and Bob Parker, Robert Parker, a friend of mine whose now the Sr. United States Judge for the Eastern District of Texas and they're two young lawyers coming down from Gilmer, Texas, called me on the telephone. 'Glenn do you have... where is Buster Waylon Cooper, I represent him', Welby's talking. I said, 'He's up there in the Gregg County jail Welby, where are you'. 'That's where I'm at', he said, 'They say he's not here'. And I said, 'Well their mistaken, cause he's there, I put him in there last night about midnight'. And ah... they said, 'Well, I wished you tell 'em where to find him'. And I said, 'Well I'll be down there in a few minutes'. So I come on down to the courthouse and walked in the door and walked in the dispatch room. I said, 'I put Buster Cooper in jail here last night about midnight'. And I said, 'He ought to be on the book there'. 'No, he's not here Glenn, we've been looking for him'. I said, 'Ya'll come on let's go upstairs'. I said, 'I suspect I know what's happened'. I got up there and there laying on my desk was the jail card all made out, time of day, date and everything, I carried Buster....see I'm on the third floor, I get on the elevator and carry him on up to four, put him in jail and probably go right on down and get in my car and go home you know. And ah...but I had the jail card, but they accused me of hiding him you know and I said, 'Now look, you know, there had been a time that we...I might of hidden him'. But I said, 'Buster cooperated with me'. You know, I said, 'He told me everything I wanted to know'. And I said, 'Why would I want to go hide him for anybody'. He told me he didn't want to make a bond, he wanted to go ahead and get his time and get it behind him. But ah...this is about the time, little bit before that, it started changing because ah...we had more young lawyers and ...and ah...and they

was out hustling and trying to make a living and...and our old thieves got ah...we got rid of most of them you know, we got a new bunch of thieves. And so ah...time changes, like the Miranda warning came along and ah...and this stuff, it was just a...it was a change in time and that we had to adapt to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well a lot of...I've heard Rangers today say, you know, I sure wish I could work under the conditions Glenn or Max Womack, Lewis Rigler, but you know your always saying

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I wish I could of worked under some like Goss and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Gonzauillas.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and Gonzauillas and you know and...cause there's ah...it's got a whole lot easier every generation, and not just Rangers, since the early days. It's gotten a lot easier on the criminals you know, they...they...they live in an air conditioned jail house and got television and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Better health care than we got.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and libraries and got good food and all the medical attention they need and...and it's just been a complete turn around and ah...but that's just the way it's gone you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But we was talking about the Merry-Go-Round and it's...yeah it's...it's ah...ah...it was fun though. And like I said, you'd be surprised and the Sheriff's will tell you, you know I...you know I...I'd be going...and I'd stopped, I worked with all the Sheriff's, I enjoyed working with them. 'Elliott, you ever need to use my jail, it's here partner'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know Max Womack used the Merry-Go-Round ah...it's in his interview ah...Rigler said he used it ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah, yeah. I...I expect ah...ah...every Rangers that's...from Max on back I...I...it ...it started phasing out pretty soon after Max come along. But ah...but no it was not unusual and....and it helped us to do that you know. And the old thieves had a lot more respect for us, ah...they didn't like that Merry-Go-Round and ah...and...but they respected us for it. Because they knew we was trying to solve a crime, that's what we was getting paid to do and they knew it you know. And ah...so hell, why not use every angle you can you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you want to start on murders or burglaries or

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, let me see, I had another note or two left here that we could talk on just a minute this evening, we got...we got about fifteen more minutes. Ah....I talked about....oh yeah, I tell you what ah...I moved back to Longview in 1963, we....we're into 1963, and August 31st moved back to Longview. And in November of '63 I had my first contact with this old boy that we had a problem with up at Dallas, had a feud up there you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mathis?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Charles Robert Mathis and ah...we suspected him of a school burglary over at ah...in Cass County and I got a bunch of....this is another thing that I like to do and ah...ah...I'd get some known offenders and I'd camp on their doorstep. Ah...if they was out of Austin or if they was out of Texarkana, if they was out of Longview, if they was out of Dallas, if they was coming down in my....in this part of the country, then I...I got all the information I could on them. So these boys, we knew that Charles Mathis and his group were doing a lot of burglaries and they was doing a lot of safe burglaries. So I spent a lot of time on him. I'd go to Texarkana and I'd do...I'd get the kind of vehicle they was driving, the license number and who they was running with and get pictures of them, the latest pictures and distribute 'em to all the police departments and Sheriff's offices and...and ah....try to keep up with the kind of cars they was in and trying to catch them. And

ah...and they knew that was what I was doing. So I had just compiled a flyer on this bunch from Texarkana, and there was about five of them running together, had all of their pictures and had 'em published in the D-4 bulletins at Austin and every Sheriff and police department in the State of Texas and some of the surrounding states got this bulletin every month. And ah...I published their pictures in it and the kind of vehicles associated with 'em and low and behold I get a call one night from the police department....and this happened November the 17th, 1963, just a short time after I'd first talked to....you know, I knew they was stealing but I...we...we thought we was going to make 'em on a case up there at Linden, but we didn't. I get a call from the police department in Kilgore, Texas, 'Glenn you know that flyer you brought over here and left a couple weeks ago'. Said, 'We got this Mathis'. And said, 'He jumped on one of our policemen and tried to knock him down'. And knocked his glasses off, he was an older man and couldn't see without his glasses at all. And Mathis and ah...he caught two of them coming down a oil derrick off the top of a building. And he didn't know at that time what they'd done and ah...and he was going to take 'em down to the police station and ah...one of them, Mathis, hit him and knocked his glasses off and they both ran. And he just shot in the direction of them and accidentally hit Mathis in the leg, a good flesh wound, and the other guy got away. So I went on to Kilgore and ah...and just...it didn't take me long to get over there and ah...so they described this other one and I knew who he was, his name was Lyman Bertrum, and he described him to a tee, this....and he got a good look at him before he knocked his glasses off. And so I called Bill Doudt, the Sheriff up at Linden, and I told Bill I said, 'Get out there and set up a road block and Lyman Bertrum will be coming through there pretty quick on his way back to Texarkana'. And it was ten minutes that Bill Doudt had him in custody. And ah...so we get Lyman back down here and...and ah...of course Mathis went to the hospital, he was shot, and Lyman tells us, yeah the burglarized a finance company. And we got over there and got the guy

that owned the finance company to come up there and they done peeled the safe and got all his money out of his safe up in the finance company, went through the roof and nobody....no sign...the safe was in the back. But I had my first contact with him.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well tell me something, how do you peel a safe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, different burglaries peel a safe different. That's how come...most of them will pretty well put their mark on a safe.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt again, it that....

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I can tell you how they peel one.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well should we wait until we get into burglaries before we get into that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that would be good. And ah...maybe we can...let me ah...let's see ah...it seemed like ah ... yeah, in '63 also long about the last of '63, I'll show you another area we got into, we'd get into regular and this is one of my first cases that I worked with Clint Peoples. Ah...we got a call or captain called me one...or the sergeant did one Saturday morning and said, 'They've got three fugitives on the ground out at Buckholts, Texas which is down in central Texas where....between Cameron and Waco I think, must be 200 miles down there, I think I noticed I drove 465 miles that day. Anyway, I get a call real early Saturday morning right before daylight. The Highway Patrol had got after some people down there and they abandoned their car and they found out their car was stolen out of Mississippi and that they'd murdered a man and wife that owned the car and threw them in a well up there. And they was also wanted in Oklahoma for murder. So we had three people on the ground so we...I cut out to Buckholts, Texas and well ah...I passed two or three Rangers too going down there you know, cause I'm in a hurry to get down there see. And I never will forget, I got down there and Clint...ah...Buckholts as I remember it, that's the first and only time I've ever been there I guess. But is was a small community down there

on the main highway, it was a nice road, had an improved shoulder down both sides and...and...and some businesses on both sides of the road there, plenty of room to park. And I never will forget, I drove up and Clint had two wheels of his car setting out on the main highway and he was standing outside talking on the radio. And there was a TV news media with a station wagon had a...had a platform on top of it and their up there taking Clint's picture while he's directing this ah...ah...manhunt. And I pull up and ah...and ah...Clint ah... I report to him, that's what I was instructed to do and I say, 'I'm here to help in anyway I can'. Well I'm on....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this your first time to meet Peoples?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, see ah...Clint Peoples had offered me a Rangers' job.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, that's right, that's right.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I knew him, of course and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I'd forgotten about that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...and...and we got along, we got along well. But you know this is different, Clint this is his thing, he was eating this thing up. And ah...so he sends a guy...I said, I said, 'I'll just be over here at my car and...when you get'. I got out the...I didn't want to get in his TV picture and ah...so ah...he sends...he said, 'I'll send...get somebody to work with you'. And in about fifteen minutes here come a guy with a camera in his hand. Said, 'Captain Peoples told me work with you'. And I said, 'You a police officer'. And he said, 'No, I'm a...with a newspaper up here at Cameron', or something. I said, 'Well there's been a mistake made partner, this...just a minute, you just kind of stand by a minute'. And I said, 'I don't know this country that well and...and ah...I'm going to be driving a car and there's three fugitives out there and I'd like to have some officer with me that knows the country'. And sure as hell didn't want somebody there taking my picture while I'm trying to find three fugitives'. So I went back over and talked with Captain

Peoples, I said, 'Captain I think there's some mistake been made here'. I said, 'This guy comes over there and tells me he's going to work with me and he's a newspaper reporter with a camera'. And I said, 'I don't particularly want him with me'. 'Oh well I'll get you somebody else'. Well he got an old four eyed guy with the cattle raisers association and he had some big old thick glasses on, but he had a damn gun as long as from here to that door, couldn't hardly get it in my car and he knew that country like the back of his hand and I felt good you know. And we got 'em in custody before night, that night and he'll come on back home you know. But that was my first time a case with Clint, now I had...I'd worked this James Hugh Leggett that he mentioned in his book and I got a big file on him there. And you asked me about the Kennedy, the day President Kennedy was assassinated in Dallas was 11th...November 23, 1963. Is that right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I was in Dallas that day and thank goodness I wasn't up there to be assigned to ah...to work security for him. And I...I knew I was in Dallas and I did get involved in it and I'll tell you how. But ah...I was working a criminal case and Red Arnold and I...it was a companion case, and there was some burglars and we had carried two up there to run them on the polygraph test. And ah...I don't remember whether we had already run them or....but we was eating lunch, I think we ran one of them. Andand he copped out and we didn't have to run the other one, and I believe that's the way my memory...and my report didn't exactly reflect...it just, you know, it was pretty brief, my reports was pretty brief about ah...what we did and....because they wanted to keep those reports simple.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum...uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Our weekly reports. And ah...anyway we had...we went to eat lunch and we heard about the President's assassination at lunch, we eat an early lunch, seemed like he...this happened around eleven or eleven thirty in the morning, so it was around noontime.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I think he got shot about twelve fifteen, twelve thirty.

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was on his way to a luncheon.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway, we was...we was....we had already finished eating, so we hooked 'em back to the office and I got back to the office and the phone was just a ringing off the wall.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now was this the off...the old log cabin still?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no we were out on Northwest Highway, our office was on Northwest Highway in Garland.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where it's at now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's ah...it's ah...it's at Beltline and Interstate 30 now and Northwest Highway is over at the Garland Airport.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You remember where the old Garland Airport was over there. It's just to the left going around 635, you can see it over there on your left, going around west. Anyway, our office was over there then and ah...and we was down on Garland Road and ah...and eating lunch and we wasn't but 14, 15 blocks from the office. Anyway, went on back to the office and Colonel Garrison....the phone was ringing and I answered the phone and it was ah...Colonel Garrison. And he's ah...he said, 'I want to know what's going on in Dallas and you know to keep this line open until I find out'. And I told him you know, all I knew. And I said, 'Colonel, you know, the lines open'. And I said, we've got...I'd already...by the time I got up there...back there, I'd already found

out that Charlie Moore was already on his way down to the Dallas police department. Captain Crowder was on his way to the office ah...and the rest of the crew was doing whatever...I think two of them went down to make sure that the Governor proper security at the hospital. And ah...they had some Rangers up there, the local Rangers, I think maybe Fort Worth or somebody, I don't remember who all was up there to tell you the truth, cause I didn't get to see any of them. Captain Crowder is the only one that I saw, he came on out, we established radio contact with him, the sergeant went with Charlie and ah....so I guess that... and we had a Adjutant there that ah...I had...he got on the phone to ah...the Colonel while I was getting on another telephone. But we kept the line open there and I guess we stayed there for, oh a couple of hours anyway, til...til somebody got there to ...to let the Colonel know what was going on and then we established radio contact with Charlie, because the telephone system was so screwed by then you know that you couldn't hardly get a line out of anything you know, there....anywhere in Dallas, especially the police department or the DPS. And we may have stayed around there for two or three hours but ah...I think we had these prisoners, we knew we was going to have to put 'em in jail, we had a little old lockup there, just a small room to....the polygraph room, but we was going to have to feed 'em and go put them in jail somewhere and the captain told us just to...you know, get on, that there was plenty of folks up there to work on that. And ah...so we went on about our business and that was my part of the Kennedy assassination. But the Colonel was ah...he..he want...of course our Governor was shot you know and ah...I'm sure his phone was ringing down there too you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Charlie Moore work on it quite a bit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Charlie worked on it some, I don't know how much, I don't know how many reports Charlie made on that or anything, I didn't ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did the Federal boys basically push the State boys out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...no, I'll tell you what ah...Will Fritz and them pretty well handled that investigation. Will Fritz was tops, you didn't get any better than his...his department. I'm going to tell you something, you did not get any better than Will Fritz's department in Dallas, Texas, in homicide or robbery investigation, you just didn't get any better. And everybody knew that. Of course Washington I'm sure was pressuring the Federal's and the Federal's are just so damn many different agencies it's pitiful. And each agency is competing against the other one and sure they...but they didn't take anything away from Will Fritz I'll tell you that right now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Held his own.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Charlie...and no disrespect to Charlie but I had...I think my relations with Fritz was probably as good or better than Charlie's and him living out there in Dallas, because they didn't call on ... you know Dallas didn't need Charlie Moore unless they got a warrant for somebody for....for a homicide or something that lived out inin some adjoining County or somewhere you know and...and they'd call on Charlie and he'd go with 'em and help get 'em you know. But ah...they didn't need any help.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well in a City, it is...would it be more common for say the ah...the DA to call in the Rangers than it would the City police?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Well see Dallas ah...larger counties and the smaller counties the DA would call a whole lot of times, but ah...we tried...I tried to avoid that because if you get a call from a DA then ...then the Sheriff or the police department is going to get upset a little bit you know. So most of the time ah...ah...they had investigators in the bigger towns then and later got them in the rural communities. But we worked with the Sheriff and police department, and you're working with the folks that's on the ground floor and then there's no controversy then, you know, you get with the people that's on the ground floor and your not trying to take anything away from them.

And I guess you probably noticed in my scrapbook, they...Longview wrote an Editorial about this Kentucky Fried Chicken, cause there wasn't anybody in charge. Well, hell ah...there was plenty of folks in charge, you know, every....we knew...we met practically daily and discussed our activities each one of us, each agency that worked on it and ah...and most of the time we'd have different people to get up and start the program, but we knew what was going on. And ah...you know, but the news was making an issue out of it, but if you get in on the ground floor and get started and working with other agencies...but no, we got very few calls from the District Attorney's, I did. They like to work with us you know and all my DA's, you had to get along with them, because they're the ones that you go to next you know. But ah...no as far as that Dallas deal is concerned, I don't know how long Charlie stayed down there, but it probably took him a half of the damn evening to get into the office down there. I mean I'm serious.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Cause I've heard 'em talk about how the halls were just full of newspaper reporters and sightseers and everything else and it was ah....but I promise you one thing I didn't see Will Fritz but he didn't get excited about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know all that confusion and then you wonder you know, Jack Ruby just strolls right down that ramp and....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right. Well I'll tell you about Jack Ruby now, Jack Ruby was a friend of the policemen. He had a bar right across the street from the police department and I'd been in the dern place myself and it was not unusual this was before they started getting bars in the police department you know. And I guess Oklahoma City was the first place that I ever went that got a bar that didn't belong...couldn't anybody go through but the police officers. And it was kind of a no-no, you know, for an officer to take a drink and be known you know. But it wasn't unusual for I'd

been in Dallas allall hours of the day and night, every day of the damn week and it was not unusual for us to wind up over there at ten or eleven o'clock at night , at the police department, and walk across the street maybe and have us a drink.

ROBERT NIEMAN: There at Ruby's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And your one of the police officers and he...and ah...and Jack Ruby...I forget the name of the place, we didn't go over there to see them old gals, he...of course ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, the Kit Kat Club or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't even remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't either.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But this was...now see later the police got to doing this and they got their...they starting getting their own clubs you know, for they....if they wanted to go have a drink they wouldn't have to be putting up with anything. Boy in Oklahoma City, when I went up there I couldn't believe, the first time I went to the police department in Oklahoma City, and I was just a young Ranger just...shoot...Sugar Smith was a homicide up there and ...and ah...we had a lot of companion cases between here and Oklahoma City, you'd just be surprised.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this....I mean you say it's their own club, is it right there in the City Hall or

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they bought a...a...what the police department did in Oklahoma City, they bought an old grocery store down about four blocks from the police station and they converted it into half...part of it into a private club for the officers and the other part into a bingo parlor that anybody could ah....and you know what that did. They had the best revenue in town you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: The bingo was paying all their expenses and they hired some people to run the bar, there was a....there was a retired police officer ran it, they had some....oh they had pool tables, they had fast draw ah...ah...machines you know andand it was just a good place to go relax with a bunch of police officers. And the drinks maybe cost you fifty cents or something like that you know, just like a third of what you'd pay then at a....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, did you ever run across an FBI agent who had been an Oklahoma City policeman for years up there, is a legend, named Jelly Brice?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was a legend....he was one of the greatest pistol shots ah....he's one of those you'd love to see him and Goss going head to head.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, Brice was legendary in the FBI for his

GLENN ELLIOTT: I run into a lot of people up there. You see I....we made I got into homicide pretty good and robbery, because we had quite a few of them down here and ah...so that's another thing we....we had a National Armed Robbery conference that met once a year. I've been to Nashville, Tennessee, Oklahoma City, Phoenix, Arizona.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this Jelly Brice was legendary for his ability with a pistol.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I knew some FBI agents in Oklahoma City.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he was from...he'd come out of the Oklahoma City police department into the FBI. In fact he's one of the ones that set up the pistol program that the F...for the FBI.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's probably why they recruited him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Because ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: And like Bob Goss he didn't have any compulsion at all about using that gun.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....but anyway, this is how Jack Ruby got in over there in Dallas, back to him, because.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what kind of guy was Ruby?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you know I...I...I suspect Ruby may of come by the table over there one time and I didn't frequent that place that much. I..I..I've been a social drinker but I...I...you know probably walked across over there to the street ten or eleven o'clock at night and take me a drink and then get in my car and come home you know, back to Longview.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what did you think you saw that Jack Ruby killed Lee Harvey Oswald?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....ah you know I knew who he was right away you know, but ah...I was surprised just like everybody else. But you know it was just a guyhere's a guy that was in and out of that police station all the time. He was fascinated with police officers, hell Jack Ruby had lot rather been a police officer than he had a joint operator, probably. There's a lot of folks that a way. And ah....I knew that he wasyou know every policeman knew him and he knew most of the policemen, old hands over there. He did not know me because I bet I hadn't been in his place three times you know ah...and...but I know they went over there you know. And the Deputy Sheriff's ...you know he...he...I'm sure that he bought plenty of policemen whiskey you know, because he...he just liked to see 'em in there you know, that just suited him with the police officers.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what about later on when it was revealed that you know, he may of had connections to organized crime?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, this is not unusual, you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, I mean....well...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'm talking about....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean

GLENN ELLIOTT: What I'm saying is that here's a guy that ah...he wasn't doing anything, I don't know what his ties were, unless it was prostitution, but he wasn't all that successful you know. The son of a gun was broke when he went in jail you know. And ah...ah...itthis maybe more news media than anything else you know. I think the only place they tried to tie him to was some.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is a continuation of our interview on the life of Glenn Elliott. This is Monday night, April 10, 1995. Glenn when we stopped last week we were talking about some of the Sheriff's in the area that you worked with and I don't think we completed it did we?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, well we talked about a bunch of 'em and I forget which ones we talked about. But I...I guess that ahprobably you know I worked probably 90% of my time with the Sheriff's and ah....that seemed like it worked better for me. And.....because we used the Sheriff's jails all the time and ah....and it was just.....I enjoyed working with Sheriff's and most of their cases seemed like there was traveling to do and ah.... I didn't mind going you know. And I mentioned a few Sheriff's but ah...I...I...I've made a few notes of a bunch more that I had worked with and I didn't ah...ah....Luke Walker was a business man, an accountant, up in Marion County and was Sheriff. We had a bunch ofwe had some good professional people that got into the law enforcement.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that Jefferson?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And this was an old settled county and I would....and Luke would call me regular, cause he only had one or two deputies. And ah....he and I traveled all over Texas and worked criminal cases together and ah....we worked some cases up there ah....we worked one, a suicide, where athis ah....person drowned and ah....they had actually walked out in the water, tied some old smoothing irons, it was a black person, around their waist and ah....and walked out in a pool and ah....just got to.....and they couldn't swim until they got in water over their head and they had all intentions in the world of killing their self but..... I've still got two of the old smoothing irons that ah....but....and ah....I worked with a young Sheriff up in Cass County named Bill Dowd who was raised up here in Upshur County. And Bill was a former DPS ah....ah....Highway Patrolman and went to school here at LeTourneau College and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Cass County Atlanta?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah...yeah Atlanta, Linden's the county seat. And Bill got elected Sheriff ah....and started his term in office in January when I started in the Rangers in September. And ah....Bill and I kind of got broke in together you know, and ah....and we worked a lot of criminal cases. We worked this Bloomberg bank burglary I was telling you about that everybody in town woke up.....and we spent a lot of time in Louisiana andand ah....back and forth in Arkansas working that thing. And ah....and there was an old Sheriff up at Gilmer named Posey Seago, Posey was a.....from the old school.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's Upshur County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Gilmer....and I remember one time my partner and I we put a guy in jail up there ah....we...wewe worked over here in Upshur County some, we'd get called on a wreck at Orr City or

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that Red Arnold?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no....ah.....what do you mean ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You said your partner.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, my partner....that was when I was on the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: See, II workedPosey was Sheriff two different times. He was Sheriff once when I was a Highway Patrolman and he was Sheriff again when I was a Ranger. And I worked with him both times. I thought of a funny story....Posey was the old type, we went up there one time and ah....and we put a drunk driver in jail up there one night. And oh a month later well we put another drunk driver in up there and ah.....and there was a Mexican boy in the jail up there and ah....and ah.... I asked Posey.....Posey stayed....lived in the jail, he and his wife, and this was common back in those days. A lot of the Sheriff's lived.....ah....Bill Dowd lived in the jail and his wife did all the cooking. And this was not unusual, nearly every jail back in the early days had apartments for the Sheriff to live in. And ah....anyway we was up there putting this guy in jail and I asked Posey I said, 'How long you gonna have this....keep this Mexican boy in jail'. And he said, 'Til he learns how to speak English'. Man that Mexican said, 'Me speak a little English', you know and ah....but stories like this are interesting you know and probably would be. And then I think I mentioned Frank Brunt, Frank was an old Sheriff down in Cherokee County andand ah... Frank organized the East Texas Peace Officers Association. And the first meeting was in Rusk, Texas. And Frank Brunt had the habit of when he wanted one of.....somebody to send after somebody well he'd call somebody in that lived in the community, if it was black or white, and he said, 'Well have you seen old Glenn lately', you know and ah....they say, maybe say, whatever they'd say, 'Yeah I run into him'. And he'd reach in his belt and get a .45 bullet and get his pocket knife and he'd cut a little old notch in it. And he'd give it

to that guy and he said, 'Well the next time you see old Glenn', said, 'Tell him to bring me this bullet Saturday I need to talk to him'. And come Saturday old Glenn would comeor John, whoever it was, would come walking in that office with his hat in his hand and said, 'Mr. Brunt you want to see me about something'. And he'd have that bullet in one hand and his hat in the other. And of course I worked with Noble Crawford and you and I have talked about Noble. And ah....and ah....Tatum Brown, I mentioned Tatum over at Henderson, Texas, well Tatum was just an old country Sheriff that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Rusk County.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Rusk County, that ah....Tatum was the kind of guy that I don't know whether I told you the story about Tatum, but one time ah....two of....Tatum wouldn't let his deputies do anything, he wanted to do it himself. I wish you could of talked to him before he died, Tatum died a couple of years ago. And I was a pallbearer at his funeral and was tickled to be you know. Andbut Tatum got a call, two of his deputies called in one time and said they had a guy in a house down around Mt. Enterprise and he wouldn't come out. And they had a warrant for him and they said he had a shotgun. And Tatum told 'em, said, 'Just leave him alone I'll be down there in a little while'. He talked real fast and said he just drove updeputy said he drove up in the yard down there and he just walked on in the house just like he lived there and told him, said, 'Now put that shotgun down, get up and come on, you're going to jail'. And said the guy asked him said, 'Well let me put my shoes'. 'No you ain't going to put your shoes on, you knew I was coming you ought to had your shoes on already'. And that's what he'd do, just drug him on out and took him to jail you know. And ah....of course I mentioned Woody Blanton up at ah....in Sherman and ah.... Grayson.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's County is that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Grayson County. And I worked up there right smart because we had.....you know my tractor ah....that went missing from Upshur County while Red was on vacation and Posey was Sheriff again then and I worked.....that was one of the first cases I worked up there in Sherman. And ah....and Woody was an outstanding lawman. Ah....and everybody knew it. He was a single man, he never had married, heand he had an old maid sister that never had married. They lived together and Woody worked like I liked to work. He ah....you could catch him around that office just like Bill Decker, he'd be there at midnight and six o'clock in the morning if you didn't watch it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don'thow long has it been since you've been in ah...Rigler, Lewis Rigler, that's LEWIS, Rigler's office, but he has a poster up....hanging up on his office wall there in ah....ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Gainsville?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gainsville of a....an election poster of Woody Blanton.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Woody was an outstanding Sheriff and I learned a whole lot from Woody Blanton. And a bunch of these other Sheriff's I worked with. And ah....of course Bill Decker, I mentioned him, I never worked with Decker but I've been in his office plenty of times and I set and eat with him at the jail at night up there. And he always had his meals up there at the jail at night and if he saw one of us in there well he called and asked us to come in and eat with him. And he'd assign us a deputy to do anything that needed to be done in Dallas County if we needed some help. And I always appreciated that. Of course I worked with Johnny Spradlin down at Panola County and Johnny and I worked a lot of ah....ah....and Johnny was a hard working officer. Ah....we worked a lot of murder cases. You know I think I told you one year we

had five bodies dumped in Panola County and none of them was related to that county. It just ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he related to Sonny?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no he wasn't. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sonny Spradlin?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: From Kilgore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, wasn't any relations. And then there was another Sheriff came along behind Johnny down there named Acey Hennigan and Acey was a deputy under one of the old.....Corbett Akin way back early. And Acey was a hard working guy. And most of these guys were pipe liners or something before they....you know, of course got into law enforcement . But ah....Acey would call me.....he looked for a reason to call me. And ah....Johnny wouldn't call me unless he needed some help, but Acey he'd look for a reason to call me. And ah....andthey....he lived in the jail, we'd....I'd go up there and he'd....he and his wife, break.....dinner, breakfast, supper, whatever time of day it was you know. And ah....then I mentioned old Bud Gregory, Sheriff out at Andrews, Texas and I don't even remember what County seat Andrews is, but it's out ah....west of Odessa. And Bud was originally raised out here at White Oak and he made a good Sheriff up there. And then there was a Sheriff up in Fannin County named Hoyt Ivy we worked with a whole lot and ah....Hoyt was aah....he was a good hand and he'd do anything he could for the Rangers and wanted the Rangers to help him you know and he'd call you. And ah....of course they had another old country Sheriff named Jr. Tittle and Jr. was Sheriff of two different counties, ah....Mt. Vernon, Franklin County and then later when he died he was Sheriff in Hopkins County. And he only.....he got.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What town's in Hopkins?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Sulphur Springs, which is an adjoining county up there. And about two weeks before Jr. died, and his wife and boy told me this, he was sitting at the breakfast table one morning, lived in the jail down there and ah.....told his wife he said, 'Honey I don't I never.....you and I never have talked about this, but said, I want to tell you something'. He said, 'When I die if so and so, and so and so are still living I want them to be pallbearers'. And he named me as one of his pallbearers and two weeks later he had a heart attack and died. And of course I went up there and helped bury old Jr. And ah....and then there was a former Sheriff of Hopkins County before Jr. named Popeye Jones and old Popeye was just a county Sheriff, but ah....and a young man too. And ah....that just would work his heart out. And then I worked with an old Sheriff named John Lightfoot down at Nacogdoches and John you could call him and tell himJohn....I've gone to see him....every time I see John he tells me about some time that I had called him and, 'John I got a so and so committing forgery down there in your county and I'm going to bring the papers down there and I'd like to file a complaint and put him in your jail', you know. And John was always receptive, anything you wanted to do. And then there was an old Sheriff over at Tyler named Harlen Long and I'd worked the Sheriff before Harlen. But...I don't know, it seemed like that I got around right smart and these folks knew that I was available and if some of the other Rangers were gone if....ah....if Jim Ray was out of pocket ah....well they'd call me you know, if they needed some help and ah...and I go you know. And I got a couple of calls over there from ah....on election problems and....during Harlen's tenure of office and he was Sheriff over there a long time. And I was in and out of his jail a whole lot you know, cause interviewing.....ah....we'd go talk to these old convicts there in jail you know. And ah....and a lot of our federal prisoners ah....of course most of them were being handled there in

Smith County at the time. And ah....and a lot of them we were responsible for them being in jail and we'd have to go talk to 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it was a rarityit was a rarity when Sheriff's didn't want.....did not want to work with you, but there was certain cases that.....ah....certain Sheriff's that I heard you and other Rangers mention that just....it is ego?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I guess ah....a whole lot of it is ego. And ah.... I guess that a lot of them thought that....that the people.....and Iand they I guess justifiably so, that the people elected them to do the job you know. But ah....and they thought they ought to do it and they'd do the best they could and a lot of times do it you know. But ah....eventually or around about....around the corner some way, they'dthey'd holler at you every once in awhile wanting a little help you know, especially if they got in a bind. Well, this is how you got your foot in the door, you know. Once youthey get in a bind, one of their deputies got to shoot somebody or something and they got to have an outside agency investigate or something, then....then you get to kind of break the ice with them and then, 'Look you know, I don't mind working these kind of cases but I'd like to work a few other you know when I'm over here'. Cause I wasn't a bit bashful you know. And ah....and then you could kind of get your foot in the door then, because I liked to work in every County that I had assigned to me and a bunch more if they'd let me you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well speaking of that, you didn't mention ah....ah....when you first came on the Rangers part of Bowie County.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the.... I tell you what, Bowie County to be truthful with you ah.....didn't have that all.....that aggressive Sheriff's office, never had. I don't know why. Ah....I've known some good....some Sheriff's up there that were very cooperative but they very

seldom ever called anybody for any help. Of course Texarkana was you know, setting up there on the edge and there was a lot oflot of old criminals a living up there andand the old click up there, what I call the click, kind of ran Bowie County and ah.... they didn't particularly care whether any Rangers come in up there or not. I don't know why.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well...Bowie County was particularly well known for it's houses of prostitution.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But were they any more really prevalent there than were say Gregg County or Smith County or Nacogdoches County or any where else?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they ah....counties that were wet especially ah....were attracted to prostitution, not as much like Smith and Nacogdoches County, back in those days they were dry. Of course now you know Smith County is still dry but there's probably more ah....licensed premises in Smith County as there are over here even. But ah....yeah the prostitutes would go to those areas where there's alcohol being sold. And ahit was not unusual and yeah I worked up in Texarkana too onon the prostitution deal and ah...we'll get into that probably a little bit later.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....but ah....and Iof course the young Sheriff's like J.B. Smith and ah....ah....over at Smith County and Bobby Weaver here, I've worked with them and ah.....and ah....Doyle Johnson up in Upshur County came along later and ah.....as a young Sheriff and Doyle and I worked some good cases together. We'll get into one case that I worked up there and ah....later on thatwhen we get to my reports. And then of course down in Panola County at ah.... I told you.... I mentioned the Hunt's. And then we had a very tragic thing happen to us

down in Panola County one time. A David Clabaugh, he was a....David was Sheriff down there ah....ah....and David was not a lawman, it was C L A B A U G H was the proper spelling on his name, and ah.... I had worked....David would call me you know. He was....he was real nervous type individual and he retired from the Post Office and I think he was appointed Sheriff down there and then ran and was elected. And ah....David was just working his heart out and ah....he'd get out there and just work day and night. And we had been ah....just prior to ah....ah....this incident happening down there well we had....we had a kidnapping and aof a woman whodown in Rusk County and ah.....she disappeared and ah....we got on the search for her down there using a helicopter and David came up and rode in the helicopter with us andwhile we was riding Panola County border looking for this car and ah....that had abducted this woman. And ah....so we never did find a body, they convicted a woman and man that ah....that kidnapped her. But anyway, David had been in there....in this helicopter and I had instructed him andyou know, to approach a helicopter from the front and all this stuff and he did on this first occasion . And it wasn't but just a few months after that until David called me and ahhe was on a man hunt for a subject that had committed murder down in the ah....south ah....west part of Panola County. In fact these.....finally got to establish contact and I met him down there late one afternoon, I was busy working on something else and I got down there late one afternoon andactually it was af....after dark, we ah....they called the hunt off at night because they didn't have any dogs down there and ah....the country was real dense andand he said, 'Do you think I could get the helicopter down here tomorrow morning'. So I was so deep down in Panola County that I couldn't even establish radio contact with Tyler and I had to go through Lufkin. But anyway, I had the helicopter out of Dallas agree to meet me at the Gregg County Airport the next morning at seven o'clock I think, or seven-thirty or whatever time it was, probably seven-

thirty, and ah....so we proceeded on down to....to meet him in this general area where the hunt was going on andand we pulled up down....landed down there and the Sheriff got out of the car and ran to the helicopter and ran into the rear rotor and just chewed his skull up pretty bad.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he ever know what hit him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think so. He lived though, he was still alive and we was about seventeen miles out of Carthage and just barely in Panola, pretty close to the Shelby and Rusk County line down there. And ah... I never will forget this young deputy there and ah.....they had a brand new car and ah....so he had brought him out there and some more deputies were in the area to where to have....establish communication with 'em from the air. But anyway ah.....this deputy said, 'I'll call... I'm going to call an ambulance'. I said, 'No you're not going to call an ambulance, you fixing to take your boss to Carthage'. Cause I said, 'You know it's going to take an ambulanceyou can get into town before an ambulance can get out here and he needs attention'. And they got him into Carthage to the hospital but the doctor said his brain was so damaged that ah.....never would be worth anything and they didn't put any life supports on him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did that rotor just suck him in or did he just get careless?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No he just....he just walked into it and it just....just....just like you, you know, it just chewed his brain up, his skull and ah.....just opened a place in his head you know andand ah....right in the top of his head.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....that was a very tragic thing that happened and....andand ah....and this was ah...ah....this happened with some of my Sheriff's. And of course I mentioned ah...ah....there was another Sheriff came along in Marion County. Marion County was lucky, they had this Walter Thomas who just retired up there recently and Walter was ah....elected

Sheriff there in Panola County and he was a business man and ah....ah....a good country Sheriff. And oh I mentioned Earl Franklin and some more and I'll think of many more I guess.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did we talk about Odom?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, we didn't talk about Odom, but I'd worked with Odom. But I ah....Bill didn't call me as much as ah....he was one of the Sheriff's that felt like that ah....that he could handle his problem and his own business and ah....and of course I never was about to interfere with anybody's business, I didn't interfere period you know. And ah....but Odom and I went to.....before he was a Sheriff we went ah....we worked a....he went with me to ah....Atlanta, Georgia on an investigation and we brought back a guy that had committed murder and ah....and he was very cooperative. Ah....in fact it come time to turn the evidence over to somebody, what they got out of the car down there, and ah....and the deputy we was working with wanted to know who we wanted to turn the evidence over and I said, ' Turn it over to the.... ah....Captain Odom'. And he was a captain of the Sheriff's office at that time and ah.....and ah....he said, 'No, turn it over the Ranger cause he's the one that's working the case you know'. So he....you know, he was considerate and ah....but he was one of the few Sheriff's around that ah....wanted to try to do it himself and you got to respect 'em, that's what they was getting paid for you know. And ah...it didn't bother me all that much, but ah...it both.....it worried you a little because you thought maybe it was something personal, but actually I don't think it was, I don't.... I think if Lone Wolfe Gonzauillas had still been a Ranger down here that ah....that ah....Bill would of wanted to run his own business you know. And ah...and there was a bunch of Sheriff's that way. You know Noble was kind of that away until I come along and ah....and he softened up right smart you know for me because ah....we got to be friends you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And it didn't bother him at all for me to be working in Gregg County. In fact I helped him clear up a few cases you know and I'm sure he was please about it. And see I got to work with nearly all of the..... you talking about Louisiana Sheriff's now, we're talking about another world. Ah....and this was fun for me, because IIsee I had all these..... I had four Counties that ah...and a half that bordered the state of Louisiana. And I spent a lot of time in Louisiana, Natchitoches up to Texarkana you know. And I was in and out of the Caddo Parish Sheriff's office and Bossier Parish Sheriff's office all most weekly a lot of times. And ah....and we were ah....ah..... I I knew all..... I knew just about all the Sheriff's in the state of Louisiana. In fact after I'd been a Ranger two years I got invited to every Sheriff's convention they had in the state of Louisiana. And this was just like going to a county fair. I'm telling you what, these.....every Parish.....wherever they had the Louisiana Sheriff's Association conference, which was an annual thing, every Parish would have a suite of rooms and they would set up aof course they all had bars, the bars would be set up out on theoutside in the parking lot. And ah....but they prepared food, cajun type food, whatever the food that they liked the best from the Parish they were from and they had every kind of food from chitlins on up to crab you know, they had it and plenty of it. And I got invited to every Sheriff's conference and I'd ah....oh I'd be on the program sometime and then most of the time I wasn't. Just come on over Glenn, you know, we're going to meet in Bastrop, or we're going to meet in Alexandria, or we're going to meet in Baton Rouge or we're going to meet in Shreveport or....and ah....in those Parish's like down at Many and like down in Bienville Parish and Arcadia where Clyde and Bonnie were killed and well see the deputies down there got me one of the original newspapers from the death of Bonnie and Clyde, because I'd been working with 'em and helping 'em with some of their problems. And by knowing these Sheriff's down there in Louisiana well I could call 'em by their

first name, pick up a telephone andand get some.....get something done you know. And ah....and this was the greatest thing in the world you know, it just....it made our job a whole lot easier up here in Texas. And of course if they called me well you know it wasn't unusual to turn loose and..... I know one day I picked a Sheriff from.....his name was ah.....Johns from Natchitoches, Louisiana called me and ah....and he said, 'Elliott I've got some stolen property up at Dallas and some at some place called McKinney' ... and about three places somebody had gone and committed a burglary down there and hocked the stuff up in the Dallas area and it's been recovered and it seemed like that ah....at that time I was spending a lot of time up in Dallas PD and I think it was called to my attention that some old boy had pawned quite a bit of stuff. And they was going through the pawn tickets then, that was before computers. Anyway we...we made a hit on this stuff, but I got a hold of Johns, the Sheriff down there at Natchitoches and then the first you know well he's calling me, werounding stuff up and we..... I meet him in Longview and he wants to go up there and get it and go back home. So we left out of Longview and of course with my reputation as a driver well, we went to Dallas, and then to McKinney and then across to Greenville I think and back down here and we recovered a car load full of stuff. And the Sheriff, we left out.....he....we got back into Longview about eight or nine o'clock at night and ah.....so he loaded the stuff in his car and he got stopped for driving 70 miles an hour between Longview and Marshall and said he told the Highway Patrol, he said, 'I been riding with a Texas Ranger all day and we haven't drove less than 100 miles an hour all day long', said, 'Didn't nobody stop him, they all waved at him', and he said, 'Here I'm driving 70 and ya'll stop me for speeding'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they let it go?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, sure. He carried 'em on in and bought their supper, cause he hadn't eaten, I wouldn't let him eat. And he said, 'That's another thing, you won't stop to eat you just keep a going'. But ah....then it wasn't any time until we had a jail break here in Longview, and we'll probably get into that, one time where they ah....they kidnapped ah.....one of the deputies and shot another deputy over here in Harrison County trying to stop 'em, in the leg. And ah....they....and they stole.....they was in the Sheriff's car and they stole another car in Waskom andand went on down and....and ah....and kidnapped a family and ah.....down in ah....around Mansfield. And I followed 'em all the way into Natchitoches and ah....it was on a Sunday and ah..... I was out of gas and ah....they went on through Natchitoches and ah....and gotwent on down to an old.....way down in the boon docks down there and was forcing an old farming family to feed 'em their lunch. And ah.....and they got pretty engrossed in eating and there three of them and this old farmer reached and got his shotgun that they didn't know was sitting behind the door and took two of them and the another one ran and was later captured. But they brought 'em into Natchitoches and of course I went down to interview them and the Sheriff helped me because Iyou know.....and we got acquainted. And that....that's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: One of my favorite stories of yours over in Louisiana deals with the horse, we may have covered that, I'm not sure, but if we haven't I know it's kind of out of sequence but we could cover it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah....well this is ah....this is just a.....this is just kind of the way it operated over there because Imyself and Ken Hartlin ah....boy's still working here at the Sheriff's office, he was a young man then, just got into criminal investigation division and there was a doctor here in Longview that had lost a horse and it belonged to his kids and....and we had the boy that ah....stole the horse. And he told us where he carried it over to Benton, Louisiana

and he cleared up some more thefts and saddle thefts andand he was selling them at the cattle barn between Bossier City and Benton. And ah....so we was over there and we got the records there at the sale barn in ah....in Bossier Parish and of course they reflected that a guy over on Greenwood Road, over in Caddo Parish, had bought this horse, wrote a check for it and everything was above board. And ah....so I go....we leave and go on back over to Caddo Parish and of course it's getting late in the afternoon and ah....and I remember vividly Elvis Presley was going to be entertaining at the....at the old coliseum over in.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Louisiana Hay Ride?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....that night and ah....so ah....I don't what....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this was way past the Louisiana Hay Ride days, he was a big super.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, yeah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN:he was a super star by now.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah yeah, this was in '60's ah....and ah....he was coming up. It was in the Coliseum over there, it wasn't ah...it was just a ticket deal.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well all the Caddo.....of course I don't know whether you knew it or not, but Elvis would love to have a bunch of police officers around him, everywhere he went he would hire as many deputies and policemen as he could for protection.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt your story here. I've been up to Graceland, his home, and he's got a huge cabinet, glass cabinet, hanging out there in what he calls the trophy room where he's got all his gold and platinum records, and there's this huge cabinet, glass cabinet out there with....with badges.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where he had been named special deputy or something.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: From I mean all over the country.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he paid these officers good to work for him, even in those days. Well anyway, they were fixing to all go out, the Caddo deputies were, and ah....to work traffic and provide security for Elvis. And of course generally he had one particular officer that he'd have pick him up at the airport. He never would rent a car, but he'd ah.... I know....you heard me mention Sugar Smith who was a detective up in Oklahoma City, Sugar picked him up every time he came to Oklahoma City. He'd call Sugar and tell him, I'll be in Oklahoma City we're flying in.....of course he always flew his own plane you know. But back to this story over here, and ah.....so I go in there with my story of I got a horse needs.....stolen horse needs recovering out here on Greenwood Road and ah....the doctors already said that....we'd already talked to him and told him the circumstances and that the man bought the horse under good faith and wrote a check for it andand have a little....might be a civil deal. Cause it's a little harder to get stolen property out of Louisiana than it is Texas. Their laws are just a little different than ours. And I...I just told him this so that we could prepare him, I said, 'We may have to, you know, pay for the horse and then get the guy that stole it to have to make restitution later on as part of his plea bargain or whatever'. So they authorized us to say yeah, we....you know, we want the horse back and we'll pay for it, the kids are just going crazy. And ah....so sure enough they tell me, say, 'Well we're all busy Glenn'. Said, 'You work over here all the time, you know how it works, just go on out there at Greenwood and talk to that guy and tell him what you got'. And said, 'If you have any problems at all well call the office and we'll send a....just a uniform deputy on

patrol by there'. We went out, knocked on the door and introduced ourselves, told the guy the circumstances. 'Yeah', he said, 'Man you know I didn't know this horse was stolen, I don't want a stolen horse around me'. And said, 'I can understand those kids, cause I bought this for my grand kids and they just haven't got attached to it yet'. And ah....said, 'Tell him to come get it'. Well we called the doctor from his home, and used a credit card and they brought.....they come over and got it that night. So that's ah.....you know, but this is part of a I guess ...in law enforcement there's nothing any better, I don't carethen cooperation between agencies. It'....it's....it's just.....it's just the most essential thing that there is. And you can just get so much more done and this is the reason I liked to do that. I felt just as home in Louisiana and the Sheriff's offices over there, I'd eat in their jails ah....and....and....(unintelligible)with the Sheriff's are all friendly towards me and act like they was glad to see me over there you know. I been in.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well....

GLENN ELLIOTT:the police department over there once and ah....when George Noratorse was in.... then George of course finally got some bad publicity and ah....but George...

ROBERT NIEMAN: George what?

GLENN ELLIOTT: George Noratorse was a....he was a Police Commissioner for the Shreveport....City of Shreveport. George eventually got ah....in trouble over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You remember how to spell his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Lord no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, that's all right, we....we.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's a Cajun name you know. I....I've got it written down somewhere, probably got one of his cards. Anyway, but this is not unusual, I'm over at Shreveport a whole

lot and Shreveport's very progressive. The Sheriff's office.....the Sheriff andall the Sheriff's in Louisiana are also Tax Assessors at that time. Andand they got a certain percent of the taxes collected in their Parrish's to run their departments on. They didn't have to go to anybody for money, the money was there. They had airplanes, they hadone of the Sheriff's conventions over there, there was a Sheriff come rolling in, in a Lincoln Towncar, four door sedan with big long whip antennas on it and this was in the early '60's. And I said something to him, I said, 'Well Sheriff you know, ah.....that's a pretty nice car'. 'Oh yeah, my people love me Ranger', said, 'They love me in my Parrish', said, 'They want me to have the best'. And about that time here come another Lincoln in there, a different color. The Sheriff's driving a black one and this big green one comes whipping in there. And I said, 'Well it looks like one of your other Sheriff's has got a little competition down there in one of your other Parrish's'. He looked, 'Oh that's my Chief Deputy'. Said, 'They love him too'. But back to my story on Noratorse, I'm over there and George.....I'm in and out of the Shreveport Police Department regular and George one day I had....we recovered.....myself and a couple of detectives over there had recovered a bunch of ah....stolen outboard motors and stuff from Lake of the Pines and Toledo Bend. And ah....we had....I had called a Ranger down at Center, at that time a Doug Clark was stationed down there, and Doug had driven up to ah....Shreveport and identified a bunch of stuff that was stolen down in his area. And so we got it there all scattered out all over the property room and the police department and ah....and Doug says well, I said, 'Well Doug you know you need to get this stuff loaded up', and he said, 'Well how am I going to get it back home'. I said, 'Well haven't you got a trailer hitch on your car'. I said, 'I always rent a trailer'. And ah....of course I'm closer to Shreveport, I can rent a trailer and run it back over here, but I said, 'That's what I always do, just rent a trailer'. 'Well I don't have a trailer hitch'. And this is like Friday evening andor

Saturday evening , I don't know when it was and Doug, I said, 'Well I'll tell you what I'll do', I said, 'I'll just let you have my car, I got a trailer hitch on it and you can take this stuff on home and meet me in Carthage in the morning'. Well he had something he wanted to do the next day and we was squabbling around there and George comes in. 'What's the problem'. 'Oh we hadn't got a problem, we just trying to get....a way to get this stolen property back down there in East Texas'. He just told the captain there said, 'Call our van around here and an officer in it and take this stuff where ever these Rangers want it hauled'. They hauled that stuff to Center for me, you know, I mean.....and they.....he had a new garage and every time I'd come over thereand he had Trustee's working out there all the time. He kept his cars all just clean, he'd wash 'em twice a day if necessary. I'd go over there and he'd come in and see me in the office and he said, 'Let me have the keys to your car Elliott', said ah.... 'I'll go fill it up with gas and have it cleaned up for you'. Filled my car up with gas and washed it you know and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why don't you feel.....from what we've read at least.....this same spirit of cooperation does not exist in the Federal, like the FBI and the ATF and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't know. It's cause they don't try hard enough, that's why. You know, if they'd get a concentrated effort, it's....it's the individual, it's not the agencies. Of course the Federal agencies are a little bit different and....and ah....they're all competing with each other. But we're competing with each other too, but we're doing it together you know, out here in the field. It's just a....a....a....sixty or seventy percent of the Federal agencies should be com....should be pulled together, we got too many Chief's running too many outfits you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you work with I know you worked some, but to any extent with Federal agencies?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I worked with Federal agents, any of them would work with me and all of them would. But ah....you'd have to work with twoyou couldn't work with two agencies hardly at the same time. I never had any problem, I got.... the FBI would call, they insisted I work on every bank robbery and we solved just about all of them in East Texas and ah....bank burglars, anything that was connected to the Federal that....that was companion with us, I worked with them, all of them. Andand all the time. The ATF out of Shreveport, ah....Houston, ah.... I never worked a whole lot with Federal narcotics and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: DEA ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I never worked a whole lot with them, but it was just because I didn't work a lot of narcotics you know. And....but ah.... I tell you what, I I liked to work with every agency because we needed the FBI every once in awhile, we used their lab a whole lot you know. We'd get them to submit the evidence for us if we were working companion cases you know. And....and....and ah....that save us some time and energy and....and....and they had a better lab than we did, in most cases you know. And they could do a lot of things that we couldn't. And we used their....we used their ah....ah....ah....fugitive division, you know, I mean where they'd ah....they'd file on somebody for leaving the area to avoid arrest you know. And ah....that....they could run folks down a whole lot better, because nation wide you know. And ah.... they....they got the facility. And I never had any problem working with them, any of them. And ah.... the only reason other agencies don't , and the inner agencies, is you know, competition, a little jealousy or something like that. But ah....listen, I never did I wanted to work with everybody that wanted to work and enjoyed it. And that's....that's.....was my.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would seem to be the key.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That is exactly what it was. Ah... I thought maybe we'd talk about....tonight too, just a little bit here, where we get ah....during this time I had ah....during....we're talking about the year of '64 and '65 and that's the area we're in right now. Ah....we had a...a...a police officer murdered down at Carthage, Texas. And that....that's the first police officer that was shot that I was involved in ah....as a Ranger, or as any officer. And this happened on December 12, 1964. And at three o'clock in the morning I got call from Panola County Sheriff's office ah....asking for assistance in a murder investigation there where a police officer and ah....two police officers had been shot, one of them was dead, and ah....the suspect ah....there was more than one, they ran over the police man that they'd killed and ah...after they had shot him and they stole a....one of them ran and they stole a pickup, he stole a pickup from a lumber company there. And this was the information I got when they called me, that ah....and they left going toward Greenwood, Louisiana, which is of course northeast out of Carthage. So I left and Interstate 20 had just opened from ah....just been opened from Longview to Greenwood, Louisiana. And you exit there at the first exit to go towards ah....to Carthage ah....59no ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: 79?

GLENN ELLIOTT:79. And ah...I never will forget this, of course I'm....I got a '64 Plymouth, pretty new car and I....my regular speed I head....I called the Caddo Parrish Sheriff's office on the telephone before I left home and told them that we'd had a policeman killed over at Carthage and another one shot and the people were headed towards their Parrish and I'd like for them to have a unit to meet me at Greenwood. I gave 'em a spot there, I think the City Hall in Greenwood, Louisiana, which Greenwood was a small town, still is, but it was....anyway ah....and ah...I hooked 'em to Greenwood, I didn't go to Carthage. And ah....so I got over to Greenwood and I know I exit off of Interstate 20 and I was hooking it up pretty great and they'd been pulling dirt up on the side

of the road over there and ah....up that exit ramp and I touch my brakes and they had a lot of mud, it was raining and ah.... I lost that Plymouth and ah....I took a stop sign, just wiped it plumb out. Went across the road backwards, up in....off in a ditch and up an embankment. And I'm goosing that thing all the time trying to get it headed back in the right direction. And I come down off of that ah....embankment in that mud and get back on the highway without getting stuck and go on to Greenwood, don't....and I don't get a chance to look at my car until ah....about seven-thirty, eight o'clock the next morning. We caught this one boy that had stole the pickup right away and carried him down to ah...the police station there in Shreveport and ah....and interrogate him. And ah....at that time you could ah....you didn't have to go before a court, you could waive extradition without going to a court of record. And ah....I can't....of course that's....we had rulings since then, but this was not unusual, a guy would waive extradition and just...you'd throw a waiver out there to him and explain to him that you know what he's got....his rights are and if he wanted to sign it you could just pick him up and bring him on back. And this is what we did with him. So we get back out to the....and we recover the pickup of course and they sent....Shreveport PD sent a...a....a...their lab people down there to process the pickup and ah....so this old boy told us that ah....told me ah....confessed to the crime, named his ah....people that was with him. And by the way, he was an escapee from ah....ah....Louisiana State Penitentiary at the time. But what had happened he didn't escape right out of the penitentiary he had ah...he was in.... he and his partner had conned their way into a hospital in Shreveport and he'd....this was back when they first started trying to rehabilitate everybody you know. And he had a bunch of tattoos on his arm and they were taking those tattoos off and he was ah...ah...indicating that those tattoos was what...on his body caused him to commit crimes. Because he had them put on there when he didn't know any better. This is one of the....one of the two people that I think was probably as mean a people that I ever dealt with. And ah...that

would kill again and do it and grin about it. There's no question about it and I didn't look at everybody that way and I looked at the good. But I didn't find any good in this guy. Buy anyway, ah...he tells me....I get down there and I interrogate him in Shreveport, he confesses to the crime and even told me where he threw the pistol. Well it's getting about daylight about that time and I call Carthage and tell 'em I says, 'There's a pistol should be laying on the ground behind the Western Auto store'. And I said, 'Leave it there'. I said, 'Send somebody down there and verify that it's there and then back off and watch it and don't let anybody mess with it cause I want this guy to lead me to the fruits of the crime see'. And he did. And I went ahead and....and the deputies brought me back down to Greenwood and my car was there and...and we were using tubeless tires then but being an old fast driver I put tubes in my....I didn't trust tubeless tires for a long time. And I'd put tubes in those tires. And that's the only thing that saved me then. I had grass up under ...all...both of the rims on the right hand side. And by the way, the old car was so muddy you couldn't tell whether there was any damage done to it or not and I wasn't worried about any damage. But I had that thing cleaned up later and I couldn't even tell where that stop sign hit it and it was on a metal pole and that stop sign was just flat to the ground as it would be. But anyway, I bring him on back to Carthage after daylight and ah...ah...he ah...leads us to this gun. And what had happened was ah....ah....and he tells all about this, and what started the whole thing was ah....they burglarized a drug store in New London, Texas. You been working New London. They burglarized a...they parked at a Laundromat, they had a woman with them, there was a nurse left the hospital with the. They conned her into leaving, she was a little old ignorant girl that was wanting to get away from home or something and ugly as homemade soap and these two guys conned her into ah....leaving, they stole a car in New Orleans and got on their crime spree away from the hospital. They were there...the penitentiary had sent 'em up there to...for whatever to get the tattoos removed

and they escaped from the hospital. And they were in a security ward but there wasn't any....I think the girl helped 'em get out, she was....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were they in Manville?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were they in that Manville Mental Institution?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they were in a hospital in ah...in New Orleans.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh.

GLENN ELLIOTT:getting this work...this was a....they'd sent 'em to New Orleans to get these tattoos removed, and I don't know what they sent this other....I don't remember what they sent this other one boy up there for but ah....anyway they ah...they stole a car and they drove up into East Texas and they stopped at a Laundromat over at New London and she was washing some clothes and they was....while they was burglarizing a...the drug store.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Charlie McConnico's drug store I assume.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I...I've got the report some where.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm sure it is because he's...I think his is the....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Only one there.

ROBERT NIEMAN:Charlie McConnico's store.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway, they got about....they got over two thousand dollars out of this safe. And somebody saw them and they discovered....and got the license number of the car and they discovered it was a a....ah...that the burglary had happened and so they put out a broadcast. And this was....and the Carthage police later spotted the car, they was working their way over to...to Shreveport. And Carthage police spotted the car and....with the license number and...and...on the broadcast from over there at ah...from a city Marshall there in New London and ah...or the Sheriff,

whoever put it out and ah....so they stopped them. And ah...this...this....what they had done, they had ah...ah....they saw that the police was fixing to stop them in Carthage after they'd ah....was coming through there. And Carthage as I said had received a call on the radio that they'd...this car was suspected of burglary. So the policeman pulled up and stopped it and they didn't know that this guy was laying down in the back seat. And ah....and when they pulled up to the car well Woods walked up to the driver and ah... when he did....and his partner walked up there ah....behind him and this boy just come out the back door on their side with a gun. And in his statement he said it was just a stand off, it was just an Arkansas stand off. It was me or them. Well ah....he began shooting then and he shot both of them. And he...you know he just talked about it like it was fun. And then ah...they ah...he ran and Woods staggered around and fell in front of the car and like I said, they ran over his body and they guy that done the shooting ran to the lumber yard and....and....he got separated. I think the other policeman maybe shot a time or two himself, he wasn't hurt near as bad and ah....and kind of got them separated and ah...and he...he ran over to the lumber yard and stole this pickup and just rammed through a gate. And ah...and then of course we got him back to Carthage and he had told us there was somebody with him, but he hadn't told us....but he knew where they were. And ah...ah...so they...we got over to Carthage and reduced his statement to writing and then ah...there was...tension was real high around Carthage cause these...both these policemen were real respected. And they'd lived there a long time, so the Sheriff said, 'We better move him over to Marshall, cause you know there's some talk around town that they need to kill him you know'. And they did of course. And ah...so we moved him on to Marshall and ah...and he'd already told us where we could probably find the other two, that their plans were....what their plans were, he knew they were going to go over there and check into a motel. And ah...and they had a friend they were going to contact. So we...I called back over there to

Caddo and Shreveport police ah...was instra....more instrumental in the apprehension than Caddo was, but they were...they were...but this was inside city limits. And this is something else you try to do, this is how...this is how we kept our relations together. If we got a case that's inside the city we work with the city, if it's got one outside we try to work with the Sheriff or work with both of them you know. And that way they...they're all informed of what's going on you know and you don't have any problems. Anyway well, they...they pick 'em up, call us and ah...and we go over there and get them and bring them back and take statements from them. So this is another all day affair you know. And ah...well I think I went to work at three that morning and my report shows I stopped...quit at ten and drove 340 miles that day. So, you know, that's ah...that's a lot of running around on December 12, 1964. Ah....we later ah...of course they...they confessed to several other burglaries and a car theft andand to the shooting of the officers. And then we had to...we had to ah...had a change of venue hearing and there was so much publicity and being a policeman killed, so we....they moved it...they changed the venue to Van Zandt County, which is Canton. And we had to try them up there. And ah...well we tried this main one, the guy did the shooting and ah....and ah...the other two pled guilty, they made witnesses for us, the man and the....the other man and the woman. But this guy, after he got in the penitentiary....and I'll tell you what happened and the way we do things, they ah...when we went back to Shreveport to get the other two, well we recovered the money that came out of the safe burglary over in Rusk County, I think it was twenty three hundred dollars, somewhere in that area. And I bring the money back and ah...and turn it over to the Sheriff in Panola County, because this is the way the ah...ah...that's the way we operate. We didn't like to keep any stolen property and it's the Sheriff's responsibility as the law is written in Texas to handle all stolen property. Of course it's supposed to be logged and everything and all of them didn't always do that, they do now. But anyway, I brought the money back to the Sheriff and

got a receipt from him, put it in my file and ah...and he deposited it in the bank there in Carthage, in escrow. Because he didn't want that much money laying around the Sheriff's office there you know. And... and so this guy got on to the penitentiary and ah...he'd been in the pen...and of course we notified Rusk County and in order for them to ah....actually the money couldn't be identified you know. And this was kind of a touchy situation. In order for them to get the money they need to file a civil suit and then we can use the statements from these guys in the civil hearing that, yes we got this money out of a safe in New London, Texas, you know. And ah....but for some reason or other, they never did pursue it. I don't know, they may have had insurance, and the insurance company paid them off, which is a lot simpler for them you know. I don't know why, but nobody had ever come after this money. Of course I don't know this, because I...you know I've got my receipt from the Sheriff for the money and...and I don't...you know I'm not concerned about the money any more. But when we got to the trial well we introduced the evidence, yeah we recovered the money and so forth. But ah... but what happened, this guy ah...I get ah...served with civil papers from the Federal people ah....Marshall's office that I've been sued by this guy, he's in the penitentiary, and I deprivehe sues me for fifty something thousand dollars, I forget the number, it was....it was kind of a strange....fifty-four thousand, six hundred and....anyway ah...that I've deprived him of this money that he had, that he could of bought law books and studied them and executed an appeal, he's in the pen for life. And ah....they accept this, I mean this is...this is filed...complaint filed in thein....I mean the suit filed in Federal Court in Tyler, Texas. And that rascal sued me. Well of course I had to go down to Austin and make a deposition and I got my receipt from the Sheriff, and he sued the Sheriff too. Sheriff was sued but of course his attorney handled his case, but the Attorney General's office always handled ours. But anyway I...

ROBERT NIEMAN: A person....an individual....a civilian can sue a police officer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it's happened so....Bobby, today I imagine out of the Texas Department of Corrections, the penitentiaries in Texas, I imagine there's at least fifty lawsuits filed today by convicts against somebody. It's the most unreasonable thing you've ever heard of in your life. All they got to do issome of them....one of them that's been down there a long time that's got....been to the library and read enough law and saw enough other writs and...and...and civil suits to get.... familiarize yourself and got copies of them with the wording and so forth, will write these frivolous lawsuits for anybody.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I saw on 60 Minutes here, it's been several years ago now, that over in the state of Nevada, over 50% of the court dockets in Nevada was from prisoners suing somebody.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this is probably the way it is, I don't know how it is now because I've been out of it for awhile, but anyway, I'd go to Tyler pretty regular, I'm over in Tyler on business, but when I had timeI'm testifying in Federal Court over a lot.....and when I had time I'd go by the Clerk's office there and see what the status of the case was. And this thing pended for several years. In fact I never will forget, when I was in Austin to give my deposition well Pat Spear was the Director and ah....of course I was visiting with Pat and he wanted to know what I was doing you know and I told him I was down there for a deposition and I said, 'I'm getting sued for fifty thousand dollars'. And he said, oh he said, 'You ought not worry about that', he said, 'I'll get sued for a million dollars in time'. He said, 'You....we've got about five or six suits pending against us, different suits, for a million dollars'. And I...I never will forget, I told him I said, 'Pat, I'd just as soon have a million judgment against me as a fifty-four thousand dollars, can't pay it anyway'. But anyway ah....I'm checking over at Tyler one time and this is a good story because ah....Fred Ursman was a very prominent lawyer around here and a good lawyer and I ran into Fred Ursman in the ah...the ah....Federal Clerk's office over in Tyler one day and he said, 'Glenn, what are you

doing over here'. And I said, 'Well I'm over here working, been talking to a convict over there in the County jail and I come over here to check, I got a civil suit pending against me, a convict's suing me'. He said, 'Well who ah....how come you didn't call me'. And I said, 'Well I didn't think I could afford you'. Of course I didn't tell him the AG's office represented us, but I didn't....also I didn't tell I didn't have that much confidence in the AG's office, cause I was afraid they might get a notification that I needed to be in Court and I didn't get it. So that's the reason I checked the docket every time I'd go into Tyler, I'd look to see what the status was. And ah...Fred said, 'What's the....what's the cause number and...and ah...I want...tell me a little about it'. And I told him and he wrote it down, three weeks later I got a notice from the Federal Attorney that had been....the Federal Clerk's office that it had been dismissed. So Fred got it presented to the Court and they looked at it, see the Court just don't have time to look at all these things.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: This guys in the pen, he hasn't got a lawyer representing him, he's representing himself and he files the suit so nobody's pushing it you know and nobody's hurrying, but it's still laying there you know. Well I'm trying to get rid of it. But anyway, we got these boys put away and ah...you know I don't know til today what happened to that money, but it was in escrow in the name of the Panola County and the Sheriff and this guys name was on it too.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did...did the ah....did he get the death sentence?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No he got life, he the life. The jury found him guilty up there at Canton and gave him a life sentence.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still in prison?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I hope so, cause....I doubt it though, I really doubt it. But he was a mean son-of-a-gun.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who...you said two, who was the other one?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Two of the men that were really mean that you said.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh the other one was a boy that I arrested here for ah...a murder and a rape and attempt murder in El Paso, Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll just cover him later or ...?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, let's cover him later because that's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where....just out of curiosity, this is totally out of line for right now, but where would McFaddin fit in, Animal McFaddin?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you see, I never did ah...I never did handle McFaddin, I did not make an arrest, I was up there on the hunt for him. And Animal McFaddin was obviously a pretty mean son-of-a-gun, but I never did interrogate him, ah....his...the crimes that he committed had already been solved. I helped look for the weapon that he used, I...I borrowed a ah....a crane from ah...with an electronic magnet on it from ah....ah....Industrial Steel out here at Greggton, Mr. Thurman Falks company and ah...we'd use it on a regular basis, it was ours anytime we wanted it. And you could take that thing and drop it in the creek and it would pick any piece of metal up that was in there. But anyway, see I never did sit down and interrogate McFaddin.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know ah....all I know is he committed crimes you know, and committed murder. And ah...but this...these two boys here, both of them....this one that I'm talking about here that we tried over at Canton, he would stare at you with hate and never keep your eye....of course you stay on...you spend a lot of time on the witness stand you know. And in both cases I went to El Paso twice in this trial out there and ah...and ah...of course we tried this guy in

one week up at Canton. And ah...but... they you know, you couldn't feel comfortable in the court room with him you know and even....because you know just...you could tell he was a mean man you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you ever see a man like that try to intimidate a jury, by staring at them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or would the Judge

GLENN ELLIOTT:most of the time it seemed like it was the witnesses is what they was after you know. I..I ah.... ah....of course you watch your defendant pretty close, of course you see him out of the corner of your eye, you don't watch him you know, cause most of the time when you testify in Court your trying to direct your conversation and your testimony towards the jury. But you can't help but ah...ah... notice the defendant too you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well would a Judge allow someone to try that kind of tactic on a jury?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....no I don't think so. It depends on the Judge, Judges are different. Of course we carried our Judge with us up to Canton, we didn't lose our Judge, we just changed venue. Most of the change of venues the Judges go along with them and on rare occasions you go before another Judge. We ah...I had one other case that I worked, and we'll...are you ready to shut down, or do you want to go on?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, no, go ahead.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...one other case during this area here and I..I...ah...ah....was a real interesting case and it took a lot of time and ah....I got involved in early 1965 in an investigation of a counterfeit American Express money order. And ah....it was called to my attention and ah...we had several complaints from an area and these things started appearing in a circle around Marshall,

Texas. Down in Arkansas and Louisiana and Oklahoma and Texas, just a circle, down as far as Beaumont and Houston, Waco and around this...in Shreveport and Minden, Monroe and ah....a big circle and Marshall was almost the center of it, it wound up, after we got 'em all together. But I started working on this thing and got a break on it and ah...down in Jasper, Texas and ah...and they had arrested a black guy from Marshall, my first arrest, in Jasper, Texas and ah....trying to pass one of these money orders. They...they put... originally....and this was an attorney in Marshall, Texas ah...that ah....originated this thing and ah...he had ah...a co-defendant buy...go to a drug store there in Marshall, Texas and buy a one dollar money order, American Express money order. And they carried it to several different people before they...well we never did prove actually who counterfeited it. We're not positive that it wasn't done in Mexico. He tried to get the guy in Marshall to do it, tried to get a guy in Shreveport to do it and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well who was this attorney, or can you.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Paul Anderson, his name was Paul Anderson. And his son was later elected State Senator here and got defeated ah....just, oh since you been in here. Ah...ah...anyway ah....Paul had hired....he got a bunch of these people that he had represented and ah....passing these money orders, after he got 'em made. And he and another guy named Sonny Fisher, who was a black guy in Marshall, ah....got this thing together and got it going. And our first break in it was down at Jasper and I got into it pretty solid and ah...and they found out about it....and ah....that I was on it because, of course these guys would get in jail and they'd call him you know. And ah...when we got the second one in jail ah...well Paul goes and he writes the Colonel a letter or calls him on the telephone and then he gets the preacher over at Marshall to ah...ah...contact Wright Patman up at Texarkana and he was a United States Representative at that time you know. And ah....they file a civil rights complaint against me for abusing these two blacks, which I didn't do. And ah...they

ah...kind of slowed this investigation down quite a bit, because here I am trying to defend myself still...in fact the Federal folks came over and interviewed me, it was civil rights and...and with Patman getting involved in it well of course....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wright Patman?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he...he goes right to Washington you know, he's in Washington and he calls the FBI office in Washington and of course he put the heat right on from me from the top, here's a politician that's regulating the FBI budget and calling them and telling them you know, there's a Texas Ranger down there that mistreating some of my citizens. Well the FBI just come swarming in on me and...and ah... right quick and that delayed my investigation of course and I finally told them, I said, 'You know hell, if you guys want to do something well help me solve these cases you know, cause we've got a counterfeit ring going here'. And...and they got...by this time ah...American Express had an investigator down from New York and ah....he's a retired New York City police officer and ah...his name was Pallin, I never will forget him. And ah...they were interested because man, they was tearing them up and ah....so I...after the FBI conducted their investigation and ah...and saw that ah...well actually I'd carried the Sheriff downthe Marshall, from Marshall, with me when I interviewed the first one because ah....I don't know why, I guess maybe....well I just can't remember exactly why. We'd got into the thing pretty deep and anyway he...he was familiar with what we was working on and we...oh yeah, we'd been over there....the first guy that he had tried to get him to make the money orders for him was from Marshall and the Sheriff helped us work on this. And so we go on to Jasper andand here this guy is down there and he's already caught with the money orders trying to pass them and he decides to tell us where he got them and his involvement and ah...so...or he decided to tell the Sheriff right before we got down there, I said.... well the Sheriff knew him and he called him by name and he'd been in his jail

several times and was a model prisoner. And I said, 'Sheriff why don't you talk to Enis and see if he'll tell us'. And he...and he went in there and talked to him five, ten minutes and come back and said, 'Yeah, he'll tell all about it'. And...but Enis was complaining on me and we don't even tell...and this is....it's done got late at night and we decide to spend the night in Jasper and we didn't have anybody to type a statement up....we usually use somebody that's a good typist you know and...and ah....I could type but not all that good. And so we waited until the next day to take a statement from him. And this all came out you know in the investigation the Federals made and they....you know, here I am accused of using this guy and ah....and I don't even talk to him until the next day and the Sheriff's already gone in and talked to him five minutes and he said yeah I'm going to tell all about it you know. So we took a statement from him the next day, but anyway, this is kind of the way the whole thing came down. But I got them interested and...and we started ah...ah...get lucky, you know the harder you work the luckier you get you know. And....and I think I've told you, but this needs to be on tape, that we had arrested several and every time we'd arrest one we'd identify another one and it was just ah...just going that way. We got several locals over at Marshall and we identified this guy down at Houston that's ah...he's ah...he's black and...and got some Spanish blood in him and ah...I've ah...I get two ah....I get...identify him as he's passing, and in fact Paul Anderson met him in Bryan, Texas when Paul was an Aggie as I remember...or ah....maybe he was....maybe he'd gone to....maybe he went to school at Texas and he'd come to A & M to see the traditional Thanksgiving ball game, I believe that was it maybe, I don't remember. But since he's a lawyer he's bound to have gone to Texas. Anyway he ah....we even recovered the motel records where they met down there and ah....so ah....we ident....we got this guy identified in Houston but I've got two addresses on him and he's passed a money ah....these American Express money orders, a whole stack of them, carried them to Houston. Well...and this thing....I'm late at

night and I get in here to Longview and I call the Ranger sergeant down at Houston and tell him I need to be in Houston tomorrow, I got a warrant for a guy and I haven't got the nerve to send it down there to you cause I've got two addresses on him in Houston and he's black, and that's about all I know about him, got his physical description and ah...I got a picture of him and ah....that I'd got from the penitentiary. And so ah...he ah...he said, 'Well, what time will you be here'. And I said, 'I'll be there by nine o'clock'. Well that's about the time I get to the office and so typical old Glenn ah...I...I work on a case and I get interested in it and I stay after it pretty good and I wake up about three or four o'clock in the morning andand decide I'll go to Houston you know, and I just threw my gear in the car and hooked 'em to Houston. Probably packed my car the night before knowing I was going down there. And I'm in Houston by seven o'clock in the morning, seven-fifteen or something like that. And I drive out to the DPS office and go in the back door of communications and get me a cup of coffee andand ah....and Skippy Rundell, the Ranger from Houston walks in the office about seven thirty and ah....'Glenn what are you doing down here'. 'Well I called Pete Rogers last night, the sergeant, and told him I was and didn't intend to get here until nine but I got to thinking about my case and I woke up and I couldn't go back....wasn't going to go back to sleep or didn't want to, and got in my car and come on down here'. Well we get our coffee and he said, 'Well let's look at you...' I said, 'I got two addresses on this one black guy'. And so he said, 'Well one of these addresses is not but about ten blocks from here'. And he said, 'Let's run over there right quick before he goes to work'. And I said, 'This...this...this guy won't work, he ain't got a job you know, unless it's something ... unless he's changed'. But I said, 'Let's go'. So we get over there and it's a little old shopping center down in the seedy part of town and the address that's I've got winds out....turns out to be a little old beer joint. And there's a black woman cleaning....cleaning up, just dust coming out that front door and she was sweeping and

.....and you know how that old ground is down there and it had dried out. And ah....Skippy says ah... 'Let me go talk to her'. I gave him my picture and I'm sitting out there in the car and we're in his car. And I'm watching them and I could hear....I could see her shaking her head no you know and he showed her the picture and 'No, never...don't know anything about him you know'. And he's talking to her and while he's talking this....oh I guess a hundred and fifty or seventy-five feet there's a guy drove in....a black guy, in a blue El Camino Chevrolet pickup. And ah....Skippy comes on back to the car and said, 'Just as I thought'. Said, 'She's never seen him, don't know anything about him, don't have any idea who he is', blah, blah, blah. I said, 'Skippy', I said, " you see that guy in that Chevrolet pickup up there'. I said, 'I believe that's him'. I'll kiss your back end if we didn't drive up there and arrest that guy, right there on the spot. Now I hadn't been in Houston an hour and had him in custody and he made us a hell.....and I think the El Camino was stolen if I remember. We carried on back over to the DPS office and I...I thought I come back to Marshall that day, but I got to looking at my report and ah...I stayed in Houston cause I had a lot more....he identified a bunch more people that was passing these counterfeit American....and then we ran him on the polygraph too, to make sure he was telling the truth, because he had told us that he had met this lawyer in Bryan, Texas and the lawyer...ah...Paul flew a plane as I remember, and he had reservations down there for the Thanksgiving football game and he had driven up to Houston and at Paul's instructions met him there at the motel. And we corroborated his statement because we had the motel receipts....we had a card as big as that wall over there of that motel receipt to put in the courtroom. And ah...I brought him on back to Marshall ah....the next day. And during this time I had a '64 Plymouth and about every 12,000 miles the water pump would go out on that thing and it... I used a car pretty as we've talked about and it had a....I know those cars came out with a water pump with a plastic impeller on it and that high speed would just....it wouldn't start leaking it just

wouldn't turn, it would wear out that plastic impeller out on that metal shaft, car would start heating up, you know the water pump's out. And I'd had to....I think on him I had to call the Highway Patrol to shuttle me into Marshall one night coming out of Houston going to Marshall and ah...but we...we got about....I think we indicted....I know we indicted Paul Anderson and seventeen co-defendants. I spent a week before the Grand Jury in Beaumont, Federal Grand Jury. And you talk about working with Federal officers, see I...I finally get the officers off of my back....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Secret Service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, FBI, they did all the civil rights investigations.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay, yeah, yeah, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But on the counterfeiting part, would that be Secret Service?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, ah....any Federal agency can work counterfeiting you know, but the FBI was working it. The Secret Service didn't work ah...no the Secret Service didn't work anything but security just about is all they worked. And later in my career they found something else for the Secret Service to do, they all....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I thought they were....for instance the Department of Treasury?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah....mainly they are I guess, but the...their main...I don't think they worked any counterfeit. They started working in the latter years, telephone fraud and...so they'd have something to do and...and ah....that's a good place to stop really. Ah...we can get into that....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's finish this...then ah...was this the case where the sergeant got all bent out of shape with you and Skippy for going out there and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well, no the captain. No, this is to kind of show youah....we don't....I don't mind going into that, he ah.....ah....let me go ahead and finish.....then we....we get this case

together and....and I want....I want to lay cards where they are, we convicted everybody but Paul Anderson. He hired some....I think it was Charles Tesamer as I remember it out of California, he was a high powered lawyer and I understand he didn't pay him after all the ah... all he owed him, but Paul got acquitted. We had to go through all this civil rights business in the trial of course andand acquisitions and innuendoes made and they tried....just like their trying these lawyers....officers out in California right now in this O.J. Simpson....they tried me and some of the guys I worked with, the Sheriff mainly, but ah....your question was about the....yeah the captain.....see the Ranger Captains were just like....we're talking about the Sheriff's, everybody is different you know, and I'm different, I'm a different Ranger, you know supposed to be different. And ah...we're not all supposed to be alike. And ah....I called down there andbecause that's the way my captain worked, he ah...my captain didn't care whether you called him or not, call the sergeant.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was captain at this time of year?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Mike Crowder is my captain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And still captain, whose captain of Company A?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Eddie Oliver is captain down at Company A. I had never worked with Eddie Oliver, Eddie and I got to be real good friends, in fact all the Ranger Captains and I were friends and most of them would....had offered me promotions if they came up in their company. And ah....ah....but I didn't know how Eddie operated and all Captains.....see Captains operate individual, they run their company.....and pretty well hire....at that time hire who they wanted to and ah....and run things, they just.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interject here, now we've talked about this several times that up until lately Captains could basically hire whoever they wanted you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Crowder hired you and Banks was going to.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about firing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...they didn't fire any Rangers, a Ranger didn't do anything to get fired about. Ah...there was one Ranger got run off ah...that I knew of during this time and he ah...he let a prisoner get away from him in ah...in...in.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was just thinking, just you know, you didn't do anything wrong but you and the captain didn't like one another, could he just say, 'I just don't like you and I'm going to fire you' ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you....the thing you need to do then is go find you another company you know, if...if that had happened to me, if Crowder....Captain Crowder had come to me and said, 'Glenn you know you.....you know I don't you I'm not going to let you work for me anymore'. And ah....and this is not unusual ah...ah....well let me get back to Oliver and then I'll tell you how the Captains operate some. Ah...Captain Oliver, I didn't know how he was, I knew that...how Captain Crowder was. So Iyou know if I would of been in any other company and knowing Crowder like I did, I'd call the sergeant in the company and let him....if I needed a Ranger to do something for me or somebody....and so this is what I did in Houston, I called Pete Rogers cause I knew Pete. Cause Pete and I hadPete was a member of the East Texas Peace Officers Association and the President, and I'd known him as a Highway Patrolman when I was on the Highway Patrol and Pete was on the Highway Patrol and then he was a pilot and then he got into the Ranger service and he was stationed down at Lufkin and then he later made sergeant and went on to Houston. So I had known Pete for many years and I just casually knew Captain Oliver. And

so I called Pete my friend you know and he...and...but ah....afterCaptain Oliver didn't say anything to me, not one word to me, but he called Captain Crowder and told him said, 'You know you need to tell your Rangers that I'm the captain of Company A and you know any time ya'll need any help down here call me and I'll assign who I want to, to it you know'. And so that never happened again, you know me because ah... I knew then to calland of course the next time I'm in Houston, and I'm in Houston quite regular and I'm out at the Ranger office and of course I apologized to the captain and tell him you know, I said, 'Jim I'm a rookie Ranger you know and I don't know any better'. But I said, 'And I appreciate knowing how you want to do things and this was not intentional', you know and ah....everything was great, Captain Oliver and I got to be real good friends, but it's just the way he ran his business. But I was going to tell you, getting back to another example, ah....we had a captain one time in West Texas andthat ah....they sent a Ranger out there to him and he sent him back, said he didn't ask for him. And we had a guy, and it was G.W. Burkes is who it was, G.W. was ah....and I don't care about this being in the book , it's not that important, it's ah....because each captain had their own personality, but we had a captain out there and he was a....he came out ah....he didn't come up through the DPS ranks, I believe he was a Sheriff when he was appointed Ranger and Raymond Waters is his name. And I liked Captain Waters. But ah...G.W. Burkes was a Highway Patrol Sergeant, very intelligent man, very capable, he could remember things forever and ah...and G.W. was in my patrol school and he was the second.....graduated second highest in the class, smart and didn't even have to apply himself. And G.W. after reorganization ah....we had lateral transfers ah....and you could.....a Highway Patrol Sergeant could take the test for a Ranger captain and ah....cause that's the way it was set up. And ah....because a Ranger was under a Regional Commander. And so G.W. decided he wanted to be a Ranger but he didn't tell anybody that he wanted to be a Ranger, he just asked to take the test and

he made the highest grade in the State and made captain's exam....when there was a captain's.....and they'd started giving test by then you know. And ah...so...of course they had to hold an interview andand they said, 'Well don't you think ah...', one of the questions somebody asked him down there that you should have a little experience as a Ranger before you make captain. And he agreed. And they said, 'Well had you thought you....about getting on the Rangers'. 'Yeah I'd like that, how do I go about it', you know . Soand here's a guy, they got a DPS employee that made the highest grade in the State of Texas for a captain and...and so ah...the Colonel, the next vacancy came along well ah....ah....he applied in the meantime to be a Ranger and so he gave it to him, he didn't even ask Waters you know. And of course it just so happened that the vacancy was inin....out in that company out there. But G.W. goes out there to report to Waters and he tells him, 'No I don't want you, you go back and tell the Colonel you can't work for me'. He didn't even know him, he just didn't like it and....and by george ah....G.W. comes back, and he came back through Dallas and Jay Banks was captain and he told Jay what happened, and Jay had encouraged G.W. to be a Ranger because he's a smart boy and you know, a smart man and he made a good grade and he made a good impression and he was a hard working guy, G.W. worked hard and Jay liked him. And he's the one that encouraged.....he was on the interview board when he....and so Jay carried him on to Austin and told the Colonel he'd like to have him. And so G.W. was assigned to his company.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they transfer somebody out of Jay's company?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they just didn't replace.....they just didn't replace the Ranger out there in....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gave him to Company B.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and Company B needed some....you know everybody needed another....of course Lubbock didn't have the work load that we had down here in East Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well didn't Skippy Rundell, didn't he later become a captain himself?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. Skippy was Assistant Senior Ranger Captain when he retired, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But had he been just a....been a captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he'd been a sergeant, he'd been a sergeant and ah....and ah...before that but he never had been a company captain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He never was a company captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't believe he was, I don't think Skippy was ever a company captain, I think he went from sergeant to Assistant Senior Ranger Captain, I'm pretty sure that's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you want to stop it there for the night?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, let's stop because it's a....and...and....because I'm out of ah....you want to cut this thing off?

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, April the 17th, 1995 and this is the continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn, where we going to start tonight?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I thought we'd start in 1967 ah...ah...I've misplaced my 1966 reports somewhere or other, my weekly reports, I....I'm sure I'll find them but ah....there's a possibility that they may be in Court somewhere, I ...because I've had my reports subpoenaed to Court a time or two, but I always get them back. But ah...sometimes you I might not have, but ah...this is unusual and I've pretty well looked around, I don't know where they are. But I thought we'd start in '67 and just kind of scan over some of the things.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And this is what I've been doing is reviewing my weekly reports and ah...in '67 I ah...we started out....I started out with a couple of murders ah....one in Marion County and one in Cass County. And we...I call a lot of murders kind of routine, the murder that's a routine murder would be one you clear up right quick you know ah...and you don't have to spend a whole lot of time on them. But ah...a lot of those what we call major murder cases are ones that you just work and work and work and work and keep on working and never forget it you know and then one of these days you come along and ah...and get a break on it ororget....follow through on some leads that you didn't follow through on to begin with and you clear it up.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you ever have any cases where ah....we're talking murder but this could apply to bank robberies or auto theft, I guess just about anything, to where you finally say, look I'm just not going to be able to solve this one, I know it and I'm just not...just nothing there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, no I...I....I never....I may have thought that a time or two but I would of never said it because I always ah....I believe that every case solve....is solvable you know. And ah...there's mistakes made and people talk and they may wait a long time to do it but ah.... I never did give up on one. And I've got some cases that weren't solved and ah....and I wanted to solve them real bad and still do you know and got the reports and all on them and if they ever come upand I got a call on a case from over at Marshall just here recently and ah....on Chester Underwood. And Chester was killed and ah....and he had a pistol taken, was one of those old Buntline, .45 Buntline, those long barrel pistols you know?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Old thumb buster?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and that things still missing. And ah....we got the serial number and everything on it, but we're pretty sure we know who killed him. And ah....he had sent a guy , black

guy to the pen for burglarizing his house. Do we need to move this up any more, is it about where you want it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, it's fine, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....it's ah....we'll get to that later on but ah...ah...this guy got out of the pen and I started investigating him and trying to find out some things about his activities and ...and ah....and he got killed, he was pretty mean, he jumped on another black in a housing project over there and got murdered. And then ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Underwood white or black?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was white, yeah, he was in the oil business over there. But anyway, in '67 ah...like I said, I started out and ah....in '67 with a couple of murders but I got into a ah...ah...real strong truck tire burglary ring out of Fort Worth. And I'm talking about we was having burglaries all over East Texas down here and ah...they was stealing truck loads of ah...truck tires.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were they getting them from this Tyler, Kelley-Springfield plant or...?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No they was getting them from dealers, they'd burglarize a tire dealership and ah...they...they backed up to ah....Grady Weathers tire store, was here in Longview on Hwy 80 right across from ah...Jackson's Motel and Cafe down there at Tyler and 80, just up the street, little old building is still there. And ah...and ah...they stole 85 new truck tires there one night, broke in the back, backed up to the back and loaded 85 truck tires. Well that just about put old Grady out of business you know and this syberline tires. And ah...of course Grady was a good guy and we hated to see himand I guess I had a little time, but this happened January the 14th, 1967. And ah...we got someone of the truckers here in Longview that did business with Grady and...and ah...liked him and they were friends and ah....told Grady one afternoon to tell us that one of his trucks was ah...had tire trouble in Fort Worth on 28th Street and he bought ah....had some tires offered to him

cheaper than Grady could sell them, this syberline tires. So ah... me and one of the deputies went up to Fort Worth the next and out on 28th Street and we went to this service station and ah...sure enough he had a bunch of tires there. Well of course serial numbers on tires are, you know , that's just a thing of the past, of identifying tires because you liable to have three or four of them with the same numbers on them you know. Used to.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I don't know how....I don't know how they do that then, but today I know from my own experience of being in the trucking business, they'll take a whole series of tires and they'll all have the same serial number.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They might run a batch of 5,000.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But anyway, we got up to Fort Worth and ah...and got....developed some information on this place on 28th Street and leaned on this old boy pretty heavy and ah...and he squirmed around and finally admitted he'd....well we ran him on polygraph, and he finally admitted buying some tires, but he didn't know the blacks names. And so we spent that whole day up there messing with him and ah...and we got us a room and spent the night and we worked with some of the deputies and ah...and the police department there and then the next morning well we get up.... I get out early, I'm a kind of early riser, and go by out there and there's a truck sitting behind this guy's place about six o'clock in the morning, a van truck sitting back there. And ah....so ah....ah....bobtail and it's parked on a oil company's property, a jobber there and ah....so sit around there and this guy that owned the jobbership there he showed up about seven-thirty and he saw us out there and of course we was sitting on his property too, we was right next to this service station. And so I introduced myself to me, identified myself, and asked him if this truck belonged to him and he said, 'No but it's sitting on my property'. And he said, 'It hasn't got any business here'. And

ah...so I said, 'Well our intent is to try to catch some truck tire burglars'. And ah...so I said ah... 'You have any objections to us...if this trucks not yours and it's parked illegally on your property, do you have any objections to us looking in it'. And, 'No'. Well we broke a lock on the back of it and looked in it and of course the search wasn't exactly legal but ah...we hadyou know the man owned the property and he didn't want the truck there. And to make a long story short, well it was loaded with stolen truck tires out of ah...Bryan, Texas. And it had a shotgun or two in it. They had ah....they'd burglarized a Western Auto store down at Bryan and got all the truck tires and they stole a couple of guns while they was....got greedy and was satisfied with just the tires, so there we had something we could identify. And ah.... I called ah....ATF and ah....they run a trace on the gun right quick and we got it identified that morning, where it was shipped to and ah....so then I called Bryan and talked to Ott Luther a Ranger down there and ah...told him that ah....that we had a truck up here that....well I got to looking for Ott and he was at the Western Auto store investigating a burglary and it had happened that night. And they had drove the truck up and parked it and went on home, was going to sell the tires to the guy the next morning when he come to work there where we'd already beensuspected that they was stolen. So ah....Ott was out there helping investigate this burglary, so he called me and I told him, I said, 'We got your tires'. And I said, 'They probably got some guns missing too'. And he said, 'Yeah, they had a couple of guns'shotguns or rifles I think. So....of course this is just the beginning, so we....we set up a surveillance on this truck then the rest of that day and the rest of that next night and the next day, hoping that they'd come to it. But ah....the guy at the station ah....he...he ah...snatched us off you know and ah....so we'd already decided that he had called them and so we leaned on him a little heavier and he identified them and we had some telephone records and ah....by then and ah....so then we rounded up about four blacks up there at different times. I had to make two or three trips. But they had two trucks, they had

bought this truck, it was an old East Texas Motorfreight truck and they'd painted over the East Texas sign and had the curtain and the sliding chain type back on it you know. And ah....and they had it and another truck that they'd been using that had a lift on it. And we recovered a safe that they'd kidnapped out of a place. And so while we were up there looking for them we....this guy told us who he'd been selling tires for and we...we started taking tires off of trucks up there and just having 'em bring 'em out there and take off of...Grady's tires. We recovered a bunch of his tires that just had very few miles on them, that he'd sold to an old boy that was doing some garbage collecting up there and two or three more truckers that he was doing business with regular and we just felt like that ah....we'd just get the tires because ah....they was buying them and maybe would stop....next time they bought a set they'd look a little bit closer you know at what they did. So we recovered a bunch of his tires even if they were used. And we got....we recovered a few new ones from a warehouse we found out this guy had later. And ah....of course this load of tires that came from Bryan well they picked them up . But Luther came on up and helped us on the surveillance, he and the city policemen down there. And ah....so after we pulled off well we went ahead and got warrants issued for them and got them all rounded up and ah....this is a funny thing, this is the one I think I told you about. There was ah.....this ah....ah....one of these blacks ah...ah....that we arrested ah....Dallas PD arrested the boys, they were from Dallas. And ah....they ah....he was the last one we picked up and ah....we couldn't get....we couldn't turn 'em, they just wasn't turning, they...they just....they was pretty tough cookies and they was just stealing and didn't mind laying up in jail and couldn't make bond . And this...this....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well explain turning 'em, you couldn't turn 'em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, couldn't get 'em to tell us....I always wanted a thief to tell me everything he did wrong you know. And I said, 'You're going to the penitentiary you know and

what you give me above this is free, you know. I want to know every crime you've ever committed, cause you get down there to the penitentiary and I make another case on you on one of these other crimes that you hadn't told me about I'm going to file another charge on you'. And I'd clean one up, in other words, when he went to the pen I'd have every crime he committed since he got out of the pen the last time written down you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did the Ranger...as a Ranger do you have the power not to charge him if he admitted to a case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, if....they're not going to try him anyway on but one case and they don't know this you know. Ah...yeah, well I'd don't...you got to have good relations with the people that your associated with.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hang on a minute Glenn...I don't....I wasn't flipping....we're right back over what we did last week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....as a Ranger if you had good working relationships with the people around you and you...if you didn't have good relationships you couldn't get much done anyway. Well what you told somebody, that's the way it was. And all these agencies want to clear their cases and ah...and most of the time if they did file on 'em you could get them to run cc with it, and it always did anyway you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's cc ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Concurrent with whatever his original ah....say he agreed to plead....I think these guys maybe took ten years you know in the penitentiary, well if somebody up at Mt. Pleasant or Greenville or.... we cleared up a....out of this same bunch, by the time we got it cleared up we cleared up three tire burglaries in Dallas, one in Temple, two in Fort Worth, one in Nacogdoches, one in Athens, one in Mt. Pleasant, one in Commerce, one in Sulphur Springs, one in Commerce,

one in Waco and the one here in Longview. They had burglarized tire stores in all those places and ah....and if they don't tell me about it how am I going to find out see. Cause these other people you know, and they weren't out looking and....for these guys, I mean they were looking for somebody you know. Then I could come back and call the officers in the agent.....of these different agencies and tell them say, 'You know I got some blacks down here in Longview jail that committed a tire burglary up there and I don't know whether we're going to be able to recover any tires or not, but they'll tell you what they did with them, you know, but they want a concurrent sentence'. Well you know, if I'm sitting down here with Grady Weathers tire store and some Ranger from West Texas calls me and says, 'Glenn I got somebody in jail that committed your burglary and he wants to talk about it if you won't stack his time'. Well how else am I going to find out who did my store if somebody don't tell me. Because if I'd had any evidence I'd already had 'em in custody anyway you know. And ah....this is just...you know when you....they don't leave their names very often you know. I was fixing to tell you about this one black that he was a ring leader and ah....I picked him up....ah...they...Dallas PD arrested him for drunk and of course wewe had 'em all...by this time we're letting everybody know we're looking for him. And of course Dallas had a burglary too see, tire store burglary, and of course they was burning up the country. And in Marshall, Texas, they hit Marshall too, I forgot to put Marshall down here, and ah....because I remember that very well, they hit Marshall first. But ah...anyway they picked this guy up and we had flagged....and had him entered up there and ah...so ah...the Rangers out of Dallas brought him to Van, they met me in Van and I went up there and picked him up. And he was a big rascal, just barely could get the handcuffs around his wrists they were so big, great big guy, he must of weighed 275 pounds I guess, about 6'3" and just all man. But he was an alcoholic and he'd been drunk for three of four days, or three or four years or whatever you know, and ah....because they'd been getting all this money for these

tires and they had plenty....and so he was in tough shape. And he'd been drunk that night and of course they picked him up around one or two o'clock in the morning andand by the time the Rangers got down there and got him I'm sure it was ten o'clock by the time I met them in Van and he was beginning to get the DT's. So I got him out and we exchanged handcuffs and ah....they go on back to Dallas and I headed on to Longview. Well we started out and he was just shaking all over. I said, 'What's the matter with you man'. He says, 'If I just had a little drink of wine or something', said, 'I believe I could make it'. Said, 'I'm in bad shape officer, I'm in bad shape'. And I said, 'Well you want to talk about these burglaries'. 'No sir I don't feel like talking about nothing'. And I said...you know and he just....I drove on and he just kept shaking and got to sweating so I said, 'You know I believe you need a drink of alcohol'. And I pulled off on the side of the road and ah....just told him to set still and I got back in the trunk of my car and I had a bottle of bourbon or something back there. And I had a paper cup and poured him some whiskey in the cup and poured a little water in it and ah....and handed it to him. And of course he was hand cuffed but, I said, 'Now don't drink all that at once, get you a good snort of it, sip on it from here to Longview'. Cause I'd poured him a good heavy drink, cause I...you know, we had experienceHighway Patrol all down the line you got experience with alcoholics you know and if you don't give 'em something they're liable to die you know. And the jails all kept alcohol locked up to give alcoholics you know, to taper them off and...and ah...so..you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They could also go crazy in your car and kick you and your car to pieces.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. So ah...we get on to Longview and ah...he's ah...I got him out and I said, 'Well I want to talk to you awhile before I put you in jail'. And I said, 'I'm going to give you another drink of whiskey before I put you in jail, but I'm not going to give you anything else to drink until after we talk'. Got up in my office and...and ah....he just...I took the handcuffs off of him

and he said, 'I've been in jail a lot times in my life'. And he said, 'Ain't no officer ever treated me as nice as you have'. And ah...I hadn't done nothing but just fix him a drink of whiskey and talked to him you know, about his problems you know, I talked to him about his drinking, I asked him how long....you know you get...my....my ah...way of operating around these thieves is this, I read him the miranda warning and then I talk to him about his mama and his daddy and his brothers and sisters and where he was raised and if he ever picked cotton or plowed fields or cut pulp wood and I'll talk to him about so many things to get his mind off that miranda warning that you ever heard of. And then after awhile we'll get down to business you know. And so he and I got down to business about these tires and he said, 'Yes sir', said, 'I can tell you all about 'em all', but he said, 'I want to talk to my wife first'. Said, 'My wife, I got a good wife and I gots some kids'. And said, 'If you could arrange for me to talk to her', said, 'I know I'm going to the penitentiary, I ain't going to be able to get out of jail'. And I'd already told him, I said, 'You know we've got some other cities that going to put holds on you and Bryan is'. And I said, 'We've got you made here on this Longview, Grady Weathers, so there's two places and your bonds set pretty high'. And so ah....so we called his wife you know, I set there in the office and asked her if she'd come to Longview. No, she can't come to Longview, she's...you know she's tired of messing with him, she's run her car up and down the road and wore it out trying to pick him up and get him out of jail and this and that. So I said, 'Well if we come to Dallas tomorrow will you meet us out at the DPS office'. I said, 'He wants to talk to you and he's ready to get his life straight and get in the penitentiary and maybe get out and make something of himself'. Yeah, she agreed to meet us at the Ranger office in Dallas the next morning, so I load him up the morning and we go to Dallas and he sits in there and talks to his wife about ten minutes and clears up all his business you know. And then we go out and get the rest 'em....round up the rest of 'em and recover a few more tires and things like this. But this is....this is

where the Rangers can do the most good in my opinion, ah....I've always said that ah...ah...you know kind of get involved in somebody that's hurting a whole part....a big large community you know, because here these guys were they were spreading out you know and doing a lot of burglaries all around and...and this was...this was organized crime in one respect.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you ah...you know they're stealing this many tires, they have to be fence them somewhere.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, they was selling near all of them right up there on 28th Street. This guy was...ah...there that was running the station bought a lot of them and he had to make restitution on them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I mean he had to know these were stolen tires.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh sure he knew they were stolen tires. But you know you can sell anything stolen, you know it's...it's...stolen property is easy to sell. Bargain...American...good people will buy a bargain you know and they don't ask too many questions. And a lot of them won't....this guy would of never reported because he was...he was selling those tires....this is how we got on him, he was selling those syberline truck tire cheaper than the dealer here could buy them and a truck load at a time, so there had to be something wrong you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you too now, you had him in Gregg County, ah...you've had him in Harrison County, you had him down in ah...McClendon County and whatever county Bryan is, now would ya'll set there and say, now look ah....the Judge in Gregg County he's not as tough on these old thieves as the Judge down in McClendon County let's say, so let's take him down to McClendon and we're going to charge him down there so he can get tried down there or did it...did it just depend on how.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No this is not the way...not the way we worked it, that's not the way I worked it, I don't know some Rangers may of worked it that way. But ah...oh if we made a decision....you know I made the decision, it's my decision, it's my case I've...I'm the one that uncovered the thing, so I'm going to do it like I want to do it you know. And ah...of course I'd rather testify in Court here as I had to go down to Bryan and testify or drive to Fort Worth and testify you know. And ah...cause while I'm here I can be doing something else while I'm waiting on ah...and if I'm out of town all I can do is just sit in the court...in the hallway and wait for my turn. And of course...and I guess if we might discuss something like that but if you've got a guy that's willing to plead guilty you know, he's clearing his business up then you're not going to worry about a Judge, cause a Judge likes a good record too you know and they love for folks to walk in their Court and plead guilty you know. Cause he...at the end of the year the Judge can say, well I tried so many cases you know and this...these three blacks may have been in his courtroom at least fifteen or twenty minutes. But ah...that gave...that...he can show at the end of the year that he convicted three blacks of burglary and got...sent 'em to the pen for thirty-six years you know. And ah...and that's sounds good on his ah....report you know, to the public. And the same way with the District Attorney and the same way with the police department and the Sheriff's office and the Rangers you know, we cleared up so many cases you know and that's how they gauge you, by what you do you know. So I can see this happening in a few cases and...but not many because ah...if you think you're going to have to try a case then you might want to talk about something like that, well this Judge over here is not bad about having jury trials and he might not call this case for a year or two but...and then you might talk about something else, but very seldom. Because most of the Court's ah....ah....was willing to try a guy if he had a confession and recovered property

and...and I've never seen a Judge that wouldn't try a case like that you know. And if a guys already agreed to plead guilty for a given number of years...and you know this is not unusual for us to....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Called plea bargaining?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we...we'd talk plea bargain with him and...and ah....after...after he's confessed and everything you know. Said, 'Well now you know you clear up some cases well we'll, you know, we'll let it run cc with you'. And we'd talk to the District Attorney and say, how many years you want you know, would you agree to give 'em, if they want to clear their business up you know. And they'd tell us. Well I've had cases....I had a case one time where ah...a policeman got shot at and I'm not going to name the area because ah...they kind of....these guys shot at him and ah...and they caught them later and they massaged their heads just a little bit, which is...wasn't uncommon, but it wasn't supposed to....they...they...it wasn't supposed to happen. But ah...anyway there was a little....the police wasthey got...they were sorry that they did it because it's...it's ah...they was all worked up, they'd been shot at and so these guy sent for me, and all of them knew me and ...and ah...two guys involved knew me and ah...and ah...they was...'We're in trouble you know and we committed an armed robbery and ...and ah...and the police got after us and we shot', and blah, blah, blah you know. And I said, 'Yeah you are in trouble you know'. And so they said, 'See what your best deal you can get for us'. They're in jail. So I go first and talk to the police officers, you know I don't want the police officers thinking, well here's a Ranger coming way down here ah....in deep East Texas and from Longview and...and ah...talk to two old thieves and he's trying to run our business for us you know. So I went and talked to the police officers, the ones that was involved, I went to the Chief and I said, 'I need to talk to those officers'. I said, 'These guys they arrest...ya'll arrested last night', I didn't have a thing to do with the arrest, but they were from further up this way and they knew me because I'd sent 'em to the pen before. And

ah...so he says ah...I said, 'I'd like to talk to them, cause these guys are wanting...they don't want to go to Court, they want to plead guilty and get the best deal they can get'. Well he calls the policemen in, they're coming in later on to work and he told me when and I just come back and met them there at the office. And ah...so he tells me said...now these guys agreed to straighten up a bunch of other business too, you know, they had a bunch of armed robberies and burglaries and things all over deep East Texas and as far up as Nacogdoches and Lufkin. And ah...so ah...the policemen came and he said ah....I said, now I told them the same thing, I said, 'I'm not trying to interfere, these guys know me and they trust me and they want to work out a plea bargain and I want to see how ya'll feel about it before we...before me and you go see the District Attorney and see how he feels about it'. Well they was both...they got together, I said, 'Ya'll get back there and talk it over'. I said, 'Don't have to talk in front of me and the Chief'. And they come back in a few minutes and I couldn't believe it, and they said, 'I believe they ought to have at least ten years'. And ah...well I...you know that wasn't near enough, I knew that you know and I knew that they'd go for a whole lot more than that you know. And ah...so ah...I said, 'Let's go talk to the District Attorney'. And ah...we went and talked to the District Attorney and he said, 'Well, ten years is all right', but said, 'I...you know, if you can get 'em to plea for a little bit more it wouldn't hurt'. And ah...I said, 'Well', of course it's getting late that night by then and I think I spent the night down there. And the next morning I got up in the jail and talked to those guys and....and ah...I said, 'Well...', and of course there's a few times you can lie to a thief, I very seldom ever lied to one, I wouldn't set down and tell him I had his fingerprints if I...if I didn't think I had him, I wouldn't tell him a lie but in something like this you can ah....you know, we're talking about there's no way this is all going to come out, so I told 'em I said, 'The policemen think you ought to have...ya'll ought

to have twenty years, and the District Attorney thinks you ought to have thirty'. I said, 'I believe I can get 'em to compromise for twenty-five'. They plead guilty for twenty-five years.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And...and the policemen thought ten was enough and the DA thought fifteen was enough, but I didn't think it was enough you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And they needed to be put away longer than that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this is kind of getting off our subject for tonight, but did you ever play the good Ranger, bad Ranger interrogation?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, ah....no I didn't that. I've heard this and we've taught this, back when I first went in ah...we were taught that that's the way to talk to them. But it was pretty easy ah...I...I always tried to play the good, honest part but I...not that I'm trying to do them that much good you know. Ah....ah...that kind of wore out pretty soon to tell you the truth, that...in the older days that was good. But after the miranda warning come along and ah...they generally knew....if you knew how to communicate with a thief and he liked you, they are...they want to tell somebody. And you can convince him that you've got him made and not lie to him you know. You don't lie to a thief and ...because if you do you're going to be marked a liar when you get to the penitentiary you know. Glenn Elliott will lie to you, you know. And ah...so if that's the case then I'm not going to be much more good out here in the field if I get marked in the penitentiary as a liar. And I think I told you, I guess one of the best compliments I ever had paid to me was a thief told another one, said, 'Glenn Elliott will pat you on the back all the way to the penitentiary'. Well, why not you know. Get him cigarettes and let him talk to his mama on the telephone you know and if he's....if a guys is helping you clear up some crimes and telling you things that you couldn't prove in Court

ah...unless he told you, then you'd better listen to him and be good to him. And ah...because if you shut him up...just like I talked about Jay Banks and that guy up there at Daingerfield that time, ah...if you shut a man up, he ain't going....you're not going to find out anything.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Jay shut that guy up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he just shut him up. Because he...you know he walked in, it's his appearance and..and ah...I guess he made one quote and ah....'This son-of-a-bitch I understand is getting his business together', you know. Wham. You know, he didn't have...he just made a mistake coming in, that's all. If you got a guy going, he's cooperating with you and telling you something, you better listen to him. And ah...and they know....they know when you're squaring with them and trying to be good with them. This was ah...ah...ah....and then in...in '67 we did...we started some vice investigations. And I got up to Texarkana and ah....and this is ah...this is a funny thing ah...and I didn't like to work vice.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Talking whorehouses up there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah...and we had some whorehouses here in Gregg County and a little gambling and ah...and they had the same thing in Texarkana. And ah...I'll tell you why I didn't like to vice, I was up at Texarkana working vice, Jack O'Brian with the Chief of Police up there and Red Arnold ah...was a Ranger that worked Bowie County and by this time I think Red was pretty well working... well no I still had part of Bowie County, but I...I hadn't been a Ranger all that long. And they wanted me to come up there and work some vice. And this was really before we got into it real strong, the whole DPS, they was just beginning to but Jack was wanting to work it. And ah...so they had a whorehouse out there on 67....I mean 59, coming out towards Atlanta and ah...they was wanting me to get into it. And the only way to get in there was to...for somebody that knew something about it, so Red carries me down to the bus station and lets me out and I've got an

old tin suitcase and a pair of...a plaid shirt and a pair of low quarters and ah...and this cab driver comes....and I called a cab and they said that's the best way to get out there is to get a cab driver to carry you. And ah...so we go ah...I call this cab driver and I told him I wanted to go to a certain motel and ah...and get me a room and ah...and I wanted him to come back at dark, that I had a cousin, and I told him I was from Windom, Texas and ah...that I had a cousin that had been down there just a few months before and told me that he caught a cab and went out there to this whorehouse and they just had some good looking girls out there and he had a big time. And I said, that's what I want to do. And I was playing the old country boy role and...and ah...we got out to the ah...ah...motel and ah...I said, 'Now I want you to pick me up at...', ah...a given hour I don't know if it was seven o'clock or whatever, and I tipped him you know, a dollar and ah...which ah...I'm sure was unusual for a cab driver in Texarkana, Texas, and by looking at him I knew it was you know, cause he was real pleased. So sure enough right on the given hour he pulls up in front of my....and he said, 'Well where do you want to go'. And I said, 'Well, my cousin told me ya'll knew'. I said, 'It's out on the Atlanta...towards Atlanta I know that, he told me that'. And I said, 'He told me ya'll would know where to go'. I said, 'I've never been there before'. And so he carries me out there. And there's a cafe up in front of this place, a little coffee bar. We go in there and he sits down and I sit down by him and...and ah...this woman that's running the cafe the cab driver and her whispered around a little while you know. And she ah...she come on over there to talk to me, she says, 'Honey I don't believe I know you'. And I said, 'No ma'am you know, you don't', I said, 'Because this is my first time down here'. And I put the same spiel on her you know. And ah...first thing you know I'm back there in that back room with four prostitutes you know, just one to start with, and I said, 'No, no, you know, this ain't the way my cousin said to do it, said I'd have my pick of four or five'. Well she brings three more in there. Well when she does I just

reached in my shirt pocket and badged them and told them to sit down there on the bed and ah....and reached for the telephone, there was a telephone in there. And of course ah...and they'd had an armed robbery just two blocks from this whorehouse. And the guys that run the ah...convenience store ran out of the store with a gun and the guys that robbed him ran over him, and nearly killed him. And Jack and Red was up there waiting on me and of course they had to get involved in this armed robbery deal and I'm sitting there high and dry, I've got to sit there for...oh for thirty, forty-five minutes and ah...before they can come pick me up, which I wasn't in any bind, cause I had a pistol and...and I wasn't afraid of the four pros...three pros...four prostitutes and that madam. But we shut the place down...I shut the place down and told her to lock the front door and get all the customers out of there and then just sit down and we'd have some transportation after while, carried 'em all to town. But you know, you can see what can happen to you and of course if you was a vice officer and you was working an area that had enough vice officers to take care of that and take care of their other business too, but Texarkana didn't have that many officers. So the priority was to try to catch those armed robbers that had nearly killed a man in an armed....and you know...and here I am down there making some misdemeanor prostitution cases you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you ever work any of those Texarkana whorehouses with Rigler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah....well I didn't work any with Rigler.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Cause Rigler, you know in his book, he

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well Rigler didn't like and I didn't either. And I don't think a Ranger's got a whole lot of business ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they can't work....they don't work the whorehouses now do they?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't think so. Ah...I haven't heard of it in a long time. But yeah, I was up there at different times, we were all there. They ah...what happened was ah...the department

just started working a lot more vice during that time and I think ah.....ah....probably due to one of the Commissioners that ah...that thought vice ought to be worked a little bit more and...and of course this.... that's the way the Federal folks work. You know they ah...the Federal people will get a priority on what they want to work and ah...what they're going to spend the most time on and whether it's white collar crime or fraud or...or bank robbery or whatever you know. And ah...and narcotics and generally that's what they try to work for awhile. And I think the DPS through the encouragement of the Chairman of the Commission decided that we needed work more vice. And it needed working, I have to agree with that. I mean it needed worked but I didn't...it wasn't a job for the Rangers. Sixty-one Rangers in the State of Texas couldn't clear up all the prostitution in Texas if they worked the rest of their lives.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did your house stayed closed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh imagine until we got out of town, you know. I imagine as soon as them girls got out of jail, probably the lawyers down there waiting on them when we got there and I imagine they was at least in jail long enough to get fingerprinted and mugged and they put up a cash bond and was probably back out there working that night you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I...I wanted...this is not in your story, but I want to put it in here anyway, it's ah...people a hundred years from now who watch this tape ah....they don't know Rigler so they won't appreciate this, but when I was visiting Lewis one day and he....up in Gainsville and he got to talking about this and he said, 'Yeah all my buddy Ranger's said, Oh when you go up there Rigler we want to go with you, we want to go with you'. And he said, 'I got called to go up there', and he said, 'Not a one of them sorry son-of-a-bitches would go with me'. Of course you'd have to know Rigler to really appreciate that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'd of gone with him if I'd of been there because it would have been a comical thing to do. But back when Rigler was going up there, the time that he was up there I wasn't, and of course after you're up there and go to each one of the places well you no use going back. I know the one that Rigler got into and I got into I think was Hattie's was the name of it, and I borrowed a Schlitz beer uniform from ah....Stoudt distributing company had just moved to Longview and ah....I went down there and asked Bill Stoudt, I said, 'Get me a uniform, you know one of those guys about my size, I need a....I need a uniform, I want to use for undercover up at Texarkana'. And I told him what we was doing. And I get...I carry this uniform up there and ah...and so I go to this ah...by myself....ahto this place and I got this Schlitz uniform on and I just didn't do my homework well enough. I got in but I didn't think I was going to. And I told the lady I said, 'I'm from ah'....told her I was from somewhere down in Arkansas and I just moved up there and went to work for the Schlitz beer distributorship there in Miller County, Arkansas and that my wife and kids hadn't moved up there yet and I understood that they had some girls there and I just, you know, I was looking over my shoulder all the time you know and acting real meek and that. I said, 'I just need a girl' and put a pretty good story on her. Question...'Who is the beer distributor in Miller County?', I said, 'Ma'am', I said, 'He didn't hire me, the man that owns the place, I...to be truthful with you I hadn't never seen him'. And I called an old boys name, just reached in the top of my head and got a name. I said, 'That's who I work for and he runs all the trucks and I'm just a helper on one of them'. And I said, 'I hadn't never seen the boss'. She let me in. And she told me later, she said, 'I knew better than to let you in here', after I got in there and made the deal and ah...but ah...but Rigler and I, I guess either one of us could get in nearly any place, cause we got a whole lot in common with shooting the bull you know. And that's what it take you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well...

GLENN ELLIOTT: You got to talk your way into a place like that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Rigler....well kind...well this story is funny he said when he got there he was only supposed to be there for so many minutes and they was supposed to come barreling in, well this time passes and nobody shows up and he said, 'The only thing I could think to do was to go to the bathroom and wash my hands'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...during this time too ah...well I noticed we...I raided a gambling up in Marion County that we'd had a bunch of complaints on. And like I say, we started working vice about this time and...and we're going to get into a whole lot more of it here in Gregg County as we go along and may.... probably in this series here. Then I got into a couple of...I got called on a drug store burglary up at Atlanta, Texas. Bill Dowd was Sheriff up there and ah...and Cap...nearly all my counties called me on all their major problems. And they'd burglarized a drug store and got some hard narcotics up there and Bill called me and we got up there and did everything we could. And a real bad night, it was just a tough night, it had been....it was raining and bad and ah...and ah...anyway, well we got lucky just like we did on the tire deal, just got out and...and we developed a couple of suspects. And one of them was a...from Longview here, his name was Ab Fisher, I'll never forget Ab as long as I live. We...a lot of these people like Ab and...and I guess this black in the tire business ah...ah...you call....I call 'em honorable thieves, they ah....ah...they would work and steal and...but they might carry a gun with them when they went on a burglary but just to shoot it up in the air or something to get some policeman to run behind a car so they could get away you know. They ah...these kind of folks...even Ab my main line drug addict would not kill an officer. Ah...I wasn't...you know, I wasn't a bit afraid of Ab Fisher, he was....he'd been a drug addict all his life. He started out driving a cab here in Tyler....ah...Longview as a young man and ah...Ab had been a main line drug addict most of his life and he was getting up in his late fifty's or early sixty's

when ah...when this thing happened here. And Ab had got a hold of....run in to some old boy in the penitentiary somewhere that had come through here checking with him, and he had some pretty good property out here on Spring Hill Road he'd inherited from his folks. And he had a house out there and Ab was ah...would work, he'd drive a cab and he'd do things like that and he'd go out and if he got....if he didn't have money to buy dope with then he'd go...they'd go burglarize a drug store. So they had burglarized a drug store.... and eventually after I caught Ab and he started clearing his business upin Nacogdoches, Atlanta, ah...ah...Mt. Pleasant, Athens and ah...I believe in Huntsville and ah...but Ab and them was hooked on drugs. And I picked them up and they had been in jail, they got picked up down at Nacogdoches and got in jail down there on a suspect of burglarizing that drug store because it was in the area and ah...but they didn't have any evidence on them. And ah....so ah....but they couldn't get out of jail. And so I found they was in jail down there and went and talked to them about this Atlanta, and I talked Ab into ah...Ab was...you know a thief will get to a point where he's just low and they know when their jig's about up, most of them do you know. And ah....Ab knew that it was about time for him to go to the pen, because he'd done burglarized about five drug stores. And ah...and so he...in Mt. Pleasant and maybe Paris too they hit. And so Ab was ah...I talked him into getting his business cleaned up. And they was in bad shape, they'd been in jail two days and two nights and hadn't had any drugs. So Ab, he said, 'Well can you take me to' ...I said, 'I'm going to take you Atlanta'. Cause ah...for some reason or other we ah...we'd gathered a little evidence on them at Atlanta and they'd seen the car that they was driving, somebody had, we'd gathered a little evidence on them, but ah... and I said, 'I'm taking you to Cass County'. Nacogdoches had already agreed to let us have 'em. But they was...they needed a shot of drugs is what they did, so I got a hold of...M.C. Roebuck was Chief of Police there in Nacogdoches, he's dead now, and ah...I said, 'M.C. these boys are hurting pretty bad, man both

of them are main line drug addicts'. And I said, 'Do you think you can get a hold of the Sheriff and ah...and ah...maybe get us a prescription to get 'em some...a shot you know'. And I said, 'Give me enough...get enough so I can give 'em one tomorrow too, you know, and then I'll get 'em on up to Cass County'. And I said, 'And I know the Sheriff can, you know, up there can get 'em something', kind of taper 'em off a little bit to keep 'em....cause they was...they was about to climbI'm fixing to haul 'em, by myself, from Nacogdoches to Atlanta you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And your Ranger cars didn't have cages.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, no, we didn't want cages. And I'm going to stop in Longview, I'm going to bring 'em through Longview and Ab....let Ab get some stuff from out at his house, and he had some money buried out there and he knew this, so he could buy some dope see. I mean you could pay...have a doctor prescribe it...and so ah....M.C. said, 'Oh we don't need...', said, 'I'll just call down there at that drug store', and he said, 'If they're going to clear up this burglary and tell us they did it and what...so this man can account for his drugs and we can clear a case up, I'll call him and he'll give us some for 'em and he'll call a doctor'. So we did, and then they did and ...and I got 'em some....man listen...and ah...M.C. asked me to come out to the car where they were and I had 'em and he said, 'Who's going...who's going to give...you going to give 'em a shot Glenn'. And I said, 'I don't know where...', and Ab said, 'We'll handle that'. And you know those guys have told me Bobby that they shot theirselves in the penis sometimes with these drugs. Ah...they...it's...it's the strangest thing you ever saw, but when you get an old thief like them....now Ab and them cleared their business up. And he wanted to get out on bond, there's just one thing he asked me, he said, 'Glenn I'll tell you what I want to do, I'm going to tell you all the drug stores we burglarized and I'm going to make you statements and I'm going to tell you exactly how we got in the building and the whole works'. And he said, 'We didn't sell an ounce of anything we stole, we

took it all, we wasn't in it to sell anything, we was in it to get enough dope to keep us going, and ah...we was down, we was broke and that's what we was doing, just burglarizing drug stores to get drugs for ourselves'. And...but he had this property out here and he wanted to sell it and there was several acres and they was fixing to take it into the city limits of Longview, and it was all his. And ah....so he said, 'I want to sell this property and spend the money and then go to the penitentiary'. And he said, 'It ain't going to take me long'. And he said, 'I ain't going to steal anymore dope, I'll have enough money to buy my dope'. And he said, 'I can buy it'. He said, 'You can buy dope'. Well anyway, I carried him on to Atlanta and we clear up those burglaries and we clear up all those other burglaries and then he get a hold of some bondsman here in Longview and they get a deal working and they...he sells his property and he makes bond, he gets his buddy out on bond too. And ah...well his buddy hadn't got out of jail good until his fingerprints...on bond his fingerprints had hit Washington and he was a fugitive from ah...some State, I don't even remember, I don't even think I got the case here with me, but ah...the FBI called me. And they said, 'We've ah...that's not that guys name, Smith, that's with Ab Fisher, his name is so and so'. And said, 'His fingerprints finally hit Washington and we got him identified', and said, 'We got a fugitive warrant for him'. And I said, 'Well I know where's he at, you know, just come on over here and we'll got get him'. And, 'Well we're expecting a lot of trouble you know, we need to bring...', I said, 'No you don't need to bring anybody, just come on over here and me and you will go out there and arrest him'. And ah...cause I'd been messing with them, and I tell you what we did, we went out there about ah...oh, around six-thirty in the morning, early, just about daylight and this time....about this time of the year, just after daylight and it was probably a little later than this, since daylight is six-thirty. But anyway, they were ah...they had just go up and was ah...fixing to give theirselves a shot, they had the dope, Ab and this guy. I walked up to the back door, I knew where they was...I knew they'd be

in the back of the house, I...you know, cause I'd been in and out of there, and I knocked on the door and Ab comes out you know. And I said, 'Where's your partner'. 'Ah, he's in the house there Glenn', said, 'We're just attending to a little business'. I said, 'Well get it attended to and tell him to come out here, I need to talk to him'. And he went back in there and they both come out in a few minutes and I told Smith, I said, 'This is agent so and so with the FBI and he's got a warrant for you'. And he said, 'Well I was afraid that was going to happen'. This is...you know, and here he goes. Well that leaves Ab by himself. Well I'll tell you what Ab did, Ab promised me now, he said, 'Glenn I'm not going to burglarize anymore drug stores, I've got this money, all this money I'm going to spend'. He bought him an old Nash car, pretty nice car, and two weeks later he got picked up down around Mission, Texas coming out of Mexico. He'd gone down there and bought him a bunch of dope in Mexico. Well the Sheriff and them picked him up, whoever picked him up had him in jail down there, well he didn't call me, calls his bondsman and his bondsman calls me. Said, 'They got Ab down in jail in Mission', and said, 'They got a pretty high bond set on him and he said he had some dope'. And he said, 'He hadn't got but about twenty-five hundred dollars of that money left'. He'd done gone through it, this is like two or three months later. And ah...he said, 'He's in bad shape, so do you think you can help him'. And I said, 'Well are you going to make his bond'. He said, 'No, he hadn't got enough money, you know, he's out of money and he said he wouldn't have any money for any dope'. And he said, 'It's just about the end of the line for Ab'. So I called the Sheriff down there on the phone and told him....told him the whole story about it you know. I said, 'You know, you got him and his bondsman's not going to make his bond', and I said, 'There's no use in me coming down there and talking to him because he's going to go on to the penitentiary'. And I said, 'Make him a comfortable as you can, you know'. Because I said, 'He's a main line dope addict and has been all his life'. And Ab hung himself in that jail that night, killed

himself in that jail that night. He knew he was out of money and he knew he was out of dope and he probably needed some dope you know. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you think he planned that all along, rather than go to jail?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, I have an idea that he'd made up his own mind before he went to the pen that ah...cause he told me, he said, 'Glenn I can't live in that penitentiary'. He said, 'You know I've been on this dope too long', and he said, 'I just can't...there's no way I can live down there'. But ah...yeah no doubt he planned it you know. But he was...what I was saying...when I say honorable thief you know, Ab Fisher set down and talked to me just like you and I are talking you know. And he's telling the truth you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you had about the same relation I know with like Curly Smith, cause you know Curly....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:would be I guess maybe but....

GLENN ELLIOTT: You got to have a...anybody that's...if you don't...if you don't get...put yourself on their level, they're not going to tell you anything. You got to put yourself on their level. You know, you got to tell them you know I'll...you know...and it's true, you get to thinking about it. You know, I can say for the grace of God I might be setting over there in your shoes you know. Cause ah...you know, I was....I was a kid and was a little rowdy and did some things wrong when I was a kid you know. You don't want to preach to them and start quoting the gospel.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's that old saying, Except for me there goeth I.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...but this...that was a...that was an interesting case of working those guys. You know it's just, you learn so dern much from people like that you know. And you learn how to investigate. You know what they told me about....I said, 'Why did ya'll pick such a bad night', I

said, 'It must of rained 3 1/2" last Wednesday....that Wednesday night ya'll burglarized that drug store'. They said, 'Glenn, a police officer is not going to get out of his car in a pouring down rain and if he thinks he see a shadow he may back up and look again, but he ain't going to get out and he ain't going to shake a door, he ain't going to get out and shake the door to see what whether it's locked or not in the pouring down rain'. He said, 'Now you'll get out looking and shaking back doors and looking in buildings when it's pretty', but said, 'When it's pouring down rain a policeman's going to stay in his car'. And he said, 'That's the time to ah...ah...to get...to do your burglary'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, in this same period of time I got acquainted with ah...ah...a well known figure in Texas that's a organized crime, the Jerry Ray James gang, and this is...and see what I'd do, the...they came up here, we was having a bunch of burglaries here in East Texas and then finally they ah...there was a store burglarized over at ah...ah...Gladewater where a bunch of merchandise was taken. And one of the deputies informants had told them that ah....that James and them were in town and that they committed the burglary, it wound up that they didn't. But we rounded them up and ah....and then you could get a warrant without as much probable cause as it takes now. And so I got acquainted with Jerry Ray James and Clifford and Henry Bowen and Benjamin Thomas Tisdale and all this bunch. And now Jerry James and them were burglarizing banks and they was into prostitution in Austin, and they was headquartered in Austin.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where....where was he from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He's...Austin, he was from around....he was going to the University of Texas at Austin, I think he was a pretty good football player at one time and he just got to be a play boy and a kind of outlaw. In fact Jerry James was in the Federal penitentiary for life and he's now out

as a protected Federal witness. He helped convict the guy that killed John Wood, Judge Wood I mean, down at ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: San Antonio?

GLENN ELLIOTT: San Antonio, yeah. He was in....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The TV star's dad?

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah, he was in the penitentiary with ah...Carlson, isn't that the guys name that did the...that killed him?

ROBERT NIEMAN: It's Woody Haralson's daddy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Haralson, Haralson I mean, not Carlson, Haralson. And ah...he was in the pen with him and Jerry James had a hell of a rep....I mean he had a reputation of being a mean son-of-a-gun and a tough son-of-a-gun and committed a lot of crimes. They rob...they burglarized a lot of banks, they robbed a lot of rich people.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he a killer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...yeah, yeah he'd killed. I don't think they ever made him for murder on anybody, but he would.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In the class with Gene Norris?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...I don't whether he was in the class with Gene Norris, but he wanted to be you know, he would like to be. Ah...Henry Bowen who was ah...ah...see I...they even got....they're the people that got the safe over at Ms. Phillip's before....a couple of years before she got killed. That was the same bunch that ah...they...they'd pry on real wealthy people. And they had all kinds of contacts all across Texas to fence nice furs and stolen jewelry and money or whatever you know. And Jerry had cut a good swath. And I had another...this was a compliment that was passed on me ah...when they started this...when they got into this Judge Wood thing and found out

that James and Haralson were in penitentiary together up in Oklahoma, Federal pen, and Haralson had told him some things about ah...about this ah...Judge Wood case that....that somebody had...that was there had to know. And ah... of course old Jerry took advantage of it. But the Federal folks they ah....unbeknownst to me that they were trying to work a deal with him, which I'm sure that's what they was trying to do at the time, well they went to Austin to find out....now I mean...what I'm talking about, this was the hometown of Jerry James, who knew the most about Jerry Ray James. And Austin sent them up here to me. And...well that's a compliment. Of course I had a file on him that filled that box over there just about it, you know. Because they'd been up here and they was moving criminals and I thought that's what Rangers ought to be working. And ah...but I got acquainted with them and then oh, later on I'll tell you some more stories about the Phillips' and...and ah...and kidnapping the safe because ah...it ah...it all tied together. But I got my feet wet with the Jerry Ray James gang. And they...in fact they was driving a Cadallic that... Benjamin Thomas Tisdale used to live here in Gregg County and he'd ah...some guy had advertised a late model Cadallic for sale in the paper, and Tisdale was in here and ...and he ah...answered the ad and paid him in cash but they never did transfer the title. Well I set on this guys house for a couple...about two or three days surveilling it, trying to find out who was coming and going there. Because James and them were seen out at Big Springs or Sweetwater or somewhere, in Odessa or El Paso, in this Cadallic and they identified them but it was registered to a Gregg County citizen. And it actually....finally I decided well heck you know, why don't I go ask him you know, instead of sitting on this....I've been spending all my time trying to watch Jerry Raysome outlaw to come to.....and of course somebody had a warrant at that time for Tisdale. But I just finally go up and knock on his door one evening when I get tired of watching his house and when I had time and introduced myself and asked him about his car. And he said, 'Yeah I sold that to a guy and I don't

even remember his name'. Said ah...'And he paid me cash'. And ah...so you know, I said, 'Well they never have transferred cause it's still in your name, you got a bunch of outlaws running around', I said, 'Your phone liable to be ringing a whole lot you know'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Jerry James by any chance, you don't know if his family happened to migrate to Texas from Missouri do you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't have any idea where he came from, I really don't. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Course with the last name James that's an obvious question.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah...but I know this that ah....and then I had my multiple murder in ah....in this area in '67. Ah....Red was gone somewhere.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Red Arnold?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....the Upshur County Sheriff called me and it was on a weekend and ah....they had three people missing. They had a mother and a father and a grandfather and....up in that Pritchard area of Upshur County. And ah....and they suspected foul play because these people never did leave and they was good people, good Church people and they had a juvenile son that was ah....had been driving their car that weekend and ah....he had told.... some of the relatives got suspicious that his mother and daddy and grandpa had gone to see some of their relatives somewhere. Doyle called for some help and ah....so I met him up there and he said, 'Glenn there's something wrong'. He said, 'The family's worried and this boy they've never let him out with the car to drive like he's been doing, and he's been all over town here and got him a girlfriend'. And so we're out and we ah....to the house and we went out there and ah....and the boy stayed with his story. So we got to kicking around out there and I said, 'Well Doyle, let's....', he said ah....his sister was there too, and ah....this was kind of a deterrent to us probably at that time but she was a good girl and as I remember she was married and ah....ah....she was concerned too.

And ah....but we got permission to look around the place and so we go out to the barn and ah...and get to following the tracks of a tractor. Ah.... I believe it had a front end loader on it, know it did, and ah....either that or one.... I believe it was either front end loader or one of those buckets on the back, I believe it had one of those buckets like on a three point hookup ah...kind of a

ROBERT NIEMAN: Backhoe, three point hookup backhoe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No it wasn't a backhoe type bucket, it was one of those buckets that the farmers use like a....used to be a slip with mules you know, you could....you could put it down and pull the tractor and fill it up with dirt and pick it up and go take it somewhere and dump it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay, okay. Yeah, okay. Yeah, a scraper thing.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Anyway ah...we followed this tractor tracks way down in....in a coastal field and got down there and you could tell where there was some dirt had been moved, fresh, recently. And out of that dirt was three fingers that didn't get covered up. And we were....we walked down there, the Sheriff and I, and here these three fingers are sticking up, after we you know looked around down there good. So of course we come on out and call for some help to come and dig updig this up and ...and ah...of course we recovered all three of the bodies. But I called Austin and they sent the lab....they flew the lab people up there and ah....because we had our hands full, wasn't anybody but the Sheriff and I. And ah...so we....we knew what we had and ah...so Pat Spears just got....I think was in Austin about that time, yeah I guess that's about the time, '67 when Pat made Director. And of course he's from Upshur County, so I didn't have any trouble, I just calledI think I called him. And ah...oh it's not unusual you know, you can call the Director by his first name if you want to in this outfit. And ah...anyway we....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you call Homer Garrison, Homer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I didn't call Homer but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anyway, I'm sorry.

GLENN ELLIOTT:but my captain did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....my first captain. But ah....ah...we...we worked that.....we got the bodies out and it was threatening rain and we was in prettyand it was right in a draw. And ah...and so we finally got the boy away from his family and got him to accompany us up to the Sheriff's office. And of course he told us all about it when we got up there. And ah....he had wanted the car and they wouldn't let him have it andand ah.... I think he was 17 years old and ah....he killed them, and carried 'em down there and buried 'em. And told all this cotton bull story and went out and dated and had a big time all that weekend you know. And I think it was Sunday afternoon when the Sheriff called me, and it was always a weekend, you know everything happened on a weekend. And ah...but we got him....wehe cleared up the murders and told us all about it. But that was my first multiple murders, three people killed and buried up there on their own farm. Had a little old farm up there, just good hard working people you know and just ah....and of course old Charles Mathis back in the business there during this time. He's stealing tractors and ah...and ah...he was.....had two stolen riding lawn mowers in a pickup, stolen pickup, and the Highway Patrol tried to stop him and he tried to run them off the road and finally they wrecked him out and we had to go up there in a manhunt and hunted all night and got him the next morning about ten or eleven o'clock andand he had a juvenile with him and ah....ah....and of course old Charles was back in the picture again, stealing you know and ah....which was typical for him. And ah...then I...the same year I worked awe had a major automobile theft ring operating out of Houston, and new cars and they was bringing 'em up here and selling 'em without titles, in this area. We recovered a bunch of stolen cars out of Houston. At that time in the '60's you know ah....this was '67, they was

manufacturing a lot of automobiles and the car lots in Houston was full of them. And most of the time a car could be stolen down there for two or three months and they wouldn't even know it was stolen you know, they had so many cars piled on those lots and those dealers unless somebody looked and wanted that specific color and car they might not even know it was gone. And I worked with Burl Avery who was a National Automobile Theft Bureau investigator in here and we recovered a bunch of new automobiles, mostly Buicks ah....and was brought into this area up here and sold.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Of course at that time you could go to Alabama, it was a non-title state, and you could very easily get a Texas title, just go into Alabama you know.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh, yeah. And Mississippi, ah....Mississippi was the same way during that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN:get a bill of sale and come back over here and swap it for a title and you had a good, clean title.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And then in July of '67 ah....ah.... I guess it was the first Elyssian Field bank burglary. And this was a real interesting case. Ah...and Iyou and I have talked about it riding up and down the highway, but we had aa....there was some people down here on Hwy. 80 run a little old grocery store where Hwy....where the road turned off to go to Elyssian Field and after this burglary well we was spreading out and asking questions around. And we identified the automobile we thought these guys were in, they said they thought they was oil field people. And ah....they had gone down and burglarized Elyssian Field bank. And what they'd done, it looked professional, ah....but they had an old vault door on that bank that ah....at that time that had a steel locking bar that ran across the back of it and it was horizontal and it was about a quarter inch steel. And what they didand somebody had to know a safe door and they knew exactly where to put

ah....they had a drill ah...ah...magnetic drill that would just pop on there and they had....they had a jig it would wind up later. And they put this jig on there and ah....so they'd know exactly where the locking bar was and then they'd mount their drill. And they'd drill that....drill that locking bar in to and ah....and then just open the door and get in it. Well all they was getting was the silver and the safety boxes. Of course Elyssian Field bank the safety boxes was tackle boxes and just whatever you wanted to put in there you know, I mean that was.....and they'd put their name on them, a little old lock on them you know, nobody was going to bother them, this was all customer stuff you know, nobody could get in the vault but the bank people. But they'd have \$3,000.00, \$3,500.00 worth of silver which was a pretty good nights work you know. And ah....so they got the silver and got all the safety boxes out of Elyssian Field bank. And ah....so we later developed through ah....ah...FBI in Dallasdeveloped an informant up there that I knew and he was....his name was Shorty Anderson. Shorty was an old safe burglar from way back and a pretty good safe burglar. Course it winds up Shorty taught these guys how do this. Well ah...but he was....he got greedy and the FBI had some hundred dollar bills to pass you know, to informants, we never did have any money to give informants, I never paid an informant a penny all the time I was a police officer. Ah....and ah...but the Federal folks have....have money to pay for information and that's good, cause if they get information they're going to give it to us if it pertains to our business. So ah...anyway ah.... I go up there and talk to Shorty and ah....seemed I...I'm trying to think of this FBI ah....he had a funny name ah....Bookout I believe was his name, anyway ah.... I went up there and talked to him and he said, 'You want to go talk to Shorty', said ah...'He thinks he knows who burglarized that Elyssian Field bank'. So we go talk to him and Shorty ah....says these Grammer boys did it and that their next bank is going to be Talco, Texas. So ah....they done told him that, Talco, and he....he'd been in there, in the bank and Talco's got the same type door on it as Elyssian

Field had and they used the same type procedure and so on and so forth. These are all older, smaller banks at that time. So ah.... I go.... I leave and go out to the Ranger office and tell the captain and ah....of course this was....well this in Sept.....this was in July, yeah. Ah....in fact ah....ah....it was August 1st is ah....when I was up there and talked to Shorty. I...and ah....so I go out to the Ranger office and of course it's vacation time, we don't have.....there's not but 61 Rangers in the State of Texas at that time. Ah....and the captain says, 'Well we just hadn't got the personnel'. I said, 'We need to set on that Talco bank cause I got information that these Grammer boys are going to hit it'. 'Well we just haven't got anybody Glenn'. Red's on vacation, Jim's on vacation and Lester's fixing to leave on vacation and G.W.'s going to take off two weeks from now and , 'Why don't you go down there and talk to the Sheriff and see what he can....', I said, 'Well the Sheriff hadn't got but two deputies in Titus County, him and two deputies were in the whole County'. And I said, 'I know that ain't going to do any good, but I'll go talk to him'. He said, 'Well go talk to the banker, see if he'll hire somebody'. So I left Dallas and drove to Talco.....no I went to Mt. Pleasant and got with the Sheriff and told him what my problem was and he and I went up to Talco. And this is the way you generally work, you don't work around the local officers you know and ah....make him feel like he's a part of it, and he is a part of it, it's his county. And so anyway we go up there and talk to the President of the bank and of course he called a security outfit in Dallas and they wanted to charge him then a hundred dollars a night to keep somebody in the bank you know. And he said, 'I got insurance and I'm going to hire anybody and if they burglarize my bank well I'm a member of the FDIC and I'll call them and let the FBI catch 'em you know or ya'll'. And I said, 'Well you know their hitting these safety boxes too'. And I said, 'You hadn't got....the FDIC is not interested in what somebody's going to tell them they got in their safety boxes'. And I said, 'Some of your customers are going to get ripped off pretty good if they got anything in those safety

boxes worthwhile and why would they want to have them if they didn't have you know'. Well he still couldn'tdecided not to do anything. Well about two weeks later they hit the Talco State Bank and so ah....ah.... I go back to Dallas and ah....get back with ah...Shorty and ah....he's says the next bank they're going to hit is Avenger. They'd already cased it and it's got a safe door on it, and sure enough it did have just like Elyssian Field and Talco. So ah....we started surveillance there on the ah....Avenger State Bank and I was up there nearly every night, but some of us spent the night in that Avenger State Bank for 27 straight nights. Andme and Red most of the time or me and the Sheriff of Cass County and every once in awhile we'd get somebody....other Ranger and a deputy or something up there to spend the night. But ah...what we'd do is go in....the President lived about four blocks west of the bank across from the Lone Star, Jefferson highway there over on the other side in a big old house and we'd leave our car down there and then we'd come in about nine thirty, ten o'clock at night. They rolled the sidewalks up in Avenger, Texas early I tell you , or they did then and I'm sure they still do. Avenger's just a little old country town. And the bank was not over there on the highway where it's at now, it was downtown in an old building and it was an ideal bank, they could come through the roof and drop right in on top of the vault. And they had an alarm system on the door already by then. But ah.... anyway ah....we'd leave our car down at the President's house and I had some Louisiana tags I'd put on my car and of course we had an unmarked car you know. And we'd walk across to the bank and go in the back door, had a key to the bank. Well the President had a nice office and ah...he had a couch in there and I carried a sleeping bag up there first night I went and we just threw....one of us would sleep on the couch and the other one on the floor in a sleeping bag and we'd just go to bed you know and of course....and hope that they come you know. And I know one night we was sitting in there about two o'clock in the morning andand ah.... I heard this metal on metal and ah....it got my attention

you know. Of course you don't sleep that sound but you can rest you know, and we'd work in the day time, we never did it interfere with ourinterfere with our work, we'd just stay there at night and go ahead about our....go get up the next morning and go on to work you know. And ah...anyway I'd punched Red, Red was in there with me that particular night and ah....and I said, 'Red there's', I just nodded my head, and he'd heard the same thing and he was....he was a little sleepier than I was. And ah....so we crawled in, we...we'd already figured out what we was going to do you know, if they came and so I got my shotgun and crawled around to a vantage point that I'd already decided and Red went to his and we sat and listened and listened and in a few minutes ah.... I just raised up and there was a big old truck had stopped out front and a guy was....got his hammer out and was checking the tires and he missed one of the tires and hit the rim you know. And he cranked that old truck up and drove off. Well, to make a long story short, those son-of-a-guns while we was sitting up there and Shorty was kind of wetting on our leg ah....they went in ah...ah....the bank in ah....Donney, Texas and ah.....Windom, Texas my hometown.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That had to of stuck in your craw.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Sacul. They burglarized Elyssian Field, Talco, Windom, Donney and the Sacul bank .

ROBERT NIEMAN: That Windom had to stick in your craw.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it did man. Well I'll tell you what happened, we got....we went.... I went back up there and I got serious with Shorty and carried him out to the DPS office, ran him on the polygraph, filed on him, brought him back down to East Texas and put him in jail and ah....and Shorty told us a place where they'd ah....a guy up at Hughes Springs that was kin to this ah...one of these boys. It was the Grammer brothers, Bill ah...ah...let's see, well there was three Grammer brothers and a cousin named Sewell, Billy Joe Sewell. Anyway we go up there and contact a

relative of their and find out that ah.... Shorty had told us that they had given him a watch. And this watch, through some markings on the back or a name or something, that we identified as coming out of a safety box in Donney State Bank, which is down ah....close to San Antonio. And ah...so we got warrants for them and ah...and we also, after we got warrants for them we developed information that they was down at DeRidder, Louisiana and I went to DeRidder, got warrants for them and went on down there and got with the Sheriff's office down there and arrested them and found they had burglarized a drug store there in DeRidder. And ah....and got a bunch of drugs and they had also passedforged some checks down there in that area. So I brought them on back to Texas and ah....we convicted all of them, went...I think it went to a Grand Jury down at Waco and tried them in Austin. Ah....and convicted them all for robbing ah....or burglarizing the Donney State Bank. What happened was, one of them's wife had copped out and she could testify against the brothers and then one of the other ones wife went to the pen. And ah....so we....we worked these guys hard, this was a lot of work in this thing. I mean you know, I spent nearly a week down there before the Grand Jury in Waco. I never will forget that, the Federal goes a little slower than State because theythey introduce a lot of evidences in the Grand Jury. And ah....but I was pleased thatthat we got 'em because ah....ah....they hit the Windom bank you know and then besides we was spending all this time listening to Shorty and ah....and trying to....trying to catch 'em you know andand so finally we got 'em you know. But they went....they went on to the pen and got out and leFort..went to California and it was several years. And this same...the wife of one of them he took her back and he copped out too, after she...after she told us that ah...of his involvement. Well they were all living up in Dallas in an apartment and the women ah...one of the women went with them one time, but this old girl wasn't going, she was sitting there tending house, I don't think they trusted her. But she knew everything they was doing. So ah...ah...it wasn't oh five or six, seven

years after this ah...I get a collect call from her one night from California and she was crying, 'Mr. Elliott you remember me, I'm Lisa Grammer'. And ah...,'Billy Joe', or whatever her husband's name, 'beat up on me again', said, 'He whipped me real bad and I'm at...' And I said, 'Where are you'. 'Well I'm in the airport in Los Angeles, California and I've already got my ticket to come home'. And they'd been at it again, said they'd robbed a bank in California and one in Arizona and they stole a bunch of cars and they've done this and that. And I said, 'Well tell you, you already got your ticket', 'Yeah, I'm waiting on a plane'. And I said ah....and he daddy and mama lived here in Longview. And I said, 'Well when you get in here tomorrow well call me and I'll pick you up and we'll talk about it'. So ah...I got a hold of the FBI agent in Tyler, my friend Bob Steele, and I said, 'Well Bob the Grammer boys are at again but they're out of mine and your area'. And I told him that gal was coming in and I picked her up and brought her up there to my office and set right down and sent them boys right back to the penitentiary again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Don't make that wife mad.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And in the same year we had a...what they thought was a racial killing, and it wound up it was I guess, in Pittsburg. And Red was on vacation again. And they was having....this was when the racial....some of the racial problems started in the late '60's and ah....and pretty good you know. And ah....and this was a black boy 12 years old that was playing in his front yard and somebody drove around and shot him and killed him. And of course we were sent up there, Red worked the ah...Red came back to work I think two days later, he was out of town on vacation. And so captain sent Jim Ray and I up there and we spent a weekend up there, I think Red came back on Sunday evening late and we was....this happened maybe on Thursday night or Friday, we was up there three or four nights. And just mainly trying to keep from uprising and then trying to find out a little something about the killing too. And...and ah....they didn't clear

that ah...Brantley Foster, after Brant...after Red retired and Brantley came up there, there was a boy in the penitentiary called and told Brantley who did it and they cleared that thing up in oh like, probably twelve or fourteen years after it happened you know. And ah...and I had a...I had another case in Gladewater....this is interesting ah....a questionable death. We ah...we got called a lot on ah....but this didn't look like really a questionable death to tell you the truth at the time. It was a...a deputy....the Sheriff's department called me and Gladewater didn't do a....the police department at that time wasn't doing a whole lot, this was before Jay Banks came over there. Gladewater didn't have a full time detective and they just had off street officers and most of the time when they had a homicide or a major crime they'd call the Sheriff and ask him to help, or us, or whoever. And ah...anyway they asked for some help on this and this was a...the bloodiest house you've ever seen in your life. And ah...there was a man and woman lived together as husband and wife and ah...they were both alcoholics. And ah...this was a weekend, I was...I no...I didn't even put the date down there, it was some kind of holiday weekend as I remember it. All...everything happened on weekends you know. Now I'm going to tell you something, you work all week and then they call you out on a Saturday morning or Sunday morning you know and you got to go all day and all night you know again. So anyway, I get over there with the deputies and ah...and this is the bloodiest house, there's blood all around the walls, there's blood in the bathtub, blood in the commode, blood in the bed ah....just blood everywhere. And so....a woman laying there on the bed dead, she'd ah...had some....had cuts on her forehead and on her arm and it looked like she'd just been beat to death you know. And her husband was drunk and he swore that they hadn't had any trouble and he remembered....ah...he got her in the bathtub, heshe even had a band aid over this big cut on her head and ah....and he'd tried to give her first aid. And....but he couldn't...he'd been ...they'd been drunk all night....all day and all night you know. And ah...so it wound up he said that

she fell and hit the TV, and there's evidence that she did, there's a....had a console TV with sharp edges on it and ...and ah...she ah....and this cut was consistent with a....with this TV. And this is what he said happened. Well Ross Delay was Justice of the Peace over there and old Ross was a good friend of mine, his daddy was Justice of the Peace before him and....when I was on the Highway Patrol and they were good people. And...but Ross ah...invariably would never order an autopsy because he didn't think the County ought to spend that kind of money on an autopsy. He could tell whether it was murder or not, and this wasthis was about the time thatthat a lot of agencies started performing autopsies because we needed to, during the Court rulings and things. And then ah...so...and this guy was a good friend of Ross' and ah...and they'd had a little toddy together themselves. And they were good friends andand ah....Ross was worried about him and the case. And I set him down out in the back yard andand ah...and Ross I think....well I know Ross respected my judgment and we were friends you know and he thought that I was all right and I knew he was you know. And he liked to drink a little, but Ross was honest as he could be. And ah...so ah... I convinced him to have an autopsy. I said, 'Ross you know we're not going....ain't no way that you can rule that this woman fell against that TV'. I said, 'Now let's have an autopsy and we'll take the blood from the TV here that's on....and we'll take everything we got up there to Dallas to the lab andand...and we'll try to reconstruct this thing and if it's murder, well it's murder and we can't (unintelligible).....murder and don't want to and you don't either, all though he's a friend of yours'. And I said, 'If it's not murder, well it's not murder'. Well....and he agreed, he signed the order to take her to the forensic crime lab in Dallas, Texas for an autopsy. And of course we go up there with her, with the body, or followed it up there and ah....the results, that woman diedwhen they cut into her, her liver was so swollen that it just burst, she died of cirrhosis of the liver, that's what the.....all these wounds that she had fallen around were superficial

and she....unless she bled to death and it wasn't in the area she would have bled to death you know. She bled a lot and ah....but this really sold Ross and a lot of other people in the East Texas area that autopsies was a necessary thing andyou know from....and....and from then on I guess just about every murder case that ah.....andand this lady had a daughter that was a nurse. And it's hard to convince a relative that you know something like this happened. But this woman was smart enough and she knew....you know she knew from viewing the body and she knew....and she knew her mother was an alcoholic too. And ah....this case was just....it was just.....she died of cirrhosis of liver, where murder was not involved, they were just a couple drinking. They hid whiskey from each other. We searched that house and we'd find half pints of whiskey that they'd forget where they'd hid 'em you know, both of them. Cause they'd buy their whiskey in half pints and...and ah....and buy it regular. But this was athis....that was interesting see because ah....sometimes you can ah....you can take the scientific methods and help people a whole lot more than you think you can you know. Cause I guarantee you if we hadn't of had the autopsy they ah....we'd of probably had to file a murder charge against that guy just for the family and the citizens over there. Because it looked likeit had all the earmarks of it being heavy.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Looked like a battlefield.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....I had another murder in Harrison County during this time and ah....and the Elyssian Field bank gets hit again in December of '67. And this is the first time in Texas and I get in on the ground floor of it and this is real good because I get to go to Austin and do a lot of teaching, but they used a thermo burning bar to get in the bank. I don't know whether you're familiar with a thermo burning bar, but it was perfected along about this time. And they used it to ah....cut holes in concrete. It was about a 3/8" piece of pipe with a bunch of rods in it, some kind of high tech welding rods and you used oxygen on it and you light it and get those bars

to burning and the heat for those bars and they used it to cut holes in concrete so it wouldn't weaken a building and they'd pour a concrete slab, for instance a....a multiple story building and then when they got ready to put the conduit, the plumbing in, they'd used those thermo burning bars and they'd just burn a hole in that concrete just the size to put the pipe in. Neat hole. It burned concrete just like that. And boy it would just eat metal up you know, it'd burn a hole in concrete you know. All you had to do was light it and justjust take it just like a pencil just about and you could cut a hole in a safe door big enough to walk in, and that's what they did. And they attacked the safe too, but they ran out of oxygen, they was going to burn a hole in the safe and they ran out of oxygen. And ah....and of course this was the first....I mean in this....in the southwest this was the first case and this guy was out of California. And ah....ah....and we got him later. And ah....the Sheriff and I went to Phoenix, Arizona, Earl Franklin, another trip to Phoenix. This was....it...it was fun, and I'll tell you, and Earl's aby the way Earl lost his wife last week, I saw it in the paper and I tried to get over there but I had something going on that ah....I've got to go see him. But Earl ah...ah... I don't care about thiswell it's not book material but it's funny and ah....and Earl will be gone by the time anybody reads these tapes and he wouldn't care anyway. But we finally made a case ah....ah.... I read in the paper where that ah....this guy had got in a running gun battle with the Sheriff's out of.... out in Phoenix, Arizona. And that he had shot one of the deputies and he had been shot. And ah....and like....you had asked me about the paper, but I read.... I read the crime news in papers religiously and still do, cause I've solved a lot of crimes reading that criminal activity. I read this in the paper , in the Dallas Morning News, and ah.... so ah....and the guy had ah....he had a guy with him from the Dallas area I believe. I guess that's how come it made it....and ah....but he wasn't hurt and it wound up that he waspicked him up hitchhiking or something. But anyway, and there's two....they thought they was both from Dallas at the time but ah....ah....this

guy ah....he had these burning bars in his car at the time when they....and he's trying to allude the police and they had helicopters then in Arizona. The Sheriff's office had a helicopter assigned to his.....in 1967 out in Phoenix, Arizona I mean. And ah....so I call out there and establish contact with the Sheriff's office out there and they said, yeah he had those burning bars and been in Texas , cause he'd picked this guy up in Dallas and that the time element was all the same. So the Sheriff and I go out there and talk to him. And he cops out. Of course he's laying up there in the hospital, in the ward, he had been shot but he was going to live and ah....and they had him pretty well hung up out there. And he said, yeah he committed our burglary down there, well he claimed he was by himself, but I don't think he was. But ah....of course he ran out of gas and he got some silver out of the safe and that's about it, didn't get in the big safe. But the Sheriff and I go out there to see him and Earl didn't like to fly and he was very nervous when flying, he didn't like to fly at all. And ah...so we make arrangements to go, so I got to go take my reports through Dallas and ah....and Earl says ah....ah....and this is funny, and everything he did was funny, but he was the workingist son-of-a-gun you ever saw. And we get up there to Dallas and ...and ah...when we was leaving Longview he said, 'You got any whiskey in you car'. And I said, 'Well you know I got whiskey in the trunk of my car'. 'Well stop down here and I'm going to get me some coca cola'. And said, 'I'm going to take me a little drink', said, 'I'm just nervous when I fly'. And so I stopped and he put little in that bottle going up to Dallas and we go by....I have to go by the Ranger office and submit my weekly reports and tell them where I'm going and actually get permission to go you know. I'm already in Dallas and already got my reservation. So we go on to

ROBERT NIEMAN: Headquarters at this time was Northwest Highway?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, out on Northwest Highway. And Love Field, we've got to fly in out of Love Field of course. We get on out to Love Field and ah...and we have to get there a little early

you know on account of the flight instructions. And so I decidedI don't....I've never been to Phoenix, Arizona and I know Earl Franklin's going to want a drink when he gets out there and I probably will too. So I take the rest of the.....he done whittled down on that whiskey pretty good and ah....but there's still about over half a quart left, so I just stuck it in my suitcase. And ah...we go in to check our luggage and everything and so we get it all checked andand everything's smoothed down and we still got thirty minutes to wait on the plane. And Earl says, 'Let's go back out to your car and take a little drink'. And I said, 'Well Earl I'm.... I got I got some bad news for you partner', I said, 'Number one', I said, 'I'm not going to drink anything cause we're going to gain two hours going that way'. And I said, 'I plan on talking to that guy, getting a statement from him today and you know, and then we can do what we want to the rest of the time you want to stay out there'. But I said, 'Let's get out work done first'. Cause I was kind of that way. I don't want to play until I get my work done. And ah....'Well', he said, 'You know I just can't believe that'. And I said, 'Well heck they got a....', I said, 'This is a big airport here', I said, 'They got a whiskey store around here somewhere'. 'You think so'. And I said, 'Well yeah, I've been in and out of here before'. And sure enough we went back there and found they had a package store there in Love Field. And he bought two half pints, I never will forget, and ah....he said, 'I'm going to go back here in the restroom and take a drink out of one of them and I'm going to save that other one', said, 'We won't get but two drinks on the plane'. But we got out there, we made out trip out there and ah...and ah...and did just fine and so.....I'll tell you, why don't we stop here, cause I see '68 is coming up here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you a couple of questions for we.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right.

ROBERT NIEMAN:well one question. It's appropriate today, down at Carthage there's been a shooting and a hostage situation and Ronnie Griffin, of course the guy who succeeded you here is down there. But when he's going off on a case like this where maybe...prob.....or a very good chance of gun fire, when you're on your way to these places do you ever....do you (unintelligible).....think you know, this might be a real danger today, I mean there could be some serious things happen here today, to me?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well probably in the back of my mind I may have thought about it like that. But you know it...it was so routine ah....with us and it becomes routine with you. You're prepared for anything that's going to happen just about it. And ah....I never did over prepare, in fact I never did wear a bullet proof vest any myself. A lot of the boys had started wearing them on raids and I don't know why, I should have you know, but I never did. Ah...I just I'm not a scary type of individual and ah....ah....I'm not reckless ah...either, but ah.... I usually tried to you know I'd think things out you know. I could think what the possibilities are of something happening you know and ah...and you have to think like that because if you don't think like ah....what somebody.....a criminal or somebody in a hostage situation or whatever might do, a prisoner you're hauling or anything you know, if you don't anticipate some of the things that are going to happen you could get in trouble you know. So younaturally you think about things like that , but I never did get too concerned about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How would you like to have had orders like this, I'm working on a lecture which you're going to New Mexico with me on....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I doubt that.

ROBERT NIEMAN:well Captain Lee McNelly of the 1870's sat on the border, he told his sergeant , Sergeant John Armstrong who would later catch John Wesley Hardin, they'd spread the

word to the men what sad....they was talking about some saddles had been stolen around (unintelligible)....Texas area. Real fancy saddles and anyway....and he told his sergeant to make sure the men know what the look like and that he wanted them to understand just exactly and then he said, and this is a quote, “Then order them to empty those saddles on sight, no collaborating with the riders, empty them, leave the men where you drop them and bring the saddles to camp”, unquote. And we’ll go from there next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I’d like to work for somebody like that. You had asked me the other day the correct spelling on old George D-Artois name, it’s George W., initials, the last name D, capital D-Artois, George W. D-Artois.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Spell that again for me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: D-Artois, George W. , he was ah....ah....the Department of Public Safety, City of Shreveport, Louisiana, he was the Commissioner and the Department of Public Safety, for the city of Shreveport. Ah...and this was....this was some correspondence in 1972 from one of his detectives and I found this and you had asked me and I couldn’t remember how to spell his name. And I’m a poor speller.

ROBERT NIEMAN: All righty. If you want to stop there for now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right. Yeah I’d like to....I need to get in cause I’m supposed to get a call at eight thirty.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We’re getting into 1968 now.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 3

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, this is Monday, April 24, 1995, continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott. We're going to work mainly tonight on 1968 and among other things, the Daingerfield, Lone Star Steel strike. Ah...Glenn where you want to start?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, let's just start at the beginning of 1968, cause I think we shut down in '67 last time, after we'd worked with '67. I think we're going to pretty well get through '68 tonight. It was another busy year for me ah...we...we continued to work vice ah....got several injunctions against some old clubs here in Gregg County that was....had prostitution and gambling and first one thing and then another. And finally the District Courts agreed to give us an injunction if we get some under cover people in here and make some dates or have some people propositioned or whatever. And so we did this and presented the ah....District Attorney with the information and he ah....he obtained injunctions against several of the clubs and we....the main problem ones, we shut 'em down and they....and of course they moved somewhere else you know. One of them went to

Galveston and one of them went somewhere else. So ah....ah....pretty well.... and we continued to work some vice up in Bowie County in '68 and ah....of course I'm sure that the houses of prostitution are still running in Bowie County as far as I and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well isn't the problem in Bowie and Miller County or is it mainly Bowie County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, it was mainly Bowie County. I don't know why they didn't ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Miller County of course being in Arkansas.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah....they just ah...ah...they'd been there since day one probably in Texarkana because it being a twin city and there's a lot of people coming in and out of there you know and it was a crossroad and I'm sure they're a thriving business you know. And it didn't seem to be ah....letting anybody bother 'em you know and nobody was bothering 'em. Ah... I worked aassisted over here in working a tie up jewelry robbery which was a big....a very ah.....expensive jewelry taken in a tie up robbery down at Lake Cherokee and we traced it to New York and ah....and it went all the way to New York and arrested some people and cleared up some more similar ah....type robberies in Texas. And ah...it was some pretty fast people did it and ah....these people here ah....had moved here from somewhere and they were wealthy people and ah....these....some way or other there's a connection there. And I don't remember all the details but I know I spent a right smart amount of time on this because we had ah....and worked with Federal folks. I finally got....after we found out the jewelry went out of state well we put a guy on a plane in Dallas....found out he'd caught a plane, our main suspect, and so the FBI got involved in it with us and then.....and they was ah....but we made two arrests and cleared several other armed robberies, where private residence where jewelry taken. And this....this was just something that

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember the people's name at Lake Cherokee?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I've got a report on it somewhere ah....seemed like their name was Simmons. I believe it was Simmons was their name. There was a lady and her daughter I think, I think her husband had died....and as I remember it. But I've got a report on it somewhere, I just didn't bring it with me tonight. Ah....ah....assist.....let's see, we worked in Upshur County ah....ah....on an air crash, yeah ah....this ah....had a major airline crash down at Dawson, Texas in 1968 and ah....of course Pat Spear was ah....about this time was ah....Director of the Department of Public Safety and Pat took a lot of interest in what went on in Upshur County because he was an Upshur County citizen you know and raised....born and raised in Upshur County. And this plane crashed in route from Houston back to Dallas, I think it....maybe it was Braniff Airline, I don't remember what even....but ah....it's ah...it was a big plane. And ah....there was a man and his wife from Gilmer aboard and ah...they identified her body byshe had been finger printed at the Texas Centennial and ah....what '36 or '37, whatever it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '36.

GLENN ELLIOTT: '36, in Dallas. And by the way, the Rangers had set up a place there at the Centennial where you could be finger printed and your finger prints would go on permanent record at the DPS.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just out of curiosity, I wonder if, is this part of the department Gonzauillas had set up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'm sure that it is, yeah. It ah....and ah...and I never did research that. But anyway, she wasthe lady, Mrs. Shepherd ah....was finger printed there and they had already identified her body from prints that ah...that they'd found of hers in Austin. And so they called me and ah....I get....you get very few calls out of Austin, very few assignments, ah.... I think this will be two in thisin this year, which was unusual. Cause you go years without even hearing from

Austin unless it's somebody complaining on somebody or something . And you know.....andbut ah..... I got a call one ah....Sunday, I think this happened Saturday night, the plane crashed, and they called me Sunday morning and asked me to go to Gilmer and ah....and contact some of the relatives, and this gentleman had an insurance agency there on the square in Gilmer and then they had a nice old frame home down ah....on the ah....Quitman Highway, and ah.....see if I could lift any of his laden prints. And I worked in the office there for a good while and then ah....lifted several prints, then went on down to this residence and ah....lifted some there and carried them to Dawson the next day and they identified him. And ah...this was another duty that we....that ah....fell our way a whole lot, to help identify people in disasters like that. And ah....so Red was out of pocket again for some reason or other, it didn't make any difference, if I was gone Red would be covering my area you know if somebody called for some help, so that's the reason I was in his area and went up there a whole lot. And ah.... I got called on a questionable death that was quite interesting ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me go back to that. Do you remember how many people was killed in that crash?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, you know I really don't. I don't. But it was....it wasit was a pretty good sized plane.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what part of the year was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it was ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I can look it up in the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:football season.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So it of been in the fall?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it could of been in....it probably was in the early part, probably in January would be my guess. Now they'd still been playing football in January probably, or a bowl game or something. Seemed like that ah....Baylor was playing somebody in Houston.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, I can go to the newspaper.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Southwest conference

ROBERT NIEMAN:and look that up.

GLENN ELLIOTT:is what it was. Yeah it was....had to be early in the year because this.... I Ithis comes in soonand if I'd of brought my reports with me I could of told you exactly the date on it, but I didn't write it down here. Ah....but it's probably into January of '68. And ah...on ah....later in ah....in the year I got a call on aanother call from Austin, which this is unusual to have two assignments out of Austin in one year, because you just very seldom every heard from Austin. And ah...they'd got a letter of complaint from citizens in Louisiana and ah....about a double murder in Panola County. And this was ah....these people were black. One of them was a school teacher I believe, and the other one was a postal employee at Barksdale Air Force base. And both of them had good jobs and they had a little triangle going I guess and they were not man and wife. And they had met down right on the Louisiana line over into Panola County on an oil lease and obviously had probably been doing this for some time. But anyway, they found their bodies down there and ah...they were both dead in a car and ah....and of course even back then they....people wasn't doing....they....they...they'd reach a conclusion right away, well it's....you know, it's obvious, here's a pistol laying here in his....close to him and she's been shot and he's been shot and it.....and a contact shot on him you know, and powder residue and whatever on....and they'd reach a conclusion right away and murder/suicide you know. And there wasn't a real lot of investigative work done then on cases like that as....as....they Judge would go out....the old Justice of the Peace

would go out and , yeah this is a clear case of murder/suicide. Well it was a year and almost the date when I get my ah.... I get my letter from Austin saying that ah...that the Governor of Texas had received a letter from so and so and they'd send me a copy. And in a situation like that, generally when we get a...any kind of information from Austin we go do it right then. You know, because you don't keep the Capitol waiting, the Governor, the Colonel orand we'd set aside whatever we was working on down here if we possibly could and just get on it as soon as we could. And I'd.... I know I went to Carthage and ah....and this is not unusual, it'...it's...it's...it had happened back in a rural county like that. But I go to the Justice of the Peace first and I got their name and I said....well Judge Bush was his name, he was an old crippled Justice of the Peace, good friend of mine, good old staunch, solid country Judge and a pretty smart guy. He was away above average. And I said, 'Judge you remember this case out here that happened down here on the state line where these two people were killed about a year ago'. And, 'Oh yeah, yeah I went down there and this is a clear case of murder and suicide', he said, 'Pistol was there and we recovered a...it was a 9mm pistol and when the bodies went to the funeral well ah...they found the 9mm slug or two in each one of them and there was one went through the body and they found it in the car', and this and that. And I said, 'Well did anybody ever run any test to make sure that they were shot from the same gun'. 'Oh no, no'. And so I asked him a few more questions and I said, 'Well you know....you know what happened to the gun '. 'Oh yeah, the first officer at the scene, he got the gun'. Well you know this is a...and ah...certainly not the way it's supposed to be operated. Well this officer...the first....it just so happens the first officer at the scene no longer worked in Panola County and he'd moved to Beaumont. And the Judge said, 'I've got the bullets here in my desk drawer'. And he just pulled his desk drawer out and started picking up 9mm bullets laying there in his drawer. And he said, 'This is the bullets right here'. He said, 'I brought in here and pitched 'em in the drawer, what

they gave me'. So I got those and he gave me the officers name and I contacted him and he was doing like your supposed to. And then ah....so ah...he ah... I got him to send the pistol to Austin and I submitted mine and of course ballistics said, yeah they...these projectiles were fired through that pistol you know. And then....and then I went over to Barksdale and talked to some of his buddies and found out that ah....this guys friends that he knew at the Post Office. And so we established there was no question in anybody's mind, and not mine in particular, after the investigation that it was a murder/suicide. But ah...nobody had made any type of investigation andoh yeah, I did trace the pistol where this ah....victim had bought the pistol and it was his. And well that added a lot of ah....credibility to my investigation and to theirs you know. When Ithe Governor can report back to the people that wrote the letter, well yes the Rangers have been conducting the investigation and the weapon used was purchased by so and so on a certain date, at a certain store in Shreveport, Louisiana, ballistics show that projectiles from the females body and from his body were both fired from the same weapon, you know, and they were both setting in his vehicle when the shooting occurred, and cause.....from evidence inside the vehicle. They had....they had actually made some pictures and things, but this is ah....this is something that we got involved in a whole lot, those questionable deaths like that you know, where the people had probably reached the right conclusion but they hadn't preserved the evidence and they hadn't ah....or they hadn't worried about talking to the family all that much, since they was in Louisiana you know. And the family may not of ever come over and asked them any questions you know. But ah...ah...this is....we'd get involved in stuff like that and it would take time you know. Here I am I've got to go to Carthage, I got..... I got to go to Shreveport and Bossier City and Barksdale Air Force base. I didn't have any trouble getting on and off the base over there because we, you know, we worked with the military authorities over there a whole lot and ah....but it still took time you know, to do something like this.

And time was a pretty important.....you had so much other activities going on around here. I caught some more people stealing oil duringduring this year. Ah....ah...this was ah....in the winter time, early ah....probably January or February, I remember it was snowing. And ah...the Railroad Commission had got some ah...information that ah....that they was stealing some oil out in the White Oak area. And ah....they hadtwo of the guys had called me and of course, see we had worked this slant hole business and we got acquainted with all those Railroad Commission employees and they was ah....they were...they....they had a little egg on their face because one of their employees had been involved in this slant hole business and was indicted. And ah....they didn't like it and most of....all of the employees or the field people were basically good hard working, honest people, just working for a living you know. And so they...they wanted to clean up the oil patch and they'd see something going wrong and they'd call and so they called me oneone evening and told me said, 'Glenn there's a...we got a report there's a truck hauling oil off of a certain lease out here at White Oak'. It was just ah...just south of Hwy. 80 and it wasn't...heck it wasn't a half mile off of Hwy. 80 in an oil lease there. And he said, 'They're supposed to be doing it at night and would you like to come out there on surveillance with us'. And I said, 'Yeah'. And so you know, I I got out there and it snowed, it snowed that day and I said, 'Well do you think they're going to be here tonight'. And said, 'I don't know', but said, 'He'll be here early if he is'. And sure enough we was....we was sitting out there and had our cars hid and ah....and ah...watching and here he come with this brand new rig in there, man a nice diesel truck, long trailer. Two guys got out and it was cold and snow on the ground and ah....they got out and hooked up to this tank battery and turned their pumps on and got back in the truck. Well we couldn't see the truck well enough to get a license number and so I slipped around and ah....and got the license number and put my initials on the back of the truck just with my finger. And ah...backed off and they never did

know I was there. I got right up to the back of the truck and it was so....they stayed inside til they loaded up. And what they was doing, the pumper was making this oil available to 'em, he'd just over produce the well and pump it in the tank and they'd come get it that night and was probably getting a dollar or three dollars a barrel for it you know. And ah...so ah...we backed off and followed them to the old Starns refinery over at Gladewater and which was just a short way....less.... I guess six miles, five or six miles from where they were to the Starns refinery. And I think they was making two or three loads a night the way it sounded, because they checked.... I remember the Railroad Commission checked this tank and we got 'em on their first load that night. And ah....there wasthat pumper had two more loads of oil available for them that they didn't get. But....so when they hooked on..... I followed 'em in to Starns refinery and the Railroad Commission boys stayed out there in case there was another truck, they wasn't sure there was another truck coming. And ah.... I followed 'em in over there and ah....and as soon as they hooked on, I didn't just.... I just stayed back far enough so you....where they went and I gave 'em time to un....to hook up and start unloading and when they did, well I drove in and arrested them and....and had them shut off oil and made them drive the truck over to Kilgore to the Railroad Commission yard and we confiscated it. And I carried them and put them in jail. Of course later they got their truck back you know. But ah...this wasthis was justit's....we call stealing oil but it's ah...ah...the pumper was making it available for them you know. So ah....we out of that tape? This same year I ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just a second. Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:worked a bunch of armed robberies. And ah....and of course, we didn't have...we had more....a lot more burglaries earlier in my days in the Rangers and then they startedrobbery got to popular. I know II noticed I went down to TDC and ah...at Sugarland and

ah....cleared a bunch of armed robberies with an old boy that we had developed as suspect. And ah...ah...and we went down and questioned him and he cleared up a bunch of armedwe always got the best cooperation out of the Texas Department of Correction people. It just ah...they was so glad to see a Ranger come and it made you feel welcome you know. They'd always treat us to lunch and ah....and make these prisoners available for us. All you had to do was call them and say I want to talk to old Joe Blow tomorrow morning at ten o'clock, I'll be at Sugarland and he'd be sitting there waiting on you. Not like that trip I told you about out in New Mexico that time, which we'll get into when we get to Ms. Phillips. But ah...but TDC people, all you had to do is ah....ah....ah....let them know what you wanted and ...and I never disrupted things in TDC but one time I don't guess. And I never will forget, I was working a murder case and there was a guy from Florida involved and he'd also killed a man in Florida and ah....and I developed after we got him back up here from down at Atlanta, Georgia. And ah...so he was already in the pen for life for killing his buddy over here in Harrison County. And ah...and so Florida people wanted to talk to him. Well he was down at Huntsville in the Walls and ah...so ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well....well what's the Walls?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that's where they go....that's....they...everybody would go to Huntsville then, I guess they still do, and....and they'd go there to the main prison and then they'd ship 'em out from there, process 'em and ship 'em to different penal institutes around the state you know. And he had just got down to Huntsville from Harrison County and so II located him and talked to the Warden down there. And I said, 'I've got some guys coming in from Florida want to interview him and how about you mind sending him up to Palestine'. They'd just opened that Colefield Unit down at Palestine and, 'Cause we want to run him on polygraph and I want my polygraph operator in Tyler to run him because he's familiar with him already'. So ah...they did, they just sent him on

up to ...to Colefield. And ah....so the Florida people came a couple of days later and so ah... I ran down to Co.... I got a bench warrant and ah...out of Harrison County and went down to Colefield and got him. And I picked him up right after lunch one day. I think Iin fact I ate lunch down there with them and picked him up and ah....brought him over to Tyler. And met the Florida officers and ah...the District Attorney and his investigator out of Harrison County had ah...brought them on.....they flew into Shreveport. And....and ah....they brought them on to Tyler. So ah...we worked him and ran him on polygraph andand he coped out to killing this guy in Florida, blamed it on his buddy that he had killed, they was running together at the time. But anyway ah....what I was getting at ah....they wound up with him about ten o'clock that night and you know, we'd worked him all afternoon and about nine-thirty, ten that night well they said, 'Well we're going on back to Marshall and go back Florida'. And thanked me, so here II've got the prisoner, so I decided well there's no use in me putting him in jail here in Marshall I'm....Palestine's ayou know, forty miles away, Colefield Unit, and I just buckled him up and carried him on back to Colefield. Well I got in there about ah....eleven o'clock and ah...the Warden was there and he said, 'Elliott', he said, 'Hell these computers will tilt if we...if we showed checking a man out and in the same day on a bench warrant'. He said, 'Nobody's going to believe it', he said, 'Can you wait until after midnight to check him in'. And I said, 'Well if you'll make a pot of coffee, I will'. So we set there and drank coffee til about twelve fifteen and I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was the prisoner?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was sitting there with us. You know, I can't check him back in you know. And of course we're inside the Walls you know already. But ah....I hauled him back there. But we get...you know anything that we...that they could possibly do for us they'd do it, the people at TDC would. And it... boy it just made things work real good, because we're always needing to talk to

somebody, we're always short of time. And some of their facilities have ah...has airfields on them you know. And ah... I know I went to one down below Houston one time and flew down there to talk to a guy and just landed right there on the ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well is Huntsville maximum security?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well all of them....practically all of them then were maximum security. Huntsville was ah...where death row is you know. But ah...they just...I don't know whether they still do it or not, but then they'd process everybody that went to the pen regar....in Texas, wherever they was...there might be a penitentiary in Big Springs, Texas.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or one out in Anthony, Texas.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah that....but before they went there, they'd have to go to Huntsville you know, and get processed and get into the system and then they'd farm them out. And I guess they probably still do. But ah...this is just kind of got off of the beaten path a little bit. But ah...I...I wanted to emphasize that those people ah...ah...were a lot of help to us, cause man let's...you know the folks that helped me....if I had any success at all, I had to give some of that credit for it. Cause you know, cause you got...you get help you know. You go to Huntsville....look here ah...if...if they didn't want to help me I might say, 'Well come on down here and you know, and we'll get for you when you get here you know'. But man they had him waiting for you, you know. And time was...that meant a whole lot to guy that was trying to get something done. Of course '68 was an election year. And I notice we ah... in September of '68 we ah...I...I did security work for General Walker during the Wallace rally here...somewhere in East Texas, I didn't pay any attention to where it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: General Walker or Curtis LaMay?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Walker. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The reason I say, Curtis LaMay was his VP.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Candidate.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....then ah....this Constable case over at ah....I was telling you about that ah....where the Constable got shot down at ah...in ah...around Scottsville.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...this happened in '68. Then ah...I think...I don't think we...we probably got into that, but that's ah...the ah...I had moved back to Longview during this time and the Sheriff over there at Marshall had...I'd assured him that I could be in Marshall, you know, in twenty minutes or so if he needed me and that I needed to move back to Longview so my wife could work and we could educateour daughter was college. And so this Constable got shot down there and they called me, it was about midnight, and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you have his name there, the Constable?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Coleman, Tommy Coleman. And ah....Tommy had ah...answered a...well the people over there had a silent alarm in their store and they ah...that somebody was in the store and they had it to where it would go off in their house and they called Tommy. Tommy run over there and these burglars were still in the process of burglarizing the store and one of them shot him. And ah...so ahthey called me and Interstate 20 had opened then, part of the way through by then and ah... I remember I got ah...I'd got out of bed and drove across town to 20 and headed east. And when I went under the Hwy. 59 bridge there in Marshall well I saw a deputy's car coming down the side ramp, but he didn't have enough steam up to get in my way. And I went on by him and when I exited off of Interstate 20 on Hwy. 9 in Waskom, I exited right behind the Sheriff. And the Sheriff just lives about three or four blocks off of Interstate 20 there in Marshall.

So I got a call same...he probably... he got called before I did no doubt, cause he's the one that called me...and had them call me. And ah...so I followed him all the way to the burglary scene down there so ah...and he...when he got out of the car...of course I was out of my car before he was you know and he's a big man and he said, 'Well Glenn you told me it didn't take you twenty minutes...wouldn't take you but twenty minutes to get over here if we needed you, but you didn't tell me that you could beat me to the crime scene'. And of course that pleased me and the Sheriff was glad I was there and he treated me that way and we was always....but anyway, this happened during that time and ah....and then....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well finish that story.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Do what?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Finish the story out on this.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....ah...the story is ah...we worked on that thing for a good while and was ah...ah...went to the hospital and we didn't get any leads on it to amount to anything.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he survive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, he got...he got out and got well and was later elected Justice of the Peace and was JP over there for a long time. But...but we solved the case through ah...ah...some contacts that I had in Arkansas. This Lone Star Steel strike started soon after that, we're fixing to get into that, but ah... while I was up at Lone Star I got a call from a friend of mine in the Arkansas State Police, in Little Rock. And he said he had an informant was telling him about two guys that had committed a burglary up in Texas somewhere and that ah...had shot an officer. And I told him I had a similar case and he sent me photographs and ah....Coleman picked their pictures out in a picture lineup. And ah...I got back over there and of course he was out of the hospital by then and ah...so we made a criminal case on them ah...through photo identification and through the

informant information out of Little Rock, Arkansas. But that's where they were from, they were from Little Rock. And this is just another case where you're getting cooperation out of other areas you know. And ah...and this is how you solve crimes, you can't do 'em all by yourself. Ah...we also...I notice that on October 11th helped provide security for Richard Nixon in Dallas. Had a couple more murders...what we call, you know, not...murder would take up a whole lot time that year. Ah...and then on the 17th of October I see where we provide security for George Wallace here in Longview. And ah...and then the 21st of October the Lone Star strike starts, or that's when we started our ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the date again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: 21st of October is the first day that I was up there on this strike. On the 24th ah....the first violence happened up there and I showed that first week up there I worked 93 hours and drove 940 miles and the second week, 86 hours and 1,105 miles. Ah...on the 27th there was a home shot into over at Pittsburgh ah....ah....was another case of violence. And then I noticed I got subpoenaed to court during this time for some cases that was pending. And ah...and the Coleman case ah...it ah...developed then and wewe issued warrants and got those people arrested and ah....and got them brought back to Texas and bonded out. Ah...we arrested two on November the 26th on a right to work case ah...and it was...it was....this is the saddest thing, why these people....I, you know II...of course the union people and the....I don't know why they get so worked up. This is a high school boy and I made the case ah....he was hauling outdoor toilets, portable toilets, for a firm here in Longview up there to Lone Star Steel plant to set up inside the plant. So they was building some tents up inside the plant for employees to live in and just stay inside the plant and work. They'd feed them, let them work seven days a week and just keep them in there so they wouldn't have to be subjected to harassment coming through or going to and from some town to

work. And this...this boy was bringing these outdoor toilets up there and he had a flat tire somewhere up there, I think between Orr City and Lone Star, on his trailer and he had stopped to pick that trailer up and two of these guys came along and whipped him with a chain. Now, a 17 year old boy, whipped him with a chain, pretty good. And just because he was carrying those toilets up there for the...what they called the scabs and I guess that's what they were. But we made a case on that, and it took a real...two real brave men to...to do this you know, to jump on a young man and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was their sentence?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well, I don't think they got any sentence. You know, we couldn't get anything...they...nobody would...we got very little done out there...there was ah...ah...as far as courts was concerned, very little, on any of them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how does this strike stack up against the one about 10 years earlier that you were up there on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well about the same as far as punishment is concerned.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I meant violence and all that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there was more violence in this one here, there was just more violence, it just...this was the most violent strike that they had up there because you'll see that... the same night that this boy got beat up out there on the side of the road that day, that night there was two guards got shots. And the only reason they didn't die just because they was lucky, that's all. Cause here they are ah...ah... they shot two holes in that pickup, that Lone Star Steel pickup and these were security guards now, patrolling behind the plant. Lone Star had their seal right in the center of the door and they put one bullet right in the middle of it and another one right down in the corner with a high powered rifle.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I assume it was from ambush?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah, another brave stunt you know. And it was night and they was out in the woods and it was raining and they...but they did some good shooting, I promise you that much. Cause whoever did the shooting was pretty...was a good shot, they had to have a scope I would think. Ah...yeah this happened the same night on November 26th and ah...ah...I notice I was up there Christmas Day, spent ah...worked 78 hours Christmas week, 107 hours the week before. Ah...on January the 16th we had another shooting, a couple of brave men at night shot this boy ah... A. S. Smitty Blackburn, ah...he was on his way...this happened in Camp County, he was on his way to work from over at Pittsburgh and they pulled up behind him somewhere between...well over there the back side of the plant and ah...on a Farm to Market road and shot the back of his truck and killed him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this the boy you've got the pictures of?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. And ah...this is a...this is another ah...and then ah...the violence kind of cut down a little bit after those two shootings there. And then it started back again in about May and ah...there was a bomb in Titus County and ah...arson in Morris County and ah...ah...a lot of violence during this time. Let's see, I must of skipped a page here because ah...ah...I don't guess....I don't see this, but ah.... we...we just had all kinds of problem ups there all the time. They had.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well....

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...bombing's inside the plant and ah...they blew up trash cans and things inside the plant while this was going on.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, Crowder is still in command, right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bob Crowder is still in command, Captain Crowder has not retired yet and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now you and Mitchell, Bob Mitchell, he's out of Tyler.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ya'll check into a hotel in Daingerfield?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bob Mitchell and I shared the same room at the Daingerfield motel, we never did check out of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that the name of it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'm....I don't even remember, it was...it was the only motel in Daingerfield.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Remember the room number?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, no. But I could walk right to it right now blind folded I promise you that much. Ah...I don't ah...I was trying to think of it, there was a guy....a man and his wife ran the thing ah....they ah... of course was good to us. We had...we had most of the motel leased, we had...and nearly every Ranger in Texas was up there at one time or other during this strike. And we had a bunch of Highway Patrolmen that ah...patrolling the highways at night. There was just so much violence going on and most of it was happening at night. And ah...the patrol would stop everybody on the road after a certain hour up there. Of course there wasn't that much traffic you know, late at night up there in that country you know. And ah...and ah....they'd ride out....they'd identify the driver and the vehicle and turn in tickets on them, warning tickets, and we'd go through them every morning. Cause ah...it's ah...you know...we was hoping that they could stop somebody shortly after they had ah...committed a crime somewhere. I'd lost a page out of here somewhere or I got it mixed up one, because we ah....there's a lot more ah... ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were you involved in any shootings up there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I wasn't involved in any shootings. I...we had some trouble with a couple of guys but not very much. One come to my.....come up there one night and ah....he had an AR15 and ah....and the old boy was causing trouble, he caused trouble....Rigler mentioned him in his book ah....he ah... I think they had hired him to walk picket for somebody there. And he wasn't....it actually turned out he wasn't even employed and he was just a trouble maker. And ah.... I had gone out to....he was....he was....he was working inside the plant at the time there and was working for the union too. And of course somebody had to get in the plant to get these dynamites into the cans and all, but ah...anyway, I'd gone out to....he was....he had parked his car right over there around Hughes Springs one....was work....had him working over there in mines or something and ah....and he carried a gun with him all the time. They made them check their guns in when they'd go on the property. And I went over there and picked his gun up and test fired it, needed some brass off of it. And....and ah....and he found out about it and he come up there that night raising cane but ah....he didn't stay very long. In fact he didn't raise much cane. But ah...no they wouldn't give us any trouble, they wasn't brave enough to do that you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was Crowder and Mitchell, weren't they involved in a shooting?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Captain Crowder and ah....and Mitchell.....during this time....I went back here and found a ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay, real good.

GLENN ELLIOTT:my notes here ah....on ah... I got 'em out of order. On theback...January 27th is when the explosion happened in the plant and then again there was three of them on February the 16th.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this still '68 or we in '69?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No we're in '69 now. We're starting with '69. And old Red and I were working together, Red Arnold, in this ah....when they bombed the plant. Mitchell had probably got called away for court or something you know, because like I told you, we'd....we'd get subpoenaed to court and every once in awhile one of our Sheriffs would get in a heck of a bind on something and he'd just call and say, 'Glenn come down here', or Bob, 'and help me today if you can', you know and we'd do it you know, if the captain would let us go. And ah....cause Bob and I were doing all the investigative work just about. And anyway, Red was working with me and these explosions happened like oh, three o'clock, two or three o'clock in the morning you know and ah....after everybody was in....scabs was all inasleep in the tents you know. And then somebody would come up and drop a half stick of dynamite in a trash barrel outside the tent you know and do that two or three places out....at the same time you know and it....and it would scare the heck out of people and that's what they was trying to do, run them out of there you know. But Red was sick as a horse, boyand Red was chain smoker and had been ever since he was in the CC camp you know. Red went in the CC camp I guess in '36 and then he went in the peace time Marine Corp. right after the CC camp and Red had been smoking Camel cigarettes all his adult life and ah....he had the pneumonia. He had it so damn bad you could it smell it, you know you.... I don't know whether you've been around people that had the flu so bad you could just smell it you know. And Red was coughing and spitting and carrying on and ah...smoking them cigarettes one right after another and it was cold and trying to keep.... I was trying to keep the car...and we was in my car and we was trying to get all the evidence we could out. And we was on our way back to town about mid-morning and ah....around nine or ten o'clock in the morning and we was going to come in and shave and put on some clean clothes, we'd been down there in that plant scratching around trying to get evidence. And Red was sick and I told him I said, 'Red, why don't you quite smoking those

damn filthy cigarettes and you'll get over that cold'. And I said, 'And you need to get in your car and go to the doctor as soon as we get in, cause you're a sick man'. And Red just reached in his pocket and he pulled out a package of Camel cigarettes and pitched 'em up on the dashboard of my car and never smoked another cigarette after that day. And ah....and he went....he went in the hospital that same day for pneumonia and stayed for a week or ten days. But ah....he never smoked another cigarette. And he...he'd laugh and tear me about it and Red Arnold was a tough son-of-a-gun you know. But he just.....he was the kind of guy that would make up his mind to do something and he'd just do it you know. And I guess....I don't know whether he thought about smoking, but ah...of course I was instrumental in a lot of Rangers quitting smoking because I didn't like to smell them filthy cigarettes, but I liked their company you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was Redhe was involved in the shooting down at Pittsburgh, was it over this steel strike or was it something different?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was another deal. We'll probably get into that a little bit later.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....all right, during this time in February they had some problems over at Wylie College in Marshall, Texas, a colored college over there. And this was back in...in the time that these....the young people began to rebel on all the college campuses you know. The drug scene was here in the...in the mid and late '60's and these kids was wanting to run the colleges and do everything else you know. And ah...and they had ah....they had just about taken over the campus over there. So ah...then it settled down. I...I went over to Marshall and checked on it and talked to the local officers over there and the kids, they hadn't really just....they was skipping classes and just

kind of messing around. So we met with the college board over there and they thought they can handle it. And sure enough ah....ah....six days later the kids they just barricaded all the administrative offices over there and just completely took over the campus, run everybody off of it. So I'm back in Marshall and we meet with a....I meet with the Sheriff and the District Attorney and the Police Chief that night and ah....and the board and the County Judge. And so they...we decide the next morning...we got some uniform people in there, we just went in there and ah....and took over the campus and searched the men's dormitory and I think got one pistol out of it and some knives. And....and ah....and told thosegave those kids ah.... I think 24 hours to get off the campus, and they did. And they just shut the college down. And we didn't have any problems, after they....well authority got over there and told them what they was going to do....and I guess you noticed looking at those pictures, there's one of those....there a picture in there somewhere of a...in one of those books where Bob Mitchell and myself and G. W. Burks and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lester Robertson.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Lester and Charlie were in front of one of those

ROBERT NIEMAN: Charlie Moore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....dorms and ah....and we were....you know, we came over there so....to probably.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think you were up on the steps wasn't you?

GLENN ELLIOTT:wasn't going to let anybody run us off you know. And ah....so it...it shut down, we never had any more problems over there. Ah....ah....we had....and then on the 28th of February they had a tent bombing, we got a call over in Marion County where theythey had put a homemade bomb, and I've got a picture of it, on a guys truck that working in there and he saw it before he started his truck up. And I called the Sheriff in Jefferson and Bob was out on something

else and I run over there and me and the Sheriff disarmed it and ah....which was a foolish thing to have done, but we of had to wait on somebody out of.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where would the closest bomb disposal squad have been, Dallas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bossier City, we was using ah...one from Barksdale field some at that time and ah...we...we had....they were available. Ah....we....we made some arrest for ah....we arrested four on March 3rd for possession of dynamite ah.... on March the 10th there was a shooting incident in the Cox community. On March 14th there was a bombing of an employee's home in Gladewater. And on April the 9th I notice ICaptain Clint Peoples and ah....Sergeant Bill Wilson ah...called and wanted ah....some help in Bowie County on a murder investigation and I went up to Bowie County with them and worked....helped them work on a murder case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would Clint been Senior Captain then or is he still captain.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....he was captain of Company F at that time. Ah....they had some fence cuttings. On the 4th and 15th they bombed a real estate office there in Daingerfield that was furnishing housing for some of the....and a vehicle.... for some of the people that was working in the plant. On March the.....on ah....April the 16th they blew up two Fort Worth supply trucks at the Holiday Inn, Mt. Pleasant, set dynamite on them at night and blew them.... just destroyed the tru....the tractors and also broke a bunch of the windows out of the Holiday Inn there. And ah... they got after an old boy that had just left there and arrested him over at Winfield truck stop and ah....made a case on him that they....ah....for blowing up those trucks. I went to Austin on the 18th, April the 18th, with some evidence and ah....on the 19th I noticed we recovered some more dynamite. This is just ...just kind of the way that things ran up there, it was just you know.....and then on the 5th and 1st there's a bombing in Titus County, 5th and 2nd there's an arson in Morris County and ah....and the thing ended ah....just about then, strike ended in ah...May, about the first

part of May. And ah....so we kind of got back to our routine 70 hour work, but we still had a lot of time we had to spend going back to Morris County following up leads and in that area ah....after that happened. But ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I want to go back now before you take off from there. You andbecause I'm assuming from your closeness of working together, you and Mitchell formed a pretty close bond.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Mitchell and I formed a close bond when ah...when he got to be a Ranger. Bob Mitchell was a good guy and I

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And ah....he ah...he and I worked a lot of cases together, a lot of burglaries together, before this strike and ah....we'd....we'd go into Dallas together and he'd meet me over on Interstate 20 when we had to go to Dallas, and we had to go to Dallas the first working day of every month. And Bob and I just got real close andand then when this strike started well it just so happened that we paired up as roommates there and...and ah...cause we were both called at the same time, got up there about the same time and Captain Crowder was in charge, he or Lester Robertson one and they sent us....said, 'Well Bob you and Glenn take room so and so', what ever it was, room 23 or whatever it was I...I...that's just a wild guess, but ah....we was about four doors down from the office. We had a....there was two adjoining rooms there and ah...the captain or the sergeant one was in one of them nearly all the time and we had set up a telephone and a radio and ah....they had brought a radio based station out of Austin for us and we could communicate with ah....with the head office there, we didn't have to try to go through Tyler or Texarkana, in fact I

don't think they even had a radio station in Texarkana at that time, DPS. So we had communication problems up there, especially with Tyler, so they just brought a radio up there and set it up in the room. So Mitchell and I wound up in this room together and we wound up doing mostgetting called on most all of the investigations. Ah....Red was ah....well Red was kind of handlinghe was looking at all thethe people that the Highway Patrol stopped and he was helping kind of assign people towhat areas to be in and what to do, because it was his area and he knew what was going on. But it seemed like all the problems fell on Mitchell and I, every time they'dand we had Rangers up there, but most of the time the Rangers there were just there for....to help protect life and property. They'd be down atthere where the picketing was going on, the main problems and patrol at night and be available if the Highway Patrol needed them on criminal matters. Andand ah....and Mitchell and I was just working day and night you know , trying to....running somebody on the polygraph or trying to find out....just doing criminal.....criminal work you know. We didn't do a lot....we didn't have time to do much patrolling cause we was trying to find out who was doing all these crimes you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well has Max, Max Womack, has he got on the Rangers yet?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No Max is on the Highway Patrol still and ah....but Max was down there. He was stationed up at Paris and ah... he got some duty down there, because ah....they brought a lot of patrolmen in for a week at a time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Rigler was still a....he was still on duty then.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Rigler was.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was still a Ranger wasn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Rigler worked and ah....Rigler ah....ah....he'd work mainly like....like I said, if they was having problemsand of course we would to, they had a lot of problems at the

main gate. They tried to block all the highways up there and at the critical times of ah....ah....staff people going to work you know. And they'd just....union would organize and they'd get all their people out there in their cars and just drive bumper to bumper and it was....it was a terrible mess up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was it this strike or the earlier one where they blew up the pipe line to Pittsburgh?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was the early one, it was that wild cat strike in 1957 that they blew up ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, now Mitchell replaced Jim Ray in Smith County, right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, uh hum, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And where was Jim?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Jim was....at this time was sergeant out at ah....Midland.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And he was up there some, Jim was up there. In fact ah....Jim was ah...they brought some Sergeants in, Jim Riddle was up there. And Jim Ray ah....John Wood, ah....I'm trying to think if there was any other ah....sergeant up ah....but John Wood was sergeant out of ah...at that time Corpus was a headquarters down there in Captain Allee's company. And ah...but Jim Ray came and they brought some Sergeants in there because Lester and ah.... and the captain you know, they was just....they needed a little relief. And they had their business to tend to in Dallas and other problems too you know, in the company. So they'd bring a sergeant in there and Jim was up there when ah....ah....Bennie Krueger was up there working nights and Bennie's wife died and ah....ah....during this time. And Jim was running the office at that particular time and he called me and ah....and ah....and Bob and I were out somewhere doing....working on trying to solve a crime you know from that violence up there. And probably out trying to gather some evidence up,

something that happened the night before or that morning. And ah....anyway, Jim called and we....we came in and he told me he said, 'Bennie Krueger's wife died'. And Jim's kind ofold Jim is a tough old son-of-a-gun, but he's soft hearted. I can tell you when old Red died we went down there and looked at his body and old Jim whimpered a little bit you know and....and ah.... I don't think he meant to, but ah....it come....kind of come out on him. But anyway, Jim said, 'I want you to go wake Bennie up and tell that his wife died'. And ah....so ah.... I got two cups of coffee and ah....carried down there and kicked on his door and he ah....he come answered the door and I said, 'Bennie I want to drink coffee with you, I got something I want to talk to you about'. And I told him about his wife dying and of course he set there on the bed. I said, 'Now Bennie I'm going to take you to Athens and I'm going to stay with you as long as you want me to'. And I was you know, that was my intentions. And so I said, 'Get you coat'. We drank the coffee and I said, 'Getget dressed and you're relieved of your duty up here and I'm going to drive you to Athens'. 'Well what am I going to do with my car'. And I said, 'Well I'm going to get somebody to drive it'. And so Jim was stationed in Athens at one time with the Highway Patrol and ah....and of course he....Jim liked Bennie, thought a lot of him. And so I went back up and told Jim, I said, 'You know I'm going to drive Bennie and we need somebody to take his car'. And Jim said, 'I'll bring it, I'll bring his car, me and you both will stay with him, or I'll send after somebody to come get me if you have to stay'. And so ah....Bennie got dressed and went back down there and we got his gear and put it....got it loaded up and we headed out. And of course you....you hadn't ever ridden with me when I was a Ranger, I think you got to get to where your going just as quick as you can, you know, and get back, afraid something's going to happen. So I I strike out to Athens, Texas just like there's a house on fire over there you know. And I think Bennie's needed in Athens andand I know the way so here we go to Athens. So Bennie....we get down the road a little ways and he

asked me to slow down, he said, 'Glenn I...this is the worst...this is going to be the longest trip I've ever made'. And he said, 'I know it', and he said, 'I...I just don't I wish I didn't even have to go'. And he said, 'Let's just drive along real slow and talk'. And he said, 'I don't know what I'm going to do when I get there'. And he just talked about it you know and so I slowed down and I'm trying...you know....get Bennie....do what I can for him. And we talked about hishe talked about his wife and Bennie said, 'I just got....I don't know....somebody has got to help me make the arrangements', he said, 'I just...I don't know what I'm going to do'. And I said, 'Bennie I won't...I'll stay with you'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How old was his son Glen at this time, Glen Krueger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Glen was ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he in the Highway Patrol?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was in the Highway Patrol, he hadn't made Ranger. And he was stationed down at Beeville. So Glen....we got over there before Glen did of course. Ah.... I don't know, seemed like we called Glen from up there, I'm pretty sure we did, from Daingerfield. Ah.... I don't remember all the details but I do know that when we got to Athens, Texas and it must of been about ten thirty in the morning, I think they found her dead, she....you know she died in her sleep maybe as I remember, I'm not sure about that. But anyway, that house was full of people, the yard was full of people and ah....all the officers up there was around and ah....just....and Bennie had all the Church people, they had food on the table and ah....they greeted old Bennie and he was....it was the greatest thing that I've ever seen happen to a man that lost his wife. And Jim and I, we stayed and ate lunch and just hanging around there visiting you know. And after dinner old Bennie come out there on the front porch, we was sitting out there on the front porch, he had a very modest frame house, and ah....he said, 'What are ya'll still doing here', said, 'Don't you know that there's a

lot of work to do over at Daingerfield'. And I said, 'Well Bennie, I told you I was going to stay here as long as you wanted me to'. And I said, 'If you're going to send me back to Daingerfield, well that's where we'll go'. And he said....and he told us he said, 'I didn't realize I had this many friends'. He said, 'I don't need any help', said, 'These people here are doing everything'. And by that time Glen got there, his son, and....and ah....he...he just said, 'We don't have any problems'. And so I said, 'Well you know, when you make the arrangements well get Glen to call us, cause we'll be coming back to help you bury her'. And we did you know. But that's what, you know, folks should do.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did...how did Jim Ray react to your typical drive back to Athens, which I know you....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Jim didn't mind my driving.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh. Did ah....you just mentioned Jim Riddle there, ah...did Riddle ever tease you any up there and say, 'You know if I'd of known you was going to become a Ranger when I was your teacher I'd of made you done better', or some....anything like that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. Jim Riddle was not much of a teaser. He...he was kind of dry, he had a lot of dry wit about him. But ah...Jim acted like he was proud of me to tell you the truth, he ah...he really did. He ah....in fact Jim offered me a job as sergeant you know and ah...he was already captain out there at Midland. So after that Jim Ray made captain and went to Lubbock. And ah...and of course Jim invited me to come out there and be his sergeant you know. And at that time you didn't even have to take a test, you didn't have to do anything, but if the captain wanted you to be his sergeant all he had...(tape ends). In fact Jim Riddle was doing pretty well when he was up there, he was kind ofas a Supervisor, but ah...ah...we...we did...you know we did what we wanted to do. He knew what...he knew that we knew what to do and they just wanted somebody up

there with a little authority in case a decision making had to be made. And ah...oh after we shut down up there well just soon after that I got....I got a call from Panola....these Counties started calling again. Panola County called me just, I think just a few nights after the strike ended, and ah....they had caught two guys and had run 'em off from their car down at Stovall's camp at Lake Murvall and...and little old things like this that we can help the local officers. They didn't know what they was going to do, they said, 'Well these guys ran and their car is registered in Dallas and they lived in Dallas and we need some help'. And I said, 'Well they either got to be down here in the woods or they...they've called someone'. Back then you could...you know you...we got a lot of cooperation and now the phone companies can tell you things. I called the telephone operator there in Carthage and asked her, I said, 'Have they had any....has there been any long distance telephone calls out of this area to Dallas'. Of course then...back then you had to go through the operator you know, a lot of them, to make calls. And ah...'Yeah there's a call, a person to person call, come out from down there at a pay phone to...', gave me the telephone number in Dallas they called. I called this number in Dallas and of course I asked for the registered owner of that car, it so happened they were the same address as the registered owner of this car. He gave me the telephone number and address. I asked for this guy, I didn't tell him....didn't identify myself as an officer. And they said, 'Well he's having car trouble down in Panola County and I'm his sister-in-law and his wife just left here to go pick him up. Well I know what route she's going to take, so we just set up a road block down there on 149 and waited on her and she pulled in there in a pickup truck with her camper shell on it about three o'clock in the morning. And we...we'd stopped everybody coming down the road and of course we asked her for her drivers license. And ah....we told her what had happened and ah...she said, 'Well I'm supposed to...', she said, 'I'm supposed to go right down here to this Iron Bayou bridge and turn to the right towards Stovall's camp', and said, 'They're supposed to be

waiting on me down there'. And we...I said, 'Well you just go ahead'. And I got in the cab and had a Highway Patrolman get in the camper shell and she drove on down there and drove around real slow and they came out. She drove down and turned around and they come out. And then when we got out they ran back in the dark, out in the woods and they was going to hide. And I said, 'Just holler and tell them that we know who they are and they you ain't going nowhere til we get them'. So she hollered at 'em said, 'They know who you are, you may as well come on out'. And they...they surrendered you know. But little old cases like that. And then ah...we had this jail break ah...that you ah...I talked to you about you know ah... it's pretty....it happened on July the 15th and it was another Sunday morning deal. Here in Gregg County jail there was....there was three guys broke...four guys broke jail and ah...they kidnapped athey hit a jailer and took his keys and then unlocked the property room, got his gun and carried him on downstairs and took the dispatcher and then they made him unlock the ah...weapons room at the Sheriff's office. And they got some automatic weapons out of it. Then they took both of them and put 'em in the Sheriff's car and headed east. And one of the guys just disappeared, one of the four, ah...he was a local, and he didn't go with them, he just...he...he just hooked 'em, stayed in town. Anyway, they left here and ah...they called me and ah....right after the jail break and it was before Sunday School or Church and ah...I got out and headed that way and I was right behind them. And they got over in Harrison County and ah...ah...they had some tire trouble I believe and ah...and they stopped on the side of the road and flagged down a car and took a station wagon and left the people there and then the Harrison County Deputies got after them andwhile they were there. They pulled up on 'embehind 'em and ah....they started shooting at them and one of them got shotone of them shot one of the Deputies in the foot with a.....one of those .45 automatic Rising and ah....that kind of took that battle of them. And they went on to Waskom and stopped at a service station and stole

another car, abandoned that one. And went on in to Louisiana and ah.... I go.... I drive right straight to Caddo Parish Sheriff's office because ah... I always , you know, get into Louisiana I know I can get somewhere....somebody with some authority and get somebody with me and we can tell what's going on. And I went to the radio room at the Caddo Parish Sheriff's office there in Shreveport and of course I knew the dispatchers, cause I was in and out of there all hours of the day and night you know. And, 'Glenn what you doing over here'. I said, 'Well you heard about this jail break', and 'Yeah we got the information on it'. And just about this time ah....ah....they show up over in....close to Mansfield, Louisiana. They had pulled in and in fact ah....they had pulled into a man's yard between Shreveport and Mansfield and gone in and took he and his family hostage. And ah...they communicated with the Sheriff there in Mansfield and they even sent this man in to fill his car up with gas and get it serviced. He had an old Plymouth automobile. And the Sheriff made a deal with them to let them leave the Parish ah....unharmd, nobody would mess with them. Well, by this time we had a bunch of Rangers over on the other side of Mansfield ah....and in Mansfield, they'd come in from San Augustine, Ranger Doug Clark and by this....and several of the Gregg County officers had got down there by then. And Captain Crowder was down there in that area and he'd already got notified out of Dallas and he'd got in. Cause this hostage situation lasted a good while. And I stayed there in thein Caddo until we got 'em put down. And so they told me said....well you know the Sheriff came down and ah...he said, 'Now Glenn I'll send anybody with you that you want to', but he said, 'This is out of my Parish'. And he said, 'The Sheriff over at Mansfield has not asked for any help'. And he's....of course we'd already found out he...he'd given 'em permission to leave his Parish without anybody messing with them. And he said, 'They'll come down and obviously they're going on south'. But he said, 'I've got some men working', but he said, 'I'm not I can't send anybody over there because the Sheriff, if he wanted to, you know,

he'd done called me'. And of course I understood that you know. And so I get in my car and I ... Iand go on down andto the Mansfield road where 71 goes south and I'd cut back toward Mansfields there about a mile and I found an old abandoned barn there with a road up in it and I pulled my car up in this barn. And Iby that time I'd already put a set of Louisiana license tags on the car and we had plain cars you know . And I didn't even have whip antennas, I had.... at that time I was driving a '69 Dodge four door and had two electric antennas on the back, and I'd let them down. And ah...but I had.... I established contact with ah...the Rangers, car to car, because we was close enough and I could talk to them. And they told me what the Sheriff had said, said don't mess with them. Well I had I can tell you, it was an ideal situation, I had a whole gallon can of these Russian stars that these....that's what they....they call these pickets....these ah...ah...strikers had been throwing out up there on the highways to give us flats and all the workers flats. They'd take a couple of staples and put them together and bend 'em where it...there be a real sharp point sticking up at all....anyway you throw it. And they'd lay a package of cigarettes, empty pack of cigarettes on top of one of them you know and stick it in there where you couldn't see it you know. You'd run over it and you'd get a flat. Well I had a whole can full of those things. And I could of strowed 'em across that highway and put him out of business. But I set right there Bobby and watched that....those guys pass in that old Plymouth car and followed 'em, they didn't know I was back behind 'em, I let 'em get on.... I could see the intersection. I got up in the loft of the barn, I could see the intersection and see which way they turned. And they turned....of course they went south. I got back down and got in my car and I'd over take 'em and see 'em and I'd drop back and I followed them all the way down to Natchitoches and I'm about out of gasoline. In fact I didn't see I don't see how I got into Natchitoches, Louisiana. And ah.... I had to pull in and stop for some gas. So I called the Sheriff there. By this time....before then, the Governor of Louisiana, they'd

been on the telephone with him and the Governor meets 'em up there at Natchitoches. And this is the dernest fiasco you've ever seen in your life. Politicians getting involved andand he lets them go. And they...and it ah....ah....they get on off down there below Natchitoches and get off down there in the swamp somewhere and pull up to this old farm house and they're going to force that farmer's wife to cook 'em something to eat. And she did. She was fixing their meals and they was all in there and this old farmer or cat fisherman or whatever he did for a living, trout lining and ah....ah.... one of them laid one of these I thought..... I thought I remembered that the farmer got his shotgun, but I read the report and he laid one of these .45 Rising down on the floor while he was eating, next to his chair and this old farmer grabbed it. And that's when....and a couple of 'em ran, but they....they were all apprehended and brought back in to Natchitoches. But they had beaten

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was it a .45 automatic or a revolver?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a ...no it was a Rising, a .45 Rising, it's kind of like ait's a machine gun is what it is. It's a....it shoots a .45 caliber and it's about 30" long and ah....it's....it's ah....old....got old floating firing pin, they're dangerous son-of-a-guns. They....they....they're outyou know, nobody would want one of them now because they jam and they do everything else. But ah....that was a pretty tough weapon at one time. And that's what they got out of the arsenal here at the Sheriff's office, that's what they had here for....you know, for riot guns or whatever they needed them for you know. But ah...these people ah....ah....they apprehended them all and brought them back into Natchitoches. And of course I'd already come back home, because this thing had already gotthey was out of pocket down there, we didn't have any idea where they were. I'm down there and I hadn't got.... you know, nothing I can do. So I may as well come on back home you know. So I get on back home that night some time. And I establish contact with Captain Crowder and them again and then the next....they get caught that evening . And then the next day

one of the Deputies and myself go down to Natchitoches and of course interview them all. And that was a pretty ah....ah....this don't happen every day like that. Cleared a bunch of....a lot of Church burglary....we had a bunch of Church burglaries. You talk about getting heat on you now in East Texas, in the summer time, this was in August, I cleared eleven Church burglaries where they stole air conditioners out of the country Churches. And ah...you know the Rangers work on anything, but you know you got to work on something like a Church burglary. Cause you got a lot of good people stirred up and theyand ah....that heat will get on you. And then Bill Wilson made captain of course in September of '69.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Crowder gone?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Crowder's gone, they all had to retire, those that was over 65. Max went to work. I lost 2 1/2 counties, lost Marion, Cass and half of Bowie County and I think....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what...what's your feelings when a newwhen an old captain your close to leaves and a new one comes in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't know, I miss....of course I liked Captain Crowder and I missed him. But ah....of course Bill Wilson and I went on the Rangers at the same time. And ah....ah.... I think that I could have promoted before Bill did really. Ah....but I didn't and I didn't want to. And ah....but Bill and I got along good and ah....it suited me, if we was going to have a new captain, Iof course I'd liked for Lester to have been made captain. Lester was sergeant and they passed over him and ah...but if they didn't make Lester well ah....Bill was a....suited me just fine. I...I tell you what, I never did worry, I never did have a Ranger boss that gave me any trouble and I don't think we had very many that did you know and ah...so I knew we was going to be able to get along, whoever was there and ah....and did you know. And ah...this all....and it didn't both...my working relations were the same with the people down here and I don't see the captain but once a month

you know, and go into Company Headquarters first working day of every month and submit our expense account and our car book and get any supplies we need and get a few instructions and come on back and go to work you know. You don't see the captain again until next month. And ah...that's the way it ought to be. And ah.... I I notice I cleared another....helped another murder up in Upshur County and 43 burglaries, there's one suspect. And had some racial problems at a school in Texarkana and we had to go up there and spend a day or two. Had one other case, we'll shut down here on this one maybe.....well we might go to the next page. But first narcotic case I guess I made, this was...this was a funny thing, ah... I got a call from a District Attorney in Panola County, Kay Baker. Kay Baker is a....since was District Judge and still works as a District Judge, he retired but he works part time. Good District Attorney, good county District Attorney and ah....he tended to business and he if needed you he called you and if you needed him, he expected you to call him. And we had good relations and we were friends, good friends. And Kay called me, 'Glenn I got a problem I need you down here right now'. Well I didn't ask him what it was, I just got in my car and drove to Carthage and I...he was waiting on me in the office and we have coffee and said, 'I've got some good information'. Now this is in '68 see....'69 and ah...we didn't think we had a marijuana problem in East Texas you know, and probably didn't have a great big one. But he said, 'I got a school teacher here in Carthage, Texas that's smoking marijuana', and said, 'I got probable cause to get a search warrant ah....for her house and I'm in the process of ...of ah.... I want you to go out and interview so and so, take an affidavit and that's all I need and we'll get a search warrant'. And....what....what really happened was, this was a young school teacher that was smoking pot and she was a speech teacher and Kay's daughter was a.... I think a senior. And she assigned a speech class a debate and Kay's daughter had to debate why alcohol shouldn't be in drinking fountains in school. Now can you imagine a teacher pulling a stunt like that, especially

then. I I guess nowand I wouldn't be surprised of anything that happened in the school system now, but I think it's fixing to change. But anyway, this kind of upset Kay a little bit and he had....there had been some rumors going around and from what information he had and what I got, well we obtained a search warrant and searched her apartment and found marijuana, I mean right smart of it. And she had it in plates around in her house and ah...and so I brought.....me and the Sheriff, Acey Hennigan was Sheriff and ah...so we went out and ran the search warrant and ah....picked up the contraband and ah....brought it in back to the office and make our reports andand ah....returned our search warrant. And Kay said ah...he said, 'I'm going to issue a warrant for her', well it's getting....and he said ah...'Ya'll I want you ... I want to get it done right quick', said, 'I want you to arrest her at school, I don't you to wait until she goes home, I want you to go to the school and arrest her'. And we did, we went to the school and arrested her. And of course that was...that ended her....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Cuff her and the whole works?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Cuff her and the whole works?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, I wasn't much for cuffing people, especially women, I wouldn't cuff anybody unless I thought they was going to give me some trouble.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I didn't know if they had rules that you had to.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no, you use your own judgment. I imagine he would have liked for me to but I didn't. Ah....ah....you know it's just ah....big old tough Ranger arresting a little old helpless school teacher and putting hand cuffs on her, I don't think that would have gone over to good. But ah... Iah....one more case here that I guess that ah....that I'd like to talk toabout to night and we'll shut down. But I worked a real....and Mitchell helped me on this, and he and I

worked together on a lot of things. But we worked an old boy, I'll never forget him, his name was Hickman Meeker Corely and he was a con artist and he was ah....committing thefts at Churches aFort...when they was having weddings and funerals and at County Clubs he...he'd just in with a golf shirt on, go in the Country Club locker room and just act like he belonged to the Country Club and nobody would challenge him. He'd....and while the guys were out playing golf he'd burglarize the ah....the lock...ah....cabinets and steal their jewelry, you know a lot of the guys wouldn't carry their jewelry out on the golf course for some reason or other. He'd go in these Churches while the choir practiced for weddings or Church or while they was having a wedding and maybe the ladies in the choir would wear a robe you know and they'd leave their purses in the room locked up, and he'd go in there and burglarize....and that rascal went in places all over Texas. And we got after him and Ilet's see Tyler, Kilgore, Longview, Nacogdoches, Waco, Austin ah....Texarkana, Dallas, five in ah....Cooke County, six in Sherman, Bryan

ROBERT NIEMAN: Boy was busy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, just traveling the country ah...ah...and we'd get involved in something like this and it...that was interesting you know. You wanted to catch the old boy. And then after you caught him he wanted to clear up all this stuff and generally he would you know. But he had a....he had ah....he had a girlfriend who lived here in Longview and they got to coming back here and finally we got a lead on him and got him. And ah...ah....so that's ah.....and then Joe Jack Dean, well now Bob and I worked a bank robbery over at Tyler and old Jack Dean was a Highway Patrolman, Jack was later captain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was a captain.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I was a United States Marshall, well Jack caught this bank robber and stopped him over on Interstate 20 at 310 and Mitchell and I went up there and got him and cleared

up a bank robbery over there and then old Jack was wanting to be a Ranger pretty bad and this kind of got him on the road to being a Ranger . So let's....we'll shut down.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me..... I want to go back to one thing where we.... Iwe mentioned you ah....Mitchell and Crowder being involved in a shooting, then I side tracked us.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:up at Daingerfield.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, they....doing this time we was just having all this kind of problem and they'd been....they was ah....they was harassing everybody that come in out of the plant down there. So Bob and the captain got one of Lone Star's pickups and ah....they decided to get out and just ride....and they got them a couple of hard hats and they come out that south gate down there and headed towards Orr City and shoot, they hadn't got down there to 155 til there was three old boys that pulled up beside 'em and started shooting at 'em, shooting the tires off the car. Well of course ah...and then they went on around 'em and captain and them run 'em down withhe was running on a flat and he was driving and Bob ah....shot a tire off of their car....pickup and they over turned. And ah....of course they had 'em and ah....they had some homemade whiskey . And we couldn't even get the Federal people and ah....Wayne Justice I remember was a United States District Attorney at that time and they never could get a case filed even for untaxed whiskey, which you know back in those days that was....that was the easiest case you could find. They'd turned their car over and they had a jug of homemade whiskey in there you know and ah....but we never could get anything done out of that bunch. Labor was just pretty well controlling the politicians I guess then, must of been, completely. Ah....but ah....it didn't hurt the captain and them.....or Bob either one and those folks were lucky they didn't die out there. I have an idea that if it hadn't been to the end of captain Crowder's ah...ah...rein, you know he knew he was fixing to have to go, that

ah....because them guys had already shot at ‘em, you know, and then they was trying to out.....get away from ‘em. And they were armed, they had athey had a shotgun and they....you know, Bob was a good shoot and they could of taken those folks out if they’d wanted to and justifiably so. I mean, you know, if somebody’s shooting at me well by golly I’m going to shoot back at ‘em. And....but I know that the captain probably had a little something to do with that and he just, you know, decided well there’s no use in me getting involved and we got ‘em, here they are and they’d turned their truck over and.....and ah.....they wasn’t shooting right then you know, but they still had....you knew they a gun. But anyway, they....they executed their arrest and got ‘em, put ‘em into custody, but nobody ever did a dern thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I guess they better be glad Charlie Miller wasn’t a Ranger anymore wouldn’t they?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That’s exactlywell they better be glad Charlie Miller wasn’t there and ah....driving that pickup you know, because somebody would of.....somebody else would of lost their life up there on that....that no doubt you know. But I’m sure that, that’s the best way it could of come out. But that was a pretty interesting year when you get to thinking about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, well we’ll shut her off there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, May 1, 1995 continuing on the series on the life of Texas Ranger, Glenn Elliott. Glenn, last week we talked quite a bit about the Lone Star Steel strike, but in further conversations I think we missed a few things we need to go back and cover. Ah....you want to just take off on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right. I tell what Bobby, this is a....this is probably the most important part of it as far as we’re concerned. I don’t know whether ya’ll.....the average citizen don’t realize that ah....how much stress you’re under when you work, you know, a hundred hour weeks and

running all over everything with everybody else's problems, just week after week after week, trying to sleep in a little old half bed in a cramped up motel room for sever, eight months you know and....and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Definitely a life and death situation.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, andand just constantly on the run and about the time you get laid down well you get called out for something else. Andso occasionally we would try to relax for a few minutes somewhere andand ah....Bob Mitchell and I, as we talked before, Bob and I worked together nearly all the time. Ah....occasionally I'd get called out somewhere and a night he and Captain Crowder went out in the pickup well I was gone somewhere else and ah.... and we tried to go home, you know, once a month maybe to get some clean clothes and spend the night and get reacquainted with our family. But ah....in the evenings lots of times ah....ah....Bob and I was running all over the country, we'd take 'em to Dallas for a polygraph, we'd go to Texarkana, we'd go anywhere that the leads lead us to try and stop some of this stuff and to try and make some criminal cases, which we made. And ah....but Red would stay around up there and that was his territory and he was kind of helping Captain Crowder direct things andand ah....Red would want to get with us andand....away from other folks and sometimes we'd take a little nip you know, if we wanted....thought we needed one. Andbut we had a spot out between Daingerfield and Mt. Pleasant, it was a cemetery, and ah....the ah....the name of the family that the most.....they called it the ah....well I forget the name but anyway, it's not that important, but in....we didn't want everybody, all the rest of the Rangers in the company, coming out there and Red and Bob and I would meet out there quite often at night and ah....when we was coming in. And ah...Red....we'd establish radio contact and Red would just say, meet us outmeet me out at Mr. So and So's, and that's the name of the cemetery. And of course he was out there and he had a nice grave and

marker and everything and so we....we'd just sickle by there and meet Red and relax a little bit and talk about what happened that day and what we'd done. And so Red had just ah....this friend of ours who owns this.... by the way he owns the Gonzauillas guns that's now on displaynamed Pet Green. And Pet ah....was a friend of the Rangers and ah...Pet wanted one of ah...Red's guns, Red had a .357 magnum and ah....and ah....Pet just wanted one of Red's guns. And he had a .44 magnum and Red had wanted.....they had just been manufactured, about this time I think you can go back and check, well this was 1970, '69 and '70, and there wasn't too many .44 magnums on....in the holsters around at that time. And so Red traded with him up there one night and ah....so Pet gave him the pistol and it was fully loaded and he had a little old cartridge holder that only held six and ah...of course Red had one made later that held more, but ah....this was just....he traded and ah....and had a holster for it and everything. So Red just started wearing it, well he was proud of it and of course he traded his magnum off that he was carrying at that time. And so ah...we met that next evening and Bob and I had been to Texarkana and ah....we knew that Red didn't have but twelve rounds of ammunition. And we found out why really, cause the dern things were pretty high then you know, .44 magnum shells. But we bought Red a box of shells up at Texarkana. And ah...so met out....and knew that he was going to call us and we met out there. So before we met I told Bob, I said, 'I'll tell you what let's do', I said, 'When we get out there we'll talk and visit a little bit and Red's gonna probably want us to take a little toddie with him and kind of relax a little bit before we go eat supper'. And I said, 'I'm going to talk him into letting me see that pistol and I'm going to shoot it six times and he's going to raise hell about it'. And then I said, 'He'll reload with those six shells out of his cartridge belt and of course right quick'. And he did. And I said, 'After awhile well see if you can get a hold of it and you shoot the other six and then we'll give him this box of shells'. And of course this what.....this is relaxing to us, we were probably worn plumb

down to the ground you know. And...and....but we get out there and we have ten or fifteen minutes worth of fun. But we did this and Red, when I got through shooting, well he just raised cane said, 'Man that's all the bullets I got you know'. And ah...., 'Well that's all right you can get some more tomorrow', you know and then Bob got a hold of it and shot you know and then he's empty you know. And he did raise hell then. And then we presented him with this box of shells, which is a....which ah....and he was real pleased of course. And ah....he wasn't.... I said, 'You don't know how old that ammunition was and we decided we didn't want you carrying some kind of...'. And then at the end of the strike well, of course Red wasah....you know we was close and we had lots of outings together up there and lots of time, but this was Red's territory andand at the end of the strike when they....we broke camp up there well ah...ah...Bob and I told Redthey had a swimming pool there, none of us ever.... I don't guess there was a Ranger ever....Red Arnold is the only Ranger that ever went in it, and we threw him in there. And he had that .44 magnum on and we got him and said, 'We're fixing throw you in that pool'. And he said, 'Well some of ya'll are going with me'. And ah...and what he did was to start with, I had a I had a whistle, old Highway Patrol whistle, and had it on a keychain in my car and there was a bunch of keys on it. And I just kept my old Highway Patrol Whistle, still got it somewhere. And ah....well Red thought that I ought to throw that whistle away, you know. And so ah....and the day before the...the strike for all practical purposes was over but it hadn't been fully announced that they....that it was. And so ah....Red threw my whistle in the swimming pool and ah....you know, kind of celebrating, that kind of what.....where I got the idea that maybe, you know, he ought to go in there before it was over with.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Go in there and get your whistle.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. So ah....he pulled his pistol off, but we got him in there and he didn't pull either one of us in. But we ended the strike that away. So ah....tonight we're getting into 1970.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you, before we finish this, did the....did the strike just fizzle out or was there an offic....official ending point or....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there a contract settlement?

GLENN ELLIOTT: They reached an agreement of some kind, but you know I don't remem....of course I never was interested in what their agreement was, the only interest we had up there was trying to cut the violence down you know. And.... and ah.....and talk sense to those people.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well were there cases made ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, there was a bunch of cases made but....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Any convictions?

GLENN ELLIOTT:no, no, we never did ah...no there wasn't any....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That must have been frustrating.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it's...it takes a lot out of you. You know the thing about it is that you go up there, you spend so much time, so many hours and ah....and see a lot of the boys that were up there, they were just kind of pulling guard duty. But Mitchell and I got saddled with all the investigative work just about it. And that was a chore. And you can't properly report much less investigate as many crimes as was going on up there you know. And I don't know how it happened that way, I never did question the captain, but every time something happened they'd come knock on mine and Mitchell's door you know, day and night.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they have a stenographer or anything like that up there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: To do your reports for you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, we...we used ah....yeah we ah....ah....we used the company secretary's down there to write most of our reports, cause ourour.... I think at that time we only had one secretary and she was in Dallas. And ah...yeah we did use ah...ah....Lone Star company....they....they made a girl available for us to write our reports or we never of never would of gotten any reports written during that. Cause most of the time while you was trying to write something up, something else happened you know. So it's ah....oh it's discouraging, but you know a lot of cases are that way. I've arrested drunk drivers that the District Attorney didn't want to try and he's told me he wasn't going to try 'em. But you go ahead and do your job and then if somebody comes up and asks you, you know, why about this you know, well you can say I've done my part you know, you better go ask somebody else. And that's the right attitude to have, it would drive you crazy if you didn't you know. Just go on about your work and do something else. But there's a lot of politics up there you know and ah....and of course when unions get involved in something, you know ah...they....they push that money pretty good and politicians like to get it you know. And...and ah....I'm not saying that all politicians are that way, but ah...most of them that take that union money try to help the union out you know. And ah...and ah.... of course you get in the courthouse and ah...and you had brothers and fathers fighting amongst themselves up there you know. Some of them wanting to stay in and some of them didn't you know. And ah...and this happens onand I guess when we coverprobably I didn't work I worked Lone Star you know, all their problems ah....we had....we had us some problems out here at Trailmobile one time. And ah....Kilgore Ceramics had some problems one time that I've worked on some and then ah....Henderson Clay Products had some problems. But they wasn't anything compared with Lone Star, theythey'd want to fight somebody, these guys down at Trailmobile, a couple of fights

broke out andand as far as Kilgore Ceramics and ah....and Henderson Clay, I don't think anything any thing happened. That's about the only labor disputes I ever got involved in.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we're into 1970, and I know we're going to '70 we're going to get in.....and this is kind of ironic, we're going.....with the Oklahoma City bombing which just took place, we're going to get into some bombing that you're involved in, in 1970.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, it's soon....down to July. I...I started out in '70 ah... of course we ...we... spent a little bit of time up there around Daingerfield trying to ah...working some armed robberies. Stoudt Distributing Company had just come here to Longview and they bought the Schlitz dealer and they were robbed and we...we got lucky on it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well are these armed robberies or burglaries?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Armed robbery, yeah. And ah....Tony's H & T., you know Tony Valentino, do you know Tony?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Huh uh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Tony had the Landmark H & T Sporting Good store here and Tony....they just cleared his building out one night and Tony had a good gun collection for sale you know. And ah...and we got lucky ah....Earl Claxton, a city detective, and myself and through some friends of mine in Houston that I developed a suspect through them and we recovered a bunch of guns. I made three or four trips to Houston working on a sporting good burglary of the store here of Tony and we recovered a lot of guns, we had a whole car full. Just had the trunk and the back seat stacked full of guns when Tony and I went down to get the last bunch. And of course your....we're always working burglaries, you know there's a murder comes along and I worked a murder and some of them I don't....I don't even remember you know, after I was going through my reports.

And it's hard....and I did a lot of work on old Charles Robert Mathis, he...he would just continually.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Tell us about Charles Robert.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Charles Robert Mathis was just an old boy that got kicked out of the military after he served a bunch of years and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he from here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know where he was from. He was living in Texarkana, that's where he made his home, so obviously he was from around Texarkana somewhere, that's where he settled. And he later moved to Longview and he was doing a lot of stealing. And ah...ah...he just ah...he just roamed everywhere. He was one of the kind that would very seldom ever steal anything from any of the counties that I worked in, he'd tell me. I've arrested him for other states and other counties during....and had before and did again....and of course we went into that fact that he....but he did....when he was doing safe burglaries he did....he got caught over at Kilgore you know, he went in there on a safe burglary and he got shot, he shot a night watch....he hit the night watchman, knocked his glasses off and they'd cornered he and his friend and they both ran and the night watchman just shot and he was just lucky and he hit old Charles in the leg. Ah....but he was just constantly in my hair and...and of course, like I told you to begin with here, I always thought that if we had somebody in the area that was just doing nothing but stealing that we should spend a little time on him. And I put a concentrated effort out on old Charles trying to keep up with him and I'd have officers call me all the time, well we lost a tractor last night, we lost a trailer house, we....and he was stealing everything. Man I mean he was just....and ah....I'd arrested old Charles ah...back...and we'll get to that in a little while...in... oh the middle of December.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was he married?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was married, had some kids, and his kids was thieves, kids was stealing with him, he had some boys that was going with him and stealing with him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he a dangerous man?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was dangerous, he'd ah...he was the kind that always carried....he...he...he hit a man, he whipped a man over his wife here out on the apartment....on South High with a pistol and it went off and creased the guys skull and of course they never did do anything about it, cause it was a...it was a...kind of a woman/man kind of a deal you know. And ah....but yeah, Charles was a pretty dangerous man, he....he didn't want to get caught and he always....he'd run at an officer ah....he ran a....he ran a pickup into an officer up in Cass County, Highway Patrolman was trying to stop him with two stolen large riding lawn mowers in the back of a stolen pickup.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the reason I was asking, I've heard you describe most of the old thieves back in the earlier days they'd, you know, shoot a pistol up in the air to get an officer to duck under cover.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...I feel like old Charles, if it got down to the....and I found out for sure later that he...he pretty well meant business when he....when he had a gun along. But anyway, back to what we was doing ah....and I worked on old Charles and we....we had to....we lost a lot of liquid mercury ah....in these oil ah....these meters you know, I don't know whether you're familiar with oil field meters, but mercury was high. And ah...all these oil field meters at that time ah....had liquid mercury in them, that's the only way they could operate 'em, they....that's the way they were designed and since then of course they've perfected new methods. But ah....and we lost a lot of mercury, mercury was bringing a good bit of money and ah....and we'd get a big problem like that andand that's what the Rangers would try to do and that's what I tried to do and I started

concentrating on it. We was losing mercury here and Rusk County and Panola County and Marion County and Cass County and so ah....we get to concentrating on mercury thieves during this little old period of time here and....and trying....and get to interviewing some people on some oil issues down in Panola County and they described this pickup that's been com.....that was seen down there with an old bedstead for a headache rack on it you know. It was a late model pickup. And ah....and this is unique and it's unusual and sure enough ah.....so we...we put out the word all around, you know, watch for this pickup and identified the owner out of ah....out of the Dallas area. And ah....was doing some work.....background work on them trying to find out who they were and one Sunday afternoon ah....ah...one of the people down in the oil patch down in Panola County called the Sheriff and we'd been out there and said this truck with a bedstead on it just pulled out on the highway. Well the Sheriff called me, well I get out onhere on ah....highway, interstate and ah....and by the time I get out there way he's already by. But I called Dallas, sent a message up there and ah....sure enough Charlie Moore and Lester I believe ah....well they met the guy between Forney and Dallas and arrested him and recovered a bunch of mercury from him. And we later made cases onand there was two of them in this truck and we cleared up a bunch of ah....mercury thefts that year. Ah....and that....that just kind of shows you how diver.....diversified our work is you know. We liable to be working on one thing today and something else tomorrow. Ah....then this ah...ah....it was a very interesting case that Bob Mitchell worked, he....it happened over at Tyler, and you and I discussed it a little bit the other day, and you an old trucker and I don't know whether we'll get in...how deep we'll get into this. But Tyler Pipe and Foundry ah....discovered through their inventories that they was buying ah....a whole lot more scrap iron than they had in stock....then they was using. And they couldn't figure out how it was happening. And ah....what they was doing, they was just buying by the pound, scrap iron and they had some

truck drivers from, I think, over in Navarro County or Waco, somewhere down in there, that was pretty well furnishing 'em and they would just make all the scrap yards in the country and load their truck up and come on into Tyler with it andand ah....and there would be about five or six trucks come in at a time. And they couldn't understand how they was beating 'em or just what was going on, but they knew they was getting beat bad. And so ah....Bob got into it and Lester came down and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lester Robertson?

GLENN ELLIOTT:the sergeant, yeah and ah....and so we ah.... I think ah...well let's see ah....Tom Arnold and Max Womack and myself and ah.....so we set up over there and we got to watching these trucks and Bob had already figured this out, those rascals would get in there at three or four o'clock in the afternoon and stay loaded all night long and hang around the Holiday Inn and the club over there. And Bob had done a whole lot of research work on 'em. And well this particular night we decided that they was doing something wrong, so we got into the plant and ah....stationed I know Mitchell and myself andand one other Ranger was in the office section there where we could see both end of the scales. And these trucks pulled in out there about four o'clock in the morning, four-thirty, and ah....six trucks, trailer trucks, nice rigs boy. And ah....they....the first truck up they raised the hood and all the drivers got up and accumulated around the hood and we counted eight people standing around out there. And in a few minutes we can't see but seven and ah...of course they were standing right over one of these holes with a cover over it you know, that goes in under the scales.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now, let me interrupt you. Was every time they come up there, they'd break down and have to raise the hood?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well see, nobody was knowing what was going on.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Cause see they don't....they don't start weighing trucks in til seven o'clock. So....but they let them in you know, they...they wanted to get in early, cause there was other drivers coming too see. They bought a lot of scrap iron over there. So they could come on in to the plant area with their trucks, but they....they had to line....they was lining up at the scales to be weighed in and they'd be.....and then weigh out. So there's nobody been watching 'em to see....and if there were they....unless you had a good vantage point to look you...you wouldn't....you couldn't tell. And ah....so we were in a position where we could ...we could at least count the people you know and we could tell that they was doing something. But....but anyway, one of the disappeared. Well to make a long story short, of course they....here comes the scales people in a little while andand they weigh 'em in. All right, we let 'em unload 'em, they all get unloaded and the last truck that weighs out, weighing empty, well we just go out and...and stop all the rest of them. They're in together and out together and we....the gate was a good ways up and we....anyway we kept all their trucks inside the plant and we....and of course the last truck was so designed that when it pulled up on to the scales it would always stop right where it got on the scales, where the axle would be sticking over and this guy, they had a trap door built in the bottom of it where he could come up out of the scales and get in this trap door underneath the trailer, the end of the trailer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had a box built.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Box built. And that's how he'd ride out of there. Well we were already suspicious of what was going on, so before he had a chance to get out and get in the truck well we stopped the last truck before it got on the scales andand took the lid off and hollered for him to go out. And Mitchell had....Mitchell went on down in there and got him, he wouldn't come out. But

ah....what he was doing, there was a guy underneath the scales that was putting weights on the scales and they was beating 'em for several thousand pounds a load.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how long had this been going on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it had been going on a good while. I.... I never did ask Bob exactly how much loss they thought they had. But here's what the company had done, they had....they knew we was going to do this and they felt like and ah....they got busy and had their lawyers to ah....they filed civil action against those people and tied their trucks up in there for several days and wouldn't let 'em out, wouldn't let 'em.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where....where were these trucks from?

GLENN ELLIOTT: They was from down, I think, around Corsicana and Waco is where they was ah.....but they was all privately owned trucks, it wasn't a....it wasn't a company, but it was a bunch of truck drivers that had got together you know and was ah....all of 'em was beating the system. And ah....I'm sure that....see there was six trucks and there were eight people, so they had two extras there for something you know. One of them would go under the scales, I know the other one was probably just deciding who split what money you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And then....well how did....what was the outcome?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know. You know, Bob made....carried the paper on 'em and.....cause they were filing on 'em for theft there in Smith County and I never did.... I never did even ask him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well from the civil....did they make a settlement did you say?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I ah.....they filed a civil suit on 'em and tied their trucks up and for....to try to recover their loss. And I of course....and we never did, I never got involved in that. I know the trucks were later released, but they held 'em for several days there. And of course we could

hold a truck like that for an implement used in a...in a theft for evidence for ...for a time until the court ordered them released you know. But ah....that was a pretty interesting case, it was just something that was...that was going on.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was it just you....you and Mitchell?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, Mitchell and I worked the case..... I went back over there I know to testify at the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean, were there other Rangers involved in it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they was involved in it that night ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But I meant in the investigation?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, they just came down toin case we needed some more help see. Cause we had to stop those trucks. I see I went up to Texarkana and ah...and ah...made some arrests up there on March the 12th of some more prostitutes. Ah.... I worked a murder and a robbery in Kilgore. And ah....worked some diesel engine burglaries from Anderson Sales. We had one old boy that was tearing the country up working by himself, had a 3/4 ton pickup and man he'd steal those diesel short blocks and that....he have that truck so loaded it would be standing on it's back end.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Steered real easy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But ah....we recovered quite a few stolen diesel short blocks and ah....and this old boy was stealing here and in Houston and the Fort Worth area and ah....and ah....we got lucky on that and made...gothanded him up. I attended the in-service school in March and ah....on March the 27th of '70 and then I had to leave Austin, we was down.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what would the in-service school consist of?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we had to go to an in-service school, all DPS employees go to an in-service school every two years. And it's ah....and basically it was any new laws that had been passed or we hador in our area, any new criminal investigative techniques that became available that ah....and.....and we'd....we'dsomebody would be there to give us instructions on them and we'd always take our firearms training and stuff like that down there. But we was there Monday through Friday ah....every two years for a week. And ah...while we were down there in March of this year, of '70, they were having...they started having these hippie festivals all over Texas being in the '70's you know and all these dopers would go to these places and listen to the old long haired, loud music you know. And... and ah....so they was having a hippie festival out at Lubbock in ah....the last of March, and it snowed, it come a dern good snow out there and it helped us a little bit. Anyway ah....we had to leave Austin and ah...and of course the weather was getting cold and we was down there in probably....in March in short sleeved shirts. So I had to come through here and get some clothes and man it was cold out there, it was ah...and ah...we ran into snow down about Sweetwater and ah....half of the company was....half of the Rangers was already out there, the week...getting ready working at the....ah....and they left to go to Austin to school and we left to go out there and take their place. And I worked out there Saturday ah....let's see we went.....I got out there Saturday morning I think about ten or eleven o'clock and we didn't come back until Monday, worked Saturday and Sunday. And....and ah....and we made a few arrests, but it was so cold....mainly it was just keeping 'em from setting themselves on fire. There was people hauling wood for 'em and they was building fires, they were laying out there on the ground and around where this thing was going to be held you know. They'd built a big stage out there in the country on a farm and I don't know whether you've ever ah....oh you've seenyou've read about 'em, and it was just a new thing, a new fad and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Like the Woodstock thing.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and going out there you'd see those rascals, those hippies, hitchhiking trying to get rides out there you know. And of course we waswe was rolling you know and ah....cause here we are leaving Austin driving into Longview and got to be in Lubbock at ten o'clock the next morning, so you don't spend a whole lot of time packing your clothes at home. You got to hook 'em on out there. So ah.... I spent three nights out there, they put us up real good. The Texas Tech College out there had just built a new dormitory and they never had occupied it and they let us ah....they let the law enforcement people have it. Ah....boy it was the nicest facility you ever saw. And ah...so it wasn't all that bad of an assignment, but I drew a night straw and Jim Riddle was out there and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he a captain ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....ah....Jim was a.... I guess Jim was a sergeantno wait a minute ah....he was captain at Midland, but I I.....they....cause Jim was familiar with Lubbock....I...yeah he was captain in Midland and he just....he was out there taking care....cause he was down there in the same school I was in. And ah....ah.... I made some prostitution arrests here inat the East Texas Motel. And ah....Charlie Moore and Tom Arnold came down working undercover and we arrested some prostitutes out at the East Texas Motel on the 4th and 27th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that here in Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. It's out around....between here and Gladewater. Andand then in ah.....May I had to help provide security for Adam Clayton Powell who visited Jarvis Christian College at Hawkins, Texas. They was afraid some.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was a thrill wasn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT:afraid somebody was going to knock him off you know up there and had been a trouble maker. And ah... so any how these were assignments that we....we was up there mainlywell we was up there for security reasons, there's no question about it, because ah....you couldn't tell, you know, there was so much going on then. And ah....had a jail break in Marshall, another jail break, and we picked up a couple there.

qqq And ah....ah....in the summer of 1970 ah.... I worked one of the dernest ah...ah...most gruesome ah....assaults and rape cases that I've ever....ever worked in my life, and I've worked several. This ah....there was a young couple in the East Texas area down here ah....had parked and ah....out in a rural area and there was two blacks ah....ah....assaulted them, took them hostage. Ah....they just....they kept them for hours, probably like four hours or better out here in the country and had them both disrobed and ah....they both raped the girl andand they both forced the boy to have sex with the girl. They just forced every kind of act that's imaginable that you....a lot of things you wouldn't even think about on these....this young couple. And then took their clothes and their car keys and left them out there, they didn't leave them with any clothes on. Well the Sheriff called me ah....the next morning and ah....of course I went up there andand we started working on the case and ah....it was ah....ah.... I think it happened.....it did happen on the 7th and the 9th ah....which was two days later, we got some.....and we....you have to have help in cases you got to have....we.....we had done everything....we have....the Highway Patrol, we had the Highway Patrol reviewing all of their warning and arrest tickets for this period of time. We had cities from adjoining around checking their police records for any vehicle being stopped andand ah....and this boy.....we had got a pretty fair description of the vehicle they was driving and of the two subjects. And ah....so we got some....there was a black guy from East Texas working for Fort Worth Pipe and Supply and he come to work on the 9th and told his boss that one of his nephews

from East Texas and a friend of his, had spent the night with him and they'd all got drunk the night before, drinking wine and the boys got to bragging about having a white woman down in East Texas. And talked and laughed about some of the things that they put this couple through. So this old black told his boss about it the next morning. Well he called the Ranger office in Dallas and ah...talked to Lester Robertson, my sergeant, and ah...of course I had already called Lester. And this is one thing that we generally would do. Anything thing of this magnitude, jail breaks or bank robberies or murders and things that we felt like that Austin might get an inquiry about or the Dallas office might get an inquiry about, as soon as we could as Rangers, we'd call the office and brief them on what was going on. You know, we had 27 school buses blown up here last night and I'm working on it, I went to work at midnight andand you may get a call on it and the paper down here is probably going to say that the Rangers are working on it and Austin may get a call. And so I called.....I'd already reported this crime to Lester, so Lester calls me and tells me what's going on. And ah.... I said, well....he said, 'Do you want us to go over there and talk to him'. And I said, 'No', I said, 'Why don't you just let the Sheriff and I come on up there and we'll talk to him'. So the Sheriff and I went on to Fort Worth and of course this is late in the afternoon and we didn't...we don't get in up there until night. And we con.....Tom Arnold was already a Ranger stationed in Fort Worth then and we con....we contacted Tom and told him we was coming. And....and we got up there and we met Tom at his office and ah....and it's ten, eleven o'clock at night and so ah....Tom wasn't familiar with where the black lived exactly and ah....so we....we just planned a little strategy and decided that we'd be there the next morning when the black came to work at Fort Worth Pipe and Supply and interview him there and see if the people were still there and see what we could find out. So we did, we got us a motel room and went to bed and got up and was out at Fort Worth Supply about six o'clock the next morning. And ah...and the black came to

work about a quarter to seven and we took a statement from him and...a brief statement, and got....he loaned us a key to his....and by this time of course he had identified one of these subjects by name.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were you having to mirandize by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, we hadn't arrested anybody yet.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We're talking to the old man that's ah...that's ah...that's telling about it. So he tells...he gives us the key to his apartment and ah....and describes....draws us a picture exactly where....one of them had already leFort One of the guys....his nephew was still there but the other guy got....went back to Tyler. So he drew us a map of his apartment, gave us a key to the door and ah....and we told him we'd be back and get a sworn statement from him later. So ah....so we left and went to this apartment and ah...and I just eased the key in the door and unlocked it and walked in there and this was guy was laying up there buck naked in bed asleep. Well he woke....I kind of gouged him with a .45 barrel up against his head is exactly what happened you know and woke him up. And ah....then I gave him his miranda warning while he laid there shaking on the bed. And then he told us about it and he told us the ah....who the other guy was and where he lived in Tyler. So we went ahead and got him dressed and...and the Sheriff and I brought him on back to East Texas and Tom Arnold, the Ranger stationed in Fort Worth, he went ahead back to the place and got the ah....an aff....a sworn affidavit from this uncle that....which we got....you know you got to make preparations, just cause somebody tells you something don't mean that you....if you don't do it all and so you got to try 'em later on you know. So we brought him on back and put him in jail in Gilmer and got...and then got a warrant for the second subject who he had named and went to Tyler

and we had him before ten o'clock that night. And then we brought him back to Gilmer. And then I noticed on my reports, and I'd forgot this, ah ...and they both admitted what they'd done.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How much time did they get, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...you know I...I may of brought that report, they got a pretty good load of time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...I want to drop out of sequence here....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I want to tell you just a minute, I want to finish this.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We had ah....ah...this next...second night I spend up there in the Gilmer jail myself, because the Sheriff....well I shouldn't mention Gilmer, I wish I hadn't of.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It won't be in the book or anything.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right. Anyway, in the jail ah...we had...we had both of them up there in jail by then. and the community had heard about this and this is....this is a horrible thing, it was a....it was a horrible thing. You...there's not a woman anywhere, or a man, that could go through any....any more horrible deal than these people went through. And anyway, I spend an additional night up there just for security reasons. You know, cause they was afraid something was going to happen up there and ah...we..we...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Nothing did?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, nothing....nothing happened. Now, what was your question?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....your opinion, your thoughts andabout the mirandizing.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn't like it. And I still don't like it. I don't think there's....I just cannot understand why in the world that we as police officers have to set down here and hold some ah...guys hand that has committed the kind of crime that we were talking about here and tell 'em,

you don't have to tell me anything at all and anything you say can be used against you in court. If a son-of-a-gun has got...is mean enough to get out there and commit a crime like this, his rights ought to be taken away from him the minute that he's....ah...becomes a suspect in this thing. We're not going to go....I have never sent the wrong man to the penitentiary and I'm not going to, you know. And this is what they cry and this is just another step that this country....is what's got this country in the shape it's in today. And I'm sure that they.....it may have been a police officer somewhere down the line that ah....that may have....oh, you know, overstepped his bounds just a little bit. But the way the police officers are today's training there's no reason to have sit down there and give a guy a warning that's just raped your wife or murdered your daughter before take and tell him, you don't have to make any statement at all, any statement you make can be used against you in court, you have a right to have an attorney present, if you don't....can't hire an attorney the State will appoint you an attorney, you can end your interview with us at any time you want to. I mean you can stop talking....that's what we got to tell him before we start interrogating him, did you rape Bobby's sister or whatever.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if I understand this right too, let's say if you got a Mexican and he doesn't speak English you got to get someone there....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Got to get an interpreter, yeah. You got to....

ROBERT NIEMAN:to mirandize him....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:in Mexican or Spanish.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Of course you know, you got to have an interpreter there anyway if you gonna....if you gonna...if your going to interview somebody you got to have an interpreter, so this goes all the way. But this is ah...all right, this is June, on July the 4th at twelve midnight 1970

ah....and this Oklahoma thing just come up right now and...and you may as well compare it, these guys ah...they were...they were militant. They...oh, some of them called themselves Minutemen then and they had different organizations. This one was not tied to any national group, it was just a group of people that lived here in East Texas that hated blacks and they did not want their kids to go to school with blacks. Well I wasn't all that crazy at that time about mine going....and I had a lot of black friends you know, but none of us want change. But their...their purpose in blowing up these school buses...of course they picked July the 4th at twelve midnight, to do it and ah...they was going...they blew up twenty-seven of the Longview Independent School District's school buses sitting right down here on East Cotton Street ah....ah...East Young Street on that school ah...where they still are right today. They walked in there, came in over a fence the back way, and they put dynamite under each one of those truckor ah....buses and set 'em off at the same time. And these were people...the only reason that they did this was to prevent busing of students. They had just started the cross town busing, getting... getting blacks out of the black school and bringing across the northside of Longview to put 'em in the white school, hauling the white kids from northside back to the southside. Which is the most stupidest thing that's ever happen, you know, we're tax payers, it cost money and...and as far as I'm concerned. I don't see anything wrong with schools being integrated but why....you know you....to do it, instead of...you know, trying to figure out some other way. When they build another school well let's build it here somewhere in between you know, where they can....and here we are hauling kids from out here on 16th Street out to Judson and hauling kids from Judson out to 16th Street, just so ah...they can all go to school together. And it...it's not a good idea, but it's not a good idea to come out here and tear up and destroy property and these people did. And then....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was the Klan....were these people Klan related?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they ah...well I don't know that they....we never did prove that they were Klan related, but if there of been an organized Klan around I imagine that they would of belonged to it. But we didn't have....the only Klan involvement I ever got involved in, in East Texas, I had a farmer and a prominent citizen of this county call me one time and he was scared to death. And he said, 'Glenn, there's a...they got a cross they put it up down here in a...on a black Church in our community and it was put here last night and it's sitting there and ah...and it's...it didn't catch fire, and ah...if they intended to burn it'. And he said, 'It's a Klan cross I can tell you'. He was an elderly man. And he said, 'We're all...we don't know what to do'. And I said, 'Well I'....you know I just went over there and took it down you know. What else are you going to do you know. I just drove over there and parked my car and reached and got it and tore it up and stuck it in the back, hauled it off and threw it in the ditch somewhere down the road. But ah...that's the only Klan problems, or so called Klan problems, I ever got involved in. But these people here that we arrested eventually in this thing, but ah...they ah...they had taken it a step further, they had ah....they was having a lot of marches down at Nacogdoches at this time. And they had gone down to Nacogdoches and...and ah...and they had rigged up a....these hand carrying lights, at that time had the big battery in 'em, they was beginning to get popular about that time. And....and they rigged a bomb up in one of those and set it down in an area where the negroes was protesting down at Nacogdoches, hoping that one of them would pick it up and when they turned it on it was supposed to go off, but it didn't. And it was found but there was malfunction in it or something. But this would of killed some people ah....right easy. And they did this and they.... and this was....they were tried for it too. But ah...what happened in this case ah....of course we get called at midnight and ah....I do, and I get with the Longview City police officers here and ah....Clifford Felts and Earl Claxton and I think Travis Puckett, I know Travis was there, and Roy Stone. Of course Roy was

the Police Chief and Roy naturally was out there too. Well we got ah...we got the boxes and as soon as daylight came well we gathered a lot of evidence. I got some pictures there of the buses, some hard copies, andand ah...we took pictures and measured and did what you was supposed to do at a crime scene, try to gather any evidence, and did gather some. But ah...eventually ah....Roy Stone and I went to Shreveport, I think a day or two after that whatever, and ah....found out where the dynamite was shipped to Shreveport and we found out that the salesman ah...ah...grocery salesman and meat salesman and one of these people here was involved in the Pines Catering service out here, Hayes, it's Land of the Pines Catering Service. I don't whether they was still operating when you was here, but theythey had little trucks that would go around to these construction jobs and sell coffee and ... and ah...sandwiches and candy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They still in business?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah I think so.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And then there was some more people here involved and ah....anyway ah...we...we contacted.....we found out this guy.....and they had just....he had ah....this Mr. Hayes that run this business here had asked this salesman if he could get him some dynamite and he...he bought the dynamite and brought it over here to Hayes. Well you know that's pretty easy, that's cut and dried there. And ah....so we just worked from there on and of course the Federal people got involved in this thing and ah....and this is another funny story ah....we worked so much different than the Federal's do and...and of course I worked with them all the time and we worked together and that's the way you're supposed to do. I...I...I'm a...I've always beenfrom the start of our talks til the end of them your going to find that even after the FBI got after me trying to accuse me of doing something wrong about this guy Mathis, I still contend that we got to work together to try

to solve....you know, give the people the best shake for what they're paying us for. But ah....they got involved in this thing and ah...and Bob Stevens, the agent in Tyler, and I were doing most of the leg work and ah....all of it in fact ah... I mean interviews. And we was....we was making progress and we was making some good progress and ah...and ah....but there was a bunch of agents here, probably twenty-five, twenty, twenty-five and they was all staying out here at the ah....Contessa Inn, it was pretty new then. And ah....so Bob and I get in one afternoon and I II'm telling this for no disrespect I just want to show you, and Mr. Gordan Shanklin was the agent in charge out of Dallas and a fine man and he was down here ramroding this thing. It was a civil rights, they was working on a civil....under civil rights. Attorney General of the United States had said, 'Man we want to do something about this you know'. And....and....and we were having too much problems then with integration all....everywhere, all over the south especially. And they decided to, you know, to get involved in this and ah....so he was directing all the FBI agents and of course they was doing door to door interviews and seeing what people had seen and about this and that. And ah....but we get in one afternoon and some of the agents had been working all day and their in the club there, relaxing for a little while, andand ah... the ah....whoever was waiting on them came over and said, 'Gentlemen over here at the table has bought ya'll drinks'. And they look over there and it's our prime suspect and they....of course they refused and paid for their own drinks andand ah....but they went and reported it to Mr. Shanklin, which is what they should of done. And so....so when Bob and I get in well ah....Mr. Shanklin was....we always have a conference when we'd get in. We was....we'd be in from somewhere after dark til midnight you know, whatever it took, and ah....so anyway, they was waiting on us and we get in and ah....well Mr. Shanklin says, 'Well we got a problem', said, 'They know where we're at and we're fixing to move'. I saidasked me....he asked me said, 'What do you think about it'. And he told me....told

me the story and suspects in there in the bar and wanting....he knows that we're here, offered to buy the agents a drink and of course they refused. And ah.... I said, 'Well Mr. Shanklin', I said, 'I live at 317 Ruthlynn Drive, I'm listed in the telephone book and ah....and I'm not going to move you know, and so ya'll do what you want to'. Well they up and moved over here to the Holiday Inn on Hwy 80 and you know, in Longview, Texas and you get that many FBI agents, cars all look just alike, plain black tires, no hubcaps you know I mean no ah....wheel covers. But anyway, they....they moved and I'm sure that, that was part of his instructions too. But I didn't move you know, I'm still living out there in fact. But we...we made a case on these people and we even found out where they stored their dynamite and I've got some aerial pictures, it was.... it was up here inout of Orr City. Got up there and when we arrested the principle....the leader of the thing well we took some of his keys, he had a key ring, he was sitting on a stool at home when we arrested him, Mr. Shanklin, myself and Bob Stevens and another agent I guess went out there and got him. And....and ah....he had a few keys, well they left most of them, but we was ah....we went on up and tried to find the lock, they had....after we got on 'em and before we found where they hid their dynamite, they went up there and blew it up, destroyed it. They had it buried out on a farm up there. And ah....and it was locked and covered you know and ah....and they'd built a pretty nice storage place for dynamite, especially....and no telling what they'd of done later see. I mean they....these guys if they hadn't got caught, would of....might of blown a school up later, I mean you know, get to talking about it and getting upset and no telling what they would of done. And these are hard working people now and all of them had jobs. And...and...and worked in the community pretty good, but they just despised black people. And they were just so possessed with this that theyain't no telling what they of done. Cause they... they was....you know why would

they have a dynamite storage up here in Upshur County....place, if that was all they was going to do, just blow up these buses down here see.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They never would admit to more planned bombings though?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, oh no, no they....we never did ah....we never did get anything out of them even. We had to use accomplice testimony from some of the people that was working with them andand....for evidence as...as...as physical evidence about the dynamite and so forth and where they were of course, at night and things like....of this nature. And people that had seen them and that they told they was going to do this to. But this just goes to show you that ah....you know, I was surprised and I think like the world was surprised that ah....that this thing turned out up in Oklahoma City like it did you know. But ah.... I should of known because even this case here, you know, thesethese guys were upset and ...andand they just.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well...does it ever cease toyou know, it's almost amazing to me how ah....for lack of terminology I guess, how dumb these people can be. I mean they leave a box there where they bought the dyn....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:leave a trail literally a blind man could follow. Do they just think that you guysthat you're stupid?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think that they're that dumb. I think that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or think you're that dumb?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think they're that dumb, I think they're so possessed in what they're doing that they can't see the forest for the trees. They are....and....and see you and I have never done anything like this and we've never even thought about doing anything like this. But they get so possessed and ah....look at what we're fixing to do, it's July the 4th, man we've been

flying the flag all day and we probably we had us a beer or two and....and man we're going to....we're going to....Longview is going to know that the 4th of July means something to us true ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Americans.

GLENN ELLIOTT:rebels. And ah....and they did it. And not thinking.

ROBERT NIEMAN: For their fifteen minutes of fame.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And not thinking about, well now look it here, these boxes ...or why didn't do this or why....but you know they just did it and they did what theyand they thought, well if he don't tell and I don't tell nobody will ever know who did it you know. But I mean, that's not always the way it works you know. Cause neither one of those guys ever copped out to....admitted it, they pled not guilty and was tried in Court. And ah...of course I guess you remember now I got a letter from..... I think Hoover wrote me a nice letter andafter this thing. I did a lot of work with those officers and this was a....and we tried 'em in Federal Court in Tyler, Texas and ah....and they sent somea prosecutor down from Washington, D.C. to prosecute the case. Now I didn't think that was proper, but ah....cause we had peopleRobby Hadden was the United States Attorney for the Eastern District of Texas , a very capable hand, but ah....that's another thing about the government. See that's... I think that's part of the reason that we're getting so much heat with the government is that go to extremes about things they do like that you know. We didn't need somebody from Washington, D.C. coming down here to try these people in Tyler, Texas when we had a whole room full of United States Attorneys over there you know. And ah....but it's just another way that they do things that ah....that aggravate people see. And ah...I'm not all for everything the government does, but I'm sure not for blowing it up you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how...how much time did these people get?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll have to look, I think they got about twenty-five a piece.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Are they out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, they've been out a good while. Oh you know, people don't stay in the pen long any more, they...and they're making good citizens for it I know right now. I run into one....one of them at a funeral here a year or two ago, funeral home visitation and ah....we visited and he knows I was instrumental in him getting caught, but he knows he was wrong you know. We all know when we do things wrong. I...I...it don't bother me about....that never bothered me about running into somebody that I've sent to the pen, cause I ended up....like I said, I haven't sent the wrong man to the pen and I ain't going to you know. And that's not the thing to do. Ah....Mathis gets in the picture again on August the 6th, I think I arrest him for stealing a house trailer over in Louisiana. And ah....I told you and Bob the other day, we don't have this on tape about old Red and we didn't tape it about him boxing those guys and the pistol going off?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, we were just talking about that....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well I noticed that happened on....I'd been on vacation....I'd been on vacation the week of August the 29th which was a Saturday and I...this is interesting, I...and of course I've enjoyed looking through my old reports, I got tired. But for some reason or other Red calls me and he and I are meeting up at Lake O' Pines to talk over....it was probably this Mathis deal, because we...we was trying to watch him pretty close. But anyway, I'd been on vacation and ah...Red calls me and so I was up at the cabin waiting on him and you don't have to wait on me very long and you don't Red or very many other Rangers. But I'm sitting out there under the patio and it's August and I probably got me a drink of ice water or something and ah....and I hear the dernest bang you ever heard and ah...and then about the time that died down I heard another one. And I could tell it was a large caliber weapon and so I go to my car radio. And I said, well doggone

I'm going to see if I can get hold of Red. And I called and called a couple of times, Red gets on the radio and he cleared his throat and he said, 'Come over here to the dump ground', he said, 'I run into some old boys over here', said, 'They stole a car', and said, 'They give a little trouble', said, 'Come on over here and give me a hand'. Well I got over there, he had three of them laying on the ground and two of them he'd busted up beside the head with that .44 magnum and it went off.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This was a revolver, not an automatic?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Had his...had his finger on the trigger obviously, he had to, that's the only way....he said he didn't, but that's the only way it could of gone off. But needless to say they was pretty subdued by the time I got there. And of course we had to take 'em on into Jefferson, they was in a stolen car, it was two men and a woman is what it was. And they was...ah...they was hippie looking people and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: How did....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Red had just run into them on a country road coming in up there and thought...decided he'd...said, they're out of place you know. And he ran a check on the car and it was stolen, so he just pulled 'em over and stopped 'em you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I assume that besides busted eardrums and concussions, they had some pretty good powder burns.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh they was...we tried to interrogate 'em and they couldn't neither one of them even understand what we was trying to do. Ah...had another jail break in Carthage and ah...assisted in that. Ah... had to go to Austin September the 4th to another Pop Festival, about like that one up at Lubbock only it was a little more organized and the weather was much better for them. And ah...ah...I noticed here I've got a note in the last of September Mathis was running wild, stealing tractors and trailers and ah... equipment.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he'd built a....in a picture you showed me here earlier which ah...he'd built himself a special trailer to haul....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah he'd ah....we recovered a trailer he had built up at Texarkana, in fact we watched 'em build it. We knew who was building it and where it was being built and we watched it while it was being built. And it was a van type trailer made out of a house trailer frame, had three axles under it, or four, and ah....he'd ah...had ramps where he could...he could...he could load three pretty good sized tractors in that thing and just shut the doors and drive it down the road. Most of the time he'd steal a truck anyway and this trailer didn't have any....I'm sure they never had registered it. But ah...he would not have registered it in his name you know, he'd of got a fictitious tag and put on it, if he got one. Ah....July the 31st raided a gambling joint in Kilgore and arrested nine. Ah....provided security again for President Nixon on October the 28th, didn't say where ah....or it does on the report. Worked a drug store....some drug store burglaries in Carthage, arrested three suspects and cleared nineteen safe burglaries in East Texas in ah....in September of that year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You...you....we started to mention once and we never...and we ended our interview that night, how do you peel a safe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, everybody....most of the peel 'em different you know. But the first thing ah...ah...most burg....safe burglars....of course safe burglaries it's just about a thing of the past, like a lot of other things now. But they...the first thing they'd do would knock the knob off, which is the...the knob is the...is the dial. And there's a locking pin, that...that....that dial right directly behind it ah... regulates the locking pins. And the first thing they'd....most of them would do, is knock that knob off and they'd try to punch that pin. If you knock that pin you get a punch and hit it and knock it clear out, well all those locking bars will come in then see, they're...they're made to

come in against this....this pin as you turn it and it's got grooves in it and it lets those locking bars that go into the doors, from the door into the outer ah....the frame of the safe you know, you know how they're designed, they got those little locking bars that go all the way around the door into the outer part of the safe you know. And when a doors closed and the locking pins are in well you can't open it and when you dial it right and those pins fall in place well you can open it. Well if they...they'll try to punch that pin first and that...if they punch it clean it goes all the way out, then those pins will drop down and they can open the door. And most of them will try that first and of course that's the reason they put the gas canisters behind the pins in the safe. I don't know whether you ever noticed it, but a lot...all the old safes had a tear gas canister right behind the pin and if you punched that pin and you break that glass and then of course tear gas would get....but old Charles Mathis knew how to do that. He'd urinate on a handkerchief and...and put it over his face and just keep on working. And ah...but then after they get that off they generally ah...if...if they didn't open the door then, then they'd start at the upper right hand corner or the lower corner and they'd just take a sledge hammer and hit it pretty close to the corner up there where it would crimp the corner right down below it you know. And soon as they'd crimp that corner out, they'd get a bar in there and force it and starting popping those rivets around that door. And once they...you start popping those rivets, well the more you pop well ah...I guess the easier it is no doubt. And they'd just peel that door back and then beat that fire clay out and get in there and forcibly that lets those locking bars loose and they open the door. It's a lot of work to peeling a safe now, even if you know how. But see most of them was doing it in an air conditioned building you know and at night and nobody was around and...and ah...it beat ah...picking cotton and ah...for a living. Ah....I noticed in November ah...had another...another tire burglary ah... had a load of truck tires out of ah....stolen in Louisiana and he got...they got after him over here at Kilgore and they just opened up Interstate

good...that exchange over there. And he was riding up around that and he finally abandoned his truck and ran. And we got the old boy identified and this is another case where you just...every once in awhile you've got to work with the old thief you know. And ah....I know this case here....a lot of folks don't understand this and...and I always took pride in being able to....but I made contact...we...we got him identified and we was pressuring his girlfriend pretty heavy up at Greenville, Texas. And ah....had the officers up there watching for him and...and we had some folks watching for him....he had some kin folks down in Louisiana and I think this old boy was just out of the pen and hadn't been home long and he got involved in stealing again. And ah....so....so I don't remember just how all this...the details about this but ah...I do know that ah... I established contact with him by telephone. And ah....he ah...told me he said, 'Mr. Elliott, I know you got my truck and I know you've got...ya'll are looking for me', and said, 'I know I'm going back to the penitentiary', and said, 'I know that the officers in Greenville are watching my girlfriends house'. And he said, 'I'd like to make a deal with you', said, 'If you'll let me go spend the night with my girlfriend I'm not going to tell you where I'm calling from', but said, 'I'll meet you at any given location you give in the morning and surrender'. And he said, 'I just want to have one night with my girlfriend'. And of course I don't know where he's at you know and...and...we was still looking for him, been looking for him for a week. And I said, 'I tell you what I'll do', and called him his name, I said, 'Meet me at the bowling alley there on...', I remembered there was a bowling alley there in Greenville and knew what street it was on at that time, I done forgot now, but it was prominent, a big place and I said, 'At seven o'clock in the morning and I'll call the officers and tell them to ease off'. I called Greenville detectives up there and he was stealing from them too and they was looking for him, of course they had other things to be doing too you know and they wasn't on twenty-four hour surveillance I don't imagine, but they could of been and it relieved two

officers probably. And I said....I told them what he said and I said, 'I believe he'll do it you know'. Because I'd worked him once before and ah...and he did what he said he'd do and so they said okay. And I said, 'I'll pick him up in the morning at seven o'clock and I'll come on down to the police station and we'll be down there by seven fifteen'. And I was there at seven and she come driving up with him, got in the car with me and we go on out to the police station and he straightened his business up there in Greenville and come on down here and straightened it up here you know. But....see that...you've got to do things like that, well you don't have to do things like that, but if you...if you get your reputation where thieves will tell you something and if you'll do what you tell 'em you'll do, they'll do what....most of them will do what they say they'll do, especially under conditions like that. And he was there, he was there at seven o'clock in the morning, he said, 'I wish you'd of said nine', but I said, 'Well, you know, this is Saturday I need part of the day off'. Ah...we went to Paris ah...had trouble in the schools up at Paris in November of 1970.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Racial problems?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And Red was back in the lime light again, we have a little fun. I always...Red and I were ...after...I think by...let's see by...no Mitchell was still around....but anyway, we was all up there and I'll tell you what happened. We got up there and ah...and they was having some...thought they was having more problems than what they really were and of course you know they...sometimes you over react, but if you've got some problems in a big school system and think you're going to have....the blacks and whites are going to get together and have a race riot, well you better have some people around. So we spend the night in the Grand Jury room that night at the courthouse in Paris, Texas. The Sheriff had got us some cold cuts andand ah...we was just sitting around there waiting to see what was going to happen you know and we'd been

sitting there all day and this was up into the evening. And so he says, 'Ya'll come on down and I'll...we're going to eat something'. And he fixes a nice supper you know, that you could put together like that for a bunch of old Rangers and...and ah...so we ...he...he said, 'Ya'll are welcome to stay here tonight, this is a good place and we have this as a headquarters and if we need you well you're right here'. So...so they had facilities there at this time, the Grand Juries and juries in courthouses were still sleeping in the courthouse, the jury would, they wouldn't stay in a motel they'd stay in the jury room. And this is what this was, the Grand Jury room and the jury room and ah...there wasn't any doorknobs on the outside of the doors. And Red gets up, Red sleeps in the nude, winter, summer, Red Arnold when he goes to bed he goes to bed in the nude and ah...and this is...and I imagine he did all the time he was in the Marine Corp. And ah... he ah...he gets up to go outside to go to the bathroom, you got to go outside to go to the bathroom, of course there's no women up there. Red gets up early like I do and he got up about four o'clock, four-fifteen and I...I was sleeping right beside him and he can't....he can't be quiet you know, he gets up and starts grunting, coughing and ah...and spitting andand kicking things around. And he goes out to use the bathroom and ah...and he shuts the door and there's no knob on it. Of course we have...this is fun see, and he comes back and I can hear him out there and ah...and of course I wouldn't let him in. We all had a big laugh about it you know, but this of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet he didn't think it was very funny.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, heck no, but he of laughed at us. Ah...ah...I had another leFort..dumped in Harrison County and ah...this time. And then we're getting right now to...on December the 20th, 1970 is the last thing that Charles Robert Mathis ever stole and ah...we had been watching him and ah...and the DPS had developed during this time what they call an Organized Crime Unit. We was having all this vice in Texarkana and here and other parts of the state you know, Midland and

ah...ah...Big Spring and Galveston and you know, all over the state, there was areas that there's always been some vice you know. And ah...Fort Worth and Dallas and Houston and ah....anyway they organized an Organized Crim Unit and it was a good idea, it was...we had some Rangers in it, we had some narcotic people in it, we had some intelligence people in it. And ah...and they ah...so I called on Austin to get some help from the Organized Crime Unit for us to keep Charles Robert Mathis under surveillance for awhile. Cause we knew he was stealing, just stealing every week you know and stealing a lot. So they ah...this is how we set this thing up and ah...we met with them and ah...they sent some people down here and mainly in Texarkana. And they was the ones that watched 'em build this trailer up there you know. And we knew...we'd follow him, we put a following device on his car and his son wrecked it one night and lost it, it fell off. He lost control of the car and slid into a telephone pole and theand the mag...we'd hang a magnet on the car and use a following device and follow him everywhere he went. And you could stay a safe distance and they weren't fool proof but they were....you know, we were trying to catch him, that's what we were getting paid to do. So they were helping us look for Charles and ah...and then Bob Mitchell and I ah...develop an informant that was running with him. We caught him with a bunch of stolen ah...ah...television sets out a warehouse in ah...Tyler and he'd ah...he'd sold a bunch of them here in East Texas. I mean they stole a whole truck load of new television sets out of a warehouse in Tyler. And ah...so we...he...he became an informant for Mitchell and I and ah...so we was using him pretty regular and ah...he had and ah...here in December they had ah...they had already planned to either go to ah...Huntsville, Decatur or Dallas to steal...they had... they had cased tractor agencies in all three places they thought it would be easy to steal a tractor. They was going to get a ah....they wanted a bull dozer, had it sold and so we contacted the Rangers in Lubbock Company and ah...Houston Company and they were sitting on the tractor agencies...(tape ends)... That was made

up of....well Stuart Dowell was a new Ranger and he was stationed in Dallas and he had been assigned to work the organized crime. And Stuart was ah...ah...working with them on a surveillance, see theythey didn't know them like they did me. I could meet Charles Mathis or he'd see me driving down the road and recognize me ah...in fact they lost him one time in Texarkana and he got away from them and they called me here in Longview. And I said, 'Well I'll be up there in about an hour and we'll find him'. Well, I looked in Texarkana and I met Charles between....him and his two boys, between ah...ah...Linden and ah...and Atlanta and they waved at me. Well I'm driving a hundred miles an hour probably, but they recognized me, they don't know where I'm going, but they recognize....they knew what I was driving. I got on up to Texarkana and Stuart and them was up there and said, 'Well, we've lost him'. I said, 'Well he'll be in Longview in a little while'. 'How do you know'. I said, 'Well I met him down the road here'. So ah...but anyway ah...ah... Stuart was working with the Organized Crime Unit and ah...Bob Mitchell and myself and Red and Max ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Max Womack is on the Ranger by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And we decide to ah...ah...we're going to set on surveillance up at Dallas. And of course we notified the captain, Bill Wilson was captain then. And ah...we had our Christmas party about a week before this up at Lake O' Pines and ah...so ah...we go up there and ah...we sit Saturday afternoon, all night Saturday night and ah....at noon on Sunday, about ten minutes til twelve the phone starts ringing. And it rang and rang and rang and of course we'd already told the dispatcher, DPS dispatcher, where we were, but we wasn't going to answer the telephone you know. If he had any traffic for us well we had radios, we had....we knew it wasn't anybody calling for us, so we let the phone ring. And they was....they was calling to see if there was anybody there see. So here they come in and over the fence and ah....and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mathis and who else?

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...and ah...our informant. And ah...he...he gets away, he runs and gets away and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And this is on Harry Hines?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Harry Hines Blvd. It's ah....anyway we ah...ah...we go through all this and ah...ah...I had my reports here somewhere....oh it's in here. Ah...ah...we go through....we wait on him up there and sure enough they show up and he...he...he gets on this bull dozer and...and they back this tilt bed truck up that belongs to the company, got John Deere written on the side of it and ah...and he loads this thing on there and ah...and after he gets it back up on there and the bed goes down you know, level, well we step out. And he reaches in his....he sees us and...and of course he...I guess he's...yeah, he's still backing because ah...he's watching and he's not looking at us. And so we come outside the building and by the time he turns around it's still running and I think he's got his...probably got his foot on the...ah..on the clutch and...and...and he sees us and reaches down, he's got an old pistol in his belt, and that was all for him. And then of course the tractor was running and...and he...of course when he gets shot well he...his foot comes off the clutch and he falls against one of the clutches that guides it and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Steering brakes?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, steering brakes and it ah...it turned over. Well, they call those clutches, they're not brakes though.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, yeah that's right.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now did you....

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...I used to run a Caterpillar you know...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah that's right.

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...when I was in Washington you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was you and Max ah...

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Red.

ROBERT NIEMAN: ...and Bob and Red.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. And now....

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Stuart was outside with a....he had...we had invited Dallas police to be there with us. And they were there, but they were not at the site. And at that time, this was about Christmas, Dallas police had a policy that if any of their officers...and they probably still got it...were involved in any kind of shooting...and we thought we were going to have trouble with Mathis...that they were automatically suspended til after the Grand Jury met. Well these officers didn't want to lose any time you know, and during Christmas and we all...you know...and...and we talked about this. They said, 'We'll go in where ya'll want us to'. And so we decided well all right you and...ya'll stay with Stuart on the outside and if they get away...they come in here and for some reason jump the fence and start running, well we'll call ya'll and you can get some Dallas officers around here and we'll surround this building. And of course we don't want to tie up everybody in Dallas just to try to catch one thief you know and it wasn't necessary. But this was the way the situation was set up and that's the way it was operated. So we...after it was over with, we called Stuart and he brings the officers in you know then and of course Dallas makes the investigation, Dallas PD, and we go on down to the Dallas police and make our affidavits, sworn affidavits, of what happened out there and then we go on out to the office and report to Lester and...and come home.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was this not Slick Alfred's area?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Slick was stationed there in Dallas, yeah Slick would liked to have been there and so would Lester and every Ranger in the company would like to have been there you know. Here's the report that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hang...hang on just a minute.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's good...no there's no need in that cause it ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Here's what I...I wrote in my report on Dec....Sunday, December 20, 1970, that's five days before Christmas, "In Dallas continuing surveillance on prospective spot for tractor theft with Ranger Arnold, Mitchell and Womack. Attempting to apprehend Charles Robert Mathis and unknown subject on burglary"...an unknown subject on burglary scene, oh okay...an unknown subject. "Mathis shot after pulling a pistol at investigating officer, subject deceased. At Dallas PD making statements to homicide investigators, to Dallas office with Sergeant Robertson reporting incident. Left Dallas to Longview". And that ah...that's the report for that day and that ought to end...that ends 1970. Although the next day, which was Monday, we recovered two John Deere tractors right here in Longview and a GMC truck and trailer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Mathis involved with those?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and...and...and we worked...next...and then on Thurs...on Tuesday, we recovered over a hundred thousand dollars worth of equipment in Miller County, Arkansas. On Wednesday we're back in...we're still up at Texarkana recovering property. On Thursday the 24th ah...ah...we're still recovering property. Take off...we took off Christmas Day and on Saturday the 26th went to Fannin County and recovered some ah...stolen property.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the people he was selling this to knew he was a thief?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did...was there any charges ever brought against any of those people?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. You know, they'd ah...we...it's hard to get anybody to take a...receive and conceal ...we... I don't think we'd ever got a case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn why don't ah...we're going to meet Mathis sha...ghost or whatever again later on, but that's further on down the road. I do want to...you brought up one subject tonight that I do want to cover a little bit more, you mentioned that Stuart Dowell was ah....on Organized Crime...ya'll had some organized crime here. Of course most people I think, when they think of organized crime, they think of the Al Capone's and the Lucky Lucciano's and all this sort of thing. Was there any of the ah...well for lack of terminology, we're going....big time organized crime here in East Texas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. this is what...this was the big time organized crime for East Texas. This man here and his gang, was stealing every week, sometimes twice and they was just tearing these people up and they were organized. In other words, they had...they had a trailer to haul it in, they had a place to sell it in Oklahoma and Arkansas and Louisiana and Texas, in fact this bull dozer was going to Marshall, Texas. I knew exactly where it was going.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when I say big time, let me rephrase that, was there any Mafia here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no, we didn't have any Mafia here. What we was...they called it an organized crime because we had a gang operating out of Austin, like the Jerry Ray James gang, we had people operating...and..and it was up to the individual Ranger out in the field, or DPS employee, whoever initiated these things, we used them again down here. I don't know who else used them. We had another guy here that we used 'em later and...and ah...I had a guy ah....and we'll get into that a little bit later....I had a guy that Mitchell and I got out of jail...in jail over at

Henderson, Texas for stealing oil field equipment and we had a guy here that was tearing the country up, Louisiana and Texas and ah....New Mexico and ah...all over Texas from Midland to Corpus to Houston to....back to Longview and that's all he was doing was stealing. Well we call that organized so we got on him, we got this guy out of jail and that son-of-a-gun left and went to California and then we had to get a friend ours to fly us out there and get him. And ah....ah....and he just turned us around but ah....he....of course hehe made....he went ahead and made the pen, we got this guy later. But we tried to concentrate on somebody that was hurting....and we called it organized because if a guys stealing every day or every week and that's all he's doing, he don't have any visible means of....of....of support but stealing, then ah....that's organized as far as we was concerned.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: And then we was using these guys and it was a good thing .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know.....this was before your time, this was near the end I think of Gonzauillas' career, Mickey Cohan ah....Mafia figure from LA came into Dallas and allegedly was going to try to set Dallas up and he got run out, did you in ah....Company B area or at least Dallas, were you aware or were you ever involved in any other attempts by the Mafia or

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, you know ah....ah.... I was reminded by ah....ah....Benny Bennion that ah.... I went with Captain Crowder to his place one time and Captain Crowder told him to leave and get out of Fort Worth. And Benny was running a hor....owned the Horseshoe out at Las Vegas but he was....he was coming in spending a lot of time in Fort Worth gambling up there and he just ren....he had an apartment up there all the time and a bunch of the real rich people up there, they'd get up there and play ah...you know, have a big poker game and dice games and...and ah....and of

course that was....that was really not organized, that was old Benny just doing it himself because he was a native from up there to begin with.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you think people get lulled ah....maybe not lulled to sleep, but have a false sense of security, well it's not the Mafia so it's not really organized crime, these people were organized like you said.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah....sure. Well yeah, people do but

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean it doesn't matter whether it's

GLENN ELLIOTT:and...and again...and again there had to be a name for this unit. It was federally funded and ah...so they had....they named it Organized Crime, it could of just as well been named something else you know, but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if you get something stole from you or swindled or killed, it doesn't matter (unintelligible)....you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And if they keep a doing itand if they keep a doing it, it's the same bunch a doing it then they got to be organized and they're hurting us you know. And we're getting hurt more by ah...stuff like that probably than....than organized crime was. Cause organized crime as....as we knew it back in the Capone days was just boot legging and prostitution and....and the book making and maybe putting the squeeze on people.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well at this time are you starting yet to see the gangs as we know them today? Have they started infiltrating?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this....yeah, this is a.....this was a gang of thieves right here we....that ran with Charles Mathis and this was a gang ofthis guy (unintelligible)..Morgan the next one we got on, he...he was getting known thieves to operate with him to do the stealing and he was doing

the selling and ...and ah....and it's a gang. They're not the kind of gang that go out here and you know, shoot everything up because we hadn't got

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kill somebody for initiation?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. No that....we hadn't got into that and I never did get into that on my part. This is something that's all recent you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we had a good one tonight Glenn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I thought so. Do you want to....do want to go....you want me....(session ends)

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And you know I discussed with him, you know, get...you got to get you a job and go to work. Also I found...I noticed that this Judge Roe case was in 1972, did we cover any of it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No we have not. Ah...I...we...I thought maybe Roe might of been in '66, have you ever found those....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No ah...I haven't found 'em yet. But ah...Judge Roe case...we can go over that briefly if you want.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, now that happened in Uncertain, Texas right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Uncertain, Texas right on the banks of Caddo Lake. In fact Judge Roe ah...and that was a nickname, he was a caretaker for the Dallas Caddo Club. That's a club down there that ah....a bunch of folks out of Longview and Dallas and Fort Worth area belong to for many years and they had a...a house for the caretaker and they had a guest house down there. And ah....ah....well all the caretaker would do was arrange guides, they'd call ahead and say we're going to be down for the weekend and make reservations for the guest house and ah...and lodge. I think it accommodated more than one family probably, it was a pretty good sized building. Anyway, and

he'd get 'em guides and everything. Well Judge Roe had heart trouble and ah...this shows you kind of how we get involved sometimes with things and how East Texas law enforcement...and I'm sure it happens all over the state that...it has....I don't think it's happening as much now because the officers are trained more, but this is ah....in an area where the officers that....the first officers at the scene didn't have that much criminal ah....background. And too, they took for granted and sometimes we...you know it's pretty easy to take for granted what happens and...and that's...consequently we don't have...sometimes the investigations are not as thorough as they should be because you draw conclusions because it's well known down in that area that Judge Roe had a heart...had heart trouble. And it was also well known that Judge liked to take a little nip, in fact about a half a pint a day and ah...for his heart condition you know. And ah....so what happened down there they ah....Judge Roe was found one morning laying outside of his house and ah....whoever reported him, some neighbors, somebody down in that area passed by and he hadn't been up to the store where he usually comes or something, somebody was down to check on him, I don't remember the details of that. But anyway, the Judge was laying out in the yard and they called in and the Sheriff sends a deputy by there and well, Judge Roe has had a heart attack. Here he is laying outside, didn't make it in the house last night. Well they called the Justice of the Peace over at Waskom, Judge comes over, 'Yeah Judge Roe's had a heart attack you know call Sullivan Funeral Home and tell them to come get him'. Sullivan comes down and they start loading Judge Roe and they get...get him up on the ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gurney?

GLENN ELLIOTT:gurney, whatever you call it, to transport him, to put him in the hearse and one of them gets blood on his hands. And they get to looking and of course you saw the pictures of Judge Roe, he'd been shot in the chest with a...with a shotgun. And ah...but this is ah...what's

unique about this case, all the time that I worked as an investigator and a Ranger for the DPS we used polygraph on a regular basis. And you know, it's a good tool, the polygraph is a good tool. You can't...you can't put all your eggs on the polygraph basket because I've had operators miss cases lots of times. But it's a good tool to what you want to know if it works and it worked in this case here. But what we did, this field deputy that was....lived in Karnack and a Constable...the field deputy's name was Shivers, M.F. Shivers who was later elected Sheriff over there. And really this case got him elected, it and the fact that Ed Earl Franklin had, had a few problems and it came out. And there was a Constable from Elysian Fields, Texas named Buck Little and Buck was ah....liked the Rangers ah...always did. Buck was one of our stronger supporters and ah....and I worked with Buck a whole lot. Buck ran his business down there at Elysian Fields and was a pretty fair country investigator and took care of his....and he'd work, he was not lazy. And you know how I am, I like to have somebody with me that's ready to go. So anyway, Buck and M.F. Shivers and myself started working this case on Judge Roe after they found out he'd been murdered and they called me right away. And ah.... so we questioned everybody that lives in Uncertain, Texas. At that time.....and most of them were black, I think there's about 60 or 70 people down there that live there within the limits of Uncertain. And ah....and of course everybody down there knew everybody you know and it's not unusual to hear gun shots down there at night because there's a lot of deer poaching going on down there. Those folks down there want.....get ready for the deer meat well they just get out there and kill 'em a deer and run off down there and dress it and put it in their deep freeze and go on and forget about it you know. So nearly everybody in Uncertain heard the gun shot that night and they were.....most of them were watching TV, Paladin, that's when Paladin was on TV and of course we're dealing with blacks mostly. And of course it's fun to question blacks, they're watching Paladin and playing dominos over at so and so's house and

....and this is what we was doing. Well this is how you investigate a crime you know. You ah....you got to find out....eliminate everybody in the area ah....and a stranger coming in to Uncertain going....sticking out like a sore thumb you know. So ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, you got to be wanting to go to Uncertain to go to Uncertain.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah and that's the only place you....as far as you can go when you get there. So ah....anyway ah....we start talking to everybody that lived down there. Of course Shivers knew a bunch of them and the ones that Shivers didn't know that Buck knew and the ones that they didn't know we got acquainted with. And ah....so every....we had talked to all the white people and all the black people that lived down there. And the people that live there and tell you who lives there you know, I mean they....they know everybody by their first name and they know all about their business. And we had one young man ah....named Alton Charles and Alton was a high school senior at Karnack High School, his daddy's name was Budalim Charles and he was fishing guide down there, pretty mean and ah....but a good fishing guide. Had a reputation of being pretty mean, tended to his own business, quiet and didn't go toover to somebody's house and watch TV and plays dominos at night, he went home. And ah....so we found out that everybody was telling a story, bunch of 'em says I'm over at John Henry's house playing dominos, watching Paladin and so when we get around to Charles, that's where he says he was. Said, 'I went over to John Henry's house and they was playing dominos and watching TV'. He didn't....you know you ask somebody what they're watching, you know you got to find out what TV....what you're watching. Of course that's about the onlyyou couldn't get very many channels then you know and Paladin was a pretty popular show as you remember. And so we found athe only discrepancy we found, the people that was over there playing, we went back to see them again after....they said, well now..... I think there was nine people at that house and everybody over there said that's who was here. So we go

back and they don't mention Alton Charles. So Alton when we get to him he tells us that's where....go back and ask them again. 'No sir, Alton wasn't over here', said 'He come over here to get buckets of water, cause they ain't got water over at their house', and said, 'They come over here and get water'. And they said, 'He come over here and got two buckets of water but he didn't....before night, but he didn't come in the house and he wasn't here'. Well everybody said that. So get....of course Alton Charles is....we...looked like we found him storying to us see. So we go back to see him and question him again and ah....'No, I was over there, that's where I was'. And ah....so we arranged....asked him to take the polygraph test. At that time we have to go to Dallas, Texas to administer the polygraph, the closest operator that we had, DPS. In fact I don't think at that time there was.... I think there was one guy down at Nacogdoches that began to do a little personal polygraph ah....examination down there, but

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there anyone in Shreveport and if yes, could you have used him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well yes we could have but ah....we didn't ah....ah.....you know you'd had....of course number one you got to pay and you don't have to pay cause we go to DPS. And of course most of these county budgets they're.... they're trying to watch their budgets you know andand of course they go to....ride with me to Dallas you know. So anyway we decide to go to Dallas and ah....we used....we used the crime lab over at Shreveport....Bossier City is actually where the forensic crime lab for that area was and ah....and they was good, but ah....you get into Court you've got a problem getting....subpoenaing somebody to Court. Of course you can't use polygraph in Court anyway. But back to this case, we get Alton Charles up to Dallas, the District Attorney goes with us ah....Shivers, Buck Little, Alton Charles and myself, five of us. And ah....so we get up to Dallas and we hook him up on the polygraph and the polygraph operator of course told him what he was going to ask him andprior to the questions, like they always do. And

ah....so he gets him in and hooks him up and ah....and he'd already made out the list of questions and then he said the first question was, 'Is your name Alton Charles'. And pause, 'Yes', you know. 'Are you a senior at Karnack High School'. 'Yes'. That's the questions he told him he was going to ask him. 'Have you ever drank a coke cola'. 'Yes'. 'Did you kill Judge Roe'. 'Yes'. That is the only time in all of my career and there ain't no telling how many people....I've carried as many as four people to Dallas at one time to take a polygraph test and....that ever did this. Coped out to the crime. Well I don't care.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Have you ever heard of any....anybody else having that happen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I hadn't heard of that happening, I really hadn't. I'm sure it probably has, but I...I've notI've not heard of it. Surely it's happened somewhere in the world you know. But this guyand so of course the operatorwell we've got a two way mirror there, we're looking in and watching this. So I'm thinking that....I....I hadn't worked with Shivers and I don't want this in my book exactly that away but I want to get this out some way though to tell ah....Shivers at that time hadn't had any experience in criminal work, he was a field deputy but he was a good conscientious, honest, hard working man. And he was a resident deputy in that area and he wanted to clear this crime up and I respected him for it and he was willing to work whatever hours I wanted to. But anyway, I think.....and we use this as strategy a whole lot.... I'd never metthat was the only time I'd ever seen Alton Charles in my life. He knew Mr. Shivers, he knew him as a field deputy and knew him as a bread man before that, he'd known him all of his life. Because he was raised down there andand....and ah....Shivers lived there in Karnack. And so I thought well now he'll tell Shivers about it and ah...so I said, 'Shivers why don't you go on in there and get him to tell you about it and then we'll take a statement from him'. Well Shivers goes in andand he starts asking, he said 'You ah....understand you killed Judge Roe and want to tell about it'.

'Yeah'. 'You was standing there at the corner of his house when he come in, in his car wasn't you'.

'Yeah'. Toward the northeast corner of the house whatever....well it was actually the southwest corner. And what he was doing is leading him see, I mean...and ah...and I'm sitting in there listening just about to blow my I....he asked him three questions and I just come out and walked in the room with them. Of course the polygraph operator had already left you know and ...and just he and....but we was all in there listening to him interrogate too you know. And I said, 'Mr. Shivers I understand....', we didn't want him to know that we had the mirror and we was listening, cause you know, you don't want them to know that, that's....that's.....cause they get....if a guy knew that when he was taking the test it might affect him some way. But anyway I said, 'I understand Alton's getting his business straightened out and I hate to interrupt ya'll but why don't you just let him sit down here and tell us all about it'. Well he did see. Then we knew that he did it you know. But it....you know this is something you do in interrogation that you... you just can't lead somebody. And Fletcher didn't realize he was leading him. But if you ask him leading questions and all he does is answer yes and no, well then it's....there ought to be a doubt in your mind whether he did it or not. But if he can sit there and tell us, yeah I did it, I was standing at the north....southwest corner of the house, I shot him one time, I threw the shotgun shell in the lake....which we really...actually recovered later ah... I used my daddy's shotgun and we got it and made it on ballistics you know and got the ammunition, we found the wadding and we did a bunch of things that ah...corroborated his statement. But we got a statement from him and it was his statement see and it worked out all right. It was a good

ROBERT NIEMAN: I assume the motive was robbery?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they was going to job him and he wouldn't leave home and Judge Roe didn't have any money on him, I think he had four or five dollars. He was going to take his car and go to Dallas, that's what his plans were.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what was his sentence?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...you know I didn't look at that case, but he got a pretty good little bit of time. Of course him being a high school senior and I think he pled guilty, I think he got about 35 years, something like that, probably stayed down there 15 or something like that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So he's probably...he's out by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah this happened in 1970 so that's been 25 years ago. And probably the boy might not ever got in to anything else again. He was not that bad a kid, he just wanted to leave home all of a sudden. He was kind of like his daddy, he was quiet and moody and his daddy was tough on him, I know that. But we came back that night and we drive Karnack and get him, go to Dallas, take a statement, get back to Karnack...Uncertain that night and recover the shotgun. Go to his house and...and ah...and go...of course file on him and take him down there and we get the shotgun from his daddy's house and bring it in that same day before we quit you know. So it was a pretty fair days work. And ah....I...I got to looking back, we're getting into 1971 now and ah....ah....we worked a lot in '70...the first part of 1971, Bob Mitchell and I did and Max and Red some too but ah...Bob....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Max Womack and Red Arnold?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Bob and I ah...ah...started recovering property that Mathis had stolen. And I'm talking about we get....we recovered over a million dollars worth of property.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did Mathis keep a record?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, we...this guy that ah....that turned Mathis for us, this boy that ah....that we made a case on and told us that they was going to steal a tractor either in Dallas or Huntsville or Decatur one, that weekend. And of course we had Rangers in all three places. We was at Dallas and we had folks at Huntsville and Decatur too. They had cased three different tractor agencies and they was going to go to one of them and steal a bull dozer. They already had this bull dozer sold for \$2,500.00, brand new 450C. And ah...so he told us where they'd sold stuff, prior to and a lot of it, before this all came down see. But we didn't want to....we wanted to try to get him first and put him out of business and you know...and quite stealing and then...and then we'd go to ah....ah....and start recovering property. (pause in conversation). All right, you think that...what do you think ...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't mind...I...I...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's just go ahead and finish him up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right. Ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: You're going to have some more....for lack of vocabulary, repercussions on the Mathis case years later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what happened ah....there was an investigation...the FBI made an investigation the same....in 1970 ah....on this death. Some of the family complained and thought that we were a little hasty, but they didn't make any...as strong allegations as they did about oh....15 years later I guess, let's see, now...let's see....no it was about 10 years later I guess. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you just want to wait til you have....go through your file, it'll be in your records won't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, well let's just wait til we get that then.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, cause it'll be in my reports.

ROBERT NIEMAN: All right, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We'll go ahead here with the....anyway ah....we're...we're recovering a whole lot of property and then on the 30th day of ah....we're still in the latter part of 1970, but we're fixing to get into '71 and the 30th of December.....see like Christmas comes along and we're up there at Dallas and you know, the weekend before Christmas and...and you know, I took off Christmas day and we just kept on you know, working and getting stuff together. On the 30th of December, 1970 the Hallsville Bank was robbed and this was a real interesting case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: First State Bank?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. The only bank in...you know they had over at Hallsville. And it was in the old location over there on the highway. And ah...so we had Colorado vehicle that was seen there, a Mustang, Ford Mustang, color white, Colorado seen leaving Hallsville at a pretty fast rate of speed right after the bank robbery. And that's about...and we knew that we had a black person and one of them was dressed like a woman, but they wasn't sure it was a woman. And it could of been a man and they robbed the bank, got a pretty good load of money. And so ah....I got right over there, I...we was in the area trying to recover a piece of...a...a trailer house out there north of Longview and ah....so from this...from Mathis' rounds and ah....so we ride over here to Hallsville and ah...and help with the investigation. And ah...so we decided ah...that ah....we better get some information out on the commercial radio as well as the state radio, so ah...we asked the aid of the radio station there in Marshall and they broadcast this...where we...about this Mustang, Colorado Mustang. And what happened was, after they robbed the bank they had a plan, they drove over here to Longview to a colored honky-tonk out...right out there close to Interstate 20, right off of ah...of

Eastman Road, there's a road goes back to the left down there, right before you get to that Motel out there, you know, at Interstate 20. And ah...and there's a little old...there's a black honky-tonk, been down there for years.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is it right across the street there from that ah...Grondykes?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They call it MaMa's or something....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it's on the other side.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No this is on the east side.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You turn east. Anyway ah....we found out later that ah...they drive over there after they rob the bank and ah....there's a school teacher ah....a black school teacher down there visiting with this guy. It was kind of a cafe and...and what have you. And they hired him ah...this other guy did, to carry... told him he was having car trouble and asked him if he'dthat this woman had to catch a plane out of Dallas and...and he hired him, he had a new pickup, to carry her to Dallas to the airport. And she...he did, and she carried the money, had the money in a bag that they...and I think left him about three or four hundred dollars and he stuck it in the ashtray of that Mustang. And so he set around down there until ah....about middle of the afternoon and he left going....was going to drive to Colorado via Dallas I guess, cause he was going up I-20. And in the meantime of course we'd had this radio station in Marshall broadcasting this, commercial radio, about the bank robbery and looking for a Mustang and two black individuals. And there was a young boy from Waskom, Texas named Henson and ah....he and his mother were going to ah...Dallas and he'd heard this on the radio. And he was...I'm talking about, I think the boy was 12

or 13 years old. And this Mustang passed he and his mother. Well he just started bugging her, said, 'Mother, that's that car they been talking about'. And she tried to talk him out of it and he just kept on and kept on and was very persistent. So she stopped at 271 and Interstate 20 and called the DPS in Tyler and told them. Well they broadcast and a Highway Patrol in Canton stopped this guy. Well he didn't have a driver's license and ah....and he was ah....I believe it turned out he was an escapee from the penitentiary up in Colorado. And ah...they detained him and ah...Bob Stevens, FBI agent, and myself well we...we was a pretty good team, we worked a lot of cases together, bank robberies. And we had the best clearance rate that the FBI had in the United States in East Texas on bank robbery. And Stevens and I, we'd get after them and get them. So we get up there and ah....and ask them to hold this guy and he had money to pay his fine. But they held him til we got there and ah...so we just took him into custody, because there was too much ah....circumstances you know. He couldn't explain what he was doing down here and gave a fictitious name, didn't have any identification and he had this cash in the....in the ah...ashtray of his car. So we brought him back to Marshall and put him in a lineup that night and I think 3 of the witnesses identified him as being....he didn't have any...any ah...disguise or anything on him. Got him identified, so ah....and then he told us about it and gave us the girl's name that was with him and told us the circumstances around hiring this guy to take her to Dallas. So this is the first time I...this is...see this is back in 1970 and I don't ah....there wasn't an area in Texas in 1970 that....that I would not go into by myself if I had a felony warrant for somebody. Ah...it...of course I...I...if I was in a bigger town I'd want some of the officers to go with me so they'd know where to go to see a Judge and...you know, to have some help. But we call Denver and ah....tell them the circumstances, what flight she caught out of Dallas and...and ah...how much money is missing and...and they call...they told the FBI agent that ah....Stevens that ah....she lived in a part of town that the officers wouldn't go in after dark.

And this is in 1970. Man...and you know, like I say, there wasn't any place in Texas that I wouldn't go in 19...but I...you know, I found out now....since then that this would....I'm sure there's parts of Dallas....oh I doubt it, that I wouldn't go in right now, but I...there's some parts that I hadn't got....wouldn't have any business going in. But anyway...but I...you know what....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Don't have your pistol just on cocked.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: There's no lock about it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: This is what I'm....what I'm trying to say is that ah....here's a...it wasn't....this case was not solved by the expertise of Glenn Elliott or Bob Stevens, here's a young....

ROBERT NIEMAN: 12 year old kid listening to the radio.

GLENN ELLIOTT:12 year old kid that was very ah....ah...intense about hearing about this bank robbery and... and...and just bugged his mother til she stopped and called and it solved our case for us. Of course we were asking for help you know and...but we got it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did the people in Denver ever pick her up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. She wasbut see they arrested her the next day and ah...but we never recovered the money, the money was never recovered. And chances are if they could of got on her that night....of course by the next day this guy is....we've got to let him use the telephone you know. And where does he call, he got....he wants to call somebody in Denver you know, cause that's the only place he knows anybody. And of course by that....I mean he calls that night, he gets to use the phone that night you know. So they get in touch with her and she's expecting, you know, somebody when they get there. But the money was never recovered. Which probably if they could of gone into that particular area that night...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Before he called.

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...and just knocked on the door and come in, I've got a warrant for you for bank robbery and ...and they'd probably found the money there. But ah...this ah...this...things like this kind of set us back for a day or two see, because it takes a...but Lloyd Johnson was the Highway Patrolman that arrested this black and Lloyd's later made a Ranger and stationed in Sulphur Springs and made a good Ranger. And ah....so ah....yeah he was escaped from Colorado State Pen, I thought I remember that. And ah...cause like I said, we made identification in a lineup and ah...he admitted it all and ah...so we had a....we had a good day. Ah....but like I said, that was just unheard of for us not to...not to get to go in an area at any time. And then on the first week of January '71 ah...Bob Mitchell and I spent ah...five days and four nights in Ardmore, Oklahoma and ah...gathering up equipment up there. We got stolen equipment from county Judges, from....we found one trailer house that....setting beside the courthouse and the Sheriff was using it for a...an annex to his office. Ah...those people....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now how did he like having to give up his annex?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He didn't much ah...wasn't too crazy about it, but he got it for a bargain you know, so he didn't lose...and the county paid for it, you know, so they didn't lose all that much money. But at that time you could sell just anything in Oklahoma, I think you still, just about, can in parts of it. But I know we recovered ah...over thirty thousand dollars worth of equipment the first day up there. And ah...so we're back in Oklahoma again on the 18th day of January and spend two more days and nights up there. Ah...then ah...I've got another murder that comes up here in East Texas ah...and ah...it was a Wright murder and it was a...it was a guy...it was a very interesting case, it was a guy that was a...and I worked on it a long time too and ah...T.O. Wright, he was a ah....ah....inspector for the fed...federally approved inspector for work on airplanes. In other words

he...after a maintenance man overhauled an airplane for whatever problem, engine, structure, wheels, whatever, well he had to inspect it and approve it and certify it and then it goes on the line. Well T.O. winds up dead right out here ah...where 450 hits Interstate 20, you know it doesn't go on south at Interstate 20.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, on south of there, I forget the name of that road, but it's a...there's a road goes on down through there, just a short ways down that road well T.O. Wright's body was found in his pickup, he'd been shot. And ah....ah...Sheriff's office in Marshall called me and ah...made photographs, went to the scene, done the whole works. Well our investigation....of course we had to fir...we...we contacted his family. T.O. had been down on a trip to Florida and ah...Georgia and visiting and ah...he and his wife had been having a lot of trouble ah...and they were separated and she had a boyfriend who was a Fireman in Dallas. And T.O. like the bottle pretty good and he drank a whole lot and his family and he squabbled a whole lot. But she had...she knew that he was taking payoffs ah...some guy...a mechanic would call him and say I need you to certify that I overhauled this airplane engine and I'll give you a hundred dollars you know and he'd just sign it you know and not...never look at the motor or nothing you know. And....and then she was a head...head cashier for Zales Jewelry in Dallas, had a heck of a job. Well T.O. found a bunch of receipts on lay aways and she was stealing all the moneyshe was stealing a lot of money from Zales. The way the receipts came in on lay aways, they had certain things to do with them and she got both copies, a copy from the individual and a copy...and ...and took 'em out the store, there was no way they could trace it back to her. She was stealing from Zales and he was stealing and they got....and they....they both knew what the other one was doing. And they got go mad at each other they got to....they got to talking about it and....and...and I guess that's what prompted it. She hired

somebody to kill him. We never did find out for sure who it was. I'll tell you what we did do, of course we got her indicted and she lost her job from Zales plus he...he had a bunch of these receipts. And of course...you know, and...and she wasn't cooperating with us and she had met him in ah....Jackson, Mississippi, he had called her, we checked the phone records. And she'd been communicating with him and...on his way back and she says they was trying to get back together. And she had talked to him down at his brother's house, where...whatever town it was, it may...it could of been as far as Florida where he was visiting, I think it was. And ah....but we had checked her phone records and checked his credit card and we ah...detected where there had been some communication between of them. I think his brother had told us that they'd...and anyway they had agreed to meet...she had agreed, she wanted to meet him in Jackson, Mississippi and they did. And ah...that's the last time anybody...we got any account of anybody seeing him alive. And we checked every motel in Jackson, Mississippi and everyone between Jackson and Marshall, Texas on Interstate 20 ah....a Deputy Sheriff and myself, trying to put them folks together. We never did find out where they stayed. We know she flew to...flew down there and met him and we know that she was...had contacted somebody else by phone after she was down there. And they stayed a couple of days there in Jackson. Ah...we found out where they stayed, but we didn't ever know what happened in between, we...we looked for her boyfriend or somebody she may have hired. But worked on this case a whole lot and ah...and unfortunately we never did solve it, we ah...we got her in some problems you know and there was no question in my mind she was responsible for it, but I got sidetracked on my investigative work of recovering property. Ah...in February of 1971 we had more school problems in Texarkana ah...ah....and ah....had to spend some time up there, this is a...this is a kind of a period of time in the '70's where everybody was...these school kids was wanting to raise a little cane you know, and integration and all this and that you know and

squabbling on the school yard. Ah... another interesting thing, which I don't mind this being in the book at all. I remember...I looked... I attended a company meeting with Company A down at Toledo Bend ah...one weekend and ah...this was...this was a...it was a funny thing. You've got to know Clint Peoples (side of tape ends)...

As I said, went to a company meeting with Company A on the weekend down at Toledo Bend and Henderson Clay Products had a big lodge down there. And Homer Brice was President of Henderson Clay and I think I've already covered back earlier that ah...one time Jim was out of pocket you know and I had to go over there, they had some union problems.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jim Ray.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And they had some union problems over there and I went over there and resolved it for them and...and ah...so they was kind of proud of me and of course I...I didn't do all that much. But, anyway well I liked to fish, so Homer says, 'Come on down and come a day early'. And ah...I did, I went down on Friday and ah....so ah....Clint was invited, Clint Peoples, Senior Ranger Captain and ah....and so we all had a big meeting down there. But when I got down there ah...Preston Smith was Governor when ah...when they built that thing and I believe he was the Governor in '70, it seemed like he was still was, I'm pretty sure he was. Anyway ah...ah...Homer at this lodge had, had a nice suite of rooms for himself and he'd built a suite for the Governor, called it the Governor's Suite, cause the Governor was a friend of his and he was...he liked to fish and he was down there on a regular basis. So when I get down there Clint says, 'You're going to stay..', I meant Homer says, 'You're going to stay in the Governor's suite'. And great you know, colored TV, fireplace, whole works you know. And then I said, 'But look here', I said, 'When Captain Peoples gets here tomorrow he's going to be all tore up if I'm sleeping in here and he's got to sleep out there in the...with the rest of the troops in this big room, you know'. He

said, 'No, you are the Senior Ranger Captain as far as I'm concerned and you're going to sleep in the Governor's Suite, cause you're my friend'. 'And I'm going to tell you right now Clint Peoples or the Director of Department of Public Safety or anybody else can't do anything about it because me and...you know...I'll take care of you'. And of course we'd probably had us a little nip or something by then. Anyway, I sleep...I stay in the Governor's...and Clint finds out about it, Clint Peoples and you talk about something.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did it take him to come down?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man, he got all tore...but he didn't ever make us....I stayed there, I didn't get out of that bed you know. Finally I had to...he said ah...he asked me, he just plain...point blank asked me, said ah... 'I don't understand you be put up down here like this'. And I said, 'Well, ask Homer Brice', I said, 'He's our host'. And I said, 'He'll answer it for you', I said, 'I didn't like it either, I was afraid you was going to get upset'. But I said, 'I knew you wouldn't'. You know, and ah...but he was. But ah...this happened down there and of course I weathered it for some reason or other you know and ah...it was real nice. And ah....and I was in Court a whole lot in 1971 ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute....wait a minute, now did Clint ever go to Homer Brice?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know. I don't imagine he did. Homer would of probably...but Homer's not the kind of guy that would tell....Homer is a plain spoken guy that made everybody wealthy that had anything to do with Henderson Clay you know, because he ran the thing, you know. And...and ah....he had his own helicopter, that shows you how strong he was, he was the President of Henderson Clay, but there were ah...twelve, fourteen other direc....there was ten people that were directors, there were nine other directors. And he bought a brand new helicopter and didn't even ask any of the other directors, just to fly back and forth to lake...ah...down there to ah...Toledo Bend fishing, that's what he bought it for. He let the...he let the local officers use it,

we've used it many a times on man hunts, but he bought it to go fishing, you know. And ah....Homer was just that style, and still is you know. And ah....no Clint...I don't whether Clint ever asked him or not because ah...you know I really care, I was just ah...I was doing my job and I was...I was an invited guest down there and he wanted me to stay there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Clint attached to Company F at that time...or Com...what would that

GLENN ELLIOTT: No see ah...they ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or was he was Senior Captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was Senior Captain and they just asked him to come down you know, because it was...when you have a company meeting outside....well I think they invite the Senior Ranger Captain nearly every time they have a company meeting to tell you the truth. When they...they have to write letters and say, we're going....especially if you get out of company headquarters, and we're having a company meeting at Henderson Clay Products ah...on the weekend of so and so and...and would be glad for you to come you know. And well he...he came you know and ah...and it was a good outing, we had a good time and I was...it was kind of...I was in a little bit of a bind but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet you Clint didn't have a real good time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think so, because he was hurt now, you could tell, I mean hehe had a lot.....his old ego was big, Clint's was and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Jim Ray told us you know , he said he never met anybody that had half the ego Clint People's had .

GLENN ELLIOTT: But he would of....he knew that he was supposed to have been sleeping in there in that Governor's Suite instead of me. But I enjoyed it and I slept good. Ah....ah....well you

know what, I've said here I've spent a lot of time in Court too in '71 but I ah...I think that we need to bring out somewhere in this ah...in my story or nearly every officers story needs something about the Court system. And...and I'm going to tell you something ah...the Court system has been ...as far as I'm concerned as been broken down a long time. Ah...there's so much wasted time in Court you know and an officer just gets ...you know especially an officer like me, you....you've already found out what kind of guy I am, let's get on and do something you know. But where you have to go out to Court or in town or out of town and....and....and sit on the bench and listen to some lawyers wrangle or maybe they can't be there, they don't want to be there, they want to put it off and....and....and then try you instead of the defendant you know and....and....Court as far as I'm concerned and I've set in lots of Court rooms and lots of witness chairs for lots of hours and it's the most stressful job, I...I'd of lot rather be out here trying to run a fugitive down that I think might shoot at me than I had to sit around in that Court room all day. Or sit on that stand and listen to some....and let a Judge let some lawyer badger you to death you know and a lot of Judges will.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How would you like to be on that O.J. Simpson deal?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it just....you know that's what they try to do, they try to wear everybody out you know. But I think they're making a mistake out there, cause they're wearing the jury out too now and...and ah...and it sounds to me like they're getting a little impatient themselves andandand ah....justifiably so. But this is what we run into in Court and I just thought maybe it would be good to mention it on there cause Iit's....it's....it's such awell I don't know, there's just something wrong with the Court system, there's just something definitely bad wrong the Court system that needs fixing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well especially if they invoke the rule...I've been to Court twice where I was a witness and they invoked the rule and these were in civil cases and the rooms that we were furnished were just a little....about like four walls, a table and a chair.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I mean.... I can't remember ever testifying in a criminal case that the rule was not invoked. I...I can't ever remembercause you know they...they want to try to get officers crossed up and if I'm testifying and something and somebody's out there listening to me and that's....that's their.....that's their objective you know, to get one of to testify to one thing and another and just a little discrepancy and ah....well I'll show you how I feel about Court ah.... I got a summons to go to be on jury duty on the 30th of this month. And normally....and I've accepted every summons I've ever got til this one, gone on up there and....and cause the lawyer to have to strike me you know, on a criminal case, because I know he's not going to let me sit on criminal jury. But I just....I just you know , I can take my exemption for over 65 and I carried it up there this morning and ah....to Ruby Cooper because ah..... I just.....I'm just tired of the way the Court system works.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you....cause I know there's a gag order on, so I'm not wanting you to talk about the case at all, but right now this Kentucky Fried Chicken deal that you're still involved in, when Grand Jury, is it about the same situation ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Grand Jury is a lot more relaxed. Very seldom on the Grand Jury....every once in awhile and I've testified in a bunch of Grand Jury's in my career, now Highway Patrol and Ranger too....now and then, maybe once every three years you'll get to a Grand Jury where there's one old boy on there and...andthat wants to ask a bunch a silly questions. And ah....and it's.....and maybe a District Attorney will get a little bit out of line, not....that didn't happen....I never have testified but one time that I thought a DA was out of line and the foreman of the Grand

Jury got his attention right quick. Told him, said 'Mr. Elliott's answered all the questions and we're satisfied with his testimony'. And ah....and of course the foreman of the Grand Jury runs the Grand Jury, you know District Attorney's try to and they present their cases, but the foreman of the Grand Jury can do what he wants to. He can tell the District Attorney to get up and leave if he wants to. And of course they've got to get up and leave when they vote for in....vote on indictment, they can't be in there. But I've been before....I've....I've been in Grand Jury rooms all through the testimony in cases that I was....up until the time to vote on the indictment. In fact I was in the Grand Jury one time in ah....Bowie County and they was fixing to vote to indict and me in there and I said, 'Wait a minute'. And the DA had gone to office to get something and the Grand Jury foreman said, 'Well let's vote, I'm ready to indict this guy'. And I said, 'Wait just a minute'. I said, 'I'm not supposed to be in here when ya'll vote, ya'll excuse me'. Because you know I knew the procedure right well and ah....and so I wanted to get out of there. But ah....yeah the Court's....Court's a tough thing, it's tough and...and ah...but it's...it's a necessity and I'm glad we got it. But ah...ah....all right on the 3...in March '71 we ah...we...the FBI develops some information that the Elysian Field Bank was going to be burglarized ah....and ah...we set up on a surveillance down there and ah...and I'll tell you what, this is a close...I've set on a lot of surveillance's ah....I don't believe I've ever set on a surveillance where we caught anybody, you know, other than Mathis. Ah...I can't remember it ah....and I'm sure there may have been another one or two that I've ...didn't...come close a time or two. But we were watching this Elysian Field Bank from an old bank next door and these guys came just like they said they was going to do. And they drove up in their car and they parked it away and they walked, and they walked around the building shining a light around, went all the way around the building a couple of times and we just set there and watched them. And they got back in their car and drove off. Of course the bank had an alarm

system on it and they...they spotted it and ah....ah....so they leFort Well we knew...we had them under surveillance, they was staying over at Shreveport, Louisiana and they went on down into central Texas and burglarized a bank down there. And ah...but we couldn't....they couldn't make a case on them down there, but we made a case on them for conspiracy to burglarize this bank and tried them and convicted them. Cause we identified the two that was out there, it was....and their vehicle and of course and we already had the information that they was going to do it see and to....in order...you and I can sit here and conspire to do something you understand and...and we don't violate the law until we...until we commit an overt act. Which if we sit here and decided well we're going to ah...ah...rob the National Truck Stop at midnight tonight and we go out there at ten o'clock and ride around and look the place over and case it you know, and make sure what we're going to do and come back, then that's an overt act and we're guilty of conspiracy you know. So this was...this was an interesting case and...and of course I...I...this is when I learned that conspiracy just normally is a one step below whatever...in the punishment as the fine is. And I convinced several District Attorney's that we're making mistakes a lot of time by not trying somebody for conspiracy rather than trying them for the actual offense. Cause you don't have to prove they committed the offense, you just got to prove that they....that they talked about committing the offense and then did an overt act of one or more and that's...and that justifies conspiracy, which is good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well is conspiracy...how much less time does it normally call for?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it's one step below, if like burglary would be a felony which carries a life sentence and conspiracy would probably carry fifteen or ten years, something like that you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Enough to get your attention.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. We raided the Pines Motel in Kilgore, made three prostitution arrests in the month of March of '71. We was still fighting vice. On March the 26th Elysian Field Bank was robbed again. That bank...they robbed that bank every time they wanted to. Ah....cleared fourteen house burglaries in the month of March and ah....ah...in April...3-26, Elysian Field Bank was robbed in '71. Ah...4-19, it was robbed again. Ah....ah...we arrested two in Texarkana ah...for that second robbery on the 20th ah....recovered \$11,000.00 in cash and ah...brought them back up there and tried them. Ah...on 4-21, the next day ah...Texar...the Orr City Bank was robbed. Ah...and the we arrested a guy in Gladewater on 4-22, that I had handled for a...several times for a burglary and he just graduated , he and his brother robbed a bank in Orr City and we recovered a car. Ah...I worked ah...a lot of ah... it...during this time we was having a lot of aircraft thefts ah...the radios and things out of them, they'd raid hangers and steal radios and they was all going up in Coffman County, worked on that quite a bit. On 5-21, went to Austin to help dedicate the LBJ Library and we went down there for security reasons. Of course there was...all of the Washington dignitaries was there at that time plus Lyndon Johnson.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Nixon there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....I don't think Nixon came, I don't believe he did. Ah...then ah...we had this death of this officer here in Longview, that you told me that you had seen ah...where ah...Connell, Officer Connell was killed here in Longview, he and Claxton ah....ah...this happened in ah...May of 1970. Ah...what happened was there was a guy here that ah...was a suspect in ah...ah...some armed robberies here in Longview and ah...Earl Claxton who was a City Detective and ah...and his partner's name was Connell. And ah...they were both detectives and they got on this guy as a suspect and they went down to either arrest or to question him and he pulled a gun on them and disarmed them, took their weapons and handcuffed them together and left them there and

gagged them. And Connell died of a heart attack while he was in this ah...condition and this guy escaped. Well of course they were later, you know, they got loose or somebody came to their aid, I don't remember all the details of that. But anyway, ah...we developed a suspect and ah...and he was associating with an old pimp, black pimp here from Longview and ah....who had some girls down at Leesville, Louisiana at the Army base over there. And the first thing that ah...and we...we found out that this...that...we didn't know this guys name, that they was looking for, just knew of him. And he was a light skinned ah...black guy and ah...and I'd say around 30 years old, as I remember, I've got the case out there. And...and anyway he ah....nice looking guy, but he was mean, mean as hell and ah...but we went...Roy Stone, now Roy was Chief of Police and I told Roy I said, 'Well let's go Leesville and talk to this pimp'. He was from Longview, a black pimp, 'And get him to tell us who this guy is'. And he said, 'Well he's not going to tell you'. And I said, 'Well we ain't going to know unless we go down there and ask him you know, he ain't going to come up here and volunteer'. So we went to Leesville and looked him up and carried him down to the police station and...he followed us down there in his Cadillac you know and ah...and 'Mr. Elliott, yes sir I can tell you who that is'. And he gave us his name and the whole works and he said he's got some contacts in Dallas, just told us everything just about we wanted...that he knew about, I think he told us everything he knew. And we got him identified that day. Well what happened was then ah...ah...we got a photograph of him ah...from some other agency that he'd told us he'd...where he'd been arrested. And ah...so we had these pictures printed up and ah...and we started circulating them to all police agencies and I carried a...a...a whole envelope full of them to Dallas. And Howard Alford, who'd just got on the Rangers up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Slick?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Slick, and ah...Howard had just been made Ranger and he was stationed there in Dallas. So I carried him up there and...and ah...I asked Howard to make all the ah...shift changes at the police department there in Dallas for one or two days and ah...see that every police officer that went on duty had a picture of this guy and his description. And ah...because you know, we got a police officer involved and ah...and sure enough ah...Dallas arrested him a couple of days later. And ah...so we went up...I went to Dallas then....well he was arrested on...no it must have been more than two days, it was June the 17th when he was arrested, so we're talking about 15 days later. And ah...ah...he was arrested and I went up there and questioned him and...and ah...he told where...told us...one of the detectives went with me and we recovered both officers weapons that he had disposed of there in Dallas or had hidden or something, I don't....and ah....gave us a statement admitting the robbery. And ah...in fact we cleared two robberies in New York and one in Illinois and one in Kansas City that he had committed. He was pretty much of a roving...he knew the country pretty good. And ah...so started another surveillance then in June of '71 on another known offender down here in East Texas, we used Organized Crime and we had a guy here that ah...was a ah...stealing oil field equipment, wenches and trucks and anything related to oil field and he was stout doing....and ah...and so he was just tearing the country up. And he'd go down in Louisiana and out in West Texas and out in New Mexico and... and ah...he was...his name was Oriel Guy Morgan. So we decided we had pretty good luck in catching Mathis you know by the use of Organized Crime and surveillance and so we decided we'd try to catch old Guy Morgan stealing that way. Cause I...that's one that I...you know, I told you from the beginning that I thought that this was something that the Rangers should be doing. You know here we are, we got a guy that we know that lives in the area, he's not doing anything but stealing and he's...and he's...he's stealing one particular item and he's stealing all over the county you know and he don't have any

visible means of support and everybody knows he's stealing and I'm getting telephone calls all the time from West Texas and we lost two Christmas trees, we lost a compressor, we lost this and that you know and ah....and all drilling rigs they're stealing the impact wrenches and tongs or whatever you know. So...and...so we had an old boy in jail over at Henderson and Tatum Brown was Sheriff over there and ah...and ah...Tatum was questioning this old boy and ah...and he told Tatum that he was...he had been stealing and he said that this guy Morgan had come over there and talked to him, visited him in jail and told him he'd get him out of the jail if he'd go work with him spend...help him steal stuff. So this guy was wanting out of jail and he told the Sheriff and so the Sheriff called Bob Mitchell and I and so this....so the Sheriff went ahead and released him on his own recognizance bond and ah....we put him....and he was instructed to go get with Guy Morgan, like Guy wanted him to and ah....no wait a minute, I believe this...this...let me back up here. I think the Sheriff went ahead and let Morgan make his bond, but he got it reduced where it would be easy to get out..easier. And anyway, he went...he messed around with Morgan and we hung...we...we got to following him...we decided to follow Morgan and we hung his pickup...a device and ah...so derved if old...this old boy didn't skip on us and head....go to California. And ah...he told Morgan everything that we was...had planned to do and of course you know...and he of course....he was wanting to cooperate with us, he was wanting to get out of jail is what he was wanting to do, we found out later. But you know, you got to try. Well he...he winds up in Los Angeles, California and ah...of course after he skips and we know that he's....what he's done to us and Morgan's staying at home all the time and we can't find Powell, so we get....I get to looking for him and checking and find out where he is in Los Angeles and get a warrant and send it out there and they arrest him. And ah....so of course we can't expect Rusk County to go out there and get the son of a gun hardly because we asked the Sheriff to let him out you know and we was in kind of a bind. Well our

friend, Richard Harvey from Tyler, and you've met Richard and you know him and he's a friend of the Rangers, well Richard was a special Ranger at that time and had plenty of....had a good airplane and plenty of time and...and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: And money.

GLENN ELLIOTT: ...and money and he liked to do things for the Rangers. So ah...Bob talked him into ah....flying us to Los Angeles. Bob Mitchell and Richard Harvey and myself flew to Los Angeles, California to get this guy. And we got out there and it was the first anniversary of Watts. If you'll check back, somewhere in June of...or July of 1971 Watts must have been the year before ah...and ah....because they was having....I...I'm sure it was the first anniversary, it could of been the second, it was the anniversary of Watts. And it's hard to get anybody in and out of a big facility anyway, like Dallas, during....when I first went on the Rangers, it would take two or three hours to get anybody out of jail in Dallas, Texas when you...you know you drive up there to get a...bench...with warrant or something and the guys in jail it just takes awhile to get him out there's so dern many people in there you know and they've got all the processing they have to do. Anyway, well we....we had made prearrangements for these officers to meet us out there and ah...it was a...a...it...you know, it was just a kind of a deal that we said we'd like to leave out the next morning about seven o'clock if we could. Well they didn't realize that...the next morning at seven o'clock we're down there, there's people lined up outside the jail for four blocks trying to get them in jail. And ah...of course we got...they got the guy out for us and we got him on to the airport and guess what? He gets out there and says, 'I'm not going to fly, never flown in an airplane before and I'm not going to fly anywhere'. Well we had to convince him that he was you know and...and of course it didn't take long. Well we got him on back and got him in jail and he went on to the penitentiary. But this was just something that happens to a Ranger. Then I had a guy, during this

period of time....and to show you something else that happens that ah...that ah...occasionally ah...I tell you what, we went to California on August the 20th, that's when we went to California, August the 20th, yeah. But in the meantime here we've got a....I come back from somewhere, I guess I'd ah...ah...I guess it's from California and ah....I read the headlines in the Longview paper that ah....Sheriff Noble Crawford and his deputies cleared their Cannon murder case. Cannon was a guy that got shot over at Gladewater. And I had worked on it some and ah....J.B. Cannon and ah....and this guy had confessed to the murder. Well, they had a statement from him and ...but the Sheriff and the deputy that took the statement had worked on the case a little bit, he hadn't worked on it much and ah...so I asked them a few questions, I said, 'Well where did he park his car'. 'Well we didn't ask him that you know' and 'Well where did he do this', 'Well we didn't ask him that'. So ah...the District Attorney decided that maybe he should be re-interviewed, maybe another statement taken because the DA lived in Gladewater, Ralph Prince was the District Attorney, and so we...this deputy and I went back to Dallas and talked to this guy and interviewed him again. And ah...and ah... so he's on a bench warrant out of Dallas and they're fixing to send him back Huntsville and this is in....during cotton picking time and he didn't like to pick cotton and they was still telling him how much cotton they could pick back down there in '70 and '71 you know. So we get up there and ah... and start talking to him and I said, 'Well what kind of car was you driving' and he said, 'Well I had a '56 Ford'. 'Where did you park it'. 'Well I parked out on Hwy. 80 in front of the store'. Well we had an eye witness that saw the guy shoot Mr. Cannon, run back behind the store and get in a green Chevrolet pickup. And the guy that witnessed it was...had been drinking but his wife hadn't and he'd already gone over to this pickup, it was sitting down behind his house, and looked at it while the guy was robbing the store and he saw an Army bag in there in the back of it and got part of the license plate and thought he gave his wife the right number, but he was still

pretty....he was drinking pretty good. And ah...so we knew that he was driving a Chevrolet pickup and we knew he didn't run out the front door when he went to the back, cause the folks heard the shot and saw Mr. Cannon fall and saw this guy run and get in his pickup, cause they was sitting out in their back yard down there. And ah....so anyway, to make a long story short, I said, 'Man you're lying, now why are you trying to cop out to a murder and lie about it'. And I said, 'Now if you did this murder well tell us the truth and we'll believe you'. And ah...'I'm telling you the truth'. Checked his record and he was in jail when Cannon was killed, in the penitentiary, in custody. And the only thing...he finally said, 'Well you know I knew you couldn't convict me because I didn't do it'. And he said, 'I just didn't want to go back to Huntsville, they was fixing to send me back down there and I knew I'd have to pick cotton this summer so I'd rather come down there to Gregg County and lay around in the jail you know'. And ah...anyway ah in ah...ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you later clear the Cannon case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, didn't clear it. That's two cases....we tried the bus bombers ah...here out of Longview in ah ...in August and ah...ah....over at Tyler and got them a pretty good sentence. And ah....okay, September 1 of '71 well G.W. Burkes is the new captain of Company B. Ah...meetings lasted a little bit longer with Mr. Burkes because he was ah...ah....he was pretty particular about the things he done and he wanted....and a good Cap....pretty good captain, he never did give ah...me any trouble you know. I mean he had some ideas and he'd let you know who was boss, but I knew that anyway you know. And ah...but we got...this was...would have been my third captain see and ah....Captain Crowder and then Bill Wilson and then G.W.. Ah....I spent two days in Abilene investigating the oil field theft and ah....went up in Idabel, Oklahoma in September of '71 and arrested another tractor thief. Ah....made more vice raids in Texarkana. Ah...then in October of '71 well we set up a...Ben Wheeler Bank was supposed to have robbed and ah...this was a....this was an

assignment that ah... we had a....Max and Red and I set inside a camper shell in front of the Ben Wheeler Bank for a week during banking hours, cramped situation. Of course it was one of those that had a door in the back and it was a little higher than the average, but you know, you don't move around....you're sitting there trying to watch for a bank robber to come and go and only one way in and out is the front door. And of course we had a....we was figuring on stopping him you know. And ah....so that's just another assignment we...and we later got the guy. After we got off of surveillance they robbed the bank, oh three or four weeks after we got off of it, the bank was robbed and we caught him. And during this time ah...in October of every year ah....they ah...they had prison rodeo. I don't know whether you ever went to a prison rodeo or not. Ah...they had a prison rodeo in Huntsville, Texas every October, had been ever since the '30's I guess and used nothing but inmates ah...ah...to participate in this rodeo. Had some good, tough stock. Well during this time frame ah...there had been a couple of movies out about escapes from penitentiary by helicopter and there was talks of escape down there, so we started working the Huntsville rodeo. And I think worked it for a year or two. I know I was down there in October the 31st for security at TDC rodeo because they had a....supposed to have an escape plan down there. But we was down there in pretty good force and didn't anything exciting happen. Ah... ah....in November of 1971 I made contact again with an old known offender, Shorty Anderson, that I mentioned earlier that taught the Grammar boys how to get into a bank. And Shorty ah...we caught him down in Rusk County, he got surprised in a burglary down there of a grocery store, of all things, didn't even have a safe. And ah...got him ah...got him caught down there and ah...early one morning and old Shorty didn't want to go to the pen again, he knew he was going for ah...for just burglarizing a store for cigarettes and penny change and...and he cleared several burglaries for us and ah...so he could go to the pen for doing a safe job instead of...he just...he was just wore out. I'm back in Texarkana again

in November and ah...ah...in vice assignment. Ah...and then on the 8th of November we...I notice here we ah...let's see when was...in Ben Wheeler Bank in October, the 8th day of November and the bank was robbed. And ah...so we later caught the bank robber from up there in ah...in Ben Wheeler. Then in ah...ah...in November ah...we had a trooper shot here in the courthouse in Longview. And ah...and they had arrested a drunk driver, two Highway Patrolmen, and ah...had brought him in for a breathalyzer test. And they had patted him down, but after they got to the courthouse....and ah...the breathalyzer was..was...of course the Highway Patrol office is in the courthouse at that time and ah....on the third floor, second floor and ah....they had the breathalyzer set up, up there in the Highway Patrol office and they had just started using the breathalyzer good then and ah...ah...it had just been perfected. And they carried this guy in for a breathalyzer test and then after he got up there well he refused and they was having a little trouble and he asked them to let him use the bathroom. It wound up he had this pistol ah...tied or taped to his leg, between his legs somewhere and it was a small caliber automatic pistol. He went in the bathroom and the bathroom was right there in the office, there wasn't anyway out, I mean it was just a little old closet there with a bathroom. And he...he came out of this bathroom shooting and ah...he missed this trooper the first time he shot at him and he turned his back and he ran to get behind something and shot at him a second time and it penetrated his billfold, but it didn't go ah...it didn't go in....didn't bust the hide. And then ah...one of the troopers got on outside and then other one shot at him and finally hit him in the arm, he hid behind a desk. But ah...I went down and ah...conducted the investigation for that and ah...ah...actually one of the troopers lost his job over it, he didn't use proper judgment and ah... and...but ah...this was things that we get involved in. And ah...we...let's see, the latter part of November ah...had another attempt robbery at Elysian Field Bank on November the 24th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did they use that for, a training ground at Elysian Field Bank?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what, the old Elysian Field Bank is right down there on ah...ah...it's right on the banks of Louisiana you know and ah...and it's a...no policeman...this Constable, Buck Little, is the only law enforcement they had and...and there's so many ways you can go out of Elysian Field, all those oil field roads and every thing and...and...it was just a...it was just a easy score for burglars and ah...and robbers and they'd go down there and pick 'em up some money. Ah...I guess the...I noticed here we cleared the Ben Wheeler Bank too in November but ah...I worked another case and I want to discuss it and then we'll quit for the evening. But ah...what happened was ah...there was a case that...I told you about reading the newspaper religiously and I did and ah...for crime news especially. We had a terrible rape case, of course all rape cases are bad. And we had two couples here from this area, from this part of the country, that were at a Christmas party ah...let's see...yeah, it had to be Christmas cause I'm through November here, and ah....at the Elk's Club. And they got out and they of course had been having a good time dancing and enjoying life and they got out and got in their automobile and this black guy was in the back seat and pulled a gun on them. And he carried them over into Harrison County and ah...raped both of the women. Held a gun at their head and made them all disrobe I think, the men too, and took their car and ah...left them out on the...on the old Elysian ...on the old Gum Springs Road, pretty close into Marshall, four or five miles out of Marshall. And ah....ah...we don't have any leads at all. The vehicle is recovered in the city limits of Marshall ah...on out...down there pretty close to the livestock barn, on the old...old Marshall/Longview highway. And we just...it was kind of a dead end on this thing. They got a pretty good description of this guy but ah...he's black and it's at night. Ah...the weapon went off in the car, I believe shot a hole in the seat and ah....about the only evidence we had and I...we knew what caliber of weapon he was carrying. Well we worked on this

thing, we ran two or three locals on the polygraph and ah... Clifford Felts and I worked on, Clifford's dead now, he was a detective, good detective, he was an Indian boy, good...good solid detective, just a good hand, slow but good you know. He moved slower than I do, but I didn't get any ulcers working with him. But ah...I pick up a Dallas Morning News one morning and ah...I see where they had a incident similar that happened in Dallas that they...they ...they'd been having some crimes like this happening in a special neighborhood of Dallas and they couldn't catch the guy and they'd...they'd sent a...a city policeman, two city policemen, a male and female and they was parking or getting into cars in certain areas in this area and at different times of the night and walking and getting in the car and...and ah...sure enough this black accosted them. And he got them out of the car and he was fixing to lock this man up in the trunk of the car and of course....and that's the first chance he had...and when...he hadn't searched him and of course when he got him....he was holding a gun on him all this time, but in the process of getting him in the trunk well the guy, the black got a hold of the trunk lid to close it and this policeman tried to put his eyes out you know. But he shot him, but he didn't kill him. But this was in the Dallas News and so I go to Dallas the next day, go down to the city police department and I said, 'Well I need, you know, to find out something about this guy'. 'Well he lives here in Dallas and we've been having these crimes and he...and he has...he fit the description after they got him you know and of the others'. And said, 'But this is the only case we got on him right now'. And, 'Well what can you tell me about him'. 'Well I don't know, he's been in jail here before'. 'Well get his records and let's look at him'. Well they got his record out, his mother and daddy lived in Marshall, four blocks from where this car was abandoned. That's ah...well that's interesting you know, you got...and of course I go to the hospital and talk to this black. 'No I don't know anything, what you talking about'. And ah....so I come back to Marshall and the next day and I go over to see his mother and daddy. And ah...so this

is Christmas time see and ah...by then I guess it's a little after Christmas....it is, cause I think it's in January, cause we...we just hit a dead end on this thing. And ah....so I get...I'm talking to his folks and ah.... and ah... they say....I say, 'Well did...' and I called his name, and I said, 'Did he come see ya'll during Christmas'. 'Oh yes sir', said, 'He come over', said, 'He come pretty well every Christmas'. 'He was over here early in the day and brought a bunch of boys with him, two other boys and they left here' and said...I asked them what all they did. And said they went to Longview and said, 'He come back that night by himself', but said, 'Boy he bought my....gave his sister a pretty watch', and said 'Honey go get that watch and show this officer'. One of the ladies watches...he had assaulted, he had given it to his sister and we identified the watch of being hers through the jeweler that had sold it. And everything just went down hill on that guy. But I'm going to tell you, you know, ah....he brought some more gifts and give togave his grandpa....gave his daddy something that one of the men had, you know, maybe a watch, I don't remember, a pocket knife. But ah...and then we...they knew who one of the guys was that was with him and we picked them up...him up in Dallas, go back to Dallas and get him and he tells who the other one was. And what happened was, this guy told them what he was going to do and they got scared and leFort They knew that he...what he did but they didn't take part in it. He did it all on himself and they got in the car and he...they....he said I'm going....and he stayed out and waited on these people to come out and tried to get them to stay and help him. But the only reason we solved this case is reading it in the newspaper you know. And this has happened to me several times. We was having a bunch of school burglaries here one time, just hitting the schools all over the country and right after I got to be a Ranger. And I asked Red Arnold, I said, 'Red who...who done that'. And he said, 'Well there's an old boy named Lee Alton Despain that's a good...likes to burglarize schools', said, 'I sent him to the penitentiary about seven...six, seven years ago'. He's the only school burglar that I know that

can get in a safe. Well a month later I'm reading the Dallas Morning News and I see where Bell County arrest Lee Alton Despain, catch him in a school, burglarizing a school in Bell County. So I called down there and Despain had put a story on them ah...that ah...you know that there was two people that had picked him up and they...and they believed him and he was going to help them find them and they let him out of jail. And ah...so back you have all that...have to have all that much probable cause to get a warrant for known school burglar and ah...so I got a warrant for Lee Alton burglarizing the Hallsville school. I'll tell you what he did, he burglarized it while the band was practicing at night on the field. He knew what their habits were. When they came back from practice, band practice, and this was just about the time of the year that the school pictures was coming out, the taxes were all collected for the school and of course they did....you know, the school's got their own taxes then for a long time before they got these general areas. But...and they got a ton of money out of Hallsville school. And ah...so ah...I go to Dallas and get one of the Dallas detectives and we serve a warrant on Despain and I recover some tools ah...in his pickup and we made him on this Hallsville school burglary over here and he copped out to about six, seven more before he went to the penitentiary. But ah...just from reading the paper, that's all...of course Red...Red Arnold had told me said, 'He's the only safe burglar I know'. And of course you know, back then you...you didn't have that many....we had some safe burglaries but we generally knew....we had to know how to get in a safe. But I'll tell you about this Hallsville school and this is all we got left ah...I had been...I was out late, I just got home and I know I was driving a...a Plymouth car that we were having ah...water pump troubles with. Dad gum ah....and ah...I just barely got home that night and it was about....getting pretty close to ten o'clock and maybe it was a little after ten, yeah cause they practiced band I think til about nine-thirty. And Mr. Hudspeth was school Superintendent, I noticed the other day he died, there was a piece in the paper where he...he

passed away and he was a real good school man, I liked him. But we had a Constable over at Hallsville named Thurman Clark and Thurman...oh, I liked Thurman all right and ah...but Thurman wasn't as...Thurman wasn't interested in...he wanted to get things done and get on to doing something else you know. And....and ah....he called me and he said, 'Glenn I need you...if I ever needed you, I need you now'. That's generally the way he'd approach. And I said, 'Well Thurman, my water pump went out on my car and I just barely got home'. And I said, 'If you'll...', he said, 'I need you to take some fingerprints, we've had a safe burglary'. They blowed the safe, that's what he said, cause you know when you beat a safe fire clay goes everywhere and he thought that they....that's how much Thurman knew about safes, he thought they'd used explosives to get it open. And ah....he said, 'I need you'. And I said, 'Well come over here and get me'. Well Thurman was pretty close about driving his car. 'Well ah...can't you...can't you come in your personal car'. And I said, 'No I'm not going...I like to work and I want to help you and I'm tired'. And...but I said, 'I'm not going to get in my wife's car', cause I said, 'I might get over there and not get back tonight and she's got to have a way to go to work in the morning'. And I said, 'We might get into something'. I said, 'Come on and get me and I'll come over there, or I'll make a deal better for you now'. I said, 'Lock the school house up, not another burglar is going to come in there tonight and try to get...and just lock it up and I'll come over there the first thing in the morning, I'll take my car down here to Buckstaffs at seven o'clock and borrow a car from them and come on over there and any fingerprints there right now will be there in the morning at seven o'clock'. Well he thought that was a good idea and I did, I went on over there the next morning. And so I said, 'Thurman, if you'll come in here...', of course it's not unusual for me to do like this, cause I knew him well enough. I said, 'I'll teach you how to take finger prints and you need to know'. Well Mr. Hudspeth was there and...and he said, 'Well ah...I hadn't got a fingerprint kit'. And ah....I said, 'Well ah...this is...', I

said, 'Mr. Hudspeth, they'll buy you one, this school will buy you a finger...won't you Mr. Hudspeth'. Cause I knew they would you know, cause they needed one and the school used him all the time for everything, I mean he made every football game, every basketball game and...and..., 'Why yeah, we'll get him one', said, 'We always get him a box or two of cigars for Christmas'. And Thurman said, 'Well I want...I want them cigars too'. But anyway, that's ah...I got into that, but that's how...but this old boy Despain and just reading the newspaper is what did it you know. So there was lots...lots of ways of solving crimes if a guys interested in doing it, because you...you know if they...whatever they're going to do here in Longview, Texas see, or Hallsville....(tape ends)

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, May 30th, this is the continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. And last week we did 1971, temporarily we're going to skip 1972 I believe, aren't we Glenn?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we may have to skip '72 all together if I don't find them...like we did '66. I know them reports are somewhere. Yeah, we'll get into '73 if you want to tonight.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...I...I...of course I did as I've been doing, I reviewed my reports over pretty good, just made some notes of some of the highlights. And ah...right away I noticed I worked several cattle theft cases in 1973 and I was down in ah...at Llano working with Bob Mitchell and ah...and Tory Porterfield in Leon county. And ah...ah...the first part of '73 ah...we had a truck ah...you...this... you can relate to this in your business, a truck ah...tractor and a trailer that was carrying a load of clothes from New York City to somewhere and ah...I guess to Houston. But anyway, the driver pulled into Longview and got to drinking at one of the ah...ah...nicer truck drinking places here in town and wound up and just left his truck parked behind this old joint and

some of the guys...some of our known offenders around here, several of them, twelve of them in fact, started selling the clothes. And they just....they broke the lock the lock on the back of it and they...they stole in just a few days the biggest part of that load of clothes. Well I'm talking about a semi-trailer and ah...and started selling them. And doggone we just had ah...ah...we got to running clothes down...the Federal folks got involved in it because this was interstate shipment you know, of merchandise. And finally Charlie Brown, FBI agent, was ah...and he got interested in it and ah...I finally told him, I said, 'Charlie we ...let's quit arresting folks now, we done made cases on twelve different people and that's enough'. Because it...you know, everybody that handled those clothes was likely in violation and...but we got most of them and recovered a whole lot of the clothes. But ah...ah...this was just a case that I don't know how I got involved, I guess the company called and some of the clothes...yeah, I'll tell you how I got involved, the owner of the truck...the company that owned the vehicle and the clothing, they called of course for some help down here and this joint was right out here on East Marshall close to the county line and a lot of the clothes wound up in Harrison County, some in Upshur County. And ah...so whoever was....I guess whatever agency was involved in it besides myself and the FBI well they ah...they asked for some help and so I got involved in it. But you know, here I am running around arresting folks for selling blue jeans out the back of a truck you know and I'd rather been, you know, doing something a little bit more exciting. But this was wrong and so...and it was several hundred thousand dollars worth of clothing in that doggone thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What...what would be the ah....the law, legally speaking, when somebody buys something like that, that does not...honestly does not know it's stolen property?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, if they don't know it's stolen property then it's pretty hard to make a case on them. But the bargains that these people sell stuff like this for is ah...ah...they...you know

it's something wrong with it you know. Cause ah...and most people if they get a bargain they...they...they suspect there's something with it. But ah...in this case we made quite a few cases on some people that needed some cases made on them, they was just old sorry people that were thieves to start with that was hanging around those old joints and they saw an easy way to make a quick buck you know, and they just got after it. And we convicted a bunch of folks. Ah...I worked a known offender here, I think we got into this a year or two back in our reports, this guy Morgan. We set up on him, he was the guy that we got the guy out of jail over at Marshall you know...I mean at Henderson, and he skipped to Los Angeles and we had to go out there and get him. Well this Morgan was back in the ah....ah....limelight again stealing and I arrested him for Ectar County and ah....he was here for a hearing and....this is kind of....I guess this was just about the last of thebut the East Texas run around like they called it you know. Here I got a warrant for....for Morgan out of Ectar County and they wanted him out there, they....the Judge wants him out to set his bond out there and ah..... I don't know, whoever.....the Court was upset at him about something out there and of course he was just a known theft, everybody disliked....you know, a theFort And so we had a hearing here in Court in Gregg County and I arrested him in the courtroom. And this was on ah....ah....well this was in January of '73, I haven't got my report with me but ah.... I put some of the dates down....but anyway, there was ice and snow on the road, I remember that. And it was bad weather and I....Jim Riddle was the captain of the Company out there at Midland and I went in the Judge's office and called him on the telephone and told him I said, ' I just arrested Guy Morgan, they had a hearing here for him and he's got his lawyer with him and he's gone to try to get his bond made'. And I said, 'If ya'll want him well you going to have to....we're going to have....you're going to have to get high behind'. Well he didn't know how we was going to do it, he said, 'Mitchell's here, Al Mitchell's working the case'. And I said, 'Well tell Mitchell that I'll

meet him in Ranger, that's half way to Midland'. And ah....so Mitchell gets on the phone and says, 'Well it's snow....it's sleeting out here and freezing'. And I said, 'It's doing the same thing down too', but I said, 'You know, if ya'll want Morgan that's the only way you're going to get him'. Well he said, 'I'll meet you'. So I drove to Ranger, Texas and of course Interstate 20 was open then....and back in ice and snow on the road you know, but Morgan got him a free trip to Midland you know and later got him some pen time, served two or three different times. But ah....ah....but you know when you get a guy like.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me....wait a minute, let me ask you, ah....would it have been....you brought him from here to Midland, or....or from Midland to here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I carried him from here to Midland. But....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would that not of been cheaper and more economical enough to have flown him out there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't imagine there's a plane that you could of got to fly in that kind of weather see. This is...we're.... it'sit's freezing and raining and bad and of course we....nay....we.....we didn't ask for planes on things like that. Most of the time you got a guy that they want him out there and he's trying to make bond here, if you don't get him out from here pretty quick, he's going to make bond. You can't keep him from it you know, that's proven. If he don't make bond quick enough, well you can say, 'Well look, you know, Midland's going to meet me and I'm taking him out there and you can arrange to make his bond out there'. And of course the Judge is going to..... I don't know what he's going to do out there, I think he was already on probation out there and he was figuring on denying him bond, I don't remember all the details. But ah....and IMorgan was stealing and just stealing and stealing and stealing and he needed some attention you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did ya'll move prisoners very often by commercial flights?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, not unless it was out of State. Naw, Texas you know....well it's two hundred and fifty miles to Granger, about two....two thirty probably.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it's a whole day. Of course I guess flying would be too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I could drive that man to Ranger quicker than I could fly him out there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, I forget the way you drive so.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well not on ice, but ah....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: It's only a two hour trip for you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, so ah....anyway, that's the way we handled this and that's the way we handled a bunch of them. If Iif Iif Midland had somebody in custody out there that we wanted well they'd of done the same thing for me, they.....you know, those guys would, they said, well.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Mitchell captain of Midland by this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Al Mitchell, this is a different Mitchell.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....you're thinking about Bob, he never was captain out there. Al was just a Ranger stationed out there and ah....and ah....and he and Charlie Hodge I believe, came and met me in Ranger, I drove out there by myself and entertained Morgan all the way out there. Told him he ought to quit stealing. Ah.... I worked a major forgery the first part of '73 and I didn't like to work forgery cases. Ah...they ah.... I don't know, just wasn't enough challenge. We had a lot of folks that did work them you know. And....andand forgery cases aresomebody needs to work them because most of the time if you get interested in something like that you can just make all kinds of cases because a guy that would go out here and steal, he'll just steal something maybe

once a week. And a doggone paper hanger is liable to hang fifteen checks the same day you know. And ah....and they need working, but I never did.... I justdidn't seem like there was enough challenge in a forgery case for me because most of the time you got handwriting identification and maybe a little other evidence. And....but I worked some forgeries. I found a fence with stolen cigarettes in East Texas that was...it was humorous. We kept hearing that these guys....we had some known thieves that was spreading out and just stealing.....cigarettes would bring good money you know. And ah....and I got some information that there was an outfit over at Kilgore at a liquor store over there that was handling ah....all the stolen cigarettes.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What were they stealing, off trucks or off.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No they was stealing....burglarizing ah....Piggly Wiggly, Safeway, Brookshires, big stores getting just..... maybe a hundred cartons of cigarettes you know or ah....you know, three hundred oror you know, whatever a thousand, a lotlot of cigarettes. And we went over..... I went over there and met ah.... I believe some local officers went with me, but anyway.....on cigarettes you know, they all got tax stamps on them andand you can call the Comptroller's office and find out who the tax stamp is assigned to. We went over there and checked cigarettes in his inventory and we found cigarettes out of nine different areas from Amarillo to Texarkana to Waco to Beaumont, you know, where.....and he's claiming he's buying cigarettes from a local dealer you know. And he couldn't of been, he's buying them from fences. But anyway we....we finally got into that. I don't remember do you.....in Clint Peoples book, do you remember the guys name that got killed down there at ah....he was so....down around Bryan that....and he claimed was killed and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, but I can go get that book.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, it's not that important. But I see where I worked some information on a Pete Tiner murder....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That sounds like

GLENN ELLIOTT:for Captain Peoples and Ihe mentioned.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me go get that book right quick, cause that sounds like him.

GLENN ELLIOTT:he mentioned that in his book ah....and I'd done some ah.....stuff for him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: N.J. Tynes, here's a picture.

GLENN ELLIOTT: What's the name?

ROBERT NIEMAN: N.J. Tynes, TYNES.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's....that's what it's going to be, I probably just ah.... I called it Ty.....yeah, TYNES, yeah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, N.J.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I've got Tiner. Well I guess... I guess....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's part of the.....they shot the tear gas canister I think and like to tore his.... I believe his left arm, right down here, right above the wrist, like to tore it off.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway, I did something for that. All right in ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this the one where the Sheriff, Harry Dunlap, was killed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't remember, I just don't....you know youyou.....no, I'd say this was a little bit

ROBERT NIEMAN: Tynes killed that Sheriff.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But this....is this Captain Peop.....yeah, it's....it's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, it's not Peoples book, but it's the incident that you're talking about.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Anyway, I did something..... I was thinking about another case that he ah.....in his big book down there that he ah....that he worked ah.....yeahthat he worked ah....you know, it was an agricultural deal. It was about the time of Billy Saul Estes' deal that ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I've got his book, I just.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that's.....that's not that important.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's all right, we'll get it later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But anyway I did....do you need to get that phone?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, Donna will get it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....then on January the 30th ah....a bank was robbed in Carthage, Texas and ah.....this is interesting, I'll kind of show you how we....or how I worked, and I think most Ranger's work the same way. But ah....we had a new Sheriff....actually an old Sheriff that had just gone back into office down there the first of January. And ah....Johnny Spradlin and Johnny was....he liked the Rangers and he liked to call on us. And Johnny and ah....Mr. Hebert was the President of the bank then and he was a friend of Johnny's and a friend of mine and I'd been out to his lake house a few times and he'd entertain the officers and have us a bar-b-que or steak cook out, out there and we'd deal some cards or something. And he was a nice guy and is a nice guy, he's still living and ah....anyway the bank was robbed and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he any relation to Johnny....I mean Sonny?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Johnny Spradlin?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, no. Ah....anyway ah...the Sheriff called me and said, 'Glenn our friends bank has been robbed and I need some help down here'. So I headed down to Carthage and it was up in the day pretty good, close to noon, around eleven o'clock in the morning as I

remember. And ah....we got ahoh, just as I got into Carthage I heard a Highway Patrolman in Marshall check out for lunch and he had told the operator that he'd heard about thethe bank robbery had got out and he said he had stopped a car earlier, a new car, with a dealer's tag in it but he didn't.....the guy didn't act suspicious andand he didn't even record his name or anything. So ah.... I got on down there and found out some of the details and called that boy at home, he was still at home eating lunch, and ahand asked him a few questions about this guy he stopped. And he said, 'Well he did remember he had a place on his face'. Well this guy had some tape on his face. You know, anything you do on an armed robbery, everybody in the bank can tell you how many pieces of tape was on his face, but they couldn't tell you what color his eyes were you know. But ah...anyway ah....he told me he said, 'He had one place on the side of his face that was kind of red', but he said, 'At the time I just didn't think he was who ya'll was looking for, he was driving a new Pontiac', and said, 'I know it had a Texarkana, Texas dealer's tag on it'. Well I called Max, Max was a Ranger by then you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Womack.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Womack yeah. And ah....and I told Max what we had and I said, 'Max we've had an armed robbery down here and I want you to go to the Pontiac dealers, or how many they got in Texarkana, on the Texas side and see if you can identify this car'. So Max did and ah...ah....he went up and he was up around Daingerfield doing something and he drove on to Texarkana and by the time he got there it was after lunch and the ah....he talked to the people and they said, 'Yeah we sold a car this morning'. And said the guy paid some cash down and said...and ah...and left his car here and was going to bring the rest of the money and he wanted to drive this new car. And ah...soand he's to be back here in a little while. Well while Max and....he contacted Sam Cotton, the FBI agent up at Texarkana...while they were there this guy came in and ah....and had...still had bait

money out of the bank with him that he didn't realize he had. And so we....we caught him right quick and brought him back to Texarkana. But the funny thing about this thing ah....after Max and them caught....well it's not funny but it's...it's...cause it's turned out the guy and I have been good friends ever since, but the police chief in Carthage at that time was new and I never had worked with him too much and ah...ah...we had a new Sheriff and ah...so when we got ready, after I made contact with this Highway Patrolman and then contact with Max and then Max called me back and said, 'We got the guy in custody and he's got some of your bait money'. And of course we gave him the serial numbers of the bait money when I called him. And ah...so, 'He's ready for ya'll to pick up'. But of course the FBI got involved in the thing and...and...and they carried him...they didn't keep anybody on the Texas side and they had....we had to extradite him out of Arkansas. Cause you know he's a state....state prisoner and I...I...if I'd of been Max I wouldn't have let him got over in Arkansas probably, but anyway he did. But the story....the funny thing about the story, after Max calls back and said we got him, well we're all down there at the bank or at the Sheriff's office, or Police Department, I don't know where we were but ah....I said....well the FBI showed up by then and of course...and...and ah...I said, 'Well Charlie you and the Sheriff why don't ya'll come go with me to Texarkana and we'll bring him back', and I said, 'Chief why don't you get your men and go ahead and the rest of these FBI agents and ya'll screen the neighborhood and see if you can get any witnesses and what they saw you know'. And that's the normal thing you do. Well ah...ah...the Chief didn't like it too much, but I didn't pay that much attention to him and we went on. And we got back and on the way back well he called us and he wanted us to bring the guy by the police station and have him fingerprinted, let him fingerprint him, and the Sheriff didn't want to do it. And I said, 'Yeah, let's take him by there'. Cause you know we get in, here we...here I am, I'm wanting to get along with the Sheriff and Police Chief both and ah....and wanting to do the job

too you know and get it done. So I said, 'Well somebody's got to fingerprint him, let's let them do it you know'. Well, you know, I knew he wasn't going to, cause if we go to the Sheriff's office I'm the one that's going to have to fingerprint him probably. So he agreed, he went by there and ah....but to shorten the story a little bit, later on the Chief told me, he said, 'I didn't like it because I didn't get to go to Texarkana with you to bring that bank robber back'. He said, 'This happened inside the city and I'm Police Chief'. And I said, 'Well Carson, let me tell you something, how I work'. I said, 'If Carson Parks had of called me'...and we're friends and we're better friends now....'and told me, Glenn we got a bank robbery down here and I need some help, Carson Parks would of been sitting in my car when I went to Texarkana to get him'. I said, 'My...my information through the Highway Patrol and through Max, that's the reason he got arrested'. But I said, 'How do you think Sheriff Spradlin would feel', I said, 'He called me and asked me to come down and help with the robbery, it's in his county and if I'd of left him here and carried you, then he would of been mad at me'. And I said, 'Now that's the way I work', and I said, 'I want you to know that, that's the way I work and then we won't have any more problems like this'. And we didn't have you know. But ah...it's...it's something that you have to use a little diplomacy I guess if that....you'd call that diplomacy, but I explained it to him in a nice way without spending a whole lot of time having to say you know, well next I'll carry you. Well next time I'll carr....he understood you know, if he calls, I'm helping him, if the Sheriff calls, I'm helping both of them. But anyway that's ah....all right then I go on....this....February the 6th I go to Monahans for Court, case postponed.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me change tapes here.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I go to Monahans to Court and I had arrested two guys, two brothers down here, in East Texas for ah...oil field equipment theFort And the Rangers out at Midland had

called me and they said that they had some information that ah...these two brothers out there were stealing and that they had a fence somewhere in East Texas. And I got to kicking around some of my old field dealers and ah...which I always did when I...somebody would have a problem and...and ah...so I went to one and he said, 'Yeah Glenn I bought a set of ah...ah...slips and elevators from these boys and it's back there in my shop'. He said, 'I wrote a check for it', and said, 'I give just about all it's worth', but he said, 'I got a three hundred dollar profit made on it and I'm going to sell it to so and so'. And I said, 'Well let's go back there and look at it'. And I went back there and identified it and I said, 'Well you got to leave it sitting here'. And he said, 'They're going to try to sell me some more'. And he said...I said, 'Well let me', said, 'Get in touch with me'. So ah...in about four or five days he calls me and tells me said, 'Glenn those guys are coming in here in the morning early, said they'd be in here waiting on me when I opened up in the morning, and they've got some more equipment'. So I got one of the deputies from Gregg County and ah...and ah...this business was over at Kilgore, so we go over there and wait on them. And about six o'clock in the morning they come rolling in pulling this trailer with all this stuff and ah...had a...had a sawed off shotgun in the pickup with them and they was enjoying their breakfast, a cold Budweiser and we arrested them of course and recovered the property that they'd stole that night. This had just been stolen that night. Of course we arrested them on a warrant that ah...that....property that I'd identified later. So of course this was stolen out there in whatever county Monahans is in, I've done forgot, but ah....that was my business out there. But...and this is another problem, that's 525 miles from here to Monahans, Texas and the Court system here, here we go, witnesses....I'm of course....me and the guy that bought the equipment over there, we're the two witnesses from East Texas. We've both got to be in Monahans and ah...and we drive out there and the lawyers come in there and make...you know, make blah, blah about fifteen minutes and the

Judge postpones us to the next term of Court. So I've driven 525 miles out there on a Sunday, spent the night, get in there Monday morning and get in my car and come back to East Texas the next day now. And this is...kind of discourages you a little bit but you can't let it get you down, that's just the way the system has to work. If I hadn't of shown up the lawyers would of probably said, 'Well let's....I want to go to trial', see because the witnesses are not there you know. And ah...so that's ...that's the way...that's kind of the way the system works. Ah...I cleared ah...ah...a drug store burglary in Hallsville and arrested four guys and we...they cleared four other drug store burglaries for us. Ah...I went to Brady on a cattle theft investigation on the 20th of February. I spent some time with DPS intelligence in Gregg County ah....checking on these cigarettes burglaries after we'd got into this thing well we started following some of them around and ah....ah....and we knew they was burglarizing safes and ah...and stealing cigarettes and so we tried to get a surveillance on them, but it didn't work out too good. But we had a source that ah...told us some of the things that they were going to do. And of course you got to...and see you got to remember this Bobby ah...the Rangers didn't have any money. The Federal folks they got those C notes they can hand out to these informants and there's plenty of them you know, if they tell them the right kind of stuff. But we don't have...we didn't have any money available to give to informants. We'd just get an old boy in a bind and say, 'You know if you want a little air well you're going to have to produce you know'. So we had one in thatand he told us that this bunch was going to ah....hit a ah...ah...safe at the sale barn at ah....between Benton and Bossier City, Louisiana. Well of course I've got a lot of friends over there in Louisiana and so I'd called one of them over there at Benton, at the Sheriff's office, and told him what was fixing to happen. And I said, 'They're going to do it in the next two or three nights according to my source and he's a pretty good source'. Well, they go down there and they sit one night and nothing happens, two deputies. And they next night they go down there

and they sit until about ten-thirty and they get hungry and so they called the State Policeman and the Highway Patrol and ask them to kind of keep an eye on the sale barn, they was going to go get something to eat. So the Highway Patrol sets up a road block right in front of the sale barn and starts checking driver's license and my four burglars get stopped right in front of the sale barn. So that blew that thing off, but ah....and they arrested them for possession of burglary tools I think. And....but ah....and then let's see ah....on 3....March 11th I'm back to Monahans to Court again and ah...and we convicted one of the brothers and ah....and he got five years. And ah....of course I've got to make another trip out there the next term of Court to try the other one you know. So that's three trips to Monahans I have make just to ah...convict two guys you know, of ah...for bringing stolen property down in East Texas. Of course they needed convicting and that's what I was getting paid for, but it ah...that's just part of the job. All right on the 14th of March, went to Dallas and ah....ah....cleared an old convict in jail up there in Dallas that I had worked and he had ah....cleared three Credit Union armed robberies in Dallas County and Tarrant County. And a lot of times they just want....they'll pick an officer they want to talk to you know and said, 'You get in touch with Mr. Mitchell or Mr. Arnold or Mr. Elliott or whoever....whatever he got on his mind, I got some business I want to clear up'. Well of course we like to clear...you know...an officers foolish if he don't clear an old....and a bur...and a thief is foolish if he don't clear himself up. You know, I generally tell them, I say now....and you know, most of the time if you've got him down solid and a bunch....and something he can get time on, well it's free anyway you know, and you clear those burglaries and get on down the road and get....but if you get down there in the penitentiary and we can make a case on you on some of these others, then you're not going to have a free ride.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll get you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...let's see...on the ah....well we a big...a...a good safe burglar came out here to Made Rite ah....drink company and get in a round doored safe, which is hard to do. He....he drilled it and ah...he had a magnetic drill and he....and a gig and he knew everything to do. But he did it like a lot of other burglars do, here he is at a drink company and I don't....I forgot how much money was in that thing, but it...you know, they had several dollars and he....and they had some....a rifle that they was giving away. And the rascal stole the rifle. And of course we had....they had the serial number on it and ah....we ran it down and ah....and later it was ah...ah...the guy that bought it, he gave it to a relative of his and ah....and it was....Dallas police department recovered it. And I went up there and...and the relative told us where it come from you know. And I ran the old boy down and...and he ah....ah....he had another case he was out on bond on, where he got caught on a job and he was fixing to go to the pen and ah....and ah....we got along real good and he ah...he cleared up nine more safe burglars for us...and drink companies from all around Texas, but mainly down around Beaumont and Houston and that way. On March 26th ah....we set on a surveillance at Elysian Field Bank for some reason or other, must of just set there one day, must of been expecting a day time robbery, cause the FBI was involved. And...and ah...on March the 28th ah....I went back to Dallas to another robber in jail up there and he cleared five robberies and one of them was the Avenger State Bank. And ah...then we had some more tire store burglaries. And this is the advantage I had, I spent a lot time in Dallas and I'd go up there and get....I'd very seldom ever go to Dallas and get with Burglary and Theft or Homicide Division up there that I didn't get information about some of our crimes down here in East Texas. Now those guys worked all the time up there and they...they worked the pawn shop details and those guys that were doing things up there or some of them were from East Texas and Louisiana and....and there was always....you could go up there and spend a couple of days and it would pay off you know. You just sit around

and listen and first you know they'd say, 'Well Glenn do you know so and so', said, 'We got him in jail'. And maybe he had a pawn ticket in his pocket and he's from Carthage, Texas you know and we go down there and look at the pawn ticket and get the serial number off the gun and run it and it's taken in a house burglary down there in Panola County you know. So I spent a lot of time up in the Dallas area just doing things like that. Ah...then ah...in ah... on 4-25 we had an industry here that was just having all kinds of complaints about ah....and this was '73 and the drugs was just getting in...you know, pretty heavy into East Texas. They'd been here but we just realized we had a problem in about this time. And...and so they was...kept on wanting some ah....somebody local to ah...ah...I mean some of our State people come in here and the company wanted to hire them as employees and get them in there. So we got this arranged and ah...and they got...we got a DPS and a narcotic officer and put him to work out there and he made some cases just right quick, I'm talking about the week he was there he started buying drugs you know. So we did some good there. I noticed on 5-4 I provided security for Governor Briscoe and ah....he was a very con....he was the most congenial Governor I guess....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Dolf Briscoe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah....that I ever....he's just a pleasure to be around. He ah...and ah...he was always just very happy and he liked the Rangers, because he...he had a big ranch down there, you know they just owned all kinds of land down there around ah...oh ah....where was he from....about 50 miles south of Carrizo Springs up there. Ah....went up in Bowie County and...and 5-11 recovered some more stolen tractors. In Federal Court in a Grand Jury case on 5-22. We had ah....ah....we had an armed robbery of a...I worked a lot of cattle theft cases and none of them very big, but ah...there was a truck, double deck truck/trailer and a tractor with two....a driver and a swamper, coming out of Mississippi hauling....had 91 head of cattle on it. And ah....between

Waskom and Marshall there was a guy flagged them down in a car and they thought they was having some kind of light trouble or something was wrong with their tractor or something, so they pulled over. And these two guys ah...high jacked them. They handcuff them, tie them up, kidnap them, take them and put them in the vehicle they was driving and one of the guys took the truck. And they got off up to....in Wise County the next day. They....they carried these people on over into Smith County somewhere off of I-20 over there about Starrville, Alman Road and carried them out in the woods and tied them to a tree. And then they carried the truck and cattle on and they were having a sale there in Decatur the next day and ah... they went pretty close to the sale barn with these cows and was down there trying to sell them. And they couldn't....finally this guy carried them....and they told them....they convinced this guy.... and of course the story went that ah....the cows needed some water and needed to be unloaded. And he had a ranch out there that a friend of his had just bought that let him use 'em and of course we ah... we used telephone records and a bunch of other things to get....putting our case together. But anyway, we recovered 91 head of cows up there and recovered the truck and the trailer and...and ah...which was a pretty good sized cow theft case. And the first one I worked I think we lost three where the guy traded them for his mother's funeral you know, there in Marshall. Ah....worked a safe burglary in Gladewater and ah....June the 3rd I'm back out to Monahans and we try that second oil field thief and they get five years a piece out there, so ah....we got ...got them set aside. And in and I'm back in East Texas in ah...on June 11th that's when I assisted....started assisting Smith County in this Ruiz murder where the Mexican was thrown in the sewer you know. Did we get into that the other night?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, we talked about that one night when we drove over to Tyler.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....anyway ah....after I first got this call on that, they suspected that....what there was, there was a colored ah....man and woman from Longview and she was

hustling those ah... Mexican-Americans that were wet backs around Tyler. They'd go over there on weekends and....and she'd make a bunch of dates and....and ah....and something happened on this case here and this...this ah...Ruiz went missing and he was later found in a sewer over there. But they...they suspected all along that this prostitute may have....and pimp, may have had something to do with it. And ah...but the next day Stuart Dowell called me and I helped him ah....in Rusk County on a pretty good murder case over there. And then ah....ah....two days later Stuart and I worked together with Tyler police and we worked a couple of old safe burglars and we cleared one safe burglar and 32 other burglaries in Tyler with two suspects over there. And like I said...I, you know...I don't...I'm not satisfied if an old thief don't clear all his business up you know when he gets.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's go back to the Ruiz case and carry this all....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'm fixing to get right back to it. All right, on the 6th and 15th, now this if four days after I get called on the Ruiz case first, well that's ah....when I interviewed this suspect over here. And Albert Champion is his name and he worked at a grocery store here in Longview, and good personality. And so I called Albert up to my office and ah....and interview him, had an office on the third floor of the courthouse and he and I'd been up there a couple of hours and we was sparring pretty good because I pressured him pretty good, you know, with what facts I had. And ah....I...I prided myself in interrogation, I just thought if a guy wouldn't tell me about it, he wouldn't tell anybody. And that's the way an interrogator should feel you know. And so Albert....I thought I had him going pretty good, but he kept wanting....he said, 'I've got to go to work Mr. Elliott, I'm going to be late to work and I'm going to lose my job'. And he had this work on his mind awful bad so I finally....I could see that I was losing.... his concentration was getting plumb off and so I said, 'Well okay Albert, I tell you what I'm going to do, I'm going to....I want you to

sign this agreement here that you'll take a polygraph test and I'm going to set up the appointment at your convenience, on your day off and we're going to take the polygraph test', cause I said, 'If you don't....as you say, if you don't know anything about this murder then I can convince the Sheriff after you take the polygraph test that you don't and if you do know well you're foolish to take it'. And ah....cause you usually tell them the truth you know. So Albert leaves and he's in a big hurry....and this was around.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did he sign?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, he signed the agreement to take a polygraph test. And ah....so I've got to call and make an appointment, and did. After he left I called and I found....I already knew when his next day off was going to be and I set up an appointment and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This was going to be in Dallas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, by then I think we got a polygraph operator in Tyler, yeah in '73 I know we do. So ah....I get ah....I'm going to contact him later, I know he's at work and I'm not going to call him at work, I got his home telephone number. So I start to leave and I get down....I'm walking out the back door of the courthouse about five o'clock and ah....they holler at me and said I'm wanted on the telephone and it was Albert. And he said, 'Mr. Elliott can you come out to my house'. And he lived out off of 16th Street, south part of Longview, 'And I need to talk to you'. And I said, 'Yeah I'll come out there'. So I got in my car and drove out there. And I drove up in his driveway and ah....he was very....he was a nervous type individual to start with, but with a good....real good personality, I'm sure that Albert was taking some drugs, probably a little speed during that time. But ah...ah....he asked me to come in through the back door from the carport. And I walked in the carport, which was in his dean area and as soon as I walked in the door he walked over....right over in the corner and pulled a TV and a stereo unit out and reached back there and

said, 'Here's the pistol that I shot that Mexican with'. Well I said, 'Now Albert just lay that pistol down there on that TV set, I'll get it in a minute and let me....I got to read you another warning here'. So of course I was giving him his miranda warning. And we set down there at the table and he told me all about it and told....named the ah... female that was involved in it with him and ah....and just laid his whole story down there to me you know. I used his phone to call the Sheriff and ah....Smith County, that's who had asked me for help and...and met with them and ah....and of course he went ahead and then we arrested the female later. But ah....Albert said, 'You treated me nice you know and I'm going to tell you about it'. And ah...then on the next day well I've got....I'm on....I go to Brownsville, I'm on my way to Brownsville.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me back up, why did they stick this guy in the sewer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they thought he....he thought he'd go on down and....and they wouldn't find his body, that was what....that was the....that's what he was hoping would happen. The rats would eat him or whatever you know. They was trying to dispose of him, they shot him and...and...and killed him and then they had to do something with him, so they just removed a man hole cover, and I guess that he was small and most Mexicans are you know, and they just stuck him in there hoping he'd go on down the sewer. It was a pretty sized sewer line you know. But he stuck in there and it....and it stopped up the sewer line and they cleaned it out and found this body you know. So ah...that's how....that's how they discovered it to begin with see. And it was kind of a messy situation you know. I'm glad I didn't get in on that. I go to Brownsville the next day and ah....to attend a Texas Police Association Conference that was being held down there. And I stopped in Kingsville, I was tired, spent the night, I guess that was Saturday night probably, or maybe Sunday night. And ah....I was thinking I was going down there to Court, but I remembered....I looked at my reports and I was going to the Texas Police Association Conference

down there. But I had my car burglarized in Kingsville and stole two guns out of my ah...ah...my State car, kicked that old State shotgun out the doggone floor board, never did recover my guns. On July the 3rd ah...had a armed robbery and assault down here on 149 at a liquor store, Watts Liquor Store, which was a tough....it was a...boy they like to beat that old man to death. He was a....he was just a good old man that drove a school bus and concrete truck and worked there at that...helped run that liquor store, I think he was part owner in it. And ah....and this black from Carthage came up and ah....and he was in such tough shape that they transferred him over to Shreveport to the hospital and he stayed over there, nobody could talk to him. And all we had to go on was ah...we had some people that saw the last customer in there was black and ah....was a salesman that had just left there. And this black came in and ah....and walked over while the salesman was in there and got a bottle of Scotch off of the counter, and very few blacks at that time drank Scotch Whiskey, and while the salesman was in there kind of killing time. And ah....and this salesman related this to us and the bottle of Scotch was still sitting there after the robbery. And ah....and we got.... I lifted some prints off this Scotch bottle and ah....we developed this suspect and ah....made him on the fingerprint on this Scotch bottle. And ah...so I went to Carthage and arrested him even before... we had him in custody before we ever ah...ever got to talk to the ah....the victim, because he was...he was just beat nearly....and we thought he was going to die. And we had a little help too from ah....but thisthis black was a bootlegger down at Carthage and....and we had some more folks that was telling us a few things. But he just left a pretty good trail, but he nearly beat that old man to death. And ah....and we went on to Shreveport later after he got well and made a picture lineup and he identified him in a picture lineup too. And we got him a lot of time in the penitentiary. Ah....ah....back in July, or about the latter part of July, we had an armed robbery of a black dice game in Marshall, Texas. You've heard of the famous ah...Sonny Fisher's ah...place that

they've been....they just closed over there at Marshall. Ah...it was out there right...oh it's ah....on the Harleton Road, right off the Harleton Road out there. Sonny was a....he was involved in....back when Paul Anderson was serv.... you know, passing the American Express money orders, well Sonny was involved in that directly. And ah....Sonny had always liked to gamble and he'd ah....he had him a pretty good dice game going out there and there was four blacks came up ah....from Houston, one of them was from Marshall originally and robbed him. And there's some white guys out there that was shooting dice with them. And they...and they got quite a bit of money, I forget how much, but several thousands of dollars was taken out there, there was a lot of folks out there shooting dice at Sonny's place....The Imperial Club was the name of it. And ah....this thing got real sticky. There was an investigator over there for District Attorney's office that was ah....this is a....there was a black named Gillis High who was.... had been to the penitentiary several times and he was main line dope addict. Andand ah....it was developed right quick that Gillis High was one of the ones involved in this thing. In fact ah...I think he ah...ah....he....yeah, he'd been up there to see his mother and he hired a guy to take him to Houston after the robbery. And ah....this got out and....and it didn't all get out just right and so ah... High ah...this investigator and a Marshall Detective went down to Houston and Houston PD had High in custody. And ah...and High tells them a story that the Chief Deputy Sheriff and Marshall set the deal up and got ah....half of the money after they'd cut up down at Houston. And ah...so they...he comes back up there with this story and ah....they run High on the polygraph and during the....of course we find out later, I did, that they let High go out and get a main line shot of dope while he was being interrogated down there, which was not right. And...and it was pretty obvious that....to me, that they were ah....that this Chief Deputy was not guilty of what....of the things he said from the circumstances around it. If he was we was going to prove that he was. They didn't have any evidence other than this main line

dope addict telling them that the Chief Deputy Sheriff of Harrison County was a main actor in this ah...robbery. So the District Attorney asked me to work on it. And I come over there and I get over there and he says, 'Glenn I want you to go to Houston and I want you to work every angle of this thing and I want to know the truth about the case'. And I said, 'Okay I will'. And this is like...oh, three or four o'clock in the afternoon and I said, 'Well tell your investigator that I'll pick him up in the morning at seven o'clock and we'll go down'. I said, 'There's not a bit of use in us driving to Houston this afternoon and getting down there and time we get to Houston and get a motel room it's...you know, it's going to be time to take the rest of the day off'. And I said, 'We can leave here in the morning at seven o'clock and be down there in time to do a days work tomorrow and whatever we need'. And so he starts looking for his investigator and he's already on his way to Houston unbeknownst to him. And he was a little out of control as far as I was concerned. And he called him to come back in and we went to Houston. And I had the luckiest....the luckiest...you know you just got....you just....luck don't go with you. He had ah....he came back now from his trip to Houston and he talked to Gillis High and he told the District Attorney and they....they ah...they indict the Chief Deputy Sheriff and ah...in front of the Grand Jury. And he tells that he's talked to this black lady down there that confirms that...that he's in....that the Chief's involved. And this is all before the Grand Jury over there and they indict the Chief Deputy before I ever get called in on the thing. So ah....we of course get on down to Houston and the first thing I said, 'Well let's go talk to this woman'. And ah....(side of tape ends).....59 exit and stop at the first telephone, he had her telephone number. And I called her and she answered the phone and I told that we needed to ah....me and...I named the investigator, I said, 'We need to come by and visit with you'. And Bobby she didn't live five blocks from that telephone, I'm not lying to you, wasn't five blocks from there. We pulled off down there and by the time she got through undoing chains and taking two by fours

off the inside of the door and you know, things was tough in Houston then, this was '73. But we get in the house and...and she opens the door first and she looks at me, 'You must be Mr. So and So', she named the investigator. I said, 'No ma'am this is him back here', I said, 'You've already talked to him', you'll remember him'. 'Well I hadn't talked to him in person I just talked to him on the telephone'. And ah....so we come in and she sits down there, she counted the money. She said, 'Yes sir, they brought...', said, 'Gillis High and I were...had a little affair going at this time and we've since broke up'. And said, 'They brought the money here, there was four of them'. And said, 'There was a boy from Marshall drove 'em down here', and said, 'They give him...', said, 'They...they...when they robbed them people they put the money and their clothes in a sack and they didn't take 'em out til they got down here, cause all of didn't none of them trust each other'. Said, 'They poured the money right out here on this table and counted it and they gave this boy two hundred dollars for bringing 'em down here'. Or whatever the number was, a hundred and he told him to get on back to Marshall. And said, 'We counted the money'. And she had a slip, she had a piece of paper there with it all written down. And each one of them got their fair share. Well the story was up here already that half of it went to the Chief Deputy, she said, 'There ain't no...', said, 'I don't like police', but she said, 'They ain't none...', said, 'This money was split up four ways, that's how it was split up cause I counted it and each man got his part and left here'. Well we took a statement from her and went right on and found that another one was there in Houston and we found him before night. He told...he confirmed the same thing, one of the ones that was involved. Ran him on the polygraph that same night. And then the next day we went down to the penitentiary at Sugarland and talked to the third one, actually I believe there was just three involved, yes just three. Talked to the third one down at Sugarland, tells us the same story. He admits the robbery ah....admits his part in it ah...but never heard of the Chief Deputy Sheriff, wasn't no money cut, we

put the money in the sack and brought it down here and we cut it up three ways. So anyway, we made the murd...the armed robbery case and got the Chief Deputy off the hook over here at Marshall. Of course wasn't...you know, but it was a political kind of a thing and ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did he go back or did he.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he went back to work, yeah. And ah....in fact the Sheriff was not going to even suspend him ah....and I guess....well I told the Chief later, I said, 'I'm responsible for the Sheriff suspending you', cause I said, 'He didn't have any business working you when you was under indictment and you know he didn't and he never would of gotten elected Sheriff again if he had of', you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was the Sheriff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Fletcher Shivers was the Sheriff. Ah....then ah....of course I made...we had to make two or three trips to Houston before this was all over ah...but it took awhile. But I see I'm...I got to go to Dallas on the 28th of July, two days later, for riot control and that had to be on a weekend. Ah...on July the 30th that's two more.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me ask....let me interrupt you, did you ever work any riots?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, we went....we was up at Dallas expecting to on this one and it was some problems they was having with ah....it was a racial problem but ah....oh I see....if I ever worked....yeah I worked a riot over here at Marshall College, remember that one.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean where there was actually burning and looting and shooting and you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....ah...no, huh uh. No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: More on the terms of the....you know, the LA type.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. You know I was out there on the anniversary of the Watts and they was having a little problem. No I never did...I never did get....but we thought we was going to get involved with something like that up in Dallas and they was expecting that, but it didn't happen. And I'm sure our presence maybe had a little something to do with it too you know, probably. On July the 30th ah... that's two days later ah...I got called in on a fraud....cattle theft fraud over at Marshall and this was a very....this was an interesting case. This guy ah....was from Tennessee and ah....he ah....he later cleared ah....ah.....well he did the same thing in Monroe, Louisiana, Jonesboro, Arkansas ah.... Savasota, Mississippi, Oklahoma City and Henderson, Kentucky. And what he was doing, he lived in Memphis, Tennessee and ah....he had him a pretty good ah....ah...that's just part of the report, he had him a pretty good ah...pickup truck and he'd go in an area like Marshall, Texas and he stopped over around Waskom and was driving around out in the country and he saw this black guy out there tending to some cows and calves. And ah....and he pulled up in there and he told him he wanted to buy a pretty good sized yearling, he said he had a cow that lost her calf and what would he take for it. And he...and he priced him and he just bought it, paid him cash. Carried that calf right on into Marshall to the sale barn and sold it and ah...and got paid by check. Now drives right on to Memphis, Tennessee and takes that check and makes it a bigger....another check...counterfeits one for like two thousand dollars more. Comes back Monday morning when the banks open in Marshall, Texas and they know this sale was Saturday ah....man is there Monday morning when the bank opens with two thousand, thirty-five dollar check or whatever it was, from Marshall Livestock and the bank cashes it and he gets in his truck and leaves. Well he was doing that all over the country and ah....so we had a Deputy Sheriff over at Tyler then and we was using some composites, but he was a real good artist, his name was Kacebeer (?). And I called over there....and he like cattle cases andand the Sheriff sent him over there to Marshall and he....and

we carried him....we went down to the bank and ah....a Highway Patrol Sergeant, G.O. Cooper's wife worked there at the bank, she was one of our witnesses. And ah...they....we made an artist conception of this guy and then we started working...or I just started working on it and got out a bunch of bulletins. And he got arrested out of Amarillo later. And ah...and he wouldn't admit anything and he was trying to do the same thing out there. He had bought a calf out there and was carrying it to the sale barn and...but he hadn't ever got into his ah... into his deal you know, he was just getting ready to. So they arrested him for us and the Sheriff goes out there and gets him and ah....and they bring him back and ah...he walks in the basement of the courthouse over there at Marshall and sees this artist conception on the bulletin board there and told the Sheriff, he said, 'Who did that'. And said, 'One of the Rangers got that done, I don't know the guys name'. And he said, 'Well I want to talk to him'. He cleared up all his business, he said, 'I looked like I was looking in a mirror'. He said, 'I knew you had me'. Of course we got him on handwriting and we found out....got his equipment up there and the....and the FBI got interested in it too, because he was moving around all over the state. But ah....he was doing quite well for himself. And ah....and those kind of forgeries....of course that was a counterfeit forgery is what that was, it'sit's a little more interesting than just your average ah....paper hanger. Ah....had lots of Court that year, by George just looked like every time I...I'm in Court somewhere doing something and of course that's good, that's where you want to go. I had to go back to Sugarland on ah...on the 20th for something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now wait a minute, this guy would....the pickup he was driving had a Mississippi tag registeredoh to Sheryl, I looked at that first and thought it said Sheriff. Never mind, go ahead.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....in ah....in '73 ah...ah...we had another tough murder case over at Marshall, Texas, it was Kirkendale was the guys name. His father was a lieutenant....was a captain

on the Fire Department, he was a butcher at a local grocery store and ah...they...of course the Sheriff's office called me. He was found out north of Marshall ah....shot, laying on.....laying in a ditch out there. I think his car was recovered somewhere, I didn't look through the file. But we worked on that thing a long time and I'll get into a little bit more as we go along here. Ah...ah...and in the meantime I...I assisted ah... T.C. Blocksum over at Minden, Louisiana was Chief Deputy Sheriff over there and ah....and T.C. was a good officer. He had a young boy named Kent over there who's presently running for Sheriff, he's going....the Sheriff's election is in August I think in Louisiana. And I heard from him the other day and ah...they...I'm going over there to see him here in a few days. And Blocksum called me "The Mountie", that's what ah...that's what he called me, I mean still the Ranger, everybody else in the country called me a Ranger but T.C., Top Cat Blocksum, I called him Top Cat, and he called me The Mountie and we just had the best relations of anybody you ever saw. And he was a good hard working, tall, thin ah....I never will forget, T.C. taught me....when this miranda warning first come out....and I worked a lot in Louisiana. They...I was in Louisiana a lot and I'd worked with T.C. a lot. This is the first time that I remember mentioning his name but ah....and I worked with him a lot after that. And he's Police Chief there in Minden right now and Fire Chief. T.C. would ah...we had an old boy in his office one night up there that we'd arrested and it was time to give him a miranda warning. It had to be a case I'm working because I...you know, I'm over there in Minden, Louisiana and....and T.C. said, 'Now Herman...', he talked like a little Cajun, he said, 'There's some things here we've got to tell you'. And he said, 'Now I don't believe in this but #1, you've got a right to remain silent'. And he'd read that line to him. And he said, 'Now this ain't exactly like me and the Mountie here like to see but #2...', and he'd go ahead and give him his warning a piece at a time you know. And then we'd get down to talking. And most of time we'd find out what we wanted to know. I noticed I go back up

into....I have to go up into Oklahoma. This is '73 and if you remember....I don't know where you were in '73, but we....gas was rationed, we had a gasoline shortage in 1973. And ah... Henry Mize, a Deputy Sheriff that worked over at Marshall, Henry's dead now, he...he moved on over here and lived out here in Harrison County somewhere and was a policeman here in Longview, he had heart trouble. And Henry would work...was working for the Sheriff's office in Marshall at that time and he and I worked a lot together. So we have to go up into Oklahoma and this is on a weekend, this is on a Sunday as I remember, I know it had to be cause on the 10th I'm in Tyler on...in court on this Ruiz case, which would have been Monday. So we're up in Oklahoma and we're having to stop at every little old town, they wouldn't sell you but five or six gallons of gas at a time then. And we had, had to stop afraid we'd run out of....wouldn't have enough gas to get home. We went way up in Oklahoma and talked to two boys in this Kirkendale murder case and...and ah...we thought that they were our main suspects and they were. And I'm going to get into '74 just a little bit here. And ah...but ah...I did....we did a lot of work on this Kirkendale case. This...these boys were....this was when dope first started getting around and some of these associates of his was practicing a littlesmoking a little pot and one of our main suspects was another fireman, who was a good friend of this Kirkendale through his daddy and it was a touchy situation. And...and ah...and we used polygraph some in this and the polygraph kind of leaned their way. And I don't know what those guys were doing but ah...ah....Henry ah...thought they was just guilty as sin. And I was beginning to suspect that they were, cause we'd spent a lot of time....we went up in Oklahoma and talked to one of them. And ah...and talked...of course the other one was still working at the Fire Department. But anyway, we worked that thing and worked it and worked it and finally ah...ah...we solved it. And ah...it wasn't....they weren't involved, there was some blacks involved in it. And ah....Henry and I, we got some information that one of them got shot, he was messing with a little girl in the projects

over there and he got shot and they carried him to Shreveport to the hospital. And ah...this girl's mother told us that ah...she thought he knew something about the Kirkendale boy and he had told her daughter. And her daughter....I think the daughter was 12 or 13 years old and ah...this big old black boy was messing with her. And so we go over there to talk to him. And that rascal broke out in a cold sweat, he convinced us that he was about to die, in fact we even ah...called the nurse in there. And ah....we just wasn't getting anywhere at all with him and of course you don't....you don't press anybody when...you know, their in the hospital. We just went over there to ask him a few questions and ...and ah...by George he...he....I thought he...you know he put on a good act. We came back thinking well you know, if he lives well we'll talk to him later. Next day he was released from the hospital. And this mama of this girl called us and said, 'He's back over here'. And she's the one that shot him to start with and ah....that's how come he's in the hospital. And we went and picked him up and he told us about killing the Kirkendale boy and had two people with him. And ah...ah....just putting the act on us, but he did a pretty good job. Of course you know, like I say, if you're in the hospital and some guys ah....he's in the hospital to begin with you sure can'tthere's no place to interrogate anybody in the hospital to begin with. Ah....on January the 7th, '74 the Elysian Field bank was robbed again. Boy I made a career out of the Elysian Field bank. Five blacks ah....they kidnapped a school boy and took his car. And I want to show you how smart they were, they wee not ah....ah....scientist by no means. Ah....they ah...they were from Dallas and ah....they drove his car back to Dallas, they used it to rob....no they didn't, they abandoned his car over here somewhere, but they stole a tape player out of it. And they've already robbed the bank in Elysian Field, Texas of what money they got and steal the tape player out of the car, the get away car. And get a lead on them up at Dallas and get up there and find their car, find the tape player and had the boys driver's license number written on the bottom of it. So we made cases on five bank

robberies, of course it took two or three trips to Dallas to do it. I think....let's see....well I see here where we ah....we arrested them on January the 23rd and the robbery happened on January the 7th and ah....then two days later we got two of them, two days later we got the other three. Ah....then ah....on January....in between times ah....we cleared some burglaries, two...oh yeah ah....old Charles Mathis' boy, Charles Robert Mathis, Jr. ah.....he was following his daddy's footsteps and he....we arrest him and he clears up two burglaries and three thefts and one of them was some cattle up in Upshur County and ah....just right in the family. And his thefts was in Upshur and Nacogdoches County, so we got little Mathis in the penitentiary where he belonged. Ah....then ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I doubt it, but ah....I don't have any way of....I don't have any idea, but surely somebody....he's probably done himself in by now. Then ah....you remember talking about....see everything comes back to you just about it. Here'shere's little Mathis, his daddy has just died a year ago or so well yeah, '72 wasn't it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum....ah...'71.

GLENN ELLIOTT: In '71 and ah....here he is out stealing still. Then a day or two after that I get a telephone call from the Grammars you know, that burglarize Elysian Field....the first case I worked in Elysian Field and then they burglarized a bunch of other banks around, including my home town. Well I get a call from one of the Grammar boys wives in Los Angeles, California, crying, she was at the airport, late at night, 'Mr. Elliott I'm....I need to talk to you, Jerry and them are back at it again and they robbed a bank out here and they've stole a car and they burglarized a bank and so and so, and Jerry whipped up on me tonight and I'm at the airport'. And I said, 'Well

you got enough money to have got an airplane ticket', I said, 'Come on to Dallas and I'll have somebody pick you up there in the morning'. And I called the FBI and they picked her....met her at the airplane and we set her down....brought her down here and set her down in my office and she told us all about another round that they'd made robbing....actually it was a Savings and Loan that they robbed, it wasn't a bank, but it was the sameit was a federal offense. Told us where they stole the car and the whole thing and we sent them back to the pen again. So you know, things like that just...they come back around to you. And ah... ah...all right in January the 15th ah....I had another....a source tell me about who had committed a safe burglary in Overton, Texas and where they....there was a business over there where they had some money and a lot of guns. And ah....so got to working on it a little bit and ah...it winds up that there's one of the Gregg County Deputies is involved in this thing and when we get through with this case here well we'll stop. But ah....he ah....ah....he was a Vietnam veteran and a double amputee from Vietnam and he was on pills pretty heavy and he was working as a dispatcher for the Gregg County Sheriff's office. And these two old thieves ah...Danny Aldridge and Jimmy McCarskey and ah....they was wanting him to set some things up for them, some burglaries, and this all comes out in this Tom Welch thing, later the FBI gets into this and I'll get to that. And ah....so ah....this boy that's a deputy ah....is running around with them, meeting them some at night and he knows about this burglary at Overton. And this is where I got my information, from him. And there's a night captain that was working up there supervising him and so he goes to the Sheriff and tells him, the night captain did, that this Deputy has got some information that these boys are wanting him to set up some burglaries for them. And they think that he's wanting to go bad and he don't want to go bad and blah, blah, blah and he wants to be a policeman and he wants to get out of dispatch you know and get out there and really be an investigator or whatever. And so the Sheriff tells the night captain says, 'Well get with the

Ranger and ya'll work...let him work with you, cause they may decide to burglarize something outside Gregg County and he needs....we need to have him in on it'. So the Sheriff tells me, 'You get with the night captain and he's going to set this boy up and we're going....and ya'll talk'. And so I come in from Dallas one night, roll in there at ten, eleven o'clock and the captain was there and he worked week nights and I told him I said, 'You know I'm ready to get with this boy now and let's get this deal started'. Well he....I got the run around and the captain was really wanting to do it himself I discovered and so I didn't have time to mess with it all that much anyway. But to make a long story short, they go ahead and set up a fake burglary out at the County Barn out here. This all comes out later in a trial.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well who is the captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...I can't even remember his name to tell you....he didn't impress me. He was a smart guy, he had an education, he'd worked for an oil company and ah...but he wasn't a very good policeman. And ah....I've got his name, it's in my reports, but ah....anyway, they go ahead and set up a deal out here and try to ah...catch these guys. And this boy plants a seed that there's a safe out here at the County Barn and...and...and they call the County Commissioner and they let him....he said, 'Yeah, ya'll can set up out there'. And sure enough those guys come out there. And one of the Deputies moved around and they saw them and they ran. And ah....so they are telling this boy, this deputy, all the time...these two thieves, he's got to prove himself to them. So in the meantime I'm gone to ah....let's see what happens to me ah....I arrest those blacks and ah....I'm going to get back to this in just a minute. I go to Florida and spend a week in the meantime and ah....oh I've got another murder I need to get back to after while. But ah...this thing went on for some time and ah...I'm trying to see where I...all right, on February the 24th I go to Miami, Florida and go to a week's school down at Biscayne College on blood stains. Best school I've ever

attended, and we'll get back to that a little bit later. All right...and I get back from Florida on ah...the 1st of March I guess and on the 2nd well I get ...the Sheriff's office calls me, which was a Sunday I'm pretty sure and most of the time it was. And ah... there had been a prostitute murdered at the Pines Motel in Kilgore, Texas and another one left for dead, shot both of them in the head and stabbed them both. And ah....they ah...they had asked for some....they'd asked for some assistance in it. So I got over there that day and worked with the deputies and did everything we could at the crime scene, like you're supposed to. And ah...then we develop some information through some sources that ah....that this deputy is the one that committed this murder. They got a partial license plate number one, when he registered, he registered in there and brought a female with him. And there was a lot of evidence that pointed right straight to this deputy over there and he'd been seen messing around over there a little bit. So we started....we developed him as a suspect in this murder pretty soon. All right on the...on the 5th I fly some evidence to Austin in the case, handwriting, ah...he filled out the card at the...the registration card. Got some of his handwriting....his application to jail, flew it down to Austin and they made him on handwriting, that he filled the card out and was our main suspect. So that ah...that gave us probable cause to ah...to think that he was the one, but we get a picture of him then and put in a picture line up and we take it over to Tyler. And this prostitute that survived ah....she's in Tyler, but her...she's shot in the head and her mouth and jaw's all wired together, she can't talk and it's a pathetic situation. She was just in terrible shape, her head was swollen, but she had one eye that was open pretty good and ah...and she just was on the point of death for awhile. But she was coming along, but she couldn't say a word and we just....but she could hear you know and understand. And we carried a picture line up over there, me and one of the deputies, I think the Chief Deputy Cochran and laid it out in front of her and that dad gum gal managed to smile. And she took her finger and she liked to pushed it

plumb through deputy's picture. We just asked her, said if you can identify one of these six or eight, I don't know how many we had in there and they was all....of course you could just open up a folder and look at them and ah...well just...just point at it. She liked to stuck her finger plumb through that table punching that picture. And of course we had her acknowledge that, that was the one and she can't talk you understand. And then we get a warrant for this boy, we arrest him and ah....he ah... he takes me and one of the deputies and....where his clothes...he'd hid his clothes, threw them out in the woods...that he wore the night....got a lot of blood on them. Told us who the female was with him, told us where he threw the gun and a knife in a creek out here and we get...we go out there the next day and drag the creek and find both of them, using magnets and ah....made the case. And got him a life sentence in Court and him a double amputee, for killing a prostitute. And that's what he needed to get. And then when we arrested him, we got a warrant for him, arrested him over at Henderson and ah....and he ah...ah...he had just...just...oh I don't know how much pills...he just had ...just pills, sacks and sacks of dope. And that was his problem, he'd been...he'd been taking a lot of dope and ah...I guess he got hooked on it when he was in the hospital or something. But that was his main problem, outside of that dope you know ah...he had a good reputation in the community where he lived, but he just got involved in this thing. Let's shut it off here and then we'll come back.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well before we do that, I want to ask you one question. You said that school you went to down at Biscayne Bay was the best school you ever attended, why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what, it's ah...I attended a lot of good schools. But there's so much...I guess the reason it was a school is because I could....I applied what I learned down there in a lot of cases I worked after that and it was very effective. And then ah...Charlie Neal, the Ranger stationed in Lufkin and myself, we were the only two Rangers that went, and we was

supposed to critique the school too and report back to the Senior Ranger Captain in the academy down there. They was wanting to come to Austin and teach the same school but it was very expensive. It was ah...it was a Professor out of New York City that perfected all this and he was good and he had a couple of aids with him. And I think for a weeks school, you know, it cost like then in '73, around \$20,000.00. And ah....he was wanting to come to Austin and they courted old Charlie and I pretty good, they really wanted us to....and we came back and ah....and the first thing we did was we met with Captain Wilson and told him that....how good a school it was. But old Charlie and I....there's a lot of it that's not practical. They used it out here in the O.J. Simpson case you know, ah....you could tell....you could tell by calculation how fast a subjects moving when he bleeds, if you're good in mathematics. And there's just so much that you can tell about blood and this is coming out...you see it at...well I've testified as an expert witness in it myself and I'll tell you another case next week that I worked and I used it in, several of them. And ah...and then we instructed....Charlie and I told the captain, said, you know, we can instruct in six or eight hours of school all that a Ranger or the average officer out here on the beat needs to know about this blood, to recreate a crime scene and we did. And we taught in a lot of academies ever since then, Charlie and I both, we'd go down there together.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You still doing any?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I hadn't since I retired. Of course they...they have since....we...you know, it's all changed and now they're paying for this you know. They're probably paying....they're still teaching it but they're probably paying somebody now to do it you know. You know how the bureaucracy works and citizens get good things out of things and some....but we did this for ten, twelve or fifteen years, taught it in school, Charlie Neal and I did, and very effectively I thought. And used it in a lot of cases. See if you can learn something and then you

can....see this is how...this is how the Rangers made it you know, we...here we are like when we started off, we go out here when I get on the Rangers, I got two counties that don't even have a fingerprint kit, that I'm working. You know, and I've got one. So who they going to call when they want somebody to take some fingerprints. Well that's what we're wanting them to do, is call us you know. Because if I hadn't got anything to do I'm not earning my money see. And if I can help them and then they going to want Glenn to come back and help them again you know. And ah....so any training that we could get that the local officers didn't have, well it just enhanced our job and made us better hands and so I applied this thing good. Well I'll tell you another case next week when we get together. Let'slet's shut her down, I'm ready to shut it down.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, June 5, 1995, this is a continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn I think you said you needed to back and clean up a few things.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we...I think we stopped about ah....we...here in ah...I skipped a little bit. We got on that arresting those folks on another one of the Elysian Field bank robberies down there. And ah....I noticed in February of '74 well we was back up in the Lone Star area for a little while, the trucker's had a strike up there, it didn't last long. And then on February the 5th, this is something that I didn't get in there before and it seemed like I got over into another area maybe. Ah...but on February the 5th the Fire Chief in Gladewater, Texas....this was the strangest thing....case that I'd worked in some time. The Fire Chief ah....there was an old honky tonk operator out there on 271....at that....at this time there was a lot of old honky tonk's out there on 271 towards Tyler and this Thad West was this guy's name and he was mean old cuss and...and...but it was mean folks went to his honky tonk you know and he run pretty good, he really didn't have a whole lot of trouble, if he did he took care of it himself. But anyway, Thad got drunk and set his honky tonk on fire. He got to fighting with his wife and his help or

something and ah....well the fire department went out there to put it out and he started shooting and he killed the Fire Chief, well....and ran. And ah....and of course ah....we looked for him for two or three days ah...ah...I know the water was up, the river was up and we knew...and he couldn't go ah....but two ways. But he got out of there and...and finally he surrendered himself to the ah....to...to...to us through his lawyer up at Gilmer. But ah...ah...this was unusual, I...and of course we have firemen shot at now you know in places and areas, but this was just a...a doggone honky tonk you know, and he set it on fire and the fire department come out there and ah...and ah...and he killed the Fire Chief. And ah...so we found him and tried him and I don't remember....I didn't look to see how much time he got.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was his official reason?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was....he was...he wanted his place to burn, he was ready to burn it down, he didn't want the fire department to put it out. Told them not to put it out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean....but I mean, he went into court and said that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, that's what he was arguing out there that day. Yeah I...I think he went ahead and pled guilty and took a life sentence.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....as I remember, but ah....he said, that was my honky tonk and I wanted it to burn. And of course he was drunk and...you know, and his wife hol....you know, she was the one that called the fire department you know, she didn't want it to burn. But ah....it was kind of a domestic, along with a lot of drunk stuff there. In February we worked ah....we...we get a right smart a work on narcotic bust out. They would have a....they'd come into an area and work undercover you know and then they'd get some sealed indictments and then they had to have some help because they wanted to protect their undercover agents and they didn't want

them out arresting. And they'd call on the local officers and we'd always help and ah...we'd ah...we would ah...go out and make the arrest for them. And they always wanted to do it at night and I finally talked them into it just a little while after this ...in this area, they...Narcotic people liked to go out...liked to work at night. They thought that's the time to work 'em and they'd always get more dope you know. And I finally convinced them the best time to make a narcotic arrest was the first thing in the morning, just after daylight. They'd always be up high and raising cane, they'd all be laying on the bed asleep you know and ah...before they got high again. Ah...I went to ah...and we tried old Albert Champion in February for the Ruiz murder and he got 15 years, I looked that up. Ah...ah...then I think I....did I get into going to Miami to that blood school last week?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I thought I skipped down to that. Ah...ah...I don't know how...I believe...I guess that's what we got down to ah...and I got into this Beverly Saxton murder didn't I? And we went through it, the prostitute over at ah...the Pines Motel in Kilgore?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay. And ah...yeah, I thought of something else that I didn't...I think didn't put in on that. There was only one good thing came out of that...all those prostitute arrests we was making up at Texarkana. This is how we had to identify her, this...her pimp didn't even know her name. She had a...she had a name that...nickname that gave her as a prostitute and he didn't even know her real name. And we fingerprinted her here after she was killed and ah...so we sent the prints into Austin and Austin showed that ah...identified her as being arrested up at Texarkana. And it was one of the arrests that we made up there and we had her real name. And

of course, you know, if you got a murder victim, you got to identify them in court, so that's one of the good things that came out of those Texarkana.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever have any Jane or John Does?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, not for....

ROBERT NIEMAN: From murders?

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah....I did until we identified 'em, yeah...you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean, any that....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, not even then, I never buried anybody that....in a case that I worked that we didn't identified them. But they have you know, this is not unusual for it to happen. But it's not...it's always better to have identification you know and it makes it much easier. Ah....so we got through...yeah I...we got through the Burkes deal. All right, we're down into March and ah....ah....we made an arrest in the Kirkendall that we'd been working in Harrison County of the butcher whose daddy was captain in the fire department and we arrested three people ah....in that Kirkendall case and we got statements from them ah....and....admitting what they did. And then I...ah...Briscoe spent a lot of time up here, I provided security for him ah....again in April of that year. And I was up in Hugo, Oklahoma ah....the Police Chief up there had an old....one of the old Anderson boys out that ah...Lewis Rigler's very familiar with, out of Dennison, they was good safe burglars. And ah...they caught him on a job up in ah....and he wanted to talk to me and I went to Hugo and...and ah...worked him a little bit. And ah....I worked with a detective from ah....Salem, Kansas ah...on a swindle case that year. And we worked with a lot of officers from out of State, a lot of officers come out of State and...that we'd meet at different conferences and ...and you know, the officers don't know the officers in Texas....local officers. And...and they got to finding out that they contact the Rangers, and this is good because

it gives us more contacts you know. And of course we're in school with some of them you know, like when I was down at Miami in the school, well I met a Canadian Mounted policeman was down there and ah...and he and I had some contacts on a case later.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me interrupt you, did you ever have any....when you worked with other States that you felt were oh at least similar to Rangers, even though they weren't called Rangers, but I mean in competence and ability and....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah ah....those Canadian Mounties were pretty....pretty good ah...they're pretty good hands. They were well trained and well disciplined officers. And ah...and they...they did the job in Canada kind of like we do here. And in nearly every state...Oklahoma had O...what they call OSBI and Arkansas had an investigative team ah....Louisiana never did have one, they had a little...they had some State intelligence officers but....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Tennessee has the TBI, Tennessee Bureau of Investigation.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and ah....this ah...ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Does Arizona have it's Rang....have their Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Arizona?

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Arizona Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't think so. I may...I've only been out to Arizona twice, I went out to ah...ah...Phoenix working that bank burglary one time and then ah...and I went to ah...ah....oh somewhere out there to court ah....in an armed robbery case. But I never did...I don't think....I don't think they had that kind of help out there. We had some election problems in Smith County that year and I...for some reason or other I had to go over there. I imagine whoever was stationed in Tyler in '74 was gone somewhere, off duty or something. Ah...ah...in...on 5-10....this is an interesting case here on ah...of '74. The Sheriff's office called me in Marshall and

Interstate 20 was open then and they ah...they found a body down pretty close to this ah....Scottsville exit down there where we've been intending to go, ah...they found a body down there on the side of the road in the west bound lane. He had a fresh hair cut and it was a homemade hair cut and he was bound, he had bindings but there's....they wasn't strong bindings but they had cloth bindings like you just wrap a sheet up, around his hands and around his neck and the body....and he was dead, laying there on the side of the road and a young man.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Inside or median or the outside?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, outside. It was obvious that he was thrown from a moving vehicle or jumped from a moving vehicle, going west in the outside lane. And ah...so we...of course I get...I go to the scene and ah...we get folks out there, so we decide to have an autopsy and ah...the Judge did. And this is...this is an interesting case because of the Judge and ah....and I don't show any disrespect in these Judges. But this was an old Judge that had been Justice of the Peace a long time over there and he comes out and the Sheriff and us all agree that we need an autopsy. And Harrison County had a doctor over there and still got him I think, does most of their autopsies....Palmer I believe is his name. Did you ever.... I don't know whether you ever knew him. Anyway, he's good, he's good, he had been in the military and did a bunch of autopsies and he was real interested in that kind of work. And anyway ah....he told us that ah....he found a foreign substance in his lungs that was unusual and he couldn't identify it. And ah...he said he was dead when he was....when he hit the ground, he was skinned up pretty bad, he had several cuts and bruises on his body. He rolled quite a ways and ah...he said he was dead before he ever hit the ground the first time. There wasn't....there wasn't any abrasions on his body that didn't happened til af....that happened until after death you know. So, that's all we had. Well we worked around on it that...until....he performed the autopsy that day, the body was found early in

the morning. And ah...so about five...four thirty, five o'clock in the afternoon we...ah...Henry Mize, a Deputy, finally came over here and worked with the city....Henry and I went over....I said, 'Let's go over to Shreveport'. I said, 'Let's...you know, it was west bound, it's got to be somebody over that way'. So we went over there to see if they had any missing persons and we carried his fingerprints with us....we printed him. And we always print all the deceased....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long had he been dead when ya'll found him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it...it ah....it's pretty hard...I don't think he determined...but ah...he said less than twenty four hours.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Well I was thinking about that other case.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, no he was in good shape.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and of course it hadn't started getting all that hot yet here in ah...ah...May you know. So we go to Shreveport and take his fingerprints. And Shreveport PD had just completed....they...they had....they had one of the most up to date departments over there that....nearly....them and Caddo Parish both, they had the money over there you know and Louisiana's got a lot more money to spend locally in most cases than a lot of East Texas Sheriffs and police departments. And they had some good equipment there and they had a good guy running it and he's dead now. And ah....he identified this guy for us. That....we hadn't been over there just...oh less than an hour I guess, by six thirty he had him identified by fingerprints. And they had handled him as a juvenile and they'd handled him a bunch of times. And ah...he was a glue sniffer and a burglar. And so we finally run down ah...we stay over there that night and...and start getting out and looking and the next day we're back over there and ah....and ah...we find that ah...the two guys that he was running with and got...brought them in. And they

admitted....they had slipped....one of them had slipped his daddy's car out, drove it out of the driveway after they had gone to bed. They went down and bought some lighter fluid, that's what they were sniffing, and ah...they said that this binding ah....this was something that they did to cut the circulation off in here after they inhaled and they got an empty milk carton and they opened the top of it up just right so they could get their mouth and nose down over it and poured....and they was each sniffing this...and he was sniffing. And he was a passenger in the right front seat and he was cutting this circulation off, they described it to us just exactly how they was doing it. And each one of them, they'd been doing it you know for a long time. And he got him a big lung full of that stuff and they said he just went back and flipped and he was dead. And they couldn't revive him , they tried to, they were driving....they were driving down Interstate 20, still in Louisiana and...and... they think, they're not sure. And they get...they get....the further they go and they know he's dead, so they decided, well let's just push him out and go on back home and put the car up and nobody will never know we're gone you know. And that's what they did. Well ah...we...they told us this, we runthey run 'em on polygraph, shows it truthful and this fit the story, because it...you know, doctor says he's got some foreign substance in his lungs and that it probably caused his death you know. And it was you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well in this case, let's assume that it was...he definitely died in Louisiana....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:no question about it, and they dumped him in Texas, who's got jurisdiction?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, wherever the body is, is where the jurisdiction lies, yeah. But ah...in this case we don't have a case, we're....this is a....this is actually an accidental death is what it is. They didn't murder the guy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Suicide.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And ah....so after we got the stories all together, took statements from these boys about what happened and....and carried the proof back over there and we confronted the Justice of the Peace of course, cause we....you know we didn't have no open murder. 'I've already ruled murder and I can't change my mind'. And he didn't. As far as I know thatthat ah....that Judge (tape ends).... Bobby, this is just another example that shows you, if you got good relations, and you got to have good relations, and the more you work in these areassee we went right straight to the police department in Shreveport, Louisiana with a set of fingerprints that we'd taken an hour before at the morgue and ah....and got this guy identified. And everybody over there is wanting to help us. And by the time we get back over there the next day they've already got these two kids located that was with him you know, that ran with him. And ah....and had 'em....had 'em down there waiting on us at the police department. And of course it took us the rest of that day to question them and run them on the polygraph. But we resolved this case over there you know, just strictly through cooperation with other agents.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let's lay all modesty aside right now and go just on pure facts here. What was your....I don't know what ya'll would call it, but your solving of cases, percentage compared to other Rangers, at least in Company B?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn't even try to keep up with the record, I didn't. I didn't because ah...ah.... I worked a lot of cases you know and I had good luck in them, but I didn't try to keep any record of I hadn't made any.....how much more work I did than anybody else.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'm not talking about more work, I'm talking about

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn't try to do that either. See I wasn't even familiar with how....disposition, just like I toldyou know we were talking about those truckers and Bob Mitchell, I didn't know.....that's Bob, I knew Bob turned that in, you know. I went over there and testified, but a lot of my cases I had to know....and I don't hang around the courthouse waiting on the verdict. I got other things to do. I mean I see officers do that, they waste three days

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well case in point is this case we was talking aboutthat we were just talking about, the Tyler case, of course we ah.....were beginning and just come back from it. When I asked Mitchell how that come out and he said that they almost broke Tyler (unintelligible).....spending so much.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. And I think he said....didn't he say they got about 15 years.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. See....but ah... I don't....see I don't stay around, a lot of officers do. And you'llyou can read my reports, when I go to court..... when I get off....when they say I'm finally dismissed, and then while I'm sitting out there waiting, I'm trying to do something else around.....that I could do around the area there and be available and still be there. But a lot of officers will stay in court until the jury comes out and get the verdict. And sometimes it takes a jury a day or two. Not me, when they dismiss me.... I know I can read it in the paper or come back to the Clerk's office and check the record next month or next year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But, would not Crowder or Burke or whoever your captain happened to be, could....did it not ever come up there....look here what Glenn's done, now why aren't you guys doing something comparable.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, I don't know. That would not have been I wouldn't have liked it that away. Ah.... I never had it but one time, Bill Wilson when he was Senior Ranger Captain, and we had a Ranger that wasn't doing anything and ah....much, and he was fixing to move him. And....and he was up here and he....and he did the investigating himself, which he should, he just told the captain, he said, 'I'm going to come up there and I'm going to show you'. And he brought all of our reports up there and he came....he was out in the field and talked to all of us. And he come to talk to me and ah.....and that's the way Bill was, he said, 'What do you think about old so and so'. He said, 'I think I'm fixing to move him'. And you know, I told him my.....my opinion was that you know....don't... ain't no... your just moving one problem from one place to another you know. If you got somebody that's not doing his job well let him find him another one you know. That was my attitude. And he said, 'Well I just want to show you what you're doing in comparison to him'. And I said, 'I don't care about seeing it'. 'Well I want to show you anyway'. And of course if it's the Senior Ranger Captain sitting there telling you he's going to show you, and he shows me my activity in....in comparison to this guy's.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But they had to have this stuff Glenn, I mean I don't....I don't know whether.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it was.....yeah it was available, this is how they

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean, how would they judge whether a Ranger was doing his job or not if they don't have.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it was available, but I never was interested in it. I never did like to be compared with anybody. I enjoyed my work Bobby and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'm not questioning that, what I'm saying is, you were making it tough probably on other people

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, everybody thought I worked too much. Even my captain, I've had.... I had two Captains, I had a Highway Patrol Captain tell me and Captain Crowder, in my career, both told me said, 'Glenn you're working a lot harder than you have to'. But I liked to work you know, I just loved to work. I...when I was on patrol....and I don't say this boastfully....when I was on the Highway Patrol we....we had to serve a lot of warrants. We had to serve a lot of police demand orders, back when they passed this safety responsibility act. We had to investigate a lot of accidents and we issued summons and warnings you know. Tyler had a man that didn't do anything but serve warrants and police demand orders, that's all he did. I served more police demand orders and warrants than he did. Investigated more accidents than anybody in the Company and generally did my other job pretty good and liked it you know. And captain.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'm not criticizing you Glenn, but what I'm saying is, why wasn't somebody down at Austin saying, way are we getting this productivitywhy are we getting more productivity out of these other people if we got this guy, sure he's a workaholic, so let's just cut him down to say 75% and make that the norm.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'll tell you what Austin did, they kind of let....unless some guy wasn't doing anything at all, Austin would let the Captains run the Companies, that's what it amounted to. And we liked it that away. And I guess that those guys were pleasing the Captains, I don't know. But you know, it was up to the captain and ah...the Company as a whole was always.....this is how they generally graded everybody, by Company or by area you know on the Highway Patrol. So our Company ah...Red worked a lot cases and Jim worked a lot and Bob Mitchell worked a lot of cases and I worked a lot of cases and Max worked a lot of cases andand so consequently our Company when they started grading down at Austin, Company B

worked so many criminal cases and made so many arrests and so many years in the penitentiary, well we were always in the top Company or close to 'em and so the captain never did get any heat on it you know. Cause everybody, even some of the guys in Dallas didn't get to do a whole lot of work you know and....or some other station. So I think that's what they looked at was at the end of three month period or whatever they kept score in and the Companies made a lot progress you know and worked a lot of cases, well that was it you know. So, I don't know, I ... I never did want to be compared with anybody else because I liked what I was doing, I didn't want another Ranger getting in trouble

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I don't think you were being compared to anybody else, I think other people were being compared to you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I....maybe you're right. Ah....let's see, we got down here to ah.....where were we, we was ah....oh yeah the Smothers. We got that case and cleared up and it was...it was just.....it was a real interesting case to work because first you got to assume.....you know, well he had to be coming from the east going west. And we kind thought that he was a hippie when we first looked at him and this was the hippie time....that somebody got mad, he was probably a long hair and just cut his hair and tied....threw he out on the side of the road you know and maybe killed him. Butgave him an overdose of drugs or something but ah.....they don't always work out like you think they did you know. But it's....it's good to do it. Ah....must of been an election year, cause Briscoe is back in the area again that month and ah.... I'm back in Austin on the 20th of May instructing a police school. Had a lot....lot more Court. If you work you got to go to Court you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you, now you was talking about Briscoe, he was the Governor and you had your Senators and your Representatives, but did the State Senators and

State Representatives ever much put.....much heat on you from the standpoint of wanting you to do things?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No ah....they didn't. I ah.... I never did.... I don't believe I ever had a State Senator or Representative either one put any....I....I carried a State Representative to Austin one time, maybe twice....twice I know of, when I was on the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: One of those when that wreck happened down there at Lake Fork?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, we was just carrying him to the airport. Ah....he was Secretary of State.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And we had met the plane there...and we'd do that occasionally, if the Secretary of State or somebody would come in at the airport and going to make a luncheon speech and then we'd pick them up and take them to the speech and get them back. Because not....that gave them a little protection and gave them transportation too, cause they was on State business you know and they fly on a State plane and....and maybe talk to the Railroad Commission or talk to the Lions Club or Chamber of Commerce or whoever you know. And ah...yeah, a lot of those times we'd handle those people, but this was....out of Austin it wasn't ah.....them calling us you know. And kind of like the Governor coming into town, of course we....they want to have a DPS person with the Governor nearly all the time and this is a good idea. Because you know, lot's of times even back in this particular area ah.... the Governor would come out and maybe some.....all the local people want the Governor to ride with them. Well some of these functions they go to there's alcohol served you know. And...and....and a case or two that I remember, we've had a guy driving a car that was pretty intoxicated with the Governor of Texas, they're going back to the airport, some big shot you know.....or thought he

was a big shot in the area. Andand....and we noticed this and the Governor this so.....and in order toif this big shot wants to visit with the Governor he can do it in the back seat of our car on the way to town and back ah....instead of the back seat of somebody's Cadillac you know. And the Governor's all like this, cause I'm sure that they got a little bit nervous sometimes themselves. You know, riding with these people. So this what prompted.....we were always along but we wasn't always driving them you know. And then we saw the need and they saw the need, if we're going to protect them we want to protect them all the way, we don't want to be following a guy in a Cadillac and has a wreck and he's.....and he's had too much to drink, hauling a politician you know. So ah....it worked real good when...when it ah....they made a policy that a DPS man would be driving the car and ah....this relieved the whole deal you know, it just worked real good that away. So yeah we....and ah...we...we've handled politicians a time or two, but not too much. I think you heard me talking to Max Westerman one time, back when ah....a lot of these politicians would call on the department and other department heads too I'm sure you know, cause there's a few airplanes down at Austin and ah....and the colleges had airplanes you know. But one weekend we had a....and I don't mind saying this now, this was back in the '50's, and there was a Representative from down at a County east of here, his mother died. And he was....the legislature was in session. And ah....and he flew.....called the Colonel and asked him, said his mother was dead and they was bury her.....go up and make arrangements and bury her and come back the next day and be in Austin. And the Colonel flew him up here. And we had a newspaper reporter here that had a receiver in his car. Well this thing all came up so quick, the death and the call from Colonel and meet you at the airport, so I get my call on the radio and 'Can you meet Unit so and so at the Gregg County airport'. Probably Unit.... I don't know what the....three probably. And ah.... I think we just had one plane then. And I did and up

drives this ah... newspaper reporter and he'd heard it on his scanner at his house and he lived out in the south part of town. And so Max comes in, in the DPS plane and this.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Max...?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...Westerman, he wasyou met him down at ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know Max had, had a stroke and you couldn't understand him too good. But anyway, had the Texas shield on the side of the plane you know, Department of Public Safety, and out steps this politician that everybody knew around here. And of course nobody out there but the pilot and the politician and myself and the newspaper reporter and he's going to take a picture. And I...I talked him out of it.... Iand of course I knew him. Me and Mr. Estes got along real good then, he was the owner of the paper and I thought I could fade it and Carl didn't want any publicity like that. And it could of been handled any way, but it was....it was not ethical for this to happen you know. And....but he....he put his camera up and we....we remained friends, he and I did. And I thanked him for it later, I told him what the deal was and I thanked him for it, that wasn't any place for pictures. And ah....but those are things that you have to work your way in and out of you know. We had an arson over the Sabine school that year and it was three young men that ah... I mean they completely destroyed the gymnasium as I remember it. I mean it just burned to the ground over there. And old Guy Morgan, this old main theft we've been trying to catch, he's back in the picture. He got out of the penitentiary and ah...and ah...he was back stealing again. And ah...and ah....this was the year that I was elected President of the East Texas Peace Officers Association and I presided over the conference in Nacogdoches, in '74. And ah....and then I made a case on Morgan again in June ah...by help of the Highway Patrol. Old Al Quear, who is now a Ranger down at San Antonio, old Alfonso was a Highway

Patrolman over at Kilgore and ah....he caught old Morgan pulling a trailer out of an oil lease over on ah....around Kilgore and had a differential truck on it, a tandem differential, ah.....two, four, six, eight wheels you know. And ah....and he stopped him and called and we got together and we identified that ah....differential as being from a stolen truck, got some numbers on it. And it was stolen out in ah....oh up around Weatherford or somewhere and ah... anyway Morgan was on probation then out in West Texas, so we sent him back to the pen later. But Quear is the one that spotted him, I didn't you know, but we...we did a lot of work on it. Old Quear, this was a funny thing, we wound up out there in Court and he was just a young Highway Patrolman and we got a witness, this guy that owned the truck....Morgan's lawyer or he and his lawyer or one of them or both of them had got to this guy and got him some money. And....but we had him subpoenaed to Court out there because he had reported the truck stolen and had already collected the money on the insurance on it. And ah...so he didn't show up. And we get out to Midland....or Odessa I believe it was, to testify and of course we got to make that run out there. And ah...we get out there and the witness is not there. And I served him myself, I was...it was....on down here a little bit further I go to Fort Worth and serve a subpoena on him to go up there....or Weatherford I think is where he lived. And ah....so the Judge issued an attachment to pick him up and ah....so I go ask the Judge.....we're out there, and I said, 'Well let me go in the office and let's see if we can get him picked up and brought back out here'. So I called over to Midland to the Regional Headquarters and asked for the Major. And I'm talking to him just like I'm talking to you, and Quear can't believe this, he's a young Highway Patrolman. And I said, 'Major we got problems out here, I'm out here in Judge Martin's Court and we got one of your Highway Patrolmen and a Deputy Sheriff from East Texas and we got a witness in Weatherford, Texas with an attachment and the Sheriff's out looking for him right now and says he thinks he can get him'. And we had

called him and gave him the information on the phone, sent it by teletype. So ah...I said, 'We need an airplane in case they pick him up, if you've got a plane available'. 'No our plane's in Austin for repairs'. 'Well how about the helicopter'. 'Well it's... it's gone, it's in Austin on a trip'. And so....but if they'd been available see....well then I called Dallas to see if they had a plane available you know to go out there and pick him....cause it's going to save us a trip back to East Texas. It wound up we don't....we can't....everything is tied up and so the Judge said, 'Well he needs to stay in jail a week anyway so I'll just reset this for next week'. And he held that old boy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I want to go back before you leave this here. You just mentioned that you were ah....elected President of the East Texas Peace Officers Association.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now you're going to have an event happen during this time that's going to have a profound affect on your life later on, which we'll cover that when it gets to, but do you want to....let's relate now what that event was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well what was it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Clint Peoples.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. All right, we'll talk about it now if you want to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: This is a funny thing...and of course I hate to talk about a fellow Ranger and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, but this is important, cause it does affect life a lot.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But it's ah....everybody in ah....yeah it did. Everybody in the Ranger service knew how Clint, he was just the best thing in the world ah...and I told you this, he...he

offered a job before I got on the Ranger service and he was an sincere about it as anybody you've ever seen. And would have and I could have worked for Clint. I'd of had to stayed away from him, I couldn't...I wouldn't of wanted to work in the same office with him I don't think, cause I believed I'd of had an ulcer. But anyway ah....yeah this ah...Clint ah...ah...had been...well he came....he called me and told me, he said, 'Glenn congratulations you've elected President of the East Texas Peace Officers Association and I'm proud of you'. And ah...and he said, 'I just got something I want to talk to you about'. He said, 'I've been honored by every police association in Texas but the East Texas Peace Officers Association and I would like to be...receive an honor at this next convention'. This is prior to the convention. What we did ah...we was...I was...I was elected President at the convention in June and I served as President until the convention next June. And the convention next June, each convention is when we give the awards. And ah....so I told Clint this, I said, 'Well you know I've already appointed my nominating committee', and I said, 'The letters go to them and they come and tell me who's going to receive the award', cause I said, 'I've got...I'm busy and this is the way we operate. And so if some of your ...some of the officers and the Courts and the District Attorneys in East Texas recommend you and the Board that I've appointed think you're worthy well you'll receive recognition at the next meeting'. Well Clint said, 'Oh well, I know you can handle it, you know, you're the President, you can talk to them'. And I said, 'Well, you know, this is the way we're doing it captain', and I said, 'You know there's plenty of folks that are cranky about you and you don't have any trouble getting some letters written, you want the award, well just get after it'. Well we got one letter from a guy that was Past President of the East Texas Peace Officers, but he hadn't been to a conference in many years, he was an FBI agent at one time and he quit and went to work for the Railroad and then they let him go and he was looking for work and...and

anyway, he wrote a letter and that was the only letter we got. But ah....ah...it didn't ah....he didn't get an award and it...but it....he didn't like it, he didn't come back any more to the East Texas Peace Officers as I remember. And that was childish, but it happened.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And as I said, we'll get into it later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And it will have an affect later on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....I went to Monroe, Louisiana on the 3rd and 4th of July of that year. And this was interesting, ah....boy it was hot down there, golly, you know how it gets in Louisiana, Monroe. Went down there on the Washataw River and I had some information from a source that told me that there was....Monroe was full of stolen property. And so....stolen tractors, and this is affecting our friend Morgan again, it's more associates of his. And ah....I go down to ah...Minden, Louisiana, one of the....the informant told me that two pieces of equipment down there were stolen in Minden, Louisiana and the rest of it's in Texas. Well I knew T.C. Blocksum, I talked to you about him the other night, and this Kemp boy was a young boy just getting into law enforcement good and I think I told you he's fixing to run for Sheriff in August down there, and probably get elected. In fact I'm going down there before then to see him. But anyway, Blocksum....I went to Minden and told Blocksum what I had. I said, 'Two of yawl's tractors are supposed to be down there and I'd like for one of ya'll to go with me'. So he sends Kemp and we strike out to Monroe. Well we get down there and we find ah...some of the stuff and it's late...late in the evening by the time we get down there. So Kemp wants to come back to Minden and the Sheriff owned the Ramada Inn there so ah....I came back and spent the night at the Ramada Inn there and Kemp meets me the next day and we go back to Monroe on the 4th of July. And we're working....the detective we're working with is now a Sheriff down there, his

name is Godwin, and he was a good hand but he was a guitar player, steel guitar player. And he had a picnic to go play...and his band was going to play in it and he just left us. And I'm talking about...we was finding...I mean we had welding trucks, trailers, front end loaders, backhoes, caterpillars, tractors, we...we.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had Mathis been over there before he was killed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, but this is Morgan and he's just about as good. And...and we....we'd already recovered.... spotted twenty pieces of equipment. And this guy leaves us and goes to play in the....play his guitar at a 4th of July picnic. And we have to go back to Minden. Well the Sheriff meets us out there and Blocksum and ah...and we tell the Sheriff our story and I...and Kemp's doing most of the talking, cause I'm just a visiting officer over there. Of course, you know, I know 'em by first name. Anyway the Sheriff gets on the telephone and talks to the Sheriff down there and I said, 'Heck I don't guess there's any use of us going back'. And he said, 'Yeah, ya'll go back tomorrow and they'll be somebody there with you'. So we did, we went back and man we just....we just....we got folks....we brought people in ah...I mean equipment in down there just right and left and ah....and made some good cases. Ah....then ah...I guess I....on....I was down there the 3rd, 4th and 5th and then I've got to be in Bonham and I don't even remember why. I told you this off the record, I mean we wasn't.... ah...Edwin Edwards and Governor Hall from Oklahoma was in Bonham, Texas on July 6th, 1974 for something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It's got to be the dedication of the (unintelligible) home or museum or library or something.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's all I can think about. And then ah...yeah....and I've got to take Hall on over to Honeygrove the next day for something. And ah....and this is the only thing I can

think about ah....but....and I didn't even remember this. Because I....Edwin Edwards is gain....he had so much publicity you know and you'd think that I'd remember this. But until I got my reports, I...I...and I cannot tell you....it could of been a funeral, but I can't imagine....I don't remember any politician...

ROBERT NIEMAN: We can look at it in the paper, that won't....we'll find that out.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah...on July the 12th I arrested two people for robbing the Avenger State Bank. Got involved in a whole lot more Court.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Nobody had knocked over Elysian Fields again?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. I went to the Sheriff's Association meeting in Houston that year in July. Ah....on August the 1st I had to ah....I had to go to....I went into Dallas and then had to go on from there on to Austin and ah...this inmate was suing me from depriving him of this money that he had taken off of this....after he....before he killed policeman down at Carthage. And ah...that...that's things that happened to us that just ah....ah...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you something on these bank robberies. Okay a person knocks off a federal bank ah....like First National Bank is you know, FDI...federal, and then another one it's like the First State Bank, it's not federal. If you hit a federal bank, is that a federal offense?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....they're all federal offense if they're insured by FDIC. And they....there's very few banks anywhere that....I think we may have had three banks...or two banks here in all of East Texas that were not insured by the FDIC then. And I don't imagine there a one now. I doubt very seriously if there's a bank anywhere in Texas that's not a member of FDIC. And it...this is...you can go state or federal either one. It's a federal offense and ah....if they'reif they're a member of the FDIC. And ah...it's a state offense to commit armed robbery

in the State of Texas you know. So it just depends on....it kind of depends a lot of the times on the District Attorneys and the federal people. Most of the time the federal officers are always available, they'd come to a robbery even if it wasn't a member of the FDIC. They didn't open a case on it, but they was interested because somebody who's going to rob one of those banks is going to rob another one anyway you know. So we worked real close with the FBI on all bank robberies. And we had good records down here, I mean we had a good record on how...on solving robberies.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 4

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'm going to get into one more murder case here, this was a big one.

Ah...we had a double murder over here in Rusk County on August the 28th. There was the

mother and I believe the boy was either three or four years old killed. It was a Wright. They had lived in a trailer house down behind Gregg County airport and ah....we developed a suspect ah....this was Stuart's case, I think Stuart was out of town when the murder happened, but he gotmaybe he was ah.... I don't remember but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's Stuart Dowell.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Stuart Dowell, yeah. And he worked Rusk County, but anyway we developedthere was a Parole Officer that helped us in this....he'd ah....I didn't know this boy was down there. Now this boy's name was Corley and his mother and daddy lived....mother and step-daddy lived down on Lake Cherokee and ah.....he was home from the penitentiary on parole and he'd gone to the pen for ah....molesting women. And ah....he ah....this Parole Officer told us and we found out after he told us, he said, He may be a suspect because he lives down there somewhere with his mother and daddy'. And so we got to checking andand we called him in and talked with him and ah....he had been tohis alibi was he'd been.....they'd already started showing these....some of these sex movies and they still had the old drive-in theater out here by Le Tourneau at that time, the River Road I think was the name of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wasn't it three screen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't remember how many.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think it was, it had three screens in it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And he's ah....he'd been out there with some people to a movie ah....the night....that same night I think it was. And anyway he'd been seeing this woman and little passing, going back and forth to his mother's....where he was staying with mother and step-father. And so he gave us a good alibi and ah.... I never will forget, Stuart asked me, we had him up in my office and it was just.....it was after....just about dark and ah.....he gave us all this story

and gave us consent to search his pickup and we came down and searched it. And ah....so ah....had to let him go you know. And Stuart said, 'Well what are we going to do now'. And I said, 'Well we're fixing to go out here and tear his alibi all to pieces'. Cause I said, 'He's lying to us'. And we'd run....we'd talked polygraph to him and he agreed to take the polygraph. Of course this was night and got to....so we went out here to a old hog farm out here behind old....off of old Kilgore Highway andand that's who he was with was the people out there and we found out he'd lied to us about what time he left the theater andand a couple of other things. And ah.....so we started looking for him then and ah....we'd made an appointment with him to show up for the polygraph and he didn't show up. Well before we caught him, he had ah....he went out to White Oak and he stole a pickup from a construction company. He went to an old lady's house, elderly woman's house out there and robbed her and ah.... I don't know why he didn't kill her, cause I know he intended to. He took her purse and ah.....some.... I believe a... maybe something else from her house, I know he took her purse because we recovered it. And he left White Oak and he drove on over to Tyler and we'd ...by this time we've already made a case. We've got him identified by picture and ah.....she described him and we're already looking for him and we made a picture line up and she identified him, that's him. He went on to Tyler and a little rural Church outside of Tyler and a day or two later ahon a Saturday, a Friday or Saturday one.....ah...Saturday, he ah.....he went in this Church, he saw this woman go in this Church and she was in there practicing playing the organ for Sunday and he murdered her, raped her, in the Church. And he went....left there and went on....and Sunday was over at.....the next day he was over at the Tyler State Park and he met a woman.....saw a woman over there that ah.....only thing we could think, she may have been fixing to meet somebody there or something and he murdered her and raped her. And leFort....we found the woman's purse that he robbed out

here at White Oak at the second murder scene. And then he left there, and of course we had a man hunt going for him by then and ah....this is four people he's killed here and ah....and we ah....and he was seen down in Panola County. We had the dogs from Huntsville and the weather was terrible, it was raining and it....you know it's just ter....it's hard to work dogs when it's raining you know, because a trail gets cold. And we was looking for him down there and the Sheriff of Panola County found him ah....parked in the pickup down at Lake Murvall asleep the next day. We was down....we was up about two days and nights looking for him and arrested him. And the Sheriff arrested him down there, Johnny Spradlin, and ah..... I never will forget, we brought him back ah.....we was going to take him to Tyler, that was the last two murders over there. But we stoppedthe District Attorney from Henderson, whose name is Ross who's now District Judge ah.....the Sheriff ah.....Mike Strong and ah.....ah.....William Brown who was a deputy then.....I guess William worked for the District Attorney then, yeah....William was working in the DA's office. We.....they met me over there at ah....this trailer house where these two got killed and we set there at the dining room table and he confused to that murder. And....and showed us exactly what he did inside the trailer and ah.....they set there and wrote up a confession. And I never will forget, we'd given him his warning that he could you know, didn't have to talk to us. You know the miranda, it's like we did and I never will forget, he asked me ah.....if he could call his mother. Well there was a telephone right there on the wall. And I said, 'There's the telephone right there, call up...call anybody you want to, you know, call your lawyer, call your mama', you know. But I said, 'Let me tell you something'. I said, 'You have caused your mother more pain and you got to tell her sometime'. But I said, 'If you're calling your mother asking you what to do and you know, you've waited twenty years too late you know'. But I said, 'Call anybody you want to'. And he didn't call a soul, he read the statement,

put his signature on it. And ah.....we tried him down at....on a change of venuewent to Waco to try him and ah....and we tried him on ah.....on one of the Tyler murders and he got the death penalty. But he's.... I guess he's still on death row, cause I haven't heard of him getting killed. But ah...this was a....this was a heck of a case, I'm going to tell you. We worked day and night just for a bunch of days and nights, looking. We had a....we had the helicopter down here. Of course the weather got bad, we had a lot of Rangers, we had a lot of officers from Smith County. We set up a command post right over at the Smith/Gregg County line. Because we had this robbery over here and heand this was his area around here you know and his mother and daddy lived at Lake Cherokee. He had a bunch of friends down in Panola County. So we set our command post up at the beginning....and I guess it stayed there. We had a tent set up over there and ah....because Smith County and Gregg County officers and Rusk County was all working in it and it was pretty centrally located. And ah....but that was a heck of a man hunt. And ah....but we got him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me ask you, a question about polygraphs. How would you handle a situation, cause I remember here I guess it's been.....it may have been during the Welch fiasco, that they asked some officers to take the polygraph.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And they refused. And I remember thinking very plainly then, well Iyou know, if I had done something right now and they were bringing me in and they were saying to me I need to take a polygraph, why should I when the police won't.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well....I'll tell you what, the polygraph is a....a.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I guess the credibility

GLENN ELLIOTT: I agreed to take a polygraph ah....and I I guess ah.....one time when the federals was leaning on me about this Mathis thing. And this was about the same time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Which we'll get into that later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but ah....ah....the polygraph is a good tool. It....a lot of guys miss it though you know. I...I ah.... I don't know ah.....but I felt like this, if I refused to take it, I felt like that I was indicting maybe I was guilty or something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that was my....you know the....these police officers here in Longview here when....and this may not have been the Welch deal, I don't remember now, it's been too long ago.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't blame 'em..... I don't blame the officers for not..... I don't blame anybody for not taking a polygraph if they don't want to you know. It's just a tool that we use and....and it's used toto ah....convince a guy that he's guilty is what it's used for. That's what I've used it for. Or to convinceor to prove to me he's innocent. You know, I've used a lot of it to get a guy off the hook you know. Cause I I want to know if I'm working on a wrong

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I guess the point I'm trying to make though is that the police.....the Longview city police lost credibility when their officers refused to take it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I expect they did a little bit you know. But ah....I don't blame the officers for not taking it if they didn't want to, whether he was guilty or not you know. It's....it'ssee we've all had a little bad experience probably at one time or another with the polygraph. Cause I think I've told you, I've run some guys that the operator said they didn't do it. And one of them later gets arrested in Hot Springs, Arkansas with some of the bank money orders that came out of the bank that we knew damn well he'd robbed you know.....or he'd burglarized.

And we....he'd been a suspect since the first week in the thing and....and ah....but the operator said he didn't do it you know. Then I've had operators say he did it and I proved somebody else did it down the road you know. So I never did put all my eggs in a....in....in....on the polygraph. But I know this, the only time that I had ever evenwas ever asked if I'd take it , I said I would. Ah....because I didn't....you know, I didn'tand I might have backed out before I went on it, I don't know you know, I still hadn't got hooked up. But at that time I knew I hadn't done anything wrong andand I was trying..... I would like for them to think that. And they....of course they found out Iyou know before it was over that I didn't you know. But this was a....this would be a good time to stop I guess ah...ah....I was trying to look here and see if there was anything else about that thing. Cause this ah....this trial starts on this Burke boy ah... ah....the next week after that and ah...so why don't we stop and start there next time. Let me borrow your pen, you got one in your pocket?

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is a continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Today is Monday, June the 12th, 1995. And Glenn where did we leave off last week?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we just got old Corley into custody for killing those four people and ah....and I think we stopped there as a pretty good place to stop. But I was on I think....this all happened on Sunday the 15th day of September...his arrest. And I guess I must have ah....well I know I didn't take any time off because I never did on the first of the week. But on the 18th ah...we started ah...the Sexton trial and this is deputy that killed the prostitute over at Kilgore at the Pines Motel. And ah...and while this trial was going on well I provided security for Governor Briscoe again and I assisted in theBudweiser distributor had an armed robbery here and ah....and most of the time when I was working in the....you know like we was having Court here in Gregg County or Harrison County, well while I was standing by for Court well I'd try to find

something else to be doing you know. So they had this armed robbery and I was available, could of been in, in just a few minutes with a radio call and most of the time these lawyers know when they're going to need you anyway and you make arrangements with them, say I'll be available if you can give me a fifteen notice. And we arrested the guys that robbed Budweiser the 20th which was two days later. Ah....on the 23rd the jury came out in this deputy's case and gave him life in prison for this murder. And I as...I think I said earlier this guy was a double amputee from the Viet Nam war and during the....he had two good legs and he could walk, it was pretty hard to tell that ah...that he had two bad legs, you knew he had one. But of course all during the trial he was in a wheelchair with both legs off. But the jury wasn't all that sympathetic with him. And ah....and then on the 26th, three days later ah...I get a call over in Harrison County and ah...this...this kind of gives you a variety of what I do...what I did. Ah....there was an inmate in the ah....Harrison County jail claimed she was raped by one of the jailers, white and white. And ah....we did...found...they did have sex, there was no question about that, but it was unfounded....it was all voluntary. Course the Sheriff got rid of the ah....ah....deputy and the alleg.... the woman was in jail for something, whatever it was she went ahead and got her punishment. Ah...I attended an FBI conference the following week for hostage...ah...kidnapping and hostage situations. And we tried to go to all the schools that we could you know, that ah....seminars to upgrade ourself in what was going on and the current...and of course during this time ah....we were having some hostage situations. And ah...on the 8th of October....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me go back on this hostage situation, now what would they do, bring in SWAT teams or..?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they was...mainly it wasour training in that, as I remember at that time ah...ah... they started ah....getting SWAT teams together about then, but ah...they....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ranger SWAT teams or DPS?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, we had a Ranger SWAT team, but they wasn't practical. Cause they'd have a Ranger in Fort Worth and one in Sherman and one in Tyler on the SWAT team, well hell if you need a SWAT team you know, you need somebody that can get together right now you know, and let's get it done. And ah....and we had a SWAT team later and ah....and I could have been on it if I wanted to, but I didn't care to. Cause they did a lot....ah...our captain at that time was G.W. Burkes and G.W. liked to....he...he made big things out of this and they did a lot of training that they never did use. And it took up a lot of time and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Cause I think Stuart Dowell was on it and Jim Gant.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Stuart was on it and Jim Gant and George Breakfield and ah...G.W. and ah...oh there was one more I think ah...and ah....they had a big...they had a lot of fun. But ah...they all would rather be doing something like that as working a criminal case and I hadn't you know. I liked to work criminal cases and that's what I thought a Ranger should be doing. And in a hostage situation you know a Ranger can handle that when he gets there you know, whatever it is. And of course negotiation is the main thing about a hostage situation anyway. You know, very few of 'em ever go in and storm the place you know. And ah...you got to negotiate with those people and talk 'em out of it you know. And ah....that was my short....long suit all along was talking somebody out of something, because I always could put a lot conversation on you. But ah...then ah...ah....let's see ah....we...we ah...I arrested some folks for counterfeiting some twenty dollar bills in East Texas in October. Then I taught six hours to the Harrison County deputies.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You taught?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah in...in a school during October.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember what kind of school it was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was criminal investigation, it was a Reserve Deputy school is what it was. They ah...they...they...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let's talk about this. You teach at the school, what would you...what was some of the things you'd go over, let's pretend that...play a little pretend, I'm a Reserve Deputy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...what we'd do is ah...I would...I used a lot of personal experience in all my instructions. Everything....every....every school I ever instructed in, I used some of my cases that I had worked on as examples. Of course in talking to a bunch of ah....Reserve Deputies, we're talking about business men in a community like yourself ah....that was interested in law enforcement and the Sheriff would...or the police department ah...would have a reserve unit. Most reserve units were required to furnish their own uniforms, they worked for nothing, and they were required to have so much training. And ah...so I wouldn't get down....I...I'd try to teach them in how to preserve a crime scene for instance. Cause they'd be out here working with the night deputy or the day deputy, whatever the case might be, but just on routine patrol. Because you wouldn't send a Reserve Deputy toon a criminal investigation no more training than he has you know. Now the officer he's riding with might have to go. But most of the cases you'd teach....you'd start out with them on how to protect a crime scene you know and how to....how to treat people you know. A lot of these Reserve Deputies put a badge and a pistol on and they don't know how to treat people yet you know. And ah...and you've got to instill in them that...that they're dealing with the citizens of the County that ah...and ah....and it's a lot of psychological stuff in teaching somebody like that. Because you...you just...in six hours time that I've got to talk to these guys about criminal investigation, I've got to cover a wide area

you know, about what you can do and what you can't do. And...and when in doubt don't do anything you know, call somebody that has some experience you know. And that...and generally that's what you taught and I'd use examples of cases that I'd worked on you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do they still have that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they...they've still got Reserve Deputies and they have to be trained. But most of them now are trained at Kilgore College. They have special courses over there at ah....at the extension ah...office over there where they teach law enforcement and ah...and the ah...oh the East Texas Council of Government you know and they sponsor some of them and ah... it's ah...that's where most of them go now. But during this time they....you had to have an instructor to do this because they didn't....that was not available over at Kilgore during this time. And I found myself doing this a lot, but this is generally on Saturday's or at night one.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know today, other than in the case of retired Rangers like yourself, there's no such thing as a Special Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....but back this period, there was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did that ever have....(side of tape ends)....

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah...it didn't bother me a bit to see them do away with the Special Ranger's commission because we had...we had some of them that ah....may have been abusing it a little bit and it was making it hard on everybody else you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In what way?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....they'd get stopped for speeding and...and have their badge in their billfold or something like that you know and ah....I don't carry my....I don't carry any

identification where an officer can see it now and I'm retired. And....and ah...but you know, I could carry my badge in my billfold but I don't you know, I've got it in my pickup somewhere. Well I know where it's at, but I wouldn't be reaching for it because my driver's license is in my billfold you know. And...and then we had some of them that ah....that really ah...that would get....oh we've had....I've known a one or two that got pretty intoxicated and...and caused a scene at a restaurant or something and identified himself as a Ranger you know. And ah...ah...things like this have happened, it wasn't wholesale, but it ah...there was ah....and it was...it was a good thing because in one case I can think of we had a guy that was a Special Ranger that...that did not take advantage of...you know, what I mean, he was glad to be a Special Ranger. And ah...and he would ah...we'd need something done through the Legislature, he had some good contacts down there and he'd just pick up the phone and call 'em you know. And then my friend Richard Harvey over at Tyler, Richard has flown us all over...you know he carried Bob Mitchell and I to Los Angeles, California and...and all....and we got somebody to buy the fuel, that's all it cost us and ah....to get this guy that we'd got out of jail, you know to help us catch this old thief.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah we talked about that a week or two ago.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And then I've flown with Richard ah...we had us some black Muslims kill another black over at Tyler, broad daylight at work and we had a witness and he was afraid to testify and he had... and he left the country. And they located him up in California, well they was....he agreed to testify and...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just...I'm running out here. Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So ah....Richard and I picked this guy up at ah....in San Antonio, they flew from Los Angeles to San Antonio, he....you know he was afraid to come into Dallas and afraid

that they might be watching the airport for him up there. And we flew in...he flew into San Antonio, Richard and I spent the night down there and then we flew...we came on up to Gregg County airport and then drove him....my car was out here at Gregg County and ah....and we drove him into Tyler, into the basement of the courthouse over there. And ah....he did his thing and then we brought him back here and ah...and flew him back to San Antonio.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when did they do away with the Special Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh you know ah....it was ah....I guess somewhere in the late '70's or early '80's. Ah...I...you know I'm not sure. But ah....ah....but you know friends like Richard and the other friends, Richard Harvey today would do the same thing if the law enforcement needed his plane for service and he's not a Special Ranger anymore. He'd do the same thing he did then, but we probably wouldn't have been acquainted with Richard as well you know, because ah....to call on. Now the Sheriff over at Tyler is the one that called on him for this ah...to fly this ah....this witness and ah....and...and we just went along to protect the witness you know. And he did a good job and they got a conviction over there. and this is essential...and of course this is something that, in those days the counties didn't spend that kind of money like they do now ah....they cut corners everywhere they went you know. And ah...and it seemed like cutting corners has kind of got out of style you know. And...and ah...I know we...you know later we've got planes available to do that now....did have, I don't know whether they still do now or not. But ah....this is ah...ah...and this is good for us to teach in those schools, because it was good for us to know these reserve officers, they're good citizens and if you've got a citizen that works for a living and then wants to get out here and work two or three, four hours or ten hours a week maybe as a reserve to help protect the citizens of the county, well it helps. It helps every tax payer in the county and it helps the department you know. And I've seen some real good reserve.

I've taught in reserve schools in nearly every county around here and ah...and even agreed to teach in one up in Bonham, right after I retired and ah...and almost did and something happened that they decided that would do otherwise. But it's...it's just another part of our job you know and I had instructors license and had a lot of experience. And I guess experience is about the best teacher I've ever had. Let's see I...ah...we had a threat over at Kilgore College and I don't can't remember that, a security officer, and I worked that. And we made an arrest on it, identified the guy and ah...he had some dope. But he had threatened a security officer at Kilgore College and I...when I...I was reading my reports and I noticed that, but I...I...I want to try to look up the report and see what that happened, but there was a threat. Ah...then ah...I was....of course I was always speaking to civic clubs and going to court and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that something you enjoyed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I...I'd rather talk in the evening, I hated to mess up a day. Because if you spoke to...and most of the time they wanted it at noon. Well if I've got to be in Carthage, Texas at noon or Marshall or Linden or Texarkana or Tyler or Longview, then that's liable to mess up my day, I can't be anywhere else hardly you know, but there. Because you can't get much done in Carthage and you come back to Longview at noon and then....now the evening ones I enjoyed you know and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you run into....I...I get invited to speak a lot to civic clubs and I...I usually don't do it because they only want you to talk twenty or thirty minutes, and what they really want is a comedian.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah. Well I tell the advantages it had in law enforcement, and ah....I've always contended this even when I was on the Highway Patrol and I never turned one down where I could. Of course when I was on patrol I could do it a whole lot better because I

was assigned an area. But we had a bunch of potential jurors sitting in the room with us you know and...and...we....a lot of times if a police officer don't go to these functions and the first time the people are going to see him is either when he's stopped them for a traffic violation or in the courtroom you know. And...and you don't get a chance to get a point over to them to good unless you give them a ticket or...or they're listening to your testimony. But if...if you've had 'em in a civic club and you can tell 'em what your problems are then, you know you can't tell 'em in court, well you know we got so many DWI's and look here, you can tell them in there what's admissible and what's not admissible in court and things that we can't talk about and ah....and you get...it's...it's to our advantage.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we're doing some jumping around here and...but this is things I think we're going to need in the book real bad. Ah....at this time I think you had to be a voter to...a register voter to serve on a jury. What's your thoughts with the recent law changes to where just anybody they drag in off the street they can stick in the jury box?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I think it's a bunch of trial lawyers got that law passed you know, because that's what they wanted on the juries you know and...and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they're claiming that really....the guy that gets up with hang over and has been busted for a DWI, he's really more...you know, should be judging his peers and what not is their reasoning.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well here's....of course now there's two way to look at this thing Bobby, ah...when I first came into law enforcement ah....especially in misdemeanor cases and Justice of the Peace cases particularly, they got ready to have a jury, they generally go out and get one, just the Sheriff would. Well where would he go, he'd go out on the outside and a bunch of old hands sitting out there under the shade of a tree and...and ah...on the courthouse and get

them. Well they made good jurors as a general rule for the State because ah....but it wasn't always probably the best selection you know. Then they went to the poll tax and started getting people off of the poll tax and anybody that won't pay a poll tax ah....don't deserve to serve a jury as far as I'm concerned, at that time you know. Because voting was...is the most important thing we've got you know, as citizens of the State.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But...but you've got to be manipulated...and I'll use a case in point, Mattie Castleberry who you know we both talked about a lot, she used to go to the black community, it's been related, her and her sons and her daughter-in-laws and grand kids and drive off from daylight til day on voting picking up these....ah...picking up blacks and paying their poll tax and they voted however Ms. Mattie told them to vote.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So did your ah....yeah, well she....she didn't know that though.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well.

GLENN ELLIOTT: See this is the thing about that, and the same thing was happening to yourto your wholesale beer distributors and liquor distributors, they was doing the same thing, they was selling all the poll tax...buying 'em for these folks. And Mattie was probably paying for 'em herself, I think it just cost a dollar, dollar and a half.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think it was a dollar.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah...they'd go out and buy 'em and...so they'd get a block vote, especially for the liquor industry because if they were going to have a wet and dry election of course they wanted to have the edge you know. And Mattie that had to be what she was interested in.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But here's the thing about that, you don't know how anybody votes when they get behind that curtain you know. And you can...of course you may influence 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that's true that you don't know, but I'd say they....

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....you got a good idea you know. But still ah...I think that's a better system than what they got right now, just in driver's license or something like that. Because doggone, like you say, we've just got all kinds of folks that's serving on jury that don't need to be there. I think a property owner or....and it's hard when they say you got to exclude somebody from serving on a jury but you got to draw the line somewhere. Because ah...and it's...it's ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I definitely think you ought to have people on the jury who can read and write.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I don't think we're getting as good a jury now as we used to get. You know, and no disrespect to people serving. And ah....ah....let's see ah...I taught...Kilgore College....where were we ah....ah....I'm back in Monroe, Louisiana on this theft investigation that ah...in October that I spent down there in July. And ah...ah....I went up to Fort Worth and served a subpoena on this guy in this Guy Morgan case that I was telling you about...Morgan was another one that needed to go. This is a guy....several...back three or four interviews back where we got the guy out of jail and he ran, we was trying to get Morgan and catch him stealing and get him in the pen.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he right out of the mold of Mathis?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. Yeah, only he was smarter. And ah...I went out to Weatherford and served a subpoena on this guy out there in ah...in the Morgan case and ah....seemed like we talked about that a little bit back...might have.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think we have.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Then I went to Odessa to court on ah...the 3rd of November in the same case and ah....and that's when this witness failed to appear out there you know and they to get a writ to pick him up. I assisted Gladewater on the 6th day of November in a murder....Sneed murder investigation. Went back to Odessa on the 10th to court in the Morgan case and he got ten years, on the 12th. The 13th I'm back in Gregg County assisting them in the McNameed murder investigation. Went to Austin the same day with the evidence. Ah....while I was down there instructed the Ranger school in blood stains.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, let me back up. You went to Austin with evidence, now I'm a little confused.

GLENN ELLIOTT: In this murder case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Because I thought we had a...a lab set up over in Tyler

GLENN ELLIOTT: Not then....that would handle.....see we didn't have ballistics over at Tyler until....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:until way back. All our ballistics had to be done in Austin then.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And most of the time that we would ah....you know, on a case like this, I'm....I've got to be in Austin on the 14th and they call me on the 13th and this guy gets killed and ah...and obviously they needed some ballistics. So I said, 'Well you know I'm going, I'll just take it cause I got to go down there and instruct this blood school'. Ah....I worked old Billy Bledsoe, an old safe burglar from over at Kilgore that hung around....lived over there right by Crouchy's Corner, you know we talked about Crouchy's Corner over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did he do, knock off Elysian Field Bank, everybody else did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Billy was ah...Billy got into some bank burglaries, he was burglarizing a few banks. And then I'm back to Austin instructing another school on November the 21st, so I was down there instructing on the 14th and back the next week. What we was doing, obviously then they was having half the Rangers down there at one time and half another or something, because that looks like I was instructing in two schools in the same subject you know. Ah...I cleared to robberies over at Gladewater. I'm back in Austin on December the 3rd for a major crime seminar, I was assigned by the.....I was on the program down there, they had a major crime seminar in Austin and captain usually assigned somebody in each company to go, sometimes two. And ah....I drew the straw on that, so I'm back in Austin on December 3rd. December 9th I cleared nine burglaries with two suspects in Smith County, recovered a bunch of property. Ah...I cleared seven burglaries in the Beckville area with the same people. And we get into 1975 and we'll...we'll...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, before we take off on '75, a couple of questions I want to....I've been thinking about last week I'd like to kind of go back over and review and maybe we could just end it up right there, we'll do a short one tonight.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that'll do it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But first of all, we went this whole year and Elysian Fields hasn't been knocked off. Was they...is something wrong with Elysian....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Are you sure of that?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well maybe, anyway that....that was just an....a bad joke.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...I believe....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....I do want to go back...a couple of questions I got on Mathis ah....with the shooting.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How involved and how much was there internal affairs investigation...was it....how was the paper work ah....cause we're going to need to cover this I think pretty well.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we didn't even have an internal....internal affairs division at that time I don't believe. I think it was formed shortly after that. Now we may have...we may have had....I think ah....

intelligence may but...may have ah....ah...but no, we made our reports. But you see what was happening ah....this organized crime unit was involved in this thing all along. We had intelligence people in it, we had Rangers in it, we had narcotic people in it. And they were all involved in the surveillance ah....and the whole works. Of course they wasn't all in Dallas because we didn't know he was coming to Dallas. You know, I think I told you, we had ah....we knew he was either going to Dallas, to Huntsville, or ah....up in Wise County, Decatur. He had three places that he could get what he wanted and...and...and so we had Rangers in all three places. And we didn't know where he was coming until he got there, you know. And I'll tell you what we forgot to do, and this is kind of embarrassing, I've had it reminded....been reminded of it several times by the Rangers. But we...of course you know naturally you don't just get up there and get in a shoot out with somebody and...and there's lives lost and you got to get....go on to the police station and make affidavits and all this. But we forgot to call the Rangers in the other places and tell them that he wasn't coming there you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So they was sitting on a stake out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And they went ahead and set out at their stake out until late that afternoon before we not... thought to notify them you know. And we could of saved them an all day on....whatever day of the week it was, seemed like it was on a Saturday or Sunday one, I don't

know. But ah...ah...we didn't do that. But no we didn't have ah...we made our reports and then our captain we...we...well we made a report to the sergeant, I think Bill Wilson was the captain, and Bill was in Houston, cause this was Christmas, you know this was Christmas holidays is when it was. And ah...Bill was in Houston I think and ah...we went by after we went to Dallas police department ah...and made our report there and we made affidavits, all of us down there, to the police...to the detectives. Of course we had two Dallas detectives was in the car with Stuart Dowell outside. I think I told you about that...they had a policy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Then ah....you read the reports I wrote.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Well now then, to try to put this more maybe into perspective, let's say this incident, you're still an active Ranger and this happened this afternoon, what would you go through then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you know I can't you that because I hadn't been....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or.... well then, let's go to 1987 when you retired.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no I don't think internal affairs would have been involved in it, I really don't. Ah....they may, I don't think at that time.... I think now that they are in....in all deaths. Ah....even some automobile accidents you know. Ah....but I have an ideaand they probably should be ah....on all deaths because ah....but I don't know why though when you get to think of it, because I'm a Ranger and I'm a hand and...and...and those intelligence agents they made their reports and everybody made reports andand we wasn't sitting together when we made the reports. There wasn't anybody down at the city but us Rangers and those guys were probablywell they....they made their reports the next week. I hadn't....you know, I've never

seen one of their reports and don't want to see 'em. And they've not seen mine I don't reckon because

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I...I suspect ...and of course what I'm trying to do, is so when we do this it...you know people can relate more to today too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well you know I don't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They are so worried about....it seems today that make sure there wasn't excessive force or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well....ah....and they....they may have 'em today, they probably do. But you know I'd just have to check to see. But ah....they'll....you know ah.... I feel like personally that if a Ranger goes out here and.....and if he has to kill somebody and he makes his report, well they ought to accept it for what it is. And ah....and of course if there's a.....if there's a media question or a federal investigation well.....see the federals investigated this, two or three times.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, we're going to talk about this some more later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and ah....and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Thirty years is going to back .

GLENN ELLIOTT:and....and so what the heck, why would internal affairs want to sent somebody down when the FBI's investigated three times you know. And that's about how many times they investigated it. Every time they'd change hands and these people would cry and raise cane about something you know, or one of the kids would get arrested and sent to the penitentiary or something else and they'd come back and say, 'Well the Rangers killed my daddy', you know, blah, blah, blah. And the...and the....they'd have a new bunch of federal officers in and they'd conduct another investigation and go back and get the other reports. And

yeah, we'll get into that later, but ah.... I don't know I just ah....ah....internal affairs is....I'm sure that it's a necessity now because of the....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Political correctness.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And as liberal as everybody's become....or so many people have become and ah....and the news media, they're trained more in investigative reporting now than they were then you know. And ah....and...and people like trash , you know and controversy when used to they didn't you know. I mean your local paper, you didn't see a lot of controversy in a local paper because they wanted to encourage people to come to the area. And if it was something that didn't sound too good most of your editors wouldn't even put it in their paper you know and ah....small or local papers. And the Dallas paper wasn't bad about carrying....Dallas paper carried a little old article probably two by two, I think I got six of them in the mail from Sheriffs over the State congratulating us you know. And....from a little old piece of paper in the Dallas paper you know and I threw it in the waste basket no doubt. But ah....there wasn't a whole lot ah....you know, that wasn't big news, a thief getting killed you know, it just wasn't big news. And it shouldn't be now as far as that's concerned.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah....how....how didhow did you get alongdid you have any hostile media that you knew when you....well let's back up, not media, someone whether it be print or news or TV or radio or whatever, that you knew this person doesn't like me? It's not Glenn Elliott she doesn't like, or he doesn't like, or that person doesn't like, they don't like this badge, they don't like the Rangers, they don't like the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: The only experience that I ever remember having with the news media at all that ah....that wasn't pleasant was this ah....well the...the Mathis thing was one of them, but ah.... I got a call in Dallas and a reporter from down here, or Lufkin.... I think it was here, yeah it

was here in Longview, female, and it may have been the same one thatthat later ah....wrote the editorial about ah....the Kentucky Fried Chicken, that you've got a copy of , and I'm not sure it's the same one, I'm not going to say it was. But anyway, she called me in Dallas and had already written a story, there's no question about it, the story was already written because it was in the....it was in the paper the next day. And I'm in Dallas late in the afternoon and this is like you know, there's still office hours, five o'clock, four-thirty, five o'clock.....four-thirty or five o'clock probably, cause ah....it could of been after that but II'm pretty sure it was before. But they ah....she calls me and wants me to make a comment, and I think you read what she said in there about.... I said, you know, I didn't want to engage in a debate with the news media and I didn't see any way how the citizens of the State of Texas could profit by it. But ah.... I did have a lot to say about it cause it was all wrong you know and I didn't....and I thought that she should of contacted me prior to writing the story. And ah....because most people that I had any dealings with all my career would do that, they'd come around and say, 'Now Glenn so and so, you know, and we're fixing to write a story and what have you got to say about it'. But this story had already been written and it was obvious. And then....then the Kentucky Fried.....a little old editorial that they put in there about ah....somebody.....nobody in charge you know, which was childish. And I made my response to them just to.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think you got some derogatory stuff shot at you on the Welch case, which we'll get to later too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn't get a whole lot on that. Cause this was.....this was all about the Mathis thing mainly ah...ah.... if it hadn't been for Mathis, we never would of entered in.....our names would of never come up in the Welch thing I don't think. I...you know....and of

course it could have ah.....they invited me, I was invited to go with them on the raids. But they didn't invite me to take part in it, so I didn't go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll get into that later. Well do you.....do you feel that some of the Rangersand well I guess that could expand this to any law enforcement people, it doesn't have to be Rangers, but we'll restrict it to Rangers, ah....the news people, they knew you were accessible, that you'd talk to them.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And that you'd shoot straight with them. Do you feel a lot of maybe ah....Rangers from maybe adverse publicity or because they don'tthey insulate themselves away from the press or....or refuse or....or they just don't come across as being open and truthful?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Maybe not truthful, maybe that's the wrong word, but not as open and frank aswhether they are or not, they're not coming across that way .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the way....I'll tell you the way I waswell not trained exactly, but the way I trained myself I guess with exposure to the news media. And I think it worked pretty good. Because all my career, the only problems I got is in the area here and when we've got a bunch of new ah....different , you know....the news media people change just like we change you know. The news.....law enforcement change and the news changes. Ah.... I was trained and....and....and.....under a good.....pretty good Highway Patrolman, who I told you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lloyd Webb.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah..... I watched him and I watched a lot of the other officers and I'veand the Rangers the same way. And most of the timeall right, traffic accidents, this was out first ah....exposure to the news media. Well the Sheriff was glad that the Highway

Patrol was out here investigating accidents, because he didn't have the personnel to do it with and they weren't trained in accident investigation. And they'd have to testify in court a whole lot and maybe one of his good personal friends would be involved in a traffic accident and his deputy's up there testifying that he ran a stop sign, was speeding or whatever you know. And.....and the Sheriff don't like that you know, I mean, most Sheriff's don't at that time because of politics you know was involved and it still is as far that's concerned. But in those days the Sheriff would always expect us to invest.....we....it was our duty and he was glad of it and we'd make the news releases about the wrecks you know. But we'd always include that we were assisted in working traffic with the Deputy Sheriffs you know. And ah....and....and we'd....because most of the time they'd come if we called 'em. A lot of times they'd come if we didn't call 'em, because they wanted to help you know. And....and this was a....this was just a....a....cooperation amongst officers. But I was.... I was brought up and watching and...and other folks make these releases and I'd always include the local officers and their names. The Longview police department or the Gregg County Sheriff's office, or the Harrison County's Sheriffs office assisted you know in.....in.....in the investigation. And we got called on a lot of wrecks. And it's....it's sad but it's true, you could tell most reporters how it happened and they.....they wouldn't write it up like you said you know, they'd want to add something to it. But ah.... I never fell out with 'em about it and ah....had good relations with 'em all along. With Mr. Estes here that owned the paper, I.... I told you about him writing the editorial about the captain, he never got on myself or my partner either one about anything. Ah....we ah....we had good relations with all his reporters. I told you about the representative deal and all this and ah..... it never got in the paper. Carl wouldn't let it have got in the paper if a guy had taken a picture. Because you know, he....he didn't want anything, because he probably reminded that

representative of it the next time he needed something you know, he'd of called him and said, 'Now you know I didn't write something in my paper about you flying up here in a State airplane for your mama's funeral, but now I need you to do something for me'. And Carl wasn't beyond that. But I guess what I'm getting at is, even after I got in the Ranger service I've always respected the fact that a Sheriff had to get elected to his office. I never did have a burning desire to a Sheriff of any county. I enjoyed my work of what I was doing. If I wanted to stay in law enforcement, I want to be a Texas Ranger. And I've had a lot of folksI've had folks offer to put as high as fifty thousand dollars in escrow for me to run for Sheriff of Gregg County, back when I was on the Highway Patrol and after I got in the Rangers. I didn't want to be Sheriff of Gregg County, I didn't have any desire to be Sheriff of Gregg County, and still don't. Ah...but I always respected that the guys that's Sheriff, whoever it is you know, that he's got to run so....and....and this is something that people don't understand about the way we work. My working conditions reflected on how well I got along with the local Sheriffs everywhere. And I made the statement a lot of times, and we've had folks advocate doing away with the Rangers and I've told....I've made this statement to a lot of Ranger meetings in Austin and other places, that if the Rangers are ever done away with 254 Sheriffs would probably be the ones that would do it, you know. Cause I don't think there's anybody else strong enough in politics to do it. And...and....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when did this Sissy run for....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Sissy Farenthal....this was back somewhere in this time and Cissy, you know...you know it was the same thing, she...she wanted to do away with the Rangers. But see, nobody like her can do it. It's going to have to take a group of somebody's and which will never happen. But back to...we was talking about the news media and how we get along. All

right, we were using the Sheriffs jails, we're using...we're having to....you got to work with these officers. You know, Tom Welch, Noble Crawford, whoever, they've got....they may have a skeleton or two in their closet somewhere, but all right so be it. What...you know, it's not.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who doesn't.

GLENN ELLIOTT:they're not killing anybody, they're not doing anything. Here I am trying to enforce the law and I enforce the law and I made a lot of good criminal cases and I did it through the cooperation of a bunch of Sheriffs and a bunch of Police Chiefs. And the Police Chief is appointed and it's political you know. I mean it's....you're talking about your City Commission, your Mayor and all and you got the same thing. So what I'm trying to get at is, if I'm working a criminal case I'm working with some of them all of the time. I don't care what it is because if it's a violation of law in the County it's their deal and we're helping them, City, County, whoever. All right, let them make the news releases and then....the news is going to come to you, they're going to go to everybody, cause they're going to....but let thelet the leader of the County or whoever, if it's in the City let the City do it, or County, the Sheriff and then they'll get back to you in a day or two, tomorrow's edition or maybe today's edition and ask you a question or two. If you like your name to be in print....which I didn't....I...I just liked to do my work, I...I did I guess ah....I'll get to that in just a second, but this is the way I found it worked, and it worked real well. Because if you do the Sheriff and the Police Chief that way they hadn't got much to complain to you about. You....you're a hand, it's not costing them one penny.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did ya'll get ah....public relations training in Austin?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, not much. Well probably an hour in patrol school, maybe one hour, maybe two.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about as a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, probably the same thing, yeah, probably the same thing. And it was always....you know, get along with your local officers and your County officials and County Commissioners and everybody you know. Because ah....it's the same way with your State Government because it's a...this is your livelihood. But I guess the only time I ever remember favoring a news....and you had to do that every once in awhile, but I don't remember having to do this but one time. And you got to do a favor to a news....I...I owe a favor to a guy in Dallas, during this FBI thing over at Tyler, came to my house and I told him, I said, 'It's all a bunch of bull', I said, 'Put what you want to in the paper partner'. I...I went outside and he knocked on my door and I didn't want my wife and I think one of the kids was home then, and I didn't want them to hear the conversation, I said, 'I'll talk to you out on the front porch, just come out here and we'll talk as long as you want to'. And...and he told me thatwhat....all about this Tom Welch thing. And I said, 'You know, they're investigating us, the Rangers in particular, for this deal up....you know, it's a political things as far as the Attorney General's concerned and ah....they want to indict as many officers as they can, they'd like to indict a Ranger and ah...because they've got political ambition to get their name reported'. But I said, 'This will....nothing will ever come of this', I said, 'I'll tell you that right now'. So he didn't print anything. I've got his name somewhere and I'm...I thought about looking him up. The only time...and I owe him a favor and if I was still working as law enforcement and I'm in the Dallas area and he called me and wanted something I'd get it. Because I owe him a favor. And ah....cause he knew...he believed me and I was telling him the truth andand it proved that...in the...at the end. But I know when the Sheriff and I were working down in Panola County working this case down there where they beheaded...have I got...we got to that hadn't we? We covered that....no?

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know I don't think we got to that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we're coming to it. And ah...this was...this was a....and the news media got....kind of got carried away with it and of course the Sheriff kind of helped a little bit down there and Johnny was a good friend of mine. But I...we're talking about news media right now, so we're not....but this was a pretty heinous crime, this guy had been decapitated completely. And I know you've heard me tell the story, but we found the body but we didn't find the head for some time. We had people out there looking in the river, happened on the banks of the river. So anyway ah....they ah....the stories came this was probably a...possibly a mafia killing you know and ah....under world and all this kind of stuff. And ah....so I didn't put anything in the paper cause I...I didn't know what it was you know, so there wasn't no need of me speculating. But ah....it didn't wind up that, that's what it was but ah... we got on this guy real stout and knew that....a suspect, we knew he was in Shreveport, Louisiana. And I...I'd been over there two or three days and we was right on his tail. And ah....and found...in fact we found his pickup at the airport and...and got him arrested before he got....when he got off the plane in Reno, that's how close we were to him. Well the news found out about it, that we knew who he was and....through some source and they've got....and anyway they're trained for that. And so they call me, the local paper here does and caught me....I get in home about ten o'clock at night and I imagine they hear me check out probably and they got....and so they call me and said, 'Glenn we understand that you've got this guy identified and you've got a warrant for him'. And of course this is before ah....I don't....I don't think he's ah....he's got...no this is the day before, we had him identified and...before we...we had him arrested. But anyway, I said, 'Well what you're saying may be true', and I said, 'As a personal favor to me I wish you wouldn't print it in the paper because if it is true and the guys still here, it's going to...', I said, 'This is a big story,

it's been covered heavy through East Texas and Louisiana in all the news and TV', and I said, 'I know that you got you a scoop you think'. But I said, 'If you put it in there we might catch the guy, you don't know if we know who he is and we may catch him but it may take us a long time'. And he didn't print it, he didn't print it. And ah....so the next day we get him arrested...or two days later. And so we go to Reno, the Sheriff and I, and the guy decides to waive extradition and come back after a day or two out there of squabbling in court. And what do I do when I get to Dallas, Texas....we...we flew out of Shreveport and that's...cause it's convenient you know, and Carthage. And ah....we get back to ah...Dallas....to the Dallas/Fort Worth airport, I guess it was open then, I'm not sure....nah, probably Love Field....ah...I don't know, but anyway, I told the Sheriff...now this is the way I operate, I told the Sheriff....he already knew that the guy had called me, and I said, 'What do you think', I said, 'We owe this guy a favor', and I said, 'He didn't publish this in the newspaper, in the Longview paper and he could have'. I said, 'What do you think about us calling him and letting him get the scoop on the fact that we're bringing this guy back'. And he said, 'I think we should'. I went to the telephone and called him and we was just fixing to board the plane from Dallas to Shreveport. And ah...so he had a photographer waiting on us when we got off the plane at Shreveport. We owed him a favor you know, and you got to pay your debts.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and if you've got a reput....if you maintain a reputation like that you're not going to have any trouble out of the newspaper.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But if you'd been, 'Now you better not publish this because I'll...you know...'

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Oh, I mean he could of done what he wanted to and I knew it. I had to...I'm....I'm at his mercy, you know. And...and...and this is all...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well your good relationships boils down to that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That....and anything you go at. This is what I'm trying to get over about law enforcement. I could of gone in here and tried to make a criminal case on the Pines Motel for having two pros...and did work it a whole lot you know. And maybe this or that and...and severed my relations with all the local officers probably, and officials here. And....and....and what would I have accomplished if I...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what would you have lost.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. What would I accomplish by going arresting and making some misdemeanor cases....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well your loses would have tremendous.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and....I enjoyed good relations with them and we solved a lot of criminal cases. And Bill Wilson wrote an article that, they...Bill said, 'Glenn I'm doing a job....good job'. And I appreciated that and the people in the department took up for me and I'm sure they were concerned about ah... a little pressure. I never did worry about it. If a man's out here doing his job working, you know, fifty, sixty, eighty hours a week and documented andand I documented all my.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You don't have time to worry about it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I told the intelligence section that come in and tell me where the vice was, I said, I know where the vice is, you know, you don't have to tell me. I said, you know I tried to get 'em to turn vice over to intelligence a bunch of years ago. They didn't have....they don't...they have no responsibility at all, still don't. Well the horse races. But ah...ah...I didn't

have time to do that, I ...I was busy with murders and rapes and robberies and things that was hurting citizens. You go to a whore house in Kilgore, Texas you go there voluntarily, don't nobody put a gun on you and force you to go over there you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's right. Well let's take a quick break tonight and ah...and make a short one and next week we'll get back serious.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We'll start in '75.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Good place to stop.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Good year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, June 19, 1995, continuation on the life Glenn Elliott. And Glenn I think we're ready to start in what, January of 19..?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '75.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '75.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And today's Juneteenth.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Juneteenth.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I should of taken off today, you know that. You know that's one of the first things ah...ah....we got into....when G.W. got to be captain of Company B...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Burkes.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Burkes....ah....they made Juneteenth a State holiday while he was captain. And he of course...it came out in the bulletin, we were all notified, and during this period of time we've ah...ah...we're fixing to get to the period of time that I think I made a note of it, that they started frowning on us working...we started taking off all Saturday's, you know, supposed to take off two days a week. And ah...and if we worked a holiday we had to take another day off in lieu of this holiday. But G.W. madesaid, 'Now Juneteenth's a holiday', but he said, 'I'm

going to fire any Ranger that takes off on Juneteenth'. He said, 'I want you to work and take off another day'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what...what...with all this extra time you got on your hands, what did you do?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I...I still worked on a Saturday, I just didn't show it on my reports you know. And ah...and I...I started slowing down a little too I guess, but I'd take off some Saturdays. But you know, it... it...

make reports and...and ah...you're still active on the telephone, they didn't say you couldn't talk on the telephone you know. And ah...but yeah, it was probably good for me because I started taking off some Saturdays. But in January ah...I...the first part of January on the 5th in fact ah...Los Angeles police officers had called for some ah...assistance in the murder of a policeman in Los Angeles. And I worked with them in Canton and Tyler in the first part of January and we ran two suspects on the polygraph and eliminated them. They was...and I...I never did...of course one of the problems that you find and they were working leads you understand, and this is something that we did quite frequently you know. I mean I've been to Los Angeles you know and I just thought it was necessary and serious enough for me to go instead of trusting somebody else to do that for me. And that's what these officers were doing. But they had two suspects in the...up at VanZandt County and obviously ah...the Ranger in Tyler was out of pocket for some reason or other because I wouldn't...I'd of been assigned. But ah...we eliminated the two suspects that they had that were in the Los Angeles area at the time of the crime. And ah...they were pretty cooperative. And I went to Austin to a refresher course in January in this blood stain, Dr. McDonald was down there for a two day ah...school and he's the one that perfected this blood stain. And so it had been awhile since we had our school up in Florida and so ah...captain

said...asked me if I wanted to go, and I did, because I enjoyed listening to him, he was a good instructor. And I did pick up a few extra points you know that I'd probably missed down there. Ah....I was in court some more. And we started in the latter part of January ah... we was having a lot of equipment thefts here through the country, and still you know, Mathis is dead and ah...ah....Guy Morgan's in the penitentiary. And ah....but we started....we was having a lot of equipment thefts, just backhoes, frontend loaders, tractors and what have you. And there was a guy that was up at.....Billy Rex Pickett, up at ah....Saltillo...that's up there where Mitchell and them finally ran that guy down you know and got in a shoot out, that kidnapped the little girl you know, down in Central Texas. And he'll get into that with you when you talk with him, the one that Slick ran up and got her out of the car you remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Slick Alford?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....this all happened...that's right up in the edge of Hopkins County close to the Wood County line up there. Anyway ah....we had a suspect up there and some others and so we started setting up all night surveillance's on all the river bridges in our company area, from Gainsville to...well from Cook County to ah....Bowie County. Every bridge that crossed the river well two Rangers would be there all night long. And Red Arnold and I took the bridge up at ah....across up at...where Naples I guess up there, due north of here. And ah....every time we'd set up we'd catch a tractor thief. We just didn't have....couldn't stop 'em. So we started this and...and ah...it worked out good and we slowed 'em down a little bit.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me ask you, you set up on the all night....and....

GLENN ELLIOTT: We'd stop every truck that was coming out of Texar.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Rangers wouldn't do this today would they? They're more...they...they're more, if I understand it today, they're investigator they work more after it's already happened.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, we did that then. The Rangers could do anything they wanted to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know they did that, but I'm saying, I know you did all this, but I'm saying today, this like setting up all night surveillance's and stuff like that, do they do that much now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't know whether they do or not, but they should if they got a problem. You know, if we got a major problem, a cattle theft or...or equipment theft or....and they should. And the only reason we didn't do more of it then was because the time element, we just didn't have time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that's what I'm getting at, with the forty hours a guy...

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we took time you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN:a guy spends...I mean it's a forty hour restriction they have on a Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well we had a forty hour restriction. You just do...you handle that with a fountain pen you know, that's ah...that's how you handle that. And ah...but you...you got a problem and that's what we're getting paid to do and ah...and it was....we were successful and that's what counts you know. I was out to Midland ah....on an oil field theft investigation the same month, January.

ROBERT NIEMAN: While you were out there, did you work with John Woods any on oil field?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I worked with John Wood a lot, yeah. Ah....I believe by this time John had already gone to ah...down in the valley, down to Corpus, but ah...I'd worked with John Wood and John was a good oil fielder. And of course that was his specialty you know and they didn't have a whole lot of other calls out there to do. And the major companies would call the Rangers, sometimes in preference to calling to local officers you know. Because the major companies all had investigators and they had a Special Ranger Commission you know. Well they liked to work with the Rangers, of course they'd always include the local officers too, but they...they'd notify the Rangers. And of course we had some Special Agents in here that were Special Rangers too, there was one in Humble, they had one in Tyler and Texas...Texas Company had one and Gulf had one. But ah...and I worked with them a lot you know and they worked on all this slant hole business. But ah...ah...John and them worked more oil field...well maybe not any more, but they ah....they seemed to be more specialized in it because that was the main problem out there, where we had all kinds of problems here. I'd have to apologize to the oil companies because.....(tape ends)....discuss this before. It's hard to put priorities on criminal investigations but you got a major oil company or independent or whatever, they're...they're making a lot of money out of this oil. And...and they....and they deserve more attention than what they're getting from law enforcement. Now I...I'd be the first to agree with them and I'll tell them that. But, what would they want us to work, the theft of some of the Christmas trees off of their lease or the murder and rape of one of their employees wives or daughters you know. And you know, you know what their answer would be.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sure.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So this how....this is how we'd explain to them and you could just do so much you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and I'm....I am in awe of ...of the dad gum hours I've put in after I'm setting here reading 'em you know and going through my reports. It just ah.....and I'd do it all over again you know. And....but it's ah...I just stayed out there all the time you know. And....and....and it's....I don't see how I held my health and my sanity. Ah....I'm back in Austin on....in February, the 3rd, instructing in DPS criminal investigating school. Ah....back in court in Tyler on the 5th. Ah....back to Austin on the 6th with evidence on a Smith County case to be tried in February. Ah....in court in February in that Smith County case and a defendant received 20 years, and this was the ah.....finally getting around to trying the female that was with Champion, the one over here on putting the Mexican in the sewer over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Over at Tyler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....I'm back in Monroe, Louisiana for three days in Februaryon the February the 18th, probably in a Federal Grand Jury down there, on that trip I made down to ah....ah....Monroe on the 4th of July of 1974. So ah.... I assist the Longview police in ah....in....in a robbery investigation, arrested two in February. Ah....it was a Safeway robbery. Ah....I'm back in Monroe, Louisiana again on the 28th in court for a hearing. Ah....I'm in Dallas and Austin on the 3rd of March having to answer ah....a doggone civil suit from a guy in the penitentiary... and ah.....another civil suit that was filed you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what kind of suit was it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh for....frivolous, you know, just a guy.... I I don't remember, I think it was the Shaw case. Didn't I mention the Shaw case where the guy that killed the policeman in Carthage and ah....and left another dead and ah....he had confessed that he had robbed a drug store in New London.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, that Charlie McConnico store. Was this one.... I remember the story, but is this the one where the guy got in the rotor of the helicopter down in Bowie County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, this was....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, well I remember this story, but they're kind of running together on me there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: This case here is the one....we talked about it here..... is a....is a death of a police officer and then this guy gets in the penitentiary, we try him on a change of venue, we go up in VanZandt County to try him and he gets in the pen and....and what he'd done ah....when I arrested him over in Louisiana he had over two thousand dollars in cash. And ah....so I brought it back to Carthage with him and turned it over to the Sheriff and got a receipt from him. And the money belonged out of this burglary, it wasn't a robbery it was burglary over at the drug store over in New London out of the safe. Sobut of course you know, he told me where it came from. But I....of course it's our....the Sheriff of a county.... I think we may have gone through this, but if we didn't, the Sheriff of a county is responsible for property. And ah....and in order to keep property you're putting yourself in a....and we....and we keep good records on it, and we even kept pretty records then, they keep better records now, they've got forms now. But I just got a receipt from the Sheriff for the money in Shaw's possession and he sued me and the Sheriff and Panola County for the money, because we deprived him of the money, that he could of bought law books and studied for an appeal and ah....so I've got to go to Austin and....and give a deposition to the Attorney General who represents us you know. And....and....and it was filed in Federal Court and it was later dismissed. And ah....ah... we had a jail escapee ah....an old boy

named George Carlson. George was as good a burglar as you'll ever see and he's was the one that burglarized Peppy Blount's house here in Longview, along with several others. And ah....he ah....he escaped from jail and ah....we ran him down. Oh, we was running him down, but we didn't catch him. But in the meantime we had the trial of the Kirkendall murder over in Marshall, that's the guy that ah.....we talked about I think a couple weeks ago. There was a butcher and his daddy was a Fireman and ah....ah....we tried one of the defendants in that. Ah....arrested two people....two more people in the Safeway robbery here in Longview while I was waiting on ah.....picking a jury. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, we haven't heard, is anybody knocking off Elysian Field's in awhile.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we're getting around to it and it'll be ah....ah....we ah....we hadwe had this Safeway store robbed here in Longview and ah.... I furnished Texarkana, Arkansas.....ah....Texarkana, Texas with information on the two suspects that we'd identified. And they arrested both of them after a running gun battle up there in Texarkana. And ah....ah.... I recovered the property taken in Peppy Blount's burglary for....by Carlson, it was in Houston. Ah... back in Marshall in court on March 18th in ah....this ah....Kirkendall....ah....first subject we tried ah...received the death penalty in that case. Ah....went to Houston as soon as I got this trial over with in March and arrested Carlson in the Blount burglary and others. And ah...we had ah....it was a funny thing aboutwe'd recovered about ten thousand dollars worth of property down there in Houston a couple of days.....we was down there a couple of days. But what had happened, old Carlson had escaped jail and he was a good burglar and he worked alone and he had befriended aa....a young couple here in Longview that was crippled, this man was. And he was a CB nut and ah....had all kinds of CB equipment in his house and Carlson had been

staying with 'em some. And ah...we found out about him and interviewed him and ah...and he was Carlson's contact and in fact he'd him from the jail, before he broke out of jail and talked to him on the phone, so that's how we identified him as I remember. And he had been in touch with him by CB radio. And ah...he was coming out of Florida, he went down to Florida and committed several....and he'd....he'd go to the finer homes. I'm talking about the people that, you know, Peppy's got a nice pad over here and ah...he'd....he'd pick professional people and ah...and he knew their habits, he wouldn't have to look at them long, a lawyer goes to the office and his wife goes here or there you know. And....and ah....anyway ah....we set a surveillance....in fact we set awe got an intelligence officer and a deputy to stay out there at that house most of the time. And ah...of course we had other things that was going on and ah....anyway ah....he established contact with him by telephone and CB radio. But he finally....instead of coming through here from Florida....he was disposing of most of his stuff in Houston, and he went on direct to Houston, so we had him arrested down there, we knew where he was going and he had told this guy. And ah...but ah....Carlson had....he had hurt the country he ah....a lot and we recovered a lot of property down there. I arrested a fugitive for Marion County and ah....that same....and cleared some ah....three robberies in Houston, three in Dallas and three in....oh this was with Carlson, yeah.....in Florida. So he had committed three burglaries in Florida, three in Houston and three in Dallas since he escaped and he only escaped ah....first part of March you know. So there's nine burglaries he'd committed and we're talking about high priced stuff he was getting. I'm back.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when these guys would fence this stuff, what would they get on the dollar, on average?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, probably ten cents would be a ...would be a lot. I'd say ten cents on the dollar, if they gave ten cents on the dollar they'd be paying a lot of money, you know. And that....that's not much you know, when you get to thinking about it. But diamonds and gold and silver, and that's what he was getting you know and ah....it's easy to melt down and ready profit and it's hard to identify after it's melted you know, and it's impossible. I'm back in court in March ah....I...I go to Dallas with Carlson and clear seven burglaries that he'd committed up there prior to escaping jail. This is something else, I told you all along, you know I like to clean an old boy up. I mean Carlson's going to the penitentiary as a habitual criminal for the rest of his life and ah.... I don't want him to go down there and a bunch of burglaries hanging on..... I want to try to help somebody recover their class ring or their daddy's Masonic ring or their mother's silver or whatever he took you know, that hadn't been melted down or something. And so I tried to stay after him. The old....and ah....last of March this Corley that killed these four people ah....broke jail over at Smith County and we looked for him until we apprehended him, caught him again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He....named Corley?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he any relation to old Cliff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, not any....I.... I don't think so, because I....I'm sure he wasn't because Cliff would of ah....cause he was the one that killed the two....you know we went into it I think last ah....year...killed a woman and little boy down here on the way to Lake Cherokee in Rusk County and then killed a....robbed the old woman.... I don't know why he didn't kill her.....out at White Oak and took her purse and a shotgun and killed the woman in.....playing the organ in the Church and then another woman over there. But anyway, he broke jail and we got him back. And

ah....ah....recovered a D-6 caterpillar in the Big Sandy area that was stolen in Henderson. I'm in Tyler in court ah... for a hearing in the Corley case in April and they had a change of venue and went to Waco with it. Ah.... I assist in the Hawkins Bank robbery case. Ah....we was under surveillance...G.W. and them had an old boy out of Fort Worth that was ah... they had an informant riding with him that was taking...going down into Mississippi with some stolen property and was supposed to have lead them to ...I mean he...he'd been stealing a lot of stuff and taking it down there and this informant didn't know where they going. So G.W. called us and called down here and told me that ah..ah...George Breakfield, a Ranger in the company, was...this guy was informing to him and George and some more of them, I think Charlie Moore and ah...maybe Stuart Dowell and then I picked 'em up here in...over here at the county line and we was going to follow him all the way down to Mississippi and find out what they was fencing. Well we get over to Greenwood, Louisiana and ah...they stop him at the truck stop there at the...you know...and they're in a truck with some...a stolen truck with some stuff in it that was stolen. And ah...and Breakfield's dressed casually and he gets out and talks to the informant while the Louisiana people is checking the truck and something had gone wrong and ah...so they decided that we better arrest them. Well here we are in Louisiana you know and...and ah...so I...I get on...I run on down to Greenwood and ah....or to the truck stop there on interstate ah...what Kelley.**Error! Bookmark not defined.**

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kelly's Union 76.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, yeah. And there's nearly all...at that time there was nearly always a Caddo Parish Sheriff's deputy around there, because boy that was a...if you knew anything about Kelley's truck stop, it was just a lot of traffic and there was always something going on at Kelley's. And they kept a deputy or two out there nearly all the time. A lot of prostitutes hanging

around that motel there you know. Anyway, I go on down there and get a Caddo Parish deputy and tell 'em, you know, we got this truck coming up here and if ya'll...we need to arrest this guy, there's a felony warrant for him out of...and I did that. And so we did and carried him on into Shreveport and well he spent the night over there and ah....he didn't want to waive and the next morning he decided to waive and I got...I go over there and get him and bring him back to Texas you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you. Theoretical case, you're in a high speed pursuit, you're a Texas law officer and you're in a high speed pursuit and the person you're chasing goes into Louisiana, Arkansas, it doesn't matter where, but he goes....do you have a legal right to continue the pursuit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, you're jurisdiction ends at the state line. And ah....of course you've got the obligation to see that he's arrested.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Particularly from a legal stand point.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. You...no, we can't...we can't chase him over in Louisiana and arrest him and bring him back in Texas, or can't arrest him, we don't have any authority to arrest anybody in Louisiana. And ah...although he's guilty as sin you know, but ah...but there's ways of handling that you know, just like we handled this.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sure.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....so I...you know, I...I got good rapport with the Louisiana officers over there and ah...and enjoyed working with them. Man it was a....you know ah...let's see ah...well we was on a surveillance of a bank in Mt. Enterprise for two days in May. This was an FBI case, they always called us, they had an informant telling us that they was going to rob the ah...bank in Mt. Enterprise. And on this particular case I remember I...I went to work every

Mon....every day at nine o'clock those two days with a business suit on, I'm the President of the bank. But I've already smuggled me a shotgun in there ahead of time and ah....I'm sitting in the President's office from all...during the banking hours for two days. Of course nothing happened. And we had.... walkie talkies was just getting pretty popular then and ah...ah...before we had some that was so large you couldn't use 'em you know. So we had pretty good communications. But this was not uncommon, we'd sit on a lot of surveillance's with the FBI on informant information from their....mostly from them, but sometimes from a source of ours you know. And nothing happened. I'm back in court in Marshall that month. Ah...ah....and we're....we're conducting a surveillance on another known offender ah...who was a safe burglar in this area then. And ah....I instruct in a police school in Atlanta in June, first part of June.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Atlanta, Texas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....and I assisted in a narcotic bust at the same ah...ah...ah....time. And ah...helped Panola County work some burglaries and arrested a suspect. And ah...and on July the 9th of 1975 Ms. Inez Phillips from Gladewater, Texas was murdered and ah...this was a tough case. And ah...I worked on that thing regular for two years. And I think I probably should just go on through the whole story.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's just take the whole case.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...ah...and then we can get back to ah...cause this is going to take a little time. I'll mark this out after while. But ah...this will kind of show you how....how we got involved in things. Ah...they called me, Jay Banks was a Police Chief in Gladewater at the time and he was a retiring Ranger Captain and then had been a Police Chief down at Big Spring and then at Palestine and then to Gladewater. Jay didn't stay too long in any place, you know, a few years, but ah...this is '75 and Jay's Police Chief and he called and asked for my assistance and so

did the Sheriff of Marion County, Tom Welch was Sheriff. And ah...this Ms. Phillips was a real community leader, she was very good about giving to any Church, she supported all the efforts of people, the Church people or people in need, she was a very wealthy woman. And she was found ah.....she'd been hit in the head and stabbed, there was a butcher knife sticking in her chest, she was laying there on the bed. And ah.....her body was discovered oh reasonable.....probably nine o'clock in the morning or somewhere like that and ah...we spent just about the rest of the day at the crime scene, even before they moved her body. We....we did a....what we thought was a real good crime scene search, myself and one of the deputy's and one of the Gladewater police officers.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Jay help out?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Jay was leaving it to us, he....he's....he's.....ah.....and ah....there was a shot fired in the house that went through some drapes and ah.....but it didn't go out the window. Ah.... I believe that's right, cause seems.....ah...we recovered ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: When did they determine the had happened?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It had happened the night....that night before, because she had, had somebody with her, it actually happened before bedtime the night before.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how was the body discovered?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....one of the kids ah...ah.....grand kids came by to see her and ah..... I believe that's.....ah.... I think one of Jack's, she had one son and a daughter. The son lived there in Gladewater and ah....they discovered the body that ah.....next morning. And Ms. Phillips had ah.....had built a new room on to her house and ah.....and this is a case.... I don't want to be critical of anybody, but it was such awe had so many people to talk to and she had just built this additional room on her house for canning, she loved to can. And she built another closet and

she.... and she wanted a floor safe. Cause the house was burglarized a couple of years before that and they'd kidnapped a safe out of there. And they had.....she had a lot of nice jewelry in this safe and ah....in fact the crime scene, I'd looked at pictures of the burglary scene and ah.....they looked a whole lot alike. The room was all torn up in the burglary and they kidnapped the safe and to kind of show you what some of the things the safe had in it the two years before was, I noticed and this was unusual foreven for me to figure how, but where her husband had bought her a pair of earrings at Zales Jewelry in 1938 and gave ah....oh....a thousand dollars for 'em you know in '39, which was a lot of money in 1939 you know. And you could buy a new Cadillac for that you know. And ah.... they ah.....anyway, we was trying to tie the burglary and the murder together if we could. Cause you know, we don't know. But.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now, wait a minute, Jack Phillips the oil man, that's her son?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right. Jack's her son and ah....he's still in the oil business over there and his dad was already die....had died just a short time before this. And ah....he had a sister living in Austin. But ah....they ah....ah....we worked this thing solid and....and she had, had her safe installed and...and Jack had told her....a floor safe, in this new house. So ah.....this was a real big element in this thing, turned out to be and....and so we had....we was running down leads, so we'd get together and made an assignment to one of the officers to check all of the people who worked on the house, get their names, full names and date of birth.....from the contractor, we had two contractors, the building contractor and ah.....air conditioner contractor, only two people that worked on the house. And I knew the air condition contractor personally and Iand I knew all of his employees you know. And ah....soand didn't have any problem with him. I talked with

him and I told him I said, 'I'll take care of this, because I know the guy and I know who works for him'. And....and we ran ah..... I think two of his people on polygraph right soon. And one of 'em was a guy.....you know, he'd....he'd been having a little trouble and ah....but not much. But we cleared them out. But anyway, it winds up in the end that one of the guys that was laying the tile in this room is the one that was actually responsible for the.....for the burglary. And I'll get around to that in a little while, I'll tell you how it happened. But anyway, we worked this case forrunning leads down, we set up a hot line, Jack put up a fifty thousand dollar cash award....reward for any information to lead to an indictment and conviction ofof who killed him mother, which was a lot of money you know. And we had a hot line over there and ah....in fact we got two or three calls that we recorded on this hot line from this guy, he was drunk every time he called. And he... he'd put up some phony identification number and claim he knew something about it, but he never would agree to meet anybody to tell 'em about it. And he'll call back and he identified himself somesome crazy.....but he was always drunk when he called. And of course we had this in the back of our mind, but we're still running leads and ah.....oh man we....they tried everything in the world, they even had psychics over there you know and....and this and that, cause psychics come around.....of course I don't pay any attention to them at all and never did and never will. But ah....we got ah.... I got a call from a guy in the penitentiary and I made several trips to the penitentiary and we'll be coming to that later on.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Down at Huntsville?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh every....every penal institute in the State.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, I meant this call.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, this was from I think ah.....down around Sugarland is where I went, at that pen down there below Houston. And ah.....anyway, I flew down there and ah....talked to this

guy and we kind of got into that once before I think maybe just in talking but not on tape. But ah.....and his ah....he was in the pen and his brother was fixing to go andand he was trying to keep his brother out of the penitentiary. Andand he.....and he didn't.....he knew that some people here had talked about a safe being in.....a floor safe being in Ms. Phillips' house. Well, what happened was, this drunk that had been calling was a guy that worked for the carpet people that laid the tile. And he and this old boy that we arrested later, and is still on death row, ah.....were trying to court the same old bar maid down here on 149 at one of those Honky Tonks down there and her name was Stormy Summers. And she was big old blond headed ah....girl and ah....had been living with a motorcycle bandito and had gone back to living with him, when we arrested her later she was living with one again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did she ever live out here on this lake between Longview and Hallsville?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....not to my knowledge.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....she ah....ah....this boy in the penitentiary had overheard them talking about a safe. This guy from Ca Canada, he said, 'I don't know his name, he's a Canadian though, I know he's Canadian, from Canada'. And said he and this old boy, and he didn't know his name, who was a carpet setter, was both trying to go with this girl and they'd get down there and get drunk and brag about being burglars and what all they could do. And....and ah....this guy told ah.....was sitting there talking aboutsaid, 'Well I know where there's a safe that's a floor safe and there's a lot of money in it and blah, blah, blah', you know, ' And this is a very rich woman'. And they carried 'em over there to look at it. And there was another guy that this guy in the penitentiary knew went with them. Just rode over there and back with them. And he was a

convict too, ex-convict, but he wasn't involved in this thing. But....so anyway, he tells me all this and I come back and make arrangements to get him out of the penitentiary early because his brother had went down the same day that I flew down there and they carried him down there in a car, which was...you know, I....I couldn't keep up with everybody that went to the penitentiary, especially for drunk driving. But to make a long story a little bit shorter, I started to work on this thing and he told me that this Canadian had lived with a Longview fireman that had later got fired for smoking marijuana. Well I come back of course and I go to the Fire Department and yeah, they tell me exactly who...'Yeah we had an old boy here that was a pretty good fireman but he got to smoking pot and his names so and so'. And ah....so I had to look him up and he was working on oil drilling and was living up in Wood County and I made a couple of trips up there and finally just went up there and waited on him, he was working twelve hour shifts and working...drilling somewhere down around Palestine and driving back and forth. And so I waited on him to get in and interviewed him and ah....and identified...he didn't know this Canadian's name but he knew his name was Stan, his first name was Stan, cause he stayed with him. And...and the fire...the fire people had already told me that this Canadian had roomed with **himError! Bookmark not defined.** in an apartment complex and ah...he...and ah....he said, 'I don't know his name Mr. Elliott', but he said, 'I'll tell you that he was arrested for drunk driving on July the 4th of 1975'. That was five days before he killed Ms. Philllips. And ah....said ah....there in Gregg County. So I come on back home the next day and I get the jail records out and I find that ah....Stanley Eugene Falder was arrested for drunk driving, well got his record at the jail and he'd been convicted for assault in Canada, shot some teenage kids. And had a pretty good record on him, had a photograph, had his fingerprints and ah....of course we checked his prints against the latent prints that we'd picked over there at the scene, but we didn't make it

cause he was wearing gloves we later found out. But I can't find out too much about ah....about him other than I found out that he was working for a guy on South Green Street, his wife....just out south of the underpass down there. There were honky tonks on the west side of Green Street and a service station and a little garage in the....in the old service station bays on the east side of Green Street.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the name of that honky tonk? I know it but I can't think of it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I can't remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But it was rightit was there and this couple ran it from ah....and they got in a squabble and ah....and the Canadian was running the service station and the garage for these people and they was running the bar and the man and woman busted up and went out of business and the Canadian left ah....before they did with all the receipts, seven hundred and something dollars in cash. And ah....the....the woman went to Houston I think and the man went to Bartersville, Oklahoma, that owned the garage and the woman ran the honky tonk. Soand....and I get in touch with him, go to Bartersville and ah....interview him and get a statement that ah....the guy, Canadian, beat him....got an affidavit and came back and filed on him for theft over....I think it probably got up to two hundred then you know, it was a felony offense. And ah.... I used the ah.... Ion the file, on the outside of the file that I carried into the District Attorney's office, I said thatmade a note that this guy was a suspect in the Phillips murder case. Well it was a year later or more before he was arrested. And ah....and we're still working on this thing. I'm going to Fort Worth and Oklahoma City and back to the penitentiaries and just every lead that I get on it I was working on it. But this is got to lay until we can ah.....identify him you know, for sure and make sure whether he's guilty or not of this crime.

And ah....he gets arrested, he'd been to Las Vegas and he bought him an old Cadillac and he still had a Texas driver's license. And he was driving from Las Vegas to Miami, Florida and he was going the northern route, up through Colorado. And a Highway Patrol stopped him for a traffic violation, a minor traffic violation and ah....well he was driving a Las.....aa Nevada vehicle and a Texas driver's license and so he ran him on NCIC and of course made a hit, that we had him wanted. So then they notified Gregg County he was in custody and ah....so the District Attorney noticed on the filer that I'd filed that he was a suspect and they called me and they was debating whether to extradite him or not for that offense you know, from Colorado. Cause money was getting a little tight then, they didn't go just get everybody. And of course our witness, who he'd swindled, he had....he was no longer in Bartersville, I tried to contact him and he had moved. And ah....so anyway, I said, 'Let's bring him back you know'. So they sent up there and picked him up and ah....and we brought him back and ah....or they brought him back, and ah....and so we started talking to him the next after he was here. And ah....and I just interviewed him onon the theft because I wanted to get him down on it and he confessed that he left with the man's money and we took a voluntary statement from him and he signed it. And so we had himwe had him you know, on the theft and ah....and we could do something with him there, so then we approached him on the Phillips case. And ah....of course he claimed he didn't know anything about it. So....and he agreed to take a polygraph. So we....we carried him to Tyler the following day and ah....had an afternoon ah.... like a three o'clock appointment and ah....ah...we....he got over there and he....the polygraph operator ah....was briefing him and ah....and told him if he'd lied that he was going to tell us if he was lying. And that's the way they always brief them you know. And so he decided he didn't want to take the polygraph on the Phillips murder. So....of course what we do then we....you know, if a guy refuses well we know

that probably he's guilty you know and because he's been.....the man's convinced him that if he lies he's going to tell him he's lying. So what we do, just get started talking to him. I talked to him for probably forty-five minutes, hour I guess and....and he finally said, 'Well I can't tell you about it but if you'll give me a pen and a piece of paper I'll write it down'. And he started writing and he wrote about two paragraphs about the murder and then he started talking about it. And he confessed, told who went over there, told about the old carpet guy carrying 'em over there and showing 'em the place. Some other boy went over there with them he didn't know and they came back and Stormy wentafter....they all did this after closing time and pointed the house out. So they come back over andand go their separate ways and he and Stormy then decide they'd just cut everybody else out and go beat that safe themselves and get what's out of it and leave the country. And ah....so....and they do go over there. And Stormy knocks on the back door and tells Ms. Phillips she's got car trouble. And ah....Falder's hiding in the dark and Ms. Phillips lets her in and of course then they.....and she don't want to tell 'em where the combination is to the safe. And there wasn't a dern thing in the safe, she never had put anything in it. And probably if she'd told 'em where the combination was they'd of probably opened it andand ah....gone on about their way. But ah....they....she didn't and ah....and they killed her. And ah....he said that ah....Stormy hit her in the head with a pistol, she had kind of acted up and knocked her down on the bed and he said he could tell she was suffering and he just stuck that knife in her heart to get her out of her misery. That's what he....I mean that's the way he meant it. And let me tell you what happened to this doggone ah....ah.....he told....he ah....you know we went ahead that same day and arrested Stormy Summers and the same night we.....never went to bed that night, worked all night that night and part of the next day. And the next day we arrested this Molten, this guy that ah.....the carpet man and ah....and of course hehe come down with

his part of it. Stormy never did....never would tell, she never made a statement about anything, she never admitted anything until we had the second trial. And ah....and I'll get to that in a few minutes. But ah....but let me tell you what happened. We took this statement from him over at Tyler, set there, there wasn't any arguing, there wasn't I mean he was just as cooperative as anybody you've ever seen. We sent out and got something to eat because we was all hungry, let him smoke, furnished him things to drink. Took this statement from him and brought him on back, arrested these other people. We get into Court ah.....of course II have toit takes me two or three weeks to find this witness up in Oklahoma, cause we've got towe got to establish that the arrest was good you know. And he had moved down here in East Texas down around Hemphill or somewhere on one of those lakes down there and I finally ran him down. And ah....ah....but it was ah....we tried him in ah.....here in Longview and got him a death penalty. And the courts reversed it. They said that ah....there was a lawyer appealed it, he had a good lawyer, Vernon Solomon from Marshall represented him, Solomon's a pretty good criminal lawyer. And ah....he was court appointed by the way, but he did a good job. But anyway ah... the Court of Appeals ruled that the statement wasn't any good because ah.....the reason that Falder gave a statement was that he was.....for fear of the polygraph. And that when he told us that he didn't want to take the polygraph test that we should of immediately removed him from that building. And any interrogation we did should have been somewhere else. Now isn't that a bright decision for a bunch of jurist to make you know. And here we are working all day and all night and they're sitting down there in their air conditioned rooms, smoking their cigars and waiting on cocktail hour and make a decision that.....that....that Falder was under duress because he was afraid of the polygraph. And he....he wasn't afraid of anything you know. And ah....he set down there voluntarily and gave us a statement. So then we had to try him again and we got a

change of venue and tried him in Lufkin, Texas. Now he got the death penalty here, first time he was tried. We went to Lufkin, got to spend another week down there in Court. So we got to turn....we hadn't tried ah.....this Stormy yet. And ah.....so we have to turn her and let....get her to testify that she was along, and she did. And we got him the death penalty the second time and ah.....down at Lufkin. And ah.....he's still on death row right now, today and that's been seventeen, eighteen years ago. And ah....well two years after this.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Twenty years ago.....'75.....well since the crime.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well we was two years.....yeah, the crime.....two years after the crime before we caught him and another year probably before he was tried, I don't remember the dates. But anyway, he's been down there.....he's down there seventeen years, back in December of last year and ah....because I had to go to Sherman and testify in another case.....another hearing on him. And so they....they had a plea agreement with Stormy and let her plead and Molten had gone ahead and pled for his part of it and got a.....got a lot of time as I remember. But ah....this was an interesting case, I mean it...it.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well is he closer to....is he any closer to the lethal injection now than he was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....he should be. Ah.... I hadn't seen anything about it here lately. The last appeal up at Sherman ah....was an incompetent lawyer. And ah.....I'll tell you what, you couldn't buy a much better lawyer than Solomon in East Texas you know as far as a crim.....cause I'll tell.....and he did a heck of a good job. Because I'm a witness, I know..... I know what the lawyers is. So

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'd like to ask one question, I'd like to quit a little early tonight if you don't care.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, we can quit right here, that's good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....what ah....he put up that....ah....Taylor....I mean ah....Inez Phillips' son, Jack, put up that fifty thousand dollar reward. What would happen today if you went back a hundred.....did what they did a hundred years ago, fifty thousand dollars, wanted dead or alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well somebody would wind up dead you know, no doubt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But I mean, can you legally do that today?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no, no....well you could legally do it, but you couldn't legally kill....you know ah....whoever got killed would have to be a.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you be an accomplice then if you hired an assassin in a way?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....well of course Iyou know the way they did it back in those earlier days you know, they'd put up...of course theythey pretty well knew thenvery few people were committing most of the crimes, you know. This was done like the Dalton gang and we know they'rethey're running and robbing banks you know. And....and of course we knew a lot of things that was going on here now today the same people are doing it, but you can't just say, I'm going to give you fifty thousand dollars dead or alive, because you don't kill anybody unless it's just.....the only way it can be justifiable homicide is they're trying to kill you, you know. And back in the early days it wasn't that way. But Jack was sincere about putting up his money and....and....and we were hoping we could use it, we didn't have to, he didn't have to spend any of his money. It was all done by police work and ah....and he tried to give us some money. And ah....and of course we can't take rewards for anything, we....we're getting paid for what we do you know. But I spent a lot, a lot , a lot , a lot of hours on this thing. Jack Phillips and I, we'll get into this later as I go through the rest of this report, I've... his airplane....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think you said last....was it last week that Jack kind of mouthed off that ah....why aren't you doing more, when it first came up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Jack didn't mouth, no but Jack was a....he called Jim Ray and told Jim that he ah...ah....thought that I might need some help. Well see I had some help, I ah.....Max came up here, Red came over and did all the fingerprints for us. Red was the best fingerprint man.....Red Arnold was working in ah....ah.....Identification Bureau in Austin when he made Ranger. And ah.....no when he made Highway Patrol, he....his first job was in the Identification Bureau down at Austin and then he got into patrol school and then he made Ranger. And Red knew fingerprints as well as anybody in.....any Ranger in the State of Texas. So Red's doing our fingerprint work for us and Max was a Ranger and Max was helping handle the hot line over there. We set up a hot line in a motel over at Gladewater. And I had all the help I needed. If I'd needed any more I'd of called and got it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Mitchell still in Smith or did Stuart come in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no Stuart was over in Smith County by then and I don't think I used Stuart any, but I used ah....ah... I used some more of 'em out of Dallas. I think Charlie Moore came down here and helped operate the hot line some. We kept it twenty-four hours a day, going in the motel there. But mainly Red and Max and ah....because we was pretty good teams and that's all the help I thought I needed at that time. And it was all the help I needed. But ah....we ah....ah.....got into....oh just all kinds of areas on this thing. We got polygraph.....two polygraph operators, DPS polygraph operators set up in the Gregg County Courthouse here and we ran nearly every undesirable character in the Gladewater area. And see in the meantime we had ah.....we proved whoreally found out who took the safe two years before. Well we had to talk to these people. And I can get into that just a minute if you got

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, go ahead.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....this was a national known gang ah....the Jerry Ray James gang.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: In fact Jerry Ray James is out now as a protected federal witness. Cause he was instrumental and...and he was in the penitentiary for life, in the federal pen in Oklahoma and he was instrumental in....in ah....in helping solve this Woods murder, where Judge Wood got murdered down in San Antonio. And this ah....ah....I'm trying to think of the guy's name that ah...killed him but he's....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Haralson.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Haralson got a son's that's....

ROBERT NIEMAN: His son is Woody Haralson, that played in that TV series, what Cheers or something....

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....Jerry James was ah....his gang and they had robbed banks and they was in to prostitution and....and it was as close to the Texas Mafia as you could get. I mean they....he was an underworld character now and they was just sorry. And ah....he had a bunch of guys running with him and Benjamin Thomas Teasdale and Clifford Henry Boeing....well during this investigation they bring pictures over here that was made at the burglary scene and show it to us. And the room was torn up about the same and they'd had a piece of a key ah....a trunk key to a car and it was one of those key rings that pulled apart. And ah....by looking at it, it was pretty obvious that ah....it was David McDavid Pontiac in Fort Worth. But it....all you could see was part of the McDavid on the bottom line and part of the David on the top line, cause it was pulled in to. So I said, 'Well have ya'll done anything with this key'. 'No we hadn't you know'. They still had the key, they had found it where they had rolled the safe out of the back of the

house over to a vacant lot and loaded the safe in a car. And they found this trunk key laying on the ground. So ah...I take that key and go to Fort Worth with it and ah...Tom Arnold, a Ranger stationed in Fort Worth at the time, and I got with Tom and ah...we found out where an old ah...ah...oh a kind of organized crime type guy there in Fort Worth, I don't think he'd ever been convicted of anything but he was always in to something, and he would make these bonds for these known offenders and he was helping make the bonds for this Jerry Ray James gang. And it was common knowledge because everybody knows who makes the bonds, it's no secret you know. And his name was Garrett as I remember. And so I went to him and he admitted that he had helped Henry Boeing buy a new Pontiac when he got out of the penitentiary, bought him a brand new Pontiac. And ah...so we took this key and....to the Pontiac place and identified this car with the key. We ran the car down....well no wait a minute, we ident....we got the serial number of the car, that's what we did, got the serial number of the car that he'd purchased and ran it down, did a little history on it and ah...the car was down around ah...oh down southwest of Fort Worth somewhere, down in there around Stephenville or somewhere, I forget where it was. But Tom went off down there and located the car for us and....and the trunk key would fit the glove box in the car. Then we had....we got...I got with...while I was in Fort Worth I got with Fort Worth Intelligence and they had...they had been following Boeing around up there at night and they saw him running down the road just a week after this with his trunk lid bouncing up and down. And he finally pulled into an old club where he hung out there and they went down and physically looked at his car and ah...and the locking mechanism had been removed out the trunk. Well that...you know, they got the safe in there and shut the lid and they had to jimmy the lock to get it out, wherever they went to peel it you know, to get in it. Cause they....but we had...so....I'm telling you this to get to this how I operate with those old thieves and they...and if you've got

good rapport with a thief, if they respect you, you know and know that you mean business they'll pretty well do what you say. So I'm in Fort Worth and I need to talk to Henry Boeing because his car's been associated with this burglary and it's obvious. And I go to Garrett, I call him and tell him I need to see him and ah....where does want...you would never guess where he wanted to meet me. Out on Fort Worth Ave. there was an ice cream parlor out there, I forget the name of it, but they sold every kind of ice cream in the book and that's all they sold. And I met him at the ice cream parlor out there and...and ah...we set down and drank coffee (side of tape ends).... make bond for these people and we need to ah....I need to talk to Henry Boeing and it's about an important case. And I said, 'All I want you to do is get in touch with him'. And I said ah...'Leave it up to Henry whether he wants to talk to me or not'. And I felt like he would, unless he had killed Ms. Phillips. And so he said, 'Well now Mr. Elliott', he put that old con on me and then of course I guess he was sincere. But he said, 'I just don't have any idea where I can get a hold of Henry'. And I said, 'Get him the message Garrett', and I said, 'Now that's all I'm asking you to do'. I said, 'You don't live in....down in my part of the State'. And I said, 'You can't stand a whole lot of scrutiny from the Ranger's, and I said, 'I just want you to get Henry Boeing word that I need to talk to him'. And I said, 'I'm going to Dallas, Texas right now', and I said, 'I'm tired and I'm going to spend the night in Dallas and you can get a hold of me through the DPS headquarters in Dallas if you get a hold of him tonight'. So I get on...I hook 'em to Dallas and I...it's six, seven o'clock, I'm fighting that Dallas traffic you know and get out to the DPS office out there, it's out there where it's at now on Beltline Road, and I pulled up to the gas pump and you have to fill up your car...you have to identify yourself. I called in and identified myself and told them to give me a little electricity, we pumped our own gas you know trying to save a little money and ah....they said, 'Mr. Elliott you got a long distance call in here from Fort Worth'. And

I said, 'Well get the number and I'll be in there in a few minutes and call him'. And I went ahead and filled my car up with gas, went in and it was Garrett. And I called him and he said ah....and I'd already made reservations to stay there in Dallas and he said, 'I got a hold of Mr. Boeing and he said he wanted to talk to you and said it would take him about five hours to get here'. And well that's...you know, it's seven, seven-thirty and ah....I said, 'Well I'm going to call you back, just stay where you are, I'm going to see if I can get me a room over at the Holiday Inn at Euless and if I can that's where I'll be'. So I called over there and they said that they had a room, so I'll called him back and told him, I said, 'I'll be at the Holiday Inn in Euless', and I said, 'Ya'll just....when he gets there tell him to come up in the lobby and get on the telephone and call me in my room and I'll be in there asleep'. So I went to Euless and went to bed, like a tired man's supposed to do. And I was tired all the time Bobby, ain't no lie, you had to be, I realize now I was. Anyway ah....about ah...oh two or three o'clock in the morning, I think around two-thirty, my phone rings and it was Henry. And I was expecting him to be by himself and ah...so I told him to come on back to my room you know. And I got up and dressed and ah....I had two pistols in there, I never will forget this, and I thought well I'm going....I'm going to test him you know, to see what kind of guy he really was. So I unloaded one of them and ah...put it on cock, put the clip....empty clip back in it and laid it on the bed. And I had the other one laying under the cover where I was sitting and I let him....I was going to let him sit....there was two chairs in there, but I was going to sit on the bed, had my pad and all and....but Garrett comes with him, the guy I talked to and they're both in there. And set there and talked about this Phillips thing for about two hours. And ah....Henry assured....told me where he was, gave me his alibi, as well as he could and...and...and tried to convince me that he didn't know anything about it, which he didn't you know. But he....you know I said, 'Now Henry I...I can get a warrant for you for burglary,

statute of limitations is not out on it'. I said, 'I don't think I could send you to the pen on it', but I said, 'I can...I can cost you some money you know'. So I said, 'I don't want you lying to me'. And ah...and I hit him up about taking a polygraph, but he didn't want to take a polygraph. And he said, 'Mr. Elliott you offered me a polygraph once before and I spent my money and made the bond', and he said, 'I'm going to have to do it this time'. He said, 'You know how us old thieves are, we just don't want to get the wrap for taking the polygraph test you know'. But he drove from Oklahoma City to Fort Worth, Texas and set down there with me for two hours and got in his car and went back to Oklahoma City there's no doubt you know, that night. But it wound up that he wasn't responsible see. But I ma...I made a trip to....out in New Mexico. We'll get into this just a little bit since we've gone this far. And one of his running mates was in the penitentiary out at ah...in Lacuna, New Mexico, which is just out of El Paso. And ah...I think I've told you about this, but we fly out there, Jack flies me out there. And ah...the Ranger out there was working on the Narcotic Task Force down at McAllen and one of the DPS Intelligence agents met up at the airport and he drove us out there. Well we had an early lunch and I had an appointment with this counselor to be there at ah....one-thirty I think. And ah....so we got out there about twelve-thirty and ah....of course we'd already had an early lunch and got out there and of course what I'm wanting to do is, you know you've been with me, get your business tended to Glenn and we'll go do something else you know. And ah....so we get in the penitentiary out there and I identified....of course you got to identify yourself to get in, and we get in and I asked for this counselor and it takes ten or fifteen minutes for him to get up there. And he comes up and ah....I shake hands with him and said I...you know I've talked to him on the phone, cause you've got to get in touch with counselor in the federal then, you got to with everybody now just about, to talk to somebody in the penitentiary I understand. But....and I said,

'I need to talk to this guy', and his name has slipped my mind but I'll...it'll come to me maybe. But he ah....he said, 'Well Mr. Elliott you're going to have to wait awhile', and he said, 'He's taking a nap'. And I said, 'Go back there and wake that son-of-a-bitch up and tell him he's got company'. I said, 'I didn't fly from Longview, Texas out here to interview a man that's in the penitentiary and planning on sitting around waiting til he got through taking a damn nap you know'. And...well that kind of startled that guy, but you know what he did, he went and got him. And of course this guy was...I was trying....we hadn't dismissed the fact that the James gang was involved in it you know. So I just used the fifty thousands on him, I said, 'Now look here partner', I said, 'You're in the penitentiary, you got 25 years'. And I said, 'You've probably...your records you're probably going to have to stay at least 15 years'. And I said....at that time boy interest was pretty high in the '70's if you remember, I don't know whether you do or not.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I said, 'It don't take a genius to tell you what fifty thousand dollars would do for you for a month while your in the penitentiary and when you get out it'll still be laying there in the bank waiting on you and you'll have you something to start off on'. And I said, 'That's what we've got'. And he said, 'I wouldn't tell you if I knew who it was'. And I'm (unintelligible)...you know. He said, 'It wasn't me', and he said, 'I can tell you where I was on July the 4th 1975, I was in jail in... somewhere in Kansas'. And I got his records and sure enough he was. But still, he knew this bunch, he ran with them all the time, he'd been arrested with them. There was an old boy from out at West Texas that ran with them...

ROBERT NIEMAN: And even if he had of he wouldn't have told you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he said...but he...he was honest about it. He said...and at first he wasn't going to talk to us though. When we first got in there he said, 'No I don't want to talk to you about nothing'. And you know, my approach to him was I said, 'Now look here partner', I said, 'You're not going to stay in pen all your life, you're going to be out one of these days'. And I said, 'I'm still a young man', and I said, 'You're going to get back down there in Texas and start messing around and you don't want us chasing you around the country trying to catch you as soon as you hit the ground'. But I said, 'I'm going let them let me know when you get released'. And I said, 'Let's talk about something'. I said, 'I've come from Longview, Texas out here and we got to talk about something'. And so we just started talking you know. First thing you know we're talking about what we want to talk about you know. But he was truthful about it, he said, 'I...if I'd done....', he said, 'I don't know who did it, I can tell you where I was'. But he said, 'As far as that fifty thousand dollars is concerned', he said, 'I wouldn't you know, I wouldn't snitch on anybody for all the money in the world'. 'I've been a convict all...', he said, 'I was raised in a Catholic home and don't talk religion to me', because he said, 'I turned convict', and he said, 'I'm...I'll die in the penitentiary, there's no question about it'. And so that was part of that story. So we can stop right there and we'll start back here in a day or two.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, July 17, 1995 continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. And Glenn we've been off a couple weeks so hope you remember where we stopped.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I think we got down here about ah....ah....first part of July 1975, Ms. Phillips had been murdered you know and ah.....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, that's the Phillips Oil in Gladewater.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and ah....of course I'll tell you what we'd.....we'd do Bobby and you.....or I do, or I don't know but ah.....when I'd get a major case like the Phillips case I'd work

on it, spend all my time on it for some time you know. And then maybe in between times well you'd do something for agency you know. And....and this is not unusual because you need to you know, get away from it for a few hours or two you know and maybe freshen your mind a little I think.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think until you.....excuse me.... I think until you develop some leads too, sometimes you might not be a lot to do right then.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well that's right. And there's things that need to be done but you can keep it on the back burner kind of, or side burner and pick it up just at the snap of a finger. And ah....we're....we're into this thing here and I don't know how far I got into ah....back in this tape, but I think I remember telling you.... well in ah.....the latter part of August there ah.... I mean of July that summer I helped Frank Kemp a little bit up there in Lamar County and recovered some property from him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was a Ranger from Paris?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Same one that Kent Grips come up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And ah.... I went down to Sugarland to the penitentiary on August 12th and ah.... I think that's when I talked to this boy that ah.....did we getwe got into that didn't we about ah....how we got the break on the Phillips, didn't we pretty well cover Phillips?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yes, yeah you brought him I think

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and then Ion the 19th of August that's when I went to Fort Worth and ah....contacted old Curtis Garrett and ah....made arrangements with him to see ah....Clifford Henry Boeing. Now you know the old boy I told.....we was talking about going out to El Paso to

see out there and ah....the one that we....we ended the last ah....deal on. Well Boeing ran with him you know and....and....and I think Iwe got into the fact that ah....Henry Boeing had bought a new car when he got out of the penitentiary, this Curtis Garrett bought it for him, and they burglarized the Phillips house. There's no question about it, we found....a key was found over there. But we didn't get into until this investigation came up and I didn't work on the burglary any. And ah....and this key produced.....we identified the car and this Curtis Garrett had bought the car and I I don't know whether we got this on tape. But anyway.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't think so.

GLENN ELLIOTT:Curtis ah....Garrett was a.....oh he was an underworld type guy up at Fort Worth and ah....he made all the bonds for the known offenders andand ah....and was a character, you just got to say he was a character. And ah....he bought this car for Boeing for when he got out of the pen, a brand new Pontiac from David McDavid Pontiac there in Fort Worth. And so we'd got into that and I called Curtis and he met out.....the only place he'd meet me was an ice cream parlor out at ah.....ah....there on Fort Worth Avenue. And I told him I wanted to see Henry Boeing, I needed to talk to him and for him to get word to him. Well he come on with that story that he.....that he'd heard of Henry you know, but he didn't know where he was and this and that. And I just let him know, you know, I said, 'Now Garrett you know, you get word to Henry Boeing, Henry knows me', because he was in the Jerry Ray James gang. And they was a tough bunch folks and I got acquainted with, I'd arrested 'em all, because we had a snitch tell us that they committed a pretty good sized burglary over here at Gladewater. And just cleaned the place out and ah.....and a men's clothing store and got everything out of it including the safe. And so ah..... I told Garrett I said, 'Now I'm going back to Dallas and I....you can get hold of me through the DPS office over there and I'm going to spend the night and you get a

hold of Henry and tell me I want to talk to him'. So ah..... I left him you know there at the ice cream store and I drove on back to Dallas. Well when I got to the gas pumps, we pumped our own gas.....started pumping our own gas back in ah....oh in the mid '70's when the energy crisis hit. And so I pulled up to the gas pump and you have to call in to get to ah.....let the operator know who you are and give your unit number so he can write it down and make sure it gets charged right. And I said, 'This is Elliott and P9, whatever....car number and need a little electricity'. And so they flipped the switch at the radio and the gas pump comes on, I fill up. Well when I did this he said, 'Mr. Elliott we've got a long distance call for you in here from Fort Worth'. And I'd just driven from Fort Worth to Dallas and of course I don't know what.....remember what time of day it was, but it was up in the day, late in the afternoon I know. But it didn't take all that long. And I said, 'Well just get the number and I'll fill up with gas and come on in there in a minute'. So I filled the car with gas and went on in and Curtis had left his number and I called him back. And he said he got a hold of Henry. This is the way I liked to operate you know. You've got a known offender, I don't know where he's at, but hell I've got to talk to him. Because this women's killed and we know they've been in the house two years before that and committed a burglary. So ah....he said it was going to take him about five hours to get here. Well that means he's in Oklahoma City, is where I thought he probably was anyway, and he'd been laying up in Oklahoma City a whole lot and he says he'll come. And I said, 'Well ah....let me call you back in a few minutes', and I said, 'I'll come back over to Fort Worth'. And so I called the Holiday Inn in Hurst and I stayed there a whole lot when I was in that area, I liked it, and when I was working those tire thieves and it's a nice place and a quiet place out there. And so I called over at Hurst and got me a room and then I called him back and he said.....well I know it's.....I'll tell you what, it had tocause they got there about two o'clock in the morning,

so it had to be you know, at least nine o'clock when I'm doing all this, or eight-thirty, because I know I drove back to Hurst and I told him I said, 'When ya'll get there call me at my room I'm going over there and go to bed'. Cause I'm tired and I was tired you know. But ah.... I brought Boeing down there and I'll tell you what a tough guy old Henry Boeing was ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that B O W D O I N?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's B O W E N. Clifford Henry Bowen. He ah...we were laterah.....he was a heavy gambler, liked to go to a picture show and see law enforcement stories. Ah....he's strange and we're all strange you know, but we knew a whole lot about Henry, I did and...and ah....and I made it a part of my business to find out. But anyway, we was on a 24 hour surveillance of him later on, he'd moved over to Tyler and we was watching him, following him where he went. And we got off of a surveillance....about this time of the year.....a lot of vacation, we just couldn'tcouldn't keep up andand ah....he got charged in Oklahoma for killing three people at a motel in broad open daylight up there and ah....with a shotgun. I mean he wasHenry Bowen was a tough.....tough customer. Anyway I worked Henry some and....and ah....and he convinced me ah....that he.....that he didn't kill Ms. Phillips. And Iyou know, only thing I had, I said, 'I can file a case on you Henry, I can't convict you of that burglary but I can file a case on you and cause you some trouble'. And ah.... I attended the Louisiana Sheriffs Association meeting in ah....August the 28th of that year. And I think I've told you they invited me to their Sheriffs conventions every year, wherever they met. And ah...that was good for me and good for the Rangers because.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were you the only Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. I carried Max andand Red Arnold with me when we'd met in Shreveport and Bossier City area. But we'd go down to Alexandria and down in that way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was thinking more along the lines of thewhere Louisiana and Company A.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no I was the only Ranger that ah....there, unless I carried somebody with me. Ah.... I just got in with those Louisiana officers and....and ah....of course I liked....I wanted.... I wanted to know every Sheriff in Louisiana and dern near did at one time. I think I told youwe talked about the FBI the way they worked some time. I....in the first of September I'm still working the Phillips murder case of course, but I get a call from a source that tells me there's a stolen Cadillac down at ah....in the Carthage area and ah.....so ah..... I took off one afternoon and went down and found it and I knew the guy, it was parked behind his house. And he was in the penitentiary up at Texarkana. And ah.... I called the Sheriff and I think I was coming out of Louisiana, I'd been over there working a lead on this Phillips case and I was coming out of Louisiana and I just cut back up to Greenwood and went into Carthage. In fact I called the Sheriff and asked him to meet me out there because it was about half way between Greenwood and Carthage, out in the country. And I'd already spotted the car and I called the Sheriff and he came out andand....and he tried to see if there was anybody at home and I went ahead and got an ID number on it and we made it and called a wrecker. And I didn't.... I didn't have time to go follow through on it right then, I'm working this Phillips murder and the FBI called about a week later and said, 'You recovered ...', you know they're.....they're in charge of this NCIC, National Crime Information Center, and they said, 'You called in and recovered a Cadillac and you never did cancel the stolen Cadillac and why didn't you cancel it'. And I said, 'Well I'm not ready to'. I said, 'It's stored at the Chevrolet house in Carthage, Texas', and I said, 'The man that's responsible for it is in the penitentiary up at Texarkana and I don't want ya'll messing with him'....the car was stolen out of Michigan....'til I get through with him'. Because

you know, cause I knew he'd burglarized a truck tire store down at ah.....Nacogdoches, and I was wanting to clear it up. And ah....but you know, and they accepted it. They had to, there wasn't nothing else they could do you know. But I got along with 'em all right, but you know you don't have to cow down to folks like that. I went to Austin ah....in September to a week's refresher school. Ah.....went down to Colfield Unit in Palestine and talked to some folks about ah.....ah.....this Phillips case. And then finally October the 2nd I got up to Texarkana and talked to this guy about the stolen Cadillac. And then I canceled it then you know after.....cause I I got what I needed from him. And so ah....see this is.... I guess involvement is what gets you.....it's what got me.....my success was in involvement you know. It wasn't that I was all that smart ah....and I was lucky I guess, but involvement.....you know this guy in there in Texarkana I went to see well I got some information from him, not about this murder, but about some more things that....that lead to it later you know. And....and I guess that'sthat's ah....if I had any success at all well it was through those angles you know. I noticed on October the 9th I went to Fort Smith, Arkansas. Ah.... I imagine that was ah.....to this Arkansas State Police would have a conference up there every fall and I carried some ah.....Phillips murder information up there. And Max went with me and Max and I ah.....of course we got along good, you know Max Womack.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Max was smoking during those days and ah....so we.... I picked him up at Texarkana and ah.....and he was.....lived at Atlanta but his station was supposed to be Texarkana. And ah.....and so we was going up to Hot Springs and Max and I was ah.....probably relaxing pretty good and Iwe used to have a..... I had a hat rack. And a lot of times some of these cars you not to comfortable wearing a hat in you know and no taller than I am. I don't see how those tall guys got by. But I had a hat rack that pulled down and I'd put it onon the sun

visor..... I mean on the rear view mirror and you pull it down and just drop your hat down into and it would come up. Well Max was ah.....he got real ported before we got to Hot Springs and he was talking and making a gesture and he had a cigar and he raked it across my hat. And Max will tell you today that I got on his case pretty heavy. Ah....I'm back up in Paris, Texas on the 14th ah.....ah.....working with Frank on this case that I'd recovered some stuff for him down here. And ah.....on the 15th I'm back down here and I recover a ditch witch over in the Gladewater area, I'm working on this Phillips....and through a source.....that belonged out of Dallas County. Of course I had to spend some time in court and grand jury and different areas at the same time. Ah..... I helped Arkadelphia, Arkansas officers clear up an armed robbery and arrested a guy for them, in the Gladewater area. And ah.....ah..... I went to ah.....they had a crime prevention seminar here in Longview. I think you got some stuff in there.....some articles in the.....and Iand that took up two days of my time that year. And I was on the program in ah.....armed robberies I think. And ah....anyway that's just part of our job you know. I assisted the Rangers in Midland the same month in October of checking bank records on a swindle that they was working out there in that area. Had a.....ah.....worked.....helped the county work an armed robbery at the trailer park on 149. Ah....went to Waco to help try this Corley boy that killed those three women and that little boy ah.....in October.....the 6th. And he received the death penalty and we spent a week down in Waco, we tried him down there on a change of venue. Ah..... I got finished with that trial and came back and we arrested a guy that robbed that trailer park down on 149 first of November. Ah..... I.....I assist.....down in I was in the Deberry area, which is down right on the Louisiana line in Panola County and we arrested three of sixteen escapees from ah....Caddo Parish, Louisiana. They had a detention farm out there in that part of the county.....ah....of their Parish in the western part of the Parish and they had a big

jail break out there and lost sixteen. And we arrested three of them on 12th and eight more on the 13th down there on the line. And ah....so that ah....and they ah.... on the 11th.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you spend much time chasing escapees?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....we tried to help ah.....everybody. You know a jail escapee is a pretty easy case to make you know. It's a violation of law to break jail. But you know he's going to commit some more crimes while he's out you know. I mean we're going to have crimes committed, but you know if a guy breaks jail he's fixing to commit a bunch of crimes you know. I mean that's what he's getting out for. And the bad ones you need to get back in and the half bad ones well you need to get them back too you know, because they're going to keep 'em out of trouble. And ah.....yeah....we.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You ever have any get away from you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I never had one escape from me, no. Ah.....that.....we wasn't supposed to let one get away from us. You talking about in custody?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I never did lose a prisoner, no thank goodness. Ah....that....that's a pretty embarrassing thing to happen to an officer. And ah....but it's happened. I'm back down at Elysian Field, they got a safe out of the Post Office down there on the 20th of November.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they didn't hit the bank this time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Elysian....let me interrupt.....is Elysian Field Bank still robbed like it used to be all the time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no, you know I don't think so. I don't know. See they got.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they get new security or vaults?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah....well they got.....yeah they got....ah....they got a.....they built a new bank, they've got cameras now. You know we don't have as many bank robberies in this part of the country as we used to. Now back.....boy listen, we had a lot of bank robberies. And....and ah....we just did. And Elysian Field was just....just easy. Ah.....ah.....it was just real easy. And....and....it's isolated you know and these guys would hear about it you know. And....but we caught every son of a gun that ever robbed it you know. We had the best bank robbery clearance in East Texas as any where in the United States. The FBI would tell you....and you know, old Bob Stevens over at Tyler he'd tell you , he said, 'You know if I call my friend Glenn and we get....we'd catch 'em you know'. Ah.....I'm in Dal..... I go back into Dallas the last of November and ah....went to Lynn's Jewelry Store up there and ah....and got ah....ah....a list of somedescription of some items and this Jerry Ray James and ah....and them had been arrested up in Oklahoma with a bunch of jewelry like was in the safe over there at Mrs. Phillips. But I went up there and got a complete list of stuff that.....and they had it....boy they had....she.....they bought most of their jewelry up there and they had a description ofand they bought good stuff.....and ah.....and I eventually went on to Oklahoma I think. On let's see ah.....ah..... Iwell I got back into.....come back into Longview and we got a search warrant and recovered a check writing machine from a burglary of a Seven-Eleven where they'd been forging a bunch of checks. And we cleared three armed robberies on the 19th of December. Ah....ah.....ah.....had a jail break there in Gregg County on Christmas and one person was injured, it was an attempted jail break. And ah.... I had to do an investigation on that. And ah....on the 30th of December that year I recovered some guns taken in old Bob Buskin's house burglary. That's when I got acquainted with Bob. I didn't know Bob until then and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Over in Kilgore?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I had a source tell me where one of the guns was, he had several guns taken, and ah....and recovered it and traced it back to the guy. And ah....and so I got acquainted with Buskin. And we'll start in 1976 ah....ah.....it seemed like something always happened around ah....ah....Christmas time. Ah....they made a change in our reports, we had to start showing less hours on our reports in '76. And it was ah....it just come.....just come down that away you know. They started kind of frowning on the.....the Federal Government started putting out these regulations and ah.....and we had to start showing less hours, we still worked the same. And on January the 2nd I arrested a guy that ah.....burglarized Buskin's house. On January the 6th I was in Austin ah.....in a major crime work shop two days. Ah.....these.....most of the time these national crime ah....work shop there was officers from all over the United States that meet in those things and we'd talk about major cases and moving criminals that we knew. And ah..... I'd always participate and well most of the time I'd....I'd have a program. I went to Nashville, Tennessee to a national armed robbery conference and was on the program down there. And ah....ah.....if you had cases pending and you knew who was committing crimes well they needed you and we needed officers from other areas that had the same knowledge. And you'd be surprised at the information you'd come back with.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When you'd go out of state to a conference like this was the Texas Ranger looked on special?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Would what?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Texas Ranger looked on special?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....yeah they were. Ah....oh we had....oh of course you know you'd go to some placeswe was up in Tennessee at that one and ah.....ah.....of course you know, we'd go out with these guys in the evenings andand ah.....and they was a little....they'd ride you a

little bit sometimes you know. But ah....we knew how to handle that. But it was all in fun you know. But....yeah I I think ah.....they was glad to see us there. And ah....we was glad to be there you know and we let them know it. But ah.....ah.... I feel like that we had a little special attention, yes.

ROBERT NIEMAN: One of the reasons I was asking, I know current Ranger Richard Sheen was over visiting and ah....he made the statement, he's got several brothers and they've all been relatively successful in the world of business and.....but I made the statement to him, and I believe it to be true, that every one of them will say, 'But I got a brother that's a Texas Ranger'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Well we....we kind of..... I think that ah.....that's the general trend. Ah.....ah.....let's see ah.....we....we checkedin these national ah.... I had worked these jewelry robberies and you know, out of New York and ah.....and the Jerry Ray James bunch and ah.....and others. And ah....it's pretty good to sit down and talk to a bunch of folks.....you know, here I worked this Sam Gaddy bunch andand they was out of New York State you know. And they come down here and committed a couple of....well I think we covered that awhile back.....about four pretty good sized jewelry robberies down here in Texas. Ah.....Governor Briscoe was back in the area on the 8th of Decemberor January of '76. He was up here a whole lot. He was a pretty good politician. Ah.....there was....on the 10th we had a possible jail break they thought they was going to have here and we ah....ah....set and waited on it to happen and it didn't, it didn't materialize. And then we got in and talked to the guys that was supposed to break out. And ah....on the 13th of January I assisted Arcadia Parish, Louisiana Sheriff in a theft investigation, recovered some guns for him. And I think that's old.....old Stud Davis was the Sheriff down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What.....what would happen you recovered guns but no one claimed them....for what ever reason, I mean, you don't know whose guns they were or what ever reason.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we didn't ah.....unless we could....we couldn't recover any unless we knew whose they were because we wouldn't know they were stolen you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's say you.....you....let's just....for the sake of this discussion say you bust Jerry Ray James and he's got a car full of guns.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, they may not be stolen

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hang on.....hang on.....got to change our tape.....No what I was saying there, sayas I was saying there for the sake of this discussion, you bust Jerry Ray James, he's got a whole car load of guns.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You got it hooked back up?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I've got it turned on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well I tell you what we'd do. The first thing you'd do, if you get somebody like Jerry Ray James and of course he's a known offender, he'd be a felon in possession of a fire arm and of course you could file on him for that. But first you try....you identify the guns even if you have to trace back to the factory. I mean, you know, you identify the guns, that's what you do. And of course if their not stolen then you....you....of course you turn them over to the District Attorney because ah... ah.....they are going to be used in a case against him for a felon in possession of a fire arm see. But before he gets tried for that thing, we've identified those guns, at least where they were shipped and who they're sold to because of the records they have to keep on

fire arms. And of course if they're stolen then we notify the people that lost them and....and ah....or the agency that worked the crime. And....but we never.....most of the time the lawyers, whoever represented 'em would.....if....if they couldn't identify them as being stolen and they was bought legitimately, well the lawyers that represented the thieves would generally wind up with the guns you know, in a case like that. But we wouldn't give 'em back to the thieves, no way. Ah....let's see ah...yeah I helped old Stud Davis on aand that's when I got acquainted with the ah....ah....first worked with him I guess. And he was a good Sheriff, he was an ex-trooper down there. Ah...on the 15th of January 1976 is when I got the first good lead on this Phillips murder case and we went all through that. But I went toI went down to the Eastham Prison unit and talked to an old boy that....that really that's the date that I talked to the guy that gave me the information that we eventually ran down and identified this Canadian. And we went all through that case I think, we talked about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But that was my first contact down there, it really helped. And ah...and then I left there and went on to Nacogdoches.....no to Woodville ah....and picked up a pistol down there from a Sheriff. And ah....I'd leave on something like that and I'd try to....you know, if I was down at....I was down there in that area you know and I needed to go to Woodville, so I just cut across there and took.... and tended to that business while I was down there you know and try to cut as many corners as I could. I'm back in court again the 19th and ah....on the 21st I arrested a fugitive from the state of Louisiana. On the 27th I assisted Arkadelphia, Arkansas on a theft of equipment investigation, recovered some property for them. On the 28th I'm in Gilmer assisting Shreveport in a theft investigation....ah... Shreveport Police Department. Ah....they just called me regular, police department and Sheriff's office in Louisiana ah....we talked weekly you know, several times

sometimes. And ah....this was...this was good. Ah....I'm in Dallas on the 2nd of February and then on to Oklahoma City and spent two days up there going through those items that they recovered from old Jerry Ray James on a search of his apartment and comparing them with the ah....information I'd got out of the jewelry store in Dallas, and we didn't recover any of our property, but we tried you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did James get time on this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....I don't remember see, because it wasn't my case. He was arrested up in Oklahoma and he was in custody. Yeah, he got time because he wound up in the penitentiary you know and I told you James later was a....he's a protected federal witness right now, wherever he's at, in this ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah that's right.

GLENN ELLIOTT:shooting of Judge Wood. But ah....that's the only kind of guy that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you ever thought he would of rolled over?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no. But you know, a guy....he's serving life....and he was serving life in the federal pen and ah....Jerry was a pretty young man you know. And he was used to living the good life you know and he was a pretty good sized guy and he had prostitutes and always had a lot of money and enjoyed good living and ah....I guess he just got all....couldn't see himself staying in that penitentiary for 25 or 30 years you know and what he was going to have to do, or maybe more.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When most of these guys go into this protected custody, do they stay in it or do they break out or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh most of 'em I guess stay in it. Because they're afraid to get you know. And look it's an easy thing, they're probably paying that guy.....you know you'd be surprised what our tax payers pay those people. I expect they.....they set him up a new identity, bought him a house

and probably paying him fifty, sixty thousand dollars a year for the rest of his life to live on. Won't have to do nothing. Man that's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They don't have to get a job or anything?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No....heck no, they don't have to do nothing. They can get one if they want to, but they....they guarantee 'em aand ah....it's....it'swe haven't got anything like that to offer. I'm glad we don't, because I...you know, I'm afraid too many would be offering 'em that you know. I mean, to find out who killed Judge Wood I'd want to know as bad as anybody, but ah....I don't know whether I'd want to know that bad or not. You know, just to keep on paying a guy....and we've got a bunch of them. We've got.....we've got here from Longview that I know that was a motorcycle bandito, he's been on protectivejust on....on....on helping turn a dope traffic on a bandito making meth.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know, McNelly's method's were just more efficient and didn't cost near as much money.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No that's....you know it bothers me....it bothers me to see us handing out money to thieves, and it does bother me. But it....boy it bothers me more to think that were going to pay one the rest of his natural born life you know and protect him during that time too. There may be Deputy Marshall's that has to check on him daily or weekly you know, to make sure that he's not having any problems with anybody.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The American public would be astounded if they knew how much money has been spent on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It would be terrible I promise you, and it is terrible. Ah....on February the 4th I assisted the White Oak police department in a theFort And ah....in Panola County the same day on two armed robberies and we got down there and we arrested two and took statements from them,

that committed the robberies there in Panola County, two in one day. Ah....I....on the 5th day of February I worked with the Cherokee County Sheriff and helped them with in a jail break they had down there and worked on a surveillance, one of the escapees had lived in the Kilgore area. And ah....I'm in Waco on the 6th day of February, I don't even....I didn't even put down here what for. And then on the 9th I'm back in Panola County on a murder investigation. On the 16th I'm in Court and I recover some guns, while I'm waiting on court, that was taken in a burglary in Carthage. And this is what I'd do, we'd go down there....you know court is a slow thing. I'd be subpoenaed to court in Carthage, Texas and you know they're going to have to pick a jury and they're going to have to do all this and that, but you got to be there. Well you get down there you got to make yourself available, well you go down to the Sheriff's office over at the police station while you waiting on court and see if you can't get involved in something you know and do some work while your down there you know. And then always there would be something to do you know. Ah....ah....and then I got into this burglaryhelping them with a burglary down there while I was waiting on court on the 19th. We recovered some guns on the 16th, recovered some more on the 19th. And I testified in court while I was down there. And then on the 23rd of February I'm back down to the Clements Unit on this Phillips murder interviewing another convict down there. On the 24th I went from Clements on to the Ramsey Unit near Houston.

And the 25th I'm back in Carthage on another murder ah....Howard Greer....his name was Howard Greer, Jr. and he'd been dead ah....a couple of days. And ah....I don't know whether.... I don't think we got into this, this is another one of the cases that I wound up ah....this guy was ah....murdered on the side of the old Highway 59 between Carthage and the river, pretty close to the river. And he was thrown out in the ditch and no identification.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Sabine River?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. No identification, he had several tattoos on his hands, a spider and I don't remember what else and he'd been dead several days. But he wasn't....it....it....this was in February, so there hadn't been.....you know, the weather was cool and the ground was cold and that makes a lot of difference, he hadn't began to smell that bad. And we worked on that thing for a day or two and we put out a bunch of messages, his description, which is the only thing you do. You got a body down here and nobody knows who it is. And we had response from Nacogdoches that they had a missing person put out by the police department down there. So we made contact and it's from their description of the missing person and the guy we've got it's sounds like it's pretty much the same people. So a deputy and myself went down to Nacogdoches and we interviewed the sister of this guy and his brother-in-law and ah....brought them back to Carthage....or they followed us back to Carthage. And the brother-in-law....they was sure they had him identified. I mean everybody was satisfied that that's him you know. But I said, 'No we got to have somebody to look at him'. You know, this is.....we got.....of course we had fingerprinted him. But ah....his brother-in-law....we didn't ask the sister to, but we went into the funeral home, unzipped the bag and his brother-in-law said, 'That's him, no question about it'. So you know, so we got a positive identification. And this thing ah.....ah....was a strange case. This boy was just a drifter, a pot smoker, dope taking drifter and a motorcycle rider. And ah....he had ah....his mother lived in New Orleans, his sister lived in Nacogdoches and he was just back and forth and he had a grandmother that lived in Kilgore. And ah....he would just hop around on his motorcycle from one place to the another and make a few meals and get his clothes cleaned and leave again. Well had a met a girl ah.....this investigation lead up to this and ah.....but actually what happened was, he was visiting his sister and her husband in Nacogdoches and he had advertised his motorcycle for sale in the paper. And two guys came to his house in a van and one young blond headed boy ah.....come up and

knocked on the door and said they'd like to see his motorcycle and they was interested in buying it. And this was in the late afternoon. And he showed it to 'em and ah....so they asked him if he'd like to smoke a joint of marijuana with them and he said yeah. So they got in the van and that's the last time they saw him. And of course we ah....we got I took a compositemade a composite drawing offrom his sister and his brother-in-law a likeness of this guy and this was the only evidence we had. Well, of course they find him dead down there on the side of the road. Well about a week later his sister calls me and says, 'Mr. Elliott', said ah.... 'Greer got ...', she called him by his first name.....ah..... 'got a letter in the mail today which is real strange, from a woman in the penitentiary in Lowell, Florida'. And said, 'I want you to come over here and read it'. So I went on to Nacogdoches that evening. And it was obvious that he hadthat this woman was not only writing him but she was writing somebody else. Because she sent the wrong letter to him. And ah....and it wound up that she had ah....written her husband and him at the same time from the penitentiary and she'd mailed her husband his letter and ah.....and he got her.....of course he got the letter was supposed to have gone to her husband. So ah.....ah..... I decided thatwe decided that somebody needed to go to Florida and talk to this woman, so I was elected. And ah..... I flew to Tallahassee and got with the ah.....got with the Sheriff's office there and ah....and we went down to the.....they carried me down to the penitentiary down at Lowell and we interviewed this lady....this woman, it wasn't a lady. And ah....it was.....wound up that she had met this boy the first time in New Orleans in park and they smoked a little dope together and she was down there with her then boyfriend. And he was an heir to the Wrigley Spearmint chewing gum and real wealthy and an older man, about thirty years her senior. And ah....so this.....she left with this boy on a motorcycle and this guy went back to Florida and hired a private detective andand ah.....he ran this boy down and found him in Kilgore and they drove (tape side ends)...

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hired a private detective.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, hired a private detective and he located this boy's grandmother and found him and this guys girlfriend in Kilgore and they just forcibly took her back to Florida with them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The grandmother?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, the....the.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The girl?

GLENN ELLIOTT:the girl.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The girl.

GLENN ELLIOTT: His girlfriend. But of course she didn't want to file a complaint. And they get back to Florida and.....and..... and she's in the dope business and he's taking dope and.....and running with those dopers and they finally make a case on her in Florida and that's what she's doing in the penitentiary . Well she starts corresponding with him and ah.....sent it to his mother and his mother forwards his mail.....was forwarding his mail from New Orleans on up to Kilgore. And so I go down and talk to her and she don't know he's dead. And ah.....so carry this letter with me andand I said, 'Can you explain your association with this guy'. And shewell it was obvious....she said, 'What's wrong'. I said, 'Well he's dead, you know, somebody killed him'. 'I can tell you who killed him'. She had since married this guy, this heir to the Wrigleyand ah.....after she got in the pen. I think she married married him before she went to keep from having to testify against him. And ah.....anyway ah.....she said, 'He had it done, I can tell you that right now'. And so I showed her a picture of this composite that I had made, that the sister and brother-in-law gave me and she told me who he was. Said, 'That's so and so'. And ah....so I'm in there talking to her by myself and this deputy's out doing something else, I mean he's just waiting

on me, it's just she and I and a matron. And ah....you get too many on an interview and it's not good you know. The fewer people you have, I think, on a criminal interview the better off you are. So ah..... I took an affidavit from her and ah..... about their situation and marriage and the fact that who this guy was that I had the composite picture of and all the stuff. And she told me about the trips from Kilgore, you know, back down there and all. And so ah.... I got back out with the deputy and ah.....and I told him that ah....this girls says that this composite I got is this....she.... I don't remember the name, but he said, 'He's in jail in Tallahassee right now'. Said, 'We got him on a dope charge'. So we get back to Tallahassee.....of course and the next day.....it's way late at night when we get back in there, it's a pretty good drive, about two hundred and fifty, three hundred miles down there to the penitentiary and it rained every inch of the way down there and back I think that trip. And....yeah, it was February, it probably did. And so the next day we get up I get up to the jail and ah.....this old boy cops out to committing the murder..... or he didn't commit the murder, he was with.....he was with this guy and ah.....rode down there with him in his van.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Wrigley's guy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....went with him and found the boy. He walked up on the front porch and got him to come out in the car and he was.....he was driving and this guy shot the boy and ah.....down there somewhere around Carthage and they threw him out on the side of the road and drove on back home to Florida. And so I come on back and I call the District Attorney down at Carthage and ah.....tell him what I got and this..... I said, 'This boy is willing to make us a witness if we'll give him some air'. And he said, 'Well bring your file on back down here and we'll return a grand jury indictment and that'll save us from having to have a lot of court hearings and then we won't have as much trouble getting an extradition for this guy out of Florida, you know, cause he's a moneyed man and we'll go ahead and get a grand jury indictment against him and then

issue a warrant'. And well I get back.... I come on back home and ah.....before the grand jury met well the officers up in Florida called me and this guy had committed suicide.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man.....Greer was the victims name, I'll have to look at the file ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And we'll need to get ah.....get their first names.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah.....ah....Howard Greer, Jr. was the boy's name that got killed and I'll.....I'll think of this guys name that ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wrigley committed suicide?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So ah.....we ah....finally ah....I think we brought this boy on back up here and ah.....he didn't get much.....you know, cause he was.....he was the one that made our case for us you know. And you know that's how we could.....instead of having to operate with well we.....we.....you know, kind of give a guy a little air if he'll cooperate with us. But that was an interesting case I ah.....I.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you ever run acrossthat is one of the more interesting ones you've had, but did you ever run across anything where the Judge said, 'No I'm throw.....I'm going to lower the boom on this guy'?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: 'I don't care if you did tell us, I'm going to lower the boom on you'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you see what you....what you can....what you can come back at the Judge with that, you know when I've had this happen to me by the FBI and everybody else you know, said, 'No we're going.....we're not ah.... just cause that guy cooperated with you ah....and told you this ah.....we're going to prosecute him too'. And I said, 'Well you know go ahead you know, ya'll do it'. But you know I said, 'I'm going to be up there holding up my hand in court and I'm going to

testify that I promised this guy that he wouldn't be prosecuted', and I said, 'I'm going ...instead of being a State's witness, I'm going to be a defense witness'. Because I did and I'm not going to lie to him, you know. Well if you promise a guy something and he tells you about it, then you can't use it in court.... I mean you can't convict him on it you know. And they know that see, so that....that'll end it all right there you know. So that's how I

ROBERT NIEMAN: But that'll make some Judges awful unhappy.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I....you know I didn't care about keeping the Judges all that happy. They set up there and the air conditioned court room, of course I wanted to get along with my Judges but the thing about it is, all they're doing is operating the court you know. And they're not out here working the cases and if you got good relations with them, you can sit down and talk to them. They knew why I was doing that and most of them.... I never did have any Judge that challenged me. But I've had a few District Attorney's and Judges too that wanted to get active in a real interesting but ah....this ah....this thing happened to me over here on this bus bombing case here in Longview. I get over to Tyler and they're wanting to indict the guy that helped us make all the cases over here and he didn't have dern thing to do with setting out the bombs or making them or anything else. And they was going to.....they was going to convict him too. And I said, 'No huh uh, we're not going to do that'. Oh yeah we....you know, and this is the Justice Department came out of Washington to try this case. And I said, 'No, huh uh, that ain't the way it's going to work'. And ah....you know, if you sit here and make the case for 'em and they don't want to listen to you well you just got to get on the other side that's all. It's just that simple you know. Because my reputation means a heck of a lot more to me than their reputation means to me. And ah....and I wanted these people to know that I wasn't going to lie to them and I tried not to. Well on March....we get into March, I'm in ah....well I'm in Dallas and working this same case. I had gone

to Shreveport yet..... I mean to Louisiana. Then I'm back in Carthage and met the Shreveport officers and ah.....back in March and I think I'm going to Florida probably in March, look's like. Let's see ah.....I'm working three murders at one time here in March. I'm on the Phillips and I'm on this Greer and ah.....I don't know where else I'mI don't remember the other ones right now, but I'll probably get to it in just a minute. Ah.....you had to work that way, you know, you got all.....you know, what's the Sheriff going to do, he calls youyou working a murder and he calls you and he's got a dead body down here in Panola County and needs some help you know. Well you know, you don't know but what it might of been the same guy that killed this Mrs. Phillips and gone down there and killed somebody else, so you go on down there and do it. Ah....the Governor's in Marshall on the 11th of March. I'm back to Nacogdoches on the 12th, and this is when I get the letter and I contacted the Florida officers on March the 12th. And ah....I go to Keechia, Louisiana and run a lead out down there on the same murder and then to Mansfield. Ah.....I get tied up in court on the 22nd in a robbery case in Gregg County and the guy got ten years. Ah....ah.....and then ah.....Harrison County needs a little help, they got a problem over there on the 23rd. And I go over there and I recover some guns taken in an Anderson County burglary. Ah.....now this is another case like we get involved in here, I'll just tell you. Ah.... I remember this case here, Bobby Prince was a Ranger stationed down at ah.....Palestine. And Bobby called.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that Company A or F?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Company F. Bobby called me and told me that he had some information that ah...there was some guns taken in a burglary in Anderson County that was.....that a certain guy had 'em here in Gregg County. And I said, 'Well if he's got 'em I....', you know I knew him and ah..... I called him up and I said, 'Tuck you got a Ranger called me from down at Anderson County and said you had seven guns that youcame out of a burglary down there'. And he said, 'Well I got

seven guns here that ah....that I didn't know come out of a burglary'. But he said, 'I can tell you who I got 'em from'. And he said, 'There's aah.....and I'll tell you all about it', he said, 'It's one of my employees, female'. He ran a night club. And said, 'She came in here and said she had some guns and she needed some money and she had two kids and wanted to know if I could let her have some money on them and I let her have three or four hundred, I forget what it was, and she told me that they was her daddy's guns'. And they were and he said, 'I gave her the money', and said, 'I've still got 'em, they're locked up out there'. And ah....so I called Bobby back and told him and I said, 'Yeah I found your guns, they're here'. And I said, 'The man's got three hundred dollars invested in 'em', and I said, 'You ought to tell the owner he ought to bring the money', and he said, 'Well these were taken in burglary Glenn'. I said, 'Yeah but his daughter took 'em didn't she'. He hadn't told me this. And he said, 'Yeah but what difference does that make'. And I said, 'Well it don't make a whole lot of difference', I said, 'If he's going to prosecute her, just forget it', I said, 'If he's going.....if he's going to prosecute her for stealing those guns well come get 'em'. 'Well he's not going to do that'. I said, 'Well look Bobby', you know I said, 'I know this guy and he cooperated with us', and I said, 'What's going to keep that girl from getting those guns next month and carrying 'em somewhere else and selling 'em for three hundred dollars and we have to go get 'em again'. And I said, 'Haven't.....you know...', I said, 'You know this guy bought 'em and been very cooperative'. And that's the way I worked Bobby, I....you know Iif a guy's buying 'em and selling 'em to somebody, if he'd already gotten disposed of 'em you know, all but one or something, well then I'd of see it, but he bought the guns knowing dern well her daddy was going to come get 'em you know. And ah....but ah.... I don't know, maybe I was wrong but that's the way I worked.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you was pretty successful with it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It....well it worked out pretty good. And Bobby understood it after I explained it to him. Ah.....I taught ah....four hours in the deputies school in Dallas in April. Then on April the 2nd is when I ah.....we....the thing broke down there in Florida. This is when the letter business all got to it and I decided to go Florida, so I went to ah.....ah..... I contacted Florida officers and arranged to meet them in Tallahassee on the 5th of April. And ah....and did.....and actually went down on the 5th and ah.....and to Lowell on the 6th and I was back in Tallahassee on the 7th and returned to Texas on the 8th. Ah.....and went back to Nacogdoches and I got pictures of this guy that was in jail down there you know, that ah....made the composite and made up a line-up. And of course his sister and brother-in-law both identified him. Ah.....ah....then Ion the 12th Arcadia, Louisiana officers called me again and I helped them, they had an armed robbery of a Church down there. Guys.....two guys come in the Church house while they was having Church and robbed everybody in there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How much did they get?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh they got a lot of jewelry and a lot of cash, I don't remember how much. But this was.....this happened several times during this period of time. There was ah..... I don't know ah....people crazy to go in a Church house and you know.....and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Gonna think lightening....I'd be afraid of lightening striking.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah that's right you know. And ah....I'm probably the only one in our Church that carries a gun you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And it's a pretty good sized building. And then on the 13th I'm in Texarkana assisting Monroe, Louisiana officers in recovering some stolen property. Ah.....the 14th I'm assisting Maney, Louisiana, old....old Brumley down there, in a safe burglary investigation. See

those Louisiana officers and ah.....we just had something going all the time looked like. Then the 15th ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well those old thieves didn't.....that line didn't mean a whole lot to them except maybe to get away from one or the other.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah.....ah.....on the 16th I'm assisting the Arkansas officers in a theft investigation ah.....ah....where there's a lot of copper stolen and recovered it over in Louisiana, found out where it went in Louisiana. And the 19th I'm back in court in Gregg County and ah.....while they're picking a jury I go down to Carthage and assist in a manhunt and ah.....we arrested an old boy down there that he ah.....in a stolen car and he'd hit the woods and we picked him up that evening and he cleared the car theft and several burglaries in Panola and two in Gregg County. And of course the next day I'm back in court testifying the next two days....or three, and the subject got fifty years ah.....ah.....on the 20th. And then the 23rd I'm back in court again on another case where a guy got two years. Ah.....I met with Secret Service the same day and we was.....they was planning security for Gerald Ford, the President, who was coming into this area. Ah..... I got a call on another murder in Panola County. Ah.....and this was where a wife killed her husband. And ah....and so ah.....I found out where she'd bought a gun the day before in Kilgore at a pawn shop, the gun that was ah....she left the gun but was trying to make it look like suicide. And ah.....this kid didn't know anything about his daddy having a gun. And we run a trace on it and she'd bought it the day before at a pawn shop in Kilgore, not too smart.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did this....do these people just think that....you know, people are stupid?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they don't think we're going to go to those.....that extreme trying to find out. And the I ah...on the 27th well Ford came, the President, and I provide security for him on the 27th. Ah.....on the 29th provide security for Ronald Reagan. This must have been a presidential

year or election year, '75. Ah....on the 30th ah.....ah.... I went on.....followed through on this ah.... I got ah.....we had arrested this woman for killing her husband and I got a picture of her andand I got a picture line-up and identified her at the gun store in Kilgore. Of course we had toshe had to use her identification and everything else but went ahead andyou know, had her identified by picture too. On the 3rd of ah....May I'm in Dallas continuing this ah.....this woman and her husband was having trouble and she had even gone to Dallas and tried to go.....hire out at ah.....Blue Cross Blue Shield work and I went up there and verified that and got records up there where she'd made application for a job. And she was trying to insinuate that everything was lovely andbut we knew that they was having trouble and she was going to leave him anyway. But ah....these are just things you have to do in a murder investigation, because you know I confirmed that she wasyou know she gets on the stand and testify.....and she'd already made a statement about all this you know and we was just kicking her statement, showing it was lies you know. Ah....let's see ah....I went on to the Dallas jail and talked to an old safe burglar while I was up there and he cleared several safe burglaries down here and one of them was Made-Rite Bottling Company over here in Harrison County where he drilled a safe, a good safe. And he was a good safe burglar. Ah.....on the 5th I get a call to go back to Carthage, they had a safe burglary at the auto dealer down there. On the 11th ah.... I went to Benton and Plain Dealing, Louisiana ah.... on ah.....continuing a murder investigation. On the 13th I'm back in Dallas doing the same.....working on the same case. The 19th I'm back in Panola County for Court. Ah.....and left Carthage and went to Linden and assisted Ranger Dowell in a Van Zandt arson case. Ah.....went to Houston on the 21st to continue in the Phillips investigation and I spent a couple of days down there and then left Houston and went to San Antonio. And I'm back into Austin, so I spent a week and then to Dallas on the 1st and Fort Worth on the 2nd of June. I stayed on the road pretty good, kind of like you do when you go. All

right we ah.....let's see, we're into June. I cleared a robberysome robberies in Panola County and two in Marion County and six in Gregg County and one burglary in Harrison County and one rape in Panola County on the 3rd of June with one subject. I'd liked to clear 'em up you know, I didn't like for a guya lot of officers they'd talk to a guy about what they're interested in and they don't.....I want him to tell me everything he'd ever done wrong. If he passed air Church well I wanted him to tell me about it you know, because it would make him feel better you know. And it always made me feel good too, cause I could kind of pick up the phone and call these officers and tell 'em, old Glenn committed two robberies in your county three months ago and told me all about it. And these folks liked to clear their cases, now don't get medon't.....don't ever get that wrong. I worked an attempt rape in Longview on the 4th of June....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would that of been called in from the Sheriff or the Chief of Police?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it would of been probably the Chief of Police that was in Longview. Most cases ah.....were. This one here I think was awe eventually got this guy. He was a black that went into a lawyers office here andand ah....and would of been trying to assault the secretary and she got away from him. Ah.....on the 5th of June we went to Canton to another music festival and ah.....Willie and Waylon and the boys were up there and a bunch of other hippies. And ah.....old Waylon Jennings had an old black bus then and of course this was in '76 and before he got.....you know he was rolling pretty good, but he wasn't.....they had the windows all painted black. He didn't want anybody to see in there. And ah.....it was kind of a flop, there wasn't.....there was quite a few people showed up but we didn't make very many drug arrests or anything up there. On the 7th I'm back in Panola and I'm talking to this robbery suspect some more and recovered \$17,000.00 worth of jewelry that he had taken. On the 10th of June Briscoe was back in East Texas again and I helped provide security for him. On the 20th I'm back in Carthage to another safe

burglary. Ah....went on to Nacogdoches and spent two days down there in a police conference. Ah....on the 24th ah..... I got ah.....some information out of Pennsylvania that ah.....there was some people in custody up there that had killed three people somewhere between ah.....ah.....Dallas and Shreveport.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you're going tolet me interrupt you.....you're going to later on work with a famed serial killer, but did you work with any others during this period or up until this period?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....notnot that claimed to have committed as many murders as he did. I've worked with some ah.....serial ah....people but not all of them murderers. You know the ones that....the murderers are the ones that get the biggest ah....play you know in the news. I'm sure that I've worked some serial murders ah.....well I've had one or two tell about committing other crimes you know, but not too many. It don't.....they don't come around that often you know. Ah.....this ah....we never did find out ah.....the information we was getting out of Pennsylvania was not good information. Because I contacted every agencies between Shreveport and Dallas and he was spread out some you know and probably went on to Monroe to Abilene or somewhere, all over Texas. In fact normally what you'd do and what I did in this one I'm sure is ah.....ah..... I went ahead and picked up a phone and called Austin and we have a what they call a D-4 bulletin that comes out weekly. And we put crime briefs in it and it's for known offenders that's wanted and pictures of them in there. But we got to publishing crime briefs and those things go to every police agency in Texas and a lot of the surrounding states get them. And ah..... I would run a crime brief on this you know. That's what I'd tell these folks, I'd say, 'Look you know I can't find out where anybody has killed three men down here in this area but I'm going to run a crime brief in our D-4 bulletin'. And I'd put all this information down, the town in Pennsylvania and who was working these people up

there and then the officers wouldn't have to come through me, they could work direct with the Pennsylvania officers see. But I'd that it was assimilated in the proper manner. And that's time consuming you know. You got to writeyou got to sit down here and detail all this stuff and send it down there to them, they're going to write just exactly.....put in the bulletin what you sent 'em you know. And ah.....so this is....this is another way we got of solving crimes. So ah.....I got....I went down to the penitentiary and talked to an old boy that had threatened the lives of two District Judges here in Gregg County. And this information came out of TDC and he was popping off down there and it was reallyit was just a popping off is what it was. I'm back in Dallas on the 1st of July working a.....continuing a murder investigation. Ah.....spoke to the Kiwanis Club on the 2nd and test fired some weapons in the Phillips case. Took a vacation in July that year.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Week, five days. Ah....come back on the 12th and cleared a.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, where did you go or do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh Lord, I don't have any idea. I tell you what, in July I probably went to the Sheriff's convention. That's ah....yeah that ah.....cause that's ah.....that's generally what I'd do, I'd go.....I'd take my family and go to the Sheriff's convention, wherever it was. Ah..... I went up to Winnsboro on the 13th of July andand I...in this Phillips case and ah.....I'm sure that, that's where ah.....that's when I went up there looking at that old driller you know that this guy stayed with. And then ah.....this Leslie got killed down there in Baton Rouge, Louisiana, it was a political.....ah.....he was a lobbyist and he was lobbying for the right to work and he got murdered down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Name was Leslie. His last name was Leslie, I don't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You remember his first?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't ah..... I've probably got it somewhere. But anyway the Louisiana officers contacted me and we had a....ah....it was.....he represented the right to work people and they.....in Louisianaof course you know ah.....the labor union has been strong in the state of Louisiana and still is, a lot more than other.....a lot of other places. And ah.....they had.....they passed this right to work law there in Louisiana. And they'd just passed it and he'd gone back to his motel room and he got murdered before he got to his motel room. And ah....ah.....he ah....and there was some people out of Shreveport over here and ah.....and who had contacts over here in Longview, what they called the Dixie Mafia then. We had some people that some of them called the Dixie Mafia. They was out of ah.....ah.....Mississippi and Louisiana and Texas and Arkansas. And ah.....pretty good contacts and we had one or two of them here that contacted these people regularly and went to Shreveport. And they suspected ah.....them of killing this Leslie, this Dixie Mafia bunch. And I did a lot of work on that thing, I did a lot of work. And ah....and ah.....ah.....and we finally eliminated them.....these people here. One guy here in particular ah....Jerry ah....ah.....he was arrested with James and them, robbing a San Antonio bank, the first time he was arrested. I can't even think of his name right now, I'll think of it in a minute. Anyway, he was at the hospital here, in fact he went in there drunk and carried his wife a bunch of chicken livers from out here at Johnson's Drive-Inn and caused a disturbance. And he didn't do it intentionally, he like to have got put in jail. And ah.....he was just going to feed his wife.....let his wife eat some chicken livers and they wasn't going to let him do it you know. And he was a pretty tough old boy. And they called the police down there and that's what.....it saved him. Because it was all documented and he had..... I think they put him in jail. And ah.....anyway ah.....on ah..... I worked on that Leslie case. And ah....they was....we was....we was just in contact daily, because they had a lot of.....it was a

big....big deal you know. And they finally found out who killed him, they got convicted on it and it wasn't these.....these people were not involved. I assisted the A...A....Alcohol Tobacco and Firearms out of Beaumont on a bombing investigation on the 20th and I couldn't find anything ah....ah....on that. I don't remember what..... I don't remember that. Ah....on the 28th of ah..... I worked on that Leslie case a whole lot that next week or two. And I assisted the Springfield, Missouri officers in a murder investigation. The 29th ah..... I arrested a suspect ah.....for Framers Branch police department and ah.....and continued a surveillance for the Missouri officers on this.....on their case of a house here in East Texas. Ah.....and wound up in Tyler and Texarkana on the 30th on the same deal and then to Dallas on the 2nd. And ah.....and we finally made contact with these people that Missouri wanted to talk to and I don't remember the outcome of that. But ah.....it was a pretty important case because they was wanting some help. I'm in Bossier City on August the 4th ah.....ah.....working on a burglary. Ah.....to Hunstville on the 5th of August, another interview about.....on the Phillips investigation, at the Department of Corrections. Ah.....on the 9th I assist Ranger Bill Gun in a burglary investigation, Bill was stationed over at Hillsboro. Ah..... I went out to El Paso on the 12th in this Phillips investigation and ah.....on this old boy we I think the one we was talking to I don't know how far we got into that. But that's the one that I had to wake him up you know when we got out there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah he was taking a nap and he couldn't be disturbed.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that was on the 12th of August and I flew out there. And ah.....on the 14th I'm ah.....they had a bomb threat at Brookshire's grocery store in Kilgore and I assistedKilgore called about that. Ah.....recovered three stolen Cadillac's from Lively Oldsmobile on the 16th of August. That's back ah.....the big Cadillacs ofthe big Cadillac they was going to quit making 'em then if you remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And....and ah.....they was....boy they started stealing those rascals and they was carrying these things up in VanZandt County and they was going on into Dallas and selling 'em. And ah....we finally made a case. And they I went to Austin on ah.....September the 1st for a training in ah.....use of acid kit. We ah....we started ah....you know you could bring up numbers that had been filed off on stolen property with acid and so I got trained in how to use one of those. Ah.....I'm back in ah.....to another music festival near Commerce on the 5th of September....and the 5th and 6th, spent a couple of days up there. On the 11th I'm back in Panola County, another body is found in a well down there. A white female was married to a black male and ah.....and he had a grown son and oh he was a teenager and ah.....he was the main suspect. He didn't ah.....and this....back then I'm going to tell you something, when a black married a white back in those days it.....you know it was not popular at all, especially in Panola County. But ah.....we ah.....this was a weekend I know, cause I remember it well and I.....we finally brought this boy.....his son in and he had killed this woman, beat her over the head and threw her in a well there where they lived. And ah.....he told us all about it before the day was gone that day and he admitted killing her. And I think they probated that boy if I'm not mistaken. You know it ah.....she was a pretty sorry woman and this black she married was just..... I mean he was just an old blue gum black you know and she just took up with him and married him. And ah.....on the 13th I'm back in Dallas ah.....well with evidence in that same case, I carried evidence up there to the lab. And ah.....on the 14th I'm in Court in Tyler in a robbery case. The 15th I'm still in Court, but I go and stand by for Court and I cleared five burglaries ah.....ah.....interrogating an old boy in jail. You know I just likeyou know if I got time to kill, got to wait on Court well then I've been wait.....wanting to go over there and talk to this old burglar, I know he's in jail you know, so I just go up there in the Sheriff's office

and go, 'Get old Glenn down I want to talk to him', you know cause I got to set over there all day anyway and wait on Court and I've been wanting to get over there and talk to him so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what in the world.....changing the subject, you're getting ready to go to Beaumont as witness, well what are you going to do down there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Boy I don't know. Cause see that will be two weeks you know. And they.....and Beaumont's dead you know. And of course I'm out of law enforcement. I'll just have to.....you know I don't know what I'll do. Nothing to hunt down there and I don't like to deep sea fish. And of course I know some officers down there, I know Shorty Wood, he's the Constable down there and I know ah.....well I know the Police Chief in Orange and Port Arthur. And a bunch of them old boys down there belong to the East Texas Police Officers Association.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I wish you was a little more into history, Goss did a lot of stuff down there, I'd have you researching some stuff for me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.... I don't know what I'm going to do down there at Beaumont. I hope that maybe that thing will get.....well they won't call us until they get a jury picked and that's going to take two or three weeks probably. On the 16th I went to Texarkana and ah.....continuing a burglary and we recovered a \$25,000.00 shrimp boat stolen in Harris County that I developed by talking to this boy in jail about clearing the burglaries. Ah....on the 20th I had an armed robbery in Hallsville. And the 22nd ah.....ah.....we made an arrest in Hallsville, two days later and made ID in the lineup. Ah....the 23rd I'm back in Court in Marshall in a pretrial hearing on this boy that killed his step-mama. Ah.....29th of September we.....I'm in Court in a robbery case andhere in Gregg County and the subject received 40 years. And I get old Charles Robert Mathis, Jr. down and clear up some burglaries from him, he's in jail up here and while I'm waiting.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: A chip off the old block.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....while I'm waiting on ah.....this case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Has anybody killed him yet?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't know. I hadn't heard about it if they have. And ah.....and I'm back to Dallas on the 30th and overnight in Dallas. And then on the 4th of October I'm in Panola County in Court. And then I serve a Gregg County warrant down there for theft while I'm waiting in Court. I checked in here and they was going to Carthage you know, said, 'We got a warrant for an old boy down there that we made a theft case on and would you help us locate him'. Yeah you know, I went by and picked the warrant and arrested him on it down there you know. Had to be doing something. Ah.....made an arrest in the Hallsville.....another arrest in the Hallsville robbery ah....and ah.....with two other suspects. And I cleared three burglaries with old Mathis, while I was talking to him that he

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mathis, Jr.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....Charles Robert Mathis, Jr. yeah. I went.....on the 10th of October to Austin for a weeks training in ah.....assault and desk school. Ah.....and ah.....I'm in Dallas in Court on the 18th and I get back out.....from Austin and I got a subpoena to be in Dallas on the 18th. And I worked a lot on the Phillips case during this time, all the time in between these things. Ah.....we.....there was an old boy named J.C. Smith over at Kilgore that was always stealing something and we ran a search warrant on him and ah..... I recovered somea bunch of property up Van, me and the Deputy Sheriff here, a truck and a trailer and a bunch of sand blasting equipment. And the Governor's back in town on the 25th and had to ah.....piddle around with him for an hour or two probably.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well is Smith still around or did he.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Who?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is J.C. Smith still around or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: J.C.'s dead, no J.C.'s dead. Ah.....and I don't miss him at all. On the 29th of October I'm in Caddo Parish, Louisiana on a theft investigation, recovered a bunch of property. And ah....I'm into Dal.....back into Dallas on the 1st of November. And the 2nd I'm working burglaries in Gregg County. And old Kemp had another theft up in Paris.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Frank?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Frank's been dead, soon be three years, yeah. Ah.....on the 6th I'm back down in Beckville in Panola County ah.....that's when the.....November the 6th that's when the.....they recovered a body down there with the head.....decapitation.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was that down at Tatum?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, down at Tatum. And we haven't got that on tape have we?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No we don't have that one at all.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well this was ah.....this was a heck of a doggone story, we had.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well have you got all the names and what not that goes with this one, cause this will be a big story.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I got the names.....I got the.....I got the file on it. I got the file on all this stuff if I can find it. Ah...but this was a casethis was anotherthis was on.....you can look..... I guarantee you that November the 6th, 197.....what did we say, '76.....yeah.....was Saturday and early. And what happened was, there was a Deputy Sheriff.....and we'll get.....we'll go through this case and we'll quit. There was a Deputy Sheriff from ah....Dallas County. His son was about 9 years old and he had a friend who was about 9 and they were Boy Scouts. And his wife

was from Greenwood, Louisiana.....not from Greenwood, from Logansport. And ah.....they were going.....doing a Scout ah.....on a project and they load a canoe up on their car and his wife was going to drop the father and the son and the son's friend off at the river bridge between Tatum and Marshall. And they're going to float down to Logansport. And she's going on down there to visit her folks and they.....and this is a Scout project that they're going to do and this was on a Saturday and float the Sabine River. So they got out and unloaded their canoe and go down the bank and this was just at daylight. And they was fixing to get into the lake and they here this.....get in the Sabine River and here this head.....this body was just laying there in shallow water, on his back and the tad poles just sucking blood around his head you know. Well of course the deputy gets his kids and his boat and goes in and reports it to the Sheriff in Carthage. And of course the Sheriff calls me and ah.... I get down there before the crowd you know. I'm surprised I didn't meet the Sheriff down there, cause you know it's just about as close for me as it is for him you know. But ah....anyway ah....ah.....we get down there.....Johnny Spradlin was Sheriff.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Johnny Spradlin. But Panola County is good about calling me, they was good about calling me. Anyway, well Johnny and ah.....Mack Cranford was the Deputy working for him and ah.....we ah.....get down there and rope off the area and protect it you know and ah.....and what we're supposed to do. And we started taking.....gathering evidence, taking paraffin ah....ah....plaster cast of the tire tracks and....and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask, this Deputy from Dallas had been in law enforcement, had he kept people away?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was ah....yeah he had, but he....of course he had to go with his family.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know, and.....and.....but we didn't have any problems that time of day. It was the first part of deer season but there wasn't.....wasn't much.....we was down there..... I was down there before.....oh I think by seven thirty probably. It was.....it didn't take long we was in there. But there was a lot of blood up there on the bank and ah.....the body's down there and the head's completely decapitated, I'm talking about a smooth job. The pathologist said that man it looked like a surgeon did it. But all we've got is a body that's got tattoos all over it, I'm talking about.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Male or female?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Male. swastikas.....it's a young.....you could tell it was a young body becauseby looking at the skin. You know you can tell pretty well by looking at.....after you look at so many bodies you can tell the age of a person or pretty close to it , by looking at his body. And ah.....so wewe.....we get our evidence all together and we gather our blood and we take our cast ofand ah.....so we get the body out and take it into Hawthorne Funeral Home there in Carthage. And so we get the ah.....ah.....we get the voluntary fire department rescue unit out of Henderson, Marshall and Carthage down there to.....with their boats, out in the river, trying to find this head.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did it look like the body had been dead long?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, no it was obvious that it had just happened that night. But while I'm down there, before we leave the scene, there's a guy from Beckville came down there, and I've even got his name, and he ah.....he told me a lot of folks will talk to.....would rather talk to a Ranger than they had somebody else. It just depends you know, most of them.....a lot of them would rather talk to the local Sheriff you know. I got some information but I want to give it to the Sheriff you know. Well that's good you know, we don't care who gets it, just so we get it. But this guy singles me out and he knew me and I didn't know him of course. But he said, 'Mr. Elliott, I'm

so and so’, and he said, ‘Beckville played Jefferson last night in football and we stopped at Wards Cafe after the football game in Jefferson’, and said, ‘We must of crossed the river here somewhere around midnight, or between midnight and twelve fifteen in the morning, and I don’t know whether there’s anything to it or not but there was a blue Chevrolet pickup with sideboards came out from this bottom right in front of us, pulled out on the highway and had Colorado license on it’. Well as that.....coming out from where this was the only way that pickup could of gone, nearly, was to go on towards Tatum because it was too wide a turn at the angle coming up out of that bottom. And he didn’t record the number. And ah.....so I of course made a note of all this and ah.....so we carry the body on into Carthage and weigh it and measure it and I record and take pictures of all the tattoos and I fingerprinted him while we’re down there. And ah.....of course we’d began to use this Dallas County crime lab pretty good then and I convinced the Sheriff and them.....the Justice of the Peace, that we should take this guy in for an autopsy and ah..... and because we’d already.....the press had already come in on it pretty good. This is kind of unusual, decapitation you know, death.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why would you need an autopsy, I mean the guy got his head cut off?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well here’s the thing about it, but you don’t know if that’s the cause of his death or not. He may have been dead before his head was cut off and actually he was. And this is things you got to prove in Court. You know the Justice of the Peace, you got to prove the cause of death, that’s what you got to prove. You know you can’t just say the man was murdered and you got to alleged in the indictment if he was beaten, strangled, shot, whatever, it’s got to be alleged. So you know, it’s real vital to have an autopsy in a case. And you used to didn’t have any at all. But anyway, well we got him and they was still looking up there for his head and of course I’ve got all of his tattoos, I’ve got ‘em photographed and listed. And so we decided.....they agreed to send him on to Dallas. And of course we’ve got to identify him too see. I mean he’s a completely nude

individual and no head. We don't have any idea who he is. And so we start into Dallas with him and we're following ah.....we're following the hearse, Hawthorne sent him up there, they put him in a bag. And we get over about ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you ah.....did you always have to use a hearse, I mean..... I mean.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh you could put him in the back of a pickup if you wanted to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.....you know, it's.....it's courtesy you know, it's.....it's ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it wasn't the law?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Iit would..... I don't think they'd.....well they wouldn't care up there at Dallas County crime lab if you brought him in there in wheel barrow I don't guess. Cause they have to put up with that all the time up there you know. But ah.....ah.....in fact we may have sent him up there in an ambulance instead of a hearse, an older ambulance. Because I think then some of the funeral homes still had ambulances maybe. But anyway, we're transporting him to Dallas and we're following 'em up there, me and this deputy, because we've got folks looking for the head and we've got all the evidence and we got to identify him. See you.....the first thing you got to do, you've got to identify a victim. If you don't you haven't got any shot at all of finding out who killed him. So I had already prepared all these tattoos and the description of the body and ah.....and a estimate of his weight and height and age and so forth. And so on the way toon the way up there, this ambulance driver wasn't driving all that fast, he was just cutting along about the speed limit, I'm back there just chewing at the bit wanting to get on to Dallas and get on with this thing. And so I get on the radio and I call Tyler and I had 'em put out a broadcast and ah.....that ah.....no wait a minute, no let me back up just a minute. I'm preparing this thing as we're driving,

we're in my car. And we get over about the Gregg County line, somewhere in Smith County, and they find the head. So they call us and get us on the radio, so we getestablish radio contact with the ambulance and just tell him to go on and we go back and get the head, I just put it in the back seat of the car in the floorboard. And of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you put it in a bag or anything or just.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, I put a piece of plastic down to keep from getting on my carpet. And ah.....and anyway I laid it down there, gently and he had long hair and ah.....and hair all over his face. Well then we knew he was a young man and we had all this other description about hair on the face and long hair and the color of his eyes and so forth. And I think he had a scar or two, maybe he had some tear drops tattooed, I don't know, on his face, I forget all of it. But anyway I got a picture of it. And ah.....so on the way back.....to Dallas well I get over there close to Tyler and I put out..... I ask 'em to put a broadcast out. And I describe the guy, we got his head now and the whole works, and then at the end of the message I said, 'There could be a blue.....(side of tape ends).....I described him and at the end I just tack on there that.....describe this pickup that this gentleman from Beckville had told me, blue pickup with Nevada license tag and sideboard. Well, we get to Dallas just about the time the ambulance does, he had just backed up good and he was just clicking along you know, the speed limit, and ah.....so when I get into the crime lab in Dallas I've got a long distance call from Tucson, Arizona.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, what did you do tell 'em, 'Oh the heads out there in the back seat of the car'?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I.....we.....no we brought the head in ourselves you know. Cause ah.....we don't want to send them out there to get it. Those folks were glad to see you up there and they're good people and they treated me just like Louisiana folk, I knew them all on a first name basis and

we'd sit and talk for hours at a time at night while we was waiting for something to do. We stayed up there see until they did the autopsy. And ah.....anyway, I've got a long distance call from out there when I get to Dallas. And I returned the call and ah.....I'm talking to a dispatcher, radio dispatcher, and he said, 'Ranger I don't know whether there's anything to it or not, but five days ago we had a report of a burglary in progress on a certain street here and a neighbor had seen a guy answering the description of this man you're putting out, run from the house with a bunch of silver and stuff in a pillow case and jump in a pickup, a blue pickup like you described and here's the license number on it, Colorado license number....I meant Nevada license'. I may have said Colorado but it's Nevada. And he said, 'We've called out to Reno two or three times and we can't get any response'. Well I thanked him of course and I called..... I get on the phone and call the police department in Reno, Nevada. And I give 'em them license number of the pickup and I tell 'em that I've talked to the folks out in Arizona and I said, 'We've got a deceased man down here that's assoc.....this pickup is probably associated with the murder and will you please send an officer out there to the last registered owner of this vehicle and interview him and find out where his truck is and who's driving it and all the circumstances'. Well about an hour they call me back and ah.....they said, 'Well we sent a officer out there and this man tells us that his son has got his truck and he's gone to Sacramento, California'. And I said, 'Well who went with him'. 'Well we didn't ask him'. 'When did he leave'. 'Well we didn't ask him'. And I said, 'Well have ya'll got a detective out there that's on duty'. 'Yeah I got one detective on duty'. And I said, 'Well get him and let me talk to him'. I told him what we had, so he called me back later and he said, 'He left here with a.....his son's name is so and so'.....I've got all those names..... ' and he left here.....' Coon is the victims name..... ' he left here with a guy named Coon and they said they was going to Sacramento', but he said, 'I've talked to him and asked him what kind of ties this boy has got down

in East Texas and he said he just to be stationed in Leesville, Louisiana and he loves to hunt deer and he's been wanting to go down there and deer hunt and it wouldn't surprise me if he didn't... hadn't gone down there, cause he's not back home and I hadn't heard from him'. So we knew then, before we got out of Dallas and before we'd ever sent any fingerprints off or anything, who the deceased was and who our suspect was. So we get on back home that night and the next day ah.....this detective calls me back from Reno and gives me a guys name that this boy had been corresponding with in Shreveport. So I get over to Shreveport then on Monday, me and this deputy, and we get with Caddo Parish and ah.....and the Sheriff's office over there and we find the pickup over there at the airport in Shreveport and ah.....oh it was two days later I believe it was, yeah about Tuesday or Wednesday of the next week and ah.....that sameyeah the next week, it happened on Saturday and then Sunday.....Monday.....but anyway, we got on that boy and he was in the Shreveport area. And we got so close to him that he already boarded an airplane to go to Reno and he had already transferred in Dallas. And at that time I didn'twe didn't know thatthat you could flythat you had to change planes in Las Vegas too, or we could have got him there. But they arrested him, we went on back to Carthage and got a warrant and called Reno and they arrested him when he got off the airplane out there. Well we had his pickup and we'd already seized it and ah.....we of course took it down to the Caddo Parish barn, the Sheriff's office had a good place out there where they worked on their vehicles and they cleaned it up good for us and we yanked those tires and took tire impressions.....complete tire impressions to go with our casts and fingerprinted the truck, found blood in it. And ah.....so ah.....we got a.....we had probable cause then to get a warrant for this guy. And the Sheriff and I ah.... flew to Reno and ah.....we got out there and he had already employed an attorney and the attorney was there waiting on us when we....he had already told the officers there he didn't want to talk to us until he was present. So we

had to wait until he came and ah.....he..... notified extradition and didn't want to talk about the warrant. Well.....but I got a chance to talk to him pretty good while we was up there in jail and his lawyer.....even with this lawyer present. And we let 'em know some of the evidence we had you know. And I made the remark I saidand of course we'd already found out this guy had established an occult there at Sparks, Nevada at the college. He was a dope dealer.....the guys that's dead.....dope dealer, homosexual ah.....just everything.....he was just wrong, wrong, wrong, wrong. Needed killing you know, I've used this remark plenty of times, I said, you know this guy.....you could tell by looking at him he needed killing, that's what.....before we even knew who he was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I told this boy in front of his lawyer up there, I said, 'You know you're going to be tried for this case in Texas I promise you that. The Governor is going to issue a warrant for you and the Governor of Nevada is going to honor it and we're going to bring you back to Texas and we're going to try you. And this guy was sorry that you killed, but you know the more expense you put us to the more time it's going to cost you in the long run'. But his lawyer left, and we left and we go downstairs and we're going to go to town that night you know and look around a little bit and this is night already. And ah.....the jailer calls down and said, 'This boy wants to talk to that Ranger again'. And so I go back up there and talk to him and he waives his rights for his lawyer, said, 'I don't want him, I'm going to sit here and tell you about it and I want to go back to Texas and get whatever punishment I'm going to get'. Well I take a sworn affidavit from him right in the jail that night, messed up our partying time. And ah....so he admitted the crime and waived extradition the next morning in open court, his lawyer was there. His lawyer came back and tried to talk him out of it. And he told the Judge, he said, 'No your honor, I committed this crime and I'm

going to go back to Texas and face the music'. And the Judge said, 'Well this is unusual, but you've already said you wasn't pleased with your attorney and you don't want another one and I can't do anything but let you go if that's what you want to do'. And the he told us he said.....he called me off to the side bench there and he said, 'You better get him out of Nevada pretty quick'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Before he changes his mind. Well why did he kill the guy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well his excuse was....and you've got to give a guy an out when he's ah.....you know if.....a little out if you can. Ah....he mentioned the fact that he was homosexual and he said he made a homosexual advance at him and and ah.....and they get in a squabble and he shot him. He'd shot him.....of course when we found his head he had two .357 magnum bullet holes in his head.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The guy that killed him was a homosexual also?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, the guy that he killed was homosexual.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....he said that that's what the argument was all about, said he'd made two or three advances at him between here and Reno, but they pulled off down there at the river, off the interstate, and looking for a place to stop and sleep in the truck a little while. And he said it all happened then and he just pulled his pistol and shot him. And there ain't no telling why he killed him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why did he cut his head off?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, he said.....he said, 'Well I took his clothes off, there was identification in them, and threw them in the river'. And we never did recover his clothing. He threw them out and they got in the stream of water. Then he said, 'I thought, well I could cut his head off and nobody.....and put his head and his body out there in the river and it would float down the river and

nobody would ever find him and never identify him'. They wouldn't know who he was. And that's the way that folks are stupid. Of course if his body had of floated down that river, it could of gone all the way to the Gulf of Mexico if it had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, if it had been ten more feet down the river and that guy put it in down there they may not of ever seen it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. So.....but of course he.....he rolled his body off in there and it was night see and he thought it was going to float, but the river was real low. It was.....you could of nearly walked across the river there in the deepest spot. It was.....it was a dry year, this is February but the river was way down. And ah.....but that's whatthat was the reason he did that. He ah.....he said, 'Well, can't identify him and there was no way they could ever trace it back to me and he's gone'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And if a guy hadn't of been coming along and seen the pickup pulling.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's right, we'd of.....we'd of still been.....well we might.....see after we identify the subject being from Sparks, Nevada well of course we're going to go out there, or have somebody out there, to see who he was seen last with you know and who did he run with and maybe they might could of turned this up, but it.....it gets worked out you know. And a lot of them work that way, if you just get in there and push and push and push and ah.....and those folks over in Louisiana, man again, I can't say too much good about, I'm going to tell you something, they turned.....they did all that pickup stuff for me and fingerprint pictures, 8 x 10's, there's no limit to what those officers over there would do for us. NO....there's nono limit to it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: If you just try.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Just get over there and do it, yeah. Let's quit for the day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, July 24, 1995, continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. And Glenn I think last week we

GLENN ELLIOTT: We're down to November.....middle of November, 1976 ah.....as I remember it. And ah.....on the 16th of November ah.....we finally found.....it was that late before we found this knife that this guy that decapitated the boy that we went to Reno, Nevada for. And ah..... I think we..... I got into that story and just kind of went all the way through it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, we finished it up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We further.....we recovered the knife on the 16th and ah.....and of course I had a court hearing down there on the 22nd of November, a suppression hearing of evidence. And then I had to.....on the 23rd I carried the rest of the evidence into Dallas and the District Attorney and I got together in this same case. And then on the 24th well I got called over at Kilgore ah.....Merritt Tool Company had a safe burglary and ah.....they got a ton of stuff. Mr. Merritt ah.....in fact he was into municipal bonds pretty heavy and this was back in the area where you had you own bonds you know, not like they I understand it is now. And you clipped your own coupons and he had an employee clipping coupons and he had a safe there in his business where he kept these municipal bonds. And there was no record.....you know a municipal bond is just as goodwhoever has got it can do what they want to with it. But anyway, they got several thousands of dollars, II'm thinking somewhere around fifty or better in ah.....in municipal bonds and I don't know what else..... I don't remember what else they got out of the safe. And ah.....ah.....on the 30th, six days later, well we made identification on one of the suspects in the Merritt Tool burglary. And ah.....and I went to Dallas on December 1st and questioned an old boy in jail up there about the same case. And on the 3rd of December ah.....Eldorado, Arkansas officers called for some assistance and I helped them in a burglary investigation. Ah.....on December 6th I was back in

Dallas and arrested an old boy on burglary charge out of Rusk County. And ah.....and he was involved in the.....in the Merritt case too. And ah.....on the 9th of December I'm back in Shreveport ah.....continuing this ah.....headless body investigation, getting ready to go to court on it. And ah.....on the 10th I arrested a suspectthis things we get intothis is a.....on the 10th of December.....we had made a case, Bob Mitchell the Ranger from Tyler and I, had made a case for Wood County on an old thief over at Kilgore named Jippy Donovan, and Jippy we tried him up there in Wood County and convicted him and he appealed it. And ah.....you know to show you how things can get out of.....out of whack pretty easy, well thewell he was still giving us trouble and.....and ah.....he was justhe wasn't any count and I don't know whether he ever straightened his life up or not, but ah.....anyway a lot of time went by. This happened several years before and a lot of time went by and I got to checking and I asked the Sheriff one day to find out what the status of the case was. And he went to the Clerk's office and ah.....they said it was still pending you know, and that the court hadn't ruled on it. So I called the Secretary of State in Austin and asked him to check the court records down there and find out. Found out that there had been a mandate sent to Wood County to the Clerk's office to commit him to the penitentiary. And the Clerk had it and never didnever had given it to the Sheriff. Well I called the Sheriff and told him, you know, I said, 'Why don't you go up there and ask that Clerk', I said, 'If they hadn't got it well I'll get you a copy of it out of Austin'. And they found it, they got to digging around and found it up there. And they never had brought it down to the Sheriff. And so I went over there and arrested that boy.....and.....cause he needed to go to the pen, he'd been playing hooky a long time. Ah.....on the 13th I'm back in Louisiana getting some morea little bit more evidence in that murder case down at Carthage. And the 15th I'm in Dallas ah.....ah.....going over the evidence and we're getting ready to try that guy. And ah.....on the 17th of December well we ran some of the other suspects on

the Merritt Tool Company on the polygraph over at Tyler, one of the employees.....the women employees and ah....she couldn't ah.....couldn't pass the test. But we knew by then already that she was involved but we never could prove it, other than by accomplice testimony and it was hearsay, so we.....we just had to send three guys to the penitentiary. Ah....on the 20th I got ah.....called back in Harrison County on a cattle and tractor theft investigation. On the 21st I'm down in Panola County on a complaint through the Governors office. And about the only thing we ever got out of Austin, and I'm sure still get out of Austin, that the guys do, is somebody complain through Austin about something happening you know. And this case here was a.....as I remember, was a burglary down in.....right on the Panola, Shelby County line and it was a school teacher. And you and I have discussed it, it just ah.....and ah.....he had ah.....had his house burglarized and he and Maurice Cook were good friends. Maurice was stationed down at ah....Center.....San Augustine then. And ah.....he had written Austin and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Maurice, the now current Senior Ranger Captain.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But we get.....about the only time we get anything out of Austin is the Governoror somebody has complained that the Sheriff or the Police Chief or the Constable is not doing his job. On ah....on the 23rd I'm back in Tyler with another suspect on thefor ah.....in this Merritt Tool for polygraph. I'm sure it was another employee. And ah....we cleared all of them but the one. And on the 24th, Christmas Eve, I'm in.....up at Decab recovering a tractor and trailer taken from oil field theft over in the Gladewater area. Andon the 22nd, and they had called me I see on the 22nd . And ah.....ah....and then on the 30th we located the tubing and the sucker rods that was loaded on the truck when it was stolen. And ah.....31st I'm backMarshall called and the John Deere dealer over there lost two brand new John Deere tractors on the night of the 30th.

So this is kind of the way my career went. You know you'd be working on something andbut if somebody called well you know you can cut loose and go over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did a lot of these old thieves and crooks and what not, they lasted for a long time, like you know a Mathis and James. And didn't you work on an Aubrey Williams or Aubrey ah.....at the Lake Lammond Club or something.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well, he was just.....he wasn't ah.....he was just an old scroungy beer truck driver.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the reason I'm asking, I was going through some of.....you know I've got Bob Goss' ah....old files.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he worked him in 1939.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Is that right? Well that's probably right. But Aubrey wasn't all that bad, he just.....he was an old drunk that was always getting into something you know and didn't want to do right, wasn't going to do right. Oh yeah, a lot of these people.....this is the reason Bobby that a guy needs to be active and real active. And the more active you are the more these thieves you know, because they're going to repeat, they're going to repeat you know. And if you know what they're doing and how they do it then you've got a better chance of doing your job you know. We start off in 1977 and ah.....I'm ah.....ah.....of course I'm working on this Merritt case and tractor theft investigation most of the time right then. Ah.....I'm up in Dallas on the 5th and ah.....on the 10th we arrested ah.....they arrest the people in the Merritt case. And on the 13th we went to Baton Rouge, Louisiana. And ah....what happened in this case was, there's a.....there's a big old boy over there at Kilgore..... I forget his name, but he was.....he was one of the head ones and the reputation.....he got the reputation now on himself of being just bad. He was about six foot seven, eight, weighed

about three hundred and twenty, thirty pounds. And ah.....of course he didn't have any trouble peeling that safe as big as he was you know. And anyway, the word had got out thatthese people had put the name on him and ah....and he's the one that did it you know and ah.....master minded it all, after the.....they set it up for him. And so ah.....and he's supposed to have been this bad guy. Well we go over to Kilgore and arrest him and we get.....we got probable cause and got a warrant and late one afternoon and brought him over here and Iwe took him down there and our office was in the basement of the courthouse then and he told us about it.....his part. And he carried the bonds to Baton Rouge, Louisiana and sold 'em to a guy that was ah....actually in the Dixie Mafia that he had met through somebody over at Kilgore. And ah.....he probably got ah....oh probably twenty cents on the dollar for those bonds. But we're talking about a lot of bonds. And ah....so ah.....and in his trial later, Scrappy Holmes represented him. I never will forget, Scrappy come to me and said, 'Glenn you know what.....', oh I was trying to think, I think his name was Darden, but I better not say that, but ah.....anyway, he said, 'His defense was that you told him you was going to whip him if he didn't give you a statement'. And he said, 'I told him, Glenn may have told you that, but there ain't a jury in Texas is going to believe'. He said, 'He's six foot and won't weigh a hundred and eighty pounds'. He said, 'You're six foot seven and weigh three hundred pounds', he said, 'What jury do you think is going to believe that if you get up there and tell it to 'em'. Anyway ah.....we....he told us who he carried those ah....bonds to, so one of the deputies and I went to Baton Rouge and we got in there early enough to work but we filled up.....he had a brand new Ford and filled up with gasoline at a Texaco station and hadn't driven two blocks, or a block and a half, until his car went dead. And ah....he started fussing and said, 'Well it's the fuel or something went out on this car'. And I said, 'No, you got water in your gas'. And he said, 'Well I don't know, that's a good station back there'. And I looked up ahead and there was a car about a

hundred feet ahead of us and another one about a hundred and twenty feet ahead, and I said, 'Let me walk up here and see if they both filled up with gas back there and that ought to answer your question'. And sure enough they had. But we went back to the Texaco station of course and the guy a wrecker and carried it to the Ford house and they paid for having the.....had to take the carburetor off and pull the gas tank and drain it. But we had a couple of deputies we already made an appointment with to meet us and picked us up and of course we didn't get anything done that day. Well we did too, we...we....we eventually....about late that afternoon, after business hours ah....this attorney....we was kind of lucky there, this boy had hired a lawyer, this man, he was an underworld character and this guy had just retired from the United States Attorney's office. And he had a good reputation of being a good....good prosecuting attorney but he....you know he just got enough to get his.....get him some experience and he was fixing.....started practicing law and this guy hired him, because he was tough. And ah....the officers knew him and he said he'd been working with the officers pretty good. But we just had a meeting and he came with the defendant and we had a warrant for him. No we didn't either, no we hadn't got a warrant for him yet, we was just on the investigative stage. We had cause to get one but we knew we might not have enough to extradite him you know. So we just went down to see.....interview him. So ah.....this lawyer was talking to us you know about it and the only thing I knew to do, I said, 'Now look you know, we know that they came down here, we have an affidavit from the guy that brought 'em, from his sister that lived here at the time and put him in town and I don't know whether we can extradite him or not', but I said, 'I know one thing we can do', I said, 'Federal violation of transporting stolen goods across the State line and you....I understand you're a former Federal prosecutor', and I said, 'What we'll probably do if we don't recover these bonds is get the Federal folks involved in it and see if they won't help us make the case. It'll make it easier on us and give them something to do'. Well he you

know, he listened pretty heavy and he said, 'Well I'll tell you what Mr. Elliott, how long are ya'll going to be in town'. I said, 'Well we....as long as necessary', but I said, 'We're not stay down here very long, we'll probably go back tomorrow or the next day'. And he said, 'Well can you meet with us in the morning...meet with me in the morning at seven thirty, eight o'clock'....whatever hour he gave, I said, 'Yeah we'll meet you right here'. And he was back down the next morning and he had all these figures, he said, 'Now you say these bonds are worth a hundred thousand dollars'.....whatever it was, seventy-nine, he said, 'That's probably what the face value of 'em is worth at maturity', but he said, 'You know those bonds are...a lot of them are like fifteen years from maturing'. And of course at that time probably 3.5% you know is what they was paying on 'em. But anyway he had it figured right down to the penny what they were....actually face value. And he...he said, 'I think that....', he said, 'There's no way we're going to get those bonds back'. You know, they done got into some politicians hands probably down there. And he said, 'But I've been authorized to pay the man what the face value of 'em....get a cashier's check'. Of course we called back up here....well called the Sheriff you know, that's how you do it and let the Sheriff call Mr. Merritt. And he said, 'Yeah, bring me the money back'. So that's the way we handled that one see. And we didn't have enoughsee you can't.....you can't convict on accomplice testimony alone. And we had an accomplice that carried 'em down there see and sold 'em to him. We never recovered any of 'em, nobody saw the transaction, we can put him in town but that....that don't....that's not much you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what if two accomplices, can you convict then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No you've still got to have.....you've got to have some corroborating evidence you know. If that guy....if we've got somebody that said he tried to sell 'em to him but you didn't buy 'em, looked at 'em or something like that you know, you could. Anyway we settled

that case and got the man his money back you know and then sent three guys to the penitentiary for doing the burglary. Ah....then I'm ah....let's see ah....I had to go to Center to court on the 15th on a murder case down there and it happened in Panola or Shelby County one. And then I go back into Dallas again on the 17th of ah.... after I get out of court down there and carry some.....all this evidence in there on the Merritt case. And I go on over to Farmers Branch and had recovered some property down here for them and assisted them and questioned an old boy they had in jail on another charge, that had stole this property here. And we cleared up some burglaries for them up there while I was in Dallas. Ah...I'm back in Marshall in court and working that tractor theft at the same time over there, trying to get those two tractors back over there for the John Deere dealer. I go to the Grand Jury on the 19th of January in the Phillips case, Ms. Phillips case over at Gladewater that we've already talked about. Ah....ah....I had to go to Horatio, Arkansas on the 20th to the Texas, Arkansas and Oklahoma Peace Officers conference up there and I was on the program on some criminal activities, had to be. I don't even.....where is Horatio, Arkansas, I don't even remember.....?

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't know, I was sitting here thinking to myself, where is Horatio, Arkansas.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....it's got to be up there somewhere on the line, probably up there about Poto, up in that away somewhere.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When we get done here we'll look up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah.....on the 21stI'm back in Longview on the 21st and we're still helping Louisiana officers on this Leslie murder case down there at Baton Rouge. Ah.....back in court in Marshall on the 24th. Ah....ah....on the 26th I'm assisting College Station police department in a murder investigation. Ah..... the 28th..... I guess and the 27th and then the 28th

Caddo Parish had a burglary over at Bethany, Louisiana and they called me and asked me if I'd come over there. They had.....there was two young deputies over there they had at that time that hadn't had a lot of experience in safe burglaries and they'd call me. I went over to Bethany, just across the line down there you know, and met 'em at the crime scene. And.....you know, what's wrong with that. It's out of Texas but you know they.....theyif I'd of needed their expertise.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt you right here, this is a good a place as any ah.....is there any particular reason that, that couldn't be done today?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, it could be done today. I mean, you know, you might have stretch the truth a little bit on your daily report you know. You don't show going over and assisting Caddo Parish at a crime scene, but you..... I mean if a guys active working..... I mean you gotthere's no where in the United States that you.....you can't go if you're working criminal cases as going on an investigative status you know. And they don't.....nobody is going with you. Andno, it could be done and would be if I was still working, but you know, that's the only way to do it. On the 1st of February ah..... I go to Dallas and ah....for.....we alwaysthe first working day of every month, all the time I was in the Rangers, we.....we'd go into Dallas and complete our monthly reports, get our car books and expense accounts in and have a short company meeting, sometimes a long one, depending on the captain you know, very seldom would that

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't think that's done any more.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.....well they ah.....the ah.....the main reason is they started cutting down on the miles. And this was the best thing though and I enjoyed.....you'd get to see all the Rangers in the Company, find out what they're doing and generally we'd discuss what we'd worked on since the last month, just stand up for a minute or sit down at the table, wherever we were and discuss what we were doing. We'd all go have lunch together. Like I told you, Rigler would bring

somebody down every once in awhile to take us to the Petroleum Club and we felt real honored to be down there. And Leon Simmons would come by and take us to lunch or you know, Bobby Nieman or Joe Blow or whoever and we'd get to see some of our friends as well as have lunch with all the Rangers. And there wouldn't be any hurry to get home, a lot of times spend the night. Cause most of the time I had to get out of town to my.....catch up on my reports because at home the phone was ringing and I'm not smart enough to be dictating a report and the phone ring and then I got to start all over again you know and you talk about something else you know. And so a lot of times I'd go into Dallas and maybe a day before the company meeting and just rent me a motel room and just work on reports half the night you know and try to get 'em down , nobody bothering me. Ah.....and then on the..... I came back through Emery, Texas for a burglary investigation. On the 3rd.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's where old Texas Slim is from.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Is that right, Emery, Texas, that's a

ROBERT NIEMAN: John.....John Spence, aka.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:Raines County, Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN:Texas Slim.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah..... I arrest..... I assisted the District Attorney's office on the 3rd of February from Haskell, Texas in a fraud investigation. On the 6th ah..... I assisted Panola County in a robbery investigation. And then to Carthage on the 7th as a witness before the Panola County Grand Jury in the Koon.....the guy's got his head cut off. And the I left there ah.....as soon as I testified at the Grand Jury and drove to Austin, I was supposed to of been there in Austin that morning at eight o'clock for a in-service school. But of course the Grand Jury interfered, but as soon as I got through they..... Iyou know I'd call the District Attorney and tell him, I said,

‘You know if you don’t mind if you can run me in first down there well I got to be in Austin this week for school’. And I was the first witness you know, starting nine o’clock and I was out of there by ten and I was in Austin by one you know. And ah.... I just missed a half day of school and that was most.....two hours of that was introduction probably and the Colonel and them talking to ‘em. And so I spent a weeksee we have to go to Austin every two years for in-service school.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They still do that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah....uh hum. Now they.....sometimes they..... I think now they’ve started having ‘em two and a half days every year, I believe that’s right. See, since this overtime business. See we used to have to leave here on Sunday, drive down to Austin and be down there Monday morning for an eight o’clock school and come home Friday night after five o’clock see, Friday evening. Well, you know, there you are you done got.....but since the overtime business got all.....such a big issue welland they’ve cut schools down and see that’s all that extra driving now they got to do. But ah.....but it’s just something that had to be done I guess you know. Ah.....let’s see, on the 14th I’m in Palestine, Tyler and Gilmer on a cattle theft investigation. We.....we had a series of cattle thefts then and it was two guys, one from here and one from down around Carthage. And they stole several loads of twenty-five cow loads.....goose neck trailer loads of cows through this country and Gregg and Upshur.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Forty-five.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That’s a lot of cows.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they had thosethey had a good triple axle goose neck trailer holds twenty-five cows on it and ah.....easy, and they was just stealing that many at a time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Six hundred and twenty-five cows.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they was selling 'em down at Palestine at that ah.....and wewe got.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That packing house down there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And we.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did the guy at the packing house know they was stolen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no, no. These guys were using their right names and ah.....and driving a pickup with proper license plates. He had records of all that. We just.....we just hadn't ah.....just found.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do they still brand?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh not.....some of them do, but not too many. But you can use circumstantial evidence and you know they.... your not.....of course these guys, most of the time you can catch 'em, get 'em.....they'll tell you about it you know. But ah.....we sent them to the penitentiary. Ah.....of course I had to work down at Carthage and a day or two after that and ah.....filing cases and first one thing and another. Back in Dallas on the 16th of February and ah....ah.... arrested a subject on a felony revocation warrant from Gregg County that we was ah.....as a suspect in a in another theft case. Ah.....I'm back in Carthage on the 17th, the city had a safe burglary down there. On the 21st I'm in court in Gregg County. The 22nd I'm back in Dallas on this safe burglary out of Carthage. You know I mean that's just.....just my routine.....every day I'm going to do something and do it right smart if I can. The 23rd I'm back in Gregg County court on a hearing on this.....in the Merritt case. Ah.....recovered a stolen tractor from Bossier City, Louisiana while I'm waiting on court. 24th ah..... I took a suspect to Tyler for polygraph in the Bossier City theft case. 25th Kilgore had an armed robbery, Kilgore police department, helped them on that. 1st I'm back in Dallas to a company meeting in March. I stayed

up there two days assisting Dallas PD in some burglary investigations on one of the guys we had in jail down here. And ah..... I liked to work with Dallas police department you know, cause I got around some guys.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this the city police or the Sheriff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....well either one. Just which ever one, I enjoyed working with the Sheriff's office too. Because Bill Deckard was still Sheriff during that time....and well I don't know whether.....no Bill Deckard wasn't then but he was when I first went to work.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who is the Chief?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Deckard's Chief Deputy?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, no, I'm sorry, the Chief of Police.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....in Dallas at that time.....hum, good gracious alive. Oh me, I'll think of it in a little while. It's been a while back ah.....of course I very seldom had any dealings with the Chief of Police, but I'm.....I'm ah....Walter Fannin in the burglary and theft and Will Fritz and all the guys.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Will Fritz is the guy I was trying to think of, was he Chief then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Fritz was never Chief. He was head of.....Chief of Homicide Division.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know the storythis is off your subject, but ah.....Wes Watley told me about Goss you know killing those five guys over there. Will Fritz was the guy that was with him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Is that right?

ROBERT NIEMAN: When they went in that hotel room, Fritz and three or four other policemen, well Goss dropped all five of 'em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Fritz was a good officer, he.....Goss just beat him to the draw I guess.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Goss went in the door first.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....Will Fritz was a good officer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And Fritz was right behind him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....he was all right. Let's see on the 6th.....I get back from Dallas probably on the 5th and I recover a stolen truck in Kilgore from Louisiana.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me.....is Fritz still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Fritz still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he's dead, yeah. I think Walter Fannin is still alive, as far as I know, but Fritz has been dead a good while. On the 3-8th ah.....to Marshall and Benton, Louisiana recovered a 350 C crawler tractor and a low-boy trailer and truck stolen in Little Rock, Arkansas. I got....you know.....see here's..... I get information up here probably from some source that 'Mr. Elliott I can tell you where there's a stolen truck and trailer and crawler out of Little Rock, Arkansas, it's over in Benton, Louisiana'. Well you know what I do, I go to Benton, I don't pick up a phone and call the Sheriff. It's not but sixty, seventy-five miles to Benton, Louisiana, or whatever, eighty. Drive over there and get with the deputies over there and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, it probably took you fifteen, twenty minutes to get there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, went over there and ah.....and recovered this stuff for Little Rock, Arkansas. On the 14th of March I went to Gainsville and recovered property taken in Gregg County and assisted in clearing thirteen cases for Cook County. We had an old boy that we was working down here that was burglarizing these ah.....mini warehouses they had just started building them. And that's all he did, he'd go from one town to the other and he'd break in every one that they had, during the night. And he'd broke into thirteen up there in Cook County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Rigler.....he'd already retired by then hadn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....'77oh.....yeah, I expect that's about the time he....he cut out. Yeah, '76 maybe.....let's see.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He went in, in '49 and he waswell right in there is when he retired.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But I....Rigler may have still been working then, I'm not sure. I...you know.....if I had of looked at my report I would of....but I remember he....he had.....he..... I remember one item he stole, first three wheel bicycle I'd ever seen. You know, it was aback then he.....he had a place up there on a little old lake up there in Cook County and he and his wife were both.....and they had a kid that they carried with them. And ah.....on the 15th I'm back in Marshall assisting Harrison County in a burglary investigation. Kilgore called on the 16th on some burglaries they had. I work in Jefferson, Atlanta and Texarkana area on the 17th, 18th and 19th on these burglaries.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you again, now you're into Max's area, now would Max work with you, unless you asked him.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, I'd call Max and tell him I'm.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know you'd call and tell him you was going to be there, but would come and help you or would he go on about his stuff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah. No, uh huh, he'd come, we'd work together. Cause I needed Max you know and he....and ah...of course I'd worked up there in that area. But no, we'd.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I didn't know if he'd just go on about his business .

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, uh huh. No, that's ah.....and if he had to.....if he had.....if he was overloaded for some reason or other you know. If Max said, 'Glenn I just can'tI'm supposed to be in court in Tishomingo, Oklahoma tomorrow, you know, but you come on you know'. Well I

would you know. But no, if Max was thereif Max was coming here, whatever I was doing, I'd stop what I was doing to help him. I mean, it's important to help these other folks, but it's more important to help another Ranger you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And that's the way we worked. Ah....on the 21st I'm doing ah.....I get a spec.....another special investigation out of Austin on the Texas Employment Commission. And you know for the life of me I can't remember what that's all about. But they had athey had a problem in the Employment Commission at that time and I can'tI ah.....it hadn't come to me yet. I hadn't thought about it too much more since I wrote this down, but I spent quite a bit of time ah....ah..... I worked in Carthage and Marshall and Jefferson and Daingerfield and Pittsburgh and Gilmer and Kilgore. And ah.....this was something to do with the way the Employment Commission.....somebody must have been holding somebody up or something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that brings on a question, would say the Railroad Commission, if they had a problem internally, would they call the Rangers or the Workers' Compensation Board or....or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they could, yeah....yeah. And this....I have an idea.....this.....since originated in Austin and I feel like it wasit came out of Austin, all of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But would it be standard operating procedure?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no it wouldn't be standard. They have to.....a lot of folks would just let the local officers do it you know. But of course now, a lot of these outfits probably have internal affairs to do their investigation you know, but they didn't have then. And ah....it'll come to me, I remember what ah.....what was going on but I just can't remember just exactly what the.....what was wrong. Ah.....on the 30th I'm in Marshall and Shreveport and arrested four people that was in

Shreveport on a bunch of these burglaries we had up here. And I'm back in Dallas on the....on April the 1st to a company meeting. And I spent a couple of days in Dallas up there trying to....imagine getting reports out. On the 5th I was assist.....in Mendon, Louisiana on a missing person investigation. Old T.C. Blocksum....and I can just hear him call me right now, he's the Chief Deputy Sheriff over there, 'Elliott I got a ...', he was a big old Indian guy, 'Elliott I....', Mountie, he called me Mountie most of the time. 'Mountie I've got a good citizen down here in my Parish that's missing and his folks are putting a lot of heat on me', said, 'I think he went off to Bossier City and got drunk', and said, 'But he may not have, he may be missing and we got to try to find him'. And of course you helped T.C. Blocksum try to find a missing person when you gotta be working on a burglary, cause he'd....I guarantee you one thing, he was the one that....you know I could pick up a phone and call T.C. and whatever I needed he'd see that it got done you know. On the 7th I'm assisting Ranger Womack and ah.....and I arrested a suspect in Marion County.....from a Marion County burglary that was from Longview over here. And then on the 8th I arrested two more for him and took both.....took statements from 'em and took 'em to Jefferson for him. You know he was down there workingtrying to recover a bunch of property. We arrested just one on the 7th and Max was up here and they carried him back and he named the two accomplices and I picked them up on the next day and set down and took statements from 'em and then just hauled 'em on to Jefferson for him you know. So I probably didn't have any....I done messed up a day that....probably and needed to see Max anyway you know. So ah....on the 12th ah.....ah.....I taught a class in the Kilgore College ah....in Police Science about something. On the 15th I'm back in Marshall and Linden on a theft investigation. The 18th Kilgore and Tyler. Ah.....20th to Nacogdoches. 22nd ah....ah.....old Faulder was returned to Texas on the Phillips murder investigation. Of course we went all through that case, but the guy that ah.....and so then I took

him..... we took him to Tyler on the 25th and ran him on the polygraph and that's the night that he confessed and we wrote the statement up and then the court rejected it you know and told us that we shouldn't have done it there. And on the 2nd I'm ah....of May I'm at the.....on the Grand Jury with the Phillips case. On the 4th I'm back in Dallas getting their evidence together cause we're going indict him, going to try him. Ah.....on the 6th I recovered \$30,000.00 worth of property taken in one of the safe burglaries over at Kilgore where we arrested those guys. Ahon the 9th I'm back in court for a hearing in a murder case. If I don't go to court you know.....you see a police officer that don't ever go to court well that ought to show.....that's shows you one thing Bobby, he's not doing anything.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you get out here and do something, you're going to have to go to court.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Spend a lot of time in court.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's right. And you just going to be in that court room because you're going to wear it out. And you don't like.....you know, but ah.....that's the ultimate goal.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well would they work with you ah.....say, let's take a kind of a far out case, an absurdity to make a point, you've got three counties, Gregg, Harrison and Panola and you've worked cases and they are all coming to court the same day.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course there ain't no way you're going to try 'em all in the same day anyway.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that's the absurdity to make a point.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well if they got that away well you know.....(tape ends).....testify in.....and this is not unusual to have to be in court in two or three.....cause the attorneys are the same way. They get lots of continuances because maybe an attorney here got a case set here and got one get

set in Gilmer and maybe one in Tyler the same Monday. Well he can't be in all three places you know. And ah.....so they have to work with things like that. But that's not the only case on the docket you understand. There's a lot of cases they can try so we just work that out and that's the same way we work out like if I'm in Marshall for court and I'm standing by and I'm waiting to testify again or maybe I've already testified and I'm waitingwell I'll have an agreement with the District Attorney , I'm going to get out here and work on this tractor theft a little bit and I'll be withinI can be here within fifteen, twenty minutes if you need me, if you see.....anticipate needing me at one o'clock well call downstairs and tell 'em to get in touch with me. And I'd go ahead and work instead of sitting up there warming the bench you know and just. And.... and ah.....let's see ah.....what ah....court hearing in a murder case on the 9th. Court hearing for Faulder on the 13th. Ah..... I took off a weeks vacation and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where was there a Sheriff's convention?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that wasn't in the.....this was in May. Sheriff's convention always meets in July. So I probably just took off. See we got two weeks vacation and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is there a Sheriff's convention this year?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's in Waco right now. Yeah, last.....last week in July, it's in Waco. And I'd like to go down there, in fact I talked to Bob Mitchell today and I'd like to.....you know, go down there one day, but II'm not going to come back from down there because ah.....I'm back in court in Carthage on the 23rd, 24th, 25th and 26th. I don't who we tried down there but it took a week to try it. It had to be a murder case. Ah....of course I was working on that Phillips case a whole lot during this time see, cause we'd ah.....we got this confession from Faulder and we was getting ready to go to court and we was having to run these other folks down and get evidence together. And ah.... in fact on the 31st of May I'm back in Dallas and Fort Worth on this Phillips

case. On June the 1st I'm back in Dal....well I spent.....I stayed up there in Dallas and attended a company meeting on the 1st and come back through Winnsboro and worked up there on this.....on the Phillips case. And on the 3rd of June I'm in Shreveport on a burglary investigation. On the 6th ah.....ah.....assisting Caddo Sheriff's office in a safe burglary they had down there and I got a fugitive warrant for one of the suspects that lived over here. They had a grocery store burglarized down there and I knew who did it. I called them and they was at the scene. And I drove on down there and told them who committed their burglary and we gotworked the rest of that evening and got probable cause and got a fugitive warrant and I come on back over here and arrested this guy. Ah....and then on the 7th I'm in Nacogdoches , in fact I'm looking for this guy.....well I got a warrant over there for him and of course had to get the fugitive warrant over here. But I went to Nacogdoches.....I just.....wherever the trail lead that's where I went Bobby. And then on the 9th I'm back in Panola County in court on this headless murder, tried that boy down there. And ah....oh they postponed it I guess, it started on the 9th and ah....and just down there one day. Because I'm back over at Winnona and Tyler on the 10th on this Phillips investigation. And ah.....found 2,000 pounds of copper wire that was stolen on the 13th. And of course I didn't know where it was stolen and I started getting on the phone calling. And I called Red and called all the Rangers and Red called me back on the 14th and Titus County had lost about that much. It.....the guys.....one of those big copper, like they use those TI....TU was using them to run those cars with coal you know, electric.....I guess they run electricity in it didn't they. So it was stolen up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you work anyor much drug cases?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, I tried to stay away from drug cases. The only time I'd work drugs is somebody would call and tell me, then I'd get hold of narcotics, cause I didn't know..... I didn't know how to work drugs or any.... you know I mean I didn't want to work drugs and I didn't

know how to work drugs and we had a narcotics section and our policy is that if they got something pertaining to our work they tell us, murder, robbery or something and if we got something pertaining to theirs, we tell them you know and give it to them. And they're trained in it and that's whatthat's why we work so good together you know. And so.....no I didn't ah..... I was always glad somebody else did work drugs. We made a lot of bust outs with them when they arrest a lot of folks you know, but never worked I didn't want to just.....and worked a lot of informants on drugs. But I'd write a report on it and sent it in through the channels to the narcotic people. And you know in this one drug case we'll get to over here, just walked up on that meth lab, first one that had been caught in East Texas you know. But.....and those narcotics officers all were envious you know, but.....and they just couldn't believe it you know. Said, 'You just walk up on one'. But I was out there trying to do my job and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what about boot leggers and moon shiners?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I.....the only time I'd work boot leggers ah.....Bill Dowd and once or twice over in Harrison County I think I went out with 'em on a raid justjust..... I was in the Sheriff's office and they was fixing to go hit one and I maybe didn't have nothing to do at that particular hour or whatever. And Bill Dowd and I..... I worked a few with him up there in Cass County but ah..... I just went with him, Bill already knew where they were. No I....I nevervice.....ah..... I didn't have time to work much vice. I'd rather.....I liked to work murders and anybody can catch a boot legger you know, or a whiskey still, they'd set up a surveillance on 'em you know. It don't take a lot of cunning and investigative work to do that, in my opinion. Of course they'll be some folks that disagree. Ah....I had to make a special investigation in June on the Pines Motel in Kilgore and we got some undercover agents in there and trying to get an injunction against them for prostitution. Which you know Ithis wascome through the Grand Jury or

something you know and I didn't I didn't care about working vice all that much. But I worked it. Ah..... I'm back in Dallas on this special investigation on the 28th. Ah.....up there on the 1st . Arrested a suspect and returned him to Gregg County. Ah.....I'm in Shreveport on the 6th, down to Angleton on the 7th. Ah.....took a statement from an old boy in jail down in Angleton on the 8th and come on back into Houston on the 9th. Ah....on the 11th ah.....I finally located that old boy on that fugitive warrant for Shreveport on that burglary over there. And I got off down to Angleton, I don't even remember what I was doing down there, but I was doing something. I know one thing, I spent one night in Angleton and the next day I stayed down there and worked this old thief pretty good all day and got finished about three o'clock in the afternoon. I had to be in Houston the next day and ah.....so I thought I was going to pull a smart thing and drive....well I left out of Angleton about five in the afternoon and thought, well I can get into Houston and everybody will be coming out this time of day you know. And sure enough I think I stayed down there in a nice clean motel for.....this is in '77for probably \$23.00. I got into Houston, cost me \$50.00 to stay in a hotel.....motel in Houston, Texas that night and I like to never got to it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Flea trap probably.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know, I was getting \$25.00 a day per diem you know. And that's meals and lodging and all you know. But I remember that well. Ah.....But I went..... I need to stay over close to the DPS office, the Ranger office, cause I don't remember what I did in Houston the next day, but I think we was ah..... I was working a murder case that was involving some old pimps down there. There's a lot of pimps down there around Angleton at that time and ah....the old Sheriff down there was most cooperative. Ah.....on the 13th I arrest two for Smith County on burglaries and recovered the property they took. On the 14th I go to Paris for firearms training. On the 17th Gladewater called and ah.....they had two burglaries over there on the night of the 16th probably.

On the 20th Kilgore had.....called on a burglary and we got over there and worked with them and arrested two people and it wound up that they committed those burglaries over at Gladewater. Ah.....back in court on the 25th in Gregg County. And the 1st of August I go to Dallas of course. And ah.....most of the time I'd wait, if I could, to carry my evidence in a lot of these cases to the lab up at Dallas when I was going you know. There ain't no use in making a special trip, I know I'm going into Dallas on the 1st and submit my reports, so I nearly always if I had any evidence at alland even if I had to take some on to Austin, well I'd just leave Dallas and go on to Austin, cause you have the interstate to drive and make a lot better time. And ah.....on the 3rd ah.....on the 2nd I left Dallas so Ito ah.....Whitesboro and Sherman ah.....on a burglary investigation. And ah.....on the 4th Harrison County had some more burglaries they needed some help on. On the 5th well I arrested five on cases in Harrison County and cleared them up. On the 6th of August Briscoe was back in East Texas, the Governor. And on the 8th ah....old Gant had already got to be a Ranger and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That Jim Gant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah..... I guess Jim had just made Ranger about during that time. And he had a fraud investigation I helped him with. And on the 11th I'm back in Dallas and Fort Worth and ah.....on a theft investigation and must of stayed up there a day or two. And I'm just kind of hitting the high spots and just kind of let you knowI'm....you know how I moved around.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you, in this same vein, I'm been meaning to ask a long time and I'd always forget it until later, but all the years that Jay Banks was Chief out at Gladewater, did you work with him any?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. See Jay was Chief when Ms. Phillips got killed.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....oh yeah, Jay called me pretty regular. This was.....during this time here ah.....well let's see, Jay may have been gone by the time we tried him. I guess he was....tried this guy. Cause it was ah.....no I believe he was still there, yeah he was, yeah. And Jay would callin fact we star.....we tried this Faulder boy on the 16th of August, that killed Ms. Phillips. I spent the 16th in court and the 17th through the 24th, we finished that trial up on the 24th. And you know, by the way, he's still on death row. That guys still on.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum, they still haven't done it yet.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Of course we had to try him again down at Lufkin, we'll get to that on down the road. Ah....I'm back in Dallas on the 1st of September. Ah....I didn't spend the night because I got to come back to court in Longview on the 2nd. And then I left after the court and went to Texarkana and remained over night up there on a tractor theft investigation. And Red and I met up there and found some places where they was disposing of some old tractors. I'm back in court in Gregg County on the 7th of September and left there after probably the case was postponed and went to Tyler to help.....Kilgore.....no Longview police department on a burglary investigation. Ah.....and on the 12th I instructed in a police school here in Longview. And the 13th the same. 19th I'm back in Panola County on another murder investigation. 22nd Grand Jury in Marshall. Ah.....then to Hope, Arkansas on the 27th on a burglary investigation. 28th in Henderson and ah.....witness in a trial and something I'd worked on over in Harin Rusk County. 29th of September I ah.....

qqq This is a good case right here. Ah....El Paso ah.....murder investigation. And then I was in Dallas on the 30th on the same. Ah.....we got a call from a Frank Odom, who was an investigator for the District Attorney's office here, and now Frank's a good boy and he's in the bonding

business right now and works for Odis Hill some as an investigator. But Frank's a good boy and he was in the DA's office and he got a call from a doctor here that ah.....on this Mental Health and Retardation center, which is state funded. And there was a guy that come in and told him he was having all kinds of mental problems and he just got discharged out of the service. And he told him that he had ah.....committed a rape and a murder out in El Paso while he was in the Army, told him all about it. Well the doctor calls us and Frank and I go down there and talk to him and he said this is.....you know ah.....we don't.....and this kind of deal here there's no doctor, patient privilege, cause this is a state agency and we're just trying to help people you know, we're not treating 'em as doctor and patient, it's the state helping somebody that needs some help. So he told us what the guy told him. So we call El Paso and talk to a Deputy Sheriff out there and he said, 'Man ya'll are telling me things about this case that's never been made public', and he said, 'This has got to be right'. And this was a tough little old boy, I mean he was..... I guess he was among the toughest and as dangerous an individual as I've ever handled, and I've handled several. I think I told you this, and he killed a policeman down at Carthage, he was cold blooded and he'll kill somebody , and so will this boy here, there ain't no question in my mind. Ah.....I don't know where.... I imagine he's still in the penitentiary. But anyway we worked the case and ah.....and ah..... I tell you what the deputy did out in El Paso, he went out.....we told him what outfit he was in and ah.....no, he told us what outfit he was in. I think he'd told the doctor, but he went out toand got a picture, a company picture, and what this guy had done, he was out.....there was a young couple on a date and they pulled out there on the desert outside of El Paso and parked at night. Dark, there wasn't any moon, it was dark, cloudy night or something and this guy was out there waiting on somebody to come out. And he goes up and he gets the guy out of the car and locks him up in the trunk and ah.....and he rapes the girl and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wait a minute....let me just.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: We about to run out of juice?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Run out of tape. Go back to where he was waiting on somebody.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....he was out there on the desert waiting on somebody to come out there and park. I guess it was a pretty common thing to do and he's in the service out there. And ah.....this couple comes out and parks and he comes out.....up and pulls a gun on 'em and locks the man.....male up in the trunk of the car and he rapes the female. And he gets her and is going to put her in the trunk of the car too. But before she got in he shot the guy that was in there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kill him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And she ran and he couldn't find her out there, and he looked for her, she could hear him. But it was so dark she could.....she went out there and laid down.....ran somewhere and laid down and he never did find her. And so she got on back in and reported it. And ah.....so when we called this officer and told him this, well he went out to the ah.....Army base there and company picture. This guy and everybody in his company. And this was one of the best picture lineup identifications that I've ever seen. And this female picked him out, every soldier in his company was dressed in a uniform and she picked him out. A light, a dome light came on and she got a good look at him. And ah.....the trunk lid light was on and ah.....so ah.....he sent us a warrant for him. And this was a brutal murder now, you know, this was.....and rape. And ah.....so we located his mother, she lived down here in south Longview and this was on a Saturday. Everything happened on a Saturday.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You remember his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, his name was ah.....ah..... I wrote it down, John Dorough.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: D O R O U G H. Ah.....he ah.....he was at his mother's and so we figured we had a.....you know, a pretty good.....and he.....we couldn't find anything wrong and his mother had a good job, reputable citizen here in Gregg County and you know, no problems with the family or anything. And so ah.....we decided to plan a little strategy and of course I'm working the Sheriff's office by then and we notified the city of what we was going to do. And so ah.....Tom Welch was Sheriff and ah.....a couple of his deputies and Odom and myself and so.....I asked the dispatcher, I just wrote her out something, I said, 'Now when we get out there and set up I want you to call this house and tellask for him. Just say that you're a long distance operator from El Paso, Texas and you have a long distance call for Dorough'.....whatever I said his name was, John Dorough. And I said, 'And if he comes to the phone well you tell him to stand by you'll have to get.....they'll have to deposit some money on the other end you know'. And so his mother answered the phone, 'Long distance call for John Dorough', 'Yes he's here just a minute'. And gets old John on the phone and she just puts him on hold and calls us and said he's on the phone and we walked in the house he hasn't got nothing in his hand but a telephone. And we just pick him up and carry him outside.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well is this a no knock warrant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And the Sheriff went in the front door and there's two deputies at the back and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean, when you.....it must have been pretty apprehensive, I mean this guy is a cold blooded killer.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well somebody's got to go in there and get him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know somebody's got to go in, but I mean, it's different than sometimes, some of these old thieves you've talked about you

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah. Yeah, you know, thieves you can call them and tell them to come see you. The only reason you want to surprise them maybe is that they may go call a lawyer first before they come to see you, you know. They're going to come but ah.....a lot of times you didn't want one to talk to his lawyer. But this guy.....when you handle somebody like this guy, he done committed murder and rape out there and this doctor tells us he's dangerous and you know, in his opinion. And ah....so ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You go in with gun in hand?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, huh uh. No most of the time a Ranger don't break his holster unless he's going to shoot somebody. He's got a telephone in his hand, we know that and ah....cause we've just been told that you know. So he won't..... if he's got a telephone in one hand and a gun in the other one well we'll find out when we get in there. But we walk right in and he's sitting there and we just carry him outside and put the handcuffs on him. And I stay there and talk to his mother and console her and tell her what.....you know, you owe the citizens.....she's a good woman and ah.....ah.....she kind of.....well her attorney.....and you can't blame 'em for that, they talked her into saying a few things that didn't really happen. But ah.....we knew his pistol....he had this.....we hadn't recovered a pistol and we knew what kind of pistol.....the ballistics.....they'd done ballistics on.....out there and they knew what kind of gun we was looking for and many lines and grooves and what the manufacturers name was and everything. And they done a good job, this was a young black detective that was just out of the.....had served four years in the service out there and got out and stayed in El Paso, I don't remember where he was from, but he was a good hand, he was smart. And he did a good investigation on this thing. Cause he came down later, came after him. But anyway ah..... I stayed there in the house with the woman and we ah..... I told her what the circumstances around the murder and what he was charged with, how it all came down. And of

course she was pretty distraught about it all. And she was cooking, frying chicken, had chicken in the skillet, it was right at dinner time on Saturday. And she cut stove out and got her chicken off and we set there at the table. And ah..... I asked her for search, I said, 'We're looking for.....', I said, 'You know whether or not he brought any weapons with him or not', and I said, 'We're looking for .22 pistol'. And she said, 'Yeah he's got one in there in the top drawer'. And ah.....and I said, 'Well we can't seize it without you giving us permission to search', and I said, 'I've got a consent to search form here'. And got one out of my car and got it and brought it in, filled it out and explained it to her. And that saved us from having to go get a search warrant. And well before she signed it, she asked me she said, 'Well what happens if I don't sign this'. I said, 'Well I can't search for it unless I can gowhat I'll do, I'll leave here and go to a Justice of the Peace and try to convince him that I've got probable cause to get a search warrant and if I do then I'll come back with a search warrant and then we can legally search your house'. And I said, 'Of course we're going to leave some officers out here, outside, to make sure that nobody leaves here with any property you know, but I don't think you'd that'. Well she went ahead and signed it. And of course recovered the pistol and they made it on ballistics, theyautopsy bullets and the bullets they fired out of the pistols I recovered here, the specialist said that it came from the same gun you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Revolver or automatic?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a .22 revolver, I believe, if I remember. And ah.....so ah.....they came after him and then later, they hadn't told us this, but when the officer come after him well he said, 'Well there's a belt buckle that she described that he had on and I bet it's out there too'. Well they didn't tell us about that, of course I could of got it, cause I remembered seeing it after he described it to us. Well I went back and ah.....and recovered it. And ah.....but you know the court threw that search warrant out. We didn't get to enter the pistol as evidence.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this old liberal Judge out there and somebody said he didn't like the Rangers at all.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he a Mexican?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, about half.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he probably didn't.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....he said that ah....he ah.....he said that she was under duress and ah.....ah....was afraid and all this stuff. And you know, but I treated that woman as nice as I'd want anybody to treat my mother. And she wasn't afraid of me. I....you know, cause I've got.....you know.....I think.....I know how to get along with people you know and talk to them. And she was just as calm and collected. And of course you know, she was a little upset about her son getting arrested, being charged with murder of course. But she wasn't outrageous and.....but she came out and testified that she was.....didn't know what she was doing and that I talked her into signing that and she was afraid not to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But did the belt buckle stand up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, belt buckle didn't stand up either. But see she

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they convict him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. The girl identified him, positively and of course we.....the doctor goes out and testifies and the whole works. And there was three of us went from here out there, Ken Hartley and Odom and myself.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well three....three quick questions. Now this was a revolver so he couldn't of done it, but I'm always curious , you know most of these old crooks you know theyfor

want.....or shooter.....for one use their gun, you would think that they would be smart enough to carry, number one an automatic, number two and extra barrel and an extra firing pin.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course if it was somebody murder for hire or something like that, they'd probably do that Bobby. But see you know we get.....we've been talking about that, if people were that smart we never would clear any burglaries you know or robberies or murders or anything. And everybody makes a mistake you know and even those guys that change the barrels in 'em you know and they make mistakes. And if you got a diligent.....somebody working on something and get a break or two especially.....of course if this doctor here hadn't of called us that case would probably still be pending out there see. So you don't.....there's lots of things that happen in criminal cases. Now look at old Haralson you know, he....he buried that gun that he shot Judge Wood with up there on Lake Ray Hubbard. And if it hadn't of been for....if he hadn't of carried his girlfriend out there with him they never would of recovered it when he buried it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how....mirandizing them by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And ah....how did that affect you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, mirandizing affected you, you know it's got to affect you when you got to sit down and tell some old boy that ah.....look, you don't have to make any statement at all, any statement you make can be used against you in court, you got a right to have an attorney, the attorney can be present any time that we interrogate you and you can stop the interrogation any time you want to, any statement you make, you know, can be used against you in court and will be. And ah.....and sure it's going to affect you, if a guy listens to you. But ah....but you just got to go

ahead with it, cause it's a.... it's just another obstacle in the course you know, that you got to overcome.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well another question I'd have, on somebody as dangerous as this guy and others, is it and if not, why isn't it standard procedure for the State to notify the arresting officer, in this case you, Glenn this John whatever his name was, he's getting ready to be released and we still think he's dangerous?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I....you know, that don't bother me, that part don't, because I watch out all the time anyway.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it may not bother you, but I'd think you'd be....you know, it was something you'd want to know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course it would take a lot.....I don't even know whether it's in his record down there in the penitentiary who sent him down there. But I wake up every morning and go on about my business, but I watch pretty close. And there's not.....now this guy is bad, I didn't say he was bad enough to come and try to kill a Texas Ranger, you know. He's bad enough to go.....wait out there in the dark and take advantage.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But your just as dead.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah I know but ah.....take advantage of somebody that he's....that he's got the advantage on. Chances are they don't have a weapon and he knows that and these are the kind of folks he's going to hurt. He ain't going to take no chance in getting himself.....his blood spilled in somebody else's driveway. And he's going to go somewhere and kill somebody that he knows he ain't going to get hurt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you mentioned the liberal Judge, I have.....that brings on a question, did you ever have any dealings with Justice Wayne Justice?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, I've ah.....I've dealt with Judge Justice, back in this slant hole deal, I carried this case over there to him, Jim Ray asked me to go over there and meet with him and discuss the investigation of the day. And he was the United States Attorney at that time in 1962 or '63 and ah....and he tried. I really think that he....that he would liked to have ah.....prosecuted those people but he said he couldn't. But they have since in some of those cases, cause this oil is all interstate, you know it goes into the pipelines and the stuff they was stealing you know, theft of oil. And I dealt with him onI always got along with Judge Justice all right. Of course I got along with the Judges all right. I got along with that Judge out in El Paso all right, I mean I just didn't like it cause I testified and he was tough, he was tough on 'em. And he even asked me a few questions and I could tell that he was going to kick it out. But you know, it bothered me, but it didn't upset me that much, cause we convicted him anyway.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that brings up my other question, he was Hispanic. At least through the 1970's, going back to the 1820's through the 1970's, there was no organization in the world that the Mexicans hated worse than the Texas Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you ever have any problems with Mexicans or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, I never did have any.....I've arrested some and made cases on some. I arrested one for murder, killing four people in Mexico, over here at Kilgore. In fact we thought he might be involved in that Kentucky Fried Chicken.....this ah....I forget what providence it was from, way down there, and called and there was a guy there in Kilgore that they wanted that killed three people there in this little old community in Mexico and he fled to Texas. And they had run him down through his folks and he was in Kilgore and we found him, arrested him for them. And of

course we was right over there in the middle of that Kentucky Fried Chicken thing at that time and....but we eliminated him through his employer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well rightly or wrongly, I'm not trying to condemn or ah.....to condemn or defend, but back.... you had the migrant workers, especially the run-ins with Captain Allee.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did any of that spill over up into here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no it didn't. I tell you what Bobby, every....you know, I don't know ah....I never had any trouble with blacks or Mexicans or anybody ah.....over anybody else's problem. You know generally they....if you treat a guy about half way decent and explain to him what your doing, then you're not going to have any trouble. He hasn't got any animosity against you, he might still be mad at Captain Allee or somebody like that, but there ain't no reason for him being made at Glenn Elliott you know. But I don't think that old Judge.....that....see during this time these Judges were all afraid they was going to make a error you know, in a case too and....and in that Judge's favor. They was bending over backwards, and still are, for the criminals you know. Let's don't make an error in this case and have to retry it. Well what the heck, retry the thing if they want to, but let's try.....let's let the jury know, you know, here's a guy that.....that pistol was used and the jury never did get to know that by golly, you know, but they convicted him anyway. And so if they'd of....we'd got that in as evidence they'd of probably gave him a.....I think he got a life sentence anyway. Ah....then we got finished with that case there and ah.....on the 3rd I'm back in Marshall in court. Went to Kilgore, surveillance on a cigarette fence over there and we recovered 325 cartons of cigarettes for Bowie County. Made identification on the thief. On the 4th of October I'm still helping El Paso, doing some more work for them on this case we just talked about,

probably going back out there and getting that belt buckle. On the 5th I'm back in court in Marshall, 5th, 6th and 7th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt you once again, on that belt buckle, did she let you have it or did you have to get a warrant this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think we got a search warrant this time. I think we did get to ah...I think we did, cause see we didn't know about the belt buckle when we went out there the first time. And then we've already recovered the pistol and arrested him and we convinced the court we had probable cause to get a search warrant, so we got a search warrant. And this black detective came down and went out there with us, as I remember, and we recovered the belt buckle. And it...I think they let.....he let it in, cause he....it's considered.....see I just got consent from her to search. And of course she got up there and cried on the jury.....on the stand, this was out of the presence of the jury no doubt. Of course every case you've got the rule invoked so we don't get to sit in the court room see, we don't know what's going on in the court room. I don't know what she testified to, I never did even look at the..... but I can tell from my examination by the defense attorney that she had testified to something that wasn't true you know, that she was afraid of me and I didn't explain it to her properly.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well there after that, did youdid you still use the consent or did you from then on say, well I'm getting a warrant....I'm getting a warrant from now on.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, no. You use consent.....no you....no, see a lot of times....I don't even know whether we could of got a warrant or not, a search warrant. We arrested him, but see he....he had just come home, he was just.....I mean, he had a home out in El Paso you know and was in the service out there and the pistol could of been out there. He didn't tell us the pistol was there. I don't know that we could of got a search warrant, at that time, that would of stood up in court.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was the JP here liberal or conservative?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it don't make any difference, the JP could be liberal and give you a warrant. But if you hadn't got probable cause, when you get out there to court you're going to have the same problem, he's going to kick it out you know, well you didn't have probable cause. And just because the Justice of Peace says you have probable cause don't mean that the District Judge is going to rule with him that you got probable cause you know. Cause they're going to contest everything, the defense attorney is you know, everything you do. No, I continued to use consent to search. That's the quickest and the fastest and there's no question about it really. And of course most of the time, probably the best thing to do, and I think I started doing it on some cases, is tape record it....the conversation, just say, 'Now Mr. Nieman I've got a tape recorder here I use sometimes, I can't remember too good'.....or something, you know, just kind of get you at ease. 'Now I'm asking you for consent to search your house cause you son was arrested here and he's charged with murder and there's supposed to be a weapon and you've already told me verbally a few minutes ago that yeah, there was one in there in the top drawer'. And she told me to go get it you know, but I said, 'No I've got....we've got to fill out these papers'. She told me where it was and told me to go get it. Well no I can't do that you know cause I....not until she signs this consent. Cause if I go get it and then she signs it, well I've already recovered the weapon see and the Judge may rule say, 'Well now you went....you searched before you had her permission to'. And you can't....you're not going to get up there and story on the stand, you're going to tell it just like it was. And so there's so many obstacles in the officers way.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's ah.....you're lucky to get anything done. Ah....I'm back in court in Marshall for three days ah....in October. And then I had another murder in Panola County on the

10th...no attempt murder. Ah....I'm back in Carthage on the 11th and to Tyler for a polygraph. I'm in Dallas on the 13th....ahah.....and cleared three burglaries for Dallas County. Back in court in Gregg County on the 15th. To Paris for firearms on the 17th and 18th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would that be the....like to shoot....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Ah....to Sulphur Springs and recovered a safe taken in a burglary and arrested a fugitive. Ah....oh this is ah....yeah, I made the arrest on the 17th, it rained us out on the 17th and I was working these people and I went back to Longview and ah.....arrested a fugitive on the 17th and he told me where there was.....where the safe was up at Sulphur Springs. And I went back to Paris and shot the next day and then went on over to Sulphur Springs and recovered that safe. Ah....21st ah.....we're making preparations for the Phillips trial, it's fixing to start. And ah....tried it on the 24th, 25th, 26th and 27th. Ah....ah.....I can't even read my writing.....oh yeah, I made a.....while I was in the Phillips case there I made a Ranger applicant investigation and it must of been Ronnie.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Griffith?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....cause we had to make the investigations on all applicants that was in our area you know, whichever Ranger lived in his area.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ronnie was a Highway Patrolman in Kilgore at that time wasn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. 28th I'm assisting Harrison County in an attempt capital murder investigation. Ah....ah....this was an interesting case here, this was a colored deputy over at Marshall that ah....had to kill a guy over here at Hallsville. And he was just one of the first colored officers in Harrison County. And this old boy was....he was mean, he'd ah.....and the Grand Jury was hearing a case and this was supposed to of been election time as I remember. And ah....it was....it stirred up a lot of controversy, he was the first....he was black officer and he

carried....bought him the biggest pistol he could, he bought him.....he had a .44 magnum pistol. And he stopped this guy over here at Hallsville, drunk and ah....for drunk driving and ah.....the guy started coming at him. And he shot twice down beside....both sides of him, into the asphalt, on the improved shoulder of the road over there. You ought to remember that, did you....or was you here then?

ROBERT NIEMAN: I didn't come here until May the 8th, 1978.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....anyway ah.....he shot and killed him and he had some people with him. And they come on in and made some complaints and this and that. And didn't like it cause a black officer arrested and shot this guy. But I.....they called me to help investigate, the Sheriff did over there, and ah....and found out this guy had.....two policemen had to fight him just not to long before that and filed on him for aggravated assault trying to arrest him and he....everything he had got into he was always into trouble. And the Grand Jury no billed this guy, you know the deputy that killed him and he needed no billing. He had shot two warning shots at him and he tore that asphalt up you know. Of course you have to go take pictures and measurements and interview all the witnesses. We got lawyers that's.....we got a guys that's wanting....you know, politics gets involved in stuff like that and this some of the.....you know this is when the first black officers started working by themselves and doing just regular work, would work anybody you know. And it was quite a controversy but ah.....you know, I got involved in it through the request of the Sheriff. And then November 1st I'm back in Dallas of course, for the company meeting and then I carried the evidence in there in this shooting case. And I'm in Dallas three days, so I guess I probably....I don't know what all I was doing up there, but I was doing something. And the 4th I'm back in Carthage assisting in the robbery investigation down there and we made three arrests and cleared the robbery. On the 8th Governor Briscoe, I had to take him to Mt. Pleasant, Pittsburgh, Gilmer,

Gladewater and Kilgore, so he....he's running for Governor pretty strong. Ah...whoever the Governor was that....it wasn't Briscoe then, it had to be somebody else. Ah....on the 9th of November I got involved in another special investigation and this is over in the Grisham area over out of Tyler. And ah....J.B. Smith had just been elected Sheriff over there and he was a very popular young Sheriff and he had a bunch of young deputies and they was doing a good job really. And they went over.....and Grisham is south of Tyler and that area was beginning to grow and it's really an expensive area over there and the people had gone out there and bought a few acres and got their horses and things out there. And ah....there was a doctor over at Tyler that had a son and ah.....they had a pasture out there and a lake and he had permitted his son to have a party out there and have beer and told him it was all right to have beer. And of course he didn't want them out on the road you know, just ya'll go out there and have yourself a party and stay out there. And they was all juveniles and ah....and ah.....and several of the politicians kids were out there and several of the prominent people around Tyler kid's were there. It was just a gathering where a bunch of young people, boys and girls, went out and had a party and there was some beer drank. And unfortunately for them, there was a little grass smoked. But anyway ah.....some of the guys got a little bit out of hand, young guys out there, and ah.....and they was raising a lot of cane and a bunch of the neighbors complained and the Sheriff sent a couple of units out there and they had a little trouble corralling these people. They had to shoot up in the air a couple of times and finally arrested some of them, one of the Constables sons was out there and ah....and then some of them ran and went to some barns and one of them broke in a barn and the woman was on the phone at the house and they had a phone down at the barn and talking to somebody and he broke in on the phone wanting to call for somebody to come get him and raising cane with her and scared her to death. And anyway, well the Sheriff and them arrested several of them, handcuffed them and brought them in and these

people didn't think it should of happened. And they called Austin and Stuart was a Ranger over there and Jim Ray was Chief Criminal.....and Jim assigned me to make the investigation. Well the first thing I had to do was get Stuart settled down. You know, I go over there and tell Stuart, I said, 'Stuart I think I got to talk to you'. 'Well what it is'. And I said, 'Well Chief Ray called me and told me to come over here and make an investigation of this Grisham business', and I said, 'I don't....you're the first man I need to talk to about it, because you're the Ranger over here'. Well he got plumb.....you know, Stuart didn't like it and I wouldn't of liked it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I was going to say, I don't think.....well why did Jim do that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know. You know, I never did ask Jim. Well I have an idea, Stuart hadn't been there that long and I think he thought, well he's got to investigate the Sheriff's department and it might affect Stuart's working relation with the Sheriff you know, over there. And he might of wanted a seasoned officer to do it, you know, I don't know, but he assigned me. So Stuart when he got through raising cane with me, and I didn't blame him, and I said, 'Now Stuart I think you're just as right as you can be'. And we're in his office. I said, 'Now here's the telephone, you call Chief Ray up and tell him you don't think I ought to be doing this, that you ought to be doing it', cause I said, 'It would tickle me to death if he'd assign it to you'. Well of course Stuart is not going to do that you know. He liked his job too well. Cause Jim would of reminded him right quick who was running the criminal.....and so the next thing.....of course I got Stuart settled down and he understood then the kind of.....the way I explained it to him you know. And I said, 'You know, I'm over here cause I'm sent, not because I want to be here, I got too much work to do'. And I could see this was goingand it did take right smart of time. And ah....so I said, 'Now let's go down to see J.B., the Sheriff'. Well I go down and see J.B.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Stuart go with you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And ah....so we sat down and of course J.B. gets all tore up it first and then he settles down and I said, 'You know somebody's got to do it J.B.', and I said, 'I'm sure Jim didn't want Stuart to do it on account of afraid that ya'll would get tore up with him', and I said, 'I'm not going to let you get tore up with me'. And you know, so he was pretty well settled down. And so we go back out to Stuart's office and of course I'm using Stuart's office. And the first person I'm going to call is the doctor that owned the property you know. And of course I've already met with the Grand Jury and ah.....the District Attorney had, had a special Grand Jury. And ah.....they had told me what they wanted me to do and they said they wanted me to go out there and get affidavits from everybody involved. And anybody that was violating the law they was going to prosecute. Well I said, that's great you know, well let's start from there. So I get back out to Stuart's, after we leave J.B., well he calls. 'Well I understand you and...', and he calls the District Judges name whose son was out there, I'm not going to get into this, 'and you and he are big deer hunting buddies'. I said, 'J.B.', I said, 'I've never killed a deer in my life and never will probably unless I run over one with a car'.... cause I've used that expression a couple of times as I remember.....and I said, 'I know the Judge you're talking about, but I've never been hunting with him'. And I said, 'Let me tell you something'. I said, 'If I was going to be partial in this investigation and I (side of tape ends)....', and I said, 'I've been a policeman for....', well that was in 1977 so that was since '59. And so I settled him down again. Well then I called the doctor and got....and it was his.....it happened to be his afternoon off. And he met me, I rode out there with him to the place and he assured me that they had his permission to be out there and he condoned the use of alcohol out there. And so then I just went from there on and when I reported to the Grand Jury then I said, you know, I just told 'em this you know, I said, 'Well', I started at the top you know, I said, 'The first person I interviewed was the doctor', and I said, 'They were...', oh I think there

was 47 people out there or however many was out there and all of them were delinquents. And I said, 'If you're going to indict somebody you're going to have to indict this doctor for 47 counts of contributing to the delinquents of minors, because the beer was available out there through him and with his permission, on his property, and it just went from there on downhill'. Of course they didn't....they didn't indict anybody. But they sure got off on the Sheriff about it over there. But it was ah.....and you know, it was a case....in fact I made the....I made a comment that they might of over reacted, one of them had a sub-machine gun he shot up in the air. Well you know, I...you know, some of the Grand Jurors kind of took exception to it and they said, 'Well you know, he's got a right to protect himself'. I said, 'Yeah, but you know, I don't know whether I need to take a sub-machine gun out to corral a bunch of juveniles'. But of course now a days you might have to you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You might ought to take a bazooka with you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You didn't then. This was just a bunch of good kids that was out there to have a good time and they just got kind of carried away. And they didn't respond....if they....if when the Sheriff got there, if the doctor's son would of walked up there and told them said, 'I'm doctor Elliott's son and daddy said we could come out here and are a little bit loud, we've got these tape players going and the party is over and ya'll....I'm sorry it happened', those deputies would of got back in their car....well they'd probably stayed there until everybody left you know, but there wouldn't of been anything happen to them. But it didn't happen that way you know. But I spent right smart amount of time over there on that. And ah.....and on the 11th well I recovered some more equipment down in Bossier City and the Texarkana area. And I'm back over at Tyler and spent, well from November the 14th, 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 20th, 21st, over there at Tyler. And then on the 22nd ah..... I got a call, a Longview police officer was murder here about two

o'clock in the morning out by Strohs ah....ah....Saulder I believe was his name. And they called me on that and these.....they had left going towards Gilmer and ah..... Ithis is another case where I bet the Longview police.....you know, I mean it's just the way I drive and the way.....I live out on the north side of town and they called me and said they're been a shooting and they left going towards Gilmer and they killed a police officer. And I jumped in my car and by the time Ibefore I got to Gilmer well a policeman had stopped them up there and he had to shoot the ah.....shot the woman, it was a man and a woman in the car. Well I went on.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it kill her?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. And she later made a witness in the case for us and who done the shooting. But ah..... I knew her, I didn't know the guy done the shooting. And ah.....went in there and was talking to him and he was all doped up and high as a kite. And one of the Longview policemen got there, a detective, and he said, 'How did you get here so quickly'. I said, 'Well I got in my car and they told me that they was heading toward Gilmer on 300', and I said, 'So I thought I'd better get in behind them and see if I couldn't help catch 'em'. And we..... I worked on that thing for a day or two and ah.....several days. And I go back to Tyler of course, a day or two in between. Ah....December the 1st.....we're about to get through here.....December the 1st we had a company meeting in Dallas and I stayed up there and then I went on to Austin, probably with some evidence out of this murder case. And ah..... I'm back in Center in court in December and then back in Shreveport on the 9th and the 12th and Tyler for the Grand Jury on that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well as much time as you spent in Louisiana, did everything..... I mean, you just a Louisiana Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know what, the captain never did say a word to me about.....in fact my sergeant, when Lester Robertson was sergeant under Crowder, he used to like to come and go over

there with me. And every time that.....and he'd tell me, said, 'Next time you go work in Louisiana call me and I'll go over there with you'. We'll get out of this cause that phone's probably for you. And I'm.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No it won't be for me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'm in Grand Jury in that Grisham case on the 12th. 13th I had to go to Austin and ah.....and then I come back and work on this Saulder boy getting killed. And ah..... I see here I assist on the 19th.... I assisted Harrisburg, Louisiana officers in a theft investigation and worked in the Waskom area helping them. And that's through '77.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that Longview policeman that was.....was he killed, assassinated or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he stopped 'em for a traffic violation and they.....well it was assassination you might as well just say that. I mean that guy just shot him by George, just shot him right there on the side of the road when he walked up to his car. And drove off and left him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I always think of assassination as a guy laying in waiting.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, no, it was just.....the guy had committed an armed robbery out at a..... I believe if I remember right, they had robbed a grocery store at 1845 and 149. And they had left there and this policeman met 'em and they got a description of the car, and he turned on 'em and he caught 'em out there about the Stroh's.....behind Stroh's brewery on 1845 and that's where he was shot and killed, right there on the side of the road. Yeah, it was a terrible thing. They give athey have a special deal here you know, once a year on policeman's day in honoring the deceased and the Rangers that was killed in the line of duty. And of course he is always mentioned and his family still lives here as I remember. Ah.....a case like that of course ah.....you don't have to work all that hard on a case like that. This guy done the shooting, they had a description of the

car and one of the policemen got after him and they got away from 'em and they went on.....and of course hollered up at Gilmer and Gilmer set up a road block up there and they stopped 'em and this guy pulled a gun and....and....and he shot.....maybe the girl pulled a gun, I guess she did because she got shot in her lower legs with a shotgun. And she was in the hospital and they carried her to the hospital and they carried this old boy on down to the jail. And he was so hopped up that he I talked to him enough that I was convinced , you know, that he did it and he.....and he wasn't.....and I had a couple of officers there with me, younger officers and they told me later and I appreciated it, that ah.....that they appreciated the way Imy composure with him, because he was high and he was cussing and calling officers pigs and stuff like that. But we handled it right and....and ah..... I believe we got him the death penalty. I don't know whether he's ever been killed or not, I don't remember, I'll have to look that up. But ah..... I know this girl testified later and ah.....that he done the shooting up here. She drew some time and he.....but he may of just got a life sentence, but ah.....that ended up '77. Well let's take the rest of the day off.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We'll start '78 next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and we'll get into.....we'll get into the old cattle burglary over there.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 5

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Monday, July 31st, continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn last week we finished up on 1977 and we're ready to go on 1978.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well '78 was a.....I had some interesting cases that I worked in '78. But we went to a new system in '78, G.W. Burkes was captain and he was a.....he like to change things around and make them, he thought, more complicated. Actually, after we got....we started numbering our cases and for me to remember unless....if I had names in here I could remember them you know. But some of the cases I'm working now, in this period, on my weekly reports just got a number on 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it....did it cause much ah.....confusion, and I don't mean resentment, I mean confusion, when a new captain would come in, did they like to change things to meet their own or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think ah....everybody did but James Wright that I....as far as I know tried to change a little bit. Ah...ah...when Bill Wilson made captain, he was the second captain I had, but Bill was....he wanted to wind up in Austin, Texas, that was his ambition, he wanted to be in

Austin, he was stationed in Austin his first station as a Ranger and he ah....he like to play golf and he graduated from the University of Texas and he liked to participate in their ah...ah...athletic programs and ah....and that's where his roots were around Austin, although he was from Houston. And Bill changed a few things but ah....not a whole lot. He ah....he kind of put.....tried to put some of the boys to work a little bit more than the ones that wasn't doing exactly what they thought. But he didn't change the reporting system up any. But when G.W. came along well, G.W. was a smart man, G.W. Burkes was intelligent man. And ah....he was constantly working on some kind of report or some....he wrote the manual for the Rangers and ah....and he just ate stuff like that up. He...he liked....he had his head in a book all the time and he made some changes and some of them were good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn, let me go turn that TV down right quick, we're getting a feed back on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sorry about that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We were working ah....I started out working some local burglaries in the month of January and I remembered part of this. I went to Houston on the 2nd of January and recovered a bunch of stolen property down there and we carried an old thief down there with us. And then I was in.....I had to go into Dallas on the 3rd for a company meeting. And ah.....Marshall had another murder case in the first part of January and I worked on it for quite a bit in the month of January. Ah....I....White Oak police department, they had just ah....White Oak had just come in the police business out there about this time and ah....they had some problems out there and I worked....helped them work a forgery case and arrested a suspect. And I didn't like to work forgeries, you've heard me say that, I just....they were a little to easy to work

seemed like you know. But ah...and then the same guy had done forged some checks over in Henderson. And generally you know an old forgery case it just keeps you tied down, cause if you....I like to clean the old boy up you know and most of them, if they don't get caught right away, which very seldom they do, they've hung paper all over northeast Texas and western Louisiana for you catch 'em you know. And then you get yourself tied down and get all these cases straightened out and where all he forged checked and then you wind up in court you know. And ah....and I assisted Beauregard Parish, Louisiana in an oil field investigation and that's way down there....I think Houma is the County seat of Beauregard Parish cause I wound.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Houma?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: H O U M A?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. There's two Houma's, there's a Homer and a Houma. There's a Homer up here in ah...ah...northern Louisiana, but this is.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Houma's down there as far as you can go.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, it's right at the end of the line I'll tell you what.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Been there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....ah....so I....I stayed around Marshall a whole lot on a murder case and ah....ah....I ah... I assisted a Ranger out of San Antonio, Frank Horger, working some oil field thefts. And we helped....any time a Ranger would call you know, you cut loose and do what he's got for you to do. And then I spent a right smart of time around Kilgore on ah....ah....surveillance of an old boy that was stealing a lot of ah....oil field equipment. And I had a missing person investigation and that was all in the month of January. And February of course I'm back in Dallas and I go from Dallas to Austin probably carrying evidence down there in this

murder investigation in Marshall, because that's....that's about the same time. And I'd always try to kind of arran.....I knew I had to go into Dallas on the first working day of the month you know and ah....and so then I can cut on to Austin you know, with my evidence and hit interstate and make pretty good time that way. And ah....I came back through Bryan on this case and I can't remember why....on the same murder case, and spent some time down there. And I'm sure Ott Luther was still.....I know Ott was still down there then. And ah....you know I just.... I told you I just went down.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's break ranks now and jump ahead to last week and tell about Ott Luther.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah I will and ah....let me get through February here, cause I see in ah.....I assisted Kilgore and Smith County in an arrest of an old burglar and recovered twelve thousand dollars worth of property there in the first part of February. And ah....Rusk County had a....this is an interesting case, I'll stop right there and we'll start on that and that's a pretty good case I can talk about. Yeah, I went down.....Ott Luther and I went on the Texas Rangers at the same time and we worked some companion cases together. I think that we....we got through the truck tire burglaries didn't I?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Ott was a....you know it was his area that the truck was loaded with tires and the two guns was from down at Bryan, Texas and ah....and so Ott came up and helped me on that and we set on surveillance all night, of course they didn't come back and we arrested 'em later. But they named a penal institute after him this past week, it was ah....down ten miles out of Navasota, O.L. Luther Penitentiary. So we had a real nice dedication down there and I went down and spoke on behalf of the Rangers about Ott. And ah....he had ah....he was born up

in ah....up near....in Navarro County I believe and ah....in 1919, he was older than I thought he was. He was a....he never did act old and I worked about four different cases with him pretty close. And ah...and he was good hand, he was on....he went on the Highway Patrol in 1942 and ah...ah....he had a break, he went in the service in '44. After the war he returned to the Highway Patrol and ah....made sergeant in '57, Highway Patrol sergeant. And went on the Rangers the same time I did. But it was a great honor to....for them to name a penal institute after an old deceased Ranger. And he was just that kind of guy. And his name will be there from now on. And his two sons and their families were there and they brought a nice portrait of him there, which will hang there in the lobby of the penitentiary. But, boy it's good bold letters out on the highway....or street....main road coming down there, the O.L. Luther Correction Institute. And ah...you know, to have one named after a Texas Ranger is a....I think is great.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You bet.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....this case here I was fixing to tell you about ah....it happened in February of '78. And you and I have talked about it a little bit. I was up here at the courthouse one time....I mean we get involved in cases lots of different ways. You know, most of the time you get invited. I'm sitting in the Sheriff's office waiting on a Deputy Sheriff, he and I were working these burglaries I imagine or this murder case or something, and he was in conference with the Sheriff about something. And these two guys came in and had a guy handcuffed and I knew one of them. He was a great big, huge black that had been in the penitentiary from Harrison County for murder, he lived over in Hallsville, name was Willie Linasee. And Willie had an old boy....another guy with him, a white guy, that had been convicted of ah....some dope related charge. And they brought this guy in, in handcuffs and I didn't understand it. And ah....so after they....and they got a receipt from the Chief Deputy, took their handcuffs off and leFort So

this guy, they had him sitting down there, and I just walked over there on the bench, they was fixing to take him up in the jail, and I said, 'What's this all about partner'. 'Well I'm....I got arrested for DWI over here several months ago and I made bond and we moved from here to Henderson', and said, 'My bondsman I called and told his secretary where....gave her the telephone', but he said, 'I didn't get my notice to come to court', and said, 'The bondsman sent these two guys over there to pick me up'. And I said, 'Well ah...', I said, 'That's unusual, I never...both of those guys are ex-convicts'. And he said, 'Well they had a gun, both of them had guns'. And I said, 'Oh no'. 'Yeah', he said, 'They went to the wrong house first, they went to Mr. So and So's house and thought I was there'. He was working on a house helpinghe was painting on the inside of a new house. And....and ah....but the guys that went in, they pulled guns on them and....and....looking for him and they got scared and told them where he was. He was working in another house in the same area. So they physically brought him into Gregg County. So I ah....I told him, I said, 'Well you know, I want to talk to you again this afternoon when we get back if you're not out and if you are I'll look you up'. But he happened to still be in jail when I got back in that afternoon. And I went up and took a statement from him. And then he told me these people over at Hendersonso I went on over there and ah....and got statements from the people.....looked them up, that they went in and pulled guns on 'em. And had a picture line-up and they identified both of them. So I filed on 'em....went on into the District Attorney's office over there at Henderson and present it to him and he accepted the complaint against 'em. Kidnapping and felon in the possession of a firearm and ah....so ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you now. A felon.....ignoring for the sake of what I'm going to ask, the felon in possession of a firearm, a bounty hunter doesn't have to have a warrant or anything do they?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....yeah ah.....a bounty hunter has got....there's got to be a capias issued.

ROBERT NIEMAN: A what?

GLENN ELLIOTT: A capias, from the court, there should be. I think they sign a contract, but if a guy fails to appear in court, all a bondsman has got to do is ask to get off his bond. And automatically the court issues the capias to pick 'em up, that's just a warrant is what it amounts to. And ah....so they....yes they....they've got to have a warrant. But see a felon can't carry a gun

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I realize that, but I was thinking about the bounty hunter.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, a bounty hunter....these bondsmen they do it. But in order to bring somebody....you know there's no reason to bring 'em in unless they've got a capias you know. But I understand...I've never had to make a bond, I've never inspected the contract that they sign truthfully. I didn't even inspect this one, cause I didn't care what was in the contract, it didn't make any difference to me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So the felon did away that. But I was just thinking about, if they hadn't of had that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...I think that they can bring 'em in if they refuse....if they don't show up in court. But if they don't show up in court when they're case is called, well it's so easy just to go ahead and all you got to do is ask for it you know. And ah....and the court issues the paper....proper papers to pick 'em up. But it's the bondsman's responsibility, if the Sheriff....if he turns it over to the Sheriff to go get it, then he got to pay for the service of the subpoena and the mileage and so forth you know. And he was just getting it done cheaper with these two old ex-convicts you know, this bondsman was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was just saying, theoretically, okay this guy jumps bond and they find him in California.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Can not a bounty hunter just go out there...he doesn't have to have a warrant to bring him back, he just....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, that's right he can bring him back.

ROBERT NIEMAN:bang him in the head and bring him back.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway he can get him back he can....and that's what they do sometimes. And this was the funny thing about this, I later testified before the Grand Jury over there and I had aand this is not unusual, every once in awhile you'll get somebody on the Grand Jury that asks some kind of simple questions or silly questions, but this ah.....and I guess that this guy really thought, well what's a Texas Ranger doing working on something this simple you know. But that was simple as far as I was concerned. Here's two....one big old burly black guy that had been to the pen for murder and goes in the wrong house man, and both of them with guns drawn and....on....and some citizens of Rusk County. And that's what I told....they said, 'What's a Ranger doing working on something like this'. And my answer was, 'That's what ya'll are paying me for'. And there wasn't anymore questions you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know, a question I've had I've been meaning to ask, but just didn't ever seem appropriate time, but I'm going to ask it now. Now your job was to find....to prove....you know, get the guilty person and bring 'em to jail. Now there's been guys I know that you know, well I can't prove Bobby that you did it, yet. But I know you did it and I'm going to get you. But what about the reverse. Bobby, I know you've been charged, but I know you didn't do it and I'm going to do everything I can to prove you didn't.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course I've ah....I've got some folks off the hook a time or two that were charged that weren't guilty. Ah....I never did tell anybody that I knew that they committed a crime unless I knew it though. Now that's something I wouldn't do.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's just say then, it was in your own mind.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I've heard a lot of officers do....say that you know. But ah....ah...you know, I just kind of kept my thoughts to myself and ah....and generally....cause you know you start accusing somebody of something and if you tell 'em, I know you did it, and that guy didn't do it, then he loses all the respect in the world he's got for you, you know. Cause he's thinking, here's this guy telling me he knows I did it and I didn't do it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I guess....what I'm really trying to find out here, as a police officer, is your job equally to prove somebody did do it, as it is to prove that didn't do?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well our job is tois to protect the property and the citizens of the State of Texas you know and in order to do that well we've got to....we've got to get out there and work. But yeah, if...if.... I feel an obligation to get a guy off the hook just as much an obligation as I do to send him to the penitentiary. If I thought a guy was innocent and had any inkling at all he was innocent, well I'd do everything I could, and I'd tell him so you know. I'd say, you know, 'I'm not sure you....we got the right party here and you might can help me clear yourself'. You know I did that with the Phillips case, you know we got into that. This guy out there in the penitentiary in Mexico had to wake up you know, he....he said, 'Well I was in jail in so and so'....Salt Lake City or somewhere you know....'on the 4th of July weekend'. And I went and looked it up and sure enough he was you know. So if you can get....if you can prove somebody innocent, you're not only helping them but you're helping yourself. Because you're sitting there wasting a lot of your time and effort trying to prove that he did it and if you....if there's

something in there somewhere....and this is a good tool that you had to work with those guys with, if you didn't do this you know, tell me what you was doing, you know, where were you. And....and let's reconstruct your activities during this period of time and ...and if you can satisfy me and the courts and the District Attorney that....you know, that you....it was impossible for you to have committed this crime, then that's what we'll work at right then. We'd start from that minute on trying to.....trying to prove that he couldn't of done it you know. But if you don't reach that point then you just fall right back into a....you know, let's get busy on something else you know. Cause you....this didn't work out for you, you know. And ah....oh you got to try everything ah....ah...that you do....everything you go at you got....you know there's a lot of effort to it Bobby, just lots of effort. Ah....back the middle of February ah....we was having a lot of stealing back then, I helped DeRidder, Louisiana recover a \$15,000.00 piece of equipment. Ah....and arrested ah....two people on warrants for 'em in the Kilgore area. Ah....I went to Benton and questioned an old boy that was in custody down there for old Joaquin Jackson. Joaquin ah....the Sheriff's office over at Benton called me and said, 'Glenn we got an old boy in custody over here that's got a bunch of stolen property in his car and we caught him down at Vivian parked behind a grocery store and dry goods type store', and said, 'It looked like he was fixing to burglarize'. And they brought him in and said, 'He got a bunch of stuff he said come out of Texas and why don't you come over here and talk to him'. You know, that's the kind of conversation we had. Well of course you know, I went to Benton and ah....before I left he told me that he had burglarized a place down between Uvalde and somewhere. And so I called Joaquin and ah....and I inventoried the property and got a list of it and told him. And I don't think I got hold of Joaquin until the next day. And ah....so ah....because I see I'm in Kilgore the next day and then I go back to Bossier City. I go back....I get over there to Bossier and find that

while I'm.....to Benton and while I'm questioning him, right after I get through well they tell me about an oil field theft they had. And I knew where...I knew that some stuff had come into Kilgore and I left there and went to Kilgore and recovered \$9,000.00 worth of oil field equipment for them. And I'm back in Bossier the next day, Joaquin had called me and told me where the store was burglarized. So this old boy made a statement about it and ah.....and signed a waiver of extradition. And the District Attorney down there didn't want to extradite him because they didn't have enough money. And ah....I told Joaquin I said, 'Well I'll bring him to you, you know, I'm over here'. And I brought him the stuff, but the DA didn't want the guy. And I met him a couple of days later in Waco with the stolen property and returned it to the owner down there. But they never did.... they had to let that old boy out of jail over there. And that happens sometimes. And you don't like that, but it happens. And ah....ah....I arrested two ah....ah....oh I ah....I just got around to getting a warrant on the 20th for those two guys that ah....I finished my investigation in that....that kidnapped this guy, these two ex-convicts and arrested them on the 20th. I met Jackson....I met Joaquin on the 21st in Waco with this stolen property. Ah...I was in Fort Worth on the 22nd on a burglary investigation and stayed up there a couple of days. Ah....went to Henderson to the Grand Jury on that case that we was talking about. I attended a company meeting on March the 1st at Lake O' Pines. We got to where we'd met up at the cabin, the Ranger cabin up there, and they stopped that later. But we'd have company meetings up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did they stop it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, Austin decided that we should be meeting in a State building somewhere, some....they just....that was a policy that they developed and they've since kind of got off of it again. Because this meeting that the Rangers had down in Houston wasn't in a State

property you know. But we had some good meetings up there at Lake O' Pines, some overnight meetings where we just sat down and relaxed and talked and tell stories and get a lot of stuff done too. Ah....Carthage had a jail break on the 2nd of March. And I wound up in Tyler and Clarksville trying to run this old boy down and we finally caught him. And ah....we had a....we....back oh several years before this we....the Sheriff here, old Noble Crawford and I, and of course I kind of got Noble interested in it, but we started....we hosted a meeting here in Longview and ah....ah....I worded the letter and Noble sent it out under mine and his signature and we invited the Sheriffs from adjoining counties and from Miller County and Caddo Parish and down in Many. And we got....called it the Ark-La-Tex Peace Officers Association and we started meeting and we met here in Longview the first time. And oh for the first few months every time we'd have another town to ask us. We'd meet at noon, there was no officers, we'd just....whoever the City that had invited us well they'd ask....they'd arrange for the meal and we each paid our own meal. And we'd get up and discuss our current problems since the last meeting. And ah....it was very fruitful. You'd ah....you know you....somebody would get up and say, 'Well we've got a bunch of forgeries on General American Pipeline'.... or whatever you know. And maybe somebody else would speak up from Texarkana, 'Well we got those folks in jail, they arrested 'em yesterday afternoon, found a bunch of checks on 'em'. This wasn't unusual for this to happen. But we started having these meetings every once....the first....second Wednesday in every month. And ah.... we had 'em plumb up until the time I retired, I think they've quit having them now. But we finally decided that every time we'd meet in Marshall, for instance, we'd had the biggest attendance. And we'd go to Many, Louisiana and to Tyler and to Carthage and Texarkana and just eat lunch and discuss our problems and then come on back and go to work you know. And ah....Marshall was more centrally located for everybody. The

Louisiana and Arkansas officers would come and we had a better turn out, so we met there regularly. So the second Wednesday in every month for the last oh... seventeen, eighteen years I was a Ranger, if I could we was....I'd meet with them. And I'd just get up and start the program you know. We'd each get up....stand up and introduce ourself and tell what cases we worked since the last meeting and sit down. And we'd nearly solve a crime nearly every time we'd have a meeting and we'd had good attendance.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would Max and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:and Red....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the Rangers....Max and Red and ah....Doug Clark and ah....ah....whoever was in, Stuart....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Stuart?

GLENN ELLIOTT:or Bob Mitchell and we had Rangers come from further than that away. But we had good Ranger attendance and we had good attendance. And people that was interested in solving cases and working.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You say they're not doing that now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I don't know why. I say no, I don't think they are, they just....it just kind of....you know what you had to do, I had to get on the phone two or three days before or maybe everybody I'd be talking to back and forth and I'd say, 'Don't forget the meeting next Wednesday you know, see you then and we'll just talk about this some more'. And ah....I was constantly pushing 'em you know. I... I'm kind of a pusher, you realize that. But we...we....I noticed here that I attended this Ark-La-Tex Peace Officer.....we didn't have any....no officers, no....nothing to do, just go eat and buy your own lunch and talk about your crime and get up and

go on back and go to work. Ah...I had a destruction of private property in Carthage, Texas in March of that year and I think it's ah...this is about time these Minutemen werethey was....they was doing a lot of circulating of ah...little old leaflets. And they'd set off some of these pretty....they'd get 'em a pipe bomb type thing, kind of a mortar type and then they'd put those leaflets in the top of it and they'd put some powder in the bottom and blow it up and they'd blow the leaflets all over town. Well they got too much powder in one down there and broke all the lights out of the Chevrolet house. It wasn't no big deal, but they thought....you know, seeing that homemade bomb type thing out there and it kind of stirred 'em up down there and theyand CarthageCarthage had called me anyway, they was looking for a reason to call me. And I was always willing to get down there and help 'em anyway. I assisted Shreveport police department in a robbery investigation during this time. And ah....ah....had a murder in Kilgore ah....and we made a case ah.....on ah.....a hair.... a hair from a victim on a hammer. And ah....and of course blood too and this guy copped out to it after.....when we went to talk to him. And the police had talked to him several times and he didn't know anything about it and they finally kind of hit a dead-end and they called me. And that happened pretty regular. Most of these agencies were try like the dickens to solve a crime and if they didn't well they'd see....maybe see it sliding away well they'd call us to come help 'em you know. And a lot of them would call us when they first ah....you know, we'd be there at the crime scene, which we liked to do. Ah...I was over at Tyler assisting in a capital murder investigation, I think that was over in Smith County. Ah....arrested two for a burglary in Kilgore. Recovered some property for Longview. I assisted Longview police in a kidnapping and rape case, this was an interesting case. It was a....this woman was visiting here from Illinois and she was going to a laundry mat on Mobberly Avenue and this guy saw her go in the laundry and he was just driving up and down Mobberly. And he

abducted her and carried her down in Panola County. And we lost the case in court, but we worked on this thing hard and ran him down. And he was a roughneck for ah...ah...Marshall Exploration at the time. And old Rusty and them helped us find him. And ah....and he ran and ah...went off down to San Antonio before we got him arrested. He was married and lived down there pretty close to where he carried this girl, carried her down there between Beckville and Hwy 59. But he got stuck and he went up....he left her down there and she was scared to go....down there in the bottom and she stayed in the car. And he went up to this farm house and got this farmer to come down there with his tractor and pull him out. And ah....of course that weakened our case, because the defense ah....but the old boy got caught later in ah....San Antonio and ah....for the same type case, just a few years later and ah....and ah....went to the penitentiary.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why did ya'll lose the case, what was the official reason?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well the jury found him not guilty. But this was.....the jurors said that was the reason, that she could of run you know and they thought she.....and he claimed....he got on the stand and claimed that she consented. He admitted it all happening. And we had built a pretty good case on him, but when this ah....man came and testified, and his son was a lawyer, and ah....and a friend of mine, but I think his son probably encouraged him just a little. But you know, he just told the truth you know, 'I went down there and she was in the car and she didn't say anything to me about being raped', and she didn't, she was scared to death. But she hollered rape as soon as she got back to Longview, Texas. He brought her back and put her out in Longview, didn't leave her out down there. Ah....and you don't win 'em all. Ah....I assisted Camden, Arkansas' Sheriff's office in a burglary investigation that year. The Governor is back in Carthage on the ah....April 19th. I go to Austin in April with some evidence in another case.

I...we was still working on this kidnapping and rape case. Went down to Nacogdoches and finally, of course, made a case on him, we thought we did but we didn't. I'm back in Dallas for a company meeting. In May I go to Carthage to the Grand Jury. Benton, Louisiana in a burglary investigation, recovered \$20,000.00 in property. Ah....made some arrests in a burglary case two days later. Back in Carthage another Ark-La-Tex meeting on the 10th. Ah....we tried the second ah.....this Stormy Summers, the female that was with the Canadian that killed Ms. Phillips, on a change of venue in Carthage in May of '78. And that took five days to try her. And ah....old Scrappy Holmes represented Stormy. And ah...I....we're....you say this ah....our German man was killed you think in October?

ROBERT NIEMAN: In October.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'm....I'm back in Marshall on a murder investigation in '77 and ah.....down to Jefferson. And we had another company meeting at Lake O' Pines in June. I went to Henderson on a robbery investigation on the 2nd June. And to Nacogdoches and ah....helped Kilgore quite a bit on this robbery. I assist Red River County in recovering stolen property, value \$5,000.00 To Nacogdoches to the East Texas.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what....what happened that you recovered \$5,000.00....what was that case, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't remember. Red River County is Clarksville, probably a old tractor would be my guess. Ah....cause I worked a lot of tractor thieves, I knew a bunch of 'em. And ah....I'm back in.....we have another meeting Ark-La-Tex on the 14th of June. Ah....I worked with the Secretary of State representative out of Austin on the 15th of June on a voter fraud case in Gregg County. And one of the letters that I got in the file is from him, I don't know whether you remember him or not. But ah....he was ah....he was scared to death, this old black

ah....community over here near Liberty City and it was a County Commissioner's race. And he had talked with the County Commissioner and he had it tape recorded, he was tape recording his conversation. And he was expecting problems and it wasn't....I got him to admit that he had all the Constables, the Sheriff's office and their ability to help and ah....and anyway, after this guy got back to Austin he wrote a nice letter to....in my behalf that he thought that I just stopped a powder keg that was fixing to blow up you know. And it was just a simple little old voter deal. And of course it was over there in an area that ah....they was all.... there was some of them carrying guns. And ah....I assisted Bossier City in arresting an old safe burglar named Stone here in Gregg County. And ah....I went to Nacogdoches to the East Texas Peace Officers Association and I was President that year of the East Texas Peace Officers Association. Ah....helped Tyler work a murder case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this the year then that ah....Clint made his request?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Must of been, yeah, yeah I guess it was. Yeah Clint....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what was that request?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Clint wanted....he...he told....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Clint Peoples we're talking about.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah he told me he had received ah....he'd received a....he'd been recognized by every police agency in the state and he'd like to be recognized....want to receive an award from the East Texas Peace Officers. We had about five awards we gave every year, at that time probably four. And ah.... of course anybody that solicits an award I didn't think deserved one and he didn't get one. Ah.... I arrested a....made an arrest for Midland County on ah....ah....penal mandate, it was a mandate they sent down from the penitentiary that he was to go. I haven't got....didn't write his name. And Orr City and Daingerfield doing some work at

time. Back in Dallas on the 1st of July and Henderson on the 5th. I arrested a suspect in a capital murder case in Tyler, for Smith County, on the 6th and took a statement. Ah....Carthage on the 8th. Worked a kidnapping case out of Colorado on the ah....9th. Ah....this was a funny thing. There was two guys....Carthage called me and this was a Saturday, July 8, 1978, and if you look on the calendar I promise you it was Saturday. And I got a call one Saturday morning and ah....Sheriff Claybough, this was the Sheriff that walked into the helicopter blade later, and David Claybough was Sheriff. And David hadn't been Sheriff all that long, probably since the first of the year. And ah....he had two guys down there that had ran their cars off in a ditch down south of Carthage and they.....the officers went down there and they told 'em they'd been kidnapped in Colorado and held hostage and driven to Texas and that this guy ran off and tore their car up and they was both locked up in the trunk. And they had put a story on that Sheriff and them and it was just unfounded. And ah....so they had two FBI agents they'd called them and I got down there just as soon after the FBI, I think they got there right after I did. And ah....since there was two of them I said, 'Ya'll take one of them and I'll take the other and we'll talk to 'em'. So they got theirs and went down the hall....the room and I got mine and went in the Sheriff's office somewhere. And in about ten minutes well he decided he wanted to tell about it. You know, here we're talking about July and they're trying to convince me, he was, that they were hauled out of Colorado, across Oklahoma and Texas in the trunk of a car, in July you know. And you know, I told him right quick you know I said, 'Son you must think we're stupid down here', and I said, 'You're just lying through your teeth', and I said, 'You're going to have to tell the truth and you're going to have to tell it pretty quick'. Well he said, 'I'll tell him....let me talk to my partner', he said, 'You're right'. I went down there and knocked on the FBI door and of course they're getting all....writing all this down you know, every move he made, they done got....into

Oklahoma and they just....you know, and they're good guys, but they approach it different than me. You know, I knew it was unfounded, I mean it was impossible for a guy to stay locked up in the trunk of a car. And they finally got to it, 'There was one of us in the trunk all the time and the other one was up front and he was going to do this and that'. But there's no way anybody can live an hour in the trunk of a car in July you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Not in Texas heat.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. So....and it was hot then. So I went in there and that guy I said, 'This guy here wants to tell the truth and he wants to talk to his buddy first'. And of course they both set down and of course the Sheriff filed on 'em for giving a false report and fined 'em \$200.00 a piece, or the Judge did. But that was an interesting case and we took the rest of the day off you know and went on about (tape ends). See it's not unusual for somebody from Oklahoma....Sugar Smith call me from homicide in Oklahoma and say, 'Glenn I need some help you know, and will you go into Dallas and I called up there and everybody's busy'. And I said, 'You know, tell me what you need Sugar'. And so he did and I went to Dallas and did it you know. And ah....cause he....you know I got a lot of help out of Oklahoma and that's how you get help from these other agencies you know. Ah....and....and went ahead and arrested a fugitive on this case for them. Of course we....see if you arrest on somebody from out of state warrant well you got....you know, we've gone through that....you're really supposed to get a fugitive warrant, that makes it good and legal. And you've got warrants of your own and you take him into court and you're charged with....as a fugitive from the state of Oklahoma and ah....and you've got something to back up....you've got something to commit him with in a jail, other than a teletype. Bossier City, Louisiana called and wanted some help on a burglary investigation. And I went to Overton and worked on that. And Carthage had another murder. I recovered some more property over in

Marshall out of a burglary, \$10,000.00 worth. Tyler for a polygraph on this....afteronce you get into something like that you just stay after it until you get it done. I'm going to try to get us through ah....yeah we got plenty of time. You....you still staying awake all right?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah I'm still awake.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I worked another burglary case over in Henderson. And I spent some time in court in Longview and back to Henderson and back in court in Longview in July. And to Dallas on the first of August and then on to Paris for firearm training and I spend the night. We always enjoyed our firearm training up there at Paris. We shot out there at Camp Maxey. And ah....ah....you know I was stationed in Camp Maxey for about two weeks during World War II and then it was closed. And we'd go up to my place after....oh not this early, but we'd generally get somebody up there that would do us just like we do over at Kilgore, some of Frank Kemp's friends would arrange for us to have a meal out there. But.....and we just quit going to Paris because they're better facilities over here mainly, in Kilgore and it's hard to even get in and out at Camp Maxey if it rains any at all, those old roads get muddy up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interrupt you. Frank had people up there to do that and I'm sure the people in Tyler would do it or anybody.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Tyler wasn't bad, we didn't have.....our Rangers didn't do their PR work in Tyler like they should.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well though, don't you think....did it cause resentment among you know, the narcotics people or the Highway Patrol or the investigators, that....even today, I mean, the association at least here in Company B's area, is real, real active for the Rangers. Do you feel that it caused resentment among the Highway Patrol and these other agencies, you know, hey we're policemen too you know, nobody does all this stuff for us like they do the Rangers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I don't think it does. Well they do....they do for 'em. They ah....they....in fact we generally ask the Highway Patrol to come, I'm surprised that some of them don't come over there. There have been a few over there you know, but not many. We've had 'em a time or two. They have their.... they have their day too. But I never have had any resentment from them, I don't think, not openly, I never did know of it. They was ah....you know the DPS has a general rule....and I see it getting away from it a little bit, but we're a pretty close knit people. Because most of those patrolmen want to be Rangers you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I realize yeah, ya'll are, but I'm talking about....really I guess I'm talking about more the association now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....you know, the Ranger Association. Now I don't know that you have a Highway Patrol Association or....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no we don't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But anyway, we'll come back to that after your retirement, I want to get into the association.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, if they resent it....if they resent it I don't....I don't know about it you know. But I think I would

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't think they would resent the Rangers as much as they might resent the association.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or question, why don't we have something.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well now see they.....they got their.....they decided to get their DPS Troopers Association, but they're going out and trying sell stuff you know. And of course the folks that's doing the selling is getting about 90% of the money you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, they called me all the time and I....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Listen, don't send them.....don't send them people nothing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh I just....I say, 'Hey I'm a member of the Texas Ranger Association and everything I got goes to them'. And that ends that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....I instructed another police school in August of that year. Ah....and old Lester, my sergeant, came down and took inventory of my equipment on the 8th. I spoke to the ah....Government class at Kilgore College on.....I mean Carthage Jr. College on the 9th. Left there and went on to Marshall and worked a burglary. I'm in court in Henderson on the 16th. In Marshall and Tyler assisting Hot Springs, Arkansas on a burglary investigation on the 17th and 18th. In court in Longview that same week.....next week. Ah....El Paso officers came down on this case we talked about last week and we ran this search warrant and recovered that belt buckle. Ah....and I assisted the Hot Springs, Arkansas police officers in an investigation. Back in Dallas on the 1st of September. Got another murder in Kilgore on the....on the 5th. Ah....Winnfield, Louisiana wanted some help on a theft down in Panola County on the 7th. Ah....I'm over at Gladewater recovering some property for Smith County on the 8th. And I go to El Paso on the 11th to court to try that case out there and I'm out there the 11th, 12th, 13th and 14th. Return to my station on the 14th and we flew out there. Ah....on the 15th I'm back over in Kilgore and Gladewater trying to recover some more stolen property. Ah....on surveillance until 3:00 a.m. and we arrested and recovered a \$30,000.00 piece of oil field equipment, and this is on that Houma, Louisiana case that we talked about down the road. This piece of equipment came

in here, it was a big old compressor, oil field compressor, and it was stolen....actually it was ah....it wasthe Sheriff was holding it in a repossession sale down there and the Federal authorities were involved in it. The Marshal's office they was involved in it and they had the thing stored. And it was stolen from storage down there and they tried to sell it around here for three or four days and I knew it was around here somewhere but we couldn't find it. And anything as big as a compressor you'd think you could find it. Cause you know how huge a big gas compressor is. But anyway, well we finally got....found out where the truck was and we put it under surveillance and we followed it out here on the Pine Tree Road, north of Longview, and arrested three people and recovered the property. So I had to go down to Houma. And I flew down there to New Orleans and ah....investigators came up and picked me up. And ah....I didn't want to stay in Houma, Louisiana and I didn't....I testified in court the same day, I got down there early in the morning, I think I got in Houma around ten o'clock. I flew into New Orleans and they picked me up and I got an early flight out of Shreveport. No wait, I guess I spent the night in New Orleans, that's right I flew out of Shreveport late in the afternoon and spent the night in New Orleans and he drove over and got me the next morning early. I testified in court and he....they already had me a room and we got through with court about four thirty and ah....I told that investigator, I said, 'Man'and he said, 'I'll take you to the motel', and I said, 'No I got a better idea than that', you know, seemed it's about an hour and a half drive from Houma to New Orleans, does that sound right to you, you've been down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, yeah, yeah I've been there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah..... I called

ROBERT NIEMAN: Go down Hwy. 90.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and I called the airport and made reservations and we was running a little bit short of time. And them Cajuns you know, they're just slow. That boy's deputy he wanted to go by and pick his girlfriend up and she was about eight months pregnant. And then we got in traffic. To make a long story short, I get into New Orleans and they've already shut the door on the plane. And I'm running down through there and I had the lady there at the stand contact the pilot and tell him to you know, hold it I needed to go. And it was funny, we didn't even.....we had to stop in Baton Rouge and then Shreveport and they never did serve any drinks on the plane and I was tired and I lost my badge in the court room, it came off my shirt when I got off the witness stand. I didn't know it until I got back home. But I called back down there and they retrieved it for me and sent it to me. But ah..... I got out of there and come on home. Man, you know, who would want to spend the night in Houma, Louisiana. Would you?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No way. Ah.....so I got.....let's see ah.....I'm back in court in Tyler on a murder case for three days in September. Back in Dallas on October the 1st. And ah.....Kilgore and Henderson on the 3rd.....October the 2nd, the 1st must of been on Sunday. Ah.....and I'm in Gregg County on a questionable death investigation. We get involved inespecially after I got this blood school, I did a lot of.....if there was any question about.....you know you could..... I could take them blood spatters and what training I had in that thing and reconstruct pretty good. And I got called on a lot, and that was good see. That's.....that's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you get called all over the State?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....well no, I didn't get.....see we had some more people trained by then and Charlie Neal.....but I've got called up to Rockwall and Plano and up in that area you know during this time and ah.....trying to reconstruct and it was interesting. And that's the reason that

the Rangers really could shine just a little bit, because we.....we've tried to stay at.....go to the latest schools on things, had somebody trained in nearly every area and every company you know. And ah.....and we were available to anybody and they'd call you. Ah.....had a court of inquiry ah.....on a death here. Ah.....ah.....worked a missing per.....another missing person in Marshall. I went up to Lake Whitney and attended a Company F meeting on the 17th and 18th of October. And ah..... I was discussing some active moving burglars, safe burglars, that we were working and I spoke at their Company F meeting. Bob Mitchell was the captain down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ask you....interrupt you. You're at Company F's company meeting and let's say it's one of their qualifying days, could you ah.....say you knew well hey, you know, when we have our meeting I'm going to be out of town, could you go ahead and qualify with them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, oh yeah. In fact I've qualified with 'em down at the ah.....ah.....oh that big ranch down there by Kerrville, the ah.....ohI'll think of the name of it in a minute. I've gone down there and shot with them at ah.....you know, qualified down there and just mainly to get out and go down there and be with them you know. But ah.....they used to.....they used to go there to shoot all the time. It's.....oh what's the name of that big ranch down there at Kerrville? It's ah.....it's nine miles from the highway to the front door of the ranch house.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm not familiar with it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it's ah.....oh this old boy, he's a big Ranger buff and got a bunch.....I'll think of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know who you're talking about, but I don't know the name. Well did you.....did you ever put onor shoot just for the.....for your own fun or did you just shoot at the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. I didn't have time Bobby. I just didn't have time. I....I used all my time trying to do my job you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was just thinking like when you and Red would meet, or you and Bob.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Very seldom. We'd shoot a little up at the lake when we first built that cabin up there. We got us a target out there and shot a little bit. But I could generally shoot about the same, I still do, just about the same all the time. I.... I....I've been fortunate that my health's been good and I can hold a pistol firm and I can squeeze it off. And I never did ah.....want to beshoot in competition cause it takes up too much time and you got to practice all thatand then you got to go somewhere to do it and come back.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you didn't enjoy just shooting for the sport of it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, huh uh. I just..... I love..... I enjoyed working criminals, I just enjoyed the heck out of working a damn criminal case. It was just like working a puzzle. And I'd a whole lot rather been doing that as shooting a pistol somewhere or out here shooting the bull somewhere, and I'd shoot that pretty good as you well know. Ah.... I'm back in court in Longview in October. Ah.....and I'm up at Emery on an investigation up there. Ah....ah.... go to the Ark-La-Tex Peace Officers.....had an old thief up in jail up at Denton that they had in jail up there that I knew from down here for armed robbery. And ah....he was wanting to cop out but he didn't want to cop out to anybody but me. And this is not unusual. I mean, the next time it might of been somebody down here from Denton , 'Well I'll tell old Wilman Lucas about it, but I don't

want to tell you about it'. Well what do you do, you get on the phone and Wilman and say, you know, 'I got a guy down here that's wants to tell me about an armed robbery but you treated him right and he wants to tell you about it'. Well you know, Wilman's going to get in his car and come down here, just like I went to Denton. This boy had ah.....oh he'd robbed and kidnapped a woman andand.....and made her perform some sexual acts on him and it was a prettypretty tough case. And that had him screwed down pretty tight, but they....he.....but she was having a little trouble identifying him, this all happened at night. And.....and ah.....he told me all about it and....and ah....you know we worked out a plea bargain, that's what we're trying to do, and did. And so this wasn't no.....any problem at all and you don't mind doing it. I'd of gone to Tishomingo, Oklahoma just as quick as I went to Denton, Texas if somebody called me you know. Because you.....you know, chances areI felt like he'd committed some robberies down here. He hadn't but ah.....and then later his ah....his brother got nearly beat to death down here after he got out of the penitentiary. And ah.....and he was in Shumpert Hospital over at Shreveport and the boy called me, this same boy and said, Mr.....can you come to Shreveport I need to talk to you'. Well Ihe knew who beat his brother nearly to death and told me all about it you know. The only thing about it, he was going to go kill him you know. And you know, I told him what was going to happen to him. I said, 'You know, the old boy needs killing probably', but I said, 'You know, you're going to go back to the pen again and especially since you done told me you're going to do it, you better hope he don't die'. And ah.....I assisted the Louisiana officers again in a theFort And I went back to Paris for firearms training again. Ah.....I'm in court some more that month and we're.....let's see.....the last of ah....ah.....there's something here that I I guess I covered that. Ah.....went up to Sulphur Springs and ah.... and old boy here carried me up there and we recovered some property of an old safe burglary

that we was working named Dennis Wayne Taylor. And he had a check writing machine that he'd ah....he'd been using that his girlfriend forged a bunch of checks and he carried us and we recovered it. Ah....I'm down at Waskom working on a theFort And the Grand Jury in Marshall. And to Palestine and recovered \$12,000.00 worth of stolen property. And Marshall and Carthage on a theFort To Austin with a crime analysis ah....ah....Captain Wilson called and wanted us to set up ahe wanted me to come to Austin and work a crime analysis on some active offenders that I had been working. And so I spent a couple of days down there then. I assisted Ranger Charlie Neal in recovering \$10,000.00 worth of property from Lufkin. I assisted Dallas PD in a burglary investigation for a couple days. And Longview PD in a murder and suicide. Ah....I'm trying to think of what that was too and I can't I can't remember that case. Somebody killed somebody and then killed their self. And ah.....and we.... I worked the thing I'm sure on ah.....on trying to prove that it was murder and suicide rather than somebody

ROBERT NIEMAN: Have you still got those case files if we need them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'd have to dig 'em out and I probably can find them. I imagine they're in there some where. And then ah.....Stuart Dowell called and asked me for some help on a murder case . Ah.....and then Iwe worked some more on Charlie Neal's problem, recovered a \$30,000.00 tractor and another piece of equipment for him. I think that first time we recovered the truck it was stolen on. Ah.....and then we recovered another \$20,000.00 and another \$3,000.00 worth of property the same month for Charlie in the Kilgore area. Then the last of November I'm in Grand Jury in Marshall. Ah....I'm assisting Mansfield, Louisiana in a theft . And back in Dallas on the 1st of December. Ah....went to Oklahoma City on the 5th of December. We had athis is a murder I think I was helping Stuart on. And it happened over in Rusk County. And we had a suspect named France and ah....he had killed an old couple over at

Marshall.....over at Henderson and he was a rodeo hand. And he made all the rodeos in the country and he got to where he couldn't ride any more much. Andbut we did some research on him and he was....he was making the rodeos and just feeding the livestock and helping take care of 'em for pay. And this was the coldest dad gum December. Oklahoma City was covered with ice and we stayed up there the 5th, 6th and 7th, Max and I did. And we.....and we was in behind the chutes, the National Finals Rodeo was going on up there and we was in there behind the chutes all the time with those cowboys looking for this old boy. And ah....and

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you find him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. He later showed up ah....ah....we later arrested him out in Wyoming or somewhere, at a rodeo. But ah....we went up there, they sent ah.....well I'll tell you what, the National Finals lasted all week. And Stuart and Joe King, Chief of Police.....no one of Joe's men, relieved us and ah.....up at Oklahoma City, we stayed three days and they stayed three. I think it lasted six days. Ah.....I made an arrest for old Bill Gun, a Ranger down in Company F, on a burglary. I worked a double murder in Rusk County. This man and his wife that ah.....we're just about through . Let's talk about this one a little bit. There was a....this was an interesting case. And this was another case for the same District Attorney over there right.....that was over there with the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. And he was....I don't know....he just....he was a strange guy. He and I got along pretty good. But we got over to Henderson and I don't know where....Stuart was out of pocket somewhere and I don't have any idea where he was. And anyway ah....this is a man and wife, he was a CPA from Dallas and his had rheumatoid arthritis just terribly bad. And they wanted to get out of Dallas and he was a Director in one of the banks up there and he would go into Dallas one day a week and attend to business and come back home. They bought about fifty acres just outside of Henderson there

pretty close to the Country Club on the opposite side and they built them a house right in the middle of it, nice home. And their grandson had been visiting them and he was on....he was a dope addict and ah....and he had been around there visiting and....but the yard man found the ah....the man and wife laying in the floor in the house. He...he saw a window broke and he see looked like one of them hand sticking up in the hallway and he went on in and they both shot to death with a shotgun. And right away this....this.... this grandson was a suspect. In fact ah....we spent about....the biggest part of the day in the house doing crime scene search, myself and ah....ah....the investigator for the DA's office, and the current Sheriff over at Rusk County. And ah....we found some handwriting.....there was a note on the front door to the yard man, said 'We're gone on a trip and we'll be back in about a week', and they're Cadillac, pink Cadillac, was missing. And ah....they had backed into a post, somebody had when they was leaving, and ah....in the Cadillac, and it was later recovered in ah....Fort Worth at a bus station.... near a bus station in Fort Worth. And this grandson was later arrested in California. But we worked on that pretty heavy and we took this note and ah....that was on the door to the yard man and ah....and our....went through a scrapbook that this lady had and found some handwriting from this boy and I took it to Austin and they made him on handwriting, cause he wrote the note.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you remember their names?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....Memmier, yeah I can find that case. And he was a devil worshiper and he had ah....in fact he....he had a....he was staying in their guest house, they had a guest house. It was....boy it was a nice, nice, super nice place. And ah....he stayed in the guest house and he had been reading a bunch of devil worship material, left some of it there. And he even stole some of ah...ah....chess....ah...whatever you call them, the things that you play chess with you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Chess...well you pawns and knights and queens and kings.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. He stole some of those and carried them with him. And we made a case on him and got him arrested in California and brought him back, and we had a case made on him. It was....there wasn't any question about it. And ah....you know he ah....the DA let him plead guilty for I think twenty years. Killed his grandmother

ROBERT NIEMAN: Which let him out when?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he got....well the good....the good side of the story is....that's the bad side, the good side is he got killed in the penitentiary the first year he was down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how long would he of stayed, if he'd of.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Probably stayed....at that time probably seven, six or seven years on a twenty year sentence. But I worked a lot on that case there, a whole lot and ah....in this murder case and ah....and you know wewe get all this evidence and we interview some people that he had ah....you know....his motive was to do this you know. And ah....so he still....when they arrested him out there they recovered some of these pieces of chess that he had taken, he still had them. He had a girlfriend.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet he took the palatine, the black knight.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Yeah, he had a girlfriend out there that he had told about this and she came and testified as a witness for us too. Ah...I had another hearing in court on the Corley case down at Henderson on the 15th of January. Corley's the one that killed the man.....the woman and little son...dau...son and then the two women over in Tyler. And ah....that pretty well ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we've got somewhat really mirror in....I don't....let me dig that file out and we'll do it next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I can't remember....you said it was in October?

ROBERT NIEMAN: In October.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I looked in October here, I was trying to think. In October I was try.....March...oh yeah, I tell you what....this 16th of October I opened that case as a missing person case when I first....see cause he was missing, you remember?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....we opened that and that....so II think that you're going to find that was on October the 16th. Yeah we'll get into that next week if you can find it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'll dig that file out and we'll do that pretty good and get Donna in here and we'll do that case real well.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah we can shut....we can start off next week on it. I think I'm just going to start bringing my reports and go through them, cause it's just about as easy to do that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That'll be fine.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....I'm...I'm....see what I'm doing Bobby is just hitting the highlights on what I've been doing, I mean you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know we're going to have to use a lot of those reports when we really get into writing too on some of them.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, when we get....yeah cause this one Memmier was a good case, I mean this.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: M E M M I E R, Memmier.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm going to shut this off.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it was a dang good case and we worked.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, July 15, 1995, continuation on the life Glenn Elliott, I'm tongue tied to day Glenn. Ah...we're going to start.....we almost finished '78, we're going to go back and cover one case there and then move on into '79. And ah....this is a case that Donna and I, my wife, were involved in. I'll let you give the....you got your report there...on a Rudy.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah ah...well I....ah....Miser...or Meeser, how do you.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Meser, how's that spelled?

GLENN ELLIOTT: M E E S E R. Rudolph Joseph Meeser.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well...you want me....you want to go through it or do you want me to do it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...well ah.....I'll tell you how I got involved in the thing to start with. Ah....and I guess you'll notice here ah....ah....this first opened as a missing person and murder suspected. Of course what we had was a....we had this guy missing. But this is normal for me....the Sheriff from ah...Harrison County, Fletcher Shivers was Sheriff at that time, he called and ah....I think looking back at my reports that I was ah....ah....up in ah....Marion County for something and ah....doing something up there, I forgot where I was. But anyway, he called and ah....and asked for some assistance and got down here and we found out that this....this guy was ah.....well of course you know all about it, but ah....ah....he was working for a bunch of people in Switzerland I believe wasn't it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Holland.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Holland, okay. And ah....they had a lot of interest in ah....in this part of the country, in the mid-west, all through this

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now Rudy was a German.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But these people were Dutch.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....this was one of their ah....projects over here....it was a pretty good sized ranch, I don't....

ROBERT NIEMAN: 1,400 acres.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was 700 north of the I-20 and 700 acres south of I-20.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And he had ah....he was the manager and obviously doing a pretty good job from all reports we got. And this is kind of a complicated case really, but it...it came to light pretty quick and ah.....due to your efforts and ah....ah....what you witnessed and recorded. But ah....this was a typical get a call from a Sheriff, go to the crime scene.....seemed like I got there in the afternoon didn't I?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No.

GLENN ELLIOTT: The morning?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, it was night.....what...you know, I can give....if you want me to I can give a little background of what happened on the case. Or....or go ahead and then I'll give.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well go ahead and bring me up to date.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Well what happened, this Rudy Meeser was ah...he was ah....weird would be the word, I don't think he was dangerous but I don't think you would know that until you got to know him. If you didn't know him very well you could easily suspect he was a dangerous man. He really wasn't, but ah....he would do weird things. He was always under the impression that somebody was trying to steal from him. He'd prow around out there on that ranch two, three o'clock in the morning thinking people were trying to rustle his cattle. Ah....one thing that probably hurt him, he had very poor english and anytime something happened that he

didn't like or didn't understand the only....I think the only term he knew was, 'Oh that's shitty, that's shitty'. That's what he always...that's shitty. And ah....and he...he didn't.....he went out of his way it seemed like to antagonize people. But anyway, what happened that day, we ah....had lived on that ranch and it was out on Galilee Road, east of Hallsville when we moved down here and that was right during the second boom time here and there wasn't a place to be found anywhere. And there's an empty house out there and my dad talked to him and we moved into that house for a few months until we got a mobile home and then set up right straight across the street, on old man Cains property, right beside.....right across the street from the.....from the ranch. And ah.....one night.....and old Rudy was selling some cattle. Well there's a Quonset hut barn down there and we'd stored some mobile home air conditioners in that barn. And we saw 'em loading all those cattle up down there one morning and my dad told me, said, 'Better go down there and get those cattle.....I mean get those air conditioners because Rudy's getting ready to leave and we might not be able to get them'. So I went down there and Rudy wasn't there and there was this guy named Ben, and I can't think of his last name, it may be in that report. Ah....anyway he was sitting on the fence and they was loading these cattle and I come driving up and I said, 'Where's Rudy'. And he jumped off that fence and he says, 'He's not here', and I said, 'Well I come down here to our air conditioners out of that Quonset hut over there'. He said, 'Well Rudy gave me the key and told me to let you in there and get those'. So he opened that up and we went down there and got the air conditioners.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bill Thompson.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, his name was Ben.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ben? Oh I thought you said Bill.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No. Ah.....he was a County Commissioner or something over at Marshall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, you talking about the ah.....suspect.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, okay. I thought you was talking about the ah.....Ben Harbor.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ben Harbor. Anyway ah.....we got the air conditioners and they loaded the cattle up and they leFort Well that night I was in bed reading and Donna was still up and I heard an explosion. And she come running in there and said, 'Somebody's blown Rudy's house up'. So, went outside and there wasn't any fire. I couldn't tell what it was and I could still see.....it was dark but I could still see the house. But ah.....so I wasn't sure at all that it had been blown up. So we stood outside there for several minutes and then Donna went back in the house and I'm still standing outside. Well in a few minutes I see this car creep up over around that house. And I was driving a truck at the time and one of the habits I'd gotten into, when you're driving a truck you're just bored out of your mind, and one thing I did to occupy my mind I'd read license numbers. Well this T-Bird comes tearing down that lane from the house right straight at me. But I'm standing behind this fence row and I doubt if he ever saw me, but I looked at the license number and I read the number. And when I was reading that report a while ago I saw there where I identified that license number. And anyway, in a little while I went on back in the house and in a little while people started showing up over there. One of them I remember was Tex Hadley, the Mayor of Hallsville, and they started honking the horns and hollering for Rudy, hollering for Rudy. Well I get dressed and I go over there and there's some Deputy Sheriff's I think there and Mayor Hadley's there and what not. And ah..... I remember there was blood on the ground and they don't know whether it's animal blood or human blood, but they can't find Rudy, that's the thing, and the house had been blown up, it hadn't knocked it down but it had blown it up. It had destroyed the inside of the house. And of course I'm standing there and I start talking to this guy

and it turns out he's a Texas Ranger and it's you. And nothing..... I don't think anything come of it that night, or at least that I knew of it. But I went back home and I remember telling my wife I wasn't.....she wanted to know about the explosion and I kept telling her, 'Donna I met a Texas Ranger tonight'. I wasn't worried about that explosion, I met a Texas Ranger and that's what I wanted to talk about. But anyway, then ah....oh a couple days lateror I guess it may have been the next day, I don't remember, a Deputy came by. And I told him that I had read this license number and read it off to him. And then I didn't know what ever happened to the case. I knew he went to the pen, but I didn't..... I know heyou'll have to take it from there cause I'm out of it now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....what happened was, after we.....of course after your interview and ah.....and actually what happened, it looks likethis report.....of course I.....I worked so many cases and this one didn't take a whole lot of work you know. I mean, it was actually.....you.....you was one of the key factors to it being solved. But what happened was, he had advertised 400 head of cows for sale, 3 horses, a pickup, a trailer and some hay. And ah.... so this suspect in this case is Ben Harbor, Jr. and ah.....obviously.....well what had happened he came out and bought a bunch of the cows, a hundred thousand.....wrote him a check for almost \$100,000.00 and the check wasn't any good and he picked the cows up and carried 'em to the sale barn in Marshall. And I guess Ben's firstprobably what he was planning on doing is trying to make a profit out of these cows and then head the check off at the bank you know. But obviously he and Rudy got into some kind of a.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the way I remember the story ah.....of course this is the only one I've ever been involved with, so I remember it pretty well ah.....he went to Rudy and gave him the check, I think it was for \$100,000.00 and told Rudy to hold the check until the cattle sold. And

Rudy said, 'No, I'm not going to do it, you know, I mean I could of took the cows and sold 'em myself and madeyou know, I'm not going to do that'. And they got in an argument and I think he took what a ball peen hammer and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I hadn't..... I hadn't got a copy of this statement here with me but ah.....he ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he took a ball peen hammer and beat Rudy to death and stuffed him in the ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Put him in the air condition/central heat closet first.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And see.....and left him there all day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....and then of course the reason he ah....he set the house on fire is to try to destroy the check. And ah....and what had happened was ah....you know Rudy had a office back there where the old garage used to be and they had just sealed the doors off where the garage was and made an office. Well the explosion.....they used gasoline to try to set the house.....and it didn't set the house.....to se the house on fire, I believe that they put it out, it didn't burn.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he used too much I think, the gasoline, and it just blew itself right out, didn't burn at all.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And he had wrapped old Rudy in some ah....blankets and stuff and left him there in the....in thehe was in the heating and air conditioning closet. Ah....and anyway, but this explosion blew that wall out and the check blew out in the yard. And the firemen didn't find it, it was found the next day, one of the deputies was back over there and

.....and ah.....and the check was laying out in the yard. Well of course right away Ben became a suspect you know. And of course ah.....of course his body's still missing and of course that's the reason that I had captioned this thing a missing person at first and then after ah....ah....the suspect later admitted his part in it and ah.....yeah he was beat about the head with blunt object, several blows, and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was a ball peen hammer is what it was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's what it wound up to be. He was reported missing about 11:00 p.m. on 10-12-78, that's about what time you ah.....and ah.....of course they tried to blow his house up. And a lot of his ah.....and there was 322 head of mixed cows missing. Ah....we....they found some.....we found some blood there at the scene, wound up to be his ah.....hit with a hammer, beaten in the head with a hammer. Ah.....yeah this was a pretty interesting case. But you see what you got to do Bobby, we're not super people ah.....you....you.....your the first witness listed here and ah....because you.....you was the one that gave us the key to the ah.....ah.....to who we was looking for you know. And of course ah.....the people in Marshall were already cooperating with us too. They knew where the cows came from you know, the people at the sale barn. But ah....they didn't....you know, the fact that you saw that car coming out of there when you did, that was the main key. And ah.....let's see, I was trying to figure out ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I think he dropped the body down a well out west of Marshall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's where he.....he carried it.....when.....he had the body in the car when you saw him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum. I mean he was coming out of there doing 90 miles an hour.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And he carried it on down and it in an old abandoned well between here and Marshall and ah.....between your place and Marshall, which is not far from here actually right now. And ah....ah....I see Mike Bradberry is listed as a witness and he was the owner of the cattle barn at that time. And ah....in fact he ah....and he had told us that the suspect had brought the cattle in question to his sale barn the same day, to be sold, that all this happened. And ah.....they ah.....we got a sworn statement from another guy that ah.....he worked with the suspect all day on the 12th helping load these cows, was a holiday and ah.....this was a.....this was a very interesting case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think he killed him about eight, nine o'clock that morning, cause the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nine-thirty is what he told us.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Because.....well then I came down there to get that key from him it was before.....about a quarter.....about a quarter to ten o'clock, so.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he said he killed him about nine-thirty that morning.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well then he ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Went ahead and hauled the cows all day that day. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know that somebody had told me that he.....they never would of found the body probably, it would of been pure accident . And of course when they did.....when he did confess and show 'em where the body was at, I understand they had to use gas masks to go down in the well, that the body was extremely.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, see this was a.....well let's see, he'd been missing I believe ah.....well several days, let's see that report again there. Yeah, see I can tell when they ah....ah.... I was trying to see when ah.....when the body was recoveredon the 17th. So that's ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Five days later.

GLENN ELLIOTT:five days later, yeah. This is October, but it's ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That body was well

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah, that's ah....well that's still ah....getting pretty ripe.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But anyway, he confessed and I think he did what.....got sentenced to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't remember what.....

ROBERT NIEMAN:seven years or something like that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he didn't get much.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....well this was another case where ah.....this ah.....investigator for the District Attorney's office over there at Marshall was ah....he got involved in the thing and ah....of course he....he....he told him where the body was. But ah.... I don't know how come them to let him get off so light on that thing. He entered a plea of guilty I'm pretty sure, I don't think there was a jury trial.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah, he pleaded guilty ah....and he ah.....he was a County Commissioner or.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was running for County Commissioner.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Running for it, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Of course he didn't get ah....he didn't get very far.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But anyway, that takes care of my oneincident.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well we got that one in, in '78 . We'd ah.....ah.... I think we got on to those numbers.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We finished upwe finished up all the way through '78 I think.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: We're ready for '79.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We'll start out in '79. And ah....my reports.... I guess I must of taken off on the 1st because I show I'm in ah....Henderson for Grand Jury ah.....in the Memmier case. That was the case where the grandson had killed his mother and daddy.....grandmother and grandfather, you know we went through that over at Henderson and he left in their Cadillac and went to California.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah..... I went before the Grand Jury on the 2nd over at Henderson in that case and then went on to Dallas the same day to finish my reports. And ah....back into Tyler that evening ah....ah.....continuing this ah....investigation on this ah.....boy over at Henderson. Ah....I'm in Mineola and assisted Mansfield, Louisiana on a theft case on the 5th of January. In Austin on the 8th with some evidence to DPS lab in a murder case and remained in Austin overnight. Back in Marshall on the 10th. Ah.....had another murder in Panola County on the 15th and ah.....they called and asked for assistance on that. Ah.....while I was down there I arrested two burglary suspects for Panola County and ah.....or while I was working down there. What had happened, I arrested them up at Longview, but you get in an area like that and working on a case you know and all of a sudden well somebody will say, 'Glenn we got two old boys down here that may be',they could of been suspects in the murder or whatever,....'and we got burglary warrants for them and Longview hasn't picked 'em up for us, see if you can do anything'. Well I

come on back in here and ah....and get with the Longview officers and we run those old boys down you know and arrest them and I take 'em back to Carthage the next day when I go you know. And that's kind of how we..... I tried to help you know. On the 22nd I'm in court in Longview ah.....ah.....and I worked on a theft case while I was standing by for court. And ah....on the 29th I assisted Rusk County in a theft and recovered some property in Gladewater that was stolen. On the 1st of February I'm back in Dallas, every first working day of the month we'd go into Dallas and submit our reports and have a little company meeting. Ah.....and on February 2nd I ah.....Texas Department of Corrections had asked....had some internal theft and I can't remember it, but I worked in the Kilgore area ah....ah....that week assisting them, somebody from the TDC hadwas accused of doing something wrong and ah.....and I can't even remember ah.....the outcome of it. But this was not unusual, we worked real close with the Texas Department of Corrections people. On the 2nd.....on the 6th of February well Bossier Parish, Louisiana asked for some help on a theFort And ah.....we had an armed robbery over at Kilgore on the 8th and we arrested a suspect the same day, made a case on him. Back in Carthage on the 9th on this murder case. Ah....ah....on the 10th I get a call on another murder in Harrison County and this was a pretty.....a pretty good murder case here and it took some time to work it out. But it was real interesting.....a lot more interesting than.....we didn't know who did it you know. But, you know, I'd be working one case and get a call on another one you know. If it's murder well you pretty got to cut loose unless you got something just real hot. And this case here in Marshall on the 10th was a body that was abandoned ah....dumped out on ah.....the Tatum Hwy. just off of Interstate 20, they had covered with a army blanket. And no identification at all ah....he had been shot in the head and the chest with a 380 automatic.....a 380 automatic pistol. We got some....we recovered ah....we had an autopsy of course. And ah....he had ah....had a

tattoo.....homemade tattoo on his arm ah.....of some numbers. It wound up that it was his ah.....he was an escapee after we solved the crime, he was an escapee from a Tennessee Department of Corrections and it was his number, his pen number that he had put on his arm, homemade type tattoo. Somebody did it in the pen for him. And anyway, this case ah.....we worked several days.....no identification at all. All this rascal had was a key in his pocket, no money, no name, no nothing, but we found a key in his pocket. And ah....before we got him identified ah.....officially ah.....we knew who he was. Ah....but I got to kind of back up just a little bit.....we about to run out of tape?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I knew we wouldn't get far on that tape.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, we ready?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: What happened was ah....we was doing everythingwhat you're supposed to do on a murder, first if you can't identify ah....ah.....a victim, we'll you're going to have a hard time solving the crime you know. So.....(side of tape ends).....and ah....after the autopsy well we.....we've gotwe started digging. And so I take this key and go to a locksmith there in Marshall with it. And the key had a guys name on it like B.J. Smith, just around the key and I asked him if he could tell me what that meant. And this was a couple of days after the.....after we found the body and we was kicking around trying to do everything we could. And ah....he said, well he said some key.....locksmiths will get a dye, especially the older ones, and they'll put their name in it if they don't have a very big name and they can advertise. When they make a key, when they stamp the key in this dye it puts their name on the blank key that they're fixing to make. And ahhe said that's probably.....he said that's not a key maker, it's not the manufacturer of the key. And ah....because he knew keys and I asked him I said, 'Well you got

any way of identifying these people'. And he said, 'Well there is a magazine that's published somewhere up in Minnesota, I think St. Paul, Minneapolis, St. Paul area'.....and ah.....and he said, 'That's the only organization that we have'. And so he had their number and hehe was ah....subscribed to their magazine that they send out monthly. So I called up there and ah.....and asked thistalked to one of the people in this company and asked them if ah.....about this key, if they had a guy by that name. And they said, 'Yes, we've got a member in Memphis, Tennessee that.....by that name'. So ah....he gave me his telephone number and his address, so I called him next. And ah....and we're just talking about a key, I mean just a doggone ah.....a key to a door. It wasn't an automobile, it was a door key. And ah..... I told him what we had and he said ah..... I said, 'We've got a key here that's got your name stenciled on it, or what we think is your name, and ah.....your a locksmith and it's got 241, the number, on it and that's all.....and it's in a dead man's pocket'. And he said, 'Well that's probably my key', and he said, 'If it's got a 241 it can't have come but from one place in this town', he said, 'There's not but one apartment complex here that's got more than two hundred units in it and I do all their lock business for them'. And he gave me the name of it. Well of course what I do then, I contact the police department there in Memphis, Homicide Division, a detective, and ask him to go out and told him what our problem was and ah.....and ask him to go out and interview the owner of the business, find out who was living in the apartment in question and also interview whoever is living there and see if they can help us identify this body. Well he.....and of course we....like I said, we'd already had our autopsy and we'd recovered some bullets and we'd carried them to the lab and found out we was looking for a 380 automatic pistol andand.....even told us.....Savage I believe is what manufacturer it was. So this detective calls me back in about.....oh, four or five hours I guess, and ah.....he said ah.....yes ah.....the woman that lives there said that her brother named Tefeller,

and this is a suspect, and I'd already given him a physical description. And of course we didn't have a fax then where we could send pictures you know like they can now. And ah.... I gave him a good description of this guy and he said, 'You're describing her brother and he was here at her apartment about a week ago and he had another guy with him and she found out that they were both escapees from a Tennessee penitentiary and she told them they was going to have to leave'. And he told us what kind of car they was in and she didn't know the other guys name though, she didn't know his name. She just knew that he was an escapee with her brother, of course she knew his full name. And ah....she said that.....he said, 'By the way, she said they stole a 380 Savage automatic pistol from her while they was here'. Well that's what he was killed with see. Well of course we got in touch with the penal authorities down there and identified him right away, the other one you know, by name because they both left at the same time. And....and ah....so of course we've got.....we've got the body identified and we got a suspect, but we don't have any idea how they're traveling or where they are. She described the car, they was in a Ford automobile. And ah.....so about....oh in about this same time, just after we get the key identified and talk to these people up there, well ah.....we get a call from a FBI agent in Atlanta, Georgia and ah.....no we don't get a call from him, we get a.....we read a teletype that was sent out by the FBI that said ah.....the FBI agent in Atlanta, Georgia had a informant that told him that a female in a bar there in Atlanta had told him the night before that she had witnessed a murder where they threw the body outside the highway just off of Interstate 20 near El Paso, Texas. And so.....of course we're interes.....we get this teletype and ah.....of course we're a long ways from El Paso, but we've got our.....our.....everything else fits. So we contact this agent in Atlanta and ah.....tell him about our murder and of course he gets back with his informant and his informant identifies this female. And the FBI agent then goes and interviews her and she tells

exactly.....the army blanket thrown over him and the whole works you know and that he was riding in the back seat and the guy just turned around and started shooting. And then she helped unload him and then she and this guy went on to Atlanta and then she got away from him. And she had met them, she was an alcoholic, she had met them in a bar in Tucson, Arizona. They had left Tennessee after they got.....stole this sister's gun and went out in Arizona. And ah.....and they had ah.....ah.....met this old gal in a bar and told her that they was going toback to Georgia, so she decided to go with them. And they drank and raised cane all the way back and actually the murder happened over here at Marshall, but she thought she was close to El Paso you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now I can see how she missed 800 miles, you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, real nice girl. But anyway ah.....then ah.....she knew that ah....where this guy was there in Atlanta, she had seen him and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wait a minute, did she keep maintaining it was right outside El Paso?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well she.....she justshe didn't know, she wasn't sure where she was. She just got drunk and the last place she remembered.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Last place she remembered was El Paso.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah I guess that's it. And ah.....but ah.....she had....she knew that this guy had a sister there in Atlanta and knew where she lived so we.....we filed on him and they arrested him for us. But that case didn't stop there. This was a.....ah.....we went toold Bill Odom and myself..... who was later elected Sheriff.... and I went to Atlanta and Bill hadn't worked on it any, but ah.....he had a deputy there that had, had worked with me, but he was ah.....something was wrong and he couldn't go, he may have quit during the time, I think he..... I

believe he did. Anyway ah.....ah.....theywe got him arrested and, you know, I told ‘em I said, ‘You know, he’s in jail down there’. And soand of course they asked me if I’d go with him and I said yeah. In fact I tell you what, we left ah.....Marshall, Texas about twelve-thirty in the afternoon and we was in Atlanta, Georgia before ten o’clock, because we got stopped for speeding just outside of Atlanta coming in and ah.....we was doing pretty good and they was working radar and ah.....so we’d asked where a good place to stop after they found out we was police officers and what we was working on. And we stayed in a little old town just outside of Atlanta that night, just ten, twelve miles, and ah.....off the road, quiet night...and they told us.....and they called over there for us, had the radio dispatcher to tell ‘em.....and the kitchen closed there at ten o’clock, and we just barely got in there, said if you can get your order in well ah.....you know, but we made good time going down there. But anyway, we got down there and we found out that ah.....that the Daytona Beach, Florida officers were there to talk to him too. And he was also a suspect in a murder down there. And ah....they had, had a pharmacist that was jogging on the beach down there in Daytona Beach and had on a warm up suit and didn’t even have pockets in it. And they pulled up beside of him, in this old Ford, and ah.....that they was in when.....all the time, and pulled a shotgun on him and asked him for his money and he told ‘em he didn’t have any and they shot him. Well he didn’t die right away and he gave a description of the guy that done the shooting and the vehicle. Well ah.....they didn’t do much good with him and we were down.....we waited, we ah.....we got in there the next day and went on in there to the county seat. And it wasn’t in Atlanta, it was a little.....another little suburb of Atlanta where he was being held, I don’t..... I’m not familiar with ah..... I guess Atlanta was ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh gosh, you got so many around there, Dorville and Ellenwood

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, okay.

ROBERT NIEMAN:there's.....like Dallas, there's umpteen dozen of them.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway we ah.....ah....we had to get the evidence together they.....he still had the pistol with him when he was arrested. Ah....the back seat of his car, we recovered atwo slugs out of the back seat of the car that went through the lower part of the body. Ah....and ah....so we worked on that all morning and we got down there to get him about noon and ah.....the ah.....Daytona people were there talking to him. So ah.....we had to wait awhile and they didn't do any good with him much. And ah....so they went on back on their business and we picked him up and drove on back to Marshall. And when we got back into Marshall that night ah.....well they had turned his property over to me andand....Bill and ah.... I always went through everybody's property pretty good, because I wanted to see what they was doing. And I had talked to Daytona Beach, Florida and found out the date of their murder and everything and ah....and I don't know why they hadn't done this, but it.....it's just a good thing to look in a guys property, I mean you just got to do it. I like..... I love to go through a guys billfold and see who he's talking to and who he....pawn tickets and whatever. Anyway, I'm going through his stuff that night and I find a receipt where they had this Ford worked on the morning before the pharmacist was killed there in Daytona Beach and it was at a garage there in Daytona Beach. So he had property with him that put him in Daytona Beach the day of the murder and he convinced these policemen that he wasn't even down there ah....never you know.....and ah....or he tried to convince them. And anyway ah.....of course we went ahead and booked him and filed on our murder and of course you know, I think they worked out a plea bargain with him because he ah.....he had killed a guy, they was both escapees that needed killing you know. That's what I always say, if a guy needs killing it's not near as bad as killing somebody that don't need it. And anyway, I think he copped out to 25 years in the penitentiary or something. And ah....but I get a

hold of Daytona Beach and then I start talking to him about it and he admits to me that he.....they were down there. And ah....but that the guy that he shot and who he killed, he tells me that he done.....he was the one that committed the murder. And then.....and of course we had testimony from the girl that she road from Tucson, Arizona all the way back to Texas and he.....and all the way on to Atlanta with that guy and he wouldn't never even let this Tefteller, the guy that got murdered, wouldn't even let him drive the car, he done all the driving. And.....and of course the pharmacist described him too as doing the shooting before he died, we're talking about the guy that's still in.....that's in custody. So I get a hold of Daytona Beach, Florida and they ah.....they come on upand we got him.....we sent him on to the pen, he goes on to the penitentiary, he's down at Huntsville.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why did he kill his partner?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh they got in an argument. You know people like that it don't take much to.....they got in an argument going down the road about something and he just reached and got the pistol and turned around driving and moving down the road and got.....started shooting, and I think he shot five times. And ah.....they ah.....ah....we'd sent him on to the pen and so Daytona got real interested and ah.....and ah.....and they worked their murders pretty good down there and they get a lot of death penalties. And ah....so they decided to come up and talk to him themselves and try to resolve it and all. And so that was good. So they're working through the District Attorney and myself and ah.....so they agreed to come.....they're going to be in Longview I mean in Marshall, going to fly into Shreveport and an investigator is going to go over and pick 'em up and I'm going to.....we got a bench warrant from the District Judge in Marshall and I'm going to bench warrant this suspect out of the penitentiary and meet them in Tyler and they want to run him on the polygraph and ah.....to see if he was telling the truth about him being the one

that ah.....he was a passenger, didn't do the shooting like he told me you know. And well of course if you got somebody wanting to involve themselves in a murder you try to get 'em to tell you the truth. But if they don't then you need to get 'em involved some way or other you know. And he's just a guilty sitting over there riding as he was if he'd done the shooting you know. But ah.....so I took down what he told me you know and ah.... we took a statement from him. But anyway, they get up here and I go down and bench warrant him out of the penitentiary and get him about the middle of the afternoon. I think I'm going to meet them in Tyler at five o'clock and I'd already made arrangements, the polygraph operator was always busy over there, so he's going make an exception and run the case at night for these Florida officers. So they come up and ah.....we meet and ah....they run him on the polygraph and the operator says he's the one that done the shooting. So the officers get in there then and sit down and talk with him and he.....and he tells them, 'Yeah I did the shooting', and they took a statement from him. Well it's about ah....ten-thirty at night and I've got him and I've either got to put him in jail in Marshall and he was.....well what I did, I got.....and this is another way you can see we get along with TDC people real well. I called down to Huntsville and told them I had a bench warrant for him and asked them if they would move him up to Tennessee Colony for me at Palestine so he'd be handier you know, because I've got to go all the way to Huntsville to get, bring him to Tyler, well that's going to be another days work for me you know. And so they brought him to Tennessee Colony and ah.....the same day and ah.....so I bench warrant him out and so we finished over there by ten-thirty and they're on their way back to Marshall and....and ah....and so I just decided I'd take him back to.....down to Palestine you know. Cause Inot to far down 155 and I cut off down there and I got there a little before midnight. And ah....the Assistant Warden was out that night for reason or other and he said, 'Elliott you.....you can't bring him

back in here the same day', he said, 'Our computers would go crazy', he said, 'He's transferred from Huntsville up here today, you bench warrant him out and you try to bring him back in the same day', he said, 'I don't believe the computer could take it'. And I said, 'Well I don't want to I don't want to put him in jail down here', and I said, 'Why don't we just go in here and drink a cup of coffee and wait until after midnight and check him in and that would be on tomorrow'. And so that's what we did you know. But ah.....this is a..... I guess this is how the Rangers you know, could kind of shine a little bit. Because those Florida officers were very grateful for the assistance that we gave them. In fact I made three trips to Daytona Beach, Florida on that. I went down and testified at the Grand Jury and ah....then I went down and we convicted him, gave him a death penalty and then about a year later it was reversed and I went back again and we tried him a second time and they got him another death penalty. And as far as I know he's.....they fried him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well two questions, number one did Florida pay your expenses back and forth?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And number two what did they overturn the first conviction on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....you know it's kind of got by me a little bit, but it was some technicality ah.....some technicality. I don't remember just exactly what it was, but I know we had to go..... I had to go down there a second time and testify. Yeah, they ah....they paid my expenses, I flew out of Shreveport and they put me up and I stayed in Daytona Beach and ah.....the county seat was about fifteen miles from there. But they....and it....well it was right close to that race track, where's that.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, Daytona 500.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, where is it located do you know? It's not at Daytona Beach, it's close to some little town because you could hear the cars from the courthouse when they were ah....they was getting ready for a race one time when I was down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'd like.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Must of the been the Grand Jury or it might of been something else but on the trial but ah.... I know that they almost disrupted court.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they can get loud cause you know where we lived out there on Galilee Road, on Sunday afternoons when they was running those dragsters out there at Hallsville and that's....

GLENN ELLIOTT: You could hear 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN:five or six miles, but boy you could hear 'em loud and clear.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Well they was ah.....anyway ah.....it was a good.....it was a good case and we had real good relations with the officers down there and it's just a case that ah.....that wouldn't never.....another case that never would of come to light without a little luck you know. And this....this.....this female.....of course you know, we could of eventually probably found this old boy, cause we had him identified, and put him on NCIC and he had got arrested somewhere for something. But the fact that she came along you know and she didn't give this to the FBI, she gave it to one of FBI's informants you know and just running her mouth in a bar about this you know. She...and ah.....she had no.....but we.....we ah.....ah.....and we filed on her too. But she can.....and ah.....later two deputies went down and got her and another witness and brought them up and they testified in court up here for us. And ah....and I.....she wasn't down at Daytona because ah.....I don't believe. But ah..... I don't remember, but I spent.....it took about four days to try it down there and they put me up in a nice motel on the beach and ah....and it

went good and just another ah.....another routine case I guess is what you'd call it. Ah.....Clements must have been Governor about this time because I.....during this time I had to provide security for him on the 15th of February. Ah.....on the 16th.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let me ask you, you carry these Governor's around and I guess we've all seen movies about you know, the politicians, any politicians, usually you know sitting in the back seat with their henchmen or whatever in now. ' When we get to....up here to Longview you are going to see so and so and he's a heavy contributor or so and so don't waste your time on him'. Any of that type stuff ever.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I've heard every kind ofeverything you know that you could hear like that, conversations like that. But you didn't hear a whole lot out of Clements I'll tell you what. He washe was probably theand I liked him, he was probably the hardest guy to get along with, to haul, for security. He ah.....he was ah.....very strange about ah.....he didn't want the radio to interfere with him, I guess he was kind of like me, he was getting hard of hearing a little bit and he didn't want any distractions. And ah.....and he'd be having conversations with the people in the back seat about things like you were talking about. Generally it would be maybe his aide or something, 'Well where are we going now and who is this that ah.....now you're supposed to see Mr. Nieman', you know, 'And he's the head of the this and that', you know and they're getting ready for this deal. But Clements and his wife both were very strict about ah.....what we Rangers did. In fact we had to get some special radio equipment in some of the cars in the Dallas area where they could have an ear phone for the mike you know, for the receiver on the ah...on the radios because they didn't like any kind of interference. They didn't want any outside interference at all. And of course we had to have communications you know, cause you know, we got other folks down there for security, if they're going downtown for a

speech or whatever you know. And ah....but ah....he.....I liked him as an individual, he was a.....he didn't want you to initiate any of the conversation at all, which is real strange for a politician you know. And every other Governor I've ever hauled, I guess Mark White was probably the easiest one I've ever hauled. Ah....ah....he.....you know.....andbut there's a bunch of 'em just about as easy. But Clements was ah....he was business all the time, he was business from the time he got off that airplane til he got back on it. And ah....but he'd ask questions occasionally and ah.....and would initiate quite a bit of conversation if it was just you and he and maybe his aide, after he got his business lined up that he was going to do. But ah....mostly it was questions though about what he was doing down here and who's that guy up there in front of us you know. And he came up acting like he knew me and ah....you know, but ah.....yeah I've seen every kind of personality in the Governor's office. But ah...I would.....I'd say that probably a bunch of other Rangers would agree with me that ah....that he was probably the ah.....you didn't enjoy being around him like you did some of the others that would make you feel at home, make you feel at ease you know. You know Mark White.....that Mark White got in my car down here one time and I had, had my car serviced and cleaned up and some guy, I don't know who it was, who had put a beer can.....an empty beer can in the back seat of my.....back floorboard of my car. Probably another Ranger. And ah....and ah.....so we're riding around and Mark finds this beer can coming out from under the seat and he says, 'Ranger what are you doing with this beer can here in your car'. And I said, 'What kind is it Governor'. And he said, 'It's Old Milwaukee'. And I said, 'You can ask anybody in town, I drink Coors Light, that's not mine'. And he just laughed and he said he didn't care about it being a beer can in there and that you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Bill Clements.....see he always knew who the boss was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, yeah. There's no question about it, I mean you know, we....we knew and this....you know I'm.... it's hard for me to wait for somebody else to initiate a conversation you know. And you can.....especially.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet that was tough on you.

GLENN ELLIOTT:especially maybe if we're going from Longview to Carthage oryou know, somewhere like that you know. And ah.....cause I enjoy a conversation and....and....butand like I say, I liked Clements. I....I liked he had some good ideas ah....he.....he was pro law enforcement and ah.....but he was just.....he was just that way. And he still is I promise you, wherever he's at today he's not any foolish going on much around him, he's business. And his wife is the same way. Ah....on the 16th ah....Tarrant County... I assisted Tarrant County in the capital murder of a peace officer and worked quite a bit on that for about a week. I worked another murder in Harrison County. Ah....spoke to the Farmers and Ranchers Association. We was having a lot of tractor thefts in this area about that time. And we got a real good break on ah....I go to Atlanta on the 26th of the month, this murder happened on ah....on the 10th, so see it's sixteen days before we go to get this boy. Ah....come back the next day ah....brought two suspects back....yeah, this old boy was running with another guy down there and ah....he had....he had knowledge of the crime. And ah....on the 28th I'm still working with them and ah....ah....took statements from them about the crime. And ah....I'm back in Dallas on the 1st of March. And this is the same time that the federal folks are in here working on the Gregg County organized crime deal that they.....and I ah....I worked with the agents on the 2nd of March on a gambling investigation somewhere. I went to Austin on the 4th ah....ah....for an in-service school to instruct for a week. Ah....returned from Austin on the 9th and we had....made a gambling raid....I went to work at eight o'clock that morning and quit at 3:00 a.m. on the 9th. Left Austin

and they had a big gambling raid going on over at Gladewater and the federal folks and a bunch of our people and intelligence. And it wasn't anyway, it was just a.....it was a little old hop scotch thing that one officer could of taken care of. But I spent the biggest part of the night over there and was tired probably coming....being in Austin all week. On the 12th Caddo Parish Sheriff's office needed some help in a theft investigation. And I'm back in.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You spent as much time in Louisiana as you did Texas.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well anytime any officer called me from anywhere I'd....I'm ready to go you know and I want to help them because I'm going to be calling them one of these days and they better turn on for me. Ah...Hallsville had another problem over there, let's see, what was it ah.....destruction of private property and I never could figure that out. I went over there on the 14th and then I had to go on to Austin to instruct in this school. See we was in....half of us was down there the week before and then the other half had to go that week. Ah...ah....I was in....funny thing about this Austin deal, you know the bureaucrats....and we're part of it you know and ah....I go to Austin and to show you how....I don't mind letting folks know how I feel about things and I go down there instructing....go down for an in-service school and I've got to instruct in I think four hours. And they had me scheduled for two hours on Tuesday and two hours on Thursday. Well that was fine the first week, because you know, I'm going to be down there all week anyway...ah...maybe it was four hours, I think four hours each day. And ah....but then after....but while I'm down there I said, 'Now next week', I said, 'I've got...'...I knew I had to be back, but I said, 'I want ya'll to schedule me Tuesday and Wednesday, or Monday and Tuesday, two days in a row', I said, 'It's not right, you know, here I am I drive all the way to Austin and I instruct four hours on Tuesday and I got to wait until Thursday evening and instruct....', they had me in an evening class, 'four hours again Thursday and I hadn't got

anything to do'. I said, 'Ya'll change your schedule'. 'Well we can't do that'. And I said, 'Yeah you can do it', and I said, 'If you can't I'm going to go over to the head office and see if....get the Colonel and see if he can do it'. Because I said, 'You know we can't justify me being down here in Austin sitting around all evening Tuesday evening', because my class was on Tuesday morning, 'and all day Wednesday and all morning Thursday morning, instruct a class Thursday evening and then drive home'. I said, 'We can't justify that'. And I said, 'Ya'll ought to, you know, do your schedule better'. And they changed it, I promise you.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how many Rangers would of done that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't know, but you know ah....here's one that did because ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, but most of them would of just...well okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, sat down there and waited you know. Not me I...you know, let's get it done if we can. Ah....let's see ah....yeah we're....I'm back in Marshall as soon as I get back from down there the next day and we're just losing a lot of tractors. And we got a....and then Daytona Beach, Florida officers come up on the 31st of March and ah....and of course we worked this penitentiary thing out with them and do that. And ah....ah....Panola County lost some tractors too and we got a break in one of the tractors thefts up here at Longview and ah....yeah, I bench warranted Teffteller out on the 28th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that name, Teffteller?

GLENN ELLIOTT: T E F F T E L L E R. Ah...I worked from eight until 3:00 a.m. that time, see I get him back down to the penitentiary and I got to wait until after midnight and then I got to drive from Palestine home see. So that was another eight to 3:00 a.m. morning you know. Ah....this ah....we was working some tractor thefts here and another citizen involvement....I'm going to tell you how it happens....and we got to have 'em, man we....you know. Ah...it was right

out here on the loop, on 281 ah....there was a gentleman that's got a farm just south of Hwy. 80 on both sides of the road from the loop there. Ah....and I can't think of his name right now, but he'd ah....they ah....they came in there and our old thieves had a van type truck, they stole two tractors first out of Elysian Field. Loaded one of them in this van and the other one on the trailer and they was carrying all this stuff down to Louisiana. And ah....this ah....they backed in out here to his barn and they had a wench in their truck and they just hook on to that tractor and pull it up in there and shut the back doors and they're gone. But they backed into a ah....ah....fence post and they got some green paint on it, way up high, so that's how we knew they was in a van. Ah....it's a gate post and the gate posts were probably ten foot high above the ground and there was a.....had a deal across the top of 'em and ah....they backed into one of those gate post and got some green paint on it way up high. And so we got a sample of the paint and you do what you're supposed to, we started contacting everybody we knew and ah....Barry Henderson...not Barry Henderson ah.....hum....Barry Hale who is ah....runs the sale barn out here and still runs it, in Longview, ah.....I went by to talk to him about it and he knew this man and ah...knew him real well. And we let everybody that we knew, that we thought could help us, that we was looking for a van type truck painted green, obviously you know. And ah....so old Barry called me one day and he said, 'Glenn...', they were working on that Skaggs Albertson's building out here just about this time if you... and he said ah....they already had the parking lot finished and it may have been open, I don't know, but it hadn't been opened long, I don't think it was open yet. And he told me he said, 'I saw a green van type truck sitting out there today with Louisiana licenses and here's the license'. And so I called my friends down in Louisiana you know and I said I need a history on this car. Well at that time this is...Louisiana....this guy....this is old Guy Morgan again, the guy that I hauled out to West Texas you know, a couple of times and we set a

surveillance up on him and the guy, you know, took off and went to California and had to go get him, this is him, he's back out of the pen and he'sand ah....and I didn't have any idea it was him to tell you the truth. But we get this ah...I get this information back and I call Baton Rouge and told them I said, 'I want the whole history on this thingon this truck, complete from the beginning'. And ah....sure enough they sent me the....and one thing Louisiana would do on a commercial.....when you register vehicle you got to show your driver's license. And so they sent me this stuff back and they said this truck was registered by Reggie Morgan and Guy would always use a Waskom.....he get out....he'd rent him a post office box in Waskom and get all his mail in Waskom. He spent a lot of time in Louisiana and some in Texas and he always had him a post office box in Waskom. And this was registered to....the truck was registered to Reggie Morgan, P. O. Box 11....' and I said, 'That's got to be Guy Morgan'. So ah...they had a driver's license number on it, so I called back and I said....gave me a driver's license number and I said, 'Send me a picture'. And it was Guy Morgan using his brother's name, I mean, his picture just bigger than day. Well we got on to it real solid and ah....and got some more information, some good information from a source down at Metric, Louisiana, which is a suburb of New Orleans, and ah....we got close behind him. And I flew down to....well I got....we had this ah....this National Information Crime Center business that was getting in real good then and they....they ah....they came on with what they call a... oh I'm trying to think of the....it's a....ROCIC I believe is what they call it. And don't ask me what that means right now. But anyway, they organized this and it was a friend of mine from Mississippi, retired State Policeman from Mississippi was in charge of this thing. And he had called me a couple of times during the past year or two because their funds were about to get cut and Sam Hall, Jr. was on the appropriation committee up there at that time for this type stuff. And ah....and ah....this ah.... oh I'm trying to think of his

name too...Rex Armstead, Rex was in charge of this ROCIC and ah....and he had called me and I had called Sam, Jr. and told him I thought it was pretty good deal and they would fund it each year, they just fund it one year at a time. But anyway, I get hold of....during this investigation well Morgan is everywhere and ah....I get hold of Rex and Rex puts me....oh I'm trying to getknow who to contact in New Orleans. I did not have a good contact in New Orleans, Louisiana. I had some of the State Police there in Baton Rouge that I knew real well but they didn't have a....Louisiana didn't have a....they had a state's intelligence, but they didn't work criminal cases, they just worked intelligence information you know and I needed somebody working criminal cases. And they didn't have very many people either. And ah....so Rex puts me in touch with a guy in New Orleans and in fact he puts me on the phone and we got a....in fact we got about a four phone hook-up, first time I'd ever talked on one like that, you know a country boy, a Ranger. Anyway, well I make arrangements and I fly to New Orleans and get with them and they've got a sting operation going at the time. And it was real interesting and they carried me down there and they had a warehouse down on the bayou and they had been buying stolen cars and stolen tractors and stolen guns and stolen TV sets and they was monitoring and videotaping everybody that came in there. And I went....they carried me in around through the back door into the warehouse and into the video room and I'm sitting there watching these guys bring stuff in and sell you know. And they're real tied up and...but we get done what I need done while I'm down there see and they was fixing to get off of this thing, I think they was going to knock it off about two days later, they did and made a bunch of arrests there. And they said, you know, he's liable to come in here. And ah...but anyway we...we run down our tractors down there but ah....got some of them and got Morgan back....they arrested old Morgan. And ah....and this team had some federal people and some state people doing this sting

and ah....well it was an ATF agent assigned to them and when they arrested Morgan for me on this tractor theft ah....he had a pistol in his pocket when they arrested him and he was a convicted felon. So they....they ah....took him into federal prison and so we never did get him. He went ahead and went to the federal penitentiary.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I hope not, but I'm afraid he is. I think he's back in the pen, I heard that he's back in the pen again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well would he be habitual now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah. But you know I kept up with....I liked to keep up with those people, I'd keep up with them and when I was working I could of told you.....but he was in the pen when I went ah... but I have heard since that he's back out again and ah...and....and then back in again.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hum. What ah...you know, the city of New Orleans ah....here a few months ago was really getting slammed for being such a crooked police force.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. I don't know ah....of course this is....well we're talking about '78 aren't we, or '79.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '79.

GLENN ELLIOTT: '79. See I just didn't know any....I...I hadn't....this was the first....I had been down to New Orleans I believe last time going to Houma, but I always flew in there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You'd been down there what, a year or two before when you went to Houma.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I just flew in there and ah....but these guys met me down there, they guy that Armstead put me in contact with, met me at the airport, I mean I got everything I needed out

of New Orleans. They was having a big horse show down there and ah....and this guy....I had not made reservations and ahthis guy had a contact at one of the nice motels and got me fixed up with a room and the whole works you know. And ah...and then they was....they was....we got down there, of course he said let's go....this is the best place to go and we can be watching what's going on and we can discuss your problem with the other officers on this team. It was kind of like a special squad of people that was working this thing so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Like a Task Force?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's what it was. And ah....and it worked out real good. And ah...and let's see, on the 29th I work in the Overton area on a theft and I'm into Marshall on the 30th and to Dallas on the 2nd of April. Back in Marshall and I work in.....ah....a safe burglary over there, I think it was in a private residence as I remember. And ah....Kilgore had a burglary on the 6th and they called and ah....I worked over there a couple of days. And of course on the 11th we're back in Marshall for the Ark-La-Tex Peace Officers that I told you about. Ah....I assisted old Slick Alford on a....he...he got on the Rangers by then and he's stationed in Dallas, on a swindle investigation on the 12th and 13th. Had a questionable death here in Longview on the 16th. Can't remember that one, but that called me a whole lot on those questionable deaths to do the blood....you know....cause I'd had this blood spatter experience and the other experience I guess too. Ah....recovered a tractor on the 20th that stolen in Kilgore. Ah....in Tyler on the 21st and Marshall on the 22nd and 23rd, just...you know ah....sergeant was in town on the 25th. And then ah....old Jim Gant called and wanted some help on a forgery investigation, so the sergeant worked with me on that, helping Jim. I'm in Shreveport on the 26th on a burglary investigation, recovered some property out of the burglary over here in East Texas and made identification of a

suspect. In fact, I think that was the safe burglary that ah....in Marshall that I'd worked the week before. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what's happened to poor old Elysian Field, we haven't talked about them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Boy listen, I guess we caught so many people out of Elysian Field there that was doing things wrong and I don't remember even anything else happening there soon. I'm in Dallas on May 1st again. And back to Shreveport on the 2nd and recovered more property, \$10,000.00 more property out of this burglary in Marshall. Ah....back in Marshall on the 3rd on the same case, and you know, you just stay in an area while you're doing it. I'm in court in Panola County in the Grand Jury on the 7th. Ah....and arrested another suspect and recovered \$50,000.00 worth of property. That was one of those 8:00 a.m. to 1:30 a.m. days. Ah....to Henderson with a suspect in this Marshall burglary and he cleaned several burglaries in Henderson for me on the 8th. Ah...back in Marshall on the 9th and Carthage....back in Carthage on a murder investigation on the 10th and spent several days down there. Had a conference with a federal United States Attorney on the 14th in reference to this Gregg County stuff. And ah....this is when they was ah....this is when....the federals....we just might as well cut this up just little bit I guess, cause this is....probably the only time that I ever had any really disagreeable ah....contacts with any officers about you know... unless they was charged with a crime. Ah....these federal people had come in here and made this investigation in Gregg County in corruption and things was going on over here and then they'd ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is this the Tom Welch thing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you want to get some background on what happened with Welch and....or is this the time for it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't think so. I....I mean I....if I don't cover it now, of course I can cover it later but ah.....I don't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let's just go ahead and coveryou know, I mean

GLENN ELLIOTT: This was ah....ah.....Gregg County had, had a.....the federal folks had an undercover officer in here in Gregg County for several months and he had gambled at ah....at a gambling establishment out here in ah....off of the ah.....Alpine Street and he had played some poker andwith some boys in an apartment here in town, which wasn't actually a violation. And then we had another club over here at the ah.....the Hideaway Club, but I'd already got into that you know, that they was playing a little black jack over there. And ah....and ah....and then they had the old Pines Motel that we'd knocked off a dozen times.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that over at Kilgore?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. The prostitution was.....and ah.....(side of tape ends).....of course they did....they used the same tactics that any officer uses. They.....I assume that they had probably got a little bit heavier with it. Ah....theyfor instance there was a Deputy Sheriff, I never did ask 'em who, it didn't make any difference to me who did it, but ah....during this investigation here ah....they tried to set up two guys out here at the county barn, Precinct #1 county barn, to ah.....they told them there was some money in a safe out there. And this is the deal I told you about before where this deputy that.....no legs that we convicted for murdering the girl at the Pines Motel was....he was a dispatcher. Well this goes back to that and he was trying to set these guys up and ah.....and ah.....all this stuff and one of the deputies that was out there told the federal officers, and I'm sure that.....there was....they wanted me to be involved.

They.....this group that came in here, they was wanting.....and the United States Attorney, he was wanting to indict as many public officials as he could and....because he was wanting to run for Attorney General of Texas and other things. And of course this is a normal thing, I mean everybody's got ambition to do something and he was doinghe....he wasn't....he was a.....we're getting along pretty good in the evening. Is it eight yet?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Twenty til.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....he had ah....ah.....this deputy had told the federal officers thatthey was trying to get me out there involved in this county barn thing and ah.....and they.....he told one of the officers that I went out.....that I rode out there with the Sheriff one Sunday morning at six thirty and picked them up after they'd set up out there all night and brought 'em back to town, which wasn't true. You know, I told 'em I said, you know.....and this is exactly what I told 'em, I said, 'You know I don't I go to Church on Sunday', I said, 'A one armed, one eyed, black trustee could have gone out there and got those folks 'em to town and what reason would there be for me to get up and go out there with the Sheriff, to ride out there to bring three deputies back to town the next after they stayed out there all night waiting on these thieves'. And I told them, I said, 'Here's an example', I said, 'I've set on a surveillance with you people a many a time. Ya'll would come to Marshall, Texas, stay at the Holiday Inn on Interstate 20 and we'd get.....go to the Elysian Field Bank and set up all night waiting on a burglary', and I said, 'If my job would of been to haul the FBI officers down there and put them in the bank, come back and get 'em the next morning, I'd of gone home, I wouldn't of stayed with ya'll', cause I said, 'Anybody can do that, and no I didn't do that'. You know, and thenand then we had this boy that ah.....Mathis' accomplice ah....he had testified over there that ah.....a bunch of lies about Mathis' death and about ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this Larry Fyffe?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Fyffe , yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Fyffe.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Larry Fyffe, and he.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's F Y F F E?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I believe that's ah.....and he had ah.....and then two of Mathis' sons had also gave sworn affidavits. I never seen them, but they said that they did and I....I....I feel reasonably sure they did because ah.....they later ran them on the polygraph, after they talked.....after they got on me pretty heavy over there. I spent four or five hours with them, over there sparring with them about this foolishness you know. And ah....and it was all.... I knew it was all a bunch of lies you know and....andbut they didn't. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did the captain come over?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh the captain ah.....no I don't think so, I went into Dallas..... I notice here where I'm met ah...ah... I went into Dallas and conferred with the captain and the.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Burke?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....Chief Hacker and ah.....ah....Bill Wilson and Burkes, on the 16th of May and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'm getting you off your story here a little bit, but wouldn't something of thispotentially this serious.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I didn't..... I didn't need the captain over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wouldn't he come anyway, I mean I think something.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he wouldn't.....he'd of come if I'd of called and asked him to come, but the only reason I'd of needed him was to help me make a bond and I wouldn't of got.....I'd of..... I had friends if I had to make.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was just thinking that something of this potential.....this serious.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well he was available and ah.....but see I didn't..... I didn't realize what ah..... I knew that they were checking on us, but I didn't know it was this serious about it see, until I got over there. And of course after I got over there and met with them and talked, well then I got on the phone and called my captain and I said, 'Hell the federal folks are bent out of shape over here and they're wrong you know, and I'm having a little trouble with them and I want you to know about it'. Cause see I'm in.....I'm over at Tyler on the 14th and then I guess G.W.....I calledI obviously called him the same day or the 15th anyway to brief him on it, cause the 16th then Chief Hacker and Bill Wilson and Burkes and I meet in Dallas and talk it....you know and ah...and I give....you know, I gave..... I never didI never was subpoenaed to a Grand Jury. And then I testified later as a government witness, you know, on this case over there in federal court. And ah.....and I also testified as a defense witness later on because ah....they asked me if I.....cause this officer made an affidavit that I went out there and of course I didn't you know. I didn't go out there. Hell if I had I'd of told 'em, that's what I told John Hammer, I said, 'If I'd of went out there with the Sheriff I'd tell you I went out there, but I didn't and I wouldn't go out there with him again', I said, 'Ain't no reason for me to go out there with him'. In fact I had never been in a car with the Sheriff at that time ah....you know, period, for any reason. But ah...but I...that was ah.....that wasn't a good experience for me as far as.....and it....it's as close as I.....and of courseall right, I still got a lot of friends in the federal.... the FBI and had a lot at that time. And they stayed with me, they knew damn well that Iyou

know, that this wasn't right. And of course they ran these guys later on the polygraph. Well one of them....ah.....one of the kids made an affidavit, so I was told, that he was present when his daddy gave me \$25,000.00. And then.....and I asked this officer at the time, I said, 'Well let me ask you something', I said, 'Now let's justlet's just assume that that's a true statement', I said, 'Why would I want to kill the goose that laid the golden egg, you know, cause the man that's crazy enough to hand me \$25,000.00 you know, well why would I want him dead you know'. He said, 'Keep him from talking'. And of course we've got some federal folks that's ah....that's not all that sharp and this guy obviously wasn't and he.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Been watching too many movies.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. He took these stories andto be the truth and then they brought their own polygraph operator down here and they ran ah....two of them and the other one refused to take it and of course they lied, found out they was lying, so they just dropped the whole thing. But see they could of done that before they ever brought me over there, because it ah....ah.....it didn't help my relations with them at all I promise you that. And I busted my butt trying to help them solve crimes. And like I I think I told you the other night, every time they'd get a new agent in Tyler, Texas they'd always assign him to.....they knew vice was going on in the eastern district you know andand.....and eventually he'd come over here and he'd introduce himself to me and I'm working, you know, gambling and prostitution and I'd tell him every bookie, every gambler ah.....in Gregg County that I knew and where they was doing it or what they had been doing and....and ah.....you know, and I've worked with them you knowon surveillance with them of these places. And ah.....so they couldn't ah....in fact ah....at one time the Assistant United States Attorney over there during my interrogation he said, 'Well we're going to indict you for knowing it was going on and not doing anything about it'. And I said, 'Well you just as well get

ready to indict a bunch of FBI agents too', cause I said, 'I can give you their names', cause I said, 'I've been working with them for ten years and telling them everything that I know and they knew it was going on, cause I told them it was going on'. Of course that was just a bluff on his part you know and I don't know whether....he was just popping off.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you continue to work well with the FBI after that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, I did, I didn't..... I didn't like it but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But maybe not as much.....not as much spirit.

GLENN ELLIOTT:no I didn't like so much. But some of the officers over there I trusted andand worked with and....but here's the thing about it, you know if youto get the job done I could of said, no I'm not working with another one of those people and....and to justify it truthfully. But who's going to suffer from it, the people of the State of Texas are going to suffer becauseand so you know, that's who's paying my salary, so I can't let something like that get in the way of me solving a crime. Because let's face it, we used their lab a whole lot and we used them a whole lot, they had a lot of money to pay informants and we didn't have any and ah....and team work is....is....you know essential.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you were real sick during that period too wasn't you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: What?

ROBERT NIEMAN: You were real sick during that period too wasn't you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Thick?

ROBERT NIEMAN: The flu? Sick.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Sick? Oh I come home the night that they made the raids over here, I had been to Carthage.....oh I don't ever get to sick to work, but I couldn't even talk hardly. And they came and knocked on my door about ten-thirty at night and I'd been in bed for two hours I guess

and ah.....told me that they was going to make some raids and asked me if I wanted to go.....if I'd go with them. And I said, 'If you need me I will'. I just barely could talk above a whisper. And ah.....be glad to and they told me where they was going and I told them where to go. I said, 'You know you're not going to find anything at the Hideaway Club', because I said, 'I was over there two weeks', and I said, 'There ain't....you aren't going to find anything over there, no use of going there'. And they didn't find anything over there, they found out I knew what I was talking about you know. Cause I had got a complaint out of Dallas you know, we went through that. And ah....I'd already taken care of that. And they went out here and I think arrested four or five but it was just a formality. And I should of gone with them truthfully, I've thought after that a dozen times, I ought to have got up because I worked sick a lot in my life and ah.... I should of got up, but I was just so tired. I'd been to.....I'd been to Carthage and over to Benton, Louisiana and working a murder case down here at Beckville. For some unknown reason the Sheriff and them....they had a new Sheriff down there and ah.....ah....he had ah.....they carried the body into Louisiana to do an autopsy and ah.....we had to go to the hospital and to the morgue and....and back to Carthage and back home and....and ah....talked to an old boy in the hospital over there and I'd had a tough day. But I've had a bunch of other tough days that I worked .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Welch ended.....Sheriff Welch ended up in jail, Justice of the Peace Cashell.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....what was they officially charged

GLENN ELLIOTT: A couple of deputies. Oh ah.....they charged them under the organized crime statute or....RECO I think is what you call it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Racketeering?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, racketeering is what they charged them with. Ah....there was ah....yeah there was quite a few ah.....got in trouble over it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'll say this, well I don't guess we should say it on the tape, but ah.....you knew Charlie Martin, Real Estate agent?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I knew Charlie at that time fairly well ah....and ah....and Charlie knew Cashell, I can't think of his.....Bob Cashell's brother.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Charles.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Charles Cashell. And ah....Charlie told me he said old Charles come up to him and said, 'Man they got me on video tape taking money'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they didn't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They didn't?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he thought they did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. He ah....what they did.....well they might have too. What Charlie did wrong.....now this....you listen to this, now Charlie liked to gamble and he still does ah....ah....his daddy liked to gamble, his brother runs a casino in Reno, Nevada. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Called Boom Town, one of the finest

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Charlie.....what he got convicted of doing, there was two or three trucking companies around here that would call Charles and..... if they were going to hire truck drivers and he'd run a.....he'dhe would.....this is before you could get it out of Austin yourself you know. He would run a driving record for them and charge them \$5.00 for it, that's

what he was doing, that's what he went to the penitentiary for. Now that's a heinous crime isn't it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Not much money to go to jail over.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that's what he went to jail for.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now what did Welch, he went on racketeering?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well now Welch went on rack.....that's racketeering, Charlie was convicted of rack.....that's racketeering, that's what that was. They tried them all together see, they was all tried together. And now Tom needed.....Tom needed some time, Tom was a.....he made some mistakes and he knew he made some mistakes and ah....he.....he.... he needed some time. He didn't need as much time as he got.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did he end up getting?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh he stayed up there seven, eight, ten years.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well on a....especially a police officer, when they send them to jail.....prison, do they put them somewhere special?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no. Of course Tom didn't go to a maximum.....he did at first, they sent him to down to Florida and then they.....and they got him.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did they get him on federal charges?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But they got into some problems down there and they moved him up to Fort Worth, which was kind of aoh you know, there wasn't a bunch of toughie up there and he served his time up at Fort Worth. But ah....it was ah.....ah.....the first pen he was in up there in Florida he could of got hurt real easy you know. I don't think it was intentional, they just..... I don't know what happened. But ah..... I think the Judge found out about it right quick and.....and he just had him moved up to Fort Worth.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....before we go on I want to go back to '78 to close out one other little project that as you know I'm working on. And ah.... I think it was in March of '78, Bob Goss died.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And I know you helped take the body to Honeygrove.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I went to Honeygrove.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Could you put that on the record for me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....yeah I did, I don't know what date. But it was '78?

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was '78, I think it was in March or April, somewhere in there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. See if I could of.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I've got it written down.

GLENN ELLIOTT:if I'd of looked back in my reports last..... I ah.....I've..... I obviously went to Honeygrove, Texas in a state car and no telling what I've got my report for that day. I....but I went to his funeral and we went up there with the ah.....with the body as Iand Dwight Watson went with me, Constable over at Kilgore, and ah....ah....cause Watson and he were good friends. And ah....but yeah, I went to..... I went to ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I want to relate the story that when you and I were in Honeygrove we stopped by the funeral home that had the arrangements. And we talked to the guy that actually drove the hearse and carried the body up there and he kept saying, you'd run off and leave him and you'd have to wait and stop.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I had that trouble when I was on the Highway Patrol.....I....when I was escorting funerals on the Highway Patrol, I got.....you know, when Iyou used to think.....these people at funeral homes used to think they had to drive five or ten miles an hour in

a funeral procession. And it was a common thing you know I guess from the horse and buggy days. They moved slow and when they got cars they thought they ought to keep on moving slow. And I got to where I'd tell 'em, when they'd call me, said, 'We got a funeral here in Longview, procession through Kilgore to Hallsville'... or wherever. And I'd go by and them 'em and I said, 'Now I tell you what to do, I'm going to escort you but your going to drive forty-five miles an hour because we're not going to impede traffic for fifteen, twenty-five minutes between here and Kilgore or Hallsville for a funeral. Now I'm going to help you and we're going to get on over there safe and we're going to see that nobody passes and we're going to get you in there, but we're not going to drive no ten miles an hour you know'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well this has nothing to do with your career, but a question I've got. You know I'm used to driving in you know, little larger cities where you don't stop for a funeral .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Are you supposed to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No you don't have to stop in Texas. The only law Texas has had, and I don't know whether it's still on the book or not, you can't.....it's a violation of the law to break into a funeral. In other words if your passing one and your meeting traffic and you break in, then you've violated the law. No you don't have to stop, it's just a courtesy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know like in Los Angeles and somewhere, man if you stop you'd get run over.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's just a courtesy, it's the same way in Texas, it's a.....you don't have to stop.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay the.....well going back to this ah....you want to wrap up for tonight and start again.....or let's finish up Welch. Are we done with that all together?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I guess so. You know ah..... I testified over there in court and ah..... I testified as a government witness onsee I had interviewed ah.....this Tucker that run the Hideaway Club and he admitted to me that they'd been playing black jack out there. And he said, 'Just me and some old joint operators have been playing and some of the girls down here late at night', and 'Yes sir Mr. Elliott we've been playing but there hadn't been any game since you was out here two weeks ago'. And you know, so I said, 'Well that's what I want, you know, let's don't have anymore'. So that's the reason I knew the federalwell I went aheadI wrote a report on that. And ah....and wrote everything I did, you know. Cause if you remember I told you that the captain asked me about it and I'm in Dallas working this double murder over at Henderson where Memmier were killed, the grandmother and the grandfather, the grandson killed them. And I'm up at Dallas for the autopsy on that case and I was going to spend the night. And I go..... I come backthe captain called and wanted me to come by and drink coffee with him. And of course he had this on his mind but he didn't tell me on the phone and I put him off, I said, 'Well wait until after the traffic dies down'. It was late in the evening up there at Dallas and I'm all the way over there on Motor Street out there at the hospital at the forensic crime lab out there at Baylor Hospital, Dallas County crime lab and our office is out at Garland you know, Interstate 30, all the way across town. And this.....so he.... I waited until the traffic kind of died down and drove on over to the office and he was still there and ah.....the captain was. And I already had reservations there at the LaQuinta on ah....ah....Buckner Blvd. And ah.....so ah..... I got out there and he told me what he had, he said.....asked me if I knew who.....if they had a place down there in Gregg County named the Hideaway Club. And I said, 'Yeah'. And he, 'Well what do you know about it'. And I said, 'Well I just.... I know it's there and it's an old TV station', and it's off out there now where Mickey Smith's office you know.....and ah....he said,

‘Well you know who runs it’, and I said, ‘Yeah, Vernon Tucker runs it’. And he saidwell George Berkley was a Ranger there in Dallas and he said, ‘George has got some information from an informant that says that they’ve been playing some black jack down there at night’. And I said, ‘Well he’s probably right’. And he said, ‘Well let me call George and find out who his informant is’. I told him right then, I said, ‘I don’t want to know who George’s informant is captain’, I said, ‘You know, I’ll stop it and we don’t want black jack played down there. And that way George can.....you know, if something happened to George’s informant George might think I went down there and told the people who he was’. And I said, you know....and I said, ‘I don’t want to know who he is’. So I called the LaQuinta Inn after we got through visiting, me and the captain, and canceled my reservation and my next stop was at the Hideaway Club in Longview, Texas see. And that’s the way Ikind of the way I tended to business. And ah....but ah.....ah..... I testified on that and then ah....Jim Cochran who was Tom’s Chief Deputy, had since quit. Well Jim come to me before this investigation got started with the federals, or it may have been started but it was before anybody knew anything about it. And ah....Jim came to me complaining about some gambling out here on Alpine. And ah.... I said, ‘Well Jim ...’, and Jim liked to gamble. Jim was an old retired Army man ah.....he ran a club over at Bossier City while he was stationed in Air Force over there and had a slot machine in the back of it and everything else I found out later. But Jim just liked to gamble. Well he’d worked for the Sheriff and hehe.....he had quit, he quit Tom and he wanted to.....he rented a house down on 149, just across the river down there on the left, some property that belonged to Bob Cargill. And there was a house down there and he had rented it and he was wanting to set up a dice game down there in it. And Jim for some reason or other was crazy enough to come to me and he said, ‘Well Glenn I the Sheriff won’t....’, he said, ‘I want to complain about something’. And I

said, 'Well what is it Jim'. And he said, 'About gambling going on around here'. And I said, 'All right, tell me about it', and I said, 'You ought to know more about it than anybody around here', cause I said, 'You're a gambler'. Well he said, 'I tried to get the Sheriff to let me set up a little old dice game down there just a bunch of us friendly boys, have a fish fry and shoot a little dice and he wouldn't do it'. And he said, 'I know they're gambling out here on Alpine Street'. And I said, 'Well I tell you what I'll do Jim', I said, 'You can get in out there, you've probably been out there since you retired', and I said, 'If you want something done about it well I, you know, I'll get an undercover agent in here and you get him in out there and we'll do something about it'. Well he..... 'Or go talk to Odis Hill the District Attorney, tell him what you told me and Odis might have a better idea how he wants to handle thing'. Cause I said, 'I'll handle this way and nobody knows about it but me and you'. So he said, 'Well let me think about it'. You know, so I wrote a report on it, sent it in through the channels to Austin you know, trying to keep them.....you know I can't keep.....you know if Jim Cochran calls me and tells me there's something going on and he's wanting to go in to the gambling business and the Sheriff won't let him and ah.....so I.....I could see some problems coming up here that might affect me down the road so I wrote a detailed report on it. And I had..... I testified to that in this federal trial too. And of course it's very incriminating on Jim and ah.....but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he go to jail?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah he went too. And ah.....ah.....that's ah....about all my involvement in that thing I guess and ah....the other one, just my relations with them folks over there. And Hannah and I got along pretty good after it was over, of course we had a little spat up here in the hallway that we'll get to later on down here at the courthouse. I nearly kicked his butt and he needed it, but ah.....that was ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this about the same time this guy claimed you put the throw down onon Mathis or is it coming later?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, see this.....this came before this same Grand Jury. Ah....ah.....the Mathis killing, which was.....it happened ten years before and ah.....ah.....and the fact that I was supposed to have gone out there with the Sheriff to pick these guys up in the morning and then threatening me with.....because there was gambling going on in Gregg County and I didn't do anything about it you know. That was.....that was.....this is all at the time, this is all the same Grand Jury. They're.....they're going to the Grand Jury with.....claiming that we set Mathis up and he wasn't armed and there was a lot of publicity about it, a lot in the papers about it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah I've seen your scrapbooks.

GLENN ELLIOTT: They was leaking everything to the paper and ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll get into that in detail too, cause that will finish up Mathis.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah we can do that. But let's ah....this is a pretty good time to stop here, because I've gotwe're just into ah.....into May, so we're just half way through ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me get a pencil and we'll mark where we're stopping.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN This is Tuesday, August 22, 1995. This is a continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn we just finished up last week the tragic incident.....or the sad incidents of law enforcement here in Longview where the Sheriff got sent to prison and his deputy got sent to prison, Justice of the Peace got sent to prison.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we're into that, they're not gone yet, but they're trying them in this period here.

ROBERT NIEMAN And a lot of people tried to make you a lot of trouble. This is probably.....well I think it was the most troublesome time in your life as a Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, no doubt.

ROBERT NIEMAN Ah....do we want....are we finished with Welch as far as your connection?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah. Ah.... I think I covered the fact that theythat ah.....one of the deputies had told the FBI that I went out to the barn with them where they had the set up and one morning picked 'em up at six thirty, which was not true. And ah.....they were.....this was ah.....of course you know, nearly everything like that is ah.....ah.....of course this needed.....there's no question, I'm not disputing the fact that some things needed to be done in this area. But it's a lot of over reaction and ah.....and make believe anything anybody said to 'em. And actually try to ah.....ah.....and the Justice Department is kind of bad that way, they'll single in on something, whatever it is that they want to work on and I noticed this all along and of course I've worked with them just like the bus bombings and the bank robberies and everything else. But ah.....a lot of time they'll.....you'll find officers doing this and prosecutors doing it too, they'll center in and they want to believe anything anybody says about the guy that they think is wrong and ah....instead of ah.....you know, looking into it just a little bit deeper. You know I like to believe what everybody tells me about ah.....ah.....whoever I'm investigating if it's true. But you know you've got to evaluate what they say you know. And this is what happened to me in this thing, this was a....it was a trying time as far as..... my relations with the FBI were real good all through the years, I had no problems ah..... I was investigated a couple of times for civil rights violations which later proved to unfounded. One of them the guy made a lengthy statement saying that he had lied. Ah....and ah....things of this nature but I'd never been in.....I'd never got my relations with the federals ah.....oh I guess stretched as thin as they were during this time

because they had first accosted me aboutaccusing me of going out here with the Sheriff to pick up deputies and set up all night in a county barn waiting on two thieves to come, to peel a safe. And I told 'em I said, 'You know if they'd invite me....', well you know I think we got it on tape, but I'd of been out there waiting on those thieves, I knew both of them. They were both sorry as they could be, they'd been to the penitentiary two or three times, I'd handled 'em myself three or four times. They'd robbed a bank in Memphis, Tennessee, went to the pen for that and ah.....they were just sorry, no good scummy burglars is what they were and thieves and robbers. But ah....in this case here ah.....now see this is what ten years after ah.....Charles Mathis ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah '70'swell before we get on Mathiswell maybe..... I guess we ought to do Mathis then cause I got a question that I guess would tie to both from the stand point of ah.....how did your.....your name got.....well let's go ahead and finish Mathis, because this question would apply to both of them I want to ask.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course how your name gets involved in anything ah.....they were conducting an investigation here in Gregg County, I was a Ranger stationed here and for some unknown reason they thought I guess that ah.....that I should of cleaned up all the vice in Gregg County. And notnever looking at any of my activity reports and how busy I was working murders and rapes and robberies and thefts and....and ah.....and never going back and talking to the former FBI agents that had come here as new agents and me tell them who was doing what you know. This guy over here is gambling, this one here is a book maker and you know, this one does this and they.....you know, that's what they did, they were always looking into the vice, which was good. And they'd assign their rookie.....they had plenty of people to do it you know. And they'd sign their rookie FBI agents to it and boy they was going to do big things, you always heard big things of what they was going to do, but they never did anything you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well how did.....Welch had replaced, at one time a very popular Sheriff at least, Noble Crawford.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN Ah.....how did the public view Welch?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well listen, Tom Welch regardless of what he did or didn't do, it was against the law, probably did more and this is no disrespect of Noble or any other Sheriff that's ever been here, Tom Welch did more to improve the image of the Gregg County Sheriff's department than any Sheriff ever had that I had heard of and I knew of a lot of Sheriffs.....

ROBERT NIEMAN You went back to what, Lonnie Smith and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:and I knew of the one before him and King.....Ashberry King and ah.....and I've heard stories from other officers as I came.....when I first got here. Tom improved the image he....he....he increased the size of the department, he got young people out there working and looking for violations of the law and ah....he had a real disciplined department ah.....andand just was getting the job done. He did a dern good job as Sheriff.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well how long did it take..... I was living here but I'd just moved here and I was on the road almost all the time so I really can't give any input from this question, how long was it before.....did the public opinion ever turn against Tom Welch?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah and justifiably so. Of course Tom's still got a lot of friends but ah....ah....yeah they....well you know, some of this thing started coming to light.....of course what they was doing.....and this is a normal thing, they leaked to the press about Mathis and

ah.....cause this is part of the.....they was.....of course, you know, they wanted publicity and ah.....and got a whole lot of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well what exactly didwas the problem with Mathis now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the Mathis problem was this, they had ah.....this investigation started on Tom and Fyffe boy was ah.....involved, he was working for the County at that time and he had ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Wait a minute, he was.....already had been to the pen a few times hadn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, uh hum. But he was working for ah.....on the road and bridge crew.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....just common labor and ah.....he had ah.....he had turned federal witness you know and ah.....was cooperating with the federal officers, that he had put up some signs for the politicians while he was working.....while he was actually on the payroll for the county, which was against the law. It was no heinous penitentiary offense, but it was against the law. And ah....so I guess, I don't know, obviously Fyffe started this thing about Mathis, cause ah.....and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Now this was the same Mathis that ya'll killed back in Dallas ten years before?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. And Fyffe was our informant and ah....he knew the story behind the thing, but he had an ax to grind and ah.....because he'd gone to the pen a time or two and he'd called me once from Gilmer and told me that he was going to do big things if I didn't get him out of trouble. And Iyou know, I said, 'Man you....you know, if you're in trouble you

get yourself out'. And ah....anyway, two of Mathis' sons ah.....this guy Nile Duke, he was.....I'll never forget his name and he was the only FBI agent that I really owe a ass kicking to and ah.....and I wouldn't be surprised if.....you know, if he and I met sometime cause I know he's retired by now and I am too, and he if gave me any reason to well I'd just have to spank him a time or two just for the fun of it.

ROBERT NIEMAN Have a real heart to heart talk with him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah..... I didn't like him. He....he.....his attitude waswell he was just ah.....well what he did, he set down and took affidavits from these two sons of Mathis'

ROBERT NIEMAN Do you remember their names?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....one of them was Chuck, you know Iwe called Charles Robert Mathis, Jr.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I don't remember the other boys name.

ROBERT NIEMAN Nile, did he spell his name N I L E or N Y L E?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah, you know I don't remember. Anyway he was ah.....ah.....ah.....he took affidavits from them, said he did, said he had affidavits in his briefcase, I never did see them. Ah....they didn't come sit down and talk to me, said, you know, they.....they called me in and.....well I'd already heard through an FBI agent that they were investigating this thing and ah.....they were going to present it to the Grand Jury. Well I had gone out and talked to Fyffe and I think we taped that the other day or some time or other, and I told him I said, 'If you're going to testify your our informant well tell me, then I won't have to be beating around the bush in the Grand Jury. If they ask me I'll say yes you know'. And of course I've always tried to protect the informant and ah.....andif I told him I would. And ah.....anyway ah.....they had ah.... after I

talked to him well he called them up and told them, then they called me over there and threatened to ah.....indict me for intimidating a witness. And I said, 'Well you know that's not right, you know. He told you the truth which he's capable of doing but he's not too good at it, I didn't intimidate him anyway'. And I said, 'I heard ya'll was investigating this thing and probably going to call me to a Grand Jury', and I said, 'I just went and asked him a question and that's all I wanted out of him, told him to go ahead and testify to whatever he thought that he needed to, but that's what I wanted to know from him'. So....well they.....this Assistant United States AttorneyI've forgot his name, I don't know why I have cause I disliked him too, he was just a smart ellick.

ROBERT NIEMAN Was he out of Longview or Tyler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Tyler. And ah.....he was John Hannah's first assistant ah.....I'll think of it after while. And ah....he was.....he's smart mouthed too and so was Duke and ah....and so they....while they....we're talking about all this well Duke tells me what he's got and ah.....and they asked me if I'd submit to a polygraph test. And I said, 'You're damn right I'll take a polygraph test'.

ROBERT NIEMAN But had they asked the Mathis boys to take one?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they hadn't asked anybody. And we got into this and I knew they was going I got to thinking about it and I knew they was going to leak it to the press and.....you know, that I was taking a polygraph test and all this stuff and that. And II singled him out and I told him I said, 'I don't this out and I don't even want the Department of Public Safety to know that I've taken a polygraph test', but I said, 'If this is all it takes to get ya'll off of my back well it'll do it'. Well in the conversation.....they just kept on ah....ah.....Duke kept smarting off andand I asked him I said, 'Well have you run those people you claim you got those

affidavits from on lie detector'. Well the Assistant United States Attorney he speaks up and said, 'Yes they've been run'. Well the agent in charge of the FBI in the Tyler office he was in there, there was about four FBI agents.

ROBERT NIEMAN Do you remember his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well I'll tell you.....

ROBERT NIEMAN That's all right we can come back.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I know his name and he was later promoted and left here after this investigation and went down to the agent in charge of the whole area out of ah....down in Georgia, Mississippi somewhere. Ah....anyway ah.....ah...he ah....the Assistant United States Attorney said, 'Yes they've been run'. And the FBI agent in charge of the Tyler office said, 'No they haven't', just about simultaneously. And ah.... I said, 'Well which one of ya'll know what your talking about'. And that agent hit on the desk a couple of times and he said, 'They have not been run'. Well the U.S. Attorney didn't say anything.....Assistant Attorney. And then that's when I said, 'Well you know it looks to me like if I was investigating an FBI agent or something that I'd want to run the lying thieves and see....make sure they're telling the truth before I ask a seasoned officer to take a polygraph test'.

ROBERT NIEMAN Had they both already by this time been convicted of crimes themselves?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, they....well ah.... I know two of them had, I don't whether they.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I'm talking about the Mathis boys.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but I don't know whether the youngest boy had been to the pen or not. I know that ah....that the oldest one had. And so our conversation pretty well ended right there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Now what were they accusing you of, the Mathis boys?

GLENN ELLIOTT: They was ah.....they said that ah.....we killed their daddy to keep him from talking about giving me a bribe. Both of them claimed that they were present in a motel room in Longview, Texas when their daddy gave.....now this is what they tell me, I don't..... I have not seen the affidavits.

ROBERT NIEMAN You still haven't ever seen the affidavits?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. And they said that they have an affidavit from them that ah.....that they saw Mathis give me \$25,000.00 in a motel room in Longview, Texas to keep from.....to let him steal you know. And Iand my answer to that was, I said, 'Well you know let's pretend that that's a true statement that they made', and I said, 'Then why would I want to kill the goose that laid the golden egg you know'.

ROBERT NIEMAN Did Mathis ever have \$25,000.00 to his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: If Mathis ever had \$25,000.00 at one time he'd quit stealing and done something else you know, for awhile. But ah....ah....but.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well what was their motivation after ten years?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they was..... I don't know. I guess that ah.....they thought they had a chance to maybe do something to me since their daddy died you know. And they.....and of course he was a theft, taught them how to steal and so I don't know what they..... I never did ask 'em you know. And ah..... I had no reason to cause here the federals are and I could of gone and asked them and they'd of sure enough got me for ah.....jumped on me for tampering with one of their witnesses you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well did they ever try to involve Bob or Max or Red?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah they was trying to involve everybody. But I was the first one they talked to. They interviewed all of them later and ah.....well no, they interviewed Bob I think and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN That would be Mitchell, for the record.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN And Red Arnold and Max Womack.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah.....but what happened was, after they talked with me then the agent in charge in Tyler called a FBI polygraph operator in, they ran them on the polygraph, two of them took the test, one of them was lying miserably, the other one was ah.....inconclusive and the third one refused to take it out of the three that they had the affidavits from.

ROBERT NIEMAN And two of them were Mathis' and the third one was

GLENN ELLIOTT: The other one was Fyffe.

ROBERT NIEMANLarry Fyffe.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. So they dropped it then you know. If they'd of done that to start with, before they ever called me over there, it would of saved ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN But in the meantime they've smeared it in the papers .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN Cause I've seen in your scrapbook articles.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, oh yeah, it was in the papers. I had to go to Church over on Sunday morning.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Now that brings me to the question I started to ask awhile ago, through the Welch bull and through this Mathis absurdity, how did your friends and neighbors? Did you.....I mean were they the same, could you detect a little difference or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I tell you what, I actually ah..... I guess I got ah.....ah..... I got more support than I thought I ever had. I never will forget, this came out in the Longview paper one Sunday morning and ah.....my wife don'tdidn't ever get up and read the paper, she's a late sleeper, and I read the paper and I debated whether to even go to Church or not that Sunday, I felt pretty low. I said you know

ROBERT NIEMAN Was this after killing Mathis or after this deal?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No this is after this deal came up you know. And ah.....no there wasn't much in the paper about Mathis, it happened in Dallas you know and on Christmas and ah.....and we come on home andand it made..... I think it made the paper, a little old bitty small item or something. But see this is.....they was stirring all this corruption and of course they was wanting to get us indicted and try everybody together, that's what they.....that's what they had in mind. They.....they thought they was going to indict their self four Texas Rangers and I'm convinced of that and I think that was their motive. And ah.....and of course they believed.....obviously they believed these thieves.....lying thieves, but ah.....they just didn't go at it right to check it out you know. So I gowent ahead to Church that Sunday morning and I'll never forget as long as I live ah.....Semore Waggoner.....

ROBERT NIEMAN The ex-banker?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....was an Elder in the Church over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Which Church was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's the Alpine Church of Christ. And we've been going there since it was downtown here where the old high school used to be down there at Second and Whaley and ah.....ever since we've been in Longview. And ah.....he ah.....Semore was the first person I saw

and he said, 'Glenn I read that article in the paper this morning and I want you to know we don't believe a word of what them people are saying and you've got.....we're behind you 100%'.

ROBERT NIEMAN That made you.....must of made you fell about ten foot tall.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man I'll tell you what, it made me so glad that I came to Church that day instead ofyou know, why should I run from something like that you know, to begin with. And I..... I'd made up my mind, I'm not one to run from a fight anyway. But ah.....so our relations was pretty strained and we get right into this just soon after this ah.....they call on me to help on the Judge Wood investigation down at San Antonio.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay, hang on just a second.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I had..... I had full support of everybody, my family included as far as that goes. They ah..... I had never I don't.....never in my career did I ever discuss any of my ah.....work habits or.....or cases with my family, I just never did do it and I didn't discuss this with them, you know. I just said, it's not true and ah....and ah.....and they accepted it and they knew me well enough, you know, to know that that's what needed to be done and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well then it died out just about as quick as it flared up didn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah. And I got a lot of support, got a lot of letters from ah.....officers, encouragement from across the state and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well what kind of support, or lack thereof, did you get from Burkes, G.W. Burkes, your captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Burkes was ah.....Burkes supported us. I mean, you know, Burkes was ah.....he ah..... I had no problem with him or the Colonel, I had to go to Austin, I'm in Austin during this period right here. I went down to Austin, we all did, ah.....after this thing started you know, right after my interview over there with them, well I was pretty well

convinced that they was hell bentand here's the Assistant United States Attorney trying me.....to indict me. He.....he even said this, said, 'I'm going to indict you for knowing that gambling was going on and not telling anybody'. He said that in a very..... I mean he looked right at me, and I said, 'Well you just as well get ready to indict some.....indict some FBI agents too', cause I said, 'I've set on surveillance with your agents for months getting license numbers of everybody that's left that gambling establishment out there'. And him assuring me that he's going to subpoena these people to a Federal Grand Jury. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN What was his reply to that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nothing, he didn't have anything to say. And I said, 'I...every new agent that's come in here....', like I said awhile ago.... 'I've gone through everybody that.....', I knew who was..... I knew who was gambling, who was making books, sure. But ah.....you know you got to.....just like I know who.....who was stealing a lot of oil field equipment too you know. But you don't.....and I tell the oil people this, I said, you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Knowing and proving is two different things.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I know, but here's the problem, knowing it and being able to spend a lot of time on it. When you're getting called on murders and rapes and robberies, and I'd tell the oil people I said, 'Sure you guys are not getting the right shake, you're paying more taxes than anybody else, but you'd be the first one to raise hell if I was out here trying to catch somebody thatfor stealing a Christmas tree off a well and you're wife or daughter one had been murdered and raped and nobody working on it'. And I said, 'So my priorities have got to be on something else you know'. If I hadn't got anything else to do, if I was the type of Ranger that didn't do anything and hadn't done anything, then they could fuss at me about not working a little vice if there's some around you know. But that wasn't the case and I had proof in my

reports and I reported the vice regularly ah.....to the Department of Public Safety. I've got.....I've got just volumes of interoffice memorandums that I've written to Austin and asking for undercover agents you know and assisted them trying to get 'em to turn vice over to intelligence, anything you know. They....they....cause we had a commissioner once that.....you know we went all through that, worked prostitution on account of him, had to you know. And we didn't have any business doing that, you know, I mean we had no business(side of tape ends)

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay ah.....you know this centered mainly on you, but it....it was Red Arnold and Max Womack's and Bob Mitchell was going to be in the FBI scheme.....or this prosecutor's scheme of things, they was going to be right behind you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN What was their reaction?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course they was.....they was upset too you know, a little bit, that they even thought about it you know. And then of course more so that they took these ah.....affidavits from these sorry individuals you know. But they wasn't ah.....all that tore up about it, cause we knew we was right and ah.....and ah.....and we knew that..... I told them over at Tyler, I said, 'You might indict me but you're going to play hell convicting me, cause I hadn't done anything to be convicted of you know'. And I said, 'You're going to ruin my reputation if you turn an indictment against me, but that doesn't seem to bother ya'll any'. I.... I stood up for myself and for the Rangers, cause I'm just that kind of individual. I was not intimidated by a bunch ofof light headed FBI agents.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I think a good example of it would be, I watched the ah.....Congressional investigation on the Waco tragedy of David Koresh Sunday that Ronny Griffith made a copy of the tape of Captain ah.....David Byrnes and the Senior

ah.....ah.....Maurice Cook. And David said to the Congressional peo....ah....Congressmen that when you worked with the FBI, I mean they run it and it.....basically I'm not quoting him now, paraphrasing, you know, big me little you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well you see that's ah....ah....I'd been used to that, that didn't bother me. We got the job done, I didn't mind them getting the glory and they liked to have it you know. And I always let the local officers do most of the press releases myself. But I knew, and I told Duke this, I got more friends in the FBI than he's got you know. And I know that, and I had friends in the Tyler agency, I'd worked with them. Since then Ithere's an agent..... I got a letter from an agent in Minnesota that came through Tyler and ah.....and I couldn't go to a retirement party over there, I was in San Antonio, and I wrote a letter and they read it and he.....he wrote me a note and told me he was sorry he missed me and told me he appreciated the help I gave him, and this was just this year, back when he was stationed in Tyler. He was in Tyler for several years. Well you appreciate things like that. And ah.....but you don't appreciate ah.....folks doing you like that because that cost me a year or two of my life no doubt, because I was concerned about it, certainly I was. Because I had seenhere I knew this Deputy Sheriff had lied and I can just see 'em interrogating him now, 'Well now Glenn Elliott was involved in this wasn't he', you know, 'Well he may have been'.

ROBERT NIEMAN You can bet he was trying to save his own skin.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. 'If you'll tell us something about Glenn Elliott we won't indict you'. You know that's ah.....and....and.....and a little old incidental thing.....which I wasn't there see, I mean I....I....may have been with the Sheriff one morning, one Sunday morning, when he came out there at six-thirty to pick 'em up, which is as absurd as anything that could be you know. That I'd get out of bed to ride out there with the Sheriff at six-thirty in

morning just to pick up two deputies, or four, however many was out there. But I got through this thing all right and like I say we.....we're getting down here to Judge Wood's killing and this is.....this isI mean.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Now this is the Federal.....this is the Judge that was assassinated by the actor, Woody Haralson's, dad right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And of course what was happening about this time, there was ah.....this ah.....Jerry Ray James ah.....you know had ah.....was in the penitentiary and he was in the cell with Haralson and.....and he had told them a story and....and.....and ah.....so they was trying to find out something by Jerry Ray James. And nobody.....they went to Austin, Texas where Jerry Ray lived and the crime analyst told 'em in Austin that, you know, go talk to Glenn Elliott, he knows more about Jerry Ray James and his associates, that anybody in Texas. Well I did I guess, cause ah.....they didn't you know and.....and.....and so they come to me you know. And I gave 'em everything I had on the whole.....the whole group you know and ah.....and of course this was..... I wanted I wanted to find out who killed Judge Wood, but I was.....my relations with the FBI were pretty strained at that time. On the count of Al Duke, he's the only one. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well is he still here?

GLENN ELLIOTT:Henshaw.....Henshaw was the guy that was the agent in charge over at Tyler at that time, in that office.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay. H E N S H A W?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I believe that's right, it should be in some of those papers, I don't know if I had it. But ah..... Isee he took up for me over there, because here's an Assistant United States

Attorney trying.....lying to me, which is a cardinal sin if you want somebody to tell you something. And.....and..... I know.....you know and here's the other guy that's not lying you know and.....so ah.....ah....that shows you that I had a few friends over there you know. And I didn't know Henshaw that well, he hadn't been over there that long, but he knew of my reputation and I guess from that interview he'd already pretty well guessed thatfrom the answers I gave them that something was wrong somewhere you know. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well what's the story behind the Wood killing, the Judge Wood killing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah.....of course it was all narcotic.....he was tough on narcotic people.

ROBERT NIEMAN He was in San Antonio right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was in San Antonio and ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Federal Judge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Federal Judge. And Haralson, he'd had a case pending before his court or it was on appeal or something.....no I believe this was for hire, I believe.....yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah, I think he was a hired assassin.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah that's right. But ah.....anyway they just shot him down in cold blood down there you know, just with a high powered rifle. And ah.....he was either leaving home or coming home, I believe he was leaving home in the morning down there. And ah.....and of course I'm sure that their information probably the first they got it, probably came out of the penitentiary would be my guess. But they did a heck of a good job on it.....worked on it. And ah.....and ah.....and of course he's in the penitentiary today, tried to escape here awhile back, you know I noticed. But ah.....ah.....anyway this come down, well of course I'm not going to let something..... I never didthe next time..... I think Iif there is anything I say in my interviews or anything is written, I have set aside any childish ah.....myths I might have about

being.....you know, not wanting to work with this officer or that officer, in order to solve a crime. I....I've worked with a bunch of officers that I wasn't really that comfortable with, but I knew that if I got the job done that I had to have their help you know. And so, go ahead and do it you know and....and let's forget about any problems that might exist down the road, or up the road. And ah.....cause I always felt like that we were working.....and I knew who I was working for, I was working for the citizens of the State of Texas. And.....and even the press had call.....wanted me to get in a debate, and you..... I think you read my remarks, Iyou know, I didn't see how the citizens of the state could profit by a debate between myself and the FBI and United States Attorney's office in the newspaper. How.....how could the citizens of Texas profit by that, no way you know. So I'm not going to engage in a bunch of selling the newspapers for them in order for me to say whathow I felt about Al Duke. Because it should of been pretty obvious how I felt about him anyway. And he knew how I felt about him and that's the only one I wanted to know it you know. I didn't write to the Director of FBI, I told Al Duke how I felt about him. And he still remembers it today I promise you that.

ROBERT NIEMAN Does he live around here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Don't have any idea. He was a Yankee and I don't have any idea whereand I hope I don't ever see him again. I don't care about ah.....seeing him, I've no reason for me to and I don't generally care, I'm not the kind of guy that carries hate and ah.....and ah....I didn't guess I exactly hated him, I just disliked him and always will you know. Ain't nothing he can say to me thatthat....to make me change my mind, because he was the big shot, little banty rooster type, FBI agent that thought he knew it all.

ROBERT NIEMAN What we call in our office, the Adolph Syndrome?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....and I doubt.....

ROBERT NIEMAN The Hitler Syndrome.

GLENN ELLIOTT:I imagine he stayed an FBI agent and I'm sure he took an early out, if the truth was known. And I don't know and I'm not that interested and I hope nobody ever tells me. You know, cause I'm just not interested in him. So we're down into about June of ah.....well let's see, I had to go to ah..... I went to Austin on ah.....May 29th.....

ROBERT NIEMAN We're in '79 still.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.....and talked to the Colonel and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Is.....who's Colonel now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....Wilson Spear. And ah.....of course the federals are.....they've hit the press with all this stuff and Adams is our Director. Adams is ah.....no wait a minute, Adams is fixing to be the Director.

ROBERT NIEMAN Is there a Senior Captain at this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Clint Peoples I guess.....no wait a minute, no Bill Wilson's Senior Ranger captain, yeah.....Bill's Senior Ranger Captain. And we met with them. Charlie Moore is our new sergeant here, he ah.....he made sergeant and went to Waco and then came back to Dallas in June of that year. Ah....so we got us a new sergeant. Ah..... I had to work a strike related problems over at Tyler, I guess Stuart was on vacation on the.....early part of June. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well let me ask you something, interrupt you. Charlie Moore is now your sergeant, did ah....of course ya'll.....you knew one another as kids but not well.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, no that's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN I mean you knew who he was and he knew who you was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was from Honeygrove and I was from Windom, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN So I mean, ya'll knew one another, but that's about the extent of it. But did ya'll ever reminisce and say, you know when we was kids who would of ever thought the two of us would ever ended up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, we talked a whole lot. Charlie and I were good friends and....and ah.....and we've attendedof course we went on the Rangers at the same time, and of course we was in schools together the first several months, nearly every school we.....that they'd have well we'd go to it you know. And ah.....and Charlie and I would sit down and talk a whole lot about ah.....boys and girls around Honeygrove and Windom andand yeah, we talked about it a whole lot. And I found out a lot about Charlie and he a lot about me. And ah....and Charlie was a likable, good guy and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I know Ronny Griffith served under him when he was a captain and Ronnie ah.....he really liked Charlie Moore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah. I'd call Charlie once a month and check on Ronnie, you know see what kind of job he was doing. Cause you know, I I recommended Ronnie to the Rangers and Ronnie didn't know that but I

ROBERT NIEMAN Well we talked about.....Saturday night Ronnie and the wives and what not went to dinner and he talked quite a bit about Charlie, he really liked Charlie Moore.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well everybody liked Charlie Moore. It's hard not to like Charlie Moore, he was just a likable guy. So ah....I'm back over at Tyler, some more labor problems, back over there again on the 18th.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I thought I thought the Rangers had quit working that.....those labor problems?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....this was ah....ah.....this was ah.....they was blocking the streets and Tyler.....theythey was having a pretty nasty strike over there. And we wasn't trying to ah.....we wasn't.....we was working it at a different angle. They wanted a Ranger over there to help work some of the violence that was taking place andand ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Who was being struck?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't remember. It was ah.....could of been..... I just don't even remember it. I remember the location but I can't remember the name of the place. And ah.....but this was the last ah.... I think about the last time that I got involved in a labor problem and it wasn't.....didn't involve that much, it settled. But they'd had some violence out on the streets and ah....and a house or two maybe had been shot into over there and they just thought

ROBERT NIEMAN Well of all the strikes you worked, Lone Star and Tyler and what not, did anybody ever get convicted of anything?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh..... I don't think so, I really don't. I don't think so, I can't remember. Well let's see, seemed like ah.....maybe that '57 strike that they did try two of boys for blowing up that pipeline.

ROBERT NIEMAN Pipeline, but did they get convicted?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't remember. See, of course I wasn't carrying any of the paper on that and ah....and I got back to my Highway Patrol duties andand if it did, it wasn't much to it.

ROBERT NIEMAN All right.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I spent some time in court of course a lot in ah....in this same area. Ah.... I see I'm down at Marshall and Karnack on somebody impersonating a police officer, I don't even

remember that. Ah.... Iduring.....this is the period of time I believe that Mitchell is still in Tyler. And ah.....and this theft over at Tyler Pipe ah.....was about this time.

ROBERT NIEMAN That we've talked about already.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Now Bob did tell meand we didn't have it on the record, cause you didn't remember, but Bob....when Iat the reunion this year I asked Bob about that case and he said there was convictions and he said the President of Tyler Pipe is the one that invited them in there. He said that about bankrupt the company, this wasn't a little operation, this was a monster operation. He said they was about to put the company out of business.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, no, no. I spent three days over there, which is....and I wasn't even carrying the paper on it you know. And ah.....and then I go to Henderson on the 27th of June and assist the Oklahoma officers in an assault investigation and two days over there and back in Dallas on the 2nd of July for reports. And then Marshall and Shreveport on a murder investigation. Ah....4th of July I'm..... I work..... I notice on the 4th I'm over there working this same thing, I don't remember which murder that was, cause I see we'd gone to those numbers. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well....we may have already covered this, you worked so darn many murders they're often kind of maybe running together, but I remember the one gruesome one where you found the guy in the median. Have we already covered that one where you had the fingerprints and just.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah that was ah.....we covered that back ah.....that was in the early '60's.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN They're all running together on me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we had to cut his hands off you know, and he was a soldier you remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah that's right and he'd picked up the hitchhiker, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....this ah....about the 6th of July I'm in Tyler and the United States Attorney has called me over there now to be a witness in this trial they ah.... I believe that you'll find that they've probably started trying them in July or August one. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Which trial?

GLENN ELLIOTT: The Gregg County group, that year.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay, Tom Welch and Cashell?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, uh hum. Yeah and ah....then this is the same time.....this is when theyJudge Wood.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well let me interrupt you here again. Ah.....what....what was it I don't know if you can describe this, what's it like testifying against fellow officers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well if ah....there's not any problem. See one of the guys that I testified against was.....he had been an officer and had quit and ah....he had ah..... I think I told you, he had ah.....ah.....he was complaining about ah.....that the Sheriff wouldn't let him have a little dice game down at ah....ah....a camp that they had. And of course what was happening, he and another guy just wanted to open up a dice game and ah....and so I told him.....you know, he saidhe told me that there was gambling out there at this Foster farm and ah.....and I said, 'Well Jim, you can get somebody in out there', I think I told you that the other night. And I suggested he get.....that he get an undercover agent in out there and him go out there with 'em, cause I knew he went out there, cause he liked to gamble. And ah....and the Sheriff had told him, 'No

you're not going to run any gambling you know, and there's enough gambling going on here now'. And ah....so I wrote a complete report on it and ah....because it was ah.....I could see problems with it and here's a former officer that's wanting to gamble and complaining to be because of other gambling. And I told him what I'd.....you know, if he'd get me a....I'd get an undercover agent, and so I documented all that. I also told him that he could go to the Grand Jury and ah....go to the District Attorney and go to the Grand Jury and give what information he had about gambling in Gregg County. And so I wrote a pretty well....pretty good report about everything he said, documented every bit of it. Well of course, in this investigation they heard about this and they wanted a copy of this report and I got it for them. And then I testified in court, just exactly what it.....cause he's one of the defendants over there too see. And then ah....well let's see I....oh there was one other....oh yeah, on the Hideaway see....club, I'd already told you about that, I had already been out there on a complaint from my captain. And ah....and of course they knew I was there, but there wasn't any gambling the night I went in there, cause I just walked on in, I didn't have a search warrant. But it's a....it's a licensed premises, an officer can go in a licensed premises any time he wants to without a search warrant. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN How far in can you go?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN How far in can you go?

GLENN ELLIOTT: As far as you want to.

ROBERT NIEMAN Can you go in the private offices?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well.....that would be stretching it a little bit, but I think you could really, cause it's pretty broad, it's pretty broad. Ah....if they got a license to operate then ah....they....you know, it's not a private residence, it's not a private office, it's a club you know. But anyway ah.... I

wrote a report on that. I eventually....coming back from a murder, a double murder over at Henderson....that's what I was in Dallas for when I got the complaint ah.....and these folks called me on the murders. Now you....I think you realize that.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well that's what I said awhile ago, so many murders running together on me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And....and see, if your not.....and....and of course I'd break off from a murder if....for something else if somebody called me, if I wasn't just making real good progress you know. And you wasn't always making progress on a murder, but if you quit it, how are you going to make progress. So I just stayed....I did everything that I possibly could on every murder I ever worked, solid you know. And just kept on stirring it. But if I ran out of things, or about to run out of things, didn't have a lot pressing, then if somebody called me on something else well then I'd go because a lot of times you get into another crime and something will deflect it and it kind of....kind of gets youyou got to solve a crime every once in awhile or your going to get in a rut. You know, I'll tell you that just like....I don't care what you're doing, if you was selling shoes and you're getting a salary and little commission and if you don't sell any, you get down. And if get down you're not going to be as good a salesman, you know. And ah...so I like to.....I like to do good you know. And ah....so this is how I'd get off on something like that you know and then come back to the murder cases you know. But ah....so I testified over at Tyler about my interview with Tucker at the Hideaway Club. And he admitted to me that he had been dealing some blackjack. He said, 'Now Mr. Elliott....', now this is three weeks or a month after I got the complaint that boy I got to talk to him, I think three weeks, and ah....or maybe two, but anyway he said, 'There hasn't been any blackjack dealt out here since you been out here'. And I said, 'You know that's the way I want it'. And it was a lot simpler for me. I could of taken that complaint and if I'd of had time, probably got somebody in down there and maybe caught 'em dealing blackjack, might of taken a

month, but I didn't have time to do that. You know, here I am working a double murder trying to arrest a grandson for killing his grandmother and grandfather, I'm talking about old people and just shot 'em, you saw the pictures. It was just as brutal a murder as you'll ever see nearly. Well, what's the most important....to me and if I've got to cut off loose from something like that, to catch a guy dealing blackjack in the back room of a beer joint and....and....then I hadn't got much to do. And that was my attitude then and it's my attitude now. And ah....so if I could go by there....and these guys had enough respect for me, that's all they had to do you know. You know, 'Tucker I heard you been dealing some blackjack and I don't want any more dealt'. That was it. 'Yes sir Mr. Elliott', you know. And ah....so there it goes you know. And so that's easy you know and that made my work a whole lot easier. Ah....I...I'm involved....and during this time I'm involved some murders over at Marshall. And we're....I'm working ah....ah...tractor thiefah....we're losing a lot of tractors ah....ah....I go over to Henderson on the 26th of July and arrest an armed robbery suspect and spoke to the Optimist Club. I knew I was going toI agreed to speak to the Optimist Club, I had a warrant for an old boy over there, so I just killed two birds with one stone you know. And I'm back in Waskom on a murder case and Marshall. And assisting Harrison County in a robbery investigation, arrested two suspects on the 30th of July. Back over there on the 31st on a murder. And of course I'm back in ah...ah....Dallas on the 1st. And worked an armed robbery in Longview. And back down to Karnack on a murder investigation. Assisted Ranger Dawson in Del Rio on a murder investigation for three days in August. And I had a safe burglary over at Gladewater. Ah....in Tyler on a murder case from Marshall, that had to be a polygraph. Ah...worked in Marshall area for...oh the biggest part of August on some murders. In Miller County, Arkansas, I was up there on the 16th of August. And ah....Waco and Austin on the 20th, spent the night in Waco. Ah....this was ah....I was getting into this ah...oil field theft at that time.

We was working some real ah...tough house burglaries, I'm talking about rich people, they was going into rich people's houses. And ah....we had some suspects in that. I'm in Paris for firearm on the 22nd of August. Assisted Texarkana police on the 23rd on a theft investigation. In Dallas on the 4th of September. And then to Marshall, recovered stolen property on the 7th, weapons from a safe burglary in Kilgore....I mean in Gladewater. And recovered other property valued at \$6,000.00 in Greenwood, Louisiana on the 8th. And in Tyler on the 10th. Ah....recovered a stolen tractor in Gladewater on the 13th. And went on the Carthage to a safe burglary the same day. Ah....arrested a subject in Mt. Pleasant for burglary on the 24th of September. Arrest two in Panola County on a burglary on the 26th. And then Bossier City on a murder investigation on the 27th. Recovered property from Texas County, Arkansas, the police department for them on the 28th with a value of \$1,500.00. In Dallas on the 10th and 1st and Marshall on the 2nd, Nacogdoches on the 3rd. Ah....to Paris for two known offenders on the 4th, this is these house burglars. Ah....cleared 12 major burglaries on Cletis Clark Weatherford, he was stealing.....boy he washe was a jogger, he was a good burglar, young man. He and his partner, I can't think of his.....Weatherford and.....hum, what was his name, anyway, they had two good looking girlfriends and ah....they would come into these towns like Kilgore and Longview and Nacogdoches and he would jog, he'd get out there and jog and put on his jogging suit and late in the afternoon, Saturday and Sunday. People would leave to go to Church, you could tell you know, the whole family get in the car and backing out and he's knows they're going to be an hour and a half, two hours you know, and he's not going to be in their house but thirty minutes, fifteen probably. He jogs on by and when they go he just runs back around and goes in and burglarizes the house and gets all their silver and their gold and their diamonds, no guns and ah.....and sacks 'em up and his girlfriend and his accomplice would come pick 'em up you know. And they....boy they tore the country up, they hit Kilgore heavy, they hit

Nacogdoches heavy, they hit Sulphur Springs and Paris. And ah.....we had been working 'em during this time and ah.....and even Weatherford I.....hewe went way up in Oklahoma where he was selling....I....I recovered a diamond ring out of Kilgore which had ten one carats in it.....in the ring. And it was a nice....it was a.....it was a nice ring and they had already broke it down. And ah.....so I'm up there with them on the 3rd and 4th and 5th and ah.....I'm in Minden, Louisiana on the 8th. And ah.....Marshall and Shreveport on the 9th. Ah.....got a.....and leftI left Marshall on the 9th and went on to Shreveport and Houma, Louisiana to appear in court in that theft case down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Houma or Homer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Houma, way down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay, HOUMA.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah..... I returned from Louisiana on the 10th and assist Arkansas police.....Arkansas State.....ah....Texarkana, Arkansas police on a theft investigation on the 11th. I'm in Hallsville on a safe burglary on the 16th. And in Dallas on the 17th and 18th and Marshall on an armed robbery on the 19th. In Tyler and ah....ah.....on a burglary on the 22nd and spoke to the Explorer Police Cadets that night in Longview. To Pryor and Tulsa, Oklahoma on the 23rd and recovering property, \$11,000.00 worth of property that Weatherford had sold up there, I flew up there ah.....on the 23rd up there. I'm back on the 24th and in the Tatum area assisting ah.....and arresting two escapees from the Texas Department of Corrections. And this was ah.....this is two that Mitchell had his group up there too, a bunch of the Rangers out of Company F and they had ah.....tried to kill the Warden down at Palestine, it was just a new penitentiary down there at Colefield Unit. And ah.....two trustees or three of them and ah.....they ah.....one of them had a sister that lived up around Tatum and ah.....we caught two of them before midnight that night and

got the third one the next morning right after daylight. And ah.....and this was a real interesting.....you know, case. We had to.....they had their dogs and their horses down there and ah.....what happened was ah.....ah.....they took the Warden's car and ah.....that how smart they were, still in it and they got.....they abandoned it down there and of course they knew they was down there and we got all theof course all....everything TDC had and DPS was down there just about it you know. And ah....Bobby Prince and I arrested one of them about eleven o'clock that night and ah.....and the other one got arrested about midnight. It was cold and ah.....Jim Estelle was the Warden at that time and he was down there too of course. And ah..... one of his employees got assaulted. And ah.....we took care of that and got them in custody. Ah....the next day I'm in Tyler ah.....assisting Mays County, Oklahoma on a murder case. And ah.....spoke to the History class in Longview High School on the 26th and ah.....was in court here in Longview. Carthage on the 29th and 30th. Ah....Kilgore and Henderson on the 31st. Back in Dallas on the 1st of November and Tyler. Marshall and Daingerfield on a theft on the 2nd. 5th in Federal Court on this Gregg County bunch that was.....so we had to be trying them ah.... in here about October the.....November.....first of November, some of them. And I think they tried them all together as Ias best I remember. Ah....in Tyler on the 6th. Ah.....and during this time now too, is when the Sheriff got ah.....killed out of Carthage you know, in the helicopter.

ROBERT NIEMAN Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN This was the case where thethe ah.....the Sheriff walked into the rotary of therear rotary of the helicopter.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he had called me on a murder down in Panola County and I remember being down there ah.....well this is coming right shortly after that. We were using this helicopter

ah.....on a murder case ah.....out of Tatum and that's coming up here right now. And ah..... I knew we was getting close to that, because I was I was under subpoena to court over at Tyler while I was assisting down there and trying to apprehend these people. And the Sheriff had ah.....this....his part is coming up probably in the next ah.....ah.....next set-to because we're usinghe rides the helicopter down there. We had a murder down at a trailer park there over in Rusk County and they kidnapped this woman. They left her baby, she had a little baby and ah.....her boyfriend's wife was later convicted of ah.....kidnapping, but we never could.....never did find the body, never did try her for murder. But we was using the helicopter down there at this time and while we was down there searching for the.....a lot of witnesses there at the trailer park where they kidnapped her, they chloroformed her and threw a rag down on the floor and they drug her out and put her in the car. And the little old baby was a crying and.....and a lot of hollering, it was a broad open daylight. And they left coming towards Tatum and ah....but we never did.....nobody.....never did pick up their trail. Later a woman was arrested up at.....she worked for the hospital in Dallas. And Stuart thinks maybe they hauled the body up there and ah.....and ah.....cremated it and they.....and this hospital had a big furnace there. And she had a black guy with her and that worked for the hospital. But ah.....since Ronnie's been here we got asome information that came down that ah.....through a drunk, that they threw her in a well over on some property down there out of Tatum, that this ah.....these people knew about. And of course Tudco who has come in there since and mined all this stuff, so it was just impossible to.....you know, to ever find the body, you know. Because they.....they've been in there and mined all this property in there where this.....this drunk says that she was thrown in a well.

ROBERT NIEMAN One scoop of that giant thing down there could take out a whole well.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's right. And it could take lots of wells. And I arrested two suspects in a capital murder case on the 11-7th. And I'm back in Paris and Pryor, Oklahoma with Frank Kemp on the 11th and 12th. I'd gone up there and recovered a bunch of property for my people down here and Frank wanted to go up there and try to get some of his, so he called and asked me.....I had already got acquainted with the Sheriff up there at Pryor. I took.....that's way up there in Oklahoma, I don't know if you knowit's.....it's way up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Uh hum, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So I went on up to Paris and picked him up and ah.....ah.....get on up to Pryor and we got a few items that ah....from them, but notnot as much as we would liked to have. Ah.....I'm in Carthage inon a missing person and this Tatum kidnapping was on the 21st. Ah....and I worked down there til.....for several days in the helicopter and then I had to go to Tyler to court on the 26th. And I was under..... I was over there the 26th and the 27th. And I'm back up at Paris on the 28th for firearms. In Bossier City on the 29th. So.....you know Bobby, you can tell, I stayed busy. You know, and this is.....and this is no defense that....the fact that I didn't ah..... I didn't work vice like Imaybe they thought I ought to, but the department never did frown on me for what I was doing.

ROBERT NIEMAN You never had any Captains complain to you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh uh, no. And ah.....so I didn't.....who gives a dern. The FBI is not running my business for me like I'm not running theirs for them you know. Now I've had.....you know, I've hadI've had a few I hadn't had any problems with the FBI, but a few cases I've worked with them and they was going to.....and I had somebody that was telling us what we needed to know and.....and me assuring them that they was.....you know, that they wouldn't be prosecuted if they wasn't directly involved. And they've tried to turn me, you know, a little bit, they'd say,

‘Well we’re going to have to indict him’. I said, ‘No you ain’t going to indict him’. And you know, you stand up for what you.....and if they wanted to work with me, well they’re going to.....part.....I’m going to have a little something to say about what’s happening you know. And I’m not just going to walk.....follow around wagging my tail you know, I’ll go home if I hadn’t got a part of it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I’ve heard you talk about the FBI of course and the ATF, did you ever work with the U.S. Marshals?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. U.S. Marshals don’t do any work. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I knew that Jerry Ray James went.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:they don’t work criminal cases.

ROBERT NIEMANwent.....turned to.....you know, become a protected agent and isn’t that part.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah but their job is protecting him, that’s all. I’ve never known of a United States Marshal working a criminal case all the time I was a police officer, or a Deputy Marshal. Deputy Marshal’s.....and I’m not showing any disrespect for them, but I mean a lot folks think a United States Marshal does.....they are politicians and supervisors is what they are.

ROBERT NIEMAN Watch Matt Dillon too much.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....and ah.....the Deputy Marshals are serving warrants or a bailiff in court. Now they’ve changed that some in the last few years and they’ve started hiring court bailiff’s. But most of the Deputy Marshals are handling prisoners is what they are doing and seeing to.....that the court functions right and that prisoners are in court when they’re supposed to be and that’s what the Marshals are doing. And seeing that the United States Federal Judges are protected, the court is protected andand of course they are seizing a lot of property now and

they have beenunder these new rules and they've got to seize it and look after it while they've got it seized until it's settled and disposed of . They've got a heck of a job, I'm not saying they don't do anything, but they don't

ROBERT NIEMAN They don't work criminal cases.

GLENN ELLIOTT:don't go out and work criminal cases.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well did you ever work with the DEA?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Very little, I've worked some with them. See DEA ah..... I never did have anything big enough, I don't guess, in drugs that ah.....myself personally, that the DEA would come in on. But we've had a DEA in this area and he used to come to meetings over at Marshall, the Ark-La-Tex meetings and he was.....wanted to help. And ah....but I never did work with the DEA. I don't guess I ever worked with them period. Now I worked for the ATF a whole lot.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well now you've had some military people killed, did you ever work with the Provost Marshall's office?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah.....no, no I didn't. Ah....unless these guys they sent after this.... I don't remember, they sent ah.....two guys after this dead soldier over here at Marshall, this one I'm thinking about. And we had I worked with Jim Ray on another soldier that got killed up in Wood County. Ah....but I don't believe they was from the Provost Marshall's..... I think they was from the outfit that he was in. And ah.....because I know when I told them, you know, that his hands were in Austin, well this sergeant didn't want to.....the captain to know about it, he said 'We'll have to stay here until we can get those hands'. And I said, 'Well I'm not going to....'

ROBERT NIEMAN But I mean, you never worked with them on an active.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, no. See ah....because ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN As much time as you spent in Louisiana, I was thinking about Barksdale.

GLENN ELLIOTT:they're onlythey're.....well now I worked around Barksdale field right smart. I went.... I was on and off there, but you know how I told you I worked a murder.....murder suicide over there where the Post Master ahone that worked at the Post Office was involved over here in Panola County. And yes, I worked with the Provost Marshall's some there. But most of the time it would be the Military Police, you know, but they work under the Provost of course.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah, well that's what I meant, I was justyou know that wide loop there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.....yeah I was in.....and I had good contacts over there with the Military Police at Barksdale because being this close we always had some problems, you know, with Barksdale and sometimes their officers would get insome of their.....ah....not their officers but some of their people would get in trouble over here in Texas and generally they'd call me you know and ask me to find out what happened for 'em you know. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I guess the question I'm trying.....all these different federal agencies, did any otherdid any of the others, like the Provost Marshall, the ATF, DEA, U.S. Marshal, whatever, have this FBI attitude?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.....well, of course I say no ah.....they didn't, no. I tell you what ah..... I worked with a bunch of ATF officers, more of 'em out of Shreveport than I did out of Tyler, cause we didn't.....we used to have about three ATF officers in Marshall and they didn't work anything but untaxed liquor. And you know, theyou got to know this Bobby, your not in law enforcement, but ah.....whoever the Attorney General of the United States is, generally sets the policy of what they are goingwhat they are going to zero in on you know, what their priorities are. Which is not bad, but they change their priorities you know. And ah.....for instance, at one time there was a lot of whiskey stills in Harrison County. Well, they had two or three agents over

there and they'd catch two or three boot....ah....whiskey operators a year , which is a hell of a lot of money being spent for enforcement for very little ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Return.

GLENN ELLIOTT:return you know. But if something had been going on.....but see they changed. They ATF got into arson's real heavy and now they're getting into guns you know. And ah.....andand ah.....and also drugs. See everybody got involved in drugs here for several years ago, cause that was the big thing, still is you know, and it's good that they are. Cause see this Smith boy here just worked this case here you know and ah.....which originated over at Kilgore at that multiple murder over there you know, where they justhe's with the ATF.

ROBERT NIEMAN One of the Al Alexis....ALEXUS....Ranger.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: And he's a good boy, but he....he went into....he had some drug enforcement experience because hewhen he transferred.....when he quit he went to work for the DEA and then got a lateral transfer and he was stationed up at Denver for a couple of years and he got an opportunity to transfer to ATF and come back to Tyler. And of course he was raised here in East Texas and he did, but he got some good drug experience and he's a good boy, he's a good boy. But you know, right back to the same thing I've said all along Bobby, ifwhether it's ATF, whether it's DEA or whether it's a United States Marshal or whether it's a first term Constable from Elysian Field, if they need some help, help 'em. And if you need some help, call them you know and you'll get the job done. But the more folks that you know and I never did burn any bridges with any agency and didn't intend to and don't today see. And I had every reason in the world to walk out from over there at Tyler and tell them folks to kiss me where I couldn't and you know, don't ever call me for anymore help and two weeks later I'm helping 'em in the Judge.....but I didn't tell 'em that. Because I know that I'mI'm hurting myself and the citizens of Texas more than I'm

hurting them. They can get by without me. And I might not can get by without them, if I need some help to solve a crime and.....and ah.....and I want 'em..... I want 'em to be available.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And you know, because that's..... my motive is to get out here and get something done. Ah....let's see what else we got. We might can finish.....yeah we're into December, let's get that. Ah.....I'm in Dallas on the 3rd. Back in Marshall on the 4th. And I start this oil field investigation where.....and we'll get into that next week probably, where ah....ah.....they started stealing this slop.....calling it slop oil, they was stealing oil all through East Texas. We got two different groups in here and one of them brought a lot of money out of New Orleans, Louisiana, flew into Kilgore. And we'll get started on that, but ah.....ah..... I did a lot of work in the next year on this oil field theft and by this time we got a new Director I think, in the DPS. I'm back in federal court by the way, on the 7th. Ah..... I had company meeting at Lake O' Pines on the 8th, up at our cabin. And ah.....we always enjoyed them. I'm back in Dallas on the 10th on a murder investigation in December. In Carthage on a murder investigation and arrested one suspect. Ah.....back in Carthage on the 12th and of course you know, you got to follow through on those things.....and the 13th and 14th. And ah.....I'm in Tyler on the 17th for a polygraph test on aand working this hot oil investigation on the 18th. And ah.....ah....in Henderson on the 19th on an old murder investigation. I'm back in Kilgore on the oil business. Upshur County, recovered stolen property on the 21st and ah.....ah.....ah.....searched ah.....ran a search warrant in Dallas for the FBI on the 26th on something. Ah.....recovered some more stolen property on the 27th, so I guess I must of taken off Christmas Day. That got us through ah.....through 1979 and you think that's a good place.....I....we can get into '80 if you want to a little.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I want to ask one question on Mathis. I know they didn't do it officially, but did anybody, the FBI or anybody even off the record offer an apology for the.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I've ah....I don't guess.....they didn't.....you know Nile Duke is the only man really.....and the Assistant United States Attorney should of apologized. But I gotyou know he ah....ah.....I'll tell you what, Judge Steiger, I'm surprised he let me do it, I'm over there testifying in court in this thing and ah.....see they called me, I testified for the Government and then when the defense came on well of course they subpoenaed by back because of this deputy. See they didn't bring that out after I.....in the my first testimony about this deputy lying about me being out there with Sheriff, so the defense lawyer asked me if I'd testify and I said, 'Yeah, it's the truth you know'. So they called me over there, I was the first defense witness that they put on and a very short time. Well I was on the stand, as far as the defense was concerned, they just asked me if ah.....if I was familiar with this case out at ah....where the officers were out there at the county barn. And I said, 'Yeah I'd heard about it in a trial'. First I heard about it, it was. And ah.....we tried this boy you know that ah....deputy thatdispatcher that killed that prostitute over at Kilgore and this thing had happened during this time. And ah.....so ah.... I said, 'Yeah'. And they said, 'Well did you go out there with Sheriff Welch and pick up some deputies one Sunday morning at six-thirty'. And I said, 'No'. And they said, 'Well if an officer had made an affidavit to that affect what would be your response'. And I said, 'Well he just lied'. Well that was all they asked me and then of course ah.....Jeff Banham.....Jeff Banham was a United States Assistant District Attorney, well he asked me a few questions about it and I told him the same thing. And then he gets on this business about the deputy getting killed..... I mean the deputy that killed the prostitute. And I testified to what I knew about that and ah.....and he insinuated in his cross examination that we purposely let up on that investigation . And ah.....what happened was that ah.....and he had seen my reports, but

he didn't know what they were. We went over to Henderson and tried to arrest him and he wasn't at home. And ah.....we had decided that....that ah.....at that time you could.....when you arrested a guy, sometimes incidental to an arrest, that if there was guns laying around or if he had a gun with him, you could.... you could pickwe was looking for the gun that killed these people, we didn't have it at that time. So he and his wife were gone and it was.....it was on a Friday and ah..... I was (tape ends).....Henderson, me and a deputy and we had the police Chief, cause the guy lived.....and one of his detectives and the guy didn't show up. So we got together and decidedI needed toI would like to go to Commerce that night, they was having a retirement party for Major Guy Smith, who was my first Highway Patrol Captain. One of the finest men that ever pinned a badge on, and they was having a reception for him at ah...East Texas State University in Commerce, Texas on Friday evening. And ah.....but I wasn't.....I wasn't letting that interfere with what we..... I said, 'Let's see....we're going to wait on him is what we're going to do'. I....you know, the decision was up to the Police Chief and the Deputy Sheriff from Marsh.....from Longview I was working with. And ah....they said, 'Well I think he's....', the Chief had found out....he thought he was out of town and probably wasn't coming back until Sunday.....and he and his wife. So I said, 'Well he don't know we're looking for him, I don't think, and he's not going anywhere', cause he's a disabled veteran and drawing his pension. And I said, 'But you know, we'll do what ya'll want to'. So they decided to pull it off, so I left and went.....and I said, 'I'll tell you what I'm going to do, I'm going on to Commerce and see.....and go to captain Smith's retirement reception'. Cause a lot of folks were there, it was....he was just a great man and of course he was a Regional Director then when he retired. But then we had the problem identifying this prostitute that was injured but not killed, that had already identified this boy, but we don't have a name for her, her pimp don't even know her name. But she'd been arrested in Texarkana, we ran the fingerprints on her and she'd

been arrested in Texarkana and they had her true name on the fingerprint card up there for prostitution. So I said, 'I'll tell you what I'll do, I'll go to Commerce, attend the captain's reception and go on to Texarakana and ah.....next day, Saturday and get that fingerprint card and bring it up here and you'll have it for positive identification on her'. And we'd already fingerprinted her over at the hospital in Tyler and so if we could get those fingerprints and we'd know who she is for sure you know and we could name a victim in our complaint you know. So I did that, which was nothing just to sneeze at you know. Here it is a weekend, I'm inbut ah....Banham thought that we was purposely delaying arresting this deputy over there, because we didn't.....and he insinuated that. And I got on his case pretty good in court. They said that Ithe people that witnessed it said I nearly got out of the witness stand, and I didn't like him either, he's another one I didn't like. Cause he'd lied to me and pointed his finger at me and threatened me with indictments you know andand ah.....you just don't particularly like folks like that you know. Especially.....he was another top water.....as far as I was concerned he was just top water that couldn't get him a job practicing law and he had to go to work for the United States Attorney's office.

ROBERT NIEMAN For city folks, top water is a bug that floats right on top of the water and has no depth to it at all, he just floats on the top.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....anyway ah....he and I had a few words in court over there. And I was surprised after it was over with Judge Steiger put up with me doing it to tell you the truth, but he did. And I don't guess he liked Banham either, I don't know. I never did....he never said.....never did scold me off the bench or anything about it you know, we didn't talk about it. And ah....of course I'm.....I'm known..... I had known Judge Steiger and respected him and he was a tough Judge. And ah....but anyway, we got back on track you know and got the guy but ah....they.....they didn't consult me. All he'd had to done is ask me over there that day about why we didn't arrest

that guy, but he waits and gets in the court room you know andand ah.....and still trying to embarrass me I guess you know. And it was incidental to what we was talking about.

ROBERT NIEMAN Did you ever have any.....I'm talking about lawyers.....but first of all, what was the Judge's first name do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bill Steiger.

ROBERT NIEMAN Bill Steiger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN Ah.....did you ever have any defense lawyers try to get free depositions on the witness stand?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....

ROBERT NIEMAN The reasonlet me..... I remember one time and this was a civil case, I was called and I knew what this lawyer was doing, he was asking.....he was getting

GLENN ELLIOTT: A deposition.

ROBERT NIEMANhe was getting a deposition on the witness stand from me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: On another case?

ROBERT NIEMAN For another case.

GLENN ELLIOTT: On another case huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, wellwell of course I'm surprised the Judge would let that....if you'd of....you know..or your...the lawyer on the side, of course there probably wasn't a lawyer on the side

ROBERT NIEMAN I was just a witness, you know, I wasn't in.....and he was asking.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that's just a smart lawyer for you, you know. Cause he could remind you later and said, 'Well now you know on August 22nd you testified to so and so and so and so and so and so',.... and all he's got....he's got it down and all he's got to do is subpoena you to the next civil case and.....and ah.....threaten you with perjury if you change your testimony and that's.....and that's what they do you know. Yeah I tell you Bobby, this ah.... I through that all right. I've had some.....but I guess that probably wasit just.....the main thing that bothered you is here we are, we're four officers and we have chased this son of a gun, you read.....you heard my reports, all through there, somebody is calling me every day, he's stealing nearly every week.

ROBERT NIEMAN He was stealing anything that wasn't tied down and he didn't considered anything tied down that he couldn't pry loose.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and I mean expensive equipment and....and ah.....and here's a guy that's just running rampant all over the country you know and we're sitting up day and night and spending our time trying to catch him and....and on surveillance and all this stuff. And then.....and then some agency comes along and well you've mistreated that poor, innocent guy.

ROBERT NIEMAN Thief.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And a thief.

ROBERT NIEMAN And he was drawing a gun and he was going to shoot you if he got a chance.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And.....and we just mistreated him because his son told me that you did, you know. And ah....his thieving son you know. You know I told you about his son, he ah.....he got arrested just soon after that and....and.....and bad mouthed me and then he left town and I got a warrant for him and he left the country. You know I think I've told you this, and he called me collect from out in New Mexico and wanted to come and surrender.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I guess it is.....you know it's natural for a son, whether the dad is good, bad or indifferent, to be bitter, but what is.....you know, what I would personally have....and I think you do too, from what you've said, the problem is, they was not even questioning their word and questioning you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well III wouldn't.....wouldn't surprise me a bit in world knowing Duke like I got acquainted with him, that he didn't lead these boys a little bit you know. And he didn't want to run 'em on the polygraph, he didn't care whether they was lying or not, he was going to be the first FBI agent to....to indict a Texas Ranger.

ROBERT NIEMAN And boy he might get four of them.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and.....and he thought man II'm going to cut a big one here. And that's all he had on his mind.

ROBERT NIEMAN Of course I didn't know Red, but I can imagine Red was about fit to be tied.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Red wasn't letting it bother him, I wasn't letting it bother me, other than it was taking some of my time and it.... I mean it wasn't bothering me that much, I wasn't I didn't..... it didn't drive me to drink or

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I mean the insinuation behind it though, that would be bugging me to death.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But you don't like to ah....you don't.....it bothered me more because I knew I had some friends in the FBI andbecause we had worked so many years together and so hard together and then this come along. And of course this is an officer out of the Dallas office, he wasn'the wasn't in the Tyler office and ah.....and he had conducted an investigation up in Fannin County which was pretty successful andand he..... I guess he could see himself being promotedgoing to Washington, D.C. and being an Assistant Director. But I want to tell you

something, I I don't want anybody to think that I'm putting the FBI down, cause I'm sure that a few Rangers and a few officers from every division has made a back end out of themselves some time or other you know, somewhere with another officer. But I..... Ithe main thing I want to get across is that this guy did make one out of himself, but it didn't turn me against every FBI agent.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I would think anyone that knew you and Mitchell andand Womack, of course I know those guys, I wasn't fortunate enough to know Red, would believe for one second

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well why would we want to do that. You know, here all my career I've gone through I've worked a lot of thieves because Charles Mathis and I hadn't ever killed any of them before that you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN And you could of got a lot more money.....and you could of got a lot more money than twenty-five grand out of those guys.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....and why.....you know, likelike you said, Mathis ain't never had that kind of money and if he had he wouldn't of offered it to me because he knew what would happen to him you know. Andand ah.....those boys knew that I hadn't been in no motel room with them.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well he wasn't just working your territory, he was working Max's and Mitchell's .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh.....he wasn't stealing in my territory, he didn't steal in it. He told me, and I promise you, we didn't recover one piece of equipment that Charles Robert Mathis stole out of any county that I worked.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well why would he give you \$25,000.00 to leave him alone in your area if he wasn't stealing in that area.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well....you know this isyou know that makes a lot of sense, but Duke.....he don't know thatMathis was always telling me.... I'd tell him every time I'd arrest him I'd say, 'Charles I'm going to catch you one of these days, you're carrying an old gun with you now', and I said, 'You better quit stealing'. That's what I'd tell him. 'Well Mr. Elliott I didn't steal in your territory'. I ain't.....he'd tell me, 'I'm not stealing in your area'. I said....and I'd always tell everybody, I said, Texas is my area. I worked Texas and I worked a right smart of western Louisiana, that's what I'd tell 'em....a little bit of Arkansas. I said, 'If you want to steal go to Oklahoma'. Cause that's where he was carrying all his stuff to sell it you know. We found out later see. But ah.....Oklahoma they don't, you know, it's.....their officers are not paid....and still not paid nothing up there and ah.....and most of the time in my career, we got.....you couldn't get.....now Oklahoma.....the city police departments like Oklahoma City and Tulsa and places like that, yeah you could get a lot of help. But some of those smaller counties it was..... it was pretty.....all though I get up in Cotton County, Oklahoma on this ah.....oil field theft business we're going to get into next week, and I get some help out of the Sheriff, but you know, hehe helped..... I mean, I'm doing....he let's me do what I want to up there you know, which is help. Cause he didn't know what to do.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I guess, you know, I was ah.....you was talking about not getting paid....this is off the subject once again, but Saturday night Ronnie and I was talking and I was telling him I had a cousin that was in ah.....getting their masters degree in criminology ah....wants to be an FBI agent. And ah.....but ah.....he said, she'll be smart to stick with the Feds cause they sure make a lot more money than the state people.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah. And they got.....they always have you know. I encouraged everybody.....see this Smith boy I knew.....he wanted to go to Highway Patrol school and I told him

I said, 'Larry if you want to stay in law enforcement get in the federal level, you get paid twice as much money and your retirement is good'. And ah..... and you.....and they don't have.....they don't work the cases, they....you know, they think.....if they work three or four major cases a year, boy that's great. And we got three or four major cases going at one time you know, year round. And ah.....andwhy they put asay well you know, this is all you've got to work, don't..... I would never tell a hand that, I'd say, 'Just get out here and if you haven't got something to do, go look for something, but let's get....let's....the people that's paying your salary deserve more than four cases a year out of you'. You knowand ah.....but ah....that's not the way the system is working right now, I'm sorry to say.

ROBERT NIEMAN This is Monday, September 11, 1995, continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott. I think we finished 1979 in our last little set-to Glenn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I believe that's right, yeah. So we crank up here in 1980. I tell you what I think we'll talk about first Bobby, II worked some of this oil field theft ah.....theft of crude oil, we talked about it a little bit in '79 and got quite a bit of it here in '80. Let's justthis was a.....this was a real interesting case, it was ah....I tell you what happened. We first got rumors that there was something going wrong ah.....this was during the time if you'll remember, '79 and '80 when oil was getting so high, you know, I mean I'm talking about new oil was bringing \$39.00, \$40.00 a barrel you know. And ah.....they had ah.....they had made some new rulings that if you heat this well up you know and do things like that to them that they'd raise allowable and that they'd increase the price of oil because they....you know, they got a price fixed on oil. And ah....oil.....and of course there was a shortage of oil you know and ah.....it got to....new oil they got to letting them put it on the market ah....ah.....and leave refined or whatever and they was paying a heck of a price for it. So we had two different groups of people, the first one came out of New

Orleans, Louisiana with some Mafia money. They ah....they brought \$75,000.00 in cash to a Kilgore Bank, flew into the Gregg County Airport and ah.....some people out of Louisiana and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Would that part of Carlos Marcellos outfit?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we never.....they had their kind of names, like Zangetty or something like that you know. And ah....anyway ah.....we got on to this thing, we knew..... I knew there was money..... I found out there was money came into Kilgore for something. And then we ah.....the Railroad Commission was interested in it and they.....one of the Railroad Commissions hands found aout here on Harrison Road just ah.....oh just this side of the Lakeview Cemetery out there, there's athere's a friend of mine here in town owns a lot out there and a pretty good sized.....it's a fenced area, I guess there's probably five acres out there under fence and an office area. And these people leased this property from him and moved a couple of old oil tanks in there. And they went in what they call the slop oil business and ah....put up a sign. And ah.....so they ah....so we got to checking 'em and checking their trucks and checking the old.....what was....of course the Railroad Commission had every right in the world to check, you know, if it's an oil operation. And ah....so they were going in there legally andand.....and looking around and they was.....and telling me what was going on. And to make a long story short, these guys brought the money up and of course they.....they.....they got.....they had to acquire a truck and a driver and they had to get a yard and they had to get some oil tanks and so they went in the slop oil business. So the Railroad Commission would go in and check their records and I'll show you how stupid they were and....and of course, like we've talked all along, if people didn't make mistakes well you know our....we'd be out of business. But ah....theywe found out right away, they was showing on their invoices buying this oil from out of oil tanks down in Louisiana and Mississippi and hauling it up

here and then taking it right back to Shreveport.....they was selling it all over Shreveport, Louisiana at a refinery over there. And ah.....well that didn't make too much sense you know, to bring a load of oil out of Mississippi and they claimed was coming outthey....they was cleaning....they claimed they was cleaning these barges you know, that was hauling oil out to ships you know. And....and ah.... so ah.....we got pretty interested in the thing and ah....and got to watching 'em pretty close, and we did a lot of surveillance. And ah.....so finally we found out that...we got pretty close on one of the truck drivers and ah.....and he was a pretty heavy drinker and ah....he and his wife were having troubles andand ah..... I got close on him, I found out who was driving the tank truck. And they was doing all their oil moving at night. And ah.... I went out to White Oak, he lived out in White Oak at a trailer house. And ah....well this guy and his wife both drank pretty good. And ah.... I knocked on the door and asked for him and she said he wasn't there, you know. And ah.....and I could see his coat hanging on the kitchen chair there and his oil shoe were right inside the door. And I convinced her that I knew he was there and I needed to talk with him. And ah....so I got.....he got scared to death and ah.....the first time a Ranger had ever accosted him on anything and so he and I set down, in fact I got.... I got him and we went to my office. And he admitted that ah.....that he was driving the truck and that they ah....he told me the people that arranged it all. And they were setting up pumpers around over the East Texas field, they went as far down as Carthage, over around Henderson, up in Smith County off of 31 out there, and all over the East Texas field. And they was paying these pumpers \$5.00 a barrel for that oil. And they'd pump them a load of oil in a tank and they would come get it that night. Cause these pumpers did not want the people they was working for to know what they was doing see. Well, you talk about a 400 barrel tank you know and that's a pretty good nights work you know, \$5.00 a barrel all you got to do is just make the oil available to 'em. And they had a bunch of pumpers lined up and ah.....so

we....we set down and went over this and that guyit's another example of how ah....ah.....a thief remembers things. Now this guy was from California, this truck driver, and he'd never lived in this area before and I don't know why he got off out here, I don't remember why, I'm sure I found out why. But he carried us about two nights later, to every lease in the East Texas area that he had been on and loaded up the oil. And I'm talking about, I couldn't go back to 'em right now and....and we....you know we recorded all this. And he had about three leases down in Panola County, they was making oil available to him, and he had a bunch of 'em in Rusk County. And he had one lease that was right over in the heart near New London , in the heart of the oil patch and there was a young man over there that was pumping it and ah.....they was getting lots of oil there. Justhe.....he had a good flowing well andand ah.....he was.....he was getting it to 'em pretty good and he was.... he was prospering of course himself, cause they was paying him \$5.00 for every barrel. But you see what they was doing, they was.....here they are, they're paying \$5.00 for the oil, just getting regular East Texas oil, hauling it up here and pumping it in a tank, sometimes they wouldn't even pump it in there, they'd just take it direct on to Shreveport to the refinery over there. And ah....ah....they're getting \$39.00, \$40.00 a barrel for it, which is a pretty good profit on their part too. Well ah....there was some people out of ah....Sapulvado, Oklahoma, it was a woman and she was tough as a boot I'm going to tell you something and she was involved in this first ah....ah.....she and some people in Kilgore were tried, ah...Barber, Bull Barber and Bull had been in and out ofhe was all over, he was always involved in the oil field some way or other. Somebody ought to write a book about Bull Barber. And he was involved in the slant oil back days and ah.....and was involved in this and ah....ah....anyway they ah....they got to where they.....they brought two more trucks down. They got to going too good and they needed more trucks you know and they was going.....they were making some money, I'm telling you something. And ah....we just

didn't let 'em operate too long. Well while we was working on them I'll be doggone....it was so popular, there was another group came out of ah....right down close to Corpus ah....came up here and brought a truck and put in some tanks out around White Oak. And we caught them on their third load that they.....they had only hauled three loads. And ah....they....they had invested right smart of money and we just flat caught them out right. And ah....and of course you could test this oil and the Railroad Commission was doing this for us and tell pretty well whichwhich wells it's coming out of. They just ah...they're not all, you know, exactly which field for sure, Panola County oil, Gregg County oil and it's different you know. And we tested a lot of oil and ah....but this was a tough case andand we did a lot of surveillance and I finally turned one of the truck drivers up in Oklahoma. I got them.....they were staying in a motel here in Longview and ah..... I get off up I have to go to Oklahoma later. And there was an old guy up there that's an Indian, his name was Spanhanks, I never will forget his name. And this is another thing that kind of shows you how the Rangers work.....or how I worked, and I think most of them would work the same way. We got a lot of discretion on how to handle....how we're going to handle a certain case. You know if we're working a case, the District Attorney.....of course in this case I went to Austin and this was a little bit big and we'd had some.....the slant hole business we didn't get much prosecution up here in Gregg County and politics got into it. And ah.....so I went to Austin and Mark White was Attorney General at the time and that's before he ran for Governor ah....and ah...he was fixing.....he was running for Governor at the time. And one of the Commissioners, the Railroad Commissioners ah.....from Athens ah.....was a good friend of mine and ah....well his name just slipped me right now, I'll think of it in a minute. But ah....he was a former District Attorney over at Athens and a good friend of law enforcement and he'd gone on to Austin and was elected to the Texas Railroad Commission. And so we went out and he got Mark White interested and we

was just wanting some help from the Attorney General's office is what I was wanting. And ah.....Mark White came out himself and ah....we had a little conference down there, this is pretty soon.....the first part of 1980 that we're down there in Austin, cause we've already got the guys and got 'em caught and we just want somebody to help us make sure they get prosecuted. So we met with the Attorney General and the Railroad Commissioner and staff down there in Austin and ah.....and he agreed to send us some people up here to help prosecute the case. And he sent a guy up here and ah.....who was later elected to one of the Appellate Courts down there, he was from this part of the country. So we had.....and I'd already talked to the District Attorney here and he had assured me that ah....he'd, you know, cooperate with the AG's office any way. And ah....so that was good, you know, you got to lay your ground work. But anyway, comes time to subpoena some of these people, well this ah.....this Spanhanks guy, this Indian, and he was a.....he was a round ah.....he was.....he was just a typical old oil field drunken Indian is what he was and I got to liking him. I didn't think too much of him at first and of course he's not the kind of guy you'd want to invite into your house. But ah....he and I got to where we got along pretty fair. And ah....what happened was that this lady....well she wasn't a lady....from Sapulvado, Oklahoma....Brown was her name, and she had borrowed a truck from Spanhanks and a driver and of course she was paying him for the truck, but he probably....he knew what it was gonna be used for. But he....you know, she alleged that they was hauling slop oil and so this....he had this boy that worked for him, was a good hand, hard working guy, worked all night long every night. And we caught him out here on a lease loading. There was a.....there was aa ah.....surface, land surface owner out there had some horses out there andand ah....he complained about this truck and he caught it out there early one morning and called and we went out there and got....in fact actually got this guy on the lease loading up a truck at the....you know, and this was Spanhanks truck. So....and it wasn't two miles

from....or three from where they was.....they their lease.....ah....where they'd leased this property and had these two little oil tanks in there. And we proved who....who paid for moving the oil tanks and the whole works, we made a good case on 'em. And ah....but getting back to Spanhanks, when it came time towe was subpoenaing these folks to the Grand Jury. Well when you go out of state toto serve a subpoena well you've got to go to a District Court andand convince the Judgethe court that you need, whoever you got the subpoena for, to testify in Texas in court and then it's up to the Judge to decide whether they go or not.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well would this not been interstate?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it.....yes it would of been, but ah.... I don't know why I didn't ah.... I may have talked to the federal people and I may not, I I probably just on my own I thought, well heck you know let's get this guy down here you know and let's do it here. I....you got....you know the federal court's are busy and they had turned us down on the slant hole business you know and ah.....and Wayne Justice was the Attorney General then and ah.....and he had decided that it was probably not a federal offense. Yeah, this oilthey was hauling it to Shreveport, Louisiana you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah, I mean that's what I was thinking, that's about as

GLENN ELLIOTT: But it was all going in the pipeline, even going into.....after it was once refined it was going everywhere you know. But ah....but anyway, for some reason or other, and that was probably it I don't remember now, butbut go to state. So I'm up there, I got a subpoena for this ah.....Spanhanks and.....cause it's his truck, he owned it, it was down here, it was his driver and ah.....we hadn't turned him all that good, but he had.....he'd bent just a little bit. So they was furnishing him lawyer money and ah.....all this good stuff, so ah....we get back.... I get up there and ah..... I convince the court that we need Spanhanks in court down here in Texas. Well, he had

ah.....it was common knowledge around that town up there, it was in Cotton County, Oklahoma, it was up ah.....up about due north of Nocona, up in that away, way up there in that part of Oklahoma where he was from. And then she was way down over there close to Tulsa, Ms. Brown was, but they were acquaintances and they'd been.....probably been doing the same thing up there in Oklahoma. It was....it had got to be a common thing, boy everybody was finding new oil every where you go, you know. They was....everybody was cleaning barges and getting oil and selling it you know. And ah.....so I get up there and I find out the Sheriff up there in that county.....and those Sheriff's up there in Oklahoma, they was.....they paid 'em nothing, boy I guarantee you they just paid 'em nothing. And they had to furnish their own cars and they gave pennage for mileage and....and....and they had about as poor of law enforcement in that area right there I guess as anybody could have, to have any at all. And they was getting exactly what they paid for, probably getting a little bit more than what they was paying for. But the Sheriff tried to help me, but he told that Spanhanks was a....you know, he was noted for his drinking and fighting, that he'd.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well was he an Indian?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And he almost got beat to death in a honky tonk there just two or three years before and said his mind wasn't all that sharp.....good you know. So when I go..... I convince the court and then they set a hearing and Spanhanks of course gets him a lawyer and I'm up there three or four days, and you know that little old town and ah.....trying to get him served and this truck driver served that was driving the truck. In fact there was two truck drivers. And I convinced the court as I said, and they went ahead and issued the subpoenas, but these people have to come down for a hearing. Well of course Spanhanks had hired a lawyer and he didn't want to come to Texas because his truck was involved, but ah.....and the lawyer got down there and after I'd heard what I did about Spanhanks, and I met him for the first time see, there in the court room. Because

the papers there were served by the local Sheriff you know. The court there issued another subpoena and ah....to come down, you know, there and have.....and show reason why that they didn't want to come to Texas, if they didn't want to come.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well let me interrupt you again. Would not.....now if he was on a reservation

GLENN ELLIOTT: No ah....he ah.....there was ah.....he was not on an Indian reservation, let's get back to that.

ROBERT NIEMAN Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'dwe'd of had to cross that trail, I don't know probably.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Then you get into tribal councils.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well he was just a Indian that had got into the old trucking business, he lived right there in that town.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay. Well he was not on an Indian reservation.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, had an oldold ah.....yard you know, with a bunch of old junk oil field equipment around it, some old trucks and he was just repairing stuff. But anyway, we get.....we get into court down there and he's in such bad shape that he can't even go up the stairs, they don't have an elevator in this courthouse either, and that's another thing, it was.....District Court was on the second floor. Well Spanhanks' lawyer claimed that he was not even able to go up the steps and he convinced the court and he convinced thethat, that was the case and his client wasn't physically able to come to Texas. And he was breathing hard and showing out you know and so the court....of course you know, how you going to do a health situation like that. Cause everybody knew him up there in that area anyway and then....and after he'd been.... I found out he'd been beat up so bad and he had scars all over his head you know. But anyway, the Judge ruled that ah.....that he don't have

to come, but he's going to take it under advisement, he said, 'You know, I'm going to call you back in, I want to check with your doctor', and all this and that. But he ruled that the other two boys did have to. Well they were employees of Spanhanks. So the hearing was over and ah the lawyer goes on about his business and Spanhanks goes over to the Sheriff's office and is talking to the Sheriff and that's where my car is parked so I go on over there and I engage him in a conversation you know and ask him if he's going buy me a drink that evening you know. And we get to be pretty good buddies, cause I know..... I know.... I can tell right away that I'm not going to get to take him back to Texas. And that with his head injuries and his health like he is, he wouldn't be a good witness anyway, and I turned him. I conned him into letting those truck drivershe....all he had to do was tell 'em, ya'll go to Texas you know, and help this man. And I'll be derved if he didn't. And I set down there with one of them that night, the other truck driver had gone on home and we set down there and talked and he told me every place that he had been. See, we'd only had him at one place and we caught him on the.....on the nest. And there was another guy right out in the center of White Oak that had just furnished them all kinds of oil, there was another one over at Gladewater that was furnishing him all kinds of oil and he was living on the District Attorney's land andand the DA had some production over there in the same area. Of course it wasn't hurting these people that had production cause they wouldn't let 'em produce just so much oil any way, you know how that goes. But ah.....anyway, this guy I turned him while I'm up there in Oklahoma, just by spending a little time with that old crazy Indian you know and ah....telling him....you know he....he.... I said, 'The woman up in Oklahoma, I'm going to tell you what she's saying, she's saying the truck is yours and that you, you know, that you're responsible'. Well....and that's what she was saying . She didn't have anything to do with it, she just came to Kilgore and of course and I had her motel receipts over there where she had stayed in the motel when the folks from

Louisiana came and.....and they all met over there and organized this thing. But she was putting it all on the Indian. And I convinced him....and he of course.....and I guess he knew what kind of character she was anyway and so he helped us and ah.....and he turnedhe told his driver toand they cooperated fully. And ah....so this is the way we got in a bunch more leases that we didn't know. See this other truck driver, he told us everyevery lease he'd been on. So we had turned every driver that was hauling oil to this hook up then and it made it pretty easy for us. But see Ithe decision.....I I made the decision, didn't anybody else make it you know. I mean you got to make decisions like that, you can't pick up a telephone..... I never could of found.....I couldn't of found that boy that AG office sent up here in three days probably, cause Iand you know, it was after five o'clock and you know you ain't going to find 'em . And ah....so I just set down there and decided you know, well that we're going to do it this way and that's the way we did it and it worked out. And.....and you know, he came on down here, Spanhanks came on down here voluntarily and was going to testify but decided didn't need him. And he's called me a dozen times after that, he and I ah..... I mean he'd call me.....he'd get about half drunk and call me up and talk to me on the phone thirty, forty-five minutes some night you know and tell me.....and I don't talk on the phone that much. But

ROBERT NIEMAN Is he still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know, I hadn't..... I doubt it, because his health was bad and he drank that old whiskey and.....and ah....and he was a younger man than me ah.....but he didn't look it you know, he.....he had a tough life. But ah....anyway, we get into this thing and....and one of the guys that we turned ah.....well this young man was....had the lease down ah..... II went to see him and just set down with him and I said, 'Partner you know, they been hauling oil out of here and we know it and a whole lot of it you know. And I can tell you how many loads and when'. And he just

set down and told me about it, just set down and told me all about it. And he involved some more people that we didn't know were involved that came to him. Well we ah....we arrested him and ah....he was a....and then we let him out and we was going to use him as a un-indicted co-conspirator, cause he was going to cooperate with us. Well, these people came to him and told him to go hire a lawyer you know and not cooperate with us. And they brought him \$5,000.00 in one hundred dollar bills to hire a lawyer with. And he called me just as soon as he got the money you know and I went over there and got it and ah.....I tell you what, this was.... I didn't get Ithey carried that money to Austin and they fingerprinted every one of those hundred dollar bills and I knew who had handled it. And that ras....we didn't find a one of his prints on it, the guy that we was....brought it to him. And then afterhe....he decided to ah....he was going to go ahead and cooperate with us. Well they started harassing him, they set his house on fire. And he had a vintage ah....Thunderbird automobile he was proud of and they broke all the glass out of it and beat on it with a baseball bat. And then they planted some marijuana in his barn and was going to call the local officers and tell them it was there and ah....but he found it and he called me. Well I finally told him I said, 'Partner, there's got to be somebody that you know that.....that's doing this'. And we talked therethis is late one afternoon and ah.....just before night I said, 'Who have you....whose worked down here, who have you been around that lives in this area', I said, 'They....somebody is here not too far from you is doing all this stuff to you', cause I said, 'They're not going to', it was isolated, he was living out on a lease. And he mentioned a guys name that I knew and ah.....was a thief and I knew he worked for this guy that had brought him the money, that brought the money over there, the \$5,000.00. And so..... and I said, 'Where does he live', and he said, 'He just lives about two or three miles up the road here off on an oil lease'. And the old boy's name was Hendricks, he's been in the pen a couple of times since then, I think he's in there now,

Sonny Hendricks. And I drove up there and the old cattle guard was rough and the road was rough up there and it was about two hundred yards off of 135 and it was about....just before night. And I pulled up in the front yard and blew the horn and got out and was standing on the ground there. And old Sonny came to door and the door was cracked and, 'Is that you Mr. Elliott'. And I said, 'Yeah that's me Sonny'. I said, 'Come out here I need to talk to you'. Boy he come on out and he had a rifle in his hand and he set it down by the....inside the house and come on out on the porch. And...'Boy it's a good thing....', he said, 'I thought that was you', said, 'I've had that scope on you ever since you crossed the cattle guard down there'. And I just told him I said, 'Sonny you don't need to be shooting at me cause I'm going to shoot back at you'. You know, and that's the way I talk. I set there, and of course he didn't admit anything. But I told him I said, 'Sonny I'm going to tell you something, you listen to me'. And he would, he was the kind of old thief that would listen to you. And ah.... I told him this boy's name and I said, 'There's too much been happening to him down there', I said, 'Now if you're going.....if ya'll are going to force us to set up down there at night and wait on you brave son-of-a-guns to come down there and do something else to that boy, that's probably what we're going to do'. And I said, 'You ain't going to leave there and you realize that and you know it', and I said, 'Now enough has happened to that boy, I don't want another damn thing to happen to him, do you understand'. And from that day on he didn't even get a telephone call, that's the way it operated. Well the guy that brought him the money caught him in town and tried to catch him and whip him and filed a retaliationfelony retaliation complaint against him and went and arrested him and he was a big old tough guy about 6'5", weighing about 280 pounds and he thought he was to big to go to jail and wasn't going to be fingerprinted. And he and the Sheriff were pretty good friends and.....but he did and he was. So ah....we got that case behind us but.....and then of course like I said we caught this bunch coming out.....that came out of

ah.....Aransas Pass is where they were actually from. But we got them.....we got it whipped down I think like I said, I believed they stole three loads of oil is all they got and we put a stop to that. So.....but that was a pretty big case. Well this wasClements was justhad just been elected Governor at this time and of course he was in the oil business and I don't remember whether I told you, but Adams was appointed Directorwell I'm right in the middle of all this stuff and Colonel Adams ah.....calls my captain, G.W. was captain then, and ah.....one day and I'm....I'm serving subpoenas and trying to get ready to go to trial and the Colonel wants a full report on my investigation. Of course what had happened, the Governor had called over there probably and interested because him being in the oil business and all. And of course the Colonel wanted to please the Governor because he made him Director and it could be that it was just the FBI coming out in Adams. But ah....and I liked Adams, I learned to like Adams real well and ah....but at that time I wasn't all that cranky about him cause I hadn't got to know him. But ah....anyway the captain called me and ah.....he said, 'Colonel wants a full report on that oil investigation you been working on and he wants it in his office by Monday'. And this was like Thursday. And I said, 'Hell I just can't do it G.W.', I said, 'You know I hadn't got time'. He said, 'Well you call him and tell him'. I said, 'Give me his telephone....where is he', you know and he said, 'He's in his office'. And I said, 'I'll give him a call'. So I called down there in just a little while and asked for the Colonel, identified myself and they said he was on another line talking on the phone. And so I gave my number and about fifteen....ten or fifteen minutes well the secretary calls and said, 'Colonel Adams'.....no he..... I answered the phone and he said, 'This is Adams'. That's all he said you know. And I said, 'Well Colonel, my captain was following instructions', and I said, 'He called me and asked for a full report on this case that I'm working on up here in these oil field cases', and I said, 'Man I', I said.... 'I'm probably the poorest hand you got at report writing to begin with'.

But I said, 'I don't mind working and I've made some cases up here', but I said, 'I just....I can't if I turn loose of what I'm doing I'm going to lose a lot of stuff in this case here that it's moving just right and we're getting ready to go to court, we're serving subpoenas'. And I said, 'If you want to know the details' ... I said, 'I've got 17 pages of legal paper indictments that outlines what each one of them has done and that we're going to try to prove and we're alleging in our complaints'. And I said, 'How bout me sending you a copy of them and see if that will done until I can get my reports in'. I said, 'I've been'I'd been making progress reports regular, but you know, he was too busy you know, I mean setting down there behind a desk from eight to five, whatever he was doing, whatever hours he was working, but I was working more hours than that you know. But he was too busy to go back andand...and this is the way bureaucracy works too, we had....we had a Senior Ranger Captain down there that could of gone and pulled my reports and not even called G.W. and carried 'em up there to Adams you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Was that Clint?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...no at that time it was probably Bill Wilson. Ah....Clint could of still been there in '80, I don't know, Bill was his Assistant if he was, cause he could of done it. But see what they done, the Colonel called him, he called the captain you know and just passed the buck. The captain calls me. The captain could of gone and got 'em out of the damn files up there in Dallas. But you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Easier to make you redo 'em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, make mesee and Ievery case.....every time I'd do something I'd write a progress report on it you know. Well today we found this guy, identified him, the truck number and so forth, the lease he's on, the oil was in the tank. But I....what he was wanting me to do is what you.....and what you do before youit's all over you get....condense all of these reports

and put 'em in one report as an offense report you know. But I hadn't done that yet cause I hadn't had time. I'm up in Oklahoma and I probably worked on some of 'em but I'm too busy working to even make progress reports on everything I'm doing you know. But....but the system works that way and I'm not complaining about that, I just thought it was ah....and I got by with it. I mean, you know, he told me he said, 'That's good'. You know he said, 'Send it to me'. I made copies of 'em and put 'em in the mail right then you know and I never heard another word out of him you know. But the average Ranger would of been so doggonewell I don't know....

ROBERT NIEMAN Intimidated.

GLENN ELLIOTT:they'd of probably stopped and they'd probably do it today, you know. But I'm just not that kind of a Ranger you know. If I can see where I can do the State of Texas a better job by doing something other than what the Director thinks, I mean you know, and all I had to do is to call it to his attention and....and give him an out you know. And really what was in the indictments told everything anyway you know. And so I got by with it. And ah....but that was an interesting case and we had a bunch of guilty pleas in that thing. We tried some folks and we got some convictions and they got overturned and it was a.....it was a long drawn out affair, spent right smart of time in court. But we stopped the hot oil stuff , that part of it you know here and it was a big money deal, you could see where it was big money.

ROBERT NIEMAN I know I've asked this question before, but is Adams still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he's got a home down somewhere around Mahia I think and then one up in Colorado.

ROBERT NIEMAN Was he at the reunion?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he wasn't there this year. I hope he's there next year. Cause I think Adams will write us a letter to go in our book here. And I know Pat Spear will. Well in

January.....(side of tape ends)....on to Austin and I'm pretty sure that ah.....that while I'm in Austin there that's when I meet with Mark White and them. Come on back to Waco and spend the night that night and do some work around Waco. Ah.... I get involved in a murder investigation around Marshall and Waskom on the 4th day of January. Ah....on the 6th....and I noticed that was a Sunday, I'm assisting the Victoria Sheriff's office in a theft investigation in Carthage. Ah....on the 7th the Railroad Commission and I are back in this oil investigation and we work on that a whole lot. Ah..... I go to Shreveport on the 9th on this investigation, this murder investigation. And back in Kilgore and I'm back and forth between Kilgore and Marshall working two things again you know, at one time. And ah.... I had these murder cases and then of course I had this oil stuff a going and I have to spend a lot of time in Shreveport because they're transporting that stuff over there and we had to get over.... I had to go over there and get all the records that this refinery has got. And that's, you know, you got to go through the local officers and tell 'em what you're doing over there and all of this you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well speaking of this oil, I mean you got.....did you get much pressure put on you by thedirectly or indirectlyyou take H.L. Hunt and Humble and Shell, I mean these guys carry some heavy duty political clout.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I didn't get any pressure on me.....I ah....of course Imost folks that know me know better than to try to put any pressure on me to begin with. But I initiated this investigation and most people didn't even know it was going on you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I don't mean necessarily that case, but other cases through the years where either directly , say a Hunt or a Humble would say.... I mean they call the Governor directly, they don't go

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well but I tell you what they did, they were smart enough to knowwe....they had investigators, Humble did, they had special Ranger commissions that worked with us on a daily basis through the oil patches all over Texas.....and we're just using Humble for an example. But all the other major companies had the same thing. And ah....sure theythey would like to have some help but they hired their investigators to do their job and they pretty well depended on whatever they said you know. Now the only thing that I think that they probably applied a little political pressure during this slant hole investigation, because it was so rampant, there was just so.... I mean this was just.....this....hauling this oil out of these tanks was just a drop in the bucket when you got 300 non producing wells all of a sudden become producing wells you know. And they're sucking that oil out from under there, a whole lot of it every day and probably using some of that oil to help some other dry wells they got on the same lease get their production see. Well that's what they were doing in some cases. Well, of course these companies I'm sure.....of course that they was instrumental in getting Will Wilson involved in that investigation, because Wilson was a politician of course and maybe Humble or maybe Gulf or maybe Texaco or maybe all of them had contributed to his campaign when he ran for Attorney General. Or maybe they.....and he wanted to be Governor of Texas real bad and probably would have, he....he used this thing as a stepping stone and he got a lot of publicity, but he stepped on so many toes that ah.....these major companies obviously didn't pump the money for him in the Governor's race like the independents did for his opponent you know and so he got beat. He wasn't ever elected Governor. But ah....but as far asI never saw this, see I got the Attorney General of Texas involved in this thing by just going to Austin, Texas you know, and that's all it took you know. And so that's ah....ah....Exxon could of probably done it on the telephone and ah.....you know, if they'd been involved, but ah.... I never did see that much pressure. Now they've ah....the oil people

ah.....they had complaints, they had a good complaint they thought and I'd convinced most of themI've spoke to oil groups this ah.....they had a meeting every year here you know, some organization, I forget what they call it. But ah....they'd meet every year and I spoke to 'em one year and I told 'em and ah.....and then I went to a seminar over in Shreveport one time with all oil people involved, when they was stealing so much stuff from the oil patch, when oil was so high during this time. Man those Christmas trees and plows and pumps and....and compressors and things was....there was such a demand for them everywhere andand people just paid money, just cash money and just.....I've got to have it you know. And there was a lot of stealing going on and I told these people.....see oil people paid....they paid a heck of a lot of taxes, you gotyou got to know....you got to know that. And they really don't get their part of law enforcement andbut I explained to 'em, I said, 'You know, had you rather me to be out here working on a theft of one of your Christmas trees or if you say your superintendent or your foreman or one of your good hands out in the field wife was murdered or daughter was raped or something happened to ya'll, you know and....and we got to....we got to decide where to spend most of our time and ya'll are going to raise more cane about us not working on major crimes involving women and robbery and rape and burglary, than you are the thefts down here. And ya'll need to hire more people, you know and hire you some more investigators yourself. And I know you shouldn't have to'. But I even tried to get.....and was successful at it in some cases, to get some of the counties to sign guys to work nothing but oil field theft cases.

ROBERT NIEMAN You mean deputies?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. Because we didn't have the personnel, at that time you know there was 61 Rangers in the State of Texas you know. And my gosh a mighty and look at all the oil

I had down here you know in my area. Every county I had, had oil in it you know, Gregg, Panola, Harrison, Marion and Cass County. All of them big producers of oil you know. And it's ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN I've heard Red.....Gregg County even though geographically was one of the smallest counties in Texas, had produced more oil than any other county in the state.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I have an idea that's probably right, at one time anyway you know, cause it was. But ah....no I didn't.... I didn'tI never felt a lot of pressure from anybody on things like that and ah....and I'm thankful that I didn't, because I'd of probably got a little bit upset about it. Ah....ah..... I was....well let's seewell ah....okay on the 16th of January I met the Daytona, Florida officers in Marshall again and we're making preparations to try the Tefteller boy down at Daytona Beach. Ah....spent a couple of three days with them over there and what they did, they was just....one of the prosecutors came up with one of the investigators and he was just out getting his case ready and we went over what I was going to testify to and what had happened and all this and that you know. Which is common and usually they do they that.....they do it more now than ah.....then they did back then, and they should. On the 22nd of January old Ray Horger from San Antonio, I helped him on a theft investigation.

ROBERT NIEMAN How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: H O R G E R, Horger. He and I went on the Rangers the same time. Ah... I went over to Tyler on the 23rd and helped Ranger Dowell on a murder investigation.

ROBERT NIEMAN When had Mitchell left?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Mitchell had left ah....just prior to this I believe ah.....let's see....'69, '76, '78 somewhere in theresomewhere around there.

ROBERT NIEMAN He went to Lubbock where he became sergeant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No he went to ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Or Midland?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Waco.

ROBERT NIEMAN Waco?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN Is Red still

GLENN ELLIOTT: Went to Austin, he actually went to Austin.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN Company...?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Company F.

ROBERT NIEMAN F.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Austin. But he was assigned.....when Bob first went down there, he was assigned to ah.....ah.....kind ofthe sergeant at that timethe captain was in Waco and the sergeant was in Austin. And they eventually brought them all together up at Waco, but when Bob made sergeant well Clint was ah.....they was making a movie about the Rangers and ah.....at that time, a documentary for the DPS and Bob was helping with that and ah....when he first made Ranger sergeant. And.....but.....but he was to be stationed.....and lived in Austin for.....til he made captain. Ah.....but he was down there and this was.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Is Red still a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN A Ranger in '80?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Red's still a Ranger in '80.....well now.....yeah, yeah, it's just about time Red quits. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Well what was your feelings. I mean, you, Mitchell, Max and Red, now the four of you is down to three, what was your feelings when Max.....or when Bob left?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course Mitchell and I were real close and still are.

ROBERT NIEMAN That's what I'm saying, the four of you, you, Red, Max and Bob.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was ah.....ah.....and I think Bob hated to break the chain too, you know, he had ait was a tieit was.....he.....hehe tossed it around in his mind a whole lot, cause we talked about it. Bob wanted me to go ahead and take the sergeant's job. He said, 'Glenn you ought to take it'. And ah.....they was wanting somebody to make sergeant.....we....we....that could go ahead and make a captain you know. And they'd been.....they'd been talking to us about it and.....and of course we had some younger people that was wantingwanting to be promoted that really I guess they thought they ought to get a little bit more time on or something before did. But I know Bob kicked this around a right smart before he decided to take it. And ah.....and like I say, he tried to get me to go on he said, 'Man youyou know, you go'. All you had to do then was just hold up your hand if ah.....and we could of gone you know. And ah.....and.....but he decided to go on and kind ofof course we was tight, I promise you we were tight.

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah, oh yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....and it was a.....and we hated to see him go but ah.....we hated to see Jim go you know, when he made sergeant, Red and I did because ah....we was close, we just ah.....that's the way Rangers should be you know. I ah.....we'd drive....oh you know, one of us might be in San Antonio all week and the other one might be in Midland and the other one might be in Oklahoma City and if you didn't look out we'd get together Saturday if we got home Friday night and we'd liable to meet up at the cabin Saturday and talk about what we'd worked on that week and try to solve a case you know, by conversation. And ah.....or be at somebody.....one or the

other's house you know. And ah.....it's not unusual and I hope they still do that, I don't think they do probably. But ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN I know Sheen and Alexis are real tight , I don't know aboutbut I'm sure there's other guys that are too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you've got to.....you got to spend a whole lot of your own personal time and ah....to get that way, you can't ah....you can't do it on company time. Cause you're too busy and you....you can getafter you get....or you....you know you hear somebody talking on the radio..... I know.....old Jim Ray was waiting on me down at Jackson's Cafe one time and I'd been to Abilene three times that week and back . And ah..... I rolled in there aboutjust before dark and he was waiting on me and I clothes hanging up in the car and laying in the floor board and he was laughing at me you know, said, 'You know you asked for this job'. You know and staying busy. But ah...but it's ah.....you know how we are about that. I was glad Mitchell went on and ah....ah....made captain and ah....I've never regretted that I didn't, although Iit would of been a great honor to retired as a captain. But ah....ah.... I don't see how I could of been any happier than what I was in my career.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I can't see you behind a desk anyway.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that would be a tough job. I wouldn't of stayed behind a desk, I'd of been outwhile I'm over there at Tyler I don't know what Dowell had some kind of murder over there and he wanted me to come over there on. And a lot of times.... see I'd had this blood training you know and they'd call me quite a bit on blood splatters, so Iand while I'm in Tyler I go into federal court over there and ah....have a conference with an attorney over there for reference a trial. And the next day I'm in Bossier City, Louisiana and the next day in Emery, Texas. Ah....I'm back in Marshall on the 28th and 29th on this murder investigation. I can't remember

which murder I was working over there then, but I spoke to the Farm group that night, on the night of the 28th .

ROBERT NIEMAN Can we hold up just a second. Well anyway, go ahead.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....we're having....we're losing a lot tractors during this time too, some farm tractors. And I spoke to the Ranch club over at Marshall and they're was a pretty good sized group of farmers and ranchers over there and they....you know, normally what you try to do is just tell 'em how to protect their equipment you know. I didn't.... at that time it had got so rampant that we'd asked 'em to you know, take a wheel off a tractor, anything you know nearly. Cause it was.....they was just stealing the fire out of 'em.....if they wasn't going to be around 'em you know. And I'm in Idabel, Oklahoma that ah.....the 30th ah.....and I'm sure I'm up at Idabel onon a tractor theft because a lot of our stuff is going to Idabel. I'm back in Kilgore on the 31st working with the Railroad Commission. In Dallas on the 1st of February. Back in Kilgore and Carthage area.....so this is when this truck driver is showing me all the.....I've already turned him about this time in February and we're riding these back roads and going to these oil leases at night and identifying them and finding out whowho the.....who owns them and who the switcher is. And of course we let the people know that their switchers were providing oil . Ah....Lloyd Johnson, I helped him on a theft investigation on the 7th of February, he was a Ranger up at Sulphur Springs. Ah....Maney, Louisiana needs some help on a theft on the 8th of February in the Kilgore area and that's the reason I was telling you about Maney, Ithe old Sheriff down there is a good friend of mine. And ah....Marshall police had several rapes over there and they called on a rape and I go over there to help them and I was over there a couple of days . And ah.....ah..... I recovered some guns on the 12th of February that was taken in a burglary in Marshall on the 26th of December . Ah....back in Kilgore on the oil field theft investigation and recovered some property valued at

\$3,000.00. In Henderson and Palestine, recovered more stolen oil field property. And ah.....assisting Caddo Parish, Louisiana I think what we.....some of this was theirs. And ah... I'm in Tatum assisting Monroe police on a burglary investigation on the 19th of February. In Beaumont and Nederland on the 22nd.....21st and 22nd ah.....on this theft investigation, spend two days down there. Ah....back in Longview, Kilgore area. I'm in Mt. Pleasant assist.....on the 26th.....Foster.....Riley Foster is up.....is in.....Red must of left in '79 ah.....cause Foster is in Mt. Pleasant and ah.....on the 26th of February there was an old boy in jail up there ah.....copped out to ah.....shooting that black boy in Pittsburgh that I was telling you about, that young kid that Jim Ray and I had spent the weekend up at Pittsburgh way back here, before Jim made sergeant. And there was a guy told ah.....somebody about it and Brantley didn't know any of the details about it, cause he was just, you know, he wasn't a Ranger and ah.....and he didn't know the area and ah.....so I had..... I still had some reports on it, so I went up and got with Brantley.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well let me ask you, didnow Red's gone, Bob's gone?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN Did you and Max get closer?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh....you..... I imagine we did, yeah cause ah.....but we couldn't of got much closer. Cause ah.....of course Bob and Ibefore they left, Bob and I would pair up you understand. When we'd go to Dallas I'd go.....I'd pick Bob up over in Tyler, on the Interstate 20 and we'd go to Dallas for company meetings. And ah.....or.....and if we'd go into Austin or anything, Bob and I would go together and Red and Max would go together. Max would come out of Atlanta into Mt. Pleasant and he and Red.....and after we'd have a company meeting all four of us would get together up there somewhere and we'd stay at the same motels when we was staying.

And see after....after ah.....Bob left and then after Red left, well sure Max and I was bound to have got a little bit closer.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well when did Red commit suicide?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....you know I can't remember, I just can't remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN You mind looking that up. When we get to that year we want..... I want to talk about that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well I'd like to talk about it too. But you know I'll just have to look back and see, I think I've got Red's obituary somewhere. But ah.....Jim was ah.....had retired ah.....I'm pretty sure. Oh I will, because I I can call Aleen and she'll tell me. I ah....of course

ROBERT NIEMAN Well we got that picture.....you've got that picture of his grave, down at Arp.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it's probably got the date on it, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN We got to get that one too.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I believe it's up at the farm. Ah..... I know old ah..... I know Bob was in Waco when it happened and ah.....and Brantley was inhad been up there a year or two when Red killed himself. But anyway, Brantley cleared that case up. And ah.....I'm back in Bossier City, Louisiana on the 8th on ah.....on ah.....the 28th of February. Ah.....this is where this oil office was that.....where that.....where the refinery over there that was hauling all this oil and I spent a lot of time in their office for awhile, because I'm having to get all their records and ah.....of every trip that they made over there, the dates and the driver and every thing and the time of day. And ah.....I'm in Dallas again on the 2nd of March and that was a Sunday. Ah....oh yeah, and wewe went to.....this is an interesting thing, Max and I.....this was a chicken fight and they was having organized chicken fights up there in Kaufman County ah.....north of Wills Point ah.....Terrell, north

of Terrell up there out on a farm, had a big old barn out there. And they had a.....boy they had athey had a stage set up, they had bleachers built all around these pens.....this pen.....fighting pen and a guy with a loud speaker was setting up above them and looking down on the pit and calling the fights and people were beating. And well this had been going on and ah.....and.....and G. W.....Intelligence had furnished G.W. some information on it. So we.....we agreed to come up there. And this was cold, it was March but it was..... I remember it was cold, and the 2nd day of March. And we went.....this is on a Sunday and we met in Dallas and I had just bought that old '72 Chevrolet pickup about.....and ah.....so Max and I went to Dallas in it and we wore our overalls and some old heavy clothes, cause it was cold. I had a sheep lined jacket and it felt good man and I don't know why it was so cold that.....that.....course it was early March. But we went into Dallas and had a company meeting and made plans for this thing. So Max and I were the undercover agents. And there was awell there was a narcotic agent and a intelligence agent too that.....that was going to infil.....come in there and infiltrate the ah.....the deal. And Max and I drove up in this old '72 Chevrolet pickup and ah.....with our overalls on and we got out and we had a case of beeror some beer iced down in a box in the back you know and we wanted to look like a couple of red neck rooster fighter beaters you know. Well we'd had a little.....they gave us some to beat with and so we started in with a beer and that's one thing that theythey would let anything else go on up there, but they would not let any alcohol inside that building. Well that's the first thing we found out was....all you.....you had to pay to get in. They had.....they had a concession stand set up there, you could buy hot dogs and chili and coffee and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Couldn't buy any beer though.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Couldn't buy any alcohol, they would not allow any alcohol, cause they didn't want any heat obviously from from the Church people and ah.....or the liquor board or

something, I don't know what theybut ah.....anyway, of course, who wanted to drink a beer on a Sunday evening as cold as it was anyway. But we thought well we'd bring a little beer along and they'd think we was real serious about this you know. So we get in there and ah.....and they let us right in and we just.....the fight begins and we had it prearranged that the the Rangers would raid the place at let's say three o'clock or two-thirty , a given hour. And it was an open area and you can see a good ways andup there and it's flat land, you know how it is up there. So we ah.....we were to stop the fights at a given hour, we'd had all had our watches set and ah.....and then here they come you know. So ah.....wethey had three or four fights there and we bet and ah..... I think Max won a little money and I think I lost. And anyway ah.....when time come well Max just reached up and got the microphone and we knew what we was going to do. There was four of us in there and ah.....there was only.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Who was the other two?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN Who was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: One of 'em was an intelligence agent and one a narcotic officer.

ROBERT NIEMAN Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....but we knew who they were going to be too. And.....and ah....so there were only two doors into that barn, front and back door. So what happened was ah.....Max and I were going to take the back door and they were going to take the front door. And so we've got to stop the fights and tell everybody what's happening. So Max eases up there, walks up there towardand gets up there right close to the mike and that area and when the time comes he just pulled his ID out and showed it to the old boy at the mike and reached and got the microphone and just told everybody said, 'The fights are over and we're Texas Rangers, everybody keep your seat,

stay calm, we got a group of people coming in here, coming in the back....in the gate right now and everybody's under arrest. Just keep your seat'. And everybody just calm....well one or two wanted to go to the bathroom you know. And this is when I got old Gant. You know Gant had just made Ranger, you remember about the old pistol. And I had a..... I had a 9 mm.....no a 380 pistol in my.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Is that the one you carry out there now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's another one I got in that old yellow pickup. It's....it's..... I keep it in that old yellow pickup all the time, right there und.....by the front.....and it was the pistol that this old Tefteller boy killed his buddy with over here at Marshall ah.....that I went to Florida on you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN Uh huh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was that pistol. And ah..... I had.... I just had it for an extra gun, I had a .45 stuck in my belt and I had this big old heavy coat on. But anyway ah.....when ah.....Jim was in the raiding party with G.W. and them and they all come in and we....we had the easiest job. Cause they had to take everybody's name. I confiscated a few sets of ah.... spurs and ah....out at the back while they was getting names and a bunch of them had their chickens out there in crates waiting to fight you know. And ah....we didn't confiscate the chickens.....the roosters, but we took the spurs off cause ah.....all of 'em, made 'em take 'em off and we took them. And ah....so Jim comes outside after while and they had an outhouse out there and ah.... I said, 'You keep an eye on the back door here Jim', they still had a few names they hadn't taken in there, and I said, 'I got to go to the bathroom'. So I went in the....in there and ah.....and come back out in a little while and I called old Jim off and I said, 'Look what I found in there'. And ah..... 'Did you find that pistol in there'. And old Jim thought I was just serious and I said, 'I got to find out who this belongs to', I said,

‘Somebody lost that pistol’. Oh he said, ‘They didn’t lose that, somebody went in there and took that off, did you let anybody go to the rest room’. I said, ‘Yeah I let three go in there and use it, they just had to go before ya’ll got here’. ‘That’s what they did, they lost that, ain’t nobody going to claim that pistol’. And he.... I hadn’t ever told Jim any difference yet. But ah....that was a good

ROBERT NIEMAN At the reunion old Jim likes to spin those tales pretty good himself you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well were you in on that raid where Max went in as a undercover where he was playing craps

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no.

ROBERT NIEMANand he got on a winning streak and wouldn’t call ‘em in.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. No that’s was up.....that was up there in Rockwall County I think is where that happened. No ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN He was on a winning streak and wouldn’t call ‘em in.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I wasn’t.....Max is a pretty good gambler, I’m not a gambler, I....they sent me to whorehouses and the dog fights and the cock fights. But ah.... I never did ah.....they never would send me around a gambling game.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well that was the funniest thing, old Max said, ‘Man I was on a winning streak I wasn’t going to call nobody in’.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I went to ah.....ah.....we come on back from that chicken fight and ah....on the 3rd well I’m working the Kilgore and Longview area in an oil theft case and arrested one of the guys on ah.....on the 4th, that’s probably ah.....ah.....another one of the truck drivers.

Ah.....on the 5th I'm in Marshall and New Orleans ah.....and Shreveport and New Orleans on a tractor theFort I'd got information about who was stealing the tractors and I flew down and I got ah.....this was another case that was pretty.....it.....it's something to talk about. It's.....it was my first experience with ah.....ah.....talking to four different officers at the same time on the telephone. Ah.... I had a friend that was a former Mississippi State police officer that went to work for the Federal Government. They organized this what they called RO.....let's see.....ROCIC, it was ah.....it was a national federal funded thing to keep up with moving criminals is what it was, and I can't even think

ROBERT NIEMAN Well define moving criminals.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well ah.....acting, none offender criminals that....that move around all over the United States. In other words organized crime, for a better phrase. And ah.....so I'd got a hold of Rex Armstead was his name and I called Rex and I didn't know anybody in New Orleans, I had never worked a case in New Orleans and I'd heard lots of things about New Orleans that ah.....you know then the police down there were having troubles just like they're having now. And ah.....ah.....so I called Rex and he was up in Nashville, Tennessee, is where their office is located.....Memphis, Memphis and Rex got me on the phone, he got a guy out of Baton Rouge and ah.....one out of New Orleans and myself and we're all talking about this. And so I need some help in the Metrie, Louisiana area and this is Guy Morgan, this guy that we messed with a bunch of other times, he was the one stealing all these tractors. And I'd found out and ah.....and I'd already recovered two of 'em from down in that area, they was stolen out ofone of them....both of them was stolen in Elysian Field. And ah.....and I did that while I was working this oil field, by accident really. I.....I'm working this oil field theft and I get a hold of two guys down in Louisiana that's.....that knows these people out of Louisiana that's brought money and they were investigators

for the Attorney General's office there in the state of Louisiana. And they heard that I was on to this thing and they contacted me and they'd been getting a lot of good information and among it they told me where this.....the stolen tractors were. And we got down there and recovered 'em ah.....two of my stolen tractors and made a case. So I'm needing to go down to New Orleans and get with them, so Rex lines this all up, I go..... I leave Marshall and go on to Shreveport and catch me a plane to New Orleans and ah.....and they were in a sting operation at this time and it was.....it was an interesting trip. They met me at the airport, they went by and got me a motel room and ah.....so we went down where the sting operation was going on and ah.....ah.....to have our conference, because ah....both these guys were involved in this sting. And.....and ah.....at this time the Federal Government was paying some money tofor extra officers to work these projects you know. And what they had going down there was part of this ROCIC project was ah.....they was buying stolen property and they had.....they'd rented a warehouse down there right on the.....on the ah....ocean in a canal andand it was known.....right away they bought two or three stolen cars and a stolen caterpillar and some stolen oil field equipment, a few guns and the word got out and man they was bringing that stuff down there just right and left, people selling it. And they was videotaping all of them when they come in with it, identifying it and they was getting ready to make a bust out later on. They wasn't arresting them, they was letting them go and they'd come back and bring something else a day or two later you know. And they was storing all that stuff in this big old warehouse in a parking area out behind it and very isolated. And ah....they had a good set up. And ah.....the officers were back where they had some two way mirrors and all their video equipment and the same guys were running the front part of it all the time you know. And they... of course they had plenty of firearms because they was afraid they was going to get ripped off, cause they was paying cash you know for this stuff. But I'm down there and I watch this operation go and

we set up and ah.... and they're going to make a bust out the next day, start arresting these guys. So they're going to get on my case as soon as they wind this one up, because we got a lot of tractors going down there. So I....of course there was no use in me hanging around down there cause they're busy and they got to arrest all these people and that's going to take four or five days or a week or two weeks you know, whatever. But ah....it was interesting to get involved in something like that, that was ah.....that was my first experience inin the police doing something constructive like that you know. Cause this hadn't been.....for a country, there hadn't been much of those sting operations, they started just about this time. And ah....it was a good deal, it was a real good deal.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well did ya'll ever work any stings, the Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we worked.....yeah we worked some stings. I don't think ah....seemed like I was involved in one and we may get to that later on, other than this. And I'm trying.....ah....ah....you mentioned it and I was thinking about it in the back of my mind, seemed like that we ah.....ah.....it was on a smaller scale. But ah....when you got to..... you know you got a bunch of government money behind you well it's pretty easy to operate.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well when you're working a sting like, you know, Brilab was the biggy for a long time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: The what?

ROBERT NIEMAN Brilab, when the government stungwe had that big sting back in the '80's.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Well this is whenthis is '80.

ROBERT NIEMAN Wouldn't ah.....wouldn't you have to be real, real careful? Aren't you on awful thin ice for entrapment on a sting?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, you've got to.....they've got to ah.....you can't go out and start soliciting buying stolen property .

ROBERT NIEMAN Well kind of like..... I was thinking about this Randy Weaver deal that's in the news right now, like on Ruby Ridge you know. I mean that.....they're claimingyou know.....well he was found not guilty, they coerced him for three years.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Yeah, well ah.....of course he was probably lucky and this could of happened, but I don't think so. Cause you go through some extensive training. Before they start one of these stings operations you.....you've got a lot of training work. Because.....well here's what you do, you got some undercover agents out working all the time anyway. And they're around these old bars.....see like these two guys that told me about the tractor. You know the tractors.....there's a joint operator got one of them for sale right down there now in Metrie, Louisiana that sitting right there besidebeside the honky tonk. It was one of my tractors, they'd already got the serial number off of it, one of my tractors out of Marshall. And ah.....cause it had a piece of fiberglass that broke off of the canopy on it and we recovered it, they ran under a fence post, they had a line across two posts and broke the corner off of the ah.....canopy and we recovered it. And when I found the tractor..... I still have that piece, fit right in there. But ah.....they sent undercover agents down there later and ah.....and one of them made a comment, there's a good looking tractor sitting out there and this old joint man said, 'Yeah', said, 'That's for sale'. And ah.....well you know they got interested and we let the.....you know, we knew it was there. And ah.....to make a long story short, they went ahead and bought the tractor later andand.....because the guy told 'em said, 'You know it's a good price'. 'Well is it hot'. 'It may be, you know, I don't know'. Well they come back and said, 'Well you know that was a good tractor you know, and if the guy comes back with any more well we might be interested you know'. Well you know that just

opened the door, you know. Cause they'd done bought one and proved it was stolen. Well how you going to entrap somebody you done bought something stolen from you know. But this is how it starts, whether it's a pistol, shotgun or a Cadillac or a truck/tractor, you know somebody's going to have one for sale and that will bargain you know. And you got to know it's hot because they're paying.... oh on those sting operations I don't imagine they pay ah.....a penny on the dollar ah.....you know, those big timebig studs you know. So that worked out okay and that was a good experience too. Ah.....ah.....I'm back in Austin again in March and see I'm in New Orleans on the 5th and 6th ah.....I'm in Austin on the 10th and the 11th. Ah....and back in this.....back up here in East Texas working on this thing. 3-16th another Sunday..... I started marking those Sunday's down, I get called on a burglary investigation here in Longview. Ah.... I help 'em again on the 17th and 18th.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well that would of been kind of unusual working with the city police here wouldn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well not necessarily, they called me onon their major safe burglaries and things. Cause a lot of those boys down there didn't know much about safe jobs andand didn't know any safe burglars hardly you know. And....and ah.....and they'd call me. And ah.....on the 19th I made an arrest on those tractor thefts down in Louisiana ah.....on a guy over here in Marshall, a brother of the guy that was involved. Ah....back in Bossier City on the 20th. Ah....ah.....left there and went to Hollywood, California. Officers needed some help in Gladewater, they had two guys in custody over at Gladewater, had a whole car load of stolen stuff out of Hollywood, California and they never had even ah....ah.....nobody had missed it. The people were gone from homeHollywood didn't call, we called them ah....Gladewater called me and ah....they didn't know what they was going to do with 'em. And we got off over there andand

got this stuff and they finally....one of them told me where the house was that they'd burglarized, just exactly. And we called back out there and got the officers to go out there and they did have a burglary but still nobody at home, the folks had been gone. And ah....they.....you get involved in something like that because you get over here to Gladewater and those officers.....you know they got this guy, it was obvious they got a bunch of stolen property but they don't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Is Jay still there then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't remember whether Jay is there, I doubt it, I imagine he's gone by then.

ROBERT NIEMAN Be Jay Banks.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah..... I arrest.....made another arrest in this oil field theft case on the next day, on the 21st. Ah....on the 24th I assist Shreveport police in a murder investigation . Ah.....on the 25th I make preparations and provide security for Reagan and John Connolly, they're in this area. On the 26th.....that's Ronald Reagan, ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Did you meet him actually?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah I sure can.

ROBERT NIEMAN What kind of fellow was he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well, you know, Iyouyou couldn't be around 'em long enough to find out, cause they didn't.....they wanted to shake hands with all the officers because we provide security, but they're.....they want to spend time with the folks that's donating money you know and.....and has got a lot of influence, not some country Ranger. I recovered a front end loader worth \$30,000.00 on the 26th for Panola County. Attended a arson school, it's the same day asput on by the FBI. I'm back in Bossier City on the 27th of March. Texarkana on the 28th, assisted them in a robbery investigation. In Gilmer on the 30th. Ah....back in Dallas on the 1st of April. Kilgore and

Overton on the 2nd. Ah.....ah.....this is when ah.....they was harassing my informant down there that I was telling you about, in the oil ah.....and ah..... I spent about four days down there at that time trying tolaying around there at night waiting on them.....maybe they'd come back you know and they didn't. Ah....assisted Gregg County in a questionable death investigation on the 5th and 6th and 7th. Ah....Governor Clements was in Marshall on the 8th, I'm over there to provide security for him and ah.....8th and 9th, I guess he spent the night over there. Ah.....I'm in Dallas on the 10th submitting evidence in a questionable death to the lab. Back out at White Oak and messing with this truck driver, that's when I ah.....that first truck driver I caught out there, that was on the 11th, that I talked to. Kilgore had a safe burglary on the 14th. Go on to Henderson and work on this oil case. Back in Gladewater and Tyler and Nacogdoches and Carthage on 16th and 17th. Ah.....assist Arkansas State Police in a murder investigation on the 18th. Ah....back over at Kilgore on the oil field and they had some burglaries over there. And ah.....Marshall and Bossier City on the 24th. Ah.....assisting Sabine Parish Sheriff's office on a theft investigation on the 28th. And ah.....Henderson on the 29th. To Paris and Dallas on the 30th, go to Paris and qualify for firearms and drive on to Dallas and spend the night and working on a theft case ah....makingworking on reports. That's kind of.....you know..... Ithat's just the way I operated Bobby, I Iit makes me tired to think about you know. Here I am, I drive to Paris now, from Longview to Paris ah.....qualify for firearms, drive to Dallas, well see that'sthat's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Pushing 250 miles.

GLENN ELLIOTT: 250 yeah. And....and I mean I do that before.....I'm probably in Paris by eight o'clock you know, that morning and probably don't leave there til five that afternoon. And ah.....I'm back in Marshall on ah....a murder investigation. Down at Elysian Field I got a call from the President of the bank in Elysian Field this week here.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well I've been wondering what happened to Elysian Field, they're kind of quiet.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....they bought one of my post picture and wanted me to come down there and to autograph it, and I'm going, I'm going. I told 'em as soon as the weather got bad and to bad to do anything else I'd drive down there

ROBERT NIEMAN Well then give me a call, I'll go with you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, all right. Ah....back in Kilgore and ah....and I'm assisting Marshall police....ah....Austin police in a theft investigation in Marshall on the 8th. Ah....to Kilgore the same.....and then on the 9th took a weeks vacation. Get back on my oil field theft case and ah....recovered another stolen tractor on the 20th, valued at \$20,000.00. Ah.....recovered another one for Austin valued at \$15,000.00 on the 21st. So we're getting into these tractors pretty good. Ah...I'm in Marshall and Bossier City on the 29th. Assisting Arkansas State Police on a murder investigation on the 30th. Back in Dallas on the 2nd of June. Marshall and Harleton on the 3rd, I'm back in this oil field thing. Ah....ah....Kilgore questionable death on the 5th of June. Marshall, I spoke to the Kwanis Club on the 6th. Back in Kilgore on the 7th and 8th. Ah....Marshall and Kilgore on the 11th. And Longview assisting in a capital murder investigation ah.....started at five o'clock in the morning.....assist.....arrested two suspects, recovered property valued at \$75,000.00 from Louisiana. This is where a truck ah....driver ah.....a passenger had stolen a big truck/tractor and trailer and there was a Deputy Sheriff got after 'em and ah....ran 'em over here into Gregg County and they went into Longview and went out....back out ah.....over in Harrison County toward Lake O' Pines and we jumped 'em out of the truck over there. We'd set up for 'em coming into town here cause it....and ah....they shot at this Deputy Sheriff and that was where we charged with attempt capital murder. And ah.....we arrested both of them that night and recovered the truck

and the trailer. And boy it was a fancy, big rig, man it wasbig old diesel truck, I'm talking about sleeper and all that, it was a brand new rig. They was out of Mississippi and ah..... Iwe even found a pistol and ah.....that they shot at this officer with, they'd thrown it out. But we found it that.....after daylight.....ah.....this all started early morning hours. And ah.....ah.....after the trial well ah..... I gave that pistol to the officer that got shot at and had it put in a shadow box for him. I bet he's still got it.

ROBERT NIEMAN Oh man. Bet he does.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And he's not an officer any more, but ah....he's my friend. Ah.... I had inspection.....the inspector out of Austin was up here on the 23rd. We had to get inspected about once a year and hehe asked a bunch of questions and goes over your reports and stuff like that you know. And I never did have any problems out of any of them. Ah.....and the 24th I'm assisting Hobbs, New Mexico police in a theft investigation. And ah....on the 25th I recovered ah.....property valued at \$8,000.00 stolen out at Hobbs. And ah.....we started surveillance on the 26th of June on a known offender named Henry Bowen, you remember me mentioning Henry Bowen and he was the one that I had come down from Oklahoma City and meet me in Fort Worth, talk to about Ms. Phillips murder?

ROBERT NIEMAN Uh hum, met you at two o'clock in the morning.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Henry was.....Henry was about to die, Henry's got lung cancer and he's living over here on the Smith, Gregg County line right now dying of lung cancer. Ah....but Henry's a tough thief and I want to tell you what we did, we set on a surveillance in Tyler....let's see, the 26th, 27th, 28th, had to go to Beaumont on the 29th to court, somebody else had to take my place the 30th, I come back on ah.....the 1st of July and I'm back on the surveillance the 1st, 2nd and 3rd. And then we take.....we come off of it, we'd been on that thing, it had been going on a few days

before I joined 'em there on the 26th. But we was watching Henry Bowen around the clock. He was staying in Tyler with an old gal over there and he was.....he was a tough old.....he was.....he was bad, Henry at that time.... he was a poker player and gambler and he drove around to these ah.....country clubs in these smaller areas and like down at Hamilton and places like that and get a bunch of those old ranchers and....and people with a lot of money and that liked to gamble and they'd set around the country club where it was kind of legal, you know, nobody complained about 'em sitting back there and most of them had rooms they played cards in you know anyway. (tape ends).....we was.....we watched him, we followed him down to Hamilton one...I mentioned Hamilton..... I believe it was Hamilton, we followed him down there one time....one day, he stayed down there about two or three days. But we were set up and I tell you what, I was sitting in a little old....we had a van ah.....a Dodge van, one of those where the doors slide on the side and we had our surveillance equipment....and Max and I used it on another case....well we used it a whole lot for surveillance. But we're sitting in that dern in July, in a man's front yard in Tyler, Texas, with just the windows down, you couldn't run the engine on it you know and ah....ah....twenty-four hours a day we had him under surveillance. And ah

ROBERT NIEMAN Ya'll stayed cool.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man, I'm going to tell you something, that was hot. We even had to take a can in there to relieve ourselves you know and....and ah....it was tough. Just take plenty of ice water and take you a sandwich, you was going to be there for twelve hours you know. And ah....but we watched old Henry all this time and this is vacation time and we just all got short handed and ah....and decided to come off. Cause he wasn't doing anything but going to these poker games and staying two or three days. Right after we got off, Henry Bowen went to Oklahoma City and killed three people at a Holiday Inn swimming pool, sitting around a table, with a shotgun in broad open

daylight, murdered 'em for hire. And if we'd of been.....if we'd of stayed on there just a another week or ten days well we could of helped them made a case. They arrested him, but they never did....never could convict him, never could get enough to go on him up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN Do you think he found ya'll?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Do you think what?

ROBERT NIEMAN That Henry spotted ya'll?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh, no he didn't have any idea that we were on him, no he did not. And that's unusual, cause it's hard to follow somebody down the road if you hadn't got....even with a following device on him. It....we've hung a lot cars with following devices and....and....and they've got better ones now, but ah....it's still hard to follow somebody. It is hard to follow somebody ah....well I tell you what, heck ah....Lester and Charlie Moore and myself and....I don't know whether.... I don't know who was with me whether it was Bob or Red or Max, we lost a truck load of untaxed cigarettes in Dallas, I mean a truck/trailer.

ROBERT NIEMAN I don't see....that's not hard to do, I can see that in all that traffic and all those trucks.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I know it and you know, you just get caught in traffic and.....and all of a sudden you look up and where did that truck go and it's gone.

ROBERT NIEMAN Unless you could put some kind of paint on the roof and have a helicopter, I don't know how you could.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well we didn't have helicopters back then when we....and there was a helicopter in downtown Dallas ah....you know a truck with a mark on it....

ROBERT NIEMAN But even there you'd have to mark the top of it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Yeah ah....but anyway, Henry.....Henry claimed he didn't do that murder and ah....they never did try him, they never did get enough to try him. But ah....ah....they thought he did, they thought him well enough they extradited him, they got him up to Oklahoma. But Henry told them....this is something that....see I....that you remember an old thief will tell you, when they arrested him and told him what he was charged with here's what he told them, he said, 'I want ya'll to call Glenn Elliott and he'll tell you that he's offered me a polygraph two different times to save me a bunch of money from making bond and I refused. I've never taken a polygraph test in my life, said I never would, but ya'll get one and hook it up cause I'm ready, cause I didn't kill those people up there'. But they didn'tthey didn't run it, but that's what he told them. And ah....of course you know, you feel good....or I did, when the old thief knows you, you know, cause I want 'em.....I wanted 'em to know me. Because when I called 'em I wanted 'em to come you know and tell me something, you know, don't tell me nothing, but don't lie to me you know. And if I can eliminate 'em well I'll go ahead and do it and get 'em off my mind see. And we eliminated old Henry and them in Ms. Phillips' case.

ROBERT NIEMAN Well do you think Henry called those guys?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I doubt it, I doubt it very seriously. I'm going to go see him one of these days and if he's dying he's going to tell me.

ROBERT NIEMAN Better do it quick.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN You better do it quick.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Yeah well I told....Sonny is the one told me about it, Sonny knows about him. He was ahe and Bennie Benion....he was a good gambler, he'd....he'd ah....they'd set

up these....and rob these people, these junk dealers and people that was dealing in a lot of cash and tie their family up. But they'd treat 'em tough, boy they'd make 'em toe.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Rigler worked Bennie Benion some.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....and he'd go out there and play poker with 'em, folks like Bennie Benion, after....with his money, old Henry would.

ROBERT NIEMAN He was the one....he was the one they blew up his car wasn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No Bennie just died a natural death.

ROBERT NIEMAN Okay. Well wasn't Bennie involved....somebody got blown up and I think.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think Bennie had somebody.....

ROBERT NIEMAN Yeah, blown up there in his mail box.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, that's s....yeah that's what I'm talking about.

ROBERT NIEMAN Blew the wife up and.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Bennie died a natural death. Well let's just quit right here, cause this is a good spot to quit and we'll quit on Henry Bowen and I'll get me a.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is September the 19th, a Tuesday, continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott. And I think we got up about midway through 1980 last time Glenn.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we're in July and ah..... I don't know, we'd been talking about ah....that oil theft and we'll get a little bit deeper into it this.....but we talked about it mainly. But ah..... I think we stopped on the 2nd day of ah.....July, we'd been on a surveillance over there in Tyler on this old Henry Lee.....Henry Bowen. Ah....July the 3rd well I worked ah..... I did some investigation for Harris County Sheriff's office on a theft investigation. I was in Dallas on the 5th.....ah....6th and 7th assisting in a murder investigation up there and it must be ah.....it was blood relatedon that blood stain. We had a school teacher that killed another one up in the

Plano area and it was a pretty ah..... I guess this must of been the caseand I don't think we've talked about it. But ah....G.W., the captain, called me and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Burkes.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Burkes.....and ah.....and asked me if I could come up there and ah.....they'd had this murder and thisthis ah....there was two women.....it was over a man and ah.....the woman that committed the murder was a small, very small, didn't weigh much over 100 pounds and she had killed this otherthey were both school teachers as I remember it. And ah.....there was a lot of blood in this ah.....house and ah.....there was blood across the refrigerator ah.....horizontal and ah.....it was.....it got to be a pretty question and I went up there and looked at it and then ah.....and gave 'em my idea of what happened. And ah.....so later the District Attorney up there was going to try the case....they went ahead and made a case on this lady...or this woman and ah.....they got a little bit tore up about how they was going to show the courtDistrict Attorney said the refrigerator had to be laying down you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was the motive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....hus.....a man, they was both.....one of them was going with the other ones husband and that was.....that was the deal, I don't remember..... I didn't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did the wife kill the girlfriend or the other way around?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, one of the two, I don't remember to tell you the truth. But it was.....it was a triangle, a love triangle. Anyway ah.....see Iall I did was went up there..... I went to tell 'em what I thought happened as far as the blood was concerned. Because they had plenty of help there in Dallas that needed to be doing something you know and ah.....and I had plenty to do down here. So anyway, later on the District Attorney who was ah.....askedwe got down to the trial area and fixing to try 'em and ah.....so I made another trip up there and.....and I told him

I said, you know he said, 'Well how are we going to convince a jury'. And I said, 'Well we'll just get some blood and get you a refrigerator in the court room if you want to and....and I'll demonstrate what happened'. But they didn't get that far, but ah..... I believe I testified up there, I know I did. But ah.....we proved that it could happen you know. It was a..... it was an off cast, it was ah.....she had hit this woman and beat her with a bat, baseball bat, and ah.....she was swinging that bat and she had already hit her and in an area that she hit got blood on it and she swung the bat well blood cast off and went across the refrigerator. And just because it was cross ways the District Attorney thought that the refrigerator had to be laying down for the blood to get on there and then said there was no way we can prove a 100 pound woman set that refrigerator up by herself. And I said, 'Well it never was laid down you know'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: A horizontal swing.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....you know that's.....that's.....and you know I noticed ah.....Dr. McDonald is the guy that taught me that was an expert witness in the O.J. Simpson trial this past week .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh he was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And I I watch it on the news, I don't watch it.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Defense or prosecution?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....for the defense. Yeah, he was ah.....ah.....he was trying to ah....he.....well he'd already testified about some of the blood stains and he really is more of a defense and asomebody that's suing somebody, you know, over an automobile accident, that's the kind of ah.....of witness he likes to be. There's more money in that you know, than there is for testifying for the government you know. And ah....of course he.....everybody seems to be outmurder.....ah....for the money. Ah....on the 8th of July I went to Shreveport and

Daytona Beach, Florida to court the second time for trying ah.....this boy that ah....killed the pharmacists down there. They ah.....they reversed the first trial and so I had to make a second trip to Daytona Beach, Florida to testify and I was down there July 8th, 9th and 10th. And ah..... I returned on the night of the 10th and ah.....we got another death penalty on that case down there. And then I'm in Kilgore on July 11th on a surveillance of oil theft and get back from Daytona you got to go to work you know, you're on vacation down there you might say. And I worked a theft case in this area and Carthage called me on a robbery investigation on the 15th of July. Ah.... I went to Tyler and Chandler on the same case on the 16th. Back in Carthage on the 17th and Greenwood, Louisiana and we recovered some of the property that was taken in the robbery and made some cases. Ah.....was in Marshall on the 18th on the same case. I took a vacation that ah....latter part of July. And was back on the 23rd and assisted Baton Rouge, Louisiana officers in a theft investigation. Ah.....got called on a questionable death here in Gregg County, in the city of Longview. There was an old boy that ah.....his wife died of ah.....kind of strange circumstances and ah.....and he was.....he was a questionable type guy and he had ah.....actually been an informant of mine on his step-son who was a thief and he had helped me on him several times and they knew that I knew him. And ah.....so I interviewed him and we set him up for polygraph test and ah.....and it indicated that his wife died.....you know, he didn't have anything to do with her death. So ah.....but we call those questionable deaths you know. And I'm back in Panola County ah....ah....right smart that ah.....during that time and I met with the Attorney General's officers and we was getting ready to try these folks in this ah....ah....oil case here that I had worked you know, we talked about ah.....this two groups that was in here stealing oil. Kilgore had a questionable death too about the same time. I don't know why they called me on these.....of course a questionable death is ah.....it ques.....you know it kind of

puzzles everybody. If somebody dies and they don't think they should and the family gives a little problems so ah.....they call the Rangers you know and that lets the family know that other folks are working on the case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me interject here.....a question, of course you let these people know that ah.....you know, you were there to help them.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And whenever they called, you went.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But did they ever.....you know, this wouldn't be something I don't know if you'd want to put..... I know we wouldn't want to put it in the book, but did you ever get the feeling sometimes you know, a lot of these times, guys you really could handle..... I know you wouldn't have said it to them, but think to yourself, you know you could really handle this yourself.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, well of course the cases that they could handle and.....and ah.....and get some good interesting leads on right away so they wouldn't call you all the time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh huh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's cases that they get stymied on and afraid they're going to get.....gather some heat. And of course..... and that's why we got.....you know, that's what the Rangers are for really. You know, Iit didn't offend me or.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I don't mean offend, that was too strong, but what I mean is, maybe they got to depending too much.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Ijust like I told Ronnie ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hang on just a minute, we're running out of tape on that one.

GLENN ELLIOTT: What I would do.....and I'd do it all over again if I hadit's.....it's a lonely job if you ah.....if you try to be selective about what you work on. It....it.....it's plumb lonely and if you.....if you don't respond when they call you, they're not going to keep a calling you. An officer calls you....you know, I mean, just like you, you know if you call me for something, you call me three or four times and I'm busy every time well you going.....you going to say

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well no, that wasn't the point, I guess.....did you ever feel they got to depending too much on you though?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, I didn't feel that way cause I wanted them to call me see. I was always glad for them to call me cause Ithe more involved I was and the more I could get you obligated to me or him obligated to me, the more I could get out of you or him when I needed you. If I'm in Louisiana or Daytona Beach, Florida or somewhere and I need some help in Kilgore or Muskogee, Oklahoma or Houston, who am I going to call, I'm going to call somebody thatthat I've done something for in those areas and say, 'Look you know, I'm in a bind, I'm down here in court and I need this done can you do it for me'. And.....and they'd do it you know. You know if you.....you know, and this is the way the game works. And so I was always glad they called me, I never fussed about it and it wasn't unusual for me to be working on one thing and just take off and go over here and at least make an appearance and....and see what they wanted and tell 'em I'll be back in a day or two or if we think we'd knock it out today we will you know. Andand that was.....that's my nature and it paid off for me. Now it....it....a lot of officers it may not of paid off for 'em, they might not of liked it that way. I don't know, but it worked for me, I promise you it worked for me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I can't hardly see how it wouldn't work for anybody if they wanted it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Because youboy listen, you turn on for somebody else and they can't say no when you call them for some help, they justthey just can't. Ah.....on.....we're down in August, I'm over in ah.....I'm working a theft case out of Kilgore and recovered \$25,000.00 worth of property in the Marshall. Ah....went to Carthage and working the same thing. Assisted the FBI in interviewing suspects in the Judge Wood murder case. You know they.....they're still working on this Judge Wood case then and we had some people here in this area that was associates of some of these known offenders andand the federal folks over at Tyler asked me if I'd help interview 'em, I did you know because I wanted to, I liked to find out who killed Judge Wood you know. And of course it was out of San Antonio, but the Rangers down there were working on it, Jack Dean and them were working on the case cause ah.....ah....it was a.....well it was a murder case and it was a cold blooded murder case you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it was assassin for hire.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And really what they were doing and....and....and they didn't ever tell me and I didn't want 'em to tell me that they werebut this Jerry Ray James at that time was already a

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's all right , I just wasn't expecting her back this early.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah....Jerry Ray James was already ah.....obviously talking to the ah.....people up there in the penitentiary in Oklahoma and ah.....federal pen.....and ah....about what he knew abouthad learned from Haralson about the case. But we were talking to some of Jerry's associates down here and some of his contacts. Ah....I'm in the Waskom area assisting Austin.....Rangers in Austin in a theft investigation on the 13th and I'm in Shreveport on the 14th

and Henderson and Carthage on 15th on a theFort In Tyler and Kilgore on the 18th on the same case. And ah....I'm up in Linden and ah....ah.....on an armed robbery investigation out of Kilgore on the 19th and we recovered a vehicle used in a robbery and arrested on of the suspects in Bowie County. I went from there on to Paris for firearms training and then on the 20th of August. And to Dallas on the 2nd of November.....I mean of September and I went from there on to Lawton, Oklahoma and ah.....on this oil field theft investigation. And I'm up in Lawton and Walters and ah.....the 2nd, 3rd and 4th serving those subpoenas that Iwe had talked about the other night you know. And ah.....and I'm back in this area on the 5th and Gregg County had theft investigation that I helped them with. And I'm in Carthage to the Grand Jury the week and on to Kilgore on a theft investigation. I assist Ranger Charles Neal on a theft investigation on the 9th of September and the 10th, in the Marshall area. And I'm back over at Kilgore on this oil case and ah.....on the 11th and I'm in Shreveport and Benton on the...Greenwood ah.....on the 12th. And the 15th I'm in Austin ah.....ah.....in a meeting with the Attorney General again on this ah.....getting ready to try this case up here. And the 16h I spent the night in Waco coming back from Austin I guess, probably spent the night with Bob Mitchell, cause Bob was down there you know, just touch base with him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's the captain down there now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I went on to Waco..... I mean to Palestine and talked to a guy in the penitentiary down there on the way home from Waco. I worked the Kilgore, Longview area a whole lot during September on this oil case. And ah....ah.....I'm in Grand Jury in Longview on the 22nd, 23rd and 24th ah.....in this same case. We.....what you're doing I testified probably not more than three hours, but what I'm doing is ah.....I'm out there when the witnesses.....other witnesses come upcome in that ah.....that have been cooperating with us, to make sure that

they're available and ready to testify you know. And you develop a witness and you need to be there when he comes into court or the Grand Jury, cause they're scared you know and ah....and ah.....you've turned 'em and these other people are upset at 'em and ah.....and you can set down and review their statement before the go into the Grand Jury, refresh their memory, this is not unusual, happens all the time, this is what you do and they make a better witness in the Grand Jury and they know who's sitting out there on the bench you know, waiting on 'em to come out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You spoke awhile ago of ah.....O.J. Simpson trial that's going on right now, hopefully about the wind down, but did you come into a case, nothing quite this.....there's never anything this high profile.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But where.....where you felt like money was really making a big difference in how the case was going?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, money makes the.....money has got to make a big difference you know, it.....it does you know. And you see these people that buy the most expensive lawyers and sometimes some of them buy some of the best witnesses you know. And ah....yeah moneymoney counts, but ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I was thinking about that Cullen Davis and Race Horse Haynes, the attorney out of Houston.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, well of course I didn't work any of Cullen's case up there. But you see where ah....these high profile attorneys and where there's a lot of money involved they ah.....they got ah.....people get to believing it. But of course you know, Charles Testimer ah.....Representative out of California, at one time he..... I don't know whether you ever heard of him, but he was.....he was an outstanding trial lawyer throughout the United States and ah....and

he represented a guy over here in Marshall ah....in a case and ah.....one time and I wasn't all that impressed with him to tell you the truth. He brought all.....some good looking young women with him you know, all the time and he was an older person. And that's the only thing that ah.....noticed..... I noticed any difference in him. Ah..... I work in ah..... I go to Jefferson on theoh yeah, this is Jefferson, Texas ah.....we had a company meeting there on October the 1st. We used towe got to where we was having company meetings out in the field a whole lot and we enjoyed that. We'd go up to the cabin and spend the night and have a company meeting and ah.....and sit around and talk about how things was going you know. Ah....on the 2nd of October I assisted Sabine Parish, Louisiana in a theft investigation. And was in Kilgore and Overton on the 3rd working on the same thing. I located a marijuana patch through an informant up in Upshur County on the 6th and carried ah...one of the Tyler narcotic officers up there with....along with this guy that ah.....told me about it and.....and ah.....it wasn't all that big a patch, I think it was seven or eight stalks and they had a hoe up there and left it. And there was aduring this time they was having so many reports of these small marijuana patches that they just went out and pulled 'em up and we pulled this all up and he leftthe narcotic officer left his card there on a tree, asked 'em to call him when they got.....of course he never did hear from 'em. And I've still got the old hoe, it was a good old heavy hoe and ah.....and I've still got it, I noticed it the other day. Ah.....ah..... I assisted the DPS in Austin in a.....the Rangers out of Austin in a fraud investigation in October. Recovered some \$40,000.00 worth of stolen property in Kilgore on the 9th. Ah.....was in Mineola on the 10th and recovered some more property from the same theFort Ah.....went to Shreveport and ah.....Daytona Beach again on the 13th..... I don't know what that's for, cause I was down there....let's see did I I just covered that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What month are you in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We're in the 10th month.

ROBERT NIEMAN: October, no you went down there in.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, must of gone down there ah..... I must of been down there maybe for the Grand Jury on.....yeah, on ah.....no, I don't know, I'm down there. Anyway we're.....we're back in Daytona Beach..... I guess we're.....maybe this ah..... I probably..... I bet you I had to fly back down there for the punishment phase of that thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why would witnesses have to appear for that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I could testify about him killing his partner up here in Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I I guess that's what I did. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But a jury could.....could not of heard that could they?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, I'm testifying in a punishment phase.

ROBERT NIEMAN: No I'm talking about in the regular trial.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, huh uh, no that didn't come out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But then their past sins come about in the punishment.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right. Ah.....anyway I return to my station on the 17th. I... I knew I made three trips down there. I'm in Grand Jury on.....in Gregg County on the 20th, on a theft investigation. And ah.....I'm in Henderson on the 21st. Back in Gregg County on the Grand Jury on the 22nd. I went to Houston on the 23rd and recovered property valued at \$10,000.00 and I think this was Tony's H & T Sporting Goods store that was burglarized out here and they stole a bunch of guns out from Tony. And I spent..... I was down there on the 24th and spent a couple of days down there. And Iand Houston, while I'm down there they need some help up at Hallsville and I work on a theft case for them in Hallsville area for a couple of days there in the

latter part of October. Ah....on the 28th Ranger Guffy ah.....called for some help on an investigation of a murder in Webb County and I helped him a couple of days. And ah.....and on the 29th ah.....we found a body ah.....it was murdered the night before out of Marion County down in Harrison County. And on the 30th we arrested a subject that killed him. Ah.....Governor Clements was back in Longview on the 31st of October, provide security for him. And ah..... I had to go to Overton on November the 3rd toon a theft investigation and from there to Dallas to a company meeting. And I'm back in that area on the 4th and the 5th. On the 6th I assisted Webster Parish Sheriff's office in a theft case and worked for them for.....worked on that case for four or five days.....three or four days with them. And I'm in Marshall in court on the 11th on a murder case, 11th and 12th and 13th. Ah.....and in Gregg County in court on a murder case on the 14th. I go to Texarkana on the 17th and recovered a bulldozer valued at \$25,000.00. And I taught in a reserve school that night in Atlanta. Ah.....working in Marshall the next day on that same theft and ah..... I served some more subpoenas on the 20th for the Grand Jury service here in this oil theft case. I recovered another bulldozer in the Hallsville area valued at \$30,000.00 on the 24th out of Liberty County. Ah.....on the 29th I was standing by for making preparations tofor a dog fight raid down in Panola County and ah.....it didn't materialize, they'd ah.....Intelligenceget a little information that they was having a dog fight down there somewhere in the river bottom on Panola County, which did not interest me in one bit. But ah....that's all Intelligence.....that's one thing I didn't appreciate about our Intelligence, most of the time they'd go out and listen to some old boy and he'd tell them there was a dog fight or a chicken fight somewhere and we're out here trying to solve major crimes you know and I.....it sure didn'tthe Bandito's coming through.....going to come through Longview next week in

one.....flying their colors. Well who gives a dern whether they come through flying their colors or not you know, it didn't bother me as long as they didn't violate the law.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Didn't stop.

GLENN ELLIOTT: They can fly their colors all they want to you know. And they needed something else to do, those boys did they really did. Ah.....ah.... I got..... I worked on I noticed on December the 2nd and 3rd and 4th we had some information that ah.....from out of state that there was some dead bodies that was left along out Interstate 20 and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Body or bodies?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bodies. And ah.....we..... I I checked all of my area and ah.....we hadn't had any reports and we....in fact we got the Highway Department and we did what we was supposed to, but it was just erroneous information obviously. We had another company meeting in Jefferson on December the 6th, which was.....that had to be good, that's probably ah.....our Christmas party, yeah no doubt. Ah..... I went to Rusk County on December the 8th and helped Stuart on an arson investigation, I don't remember that. I'm back before a Grand Jury on the 9th of December. I'm in Austin on the 10th, I give a deposition in ah....somewhere upup the line here we'd ah.....this Sheriff from Panola County had....had ah.....was riding in our helicopteror was fixing to board it..... I think we talked about that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, and he got into that rotor.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. And I have to go down there and give a deposition in that case cause his family had sued the state, they later dropped the suit. Ah....I'm in Gladewater and Tyler assisting Ranger Cummings in a murder investigation on the 11th of December. I must of gone to Austin and back the same day, yeah I did..... I may have flown down there.....or drove pretty fast. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Be what, 2 1/2, 3 hour trip for you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. On the 12th I arrested a suspect in a theft and questioned him about ah.....a ah.....questionable death of his wife. And ah.....worked in Longview on the same day. Ah....I'm in Tyler and Athens on a theft investigation on the 16th. And I'm in Bossier City on the 18th, same thing. Ah.....I'm back in the Henderson area and I arrested an old boy on an arrest for retaliation warrant that was trying to mess with one of the witnesses in the oil theft case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Retaliation, it was a new law that was passed that youyou know if aa guy is a witness against you and.....and you threaten him or something, or beat him up or do something to him then it's what they call retaliation, which was a felony. And we hadn't always.....they put some strength in that law and it was a new law, so we just used it instead of filing on him for assault. And ah.....they was still harassing one my witnesses pretty good. Carthage called me on the 22nd of December on a burglary investigation. And on the 23rd DeSoto Parish, Louisiana called on a theft, I arrested a suspect for them. Ah.....and ah.....I'm back in Athens and to a theft investigation..... I think this is a.....ah.....our DPS Commissioner ah.....at that time one of them was living in Athens and he was in the oil business and they'd been losing a bunch of Christmas trees. And this was another time that I got sent into another area on assignment our of Austin to work a case that was.....which is not real good, you know this happened to me three or four times.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this Slick's area then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Slick Alford is the current Sheriff.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....but what we did though, the next day we recovered some of his oil field valves in Tyler, but just by accident, it wasn't anything that I did, it just.....it was just.....oh we let somestarted letting folks know what we neededwhat we missed and.....and ah.....and we recovered some of it and it pleased him. On the 29th..... I guess I took off on Christmas day, cause the 24th I worked.....I'm still working on that theft over at Athens. And the 29th Orange County, California ah.....ah..... I assisted them in a grand theft investigation and ah....and I do the same thing in Marshall and Jefferson on the 30th. In Tyler on the 31st. And we get into 1981 and ah..... I go to Dallas on the 2nd day of January. And ah..... I assist Houston police in burglary investigation on the 4th and recovered some property valued at \$3,000.00. Ah....Kilgore and Overton on the 6th and Tyler on the 7th and back in Dallas on the 8th on a murder investigation. And ah....on the 9th ah.....I'm checking ah.....we're getting a bunch of these Cuban refugees in here at that time, if you remember that, they was shipping a bunch of 'em into Arkansas and into Texas and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Carter was going to put 'em up over here between Hallsville and Marshall. (Unintelligible....) that fold over stock 12 gauge pump I've got, I bought that for that and of course.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well wewe was getting a lot of heat on us then and ah.....and so ah....Austin had, had us to do some investigative work on it and ah.....and ah..... I know I spent about three or four days during December of 19.....ah.....January of 1981 ah.....on this and meeting with the Harrison County officers and.....and you know trying to assure them thatcause Austin had already assured us that is wasn't going to happen you know. But ah.....these folks didn't think so. Ah.....I'm back in Jefferson on the 14th trying to help Orange County arrest this old boy that they was looking for....California. Ah.....I'm still over there on the 15th, in fact I

stayed over there. And ah.....the 16th Longview police had a robbery, they called for some help on and I worked on it a day or two. On the 19th I instructed in a reserve school. And worked a theft investigation and ah.....the same thing in Carthage on the 20th and 21st. I'm in Marshall and Bossier City, Louisiana on the 22nd on another murder investigation. Ah....Kilgore on the 23rd and recovered a well head out of Harris County valued at \$10,000.00. And back down at New London and they was harassing myone of my witnesses again down there and destruction of property.....ah....private property, they either beat the window out of his Thunderbird or set his house on fire, one of the two, down there then. Back in Jefferson looking for this fugitive from California on the 26th. Ah.....in New London on the 27th on that same ah.....destruction of property case. Ah.....I'm in Tyler on the 29th. And on the 30th I'm assisting Polk County Sheriff's office in a burglary investigation. I'm in Dallas on the 2nd of February and on to Austin ah.....spent three days down in Austin. I don't know what I was doing down there, I guess I was....oh they had a special conference down at Austin on oil field theft and I was on the program down there. It was.....they was losing a lot of oil field stuff during this time, the oil boom was going strong and they was stealing.....oil was high and new oil was bringing a lot more money. And ah.....and they had a three day seminar down there about oil field theft and invited a bunch of officers over the state and it was kind of more of a program and we'd discuss some of the.....I.....I'm sure I discussed how we made cases on these folks for theft of this hot oil and this slop oil that they was ah.....and that's a waste....it wasn't a waste of time but it killed a lot of time. It....it was good stuff, because I met a lot of good officers you know that work with you. Ah.....I'm in Henderson in court on the 6th day of February. And back in Carthage on the 9th. To Hallsville and Gilmer on a robbery case on the 10th. Kilgore and Marshall on a theft on the 11th, recovered two vehicles valued at \$15,000.00. Ah....worked on the same theft case the

12th and 13th. In Longview, a conference with Special Prosecutor on the 17th on the Phillips murder case, we're getting ready to try it the second time on a change of venue down at Lufkin. And ah....they had hired a Special Prosecutor ah....oh heck his name slipped me, I should of written it down, he was a former ah.....Assistant District Attorney in Dallas County and was a pretty prominent defense attorney up there, but was a good prosecutor. I'll think of his name after while. And ah....on the 19th I go to Dennison on a theft investigation and arrest a fugitive from Kentucky the same day. 20th to Carthage on a robbery case. And 22nd ah..... I go to Austin in an in-service school and spend a week. Ah....I'm back in.....we're back....we're down in March now and I'm working in.....around Longview, Carthage. Carthage called me on a robbery case on the 3rd of March. Ah....we had a company meeting back down at Jefferson again that month, which was real good. Ah....I'm in Kilgore and Henderson on the 5th. I'm assisting Ranger Brantley Foster on the 6th on a stolen tractor. Ah....a witness before a Grand Jury on the 9th. Ah....on the 10th Ranger Morton from Fort Worth ah..... I assisted him on a missing person investigation. The 11th I arrested five of the hot oil operators on a under.....on Grand Jury indictments. On the 12th I'm in Marshall on a murder investigation and went from there on to Dallas and I spent ah.....working on reports. A lot of times I'd get so far behind in my reports and I'd just have toI'd just leave and go to Dallas and spend a couple of days and just check in a motel room and just work on reports all the time, run 'em out there to the office and stay away from the telephone and get caught up on my reports you know. And most of the time I'd do 'em at home at night or on weekends, but ah.....you get behind and this is during this oil investigation, this is probably when the Colonel had called and.....you know, wanting my report down there right quick. So I decided I better go ahead after I got a little time and get him a report down there anyway you know. Cause I needed to make one for court.....so I could take it to

court. I arrested five more hot oil defendants on the 13th and ah.....on the 17th ah.....I'm in Marshall and Carthage assisting Caddo Parish on a murder investigation.....Louisiana. Ah.....18th Gregg County had a theft and I had to go to Tyler on it. Back in Carthage on the 19th and ah.....Henderson on the 23rd and I'm back.....I'm in District Court in Longview on the 24th and 25th. Marshall and Shreveport on the 26th. Ah.....Kilgore and White Oak on the 30th. I... I just.....you know, I stayed pretty busy all the time seemed like. I went.....we have our company meeting in Dallas on the 1st of April. The 2nd assisting Harris County Sheriff's office in recovering a stolen trailer ah.....home.....a trailer house out here at the Spring Hill area, valued at \$18,000.00 and arrested one suspect in the theft of it. On the 3rd I'm in Kilgore assisting New Iberia, Louisiana in a theft and recovered a welding machine valued at \$8,000.00. On the 6th I'm in Henderson and Troup assisting Terrell police department in a theft investigation. Terrell had lost some ah.....farm ah....some garden tractors actually is what they were, but they lost several of them and they came down here and this was a.....this was a strange thing. This guyevery once in awhile you run into somebody I...I didn't ah....really enjoy working with this officer. But he comes down andon his own, he don't tell anybody, he comes down and he's real secretive and he comes from Terrell down to Panola County and he messes around down there and he goes down there and talks to some people and he makes them real mad. He don't even contact the Sheriff of the county, he out in the county, which is plumb out of the question as far as I'm concerned, as a way to conduct an investigation. And he goes back to Terrell and calls me.....calls the Dallas office and wants some down here in East Texas, he didn't know me and I still don't know him, I don't.....you know, I never did see him any more. Because I didn't.....and ah.....and I found out that he'd down there..... I go down to Carthage and the Sheriff says, 'Well that officer has been down here threatening some people and didn't even come to my office and

he's a policeman in Terrell, Texas'. And the property was way down there on the river towards Greenwood. And ah....so I I told the Sheriff I said, 'Well you know I got a call out of Dallas, you know let's go down there and talk to these people'. And I went down there found a garden tractor that day....on the 7th, the next day ah.....valued at \$4,000.00 and we wen ahead and ah.... I worked this thing out for him up there. And this guy wasn't happy, he wasn't happy with it at all and I finally told him you know, I said, 'Partner, you just going to have to be happy with it you know. You come down here and didn't do any good yourself and I come down here and you know, we got you're stuff for you and they told us who they got it from, got a canceled check for it'. And ah....so ah....you know that's kind of how you work a case like that. But if that guy would of called me to start with well ah....or call and get the Sheriff down there to start with you know, and say, 'You know, I've got stolen property information down here in your county and you know, will you go with me'. He'd of sent somebody with him. I'm in Winnsboro area on the 9th re-interviewing witnesses in this Phillips case, cause we're getting to ready to retry this Phillips case down at Lufkin. On the 10th I'm assisting the East Baton Rouge, Louisiana officers in a rape case. On the 13th I'm a witness in court in a conspiracy case. On the 14th ah.....ah.....I'm back on ah....I'm still in court and I conducted a Ranger applicant interview and it had to be Ronnie ah.....'81, on the 4-14 of '81.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's a Highway Patrolman over at Kilgore at the time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah and I went over to hismet him over at his house and ah....talked to he and his wife and their daughter.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Martha and ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I can't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN:what is that girls name, I can't.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Huh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Anyway I'm in Kilgore and Nacogdoches on the 15th. And back in Longview on the 16th trying to contact some more witnesses in this Phillips case getting ready to retry it. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sheila!

GLENN ELLIOTT: Sheila, yeah. Ah.....ah.....I'm in Henderson on a surveillance ah....attempt theft of a DA bulldozer on the 22nd. 23rd I'm at ah....back in Bossier City to P.O. Falco Company ah.....oil company over there checking their records on this oil theFort

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let me ask you, I mean this is the man that is going to succeed you.....what was your first thoughts of him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Of course I don't know if you knew he was going to succeed you then or not.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I didn't know Ronnie was going to come here. Well ah....Ronnie ah....don't impress you all that much. And I didn't particularly care whether folks over impressed me or not you know. I had already checked Ronnie's records and I found out that he didn't mind....you know that he worked and I'd talked to several of the local officers here that hadthat had called on him when they was having some problems with riotous conditions or something and Ronnie was always there and he.....and he was up front and ready to help and he wasn't afraid to get out there and expose himself andand ah....you know to danger. And ah....and Ronnie was.....and I our personalities were different and he'll tell you today, I ah.... I

encouraged him to go to Church you know, and I asked ‘em what Church they attend, at that time I don’t think they were. And I reminded him they had this young daughter you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sheila.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And I said, ‘Ya’ll...you know, Ronnie....’, I said, ‘All Rangers don’tthey’re not overly religious’, but I said, ‘It don’t hurt you to go to Church if you can, you don’t have to work on Sunday’. And I encouraged him to do that you know and I had a good visit with him.....he and.....with them in their home. And ah.....and I didn’t cut Ronnie, if I had he wouldn’t of made Ranger I promise you that. Cause you know at that time ah.....nearly if any Ranger cut you, you just.....you’re cut, that’s all. And ah....and Ronnie had sent a report or two into Austin that he’d worked on and ah.....and ah.....Bobby Prince was a....at that time was just made sergeant and he was down there checking reports and he had written a letter of commendation to Ronnie on a report that he had written. And.....and ah.....so that.....that didn’t hurt any either. I’m in 188th District Court on a suppression hearing on the 24th. And the 27th I’m back in the Overton, Kilgore area trying to get this hot oil thing wrapped up. Ah.....I’m back in Carthage on the 28th helping Terrell..... I think I found another one of those farm tractors down there. Ah.....I’m in Tatum and Kilgore assisting Ardmore, Oklahoma on a theft investigation on the 29th. Dallas police called on a burglary investigation on the 30th and I recovered some property valued at \$15,000.00 out of their burglary. And I’m in Dallas on the ah....ah.....May the 1st for a company meeting and I carried this stolen property to Dallas PD that I’d recovered the day before. Ah....on the 3rd was a Sunday and I’m in Kilgore and ah.....and.....(side of tape ends).....re-interview ah.....one of our main witnesses, we had to turn witnesses, it was actually one of the co-defendant’s in this Phillips murder case. Located her and ah....talked with her about her testimony. Ah.....I’m back over at Kilgore on the 5th on this

possible robbery case and back over there on the 6th and obviously it never did materialize. And we did that a lot, you know we.....you just got to do that, somebody good.....somebody you thinks a good source tells you something and ah.....you just nearly got to follow through because if you didn't and it happened, you'd feel terrible about it you know. I recovered some property in Overton, stolen property on the 7th. Ah.....Panola County called me again on ah.....on a felony warrant that they had for a guy in Longview and I picked him up. I'm in Kilgore and Athens on the 12th, probably still kind of working on the Commissioners oil field problem. Ah.....I'm in Marshall on the 13th, recover a oil field valve, valued at \$2,500.00. Ah....took a little vacation on the 15th. Ah.....I'm in Waco on the 21st, went to a Company F meeting down there and we discovered ah.....we discovered, we discussed some of our.....these oil field theft cases. Cause ah.....like I say, the Commissioner is involved, spent the night down there. Ah.....back in Kilgore and Tyler on the 26th. And ah....ShreveportI'm in Tyler helping Shreveport, Louisiana police on a theft investigation on the 27th. And ah.....helping 'em in Kilgore and White Oak and Henderson for the next two days. Back in Dallas on theJune the 1st. Ah.....in Longview in court on the 2nd and 3rd. Ah.....I'm in Linden, Texarkana working a theft case on the 5th. Gladewater and Winona helping Dallas County on a forgery investigation on the 8th. Ah....helping Ranger Brownlow on the 9th on a theft investigation, recovered property valued at \$750.00, that was a gun I think that they lost out of a burglary. I'm back to Kinner, Louisiana on the 10th and picked this witness up in the Phillips case and brought her back to ah.....Lufkin and ah.....had a retired FBI agent that went with me and he was working for the ah.....he'd been hired by Jack Phillips to kind of hold these witnesses hands, which you've got to do. Like I told you earlier, you got a witness you better hold their hand til you get through the trial you know, cause if you don't their liable to get away from you and do something else. And I wouldn't do that you

know, on this case because Ishe was a co-defendant and they worked this out andand ah.....she agreed to testify against ah.....but we'd alreadythe case had already been reversed and we had to do something. We tried him again down at Lufkin and ah....and this is....we're getting ready to try that. On the 11th I'm in Gladewater assisting Overland Parish, Louisiana in a burglary investigation and did the same thing on the 12th and 13th. Ah...I'm back in Jefferson, we had a meeting with all of criminal law enforcement members in Jefferson on the 18th, and we did that two or three times. It was good, we had the Rangers and the Intelligence and Narcotics all get together and have a meeting you know and ah.....and we'd just talk about our problems and get to know each other better. Ah.....I'm in court in Longview on the 22nd. I'm back to Jefferson assisting Marshall police in searching of a house for stolen property on the 23rd. Work on the same case in Marshall on the 24th and go to Shreveport on the 25th and Texarkana on the 26th, Nacogdoches the 28th, 29th and 30th. Ah.....we got ah.....we was getting around our overtime, I noticed in our reports then we were still not required to take overtime, we could.....we could ask for no overtime, regardless of how many hours we worked well we had to.....I noticed this we.....we'd had a change in our reports and ah....so ah.....we was getting by without having to work any.....you know, showing taking off extra time, but that finally stopped. I'm in Dallas on the 1st of July. I'm in Marshall and Benton, Louisiana on the 2nd. Ah....to Lufkin to retry the Phillips on the 5th day of July, I started.....I'm in Lufkin on the 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th in court down there in this case and we got this guy another death sentence. Ah.....I'm in New London and Henderson on an investigation on the 13th. In Carthage on the 14th and ah.....I went to identi-kit school in Carthage on the 15th and ah.....it was a one day school and we.....they got.....these kits were pretty popular then and ah.....this artist conception is the best identification there is really.....for.....to draw somebody. But these identi-kits.....you could put together a

profile, a pretty good profile, of a suspect. I know Iafter I did this I ah.....no this was before I did this, I got a guy that ah.....to do it and ah.....the old boy saw his ah.....the profile and when.....we had it on ablown up on a bulletin board when he was arrested and he was quite impressed with the likeness of himself you know. Ah....I'm in Austin for a new unit on the 21st of July, so I must of got me an '81 Plymouth. Ah...I ah....on theI took a vacation that next week and I assisted.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sheriff's convention?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....no I didn't....well no, I'd of shownif I was on ah....we didn't have to take vacation to go to Sheriff's convention, that's part of our duty.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....I'm surprised I didn't go, I probably did on down....cause this is the last week in July, I don't guess I went that year. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is it still part of.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they...I think they let two Rangers from each company go to the Sheriff's convention each year. It's good....it's good, it's really good. You got to know the Sheriff's, you're using their jails all the time and ah....you just got to know 'em to get your job done. Ah....I'm working a burglary case out of Kilgore and I'm in Marshall and Benton, Louisiana, Longview had a theft case. August the 2nd I'm assisting Company F in a murder, I don't remember what that was. In Dallas on the 3rd and back in Henderson on the 4th and ah....helping Waco with their murder investigation. I left there and went to Paris for firearms training, up there on the 5th. Ah....had a inventory check by Sergeant Moore, old Charlie Moore is our Sergeant down here now. And then I'm back over trying to help Henderson onI mean Waco on their murder investigation. I tell you what that probably was, that was probably this ah....this guy that ah....yeah,

that ah....tire store man that got killed down there in Waco, he got killed and threw ah.....found his body under a bridge up there between Dallas and....and ah....oh Huntsville, somewhere down there. Ah....he had two or three wives and he had just....people up here had loaned him a lot of money. There's one guy here in Longview that loaned him a million dollars, had him insured and then the bank that this guy was interested in, in Mt. Pleasant, had loaned him a million and he was two million dollars in debt and was insured. And we did....I did a lot of work on that thing. And ah....ah.....Marshall and Kilgore on the 10th, Jacksonville on the 11th and recovered some stolen property down there valued at \$800.00. Quitman and Marshall on the 12th. Ah....I'm back helping Company F ah....ah....oh well I'm helping Company F on the 19th on this Mike Martin who was State Representative here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You want to.....I remember that case, you want to give the background on it cause it was kind of interesting.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh Mike....Mike Martin was a young ah....young guy that....that was really interested in politics I think, but he....he was a....he was a....he had a lot of ego. And Mike would ah....had ran against John Allen for State Representative here and John had ah...had been exposed you might say, his....through this nepotism law. And John got some bad publicity, his daughter was going to school I think down at Austin and....and he'd got her a job and ah....and ah.....and it...they proved it was nepotism you know. And ah....so John got some bad publicity and this boy was running against John and he beat him. Well it kind of went to this kid's head and he went down to Austin and he rented....carried him a little old motor home down there to live in I think, or was living in a trailer park. And ah....and he decided....he concocted this....concocted this deal to ah....ah....he and this cousin of his and ah....and they went out to their farm out here and practiced shooting into some stuff and so he was ah....he was trying to be a kind of a gang busters type

representative. And so he had his cousin shoot at him down there at Austin and shot him in the hand, got behind a car and held his hand up and one of the slugs hit him in the hand. He was trying to run....he wanted to run for the Senate, that was his ambition.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He had his cousin shoot him with a shotgun wasn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you remember how heavy a gauge it was, I mean was it.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a 12 gauge shotgun, we recovered the shotgun.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was it bird shot or

GLENN ELLIOTT: No it was buckshot. And he hurt his hand pretty bad, it...it liked to got out of hand and I don't think he intended to hurt himself that bad. Well I was on vacation when this thing happened and I get back off of vacation and G.W.....I love G.W. and I love the Rangers, but he had brought his SWAT team down here. And Stuart had interviewed Martin and made a big ah...ah...ah....statement to the paper that he thought he was telling the truth and all this kind of stuff you know. And....and ah.....I get back off of vacation and there's an investigator for Austin PD and ah....the District Attorney's office was up here. And....and ah....we got to kicking it around and it was obvious that ah....ah.....this was a set up deal. In fact he was getting some threats too here, telephone threats and this same cousin was doing that. And they had a.....they had a tap on his telephone and a tracing system and they traced it to a pay telephone and oh they was really making....you know, it was just a lot of publicity about it. But anyway, to make a long story short, we finally ah....got this cousin in and ah.....and he admitted his part and he'd borrowed the shotgun from his brother over at Marshall and....and ah....we already knew that. And ah....so ah....we made a case on him and eventually got a change of venue and tried him down at Fredricksburg and he plead guilty before the trial was over. Ah....I'm in Waco.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what happened to him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....I think he got probated sentence and you know....and then of course he....he got beat and ah....and he left the country and ah....but we went out ah....we went out and found the paper, the roll with the paper in it, this guy had....this cousin had told us that they....they got some ah...ah....butcher paper, and his mother and daddy were gone on a trip. And they went out to their farm, which is right up here in Upshur County somewhere around East Mountain somewhere in that area, I forget and I was up there several times, I couldn't go back today at all. And ah....he told us that they'd gone up there and rolled some of this butcher paper out ah....and put some hay behind it and shot into it to see what kind of pattern this shotgun would shoot at a certain distance, before they did this down at Austin. And we even found the roll, the pasteboard roll, up there where he told us that they were practicing at the farm. And we made a pretty good case on him I think and Stuart worked on it a whole lot too. Ah....let's see on the 3rd of September....on the 2nd of September I'm in Austin conferring with the District Attorney on this Martin case. And ah....well let's see...well we....we back up, I'm in....go into Dallas on the 1st....yeah and we got another change in our reports and then I left Dallas going on to Austin. Come back into Waco....ah....I always...you know, every time I'd get a chance to come through Waco I'd go to see old Bob you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mitchell.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, sit down and talk about something you know, if it was wrong. And then of course Bobby Prince was his sergeant then and he was carrying the paper I think on this ah....on ah....Martin's deal you know. So he....I had to confer with him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Austin is Company F or is it Company B?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Company....ah...Austin was Company F then, Austin is Headquarters Company now as I understand, but it was....in fact Bob Prince I think was in Austin at the time. It used to be the sergeant was in Austin, the captain in Waco you know. And ah....ah....I'm in Palestine then on the....let's see Kilgore and Palestine on the 8th and 9th and ah....ah....recovered stolen property valued at \$40,000.00. Kilgore on the 10th, I'm working on the same case. I'm back on the Martin case on the 11th, took statements at ah....from his parents and ah....this is when we checked out there at the farm and found that....ran that search out there with their consent. Ah....worked on it on the 14th. Carthage called me on a murder investigation on the 15th. And I'm in Shreveport on the 16th, 17, 18th, 19th, 20th and 21st, this was a....and the 22nd ah....this was an interesting case ah....it was a funny thing and this happens a whole lot and I don't say this with no disrespect. But there was a Deputy Sheriff down there that ah....and this FBI officer from Shreveport called and they found this dead body down in....right on Louisiana line, way down deep in southeast Panola County. And ah....it...the guy died from the elements according to the autopsy and he was petrified. And this is the first petrified body that I guess I'd ever remembered seeing. Most bodies would just deteriorate you know. This guy was just petrified.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did they said it would take for the body to do that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I don't remember, not that awful long, cause it's in the summer time. And ah...well no wait a minute, it may have been in winter time. But you know what ah....and this proved to me....of course I'd always heard that ah....that the buzzard wouldn't mess with a human body, but you know, nothing had disturbed that body, which is unusual. And it was found down there by an oil field worker and he'd been tied and his hands and feet were tied and he was in kind of a crumped up position and he was just petrified. Well ah....nobody was ah...ah...he was a homosexual thata bar hopper from over there in Bossier City and ah....so....but this FBI agent

called back early in this thing and I don't think they called me when they found the body, cause I was probably in Austin or somewhere else doing something else. But ah....when this FBI agent called Marshall and told them that he had an informant over there that had told him that ah....that ah....her daughter was with this guy when they....when they carried this guy down there and tied him up. And ah....so this officer asked me if ah....down in Carthage, he said, 'Well I didn't have....I hadn't got any authority in Louisiana and will you go over there'. Like I had authority over there too you know, but I didn't mind going of course and I went to Louisiana and ah...and of course this lady made her daughter available to us and we took a statement from her about the crime and identified the subject and ah....he was.....his name was Grap and ah.....and we finally arrested him and he had some of the ah.....the victims identification on his property.....on his person when we arrested him. And he was a sorry old boy and ah.....and he'd been.....he had this.....this.....this woman's daughter was a good looking, nice looking young girl, but ah.....she'd learned to smoke a little of that old dope and take some of that old dope and he'd got her out and had her to hustling. And ah.....and they'd hustled this old boy in a bar that night and they was going to rob him and they took him over there and did take his money, took him over there and just tied him up and left him. But we charged them with murder cause hethe autopsy said he died of the elements but he was tied and left there you know. So if he'd of.....if he hadn't of been tied well we probably couldn't of made much of a case on 'em, maybe kidnapping you know or something like that. But ah....anyway we.... I worked that thing for several days and it was an interesting case because this old boy ran from us, he was hiding out. He was a tough old boy and ah....but we finally caught him over there and ah.....arrested him and I brought him back to Carthage the same day and ah.... took a statement from him. And this is another funny thing that happens to us and this is not..... I had this old boy, he signed extradition, brought him back to Carthage, I took a voluntary statement from him, got all his

details and he offered to plead guilty and take twenty-five years, waive a Grand Jury. And the District Attorney, no I'm going to give him, you know, a lot more time you know. Well so what you know, go ahead and do it you know. Well he escaped jail, picked him back up and finally I think he plead guilty and took fifteen years for both things you know. And sometimes ah...ah....you know we try to work things out for 'em, if they don't most of 'em would let us go ahead and say, 'Yeah Elliott let's do it you know'. Andbut ah.....this....this....in this case he didn't for some reason or other and it wasn't any local victim or anything involved in that thing. Ah.....we're getting down here.....you want to go on through this or you want to shut down?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where are we at?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where are we at?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We're down in September of ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Let's go ahead and finish the year out.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, okay, that's good. Ah..... I arrested old Grap on the 24th and brought him back to Texas. And ah.....on the 25th I recovered aLongview had a theft of a pipe truck and ah.....on the 28th I'm in Marshall and back over in Bossier City and arrested a suspect in the theft of the truck and the pipe. And ah.....on the 29th I'm in.....back in Carthage and recovered stolen property in Shreveport valued at \$3,000.00. I'm in Kilgore on the same theft case for them. In Dallas on the 1st of October and then Kilgore and Overton on the 5th assisting Arcadia Parish, Louisiana Sheriff's office in a burglary investigation, recovered some guns for them. Kilgore and Henderson on the same case on the 7th and back in Carthage on the murder case on the 8th, probably talking to Graps some more. And ah.....ah....I'm in Marshall on the 9th on the same thing. And I'm in court in Marshall that week for two days. And ah.....and then I have a court hearing on

the 15th on this guy that we arrested for murder over in Louisiana for Carthage on the 15th. Ah.....Kilgore called me on a capital murder and arson case on the 17th and I can't find that..... I can't remember that. But I worked on that thing for several days and I'm goingI'm goingI got to find that..... I went through my old murder cases and I can't even remember it. An arson and a capital murder, so somebody must of killed somebody and then set their house on fire. But Iyou know every once in awhile a case that will get away from you and that one sure got away from me. Ah....on the 28th I'm back in Bossier City on a murder.....on this same murder investigation, I'm over there at their lab, theythey did the autopsy over there in Louisiana. Panola County for some reason or other thought that because this guy was from Louisiana that.....and this is not good to go ah.....because it's hard to get witnesses out of state into court you know and he should of been carried to Dallas. I'm in Dallas the 1stthe 2nd of November. Ah....we're conducting some kind of surveillance around Longview on a theft on the 3rd and 4th. Ah....Bossier City, Louisiana, I helped them on the 5th on a murder investigation and the 6th. I'm in Carthage on the 9th for Grand Jury, which was.....that was probably Monday, yeah. Ah....on the 10th ah.....ah..... I got another capital murder investigation. I'm in Jefferson and Vivian, Louisiana working on it on the 12th and 13th. Ah....I'm in Overton assisting Caddo Parish on a theft investigation on the 16th and back on my murder case. Ah....I'm in ahon the 17th I conferred with the Gregg County DA on extradition to Lafayette, Louisiana party on a theft investigation. Ah....back in Kilgore on the 18th on that murder. I go to Lafayette, Louisiana for the court on the 19th. Ah....back in Kilgore on the 20th. On the 23rd I'm in Atlanta assisting Harrison County on a robbery investigation, I'm up there on the 24th also. Ah....back in Kilgore on the 25th. I'm in Carthage on the 30th on a special investigation this ah.....ah.....probably some complaints out of Austin ah....cause we had a few down at Carthage. I work on this murder case still in the first of

December quite a bit. Ah....ah....we had another murder on ah.....December the 3rd ah.....or the night of December the 2nd, which was an interesting. An old boy named Pete Boykin got murdered.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pete what?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Pete Boykin.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: B O Y K I N. Pete was an oil field thief, he was another one of those guys that probably needed killing you know. Pete was just no good. But the guy that killed him was....was twice as bad, Jerry Don Stuart was a.....Jerry had been playing hooky from the penitentiary for a good while. He was....old Jerry was tough. He'd gohe'd carry a gun all the time, he was a convicted felon and he'd been convicted of bank robbery down at San Antonio and ah.....Jerry had been in and out of trouble. Jerry Stuart was ah....ah....what they.....the Louisiana..... we went.....we had what we call the ah.....oh kind of a.....it wasn't a Mafia type, it was kind of the Louisiana and Texas ah....ah....organized crime bunch and Jerry was pretty much the head of it in Texas and he spent a lot of time over in Shreveport and Bossier City gambling and prostitution and just dealing in stolen property. But Jerry was another one that as far as I was concerned though, I called him an honorable theFort I could call Jerry Stuart and he'd come you know and ah..... I got Jerry off the hook you know, like I told you, he was a suspect in this Leslie murder where the guy that was trying to get the ah.....the lobbyist for getting the right to work law passed in Louisiana and got killed that same day that ah.....that they passed the law. And they thought Jerry was involved in that and I I did a lot investigating on it and ah.....and really got old Jerry off the hook. I put Jerry in Good Shepherd Hospital that night, visiting his wife and the only reason I could, there was a disturbance, he brought her a bunch of chicken livers, he was about half drunk, brought a bunch

of chicken livers up there and they didn't.....were eating 'em you know at ten, eleven o'clock at night. And he caused a disturbance and that's about all that saved him, cause ah....this....this murder was going on about the same time or had gone on about two hours earlier down at Baton Rouge, so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Thank god for chicken livers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And anyway, Jerry.....what happened.....this was a real.....this is a case that's ah.....we.....you know we was lucky on it. This happened and they called me out about midnightand you getting tired you need to go..... called me out about midnight and I got with the deputies and we worked all night. And ah....ah.....there was a kid, a drifter, coming through here and there was an old Texaco station over here on Interstate 20 and 259, it's 31 now, it's been torn down, it was the one right there on the south.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had a bunch of mobile homemotel behind it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, behind it. All right, that station had been closed a good while and this kid was traveling through here and he was.....he was kind of one of these free travel, pot smoking boys and.....that didn't want to work, just kind of going back to

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hitchhike from one end of the country to the other.

GLENN ELLIOTT:California to Georgia and his folks was in California and his grandparents was in Georgia, Mississippi or somewhere down there. And he was sleeping in ah.....under the ah.....in the rest room on the floor and ah.....he heard this car come up and ah....and he was ah.....and they got in an argument and he heard these shots fired. Well what happened was, Stuart got out of the car with a shotgun and old Jerry knew he was fixing to shoot him so he gets over under the steering wheel and drives.....starts off. And.....and Jerry shoots him and then he drives about three miles down the road before he passes out and runs off the road. They're together

and ah.....they're in Jerry's car and ah.....so Jerry hooks 'em and he drops the pistol ah.....as a Deputy Sheriff comes by and ah.....and sees Jerry and ah.....no the Deputy Sheriff came by and....and went on down to the car wreck, that's what happened. But Jerry saw the deputy go by and he dropped the pistol there by the post and he walked home through the woods and it wasn't far out of Kilgore. And of course I had Jerry's telephone number at home, he had an unlisted phone number. Well ah....Boykin said 'Jerry did it'. Well we interview this witness up there, that's sleeping up there, and he.....he describes Jerry pretty good and he had on.....but what he described better was a red jumpsuit that had a bunch of stuff on the back of it. It was kind of New Orleans type jumpsuit that had a bunch of.....ohlike they dress 'em up down there in the Madri Gras you know, snakes and whatever, old alligators or something you know. Anyway, he described Jerry to a tee and plus....boy that red jumpsuit, he had it down pat. So ah.....we worked on the thing after....oh three or four o'clock that morning, well we finally got a....we found out that this.....this guy said that Jerry did it you know and it was Jerry's car. And ah.....so I called.....had the police department in Kilgore call Stuart and tell him we want to talk to him and they told me to come on by and went by the house and he signed a consent to search. He signed it.....he called his lawyer first and ah.....you call your lawyer and ah.....I'm sure his lawyer said, 'Well is there anything in there that they.....', you know..... 'No'. But he signed a consent to search and ah.....of course we seized his coveralls, because that boy had described 'em to a tee. And ah....then ah.....we....we also found a shotgun case with no gun in it, we never did find the shotgun. But we convicted old Jerry for shooting Pete Boykin.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Pete die?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Pete died, Pete died that night, yeah. He....he.....that was a dying declaration he made when he said Jerry.....the court ruled it was a dying.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did Jerry Don get?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He got a good while, I think he got twenty-five, thirty years.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Could still be in then, right?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, he's ah.....he's out, he's been out for.....see this isthey started.....this was like '81 see, around '81 sobut Jerry needed to go, he.....he had been playing hooky. Man he'd been in and out of jail here and beat a case oror they wouldn't have a case and ah.....and he....he just ah....ah.....but I worked on that case for several days. And this was another thing happened to us, they ah.....we get in there the nex.....that same morning, well the DA gets there and ah.....David Brabham had just gone to work up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: David who?

GLENN ELLIOTT: David Brabham, who is District Attorney now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how do you spell his name, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: B R A B A M I believe, he's the DA up here now. And ah...David ah....we contacted him the next morning.... or somebody else in the DA's office, cause I'm sure the District Attorney hadn't got there then, I don't even..... I thinkwell Rob Foster may have been District Attorney, I believe he was. Anyway ah....ah....we had this guy, we had this kid.....traveler and they.....and of course they.....they thought our case was a little weak, we was trying to get a warrant for Jerry. And ah....cause we didn't arrest him there at his house that night, we just searched and seized this stuff. And so ah....well he was a little apprehensive about it, said, 'Well you know, this boy is a drifter'. And I said, 'Well let's hold him, you know, as a material witness'. And I never will forget, old David told me said.....and he looked it up in the law book and he said.....and old David said, 'You know more law than I do and I just got out of law school'. And of course you know, this is the way you need to get along with folks. But anyway, we held this boy as a material

witness and he testified before the Grand Jury. And ah.....and we indicted Jerry and then they decided it was going to be awhile before they could try him and this boy had agreed to.....you know, he was going to his grandpa's down in Mississippi or Georgia, wherever it was andbut we got all his grandparents name and his parents name and everything, and sure enough by golly the trial was several months or maybe a year before they tried him. And that kid had done packed up and left his grandpa's again and hit the road. And so we issued a capias for him and put him on NCIC and they picked him up out in California and brought him back and he made us a good witness. We held him until he testified in court, made a good witness and we convicted him. And ah.....on the December 14th I..... I worked on this murder a good while through this area here, but that was mos.....and ah.....Travis County DA was up and we had special conference on this Mike Martin case, getting ready to try it. And ah.....went to the farm in Upshur County and went around. I'm a witness in the Grand Jury on the 17th ah....ah....on the Boykin murder case of December. Ah.....I'm in Daingerfield on the Martin case on that week. In Marshall..... I had a robbery on the 22nd and I'm back over at Kilgore on the 23rd working on another murder, I'm probably still on the.....on this Boykin case getting some stuff together. Ah.....I'm in Mars.....I'm in Shreveport and Bossier City on the 30th and 31st and ah.....that....that ends ah.....'81, shuts it down.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, October 10, 1995, continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn we've been shut down here for several weeks, glad to get back to going.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, we kind of let up a little bit there. Well we got through '81 and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you....you said something earlier, there's something you want to bring back from '81.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I had noticed in there and ah.....and this was interesting, cause this doesn't happen all.....to every Ranger and....and I guess the only time it happened in my career but

ah..... I had noticed a contempt hearing that I had gone to and I couldn't remember what it was. And then I got to studying about it and ah.....after we had our interview and ah.....we had a District Attorney, Rob Foster a young attorney here in Gregg County was elected District Attorney. And he beat the system, they'd ah.....they didn't want Rob to be District Attorney and he beat Linley Beckworth's son and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lindsey Beckworth?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Linley.....Lindsey Beckworth's boy?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh, used to be United States Representative and Carter Beckworth was his name. And ah.....so Rob had got in the District Attorney's office and he was just..... I told him one time, we was on an investigation soon after he got in there.....well a policeman had to shoot a guy down here on the railroad track and Rob was wanting to indict this policeman and this was a crazy black and they was looking for a guy and he pulled.....he was always going around pulling a toy pistol on somebody. And he pulled this toy pistol on this policeman down on the railroad track and he shot him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kill him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No didn't kill him. And Rob was wanting to indict the policeman and they were down there looking, this guy ran and they was looking for him. And anyway, they was about the same size and he done this several times to different police officers and firemen and everything else. But anyway, I told Rob there one time I said, 'You....(unintelligible).....' I said, 'Carter Beckworth wouldn't try anybody and you want to try everybody'. But anyway, Rob had got in the court room up here and ah.....and made a gesture and ah.....out of the sight of the jury, but somebody was walking out of the court room and he wanted to prosecute the case, he was kind of

like this DA you was talking about over in Tyler, he was in the court room if it's any.....if it was a hot case Foster wanted to be right in there taking part of it. And ah.....and that's the way Steen is over at Tyler.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jack Steen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah and ah....he's.....he's pretty active. And there's no reason why a District Attorney shouldn't try some cases because ah....you know, unless you're in Dallas County or some big county where you've got so many administrative problems you know. But anyway....but let's get back to this one. Rob had made this gesture, somebody had asked him at the door as he was going out of the court room, what the jury was going to do and he....you know he was going to hang him, he got a hold of his necktie and pulled it up, well the Judge and some of the lawyers in the court room saw it and somebody made a complaint to the ah....jud.....through the judicial sys.....through the judicial system. And ah.....they had a hearing, the District Judge came down here from ah....ah....McKinney and he found out that he was coming and he called the Ranger captain in Dallas, and G.W. Burkes was captain and G.W. told him that he was going assign me and he called me and told me. And ah....so the Judge and I established contact with each other and he told me what time he was getting into Longview, so I just told him to come on up to my office you know. And so ah.....we set and talked about it andand I went on down with him to court and had.....went with him to lunch andand I was there when he ah.....ah.....toldkind of counseled with Foster a little bit, but told him how it was just typical Gregg County politics, I see things hasn't changed down here in Gregg County, that's what he said. And then he admonished ah.....he admonished Foster for being a little childish. And I'd told him that Foster was still a little bit young, wet behind the ears you know and wanted to show out, he was....he was.....but he wanted to

prosecute cases now. But ah....anyway it was all over then you know. But they was really expecting the Judge to put him out you know, of office.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they wanted.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh? Wanted him to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They wanted him to.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah.....before you take off.....you mentioned something there that makes meRonnie Griffin the current Ranger, he has an office at ah.....the courthouse and at DPS headquarters, did you also have two?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Two offices?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Let's see....that's how.....yeah I always had an office in the courthouse and one out there too. See he just took my office, Ronny did, when he.....when he came here. They built me an office when they built the new courthouse up there and ah.....Ronnie just got to take my office then, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have an office at Panola or Harrison County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I just used the ah.....the Sheriff's offices over there because ah..... I don't know, this was my station and ah.....when they..... Ifor some reason or otherof course when I first went on the Rangers we didn't have a DPS office here big enough.....Highway Patrol office was in the courthouse too you know. And ah....they fixed me an office up on the third floor and ah.....so I had a nice office up there and ah.....in one area at first, when I first got on the Rangers and had a private bath and everything. Then ah.....the Gregg County Sheriff's office got to growing and they needed more space and there is another room up there so they ah.....they gave me another

office on the same floor and gave.....and let the Sheriff have these.....actually it was three offices there together. And....cause they needed more room and then eventually the court needed to expand andand we all moved down in the basement. And they....they ah.....they fixed us a big suite of offices down in the basement, down about where ah.....and ah..... I don't know who's down there now, I think the Veteran's Affairs officer maybe, I don't remember. But then ah.....then they ah.....ah.....built a new annex onto the courthouse you know and then.....of course they

ROBERT NIEMAN: And they're building onto the DPS now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And then they built the DPS office in the meantime. Well I didn't..... I wanted..... I needed an office out there because we had Texan and.....and I conducted a lot of night interviews out there and people that didn't want to be seen in the courthouse. And.....and ah.....but I never did lock my office out there, I letalso let it be known that anybody out there that needed a private officeI kept my storeroom locked but ah..... Iany employeeDPS employee could go in there and use my office. An inspector would come down or the visiting Sergeants and Captains and Lieutenants they could go in there and have a private conversation you know, on the telephone or with some of the employees. So I let 'em use my office any time they wanted to.....any DP..... I never locked the door, unless I was in there and didn't want anybody to come in you know. But I had an understanding with them that if I needed it well ya'll get up and go on about your business you know. Yeah, I had two offices there. And.....but these other off.....Sheriff's offices ah..... most of them would have a placeor later a Rang..... of course we used the old Grand Jury room down at Carthage for years and ah.....before ah.....they got anything else you know. Of course the Grand Jury wasn't in session but once every three months, and probably three days at the most then down there and ah.....so we had all the Grand Jury room. I've slept up there a many a night, because they.....they had also used it for when the sequestered a jury ah.....you know

they'd have to lock 'emthey.....when I first started working law enforcement, when they sequestered a jury they didn't stay in a motel they stayed in the courthouse. And ah.....they.....they might go out and get their meals at a motel but they stayed in the courthouse and bunk type. Of course they wasn't.....you know they didn't have mixed juries then and ah.....like they do now. But ah.....things have changed considerable.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah. I don't know if that's for the good, but it's changed.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well see it's ah.....they.....county could do it a lot cheaper that way you know. They could feed 'em up in the jail maybe, bring their breakfast down to 'em you know and maybe take 'em out to a cafe for lunch and dinner.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....but ah.....most of the juries were locked up in the courthouse, that's where they stayed.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 6

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we start in 1982 Bobby and it's ah.... I guess ah.....we had a company meeting on the....in the first part of January. And then I left there....left Dallas and went on to Wichita Falls on a theft investigation, stayed in Wichita the next night and then ah....went on to Sherman and spent the next night in Sherman. And ah....then I get involved with the Attorney General's office on a case that ah.....some kind of deal in Kilgore, I can't remember..... I just notice I conferred with the Attorney General's office on a criminal case in Kilgore. I....oh I tell you what it was, we was getting ready to try those oil people about this time and that's what it was. And then I went on to Spring Hill and recovered some stolen property for Grand Prairie valued at \$50,000.00. On the 8th I work with the Grand Prairie officer on this theft and trying to arrest the people that was responsible for it and worked with them the rest of that week and recovered some more property on the 11th valued at \$9,500.00. Worked with them on the 12th and 13th. On the 14th Sergeant Wright was in town for ah..... I was working a murder investigation and James came down for an inspection and equipment check is probably what it was. Ah.....Marshall called me on a robbery ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would that be Marshall or Harrison county?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Marshall or Harrison county?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Harrison....ah....it just said in Marshall..... I think Marshall police called me on this. Ah....this was a funny thing, this ah....this police officer over there at Marshall they'd had ah....ah.....somewhere during this time we had a young detective over there and he was a good detective and ah....but they'd had about four armed robberies in Marshall, Texas in about a

three month period over there. And he called me and he said, 'Glenn we got....having some armed robberies and need some help you know'. And I got over there and he was talking to Houston, a detective he'd met out of Houston at a school in Austin, on the telephone. I could tell he wasn't getting too far with this detective and I set there and he finished talking and he got on the phone....off the phone and ah....he looked at me and he said, 'You know I thought we had a problem', he said, 'I just talked to this detective down at Houston and I told him we'd have four armed....three armed robberies here in a two month period of time'.....whatever it was, and he said, 'He told me we had twenty-seven down here last night'. He said, 'We hadn't got any problems up here in East Texas'. And ah....anyway as ah....ah.....I'm back in Longview the next day working with the Attorney General's office preparing for this trial set for these oil cases. I'm back in Shreveport on the 19th ah....ah.....there was a trial set in Sherve.....in Panola County and I had to go over there and get some evidence on this ah....you know this body I told you that died from the elements, that was petrified.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we was getting ready to try that boy then and ah.... I contacted the FBI agent over there and ah.....and ah.....took some.....and we contacted some more witnesses and got some statements from them that the District Attorney wanted. I must of stayed in Shreveport because I leave Shreveport the next day and go on to Carthage as a witness in court in the same case. Ah.....and I guess while I was over there Caddo Parish go me interested in something that they'd lost. And I went on to Kilgore after that trial and assisted Caddo Parish with a theFort And ah.....and I'm in Henderson on the 22nd on a court revocation hearing, somebody had.....some probationer that I'd handled I guess had violated the law and I had to go over there and testify at a

revocation of probation hearing. Ah....on the 25th I was.....recovered two sets of ah.....elevators valued at \$8,000.00 in the Hallsville area.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What kind of elevators are these?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....ah....it's oil field.....(tape ends).....what you do Bobby, or what I did, it may not happen to everybody, I'm working oil field related stuff during this time because I'm ah....I've been working all these oil field people that's coming in here stealing this hot oil. And I'm in the oil patch here for like two or three months you know and.....and you.....and you just naturally get further involved in oil field thefts you know, because ah.....these.....these.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what's the Ranger that just wrote the little book on the oil field?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, John Wood.

ROBERT NIEMAN: John .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well John worked the oil field most all the time out there at Midland, but I... II would go from one thing to the other, but whatever you're working on, wherever you're working you're going to get involved in more stuff there. Just like going to Shreveport, I'm over there to get that evidence you know and I'm in and out of Caddo Parish to the crime lab down there and everything and I'm running into these Shreveport officers and here I am helping them on something the next day or two you know. And that's just the way it operates you know. And ah.... and see here I Ithe next day after I recovered those ah....elevators I'm in..... I go to Kilgore to identify them, so some.....probably some informant told me where they were over here at Hallsville and I went over there and got 'em and then I went to Kilgore the next day and identified 'em. And then on.....I'm in Carthage the next day and recover two stolen drill bits valued at \$4,000.00. So that's kind of the way it happened you know, they just keep a calling you. Somebody say well you know, they know you're in the oil patch and some guy will call you and say, 'Well

you know we lost two drill bits', or the Sheriff will call you know and say, 'Glenn they stole two drill bits off a drilling rig down here in Panola County last night you know, can you come down here and help me'. Cause he knows I'm working the oil field. Well if you're in the oil field and you're talking to people in the oil field, well you got a lot better chance of finding it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well letlet me interrupt you here, I don't think this is.....you'll probably pull this cause this isn't important to you but me being in the trucking business it was something that would interest me. I know you did a little bit on chop shops, ah..... I think we visited one time over at Dallas.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have a lot of stolen trucks that got chopped or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we had a lot of.....we didn't have.....we wasn't losing a lot of trucks down in here and most of the trucks we was.....you know this truck we got after you know I told you that the guy shot at the Deputy Sheriff and I recovered a pistol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well that was a stolen truck out of Mississippi and they was taking it somewhere to chop it, no doubt. Ah.....and this guy was out of.....out of the Mesquite area. Ah....but of course we got him before he got up there. And I don't remember getting involved in ah.....I've got involved in a lot of automobile chops ah.....and ah.....shops, but ah.....not ah.....not any ah.....ah.....bunch of trucks in my time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you saidyou've told me many times that you know, these old crooks.....criminals, you know like the thieves they were.....they were kind of one mentality ah.....you know the burglars and.....and theyou know, of course the killers and all, but what about your car thieves and were they.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well

ROBERT NIEMAN:were they dangerous or they were just.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh well..... I tell you what.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean any of them are dangerous to a point I realize.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, everybody that violates the law would like to get away with it you know, but ah..... I never did have any trouble with anybody much you know. And those that I did, you know, well ah.....and that could of had something to do with it you know. These guys know who the officers are, you know, even the young thieves and you got more young folks involved in chop shops than you have older ones you know. They're looking for the quick buck and they may get some older guy to help fence it you know, but the younger ones are the ones that are stealing, getting the five hundred dollars up front and going you know and ah.....and getting somebody else to do the work you know. And then another group will come along and strip 'em you know andbut it's all going to thetheir all going to the same places you know, the big dealers ah.....that's.....that's pushing 'em you know. Or see Mexico was getting a whole lot of that stuff too, cause they'll go down there andand of course you could always.....you know how it is about applying for a title for a rebuilt truck you know. It's ah.....they used.....they used to check 'em but they just about quit you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it's only been in the last ten years or so that like Alabama even become a title state.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Mississippi is the same way, well in the last twenty-four.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well all the stolen cars from all over the country went in there .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right, right. Yeah, we had.....we had.....we used to recover a lot of stolen.....you know I think I was telling you when I was on my Highway Patrol days, we.....we

recovered a lot of stolen vehicles down here in this part of the state and ah.....my partner and I, because of the traffic on Hwy. 80 you know. And ah.....and we....we'd get a profile..... I think that we talked about that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anyway, I just thought it was.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they ah..... I may think of a I know.....you know I told you Guy Morgan, you know this guy that we....we was stripping trucks over here in the oil patch andand we had some guys that was doing it. But Guy was hauling his out to Odessa you know and ah.....when this Highway Patrolman stopped him . And we'd alerted everybody to keep an eye on him because we knew he was stealing every day. But as far as uncovering ajust a real big ah.....ah.....truck chop shop, I don't think I'd ever ah.....you know, pickups now up in Dallas we.....when we got into I was working this murder case out here at Spring Hill you know and.....and this guy got stopped in a stolen pickup you know, in Dallas.....I think maybe we went over that already, or if we don't we'll get to it later. But ah....he was ah.....what had happened was ah.....this family got killed out at Spring Hill, got killed shortly after the Kentucky Fried Chicken.....a man and wife and littlelittle.....baby.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah, I remember , yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And their vehicle was stolen and abandoned at a ah.....at the hospital parking lot in Tyler. Well of course some folks thought.....and it was.....it was certainly possible that the two crimes were ah.....related you know, because it was multiple killings. And ah.....so ah..... I got with the investigating officers on that and was..... I never did make a report on it I don't think, but I was..... I was working on both cases and interested in 'em, and I worked on a lot of cases I never

did make a report on because I didn't like to make reports. And if I made a case then I'd back up andand gather information and send in a report on it. But ah....anyway ah.....this car was abandoned at the ah.....Good Shepherd Hospital parking lot and there was a pickup stolen there the same night. Well it was three months later before this pickup was recovered and the guy was still driving it that stole it, in Dallas. Of course he didn't admit stealing it, he claimed he got it from somebody else you know. But he had beenlater we found out he'd been in court in Carthage for the same case.....same type case the same day and his lawyer was out of Tyler. And he came down from Dallas and ah.....caught a bus and.....and his lawyer carried him to Carthage to court and he brought him back to Tyler, Bill Coates was his lawyer, and I.....Bill was very cooperative with me. And....cause we thought the black may have been involved in this murder because the pickup was stolen the same day.....night that the victims car out here was abandoned. So we kind of got on it, but when this guy got caught in it well I was already in Dallas and he was over at ah..... I think Arlington police stopped him. And he had a towel thrown over thethe ah....steering wheel where he.....where he'd ripped the ignition out you know and wired it direct. And ah....they stopped him and put him in jail. Well I got over there andandhe'd already put.....they called me and I was in the Dallas office.....the Dallas area, I think I was out at the crime lab or somewhere there, and I went on to Arlington that night and the Longview police officers came on the next day up there. And ah.....so we was ah..... I checked it.....he'd been.....the officers.....he told the officershe'd already told them that he'd got it from some old boy and he'd never been in East Texas and told 'em several lies. And I got his personal affects outhis billfold and everything and I found a ticket in his billfold where he'd purchased three items at Skaggs Albertson's Drug Store in Tyler, Texas right across the street from Good Shepherd.....ah....from ah.....Mother Frances Hospital, right across the intersection down there, the same night at 9:20, it even had the time on it. And when I

showed him that you know well he....of course he kind of changed his mind about being in East Texas you know. Then I found out he.....of course got his record and found out he'd been charged down at Carthage and then got to talking to him about that and found out who his lawyer was and then....and also found a receipt where he paid his lawyer, in his billfold, that same day, a little money and he admitted being in Tyler you know and that's how he stole this pickup to come back ah.....to get transportation back and he said he was going to sell it later to a chop shop there in Dallas. And he cooperated with us on all that, cause hehe was looking at murder being charged then you know, because we.....we told him what we was investigating. And he got down with it pretty quick then you know. But ah.....that's the reason you go through their billfold, is to look what they got see. He was sitting right there saying he'd never been in East Texas and had a receipt by George where he'dtied him right to the scene where the pickup was stolen, almost. And you get into things like that and of course that's how youthat's how you solve 'em, by just doing stuff like that. Ah..... I have to go down to Overton area and serve a bunch of subpoenas for this upcoming trial that ah.....these oil.... I'm back in Dallas on the 1st of February. Ah.....then I'm....I've got to go to Marshall and assist Grand Prairie police in a theft investigation, I imagine it's something relating to thatthose items that we worked over there the week or two before. And we work in Henderson and ah.....and work..... I worked with Grand Prairie for two or three days there. And then ah....ah....I'm in Carthage for a court hearing ah.....on the 5th. Ah.....I'm assisting Gregg County on a murder that happened on the 8th of February and this is the 9th so..... I can't remember which case that was. Ah....and of course I go to Kilgore and Shreveport and Mt. Pleasant and Paris and a bunch of other places on that case. And then I'm back to Carthage on the 11th ah.....on another murder investigation and arrested four suspects. I went to work at 8:00 a.m. and worked until 3:00 a.m. the next morning on that, so I can't even remember what kind of killing

that was. Ah.....oh I tell you what that was, that was....that was....this is an interesting case, yeah I know now. Ah.....there was ah.....down here at Lake Port ah.....we had a killing down there and ah....a guy blew another ones head off with a shotgun. And they loaded him up and hauled him down in Panola County and ah.....and didn't tell any.....nobody knew about it. But there was a female.....it was a bunch of motorcycle banditos living down there and there was a female down there with 'em that they'd picked up in a bar somewhere and she went.....she slipped off from 'em four or five days later and went down to Liberty, Texas, somewhere down in there, to her parents house and told them what she'd witnessed. And ah.....so we..... of course had contact with her and bring her back up here and ah.....take an affidavit from her and we get a search warrant and go out there and hit on the house. And it was full of....oh there was five or six of 'em out there, it wasn't full but ah.....and she even told us where he put.....the guy that done the shooting put this shotgun up in a flower pot, had a bunch of flowers growing in there....pretty good sized and he just stuck.....and she witnessed the shooting. And....and you.....and he had ah.....ah.....repainted the ceiling of the house.....it blowed.....got blood all over it but he didn't get.....didn't do a good job, just put one coat of paint on it. And anyway, we got out there and ran a search warrant and finally we brought three or four of 'em in and finally broke one of 'em down and he was from Carthage. And he carried us down there and showed us.....and we found the body, they'd carried it down on his grandfather's farm which is just out this side of Carthage back in there behind that log.....way back inway back in the sticks, they carried him back out there and threw him out in the woods. We recovered that body and ah.....that night and went ahead and made a case on them. I think we just charged three of them maybe, but we arrested four. And ah.....so we..... I worked on that for several days and ah.....ah.....then I'm back.....I'm in Carthage in court on the 15th, 16th and 17th and ah.....and then of course probably got on this murder case, cause I see I'm in Longview. You

know you don't just make a murder case in two or three days and walk off and leave it. There's lots of work to do to get your evidence together and your witnesses all lined up and make reports on it. Ah....I went..... I was over at Henderson on the 19th on the same case and to Kilgore on the 22nd. And I go to Fort Worth on the 24th, there's another witness that we found out was out there up at Fort Worth and we had to go up there and interview that witness. Come back and spend the night in Dallas and brought this suspect back to Longview the next day. And ah....I'm back in Dallas again on theon the 1st of March which that's.....and ah....and Kilgore and Henderson ah.....Henderson court duty on the 2nd of March. And the 3rd ah....and Ranger Walk called me and wanted some help on

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ranger who?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Walk.....W A L K, from Nacogdoches.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what was his first name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I do but I can't recall it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's all right, we'll catch it later.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....John [Bill] Walk I believe, he used to be a Highway Patrolman in Henderson. Ah.....DeSoto Parish, Louisiana called and ah....and they had athey wanted some help on a theFort And ah.....and this is something else interesting, here I am I got out of one.....just got out of one deal and ah.....and get in another one. That's kind of the way my life went. DeSoto Parish, Louisiana called me on the 3rd.....4th day of March, a Deputy Sheriff down there and he said he had a guy down there from Marshall, Texas name Squeaky Weeks that he was ah.....had a felony warrant for, for theft and he wanted us.....and he tried to get the Sheriff from Marshall to

arrest him and he wouldn't. And this happened quite often to a Ranger you know, they knew me and they thought that the Sheriff.....and Squeaky was a snitch, he'd been snitching to the DA's investigator over there for a long time about dope, but he was dealing in dope himself all the time. And ah.....but he was making them a few cases and they was looking good you know. And a lot of folks use snitches and.....and I some of 'em mightdon't.....you know, don't worry about what they do. But I never did let a snitch.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I'll give you an example, we won't call any names here, it's not important, but there's a rather famous case here that happened many, many years ago to a mutual friend of ours that he thinks to this day that the ah....the ah.....the outcome of the case would of maybe not been as bloody as it was if a snitch hadn't been told some information, he passed it on to.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well you see you don't tell a snitch anything, you.....he's supposed to tell you something you know. That.....and.....and this is the mistake some of them make. Anyway this is.....this is real interesting.....well I'm.....I'm busy, see I'm working this murder of these.....these down here and we're just trying to get it straightened out and....and....and of course Walk calls me and he wants some help, I got court duty over at Henderson. So I got to do than I can get done and I try to put this Deputy off and I said, 'Well, I tell you what to do', I said, 'Send me a certified copy of the complaint and the warrant and I'll take it over there and get a fugitive warrant for him in a day or two and arrest him for you, get him for you'. So the next day I get this certified copy of the warrant and complaint in the mail and ah....these folks down at DeSoto Parish had helped me you know, on some occasions and well I wanted to help 'em you know. So II'm busy and I got to Marshall about four o'clock in the afternoon and this is in March and the days are beginning to get longer and.....you know a little bit, and ah.... I go over there to Marshall late in the

afternoon and ah.....and I go up to the Sheriff's office and ah.....see that.....two of the investigators and I said, 'I've gotwe need to get a fugitive warrant for Squeaky Weeks'. And by then I'd already made a couple of phone calls over there and found out where he was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did....let me interrupt, did he spell his name, W E E K S or W E A K S?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think it's E E.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....so ah.....they said, 'We've got a fugitive warrant for him here somewhere'. And they started looking over their desk and finally one of 'em came up with a teletype from DeSoto Parish. Well you can arrest on a teletype and.....and no problem at all, but you've got to file the complaints in 'em. But really to get a fugitive warrant you should have a certified copy of the complaint and warrant from the area that the fugitive was.....where the complaint was filed, take it to the court.....Justice court and swear an affidavit that there's a fugitive..... outstanding fugitive warrant and use this for probable cause, you got a certified copy of it and let the court in Harrison County issue a felony warrant for the guy and then go get him. And then when you bring him back into court he's got a docket number and it's all got to be done anyway you know. I mean.....and so it's really better if you got time, use.....the only time you use a teletype isis ah.....you know, on emergencies. So anyway, we go up in JP court and we get a fugitive warrant and I've already found out where he was, so I told them I said, 'There's a camp out south of Hallsville, right on the bank of the Sabine River, and that's where he's at'. And one of said, 'I know where it's at, I know exactly where it's at'. And I said, 'Well good, so I won't have to contact anybody else'. So we get to looking for it and we look, and it's almost dark when we find it. And that's probably to our advantage, but it was getting late in the afternoon. And we pull in there and there is four people out there, three men and a woman, Squeaky Weeks is one of them,

and they were cooking meth in a meth lab. First meth lab that had ever been caught in East Texas and we just caught it accidentally, we're looking for a fugitive and know he's out..... I found out he was out there. We go out there and they're cooking methamphetamine and the guy that was cooking had been arrested for doing the same thing up in Navarro County a year or so before. And I recognized him, see I didn't even know what they was doing, I didn't know what they was doing back there. They had this fire going, it was a.....it was a oil rig ah.....Humble was drilling a gas well within 300 yards of it, and I smelled the odor when I come in there, but I thought it was coming from that oil well. But they was using.....a lot of ether you cook in that stuff. It's dangerous you know. Anywayand we didn't.....we just kind in awe of how to ah.....dispose of.....you know, how toafraid we was going to get blown up or something. So I..... I got a holdtried to get hold of a narcotic agent and couldn't.....wouldn't.....they was all too busy to come. Boy they was over there the next day, they was you know. And wanting to know, why didn't you call for me, you know one of them special. I said, 'Man when I called for a narcotic officer', I said, 'You heard the traffic and when I call ya'll for something you know I want you'. I'm not going to push no panic button, this ain't no buggers you know. But anyway, so here we are, we're on this.....we got.....the Sheriff comes out there and of course they get a lot of publicity about this cause this was a big thing. But we busted a meth lab and got 'em a lot of time, there was ah....there was a black boy from Longview and ah.....this guy from Corsicana and his girlfriend from Kilgore and Squeaky, they were all out there. We carried 'em all in.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you mentioned there, you know, John Walk called you down there and the..... I know from our conversations and my conversations with other Rangers, that the overwhelming, I mean absolutely overwhelming majority of the times, when you have to work with another Ranger there's a great spirit of cooperation.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I do know, I've heard you say, without.....once again without calling names, though it could be kind of aggravating I think when you have ah..... I know of one case where you had some property you needed to go to another Rangers area and he said.....and we won't use names that's not important.....that well he didn't have time, could you bring it all the way to him. And another time when another Ranger was over in this area and got drunk and just made a total ass out of himself and that would seem to me to be real aggravating, when a Ranger won't cooperate.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course, you don't do much for 'em anymore you know. That Ranger that I was talking about, he didn't actually ask me.....ask me to bring it, he just didn't have time to come and get it and I volunteered to meet him halfway, because I saw he wasn't going to do anything and.....and I'm over in Louisianathe stuffs in Louisiana and they're wanting the guy filed on and they never did get the guy filed on down there. Well I'd of got him filed on and gone after him myself, he'd already waived extradition and I'd of brought him down there if they turned him loose the day, I'd at least got him out of Louisiana's hair. And.....and of course he was from Mississippi or somewhere, he never would of cutand it's pretty embarrassing you know, when things like that come up. But Ithis is something you got to play by ear. I never did get too busy when another Ranger called me trying to help.....especially trying to me solve a crime. Ah....I.....I.....I could get un-busy for long enough to go

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I thinklike I said, the over..... I don't think, I know, the overwhelming majority of 'em looked at you..... I mean, looked at it the same way you did. It was just a few instances I've heard about, this being one of them, thatwell that spirit of cooperation wasn't there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We recovered a \$100,000.00 worth of stolen property down there at that meth lab too and ah....the same....the samesee that took a couple of days there and ah.....and of courseand then I had to get back over to Marshall the next and I'm letting the deputies make the reports on the meth lab, I'm just.....cause I hadn't got time to make it you know. And.....and daggum I get over there, and just to be truthful with you, they.....they had hurriedly made the report andand it didn't ah.....pan out just like.....one of them was a trained narcotic officer, had worked narcotics forup in McKinney for two or three years before he was hired out down there. And he was letting the other one make out the report and ah.....and.....and he didn't know what.....he was just like me, he didn't know what it was. But the other one, as soon as he smelled the ether and he said, 'They're cooking some meth around here somewhere'. But he told the other one to make out the report and ah.....and he never did ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Didn't sound like he wanted to do reports either.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No andand really the way it was written up it didn't give us probable cause to make a search and.....and I..... I reminded 'em of it, I said, 'You know you.....', I was talking to the experienced man, I said, 'You told me this out there which indicated to me that yes that methanphedimines and we're smelling it'. So we start looking and the meth lab out on the back porch on the back side and we've already got the subject we're out there for under arrest. He comes.....after he sees us, he tries to get out of the house and come out there and give himself up see so we won't go in there. But we smell the ether and this boy tells me that you know, that smells like meth and so you know, we go on in. And it's about to be written up wrong, when actually we had probable cause, cause he was a trained officer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But the boyhe wasn't hearing all this, he's back at the car. So we got it all straightened out and made a case. Ah..... I recovered another \$10,500.00 worth of stolen property on the 9th over at Kilgore. Ah..... I go to court in Marshall on the 10th, they had a preliminary hearing in the lab ah.....some lawyer come along andand was wanting a preliminary hearing and....and ah.....so I had to go over there and testify in it. And sometimes they'll do that right quick you know trying.....probably they set his bond.....he was wanting a bond reduction or something.....put it pretty high. Ah.....then Ion the 14th ah.....that was on a Sunday and I had to go.... I went to Tyler to Fredericksburg ah.....and appear in court down there in this Mike Martin....this ah.....State Representative that got himself shot in the hand down there showing out trying to run for Senate. And I'm in Fredericksburg on the 14th, 15th, 16th and 17th and returned to Longview on the 18th. And Longview police called and had an armed robbery and they asked for some help on and I helped them on theworked on it through the 22nd. Ah.....had a jail break in Mar.....in Carthage on the 23rd and that was the old boy that ah.....that I had arrested for ah....killing that body down there you know, throwing the body out. He never had gotnever had tried him and we go down and eventually get him back a couple of days later. I'm back in Longview ah.....ah....working on that robbery case. In Shreveport on the 25th looking for this jail escapee in Plain Dealing, Louisiana. Ah.....Dallas on the 29th, Marshall Grand Jury on the 30th, that was in that narcotic lab. Ah.....Gregg County had another murder on the 31st. I'm in Dallas on the 1st and ah....Kilgore and assisting Houston Police on the 2nd and recovered some oil field pipe valued at \$5,000.00. This was April. Ah....Kilgore and Tyler on a murder investigation on the 5th. And to Hallsville, Kilgore assisting Garland police in a saddle theft investigation, recovered \$3,000.00 worth of stolen saddles. And some of these were.....belonged to Governor Clements, he was the Governor at that time. And ah....we ah.....we made a saddle ah.....and the next day

recovered some more saddles valued at \$12,000.00. Arrested a suspect in the case on the 9th and recovered more property valued at \$750.00. Ah.....assisted Grand Prairie police on a theft on the 12th and 13th. Go to Crosicana on the 14th as a State witness in a revocation hearing on this guy that we arrested on the narcotic, he was on probation over in Crosicana for making meth and stay over there on the 15th. And I don't even remember that, I can't remember being in Crosicana on that.....that's so insignificant I guess. Going to a revocation hearing, you just go in and hold up your hand and say, 'Yeah I caught old Bobby making meth down here in Harrison County on a certain date', you know. And they don't ask you too many questions you know. The State does but defense is not going to ask too many, maybe say did he cooperate with you, did he give you any trouble or something like that, when you knew he didn't you know. And ah.....then I'm in Jefferson on the 16th and 17th ah.....looking for some stolen property and ah.....probably tractors. Ah.....in Henderson on.....Nacogdoches on the 20th and 21st on a murder investigation. Kilgore and assisting Kaufman County ah.....and recovered one of ah.....another one of the Governor's saddles on the 22nd, and his ranch is in Kaufman County, it's up there on the east side of ah....Lake Ray Hubbard between ah.....between ah.....Rockwall and Plain.....and ah.....where's that we stopped the other morning and got coffee at?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh ah....that was ah....Forney.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Forney, yeah. You turn right there at that bank I was telling you about and go south about half way to Rockwall .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lieutenant Sweaney lives right out of there somewhere.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well ah....yeah, well I didn't know where Sweaney lived. Yeah I remember now that his kids do go to Rockwall, I remember this boy getting that lightning struck. Ah..... I and.....and ah....then Donnie Anderson called and ah.....that's where.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's the Ranger up at Greenville.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, after we found out that ah.....the Governor's saddle was taken well he went on over to Kaufman County and the captain....of course and had him to get involved in this because we was ah.....and so I get to working with Donnie some. And we sent this old boy to the pen and then old Donnie has caught him since then and sent him back to the pen up in Fannin County. And one of the boys from Windom was on the jury and old Donnie called me and told me and said he asked him if he knew me and he said, 'Yeah I know Mr. Elliott', said, 'I see him every time he comes to Windom'. And ah.....I went.....I'm in Paris for firearms on the 27th and 28th. Dallas on the 3rd. Ah.....left Dallas andand yeah we.....this is another funny thing here. We're up at Dallas and G.W. was strange, G.W.....all the captain's were different you know and G.W. was strange about who he picked to do things. Narcotic folks had called in up there and we was having a company meeting and I had a brand new car, and this was '82 ah..... I don't remember what I was driving in '82, got a Dodge I think. Anyway ah....I'd just drawn a new car and ah.....G.W.....the phone rang and.....for him and he went out.....we was having a little old company meeting, come back in there and he said, 'I want Glenn, you and Max need to meet two narcotic officers in Omaha cause they're fixing to have a buy/bust and make an arrest undercover and they want you to be there to make the arrest'. And it's going to be done in like an hour or so and ah.....and Iand Max's car is in Longview. Well Lloyd Johnson and....and....and Donnie Anderson, that's on their way home you know and a little ways from Donnie on down there to Omaha and Lloyd's you know in Sulphur Springs, but he sends us. And....and we had to just nearly burn that car up getting down there. In fact I tell you what we did, we rolled into Omaha and established radio contact with those people and they said.....they told us said, 'Ya'll cut outgo out....', we was talking on our channel 6 and we just got it then and didn't anybody havecould

receive it. And this ah....agent told us which way to go and he said, 'And he's going to show up here', and said, 'Ya'll run down that road there about a mile', and said, 'And turn around and get ready cause I'm going to call you when he drives up'. And we saw the guy, I told Max, I said, 'Max that's him right there', and I said.....under the shade of a tree, and I said, 'Pop that license number down'. So Max wrote the license number down and we went on by and went on down the road and turned around. And he saw us and he....he nearly slapped on us and we never had saw anything. So ah....ah.....in just a few minutes I got....the narcotic officer started hollering and so we busted in down there and of course the old boy had two pistols and he had the money he was fixing to buy the drugs and it was him, the same guy we had seen. Well, Omaha.....part of Omaha is in Titus County and part of it's in Morris County as I remember one county, it maybe Red River. Anyway ah.....we had.....we wasn't sure where we were and we had to go ask somebody what part of town we was in. But we finally found out from a property owner, he said he paid taxes in Daingerfield you know, so that's good enough.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would be Morris County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. So we....we had to carry him toMax and I carried him on in to ah....Daingerfield and put him in jail. And then Iof course ah.....no Max's car was in ah.....in Tyler, cause he'd planned on coming back from Dallas with me and going on to Henderson and see his sister. So I had to take Max back to Tyler and then come back to Longview. But ah....that....that happened....that's justsomething like that it's not unusual for something like that to happen. They needed some help and we was glad to help 'em, but it's ah....ah....we'd like to have had a lot more ah..... I recovered another one of the Governor's saddles on the 4th of May. And ah....we never did get Mrs. Clement's saddle and you know you'd of thought from the way they acted that we didn't do anything and this is true. Cause she was upset, she got this saddleand I don't

blame her, it was her mother's saddle, you know it had been in the family a long time. It was one of those side saddles for women and she was crazy about it, it was an old saddle. We never did find it. Ah..... I went to Henderson on the 9th to assist Miller County, Arkansas on a bank robbery case. I'm in Karnack on the 10th and ah.....on a theft investigation, I think they stole a safe down there. And the 11th in Tatum working on the same thing. Henderson assisting Caddo Parish in a bulldozer theft on the 12th. I'm in Longview as a witness in 124th District Court on the 13th. I'm in Hallsville on the 14th on a rape investigation. And Marshall and that area for several days ah.....and then I have to come back and run down some more witnesses for the Attorney General's office for another one of the oil cases that had to be tried here. And I'm in Gladewater and Gilmer and leads on a murder investigation. Back in Gilmer on the 20th. Took a weeks vacation ah.....Dallas on the first of June and Bossier City on the 2nd. Bossier City on the 3rd. Ah.....Gregg County court on the 4th and Henderson on the 7th. Serving more subpoenas on the 8th for the upcoming trial . Tyler providing security for Governor Clements on the 9th. In Jefferson assisting Womack in a robbery case, I ah.....Max hadn't been trained in ah.....Identikit and they had an armed robbery over at Jefferson and I went over and made a composite likeness from the witnesses. Ah.....the 14th I assisted State Health officers here serving a court order out at this dump that they've had so much trouble with, out off of Harrison Road after that you know. Ah.....that's unusual to do something like that, but that probably came out of Austin. Ah.....to Carthage on the 15th making preparation for trial in an armed robbery. Ah....and we....we have to do that, we have to go and get with the District Attorney like on Friday before we're going to have a case set on Monday and try to go over evidence you know and try to make a little preparation for court.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What is the county directly below Panola, is that Nacogdoches County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Shelby is the next one south.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay Shelby.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Nacogdoches don't join ah...ah...Panola. Shelby joins.....Nacogdoches County joins Rusk County and Shelby County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, Shelby County, that's Company A.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Center, yeah, uh hum. That's the line.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Panola, Rusk County, Smith County ah....VanZandt County, Kaufman County, Dallas County, Tarrant County, that's the line south.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Then on out to Weatherford, I guess Weatherford County.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it's ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh well, it's not

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah.....I'm back in Kilgore on the 17th working with the Attorney General's office and we're getting ready to try some more of those folks. And ah.....Kilgore and Overton on this saddle theft for ah.....working with Donnie, we're trying to get some more evidence on this old boy. And we....and we made a case, a good case, sent him.....got him seven years. I had to go to Dallas later, soon after this, and testify in court on ah.....some of the saddles we....we....the best case we made was up there in the Mesquite area and never did get to try him down in Kaufman County. I'm back in Carthage in court on the 22nd, 23rd, 24th, 25th, 28th and 29th and then I get out of Carthage....out of court on the 29th and I work with Foster, Brantley Foster on a triple murder up at Titus County. That's where the ah.....that ah.....pizza place was ah.....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I work.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's where Brantley and ah.....G.W. got real cross ways wasn't it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Worked on that on the 30th with him. And ah.....he had a lead down here.....Brantley was a good hard.....he would work but he'd ah.....Brantley would get an idea that somebody was guilty andand really thought they were, you know sometimes and a lot of times they wasn't. Of course.....and you know, it's good to get ideas like that, but you got to keep an open mind. Ah....and ah..... I know the guys that he thought.....he suspected down here were not the ones, but the evidence kind of looked that way. They were.....they was.....they'd been in the area and they'd.....and ah.....but we worked it out in two days and proved that they weren't up there you know. So that was.....you know, that's what you're supposed to do. And ah.....in fact we ran 'em on the polygraph too I think ah.....yeah, I worked with him on July the 1st also and the 2nd. And then I took another little vacation. And then ah.....so ah.....I'm back helping Foster again on the 19th and ah.....20th. And ah.....and Oklahoma officers called me on the 21st and I'm assisting them on an oil field theFort And then the Tatum area and Mt. Enterprise and ah.....and then I had to run down some more witnesses for another.....for a trial, another trial we was fixing to have. I'm in Gladewater the 26th and Overton on the 27th. And ah....on a nar.....on a surveillance in Longview for narcotic bust on the 28th and Bossier City on the 29th on a theFort Talco and Clarksville on the 30th, Dallas on the 2nd of August. And then I goton the 3rd I got called on a double murder ah.....down at Easton. And this was a pretty interesting case ah.....this old boy.....there was a guy killed two Mexicans down there, robbed 'em and shot 'em with a shotgun. And it was right on the banks of the Sabine River and Easton down there andand.....if it had been across the river it would of been in Harrison County, if it had been across the road it would of been in Rusk County. And it was in Gregg County, wasn't any question about it and ah....so this.....ah.....Hartley, you met Ken Hartley.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ken Hartley, Gregg County Sheriff's office.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah....and a boy named Smith who's now an ATF agent, good officer, good investigator, Hartley's a good investigator. And ah....ah....they called....they was young.....see this was in '82 and ah....and they called me and asked me help 'em because this.....a suspect was developed soon after the murder and ah.....that had car trouble down there and so he lived down in Rusk County. And so we worked on it for two or three days and we found out where this guy was spending money and ah.....and he'd been broke and ah.....and he'd brought a girl from ah.....went.....they was hanging out at the end.....all the kids down in that area around Tatum were hanging out under the bridge.....a creek between Tatum and Henderson out there. They'd go out there and have their parties out there at night and drink beer. And ah....and he went off out there and got with a bunch andand he broughthe was out there once trying to borrow money and bum beer and come back later that afternoon had his.....plenty of beer and plenty of money and carried one of the girls to Longview and brought her breakfast and paid for it with a hundred dollar bill. And he was a really bright guy and the funny part.....the funny part about this, wewe finally got enough probable cause after getting affidavits from these girls about him having the money and.....and.....and somebody seeing him with a shotgun. And so we got a warrant and we got to looking for him and ah....and we met him on the highway and he was right in the edge of Rusk County. And he went into his.....drove into his daddy's yard. So we pulled in right behind him and arrested him and ah....so his daddy was.... he was drunk. And ah.....and I had put his daddy in jail two or three times when I with the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was drunk or his daddy was drunk?

GLENN ELLIOTT: His daddy was drunk. And ah....his daddy ah....ah....Sanders was his name and ah.....it was funny ah..... I was trying tothe deputies..... I got.....we got to.....we got this boy outside and we know that he don't have a shotgun in the car, so we ah..... I think it was Hartley

he..... I said, 'Hartley you see if you can get permission....consent to search the house'. Well the guy wouldn't give him permission to search. And of course.....and ah.....and so ah.... we got to talking and he come back out and he said, 'No he's drunk and drinking real heavy', and said, 'He don't want me in his house'. And so I went in there and I knew him, and so.... 'Oh Mr. Elliott I knew you when you wasn't nothing but a little old Highway Patrolman', you know . (pause to change video tapes)

ROBERT NIEMAN: You need tolet.....go back to where he wouldn't let Hartley in.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he wouldn't let Hartley.....he wouldn't let Hartley have con.....wouldn't give him consent to search and so II decided I'd go in and talk to him you know. And I walked up on the porch and I said I called him his name, I done forgot his first name, and ah..... 'Oh I remember you when you wasn't nothing but a little old Highway Patrolman'. But see the nightyou remember I told you, the night I got run over down in ah..... in 1959 when this guyand they put me in the hospital, when I was on the Highway Patrol you know?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh huh, uh huh.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this is the guy I had under arrest, this Sanders. And I'm trying to protect the toys for this kid.....I mean his son that I'm arresting. He's takinghe's got all theirwhat they're going to get for Christmas in the back of his pickup and I'm getting it out of his pickup and putting it in my patrol car because I'm fixing to put him in jail. If I leave it out there somebody's going to steal it and ah.....so when I get.....when I got run over. So I got to talking to him you know and 'Oh....', he said, 'So what if my boy killed a Mexican', he said, 'What's wrong with killing a Mexican', said, 'They ain't got no business up here anyway'. You know, and I'm.....I'm looking at the shotgun, we know he was killed with 410 gauge shotgun and I'm looking at it hanging on the

wall over his bed up there you know. Well.....and so I keep on talking to him you know and I said, 'Well you know Sanders, we'll just have to let the jury decide', you know and I said, 'Whether this is against the law or not'. And I I went ahead and got this consent to search. I said, 'Look, we need your house here now, you don't need to get involved in this thing just because your boy is'. See his boy had done been to the pen once. And he set right down there and signed a consent search and we got the shotgun, carried it to ballistics, we made the shotgun.....see they ejected the hulls up there where they shot 'em. We made the shotgun on firing pin and ejector too and the shotgun.....ballistics did, same gun. And ah....but probably if I hadn't of handled old Sanders and hadn't of known him, we never.....might not of ever got that shotgun. Cause if we left there he was going to take that shotgun and hide it or throw it in the river or do something with it you know. We arrested that boy and we got the shotgun and of course he copped out to the crime. But ah....ah....but this is ah.... I tell you, this is..... the funny part about this too, I don't guess I ought to kick this in, but it's ah....this is.....by the time anybody sees this tape here I'll be long gone anyway probably, but to show you.....(side of tape ends).....to show you what we have to contend with.....and you know.....and I'm sure that....that this happens everywhere, not as much now as it did then, but we're in Rusk County and we've got to take him before a Magistrate in Rusk County. And there's a lot of jealousy in law enforcement, I tell you this andand of course Rusk County had been working Gregg County on this case, because they called originally down there and Harrison County did too.....they was trying to determine which county it was in to start with. So Rusk County had worked down there somebut anyway, the arrest.....we meet the guy on the highway, I mean, you know and we can't call Rusk County and say, 'Well we just met him and he pulled into his daddy's driveway here and ya'll come over here and arrest him for us', when you got a Texas Ranger setting there in the car with you and you don't need anybody else you know.

So.....and they didn't need anybody anyway, it was so close to the county line, they could of made the arrest themselves. But we arrested him and....and ah.....and so I called Henderson and asked 'em where the nearest Justice of the Peace was, if they had one in Tatum. They said, 'Yeah, there's one between Tatumout of Tatum there on the....so and so's grocery store, he's the Justice of the Peace down there'. Well, we get down there, of course the Sheriff's down at his farm tending to his cows.....his ranch, and he hears this on the radio and he calls the Justice of the Peace and tells him he don't know anything about what we're doing. And.....and so we pulled in there and I introduced myself to the Judge and he's an old country boy from way back man. And ah.....well ah.... 'Michael called and said he don't know anything about this'. Well I knew who he was talking about, but I said, 'Michael who'. And he said, 'Michael Strong, the Sheriff of Rusk County, don't know anything about what ya'll are doing'. And I said, 'Well Judge he don't need to know', you know, I said, 'I'm a state officer, I'm a Texas Ranger and all we want you to do is give this man his warning'. Well he just kept on saying, 'Well Michael don't know anything about this and I don't know'. I said, 'I'll explain this to Michael if you'll tell me where he's at, I'll call him, cause it's obvious that you've talked to him'. Well he..... I said..... I finally told him I said, 'Well Judge, if you don't want to give this man his warning, I'll take him on into Henderson'. I said, 'All we want you to do is warn him of his rights and sign this piece of paper here that you give him his warning'. He ah.....he decided to do it. And I'm going to tell you something, he just barely could read. When he got down toif you're indigent, he said, if you're indignant and can't hire a lawyer, he couldn't even read the warning to him. And this is true, and I don't know whether..... he may still be Justice of the Peace down there, I don't know, but ah.....but it's a shame that we've got folks like that ah.....handling those kind of jobs. But probably he was making all.....earning all they was paying him you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you couldn't read him his rights?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, back then.....I could, yeah we read him his rights, but we.....you've got to take him immediately before a Magistrate after you've done that and....and.....and in the county where he's arrested and let him read him his rights. Yeah, that's the wayit's still that way. Ah.....so I worked in ah....in that area....let's see ah.....ah..... on the 9th and then on the 10th ah.....ah.....we assist a drug group here on a bust af....in.....Grand Jury indictment, we arrestmy team arrested four. I'm in Aus.....and then the next day I go to Austin with evidence and we flew down there, we got the mail plane in Tyler and flew this shotgun and our other evidence in this murder that ah....cause that's the only place at that time that we could get ballistic work done you know, was in Austin. So we flew to Austin back on the 11th and submitted this shotgun and of course we worked on that case for a couple more days, or three or four more days. And ah.....then on the 16th of Augustthis is something else that happened to me that don't happen to too many people.....there's a husband of Jan Alice Hudson, a school teacher, was murdered and Lucas copped out to killing her, later. And her husband came home from work and found her dead and she was cut up, boy listen, they cut her vagina out, I mean she was.....there was blood.....that was the bloodiest scene you've ever seen. And her husband came in from work and found her body and who do you think he called, he called me. And I don't even work Rusk County. And ah....and he said.....I told him I said, 'Well has the Sheriff and them got there yet', and he said, 'I haven't called them', he said, 'Don't want to call them'. And I said, 'Well you got to'. He had, had a burglary out there twice and the second time he had the burglary he called the Sheriff's office and they sent two deputies out there and they took a bunch of fingerprints and when they left one of the neighbors saw 'em throw 'em out the window and they found them in a ditch. And ah.....and he....he had lost all respect he ever had for Rusk County.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I wonder why.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and I told him I said, 'Well you got to call the Sheriff'. And I didn't even know the man, I had never met the man.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why didn't he call Stu, that was his.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I had met him too, I had met him too, I take that back, I had met him. But.....well Stuart was ah.....he didn't know Stuart.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Stuart and I were working.....I'm supposed to go to Tyler, I'm at home, that's the only reason he gets me, it's four or five o'clock in the afternoon. We're going to set up all night on a surveillance at Owentown that night and try to catch some oil field theFort Stuart had some informant information that they was going to steal some stuff so he'd called me and asked me if I'd come over there and set up with him that night and I told him I would. So I went home to get me a little old nap about four o'clock in the afternoon andand he called.....I'd just laid down when he called me. So I called Stuart and Stuart said 'Well if you can't come I got to get somebody else and if you'll go on over there and take care of that murder investigation I'll sit on this surveillance tonight and I'll join you tomorrow'. So I did, that's what I did. I mean that.....you know, we're wanting to get the job done, it don't make any differencethe county don't make any difference. So I worked on this Hudson case all that night you know and then they.....for several days. And ah.....ah.....and later of course ah.....we found outand I'm pretty sure that Lucas and them did this case, I didn't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Henry Lee Lucas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. But he says Toole did the.....killed her. He was sittingbut the reason we know, we got some witnesses that.....that identified a picture of a Vistacruiser

Oldsmobile stationwagon, it was parked on the side of the road two hundred yards from her house when the crime was supposed to of happened, people passing saw it. Well this.... I don't.....have you ever....you know what.....you've seen those Vistacruiser stationwagons, Oldsmobile they got the glass up above.....they didn't make very many of them and they was real odd. Well when we.....whenshortly after this whenever they got on the loop cause ah....well they proved that he.....he bought.....he and Toole bought a Vistacruiser stationwagon at a Laundromat in Laredo, Texas about three months before this murder happened and the same color as the one these people saw out here. So this is the only thingand then Toole led the officers out there and showed 'em. He even describedshe had a bunch of plants hanging on the pat.....ah.....ah.....Lucas said Toole was down there longer than he was supposed to have and he.....he'd got out of the car and walked down there and looked in the back window and he was still cutting upcutting on her. And ah....oh it was.....it was terrible, it was a terrible thing. And.....all right, I work on that for four or five days and ahI got..... I got to go to court in Longview on another revocation hearing on the 24th and I got to go to the Grand Jury in Marshall. I'm in Dallas on the 1st of September. Got to provide security for Governor Clements on the 2nd. District Court in Longview on the 3rd and ah.....4th and 5th, 6th. Ah.....I'm in Gregg County assisting Shreveport police in a bank burglary investigation on the 7th and 8th. Ah.....I'm working.....go back.....get back with Stuart Dowell on Rusk County working on this murder on the 9th and 10th. And I'm in court in Marshall on a cattle theft case on the 13th. And Longview in court on the 14th. And I'm back in court in Marshall on the 15th. Ah.....Longview assisting Oklahoma officers in a pipe theft on the 20th. Ah.....Henderson, back with Stuart in Henderson on the 22nd and 23rd. Grand Jury in Longview on the 24th. Ah....Marshall in court on this guy that had the lab, he got 50 years and \$50,000.00 fine on the 27th and 28th. I'm back down at Tatum working with Stuart on that murder investigation. I think this is

another one. Ah.....I think this is where the woman was kidnapped, I got to look that up. Henderson on the 30th, the same. Go to a company meeting in Jefferson on the 1st of October. We used to have our meetings up at Lake O'Pines some and that was great. Boy we could go up there and all get together and set down and cook some fish and maybe drink a beer and talk about our business you know and spend the night up there. And ah....but they quit that. Ah.....Kilgore called me on the 3rd and I assistno Longview, on an aggravated assault investigation, I worked with them two or three days on that. That's where a policeman shot a guy here and this was a funny thing on this one. The policeman was off duty and this guyhe saw this guy running and there was two girls started screaming andand hollering that he'd stole their purse out of their car. And this policeman got after him and it happened out here at 80 and Eastman. And he ran him up there behind that car wash there and ah.....and caught him. And the guy started fighting him and....and grabbed his gun and ah.....and was on top of him and beating on him and the policeman shot him in the chest.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kill him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, he went in the hospital and ah.....we went down there and of course he wasn't in any shapewe couldn't talk to him. Andand ah.....so went ahead and did what you're supposed to, you got all witnessyou got the girls that lost their purse and the people that saw him running and.....and ah.....took pictures and done everything you could.....that you're supposed to do. And finally come time to talk to this guy and he wouldn't talk to us unless his lawyer was present. And of course you knew you got to tell him you got.....and so finally I got an audience with he and his lawyer and he wouldn't let him say anything. And so his lawyer finally came around and we was getting ready to present it to the Grand Jury and of course I'd carried the clothing to Dallas and did a ballistics on them. Andand ah.....so ah.....right before we went to the Grand Juryno, we went to the Grand Jury and indicted this guy, aggravated assault on a police

officer and theFort And his lawyer come to me and he said, 'Glenn you know....', he said, 'I read that report on that ballistics report that you sent into Aus.....to Dallas crime lab and they said that my clients shirt was a good ways from his body when that bullet entered it'. And I said, 'Well that consistent with what the police officer said'. He said, 'Well how do you explain that'. I said, 'He said he was on top of him'. I said, 'If you're on top of me and you got a shirt and it's loose, it's going to hang down isn't it. If you're up on.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Leaning over.

GLENN ELLIOTT: He pled him guilty. That....you know, he just hadn't figured out.....he thought it was.....something was wrong you know. And ah.....of course I had to work on that for several days. And ah.... I go to Dallas on the 6th with the evidence in the case. And I'm back with Dowell in Kilgore and Henderson and Tatum on the 7th. I went to the Grand Jury, probably on this case right here, on the 8th. I got a questionable death in Kilgore on the 12th. Tyler and Palestine on the 13th. We had a.....we go down to Palestine and meet at the penitentiary and stay and meet Company F down there and we do our.....we done some fire.....firearms training there for awhile. We went down there and spent the night of the 13th of October with Company F. And ah....oh we'd have a good time and come back on the 14th. And had a bank burglary in White Oak on the 15th, I worked on that for several days and we finally got an old boy on it. I'm in court in Longview on the 18th. Ah.....ah....arrest a fugitive from Parington on the 19th, I'm back in court on the 20th in Longview. Gilmer and Gladewater on the 21st on a burglary. Back in court on the 22nd. Gilmer for security for Governor Clements on the 23rd and that's got to be the tateree, you know they have the ah.....the sweet potato festival in Upshur County in October.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh.....oh yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And we call it the tateree. Back in court on the 25th in Longview, 26th and 27th in court. Captain Wilson is coming down on the 28th and he's doing a little investigation, he's already Senior Ranger Captain of course. I'm in Dallas on the 1st and ah.....and I'm working with Foster on those three murders. I recover some propertywe left Dallas and come on back down here and I recovered some property stolen in Dallas. I'm in Henderson on the 3rd and ah..... I ran a search warrant on this bank burglary in White Oak on the 4th in Kilgore and recovered some of the tools that were used tothey was breaking into the night deposit. They hit the Liberty City bank and the White Oak bank the same night, broke into the night deposit.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we haven't heard from Elysian Fields in a long time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Elysian Fields..... I think we caught everybody that ever wanted to ra....ah....do that. I've been to the Grand Jury here on the 5th of November. I'm in Carthage on a burglary on the 8th. And back in Longview in court on the 9th and 10th. Ah...I'm assisting Louisiana officers in Panola County searching for a fugitive on the 11th. Ah....served some more subpoenas in Kilgore on the 12th for another trial. Ah.....witness in court on the 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 22nd and 23rd. Ah....arresting an escapee on the 23rd while I'm waiting on court somewhere. I'm in Henderson on the 24th on a burglary. Witness in court on the 29th on a murder case, 29th and 30th. I'm in Tyler on a murder case on December the 1st. Carthage on the 2nd, the same. I assist DeSoto Parish, Louisiana officers in Marshall in another murder case. I'm in Jefferson at another company meeting, that was our Christmas party on the 4th of December, we had our Christmas parties up there then. And we spent the night up there. And Kilgore on December the 6th and 7th and Carthage on the 8th. Marshall and Nacogdoches on the 9th. Back with Stuart Dowell on the 10th in a murder investigation. And I think this is ah....maybe another one. I'm in court on the 13th in Carthage on a murder case. I'm in Dallas with some evidence on

the 14th.....no I'm in court in Longview on the 13th and then I got called on.....had to go on to Mar.....to Carthage on a murder. And then I'm in Dallas on the 14th. This is December, I'm trying to think what case that was. Back in Carthage on the 15th and 16th. I got to find out what murder that was. I don't.....we'll just go on and get through with ah.....ah I'm in Tyler on the 22nd. Spoke to the Longview Explorers Police Cadets that night in Longview. I'm to Pryor and Tulsa, Oklahoma on a burglary investigation, that's on the 23rd and recovered \$11,000.00 worth of this was the Weatherford boys I was telling you about, the ones that jogged and burglarizing all these places, and I made two or three trips to Pryor up there in Oklahoma and recovered a bunch of property. Carried one of them up there with me. I'm in Tatum on the 24th assisting with the arrest of two escapees from TDC. Yeah, we was up all night down there, this was two escapees that ah.....ah.....cut.....try to kill the Warden down there, Warden Cousins. They stole his car and ah.....abandoned it down here in Rusk County and we got.....they brought the dogs in down there. And we arrested one of them and me and Bobby Prince arrested one of them about eleven o'clock that night and then.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Christmas Eve?

GLENN ELLIOTT: 24th.....yeah.....no this was October.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, yeah this October, we're in October. And then we....ah....the other one Bob Mitchell waited out after daylight and he climbed a tree out in the lake, the dogs got on him pretty good and old Bob waded out there in waist deep water and got him, had him....made him come down out of the tree. There was three of them because we arrested two of them early, somebody else arrested another one that night. Cause it was cold, boy I tell you, it was cold that night. And we had them rascals handcuffed to a tree down there at the....we had a command post

and they was barefooted and didn't have any shirts and it was nearly freezing. They stood out there all night waiting on somebody to bring them some clothes from the penitentiary. See it's a good ways down there to the pen.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT:where their clothes was. Ah....I'm in Kilgore and Tyler on the 25th assisting Mayes County, Oklahoma on a burglary investigation. 26th I spoke to ah....history class at the Longview High School and in court. 29th I'm in Carthage and 30th in Carthage and Marshall on a theFort 31st in Kilgore and Henderson on the same case. I'm in Tyler and Dallas on the 1st of November. Marshall and Daingerfield on the 2nd. Tyler Federal Court in bank case on the 5th and 6th, bank robbery case. Ah.....the 7th I arrested two suspects in a capital murder case for somebody. Ah....8th and 9th I'm in Mars....probably one of my two suspects in the....I'm trying to....I can't even read my own shorthand. Ah....on the....I'm back....I went back to Pryor, Oklahoma on the 12th and picked....Frank Kemp went with me and we was trying to get some of Frank's stuff up there. Spent the night up there in Pryor on the 12th of November. I'm back in Marshall on the 14th and I'm in Marshall on the 15th, 16th and Longview on Saturday the 17th working on a missing person. To Waskom, the same thing on the 19th, the 20th Tatum. A kidnapping case on the 21st. Ah....this is...this is the woman that ah...was kidnapped out of her trailer park and never did find her body and ah....witnesses saw 'em haul...carry her off. We convicted the woman that kidnapped her of kidnapping, but her body has never been found. We had the helicopter down there and looking and ah....they was....we got some evidence later, some information from an alcoholic said he saw 'em throw her in a well down there on his mother's place out of Tatum. But TI had already come in there and...and...and mined all that stuff and dug all those wells up you know, and mined the stuff, so the body has never been found. Ah....I'm in Tyler in Federal Court on the 26th of November and

I had to testify in some of this ah....some of these corruption cases here in Gregg County. I'm over there the 26th and 27th. In Paris for firearms on the 28th. Bossier City, Louisiana on the 29th. Kilgore and Overton on the 30th of November. I guess that's....let's see, wait a minute, we got to get into December here....no that's....yeah, December the 1st in Dallas, the 4th in Marshall. 5th in Kilgore working....still working with the Railroad Commission on these oil cases. And to Carthage the same day on another murder investigation. Back in Carthage on the 6th. Back in court in Tyler on the 7th. Ah....company meeting on the 8th, that had to be our Christmas party. And the 9th, I'm in Dallas on the 10th on a murder investigation. To Carthage....back in Carthage on a murder investigation on the 11th, probably went to Dallas with evidence on the 10th. 12th to Carthage and Marshall and ah.....13th to Marshall. And Marshall on the 14th, Tyler....these are murder investigations....for polygraph test on the 17th. 18th I'm working in Kilgore on hot oil. And the 19th the same thing and the 20th. The 21st I assist Upshur County in recovery of stolen property. Ah....26th ran a search warrant for Dallas County. Ah....on the 27th the same. 31st ah....recover stolen property for Upshur County. So that's....that got....we got through ah.....we got through that year without anybody getting hurt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that's a good stopping point.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So we'll start on ah....'83 next .

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is a continuation ah....October....of Glenn Elliott's life, this is Tuesday, October 24th. We've been off a few weeks Glenn and I know we're going to have to miss next week. I think we're ready to start 1982.

GLENN ELLIOTT: '83.

ROBERT NIEMAN: '83, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I believe that's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah you are.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Because this is the year the infamous Kentucky Fried Chicken.....you know I got to thinking, you know after going through this case and I've thought.....of course I think about my past a whole lot you know and it's just normal I guess. But I had an idea thatI had told several folks that this did no have any impact on my retiring ah.....but it probably did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In what way?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....I tell you the way I'm geared, you know it, you've been around me long enough now that ah....that you know how I'm geared and I don't like to get in a rut. And you work on a case five years and....and don't have....every.....all of 'em in the penitentiary well you're in a rut, now let's face it you know. I mean you're definitely in a rut. And I like....I'm.....I'm an action person and ah.....so I have an idea that this thing was bothering me a whole lot more.....of course Iyou're going to see and I'll see as I go through this, I'd work on a few other things when folks would call, but mainly I'd get back on this thing, cause this needed to be solved you know. And.....and we had our foot in the door early and ah.....ah.....and it just ah.....and it probably worked on me a lot more than I ah.....figured it did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you ah.....could you relate then possibly too say a Lone Wolfe Gonzauillas in '46-7 he worked the Texas Phat.....Texarkana Phantom murder, he never did solve it and he retired in '51, I don't know if that was a major factor, it may have been.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I promise you that ah.....and he and Iand I'm not trying to compare myself with Gonzauillas by any means, but ah.....he was a man of action too. And he wanted to get things done and.....and.....and I wanted....you know the State would of let me continue to work on that thing as long as I wanted to, nobody would of ever said a word then, you know, as long as I've got leads on it and working on it every day, well they would of never said a word. But I'm drawing

my check every month you know and Iand I'm working for the citizens of this state and I get to feeling, well you know I'm not doing any good, you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it get to be an obsession with you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, I don't think so. It didn't get.....go that far. It was ah.....no I.... I I can I can come back and forth on things just like that cause I did it all through my career, I'm doing this you know, I'm working murder cases and some officer will call me from Louisiana or Nevada or Oklahoma or something and I'll take off a day or two to help him. Because I know he's going to help me you know and this is how I established all my contacts, cause when folks called me to do.....well it's easy if you're not just right in the big middle of just fixing to crack a case, well okay and do it and do it tomorrow, you know, help this guy tomorrow you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's ah....let's talk about what happened, when did it happen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: The what?

ROBERT NIEMAN: It happened in.....ah.....when did this happen, the KFC killings?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it happened in September, but we'll get to it in a minute.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's go ahead and go back to January and then we'll work our way down to it, cause we're going to spend a lot of time on it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, ah.....all right I started out of course the first working day in January I go to Dallas for a company meeting, that's the 3rd. The 4th day of January I got called on a murder that happened in Panola County on December the 8th of the year before. Ah..... I don't know what the delay was on that, but it's not unusual and I don't..... I hadn't looked at my file. And ah.....and then on the 5th I'm down to ah.....ah.....assisting Ranger Womack in a burglary investigation and recover some stolen property. Ah.....I ah.....went to Atlanta that afternoon ah.....they'd had a terrible crime over in Minden, Louisiana, there was a road contractor and his wife were murdered and there

was a jail escapee, there was two of them out of the ah.....county jail, Parish jail over in Minden and they broke jail over there and they killed this man and his wife and we arrested ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you think to get their name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Jimmie Wingo was one of them, the one we arrested down at ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, no the murdered couple?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I don't....ah.....and I don't even have it, because I didn't.....there was no reason.....there was a man.....they had a man hunt going and they was spotted up at Cass County. And Max had been in Longview that morning and I'd helped him with a burglary investigation and ah.....and then I heard later.....maybe they called him here, I don't remember what the deal was. Max probably went over this case with you .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Probably.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....maybe in talking.....anyway, we arrestedWebster Parish, Louisiana, that's Minden and Wingo was.....we had some dogs down there and it was.....it was an all day hunt, but I didn't get down there until after lunch. But Max didn't either, I guess it all happened that afternoon. But anyway I went on to Atlanta and actually wasn't in on the.....on the arrest, Max ah.....was there with the dogs and I think Brantley was there with him and I about 300 yards away when they found him, he was.....he had buried himself under a pile of pine tops that had been cut out of some trees and the dogs found him. Ah.....and then I'm in Marshall working a theft and recovered property valued at \$20,000.00. And back in Longview....ah....back in Marshall again on the same case the 11th. And ah.....ah.....back in Carthage on the 12th on this December murder and back on the 13th. And recovered property from a theft ah.....valued at \$12,000.00 on the 13th. And on the 14th I'm in Tyler for a polygraph test in this Panola County murder. Ah.....in the Hallsville area checking on the same case on the next day. 18th back in Carthage again and served

three subpoenas in this ah....murder case for the Grand Jury ah.....ah.....hearing. We'd ah.....we got to where we'd use a.....the Federal folks had been using the Grand Juries for years and it was hard to get state people to do it. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they just don't want to take the time. It ah.....an investigative Grand Jury is time consuming and ah....and.....and we got folks thatyou know, in state court, prosecutors that ah.....and District Attorneys that ahthey practice private law outside their office you know, outside of being DA and some of them just didn't want todidn't want to work that hard you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well at one time, and it may still be, to be on a Grand Jury you had to be what, a registered voter ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah.....what else?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you of course got to be a citizen of county, but you had to be a registered voter and ah....and.....and ah....let's see, could not be a convicted felon and ah....ah.....and had to know how to read and write.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what about today? Or 1983?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well in 1983.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or in '87 when you....

GLENN ELLIOTT:you didn't have to be a registered voter ah.....the system now is.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you had to read and write?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I believe you do, I think that's one of the qualifications.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In English.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'm sure it is, but I'm not positive. Because I've never served on a Grand Jury. I can go up there and tell them right now that I'd like to serve on the Grand Jury and I could be on one of the next ones probably.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what.... I guess the point I'm coming.....trying to come around through the back door on is here, where there any.....with the rules on juries and everything else going to hell in a hand bag, how much more difficult has that made your job?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, to have an investigative Grand Jury is a lot of help sometimes, because you....you go out here and interview people and ask 'em questions andand they can lie to you, if you get 'em under oath in a Grand Jury and remind them they're under oath when you start to testify, a lot of folks get a little bit concerned, now I've just sworn that I'll tell the truth and nothing but the truth, so help me God. And.....and they don't have to do that when they interview with us.....with an officer out here in the field you know. So that puts them in a position. You get them away from their home ground too, you know, you're talking to a guy on his front porch or at his business or out on the side of the road or maybe in your office, but he knows the Sheriff and he knows where.....but you get one seated in a Grand Jury, maybe in another town, another county you know, wherever the crime was, and ah....and he's with a bunch a strange people and he's just been placed under oath that he's going to tell the truth and then you start asking him questions, you're going to come near getting a true answer you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well at one time in California, now I don't know if this was everywhere or just California, and I don't even know if it's still on the books, but when you would testify before a Grand Jury, if you answered any question other than your name, you waived your 5th Amendment rights.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now that may be just be peculiar to California, they got pretty peculiar things and that may not even be the law.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course the thing about it is, if you're a suspect in a crime, you're talking about a suspect in a crime not a witness.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I'm talking about a witness.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Talking about a witness? Well a witness is ah....well 5th Amendment would not apply ah.....as a witness.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it could if let's say, you and I committed a crime or I had knowledge and they was asking me some question that could lead some know.....something where I had done something wrong somewhere else and if I answered this question about you that would implicate me.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah.....I'm not familiar with California law, but still the Grand Jury is a good tool to use and ah....so if a guy's been involved in crimes well, you know, he's going to be uncomfortable before the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, sure.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.....anyway.....well another example, Stuart hit me up the other night, he was wanting me to contact some people here and there was allegedly two ex-officers that's involved in some stuff that ah....and they want.....they're not cooperating with the officers. And I suggested Stuart sent it to the Grand Jury, I said, 'Hell get 'em under oath'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah I heard you and him talking about that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Hadn't thought about it he said. You know that's the thing to do. You know, put all the pressure on 'em you can to get the truth you know. And if they don't want to give it to you, well maybe they'll give it to somebody else you know. So ah....ah....let's see, I'm back in

Longview on the 20th on a theft and Hallsville the 21st the same. Back in Tyler for another polygraph test on the 24th on this Carthage murder. I'm in Dallas with the Gregg County Sheriff's office on a murder investigation on the 25th. Ah.....at the Dallas County crime lab and this....thisah.....this ah.....Gregg County murder happened on 1-9-83, another delay there for calling me for some reason or other. I work on it the rest of oh the next week and ah....back in Dallas on the 1st of February in District Court in this saddle theft case that was we talking about in '82, back where the same thief had stole some of Governor Clements' saddles, we was trying him on a saddle theft case in Garland. And we tried him in Dallas County and got him seven years. Ah..... I spent two days up there in court and of course that was the first of the month and I probably went to the office and attended a company meeting during that time. I'm in Henderson in court on the 3rd of February. I'm in Tyler on the 4th assisting Ranger Dowell in a murder investigation. Ah.....I'm in Kilgore continuing in a murder investigation on the 7th. I arrested an old boy for outstanding burglary warrant for Gregg County, I just ran into him I imagine during this burglary investigation and knew that we had a warrant for him. And this is not unusual you know, you can do two things at once. On the 8th ah.....ran a search warrant in Longview on this 1-9-83 murder case and recovered some evidence pertaining to it. I'm in Shreveport the next day on the same case, probably gothad to go over there to get something. Went to Austin the next day with some evidence ah.....in Austin on the next day, of course went and spent the night. Ah.....I'm back in Longview working on this murder in Marshall and ah.....the next week. Ah.....Texarkana and Dotterage, Arkansas on the 17th of February on a theft investigation. The 18th I'm assisting Ranger Griffin in a armed robbery in Dallas County.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ronnie?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah.....so I guess he's in Dallas by '83, had to be. Ah.....the 22nd I'm in Dallas making preparations to instruct in a Ranger in-service school, I guess I had to go up there and get some lesson plans and get a way.....get the secretary help me to write up.....anyway I was fixing to instruct in a school pretty soon. Ah.....the 23rd I'm in Henderson and Carthage on a theft investigation. The 24th I'm in Grand Jury in Longview on this 1-9-83 murder case, so I guess we got.....returned an indictment on that. I'm to Jefferson to a company meeting on the 26th. And Beckville on the 28th. Ah....ah.....I'm in Carthage on the 1st of March, Phillips Petroleum Company had a ah..... there was some people tapped one of their main lines down there and was stealing fuel oil, a line from Houston to somewhere. And ah.....they had trucks and ah.....so they got busy and....and of course they got gauges on the lines and they got started monitoring 'em and we caught those folks down there. And I'm in Shreveport the next day on the same case and it was some Louisiana folks doing this. Ah.....on the 7th of March in Longview working a fraud investigation. Ah.....ah....on the 8th I'm helping Oklahoma City officers on a fraud investigation and I arrested a fugitive from Oklahoma the same day. I met with my sergeant for evaluation, James Wright was my sergeant. On the 9th of March I'm in Kilgore on the same fraud investigation. On the 10th Orr City had a bank robbery and I'm up there assisting and we arrested two suspects. This was athis ah.....set a record for.....we.....we got to.....these people wrecked their car out there in Orr City, they was headed towards Lake O'Pines and they got.....turned too short and a wheel come off of their car, it was a man and a woman is what it was that robbed this bank in Orr City. And we got ah.....they called and the Sheriff up there wasn't bad about calling for help in Upshur County then and ah.....but we went up there when we heard that they had a bank robbery andand....and Max was there and Max came in from Atlanta and I was from Long....I came in from Longview. I don't know where ah.....ah..... I guess Brantley was in Mt. Pleasant but he must of been out of town or

something, because ahhe wasn't there. And he didn't come.....he didn't work Upshur County much. And anyway, well we just got down there to try to help 'em catch the bank robbers. And got up there and I suggested to the Sheriff we get the dogs out from the penitentiary down at Palestine and so we did. Now this is early in the day and....and....and the Palestine dogs I think they were.....they had their dogs on the ground about fourteen minutes when they caught these bank robbers hiding in the woods up there. And ah....they said they'd never had that happen before, they they come up there and let those dogs out and got on horseback and.....and.....had in justin less than fourteen minutes. Ah....I'm back in Tyler on the next day. To Austin on the 13th for in-service school and instructing, spent the week in Austin going to school and teaching school. Ah....back in Gilmer on the 21st trying to get.....continuing this bank robbery investigation and interrogate the.....the two subjects were still in jail. Ah....I'm in Daingerfield as a witness in a narcotic arrest in Omaha on the next day, that's where Max and I had to leave Dallas you know and go down there and help to buy a bust deal the year before. And ah.....so we.....they tried one of them up there and ah....and so I spend two days in Daingerfield and I go down to Orr City between testifying and continue.....got to interview witnesses down there to make my case report on ah.....the bank robbery. I'm in Kilgore and Carthage ah....ah.....on this.....back on this Phillips oil line theft case on the 24th. The 25th I'm in Bonham savoy on the same case tracing a trailer down. Ah....27th to White Oak and Gilmer, oil field theft investigation, arrested two suspects ah.....recovered property valued at \$3,000.00. On the 28th I'm in Longview as a witness in a murder case in 124th District Court, 29th the same thing. Back in Daingerfield on the 30th and ah.....on a criminal mischief investigation. And this is....I'd forgot about this, this is another case that I had to leave my counties and go to another Ranger's county to work a case and the Ranger didn't like it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what is criminal mischief?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, in this case ah.....criminal.....this was ah.....this was a new title ah....but this ah....there was a trucker up there had a bunch of diesel trucks and somebody had been pouring ah.....some type of mixture in the fuel that causes engines to go bad. And ah.....this is what he alleged ah.....to tell you the truth we did a lot of work on this thing andand I'm not sure that he wasn't doing this himself. Ah.....he ah.....in fact he was behind with the bank and his old truckhis old equipment was worn pretty bad and I think he was.....he'd been running the wheels off of it and telling the bank he hadn't been doing anything you know and then he claimed somebody was messing with him, and it could be I don't know what....we just never did find outthere's a lot of competition in the trucking business as you well know cause you're in it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And they were hauling stuff out of the Daingerfield area up there. And ah.....ah..... I spent a couple of days up there when I first got this thing and ah.....and nights too. And I'm surprised that I did because I said I wasn't going to stay in Daingerfield anymore. Ah.....ah.....let's see ah....April ah.....on the 4th I'm in Kilgore, a search for a suspect in Panola county oil theFort We've already identified these guys that were stealing that oil out of the Phillips line and one of them had some contacts in Kilgore and finally went to LaGrange and spent three days down there. They'd done....they was doing the same thing down there and they just moved their operation. We finally got one of them down there and we got..... the other one arrested some time later. Ah.....I'm in....work....come on back and work in Henderson on the same thing on the 8th. I'm in Longview for a court hearing in a murder case where the two Mexicans were killed, you know down on theat Easton, we're getting ready to try him and we have a hearing there on the Sanders murder case. And he pled guilty and got.....took forty years in the penitentiary. Back in

Daingerfield on the 11th on that criminal mischief. 12th in Carthage assisting Caddo Parish and searching for a fugitive that broke out of jail down at ah....Caddo Parish had a jail right over there ah.....ah.....south of Greenwood, pretty close to the Texas line and they'd have a jail break down there occasionally and we'd always.....I'd always go down and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would they break out of jail and run over to Elysian Fields and knock off that bank every now and then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: We got to go to Elysian Fields.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. On the 13th I'm in Gladewater and White Oak and recovered oil field property valued at \$60,000.00, continuing onon ah.....identified it as being out of Houston and ah.....they'd contacted the Houston police and I was back helping them on the next day or three ah.....identifying the people that had stolen this property. In Gladewater assisting Ranger Foster on the 15th and searched for a felon wanted in Camp County. Ah....back in White Oak the same day assisting Houston on the 18th and 19th, the same. Henderson and Nacogdoches on the 20th and trying to run these folks down for Houston. On the 25th I'm in Dallas in the lab in the Rusk County murder case getting ready to go to trial over there on a murder case that was coming up. Ah....I'm back helping Houston on the 26th on this theFort And I'm in Carthage on the 27th assisting Concordia Parish, Louisiana on a theft investigation, I did the same thing..... I spent the night and was there on the 28th and 29th. Ah.....and left Carthage and went back up.....(tape ends). And on May the 2nd I'm back in Dallas for a company meeting and we had another report change. We always you know.....change, nobody wants change you know, but you always ah

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is G.W. still captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Let's see, yeah Iyeah, G.W. is still captain, yeah, yeah. I'm in Hallsville and Marshall on the 3rd on an oil field pipe theFort And the 4th I'm in 188th District Court as a witness in a murder case. Ah....back in Henderson on pretrial conference with Rusk County DA on a double murder case ah.....Memears where the.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How do you spell that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: M E M E A R. That's where the grandson killed his grandmother and grandfather, we went through that a couple of years ago. And we....it took us awhile to get this kid, he left and went to California as you remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And we arrested him out there and brought him back, so we're getting ready to try him. Ah....on the 6th I'm in Longviewand it's not.....pretty common.....this is whyI'm worried about this Kentucky Fried Chicken thing, these people.....if I was planning on going to trial in that thing and I was a prosecuting attorney I'd be contacting the witnesses on a daily basis and seeing what else we could get going on it you know. I don't hear anything out of it you know. And this tells me that they're ah.....that they're not going at it right. Ah.....let's see ah....Longview and recovered pipe stolen on 5-3 in Harrison County valued at \$29,550.00, that's a pipe theFort.... I found the pipe we was looking for. And in Gladewater the next day and recovered additional property valued oil field....for \$6,000.00. On the 10th I'm in Kilgore continuing this same case and Carthage on the 11th the same. On the 12th I'm in Marshall as a witness in 71st District Court in the Regis Paper Company theft ah....Regis Paper Company had lost some timber down ah....ah....oh near Caddo Lake oh a month or so before in one of the thefts I worked earlier this yearor last year and we made a case on some people ah.....blacks that had ah....stolen it and hauled it over to Carthage and sold it to a wood yard over there. So I've got to go to court in that. I'm in

Emery ah....on the 13th ah....ah....let's see....doing something in ah....and I called at 1:00 a.m. to 3:00 p.m. the next day and assist Longview police department in a capital murder ah....attempt capital murder and aggravated assault. This was a narcotic deal that went bad. This is a funny case ah....ah....it's notwell it's not funny but part of it's funny. Ah.....this was ah....they had a narcotic officer here that was working undercover in the Longview police department and he had got in with a guy that's selling dope that washad kind of turned informant to him. And ah.....they were out fixing to make a buy together, a dope dealer and an undercover narcotic agent and ah.....and the deal went bad. And ah....the narcotic officer was ah....ah.... I mean the under.... the ah....dope dealer that was working with the undercover narcotic agent had got in the car with this other guy on the pretext of buying some dope. And the guy.....he was.....he was wired and the undercover agent was in the unmarked city car behind them and this guy drove off at a high rate of speed with his ah....ah....guy in the car with him. And.....and they got in pursuit and they.....and of course he called the police and they got out there and there was a shoot out. And this guy that was.....had ran off with the ah....dope dealer ah.....he got away.....he got shot but it didn't kill him, he shot him as soon as got.....on a dead end street he shot him and he fell out of the car and the police officer that was chasing 'em shot this boy and killed him. And ah....he....the funny part about it was, he had a cap on.....he had a cap and right in the center of that cap was a 357 magnum bullet hole, it just pulverized his head but.....and.....and I'm going to tell you what was on the cap and I got a picture of it, "Another Day Shot To Hell". That was what was written on that cap.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Literally.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And there was a bullet hole right in the middle of it. They made copies of that and theythey use it for at the Kilgore Police Academy, I bet they're still using it over there. Well this took severalcause I worked from.....I'd already made my days work you know

and I went to work at 1:00 a.m. and I worked til three o'clock the next day, which is.....this happened on Friday night as I remember. And ah.....of course I had to spend several days on that and we arrested two suspects ah....ah.....additional suspects in this case and we ran a search warrant. Well we didn't exactly run a search warrant, this old boy that was riding with this undercover agent he was ah.....he had him fooled, he was acting like an informant and he quit dealing....he'd caught him dealing, but he was still.....went out to a new motel here in town right on Interstate 20 out there and ah.....found out he was staying out there and he was laying up in the hospital, he's shot but not bad, I think he hit him in the side or gut shot him or something, I don't remember. He wasn't hurt all that bad but he wound up being in the hospital for some time. So I went out there to see the manager and he wasn't there and I sent for him and I found out this guy.....before the manager got there, had been staying there for a month and hadn't paid his rent for two or three weeks. And ah.... so the manager gets there and so right away I suspect the manager is involved with him too and he probably was, we never did prove it, but I got..... I said 'How long are you going to let that guy live here without paying rent. He's a dope dealer in your motel'. 'Boy we're going to get him out right now'. And I said, 'Well good', I said, 'You get him, you know, you're going to evict him and when you take possession of that room, which I'm waiting on you to go do right now, I want to see what's in there'. And we did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You don't.....you don't have to have a warrant then do you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. And ah.....we went in there and ah.....he.....he said, 'Well I'm taking charge of it right now cause he's overdue and that's the way it's written here, if you don't pay'. So we found his scales and a bunch of other stuff in there where he's been weighing his dope you know and a bunch of paraphernalianarcotic paraphernalia. But this was just a.....this.....you know, and I just go ahead and do this that day, because if you don't get it done.... I

went to work at one and I see I quit at three, 1:00 a.m. to 3:00 p.m., and I probably worked a little longer than that and just watching my hours. I'm in Tyler of course the next day with ah.....well I stay in Longview the next day and work and then the 16th I go to Tyler with some of the evidence and then I have to take some on to Dallas. And I'm back.....see it takes several days to ah.....ah.....ah.....you know, wrap up something like that. Although you got everybody in custody but you got to take statements and you got to get your evidence and you got to make your.....you know and take statements from witnesses and all this good stuff. And I took a vacation then the next week and went to Canada fishing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where you'd be with Paul Harvey and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, no doubt. Ah....on the 1st of June I'm back and we go to Palestine and have a bi-company meeting with Company F at the Texas Department of Corrections down there and we did firearms training there. We did that occasionally, they'd put us up down there in the barracks and we'd stay inside the ah.....I'm in Sulphur Springs on the 2nd the next day on a theft investigation. Gilmer and Quitman the next day on the same case. In Dallas on the 6th ah.....ah.....helping Longview police on this capital murder investigation and we picked up evidence from the lab for a Grand Jury hearing. I'm in Longview on the 7th on the same case. The 8th I appear before a Grand Jury as a witness in ah....and of course the officer was no billed for killing this guy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's no bill?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That means the Grand Jury heard the evidence and they declared that ah.....it was not.....it was justifiable homicide is what it means. But they have.....they call it no bill, they either bill 'em or no bill 'em, the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: A bill would of said.....said he's

GLENN ELLIOTT: A bill would of said he's guil.....or would be ah.....ah.....be referred to court for trial, no bill says you know, go on about your business. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me ask you, could they at some point then still come and reopen the case or?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. It's not like he's been tried and double jeopardy and all that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's right, no a Grand Jury can come back any time and hear additional evidence. But of course this was obvious, we hadthe guy is.....ah.....their recording the conversation and he's bugged and.....and he's got the guys listening to it, all the policemen are hearing it on their radios and they're in a chase.....in pursuit, he shoots this guy while they're in pursuit and....and.....and of course he's shooting at the officers. I....I....we.....he shot at this.....he opened the door and this was a real darkit was out there off ofoh in that new addition off of Bill Owens out there and he got up in a dead end street is what happened. And the only light that this police officer had, he'd.....he'd jumped out of his car and ran on foot and the guy opened the door of the car and the overhead light came on. And he'd fell out of his car and was squatted down between the door and the seat shooting at the officer. And the only light the officer had was the overhead dome light. And boy he popped him a good one right there, I mean he....he hit him good.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Another day shot to hell.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....I'm back in ah.....ah.....let's see, appeared as a witness on the 8th with the Grand Jury. I'm in Marshall, I got a lead on the Underwood murder case over at Marshall. This is another old unsolved murder case I worked a whole lot on over there. And there's a.....at this time there's a guy got.....it's a black guy that had been to the penitentiary that we suspect that may have killed him. The victim had sent this guyit was a main witness in a

burglary case that had sent this guy to the penitentiary and he got out of the pen and he was mean and he got in a fight and got killed over at Marshall. And after he was killed several of his associates told us that he told them that he'd killed Underwood cause he sent him to the pen. And he probably did, but we never could prove it. And I spent some time on that going to his place of employment and trying to figure out where he was on certain dates and see if we could associate him with a gun and things of this nature. And ah.....things that you do. Ah.....on the 13th I'm in Carthage in District Court in a burglary case, same on the 14th. This is a case where we had another murder and we sent the guy to the penitentiary for burglary and ah....and the District Attorneyhe got him a life sentence for burglary because he was a habitual criminal , but he thought we had a better case on burglary than we did murder. We....we ah....associated him with some of the weapons taken out of the house, but he killed a man and left him there and he never was tried ah.....for this, but we tried him for burglary. And of course you know, you got to do what they want you to do you know. You can't ah....you can't run from the court. The 15th I'm back in Marshall assisting in ah.....Watson armed robbery case. On the 16th in Marshall the same. Ah....ah.....recovered a aircraft stolen in Lawrence, Kansas, twin engine airplane valued \$480,000.00 that evening at Gregg County airport. Ah....I'm in Longview helping.....assisting Kansas officers on the 17th, 18th and 19th and 20th, 21st and 22nd. Ah.....we even ah..... I even went to the control tower and got a ah.....recording of the guy coming in calling forthat brought it in there. They knew when it came in you know and he brought it down here to sell. And he got scared andand ah....just left it and of course we're going to try to make a case on him by voice identification to enhance our case. We did..... I did a lot of work for Lawrence, Kansas officers on that and they were down here and I enjoyed working with them. I'm back in Daingerfield on the 23rd of June. Back in Marshall on the 24th on the Underwood case, located

another one of the blacks that this guy had talked about. I'm in Sulphur Springs helping ah.....went to Sulphur Springs on the 26th and helped bury an old Sheriff, that was Sunday. And this is a strange story, old Jr. Tiddle ah.....he was a country Sheriff and I got along with my Sheriffs, all of them all over East Texas. And Jr. had been a Sheriff in Mt. Vernon for a bunch of years and he got beat and he moved to Sulphur Springs and went to work with the Sheriff up there and the Sheriff up there died and he ran for Sheriff four or five years later and got elected Sheriff of Sulphur Springs and was Sheriff there when he died. And ah.....Jr. had set down at the table with his wife the Saturday before at breakfast and told her he said, 'I don't..... I know it's not good to talk about things like this', but he said, 'Honey if I ever die I want Glenn Elliott, so and so and so and so and so and so to be my pallbearers'. A week later we was burying him. And he had a heart attack. And I left Sulphur Springs and went on to Palestine and ah.....ah.....to interview some people the next day on this airplane theFort And I spent the next day in Palestine. I'm in Tyler the following day, the 28th on the same case. In Longview on the 29th the same. Ah.....I'm in Tyler on the 30th picking up evidence ah.....in the Watson robbery case to be tried in Marshall on July 11th. I'm in Dallas on the 1st of July to a company meeting and a took a few days vacation that week, I guess the 4th of July fell in there. I'm in Marshall in court on the 11th in the Watson robbery case and spent about three days over there in court. 14th I'm in Beckville and Marshall in a theft investigation and Beckville and Tyler. And this is a case that happened down there where there was an old thefta Deputy Sheriff shot an old theft down there and ah.....and I had to spend quite a bit of time down there. Seemed like when these officers get involved in shootings, you know it's kind of like a lot of other things, it just keeps on happening around. Ah..... I spent a right smart of time down in the Carthage area and ah....ah.....assisting them in Liberty County on a theft investigation. We had..... what we'd actually done is uncovered a car theft ring down there, a chop shop, another chop

shop. Ah.....on the 22nd of July I'm in Tyler on a oil field theFort And then to AtlantaI'm in Tyler running a polygraph test and Max is out of pocket on vacation and we had a Sheriff up there.....and I knew the Sheriff real well in Cass County and he was a.....he was a good deputy when I worked up there and was a pretty good Sheriff. But he'd got to taking a lot of drugs and he was so mixed up on this thing here and he called Austin. And there was an old boy up there that had been stealing you know and buying stolen property, he was just an old junk yard dealer and lived in Cass County all his life and there wasn't any need of getting.....and he called Austin, he called the FBI, he called everybody he could think of and wanting some help up there in Atlanta. And finally Bill Wilson called me and Max was gone and ah..... I don't know, Stuart may have been on vacation too. Anyway ah..... I wound.....he was catching me in Tyler and I'm working on the oil field thing, which I could turn loose of and he said, 'Well you get up there in Cass County and see what that crazy Sheriffwhat's wrong with him you know'. And I got up there and he was just beside himself really, I never seen Rancon in that kind of shape before in all the time I worked with him, and I worked with him for seven, eight years when I was assigned up there. But anyway, he was.....his health was bad and he later died. And he was taking a lot of pills and he was just mixed up and he wanted everything done and.....and a bunch of other officers.....the FBI had already got over there and auto theft and intelligence people was there and he was so randomly discussing everything that.....and I finally I said, 'Well look you know Rancon, set down here, what is your priority'. I had my pad out there, #1 and I got him calmed down and I got his priorities what he wanted done and we got it done you know. And we recovered a couple of stolen vehicles and ah..... I had to spend the night up there ah.....and you know, to try to get everything squared away. And ah....but we got it done, but had to settle him down first. On the 23rd , was Saturday, I'm in Henderson assisting Panola County in a theft investigation . 25th Carthage Grand Jury on

the shooting case that ah....where the officer had shot this old boy down there a couple of weeks before. Ah.....I'm working in Mars.....in the Carthage area on a missing person case. I think this is the woman that was kidnapped and ah.....that we talked about down at Tatum at the trailer park out of the last deal, we got some leads on that or something. I'm in Dallas on the 1st of August for a company meeting and ah....back in Carthage on the 2nd of August on this theft ring where this officer shot this boy. Ah.....stayed down at Carthage several days on that. Ah....ah.....Henderson and Carthage on the 5th, Tyler on the 10th same case. Ah.....on the 15th I'm back in.....11th and 15th all that area, in Carthage. Ah....worked with Kansas officers again on the 16th in this plane theft, they.....they came back down here and we spent three days on it and we ran some people on polygraph, acquaintances of this guy that we later identified as bringing the plane in, in this area here. Ah....I go to Tyler and Carthage and Center on the same case on the 19th. And on the 21st ah....of August that year we started this surveillance on the banks. Ah....we had ah....the captain and some of the Rangers there in the Dallas area they did a profile on this Bonnie and Clyde type man and woman bank robbers. And ah....so we.....ahthey found out that they was robbing banks on Fridays and they was robbing them between ten and one o'clock in the afternoon and that they was doing them within a ninety mile or hundred mile radius of the Dallas, Fort Worth metroplex and they was doing 'em every so many months and it was getting about time for them to rob another bank. So we started.....I made a trip to ah.....to the Bonham area and talked to the Sheriff up there and that was my.....where I was going to be assigned, Fannin County, at least one bank in Fannin County. And they wound up in Windom, my hometown. And I talked to the Sheriff and told him what we was going to do and then I I started scouting the area out to try to find out the best escape route out of Windom and a place to hide a stolen vehicle. And.....and ah....so I spent a day or two up there making preparation for this surveillance.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know where they could hide.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Go up north of town there and just past this mobile home on back arounda tank back there .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Go on back there and get in the woods back there behind that. But that was going the wrong way, they'd have to come back through town to get back to the metroplex see. But anyway, ah....ah....I'm back in Carthage

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just for the record, that's where Glenn's farm is at.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....I'm back in Carthage on the 23rd on a theft investigation . And ah.....assisting Marion County on a robbery investigation on the 24th. Ah.....I'm in Dallas on ah..... I took another few days vacation. Dallas for a company meeting on the 1st, which had to be Friday cause I left there and went on to Windom and set on the bankor probably Thursday, and went on to Windom and set on the bank all day Friday. And ah.....then I'm in Henderson in court on the 6th and Carthage Grand Jury on the 7th. And ah.....Marshall, a court hearing on the 8th and then to Windom ah.....for a surveillance the next day at the bank on the 9th. I generally drive up and spend the night on the night before cause had ah.....we'd get in this house..... I ah....what we did was ah.....the FBI was it was a.....it was a joint operation and ah.....we had a Ranger and an FBI agent and maybe a local officer in nearly everyon every surveillance, you know when you did have one. But the Sheriff in Bonham.....they was....there were two banks in Fannin County, one over at Trenton and I think Don Anderson was working on itor Ladonia or somewhere over there.....ah.....Leonard I forget which bank it was. But anyway, the Sheriff in Bonham didn't have too many folks and we used a Constable there in Windom. And his youngest son had a house there about three feet from the bank and we used his daughter's bedroom, it was on that side. And

we could set and see the front door of the bank very good and of course I had field glasses too. And the Constable was there with us and he knew everybody.....before they got out of their cars he could tell us who it was just about. And we just kind of let him ah.....and if a stranger came up, well he said, 'Well I don't know that guy'. Well you know, okay we....we'd kind of watch him for awhile make sure what was going on. But anyway, that's what we was doing and ah....and anyway, went on to ah.....I'm back in Henderson on the 12th and court in Memears case and this guy pled guilty and took a little old light sentence and later got killed in the penitentiary, the guy that killed his grandmother and grandfather. Ah.....13th I'm in Carthage assisting Baton Rouge, Louisiana in a theft investigation and recovered property valued at \$40,000.00, worked there again on the 14th on the same case. Ah....I'm in court in Longview on the 15th and back to Windom, surveillance on the bank on the 16th. And I'll just go ahead.....and we did this about five weekends in a row and this is ah.....and nothing had happened. And ahand then ah.....oh I see.....yeah, we'll get on down to it here. I'm back in Carthage on the 19th and assisting Louisiana officers in taking statements in this theft case, where we recovered this property. In Longview assisting ah.....ah.....Brook County, Georgia in a theft investigation. Kilgore same, obtained a search warrant and recovered property valued at \$45,000.00 from Georgia. Ah....worked on that case on the 22nd and then left there and drove to Windom to be there on the 23rd for the bank surveillance. And this is last that we did because ah..... I set up there at the bank surveillance, which was a Friday on the 23rd of September, 1983 and I got a call real early on the morning of the 24th of September on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. So it actually happened on the night of the 23rd of September, Friday night. And ah.....and I ah.....I'll stop right here just for a minute. We cut off this ah.... everybody had a lot to do and we'd been on these bank surveillance's like five or six week.....Fridays in a row and ah.....and we just wasn't making that much progress in it you know

and nothing had happened and we was short, everybody was short handed you know. During this time I was just.....you know, somebody called me all the time, I don't know, other Rangers had to be getting calls.....some calls you know and we was busy all the time. And anyway, they pulled off on it andand this Kentucky Fried Chicken thing happened and about three weeks later this pair robbed that Windom bank that we was watching.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they ever catch 'em?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: At Windom?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We'll get.....we'll get to that.....yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's go....okay..... I tell you what, are we ready for Kentucky Fried Chicken?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it's.....it's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, why don't we just stop, there's World Series going on and we don't want to have to cut it short.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that's good, that's good. We'll stop right here and start there week after next.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And I know you want to watch it and I do.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, cause that'll be ah.....and then I'll review some more of my reports.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is the continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. This is Tuesday, November the 7th, 1995. We've had a few weeks off again Glenn, we seem to be taking off more than we.....we show up any more. We'll get back on it now. I think we stopped last time, you just got the call on the.....what become famous around here at least, is the Kentucky Fried Chicken killings.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that was on the night of ah.....September 24th....or the morning that I got called. And I guess..... you know we was talking about these Bonham ah.....this bank up at Windom, I have an idea this had a lot to do with us ah.....ah.....cause see I was up there on the 23rd and this happened on the 25th. Ah.....so I have an idea this had a lot to do with us getting off of those banks up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah you said what, two or three weeks later they hit that bank.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh, yeah. And of course we was tied up in this thing here. But I tell you what Bobby, this was a.....of course I got a call on ah.....the morning you know, after they didn't ah.....ah.....they didn't.....they were missed that night about ten o'clock, closing time, or shortly there after and ah.....the police department over at Kilgore ah.....worked the case and ah.....and they called me early the next morning, about daylight I guess. Iof course normal thing I I just went right on to Kilgore and got with.....met 'em at the police station and ah.....we went to the scene and ah.....ah.....kind of off the record.....you know, the scene wasn't protected near as well as it should of been. And in a lot of cases they're not and they should be. It's just so tough to protect a crime scene.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I've heard from other people other than you, that it looked like a herd of buffalo had been through there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....it was a sad situation and finally well we set down and ah.....and Dick Headon and ah.....ah.....a couple of the detectives and myself andand let's get this thing.....let's get everybody.....keep everybody away from down here and so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now this is down below the Pleasant Hill community where this crime scene.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'm talking about.....well the crime.....I'm talking about the crime scene there at the Kentucky Fried Chicken.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay in Kilgore, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: See that's my first.....that's where I go first, the bodies hadn't been found.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, well I spoke.....when I was speaking for the record was of the.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well....oh it was terrible down there, but it ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah....ah....it was.....it wasn't too good there in Kilgore. It was not too good there in Kilgore, it was ah....ah.....it was just ah....oh you know, everybody wanted to see what was going on and ah....but we got it squared away there in Kilgore.

ROBERT NIEMAN: About what time was this now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it's early, I'd say just after daylight.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well had the building been sitting open all night?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No they had a.....they had some peop.....they had a.....they left a police officer there all night I think, there guarding the place. Ah.....but they didn't try to do any crime scene search that night, they just..... they just secured the building and kept everybody away from it, which was good. And ah....and then we.... we got in there the next morning. But they'd been all in there looking you know to see.....and they could.....it was obvious thatthat there was something happened in there. Because there was blood up at the cash register on the floor, there was blood back in the office where they kept some of their money and there was a trail of blood in between and so it was obvious that somebody got hurt in there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was anybody shot in the?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no, wasn't any shots fired in there. Ah.....notwell there wasn't any, but there was no sign of any shots being fired.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was any.....was anybodydo you.....what caused it, beatings? Was somebody cut?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, somebody got hit, yeah. And ah.....we never did know.....and I'll get into that in a minute, we never did know for sure ah.....we knew who got hit because we knew it was her blood, and it was one of the ladies.....blood was up at the cash register and it was her blood that was back there in the office. And she was the acting manager or the assistant manager and was in charge there that night. And we got down there and we..... I told.....the Chief wanted ah.....for Danny Prytle and I to ah.....work the crime scene.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who's Danny Prytle?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was a detective there, Danny works for the Rusk County Sheriff's office now as an investigator.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But then he was.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was.....worked at the Kilgore police department. And Danny's a good boy, good hard working officer and I enjoyed working with him and still would, he was a good hand. And ah.....so he and I had just....we'd got down there and we'd started ah....we got a photographer in there, one of the guys that worked for the Kilgore police that was real good with a camera, and we started taking pictures and started making notes and ah....we had everything secured in there and everybody out. And I guess about ah.... we'd been down there about an hour or so and.....maybe close to two hours and ah.....when they.....they called.....they came by and told us they'd found the bodies. And ah.....and the Chief had called Tyler and asked for.....Tyler police department had a ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The Chief....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Chief Headon, Dick Headon, he was Chief of Police there in Kilgore at the time, Headon is up in the metroplex somewhere now. He left here and went down to New Braunfels, left Kilgore and I think he's up around Carrollton or somewhere now. Anyway ah.....he wanted us to go on down to Rusk County and he called.....he had called Tyler and asked for some assistance out there crime lab, they had a.....Tyler police had about the best crime lab around here. And so they sent ah.....a couple of guys over from Tyler and took our place inside there and Chief wanted us to go on down where the bodies were. So Prytle and I went on down to Rusk County and of course there the four bodies lay on the ground, face down and one was back up a couple hundred feet ah.....the way we came in and they way they came....the only way to get in and out, there's just one way in and out. You've been down there to this oil field lease road. Well of course we.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: This one that was kind of separated was he or she?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was she kind of laying in the bushes or something?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She was laying in the grass, there wasn't any bushes, she was justit was pretty obvious that they had them all down there together, they was all laying down on the ground, face down they was instructed hoping that they could.....you know, they wouldn't do anything with them and they probably started shooting 'em and she jumped up and ran. She heard the shot.....there's no question in my mind that that's what happened.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the reason why I asked that, I was down there one time with Billy Crawford, which you.....I'm sure you'll mention him here in a few.....well go ahead, then I'll.....when you get to him I'll add mine.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah.....we was out there a good while and of course ah....ah....of course the Sheriff in Rusk County.....this was out.....out in the county andand ah.....he was out there with his people and there was a pumper or a switcher for the oil company that reported the ah.....finding the bodies down there. And ah.....the Sheriff was down there and of course he had called the funeral home and Crawford was still.....ah....owned Crawford A. Crim Funeral Home and he.....and he brought his vehicles out there. But we wouldn't let them come down until we finished what we was doing. We was out there several hours.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And how was the crime scene there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was kind of chaotic when we got there, but we got everybody out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you call it contaminated?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah it was contaminated, there's no question about that. You can't let a bunch of people come into a crime scene withoutyou can't let one come in without changing something. Because you know if you step on a piece of grass, it's not going to raise back up where it was before you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well were these officials or just on-lookers or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh both, yeah and friends, oil field employees. Of course this guy had a radio in his pickup that called it in and I guess everybody that worked for that oil company heard it and drove over there you know and they probably beat the officers there. And ah.....and it was just lots of folks out there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How many bodies were there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: There were five, all five of them were out there and that's how many we had missing. It was obvious ah.....that morning when I got over there I just couldn't see that time of morning anybody holding somebody that long you know without 'em being able to get

loose. We was just hoping that they'd be alive, but it..... I didn't have any hope for 'em at all to tell you the truth. Cause you know, youyouyou work criminals ah.....all these years and you kind of know what.....what to expect and what the patterns are and I didn't have any hope when I got there of being able to find them alive to tell you the truth. But ah....you know you justyou can just wish for it you know, but it didn't happen. But we went ahead and ah.....and we stayed there and photographed and.....and did what you was supposed to and then we started moving the bod.....had to....of course had to get a Justice of the Peace out there and ah....and then ah.....he had to declare 'em dead. And then he....we got him to order an autopsy and ah..... so Crawford sent his units out there to pick up the bodies and he bagged 'em all and put sacks over their hands out there and tied rubber bands around them and.....and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the reason for that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you don't want to lose anything ah....you know some.....one of them may have scratched one of the attackers or ah.....anything that was on their hands we wanted to be that.....just like they were when they got up there to the autopsy you know, we didn't want to lose any evidence that might be under their fingernails or on their hands.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was there any such evidence?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no, they didn't ah..... Ithere wasn't even any ah....nitrates on any of their hands where you know, like where they'd held up their hands.....of course they was all shot in the back.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In the back or back of the head?

GLENN ELLIOTT: In the back or the back of the head, the back part of their body is what I'm talking about.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what were they shot with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well there was a .357 magnum and a .38, there was two pistols used.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would you insinuate.....or would you assume from that there was two shooters?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No question about it, yeah, I think there had to be two. I don't think each one of them would of laid there, I think probably there was two people doing the shooting and they probably started about one of them in the middle and one on the end and ah.....because it was obvious that this female that had ah....got up and ran was on the end and on the end that she ran from, you know, closest to the road. And ah....they ah.....they didn't move all that much, you know, they sure didn't, the bodies didn't move that much.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did they kill them instantly ?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I think they were all killed instantly. Because they'd of.....there was any ah.....there wasn't a whole lot of ah.....kicking and moving around, the bodies were just.....they was just laying there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How far did the lady get before they gunned her down?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I think about 260-70 feet, about that. I imagine they had to go.....they had to chase her. I imagine one of them probably already shot two, maybe four shots and ah.....and she ran and he went after her.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was she shot with the .38 or .357?

GLENN ELLIOTT: She was shot with the .357.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were they all shot just once or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, they were each shot twice. And I'm trying to think of ah..... I should of looked at my reports and studied that ah..... I don't thinkas I remember it, each one of 'em wasn't shot with the same weapon. We dug.....after we removed the bodies we ah.....we dug in

the ground and recovered all of the bullets except one and then had to go back out there and find it, after we thought maybe one was still in the body. And ah.....because we didn't examine the bodies that close, cause when you're going to have an autopsy you don't want to mess with a body anymore than you can you know. And that's the reason Crawford just brought the body bags out there and we just rolled 'em over into the body bag after we put the sacks over their hands and zipped the bags up and take 'em to Dallas you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did theywere they using hollow points or solid points?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no they wasn't using hollow points, they were using..... I know what kind of ammunition they were using but II hadn't got it ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I guess..... I imagine if they shot 'em in the back of the head it would tear 'em up pretty bad in the front.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, see this is the reason we wouldn't tell ah.....this.....the lady that was hurt there in the rest.....in the.....at the establishment there in Kilgore ah.....was obviously hit in the mouth or the nose, but when she was shot in the head it just tore the whole front face.....face off, so we never did determine whether she was.....what caused her to bleed up at ah.....at the business.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is she the one that ran or she was.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no it was one of the other ones. Ah.....so it was ah.....ah.....we just never could find out you know. I feel like she was hit in the mouth or head somewhere, the face, the nose, her blood had to come from the mouth or the nose, I don't think there's any question about that, in the business, but we never

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were any of the victims sexually abused?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no. No, they took their ah.....their personal jewelry though and watches and stuff.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Has any of that ever turned up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. We recovered a bunch of trash but ah.....we thought.....one of them had a mother's ring and ah.....we got.....had a jeweler to make up one just like it and got photographs of it and ah.....we never did find it and ah....it had about, I think, four birthstones in it. And ah.....ah.....they took their earrings and their watches andand all their jewelry. Of course you know, you don't expect people that working by the hour at Kentucky Fried Chicken to have.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: To have valuable stuff.

GLENN ELLIOTT:to have a whole lot of valuable stuff, it was valuable to them, but I'm talking about as far as the market's concerned you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And I never did understand why that they take it. Of course at that time these dopers ah.....around the country were burglarizing lots of houses and ah.....and the gold, you know, was bringing money. They just take.....they'd take it and they was just getting everything they could that brings money. And I guess they.....they could take it and sell it, you can sell anything you know. But this was a tough....it was a tough scene and ah.....and I'd seen people dead you know, a bunch of folks dead before and ah.....ah.... in the service, but these folks were just lined up out there just

ROBERT NIEMAN: It was an execution.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's what it was.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the reason I'd asked you about the high weeds, one time I was down there.....Billy and I....Crawford and I had gone over to Pleasant Hill Cemetery which is right close by on my New London project and we went by the crime scene and he said that when got there, the woman who had broke away he said, 'I didn't see her', he said, 'I walked right by her and didn't see her'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course Billy was ah.....and ah..... I spotted her ah.....when I first got there, I don't know, somebody had ah.....told me or not, but we all left our vehicles out on the road and ah.....and after we got there well ah.....the Sheriff and the deputies pretty well started getting.....we said, 'Let's get these folks out of here'. And you know, pretty well got everything out and ah.....and set up a kind of a command post down there at the gates you know. So ah.....cause the news media wasthey was interested andand naturally they would be. And ah.....everybody else in the country had heard about it you know. And of course Kilgore was ah.....pretty unsettled little old town that next morning, I'm going to tell something, you're talking about five people missing and five different families involved and ah.....and ah.....there was a lot of people concerned about what was going on.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what about the infamous fingernail?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, of course this was found ah.....what happened wasand I need to go..... I guess we'll get this all in here ah..... I don't work.....Rusk County is not assigned to me it's assigned to.....Stuart Dowell works Rusk County. So as soon as we found the bodies over there well I called ah.....Tyler on my radio andand had Dallas to notifyasked them to notify Stuart. And they said, well he was.....Stuart was in the National Guard and he was up at Terrell at a Guard meeting and ah.....on the week.....that weekend. And ah.....so II asked 'em to get a hold of Captain Burkes and so ah..... I was busy out there and couldn't go in and ah.....so

G.W. got a hold of Stuart and told him to get on down there and start tending to his Ranger business instead of playing soldier. And ah.....so Stuart came and got on down there and ah.....and he and ah.....a boy named Doyle Williams, who was a deputy for the Sheriff's office, and Doyle was an investigator for Rusk County and they went to Dallas with the bodies and ah.....followed them up there. And ah.....so they went up to the autopsy. So Stuart.....the next morning they came back, well Stuart and Doyle reported to us about them finding the fingernail. And of course this is another reason that you want to bag those bodies see, cause that had to be a pretty alert individual up there to.....when they're undressing those folks, to find that fingernail you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now that was found on the boy named I think Joey.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Joey Johnson.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And did he....what.....did he fight or was he.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Iwe think that the fingernail probably got broken up at the ah.....at the restaurant maybe, or loading or unloading 'em you know, or doing.....you know, it could of been anywhere. But ah....this is just theory you know and until somebody tells us, yeah that's my fingernail and II grabbed him wherever.....the geographical location was, whether it was.....he started to run or he wasn't getting in the vehicle quick enough orand I grabbed him by the belt and anyway, that's when the.....that's when the nail broke. But we got the report on that the next day and ah.....then of course Dr. Stone up there had told Stuart and Doyle that ah.....and all this time they were doing this, well we were digging out there and preserving what evidence we could get out there at the crime scene and the woods and getting them out of the dirt and keeping from scratching 'em up. And we got some pretty good projectiles that could be made if we ever found the pistol. And we think that we've got one of the pistols ah.....a little old

.38 pistol that shaves lead real bad and that's the first report we got from ballistics. Of course we did.....we carried our ballistics to Tyler, cause we had two guys over there that was just about as good as there was in the country. And ah.....they'd already told us that ah.....one of them, that this .38 could probably never be made because it was so beat up. And they said, and every time you fire it, it changes, it's going to change the rifling cause it's so worn. (side of tape ends)were preserved and ah.....and I found this ah....this .38 pistol and that's going to be some of the evidence, of course this will not be made public until after the trial and ah.....but ah.....through the investigation later.....and we'll get into that a little bit deeper, well we came up with a .38 pistol that was.....that he got the same day he got out of jail, this main suspect in this case, the Mankin boy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jimmy Mankin, Jr.?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. He got out of the Gregg County jail that afternoon aboutoh four o'clock or something.

ROBERT NIEMAN: The same day of the murder?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What would he have been in jail for?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, he washe was out at ah.....a house and ah.....on a motorcycle andand left there with a rifle and ah.....across the handlebars of the motorcycle, there was a woman saw him coming out of the house and she thought he was burglarizing it. And actually it was somebody at home, he was visiting a guy's wife and ah..... I guess borrowed this gun from her, as I remember, and ah.....so some of the neighbors saw him ride out with this motorcycle.....saw him go in there and later saw him come out and he didn't have the rifle when he went in, but he had it when he came out. And they.....the.....there happened to be a Deputy

Sheriff in the area and they stopped him for suspicion of burglary and he was behind in his child support too at that time, so they carried him and put him in jail. And ah.....ah.....somebody made his bond, I don't know whether it was his dad or who it was and put up some money for his child support and he got out of jail. And there was a couple of old dopers ah.....over at Kilgore, the Yanchak who were later convicted for selling dope and the.....see the ironic thing ah.....the federal folks had a ah.....a ah.....wire tape investigation going at ah.....at this time, it just started on a dope deal in the Kilgore area over there. And why we didn't hear more about this on the phone is beyond me, I just

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mankins involved in the wire check?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah no.....ah....he was involved in the dope deal, but he didn't have a telephone, he was.....he was just living from pillar to post, staying over there in the old Pines Motel in one of those rooms over there and he didn't have.....they didn't have ah....telephones in those rooms. And ah.....anyway he.....they ah....ah.....this Yanchak woman and another girl from Kilgore ah....Jimmy Macarski's daughter, ah.....I can't even think of her name ah.....they.....they got ah.....Jimmy out of jail and picked him up and carried him out and got his motorcycle. And they confiscated this gun and he had a pistol too, as I remember and they confiscated both of the guns and ah....he didn't get them. And he left and went on over to the Yanchak and this is where he acquired this old .38 pistol that's worn out that we now have, that ballistics said could be the gun, and but they can't say positive that it is. And that's the only weapon that we've recovered. But let's get back over there and kind of.....this is coming ah.....anyway we got....what we do.....what you do on a case like this Bobby is, the first thing you've got to do, if you don't have any suspects, there's nobody having any family problems that.....you know, thatany violence associated with so this is one of the first things you got to do, well what about so and so's

husband and so and so's wife. And you've got to get the husband wife situation pretty well cleared up right away ah....you know, when you got something like that because ah.....family violence will trigger nearly anything as you well know. So we pretty well eliminated all this and put the rest of the families to bed somewhere when this was all happening andand we ah.....we found out who the ah.....last customers were ah.....from the tape and we knew.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now was that video or just.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it was the register tape, we ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:we knew what the sales were and.....and knew some of the habits and ah....and some of the people that had been there volunteered.....yeah I was there thirty minutes before and old so and so was there and I met him going in.....coming in the front door as I was going out. Well we contact so and so and, yeah I saw so and so there and then of course one of the employees, the manager told us that some blacks probably was the last customer, that they were pretty regular customers because they could come through the drive-in window and buy chicken at closing time and they'd give 'em.....give 'em a lot of chicken you know cause what they had cooked. And ah.....so.....and we found out who was there and, yes we was there and what they saw you know. And so we had to do all this and ah....we found out who the last nine customers was and interviewed them there at the place. And ah.....so then we start interviewing all the undesirables in the area, which means people that don't have any visible means of support but still have a.....supplying their self with dope you know and living a lifestyle a little bit better than the person that's not working you understand, or as well anyway. So we start interviewing them and this is when we.....we get Mankin and we're this over at Henderson at the Sheriff's office. And ah....the detectives would load up two or three of them at a time and bring 'em over

there and Stuart and I were interviewing 'em in the Sheriff's office in Henderson. And ah....Mankin comes over, I thought he came with his daddy, but his daddy followed him over there ah....he rode over there with a police officer.....two police officers from Kilgore. And we were interviewing.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well why did ah.....they just picked him up for a routine sweep on this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No we.....yeah, we're inter.....we're interview.....he was one of the undesirables that we're talking about you know, he was hanging around Kilgore there taking dope and not working you know, living out there at the old Pines Motel and being.....laying up all day asleep and staying up all night roaming the country you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And so we had already interviewed probablyoh I've got a list there I....I've.....as I interviewed 'em you know and he's down about 19 I think, 18 or 19 and about 4 days, 3 or 4 days into the investigation the next week.....and seemed like it had been 8 days maybe from the murder until we interviewed him, but it was somewhere in this period of time. And he had this broken fingernail. And of course what we did ah.... I understand Stuart testified that he noticed his nail was broken earlier, I didn't. Ah.....the way I do each one of 'em that would come in there.....we knew we had a fingernail and nobody else knew it, we didn't release any of this information to the news media. And everyone of 'em that would come in, male or female, we just.....I'd just say, 'Lay your hands up on the table and let's see if you got any scars and marks on your hands', you know, that's what I was telling 'em. And of course I'm looking for finger.....broken fingernail. And did Mankin the same thing, and he lays both hands up there and he's got a broken fingernail and ah.....so we go ahead with the interrogation just like nothing happened and then get around down at the end of it to say, you know, 'How did you break your

fingernail'. And ah.....he..... I think he told two different stories about it. Ah.....he told one that he got nervous and broke it coming over there and then told another one that he.....that maybe he broke it while he was waiting on us. But we went out and looked where he was sitting and didn't come up with one. But before this had happened well the ah.....Dr. Stone had told us that he'd like to have a cast, he said he believed he could take a cast of this finger that he could take the nail and pretty well us whether that's the finger or not. So before Mankin left this time well we.....he agreed to let us take a cast of his finger and we got ah....ah....the Sheriff over there had a dentist friend and he gave us some of that stuff that you mix up to like.....you take impressions for teeth and ah.....so ah....we took an impression of his finger. And ah..... I think then.....Mankin was no dummy but he.....of course he was pretty heavy on dope during this time and I think that several of them got to adding it up then that maybe there was something like.....something about the finger that was involved you know. But ah.....then we carry this up there to Dallas the next day and Stone says that, you know, it all fit pretty good and ah....then he said, well you know, we got to wait now until his finger goes out.....fingernail goes out and get ah.....get a ah....sample, give a search warrant or voluntary consent.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It had to be on the same finger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah yeah, to meet the striations in that finger. That's just like getting a fingerprint off of this finger and trying to identify the thumb with it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what

GLENN ELLIOTT: The striations in thisevery finger has got a different striations in 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And.....according to Dr. Stone. Now I've never had any training in this, but he.....he says it's better identification that fingernails anymore, the striations.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Better than fingerprints?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yes, uh hum, that's what Dr. Stone will testify to in court. So ah.....ah.....of course the next move on Mankin, and we're doing a lot of work in between time, I'll kind of kick around over that just a little bit before we quit but ah.....in this year anyway.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, wait a minute, diddid Mankin agree to let.....after it grows out to

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that became my duty and ah.....ah.....we waited for some time and did a lot of work on this thing, I talked to him a couple of times in between and ah.....trying to ah.....you know, refresh his memory and of course we'd talked to his girlfriend, this dopey Debbie Smith was laying up with him. We talked to some people that's supposed to have been there at the motel that same night. And this is.....the part about this that's so hard.....it's so much harder than.....than any case I've ever worked, cause this is the first case that I worked that everybody wethat were suspects or associates of the suspects, were dope addicts. And they got so bombed out, every night, that a lot of them couldn't even remember what they did last night, much less what they did last week you know. And I don't think they'll ever remember. In fact some of them have told me.....his girlfriend that was.....we know was with him that night.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Dopey Debbie.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Dopey Debbie, she..... I ah.....and she finally got off of dope a little bit and she.....I've seen her cry, we ran her on a polygraph, she said 'Mr. Elliott I may have been there, I'm not telling you I wasn't there, but if I was I don't remember it'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would hypnosis go through that fog?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Seemed like we.....ah.....tried hypnosis on her. Ah.....no, hypnosis wouldn't.....to answer your question, I think we tried it, I'm not positive. But they just can't

remember, just can't remember, they just can't remember anything. They just get so bombed out in their mind and the first thing they do the next day is go get back on it again you know. The first time I saw Dopey Debbie Smith, and that was two or three years before the Kentucky Fried Chicken, I went on a dope raid out here on Valentine Lane off of Harrison Road in an old trailer park out there and ah.....and Iit was my job to kick one door in and I kicked it in and she was getting.....a guy was giving her a mainline shot of dope there in the bedroom when we walked in the door.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is she still around here?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, she's off of it now, she's training horses and ah.....she was over there at the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what did ya'll, at this point, suspect the reason for this....these murders?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course I've.....I've said all along, you know, everybody's got theories you know and you got to.....and it's good to have a theory and it's good for police officers to have different theories, you know. Because if we all think the same way well we're just blocked, we're just going right down the block. So everybody's got different ideas and my idea is, this is an armed robbery, this is an armed robbery for money ah.....in my opinion the guythe guy'sthe people that were conducting the robbery could possibly of been masked. If it was Mankin, which I was pretty.....we're all sure it was, all he'd had.....one of 'em maybe grabbed a masked and unmasked him, here Iokay everybody in there knows him. And so what's he got to do, he's got to eliminate the witnesses you know. And so he's goingand why they let him load 'em up and.....or them load 'em up and haul 'em that far, I don't know, but they did. And Ithey only reason I can say this is, well Iyou know, I know him and he ain't

going to hurt us, he's just going to take us out here, and probably tell 'em, say, 'I'm going to take ya'll out here and tie you up and I'm going to leave the country going to Mexico', or going to Cuba you know. But as far as I'm concerned, there's been all kinds of rumors about

ROBERT NIEMAN: Drugs.

GLENN ELLIOTT:drugs and ah.....and ah.....a formula to make drugs and all this and that and there was never any physical evidence, none of the people had any drugs in their system, there was not any drugs found, there was two thousand dollars.....twenty three hundred dollars, whatever it was, missing and as far as I'm concerned robbery was the motive for that ah.....ah.....to begin with and they not of intended to commit murder, you know. But for some....they....we know there was an altercation there in the place, what caused it we don't know, may not ever know unless the.....we won't.....unless somebody tells us.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well that would certainly.....your theory would certainly explain why they laid right down without struggling while they allowed 'em to tie you up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know they've got to be.....you know they've got to be coerced into doing this. The average person just can't stay hooked that long. You're talking about hauling 'em what, seventeen miles down there I think, from one scene to another.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do we even know how they actually.....did they go down 259, did they cut back down 42?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, but the closest way would be to go down 259 in my ah..... I think we'vewe've put the speedometer to it and ah.....the closest way would be go down to 259 to the cemetery and turn right and cross the railroad tracks and turn left and your right in there on it. But ah.....this is what I think happened and....and you know....and of course I've had just about

as much experience as any officer over there. So, you know, I've worked a crime scene or two myself.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was Stuart's theory?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Stuart ah.....is a little bit easier lead on the dope angle because ah.....Stuart believes what a lot of people tell him, informant type people. And we've had.....you know.....and this is kind.....this story comes out of the dope field over there you know. Well you know, dope, dope, dope you know. And of course was working dope then and ah....and ah....but I just couldn't buy it. I think Stuart kind of leans towards it maybe being dope related, I don't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the Sheriff?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, I don't know what the Sheriff thought. The Sheriff was more concerned about his cows than he was about the murder you know, in my opinion you know. And I wouldn't want this in my book or anything, but ah.....Mike and I got along pretty good. And ah....but ah.....the Sheriff wasn't all that interested in it. Any Tiny....I think I told you once in a conversation

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who is Tiny now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Tiny is a guy that ah.....Doyle Williams, an investigator for ah.....Tiny is about your size, that was his nickname and he's a good.....just as friendly and nice an old country boy as you'll run into in your life and would do anything in the world to help anybody. And he comes up to me out there at the crime scene and.....and.....where the bodies were and he said, 'Now Glenn you was fixing to leave', and he said, 'If we can help do anything for you on this thing let us know'. And I said, 'Doyle', I said, 'Let me tell you something', I said, 'Here's the way I look at this', I said, 'We've got a armed robbery, kidnapping case in Kilgore, Texas in Gregg County'. And I said, 'Ya'll got five people murdered in Rusk County'. And I

said, 'If I can help you anyway, call me'. And he realized then that I ain't going nowhere you know, that Glenn's right and that's the way it is you know. And so he said, 'Well how we going to do it', you know. And so we settled down and decided..... I think ah....one of the deputies and I can't even remember which one, and William Brown who worked for the District Attorney and myself, we handled the crime scene search there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had Stuart gone to Dallas with the bodies by this.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Stuart's on his way down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: From Terrell.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Stuart gets down there by noon.....Stuart gets down there sometime around noon I think and the bodies hadn't gone yet andbut they're about ready to go. Course see the Justice of the Peace has got to go in and write up a order ah....for an autopsy on each one of 'em and that took a little time. And I'm sure the District Attorney helped, or somebody from his office. And ah.....so I think ah.....seemed like Prytle went back to Kilgore to help with the crime scene over there with the Tyler police department and the three of us stayed there and ah.....and did everything we could. And later that night somebodymy car was up in Kilgore, I'd ridden over there with ah.....which is out of character for me to ever get away from my car. But ah.....anyway, I had to get back to Kilgore to get my vehicle, we was up most of the day and night you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who had you ridden down there with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Prytle, this boy.....he ah.....Prytle was a good hand, he was a good hand and I think a lot of him, he was a great, great individual, enjoyed working every day I worked with him I enjoyed it. He was just.....and I had a lot of officers I loved to work with, few I didn't. But ah....we worked on this thing.... like I said, that day.....of course it took all day that day to

get this evidence together. We wanted to be sure.....we had to go.....like I say, we had to go back out there and dig again after we found out.....Dallas called and there was no projectiles in any of the bodies and ah.....and they've all been shot twice and we've only got nine projectiles, so we know there's another one out there you know, somewhere. And we go back and find it. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well which one was shot three times then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or five.....one of them was only shot once. Cause if.....nine.....nine projectiles, five bodies .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well but we've missed one. I think all of them had been shot twice hadn't they, in the head?

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well I'm saying thiswe had.....we had.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You had recovered nine?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We had recovered nine.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and we get a report from Dallas thatthat there's.....each one had been shot twice.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, okay, okay, I misunderstood you.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and there's five of them so you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I misunderstood you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We had to get down there

ROBERT NIEMAN: And start digging.

GLENN ELLIOTT:with our calculator you know.....yeah, and so we know we've got one other projectile missing. And of course we knew under whose body we had ah.....recovered which projectiles. We....you know....andand.....so we just went back and had dug under that one body that....that ah....that we only found one and keep digging until we found it you know. That's what happened, the ground wasn't all that tough I don't think, don't seem like I remember it being that away. But the work came of course after that you know. It ah....it generally.....you can crime scene pretty good in a day if you just stay at it unless there's just lots of stuff out there and of course, like I say, out there they'd stomped around and tramped around and there was no way of getting any tracks or making any casts and you wouldn't have any idea whose cast you was getting. And ah....see they walked down there, the gate was locked, there wasn't any vehicle in there, the gate had not been disturbed. And ah....and of course.....what happened Bobby is, that this is just from.....from that day on there's just so many that you've got to. And you know here'syou know like ah.....seventy-four hours and sixty-nine hours and eighty-one hours, you know, a week and ah....ah.....and to Terrell and Dallas and Bossier City and Shreveport and Dallas and Dallas and Henderson and Kilgore and Kilgore and Tyler and Henderson and Tyler and Henderson and Tyler and Dallas and Henderson and Jefferson and Mt. Pleasant and Carthage and Austin and Tyler and you know, I mean this is just.....and Louis.....and just everywhere. And you'd just go where.....and.....and here's what was happening ah.....this thing hit the press so heavy and we had departments from everywhere and all over East Texas ah.....trying to help us, wanting to help.....bad.....wanting bad to help us. And ah.....ah.....we had ah.....Brantley had, had that murder up there at Mt. Pleasant you know, where the people were killed in the pizza parlor, three people had been murdered up there just ah.....oh.....maybe the

same.....earlier the same year or the latter part of the year before and ah.....he had some suspects over in Kilgore andand of course we had to eliminate them. They had not.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Were your first thoughts, they may have been the same group?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it.....we....you got to consider that, that's for sure you know. These were young people and that's some of the first people we talked to and ah....by the name of Daugherty and ah.....ah.....he was ah....his mother alibied for him and two old bar maids at a place right behind their house where his mother hung out all the time, where he hung out and ah..... I took more stock in what they said of course than anybody else. And they swear that he was there that night playing pool, in fact one of 'em had kind of felt sorry for him and he wasn't too bright and soI mean, but these are things you have to do. You got to run all these people down, you got to talk to 'em and.....and.....and take notes and find out, you know if you catch one of them lying or catch somebody lying.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now the robbery and the kidnapping took place in your area?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Killings took place in Stuart's.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Which one of ya'll is in charge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, neither one of us. See this is another area.....this is another situation.....you read that letter I wrote to the press.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, they had run.....they.....and you read.....also read the editorial they ran. You don't have to put anybody in charge. We had a command post and the Police Chief from Kilgore and the Sheriff fromin Rusk County ah.....as far as I'm concerned should of

been the ones that.....and was the ones that.....that.....we were bringing the evidence together, we'd meet regularly, both departments and discuss what we've done. Ah.....but you don't have to put.....the FBI had somebody in charge down at ah.....ah.....at Waco at the ah.....Branch Dividian thing and you see how it went. There's no reason why if two people, or three or four, can't get their heads together once a day or three times a week and....and work out a solution on what we're going to do next you know, if there's some question about which way we're moving. And ah.....it....it....there's no way that the way things are structured when you've got a Sheriff in county and a Police Chief in another and.....and a couple of Rangers and the FBI, well youyou can't.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: The FBI involved in it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, they got involved, sure.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I was going to ask

GLENN ELLIOTT: They was on a wire tape and they.....and you know they want to know about stuff like that too, you know. I mean that's ah....that's pretty.....we'd had.....we'd had killings like that up at Oklahoma City and two or three other places you know at that time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well would the kidnapping of brought 'em in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....not unless we could prove they crossed the state line, which they didn't. Ah.....but anyway ah....they wanted to know about it and they was glad that we called. And ah.....but this issue came up about who was in charge. Well we were all pretty well in charge of what was going on and we were sharing information with each other and nobody was trying to be the grandstand and solve it by themselves. Ah.....for instance ah.....I'd get an old doper over at New London that ah.....Prytle and I do and he says, yeah I had .357 magnum and we knew he had one, we knew where he bought it and it was prior to this and he said he traded it

for dope for Sonny Hendricks. Well Sonny Hendricks was living over there around Turnertown in a trailer house, same Sonny Hendricks that I told you about ah.....(videotape is changed)

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay, same Sonny Hendricks?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Same Sonny Hendricks I was telling you about that ah.....was bothering one of my witnesses down there you know on an oil field case down there around New London one time and I had.....went up to his house you know and talked to him late one afternoon?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Sonny knew me and ah.....so I called Sonny on the telephone and the federal's.....of course the reason I know.....of course we knew that the federal's was doing a tape but we didn't know who all they was tapping. And I later got a letter that they intercepted two of my phone calls, one from me to him and one from him to me. Because they have to notify people.....they call 'em.....when they're on a tap.....some time before it's all over. Anyway, I call Sonny one night and ah.....soon as we interviewed this boy and he told us what he'd done. I said, 'Sonny you know old so and so', I called the boy's name and, 'Yeah Mr. Elliott I know him'. I said, 'Well he traded you a .357 magnum pistol and we need to know....for you to check your records and see where that pistol is at and we need to look at it'. 'Oh Mr. Elliott I....I buy I take in guns and buy and sell 'em and trade 'em'. And he said, 'I don't have any idea where that gun is at'. And he was just pushing me aside you know. And I said, 'Sonny, we're not investigating dope', cause we knew Sonny was selling dope at that time you know, it had already got out from folks we were talking to and this guy had told us he had traded the pistol for some dope to Sonny you know. And he'she's.....he's trying to save his back end, this old boy was, cause he.....he didn't.....he didn't commit that murder and he.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He didn't want to associate with it.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and he wanted to let us know right quick where that pistol was so we could find it, because he had it when the murder occurred and he knows it wasn't used in the murders see. And I said, 'Well Sonny, you don't want me camping down there on your doorstep'. And I said, 'I'm not investigating dope, I'm investigating a murder where five people were killed and I want that damn pistol'. 'Well Mr. Elliott let me see what I can do'. Well he called me back the next night and he said 'Mr. Elliott you know that old pistol you was asking me about', he said, 'I've run it down, I've found it and got it'. And he said, 'Do you care if I let Michael have it'. Well Michael was Mike Strong the Sheriff and I knew Mike and Sonny were good friends because ah.....you know II knew this from back on my investigation that I was telling you about.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And what county was Strong Sheriff of?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Rusk. And I said, 'Son...', my answer to him was, to kind of show you who was in charge, he said, 'How about me giving it to Michael and letting him see....taking it over there to the lab'. And I said, 'Sonny, I don't give a damn how it gets over there to the lab just so it gets there and we can establish a chain of evidence'. And I didn't care. Cause I had a bunch of things to do. Now there was plenty of officers that might of insisted, no I want to take that pistol over there. I didn't care who carried over there. I was concerned that it got there so we could either eliminate it oror say that's the gun that was used. And of course they checked it and it wasn't one of the guns. But as far as somebody being in charge you know, that's how you handle stuff like that. We were on top of everything that happened, everything that happened we were on top of it. And we didn't have to have somebody saying, Glenn you go do this or Stuart you go do that, or Sheriff you go do that. Ah....we just got it done, everybody pitched in andand.....and this is another advantage of having a bunch of folks working, as long as we meet

regularly and see what the other one is doing and keep 'em informed on what we're doing so we won't be duplicating our work you know, then ah.....and we kept a good chart of what we was doing. We had a chart on the wall in the Kilgore police department from the beginning, to the crime scene at.....at.....down in Rusk County and....and to the fingernail and to everybody we'd.....our suspects all listed and alibi's and we all had it on the charts where it could readily be examined by any investigating officer that wanted to see it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you use Kilgore police department as yourfor lack of vocabulary.....command post?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no.....well, yes I guess so. Because they called me see, but I was working with one of their detectives all the time. But we spent probably more time in Henderson the first month.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I guess as opposed to the Gregg County Sheriff's office

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, no I didn't ah....ah.....now Gregg County assigned a boy, Larry Smith who is now an ATF agent, the Sheriff assigned him to work with us. And ah.....and Larry worked this ah.....on this case over at Kilgore, you know he's the one that got.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Katy's Lounge?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, the one that got the statement from guy that they just got the death penalty. And you know, Larry was a principal witness.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I've met him at ah.....not this shoot, but the shoot before, I think he was out there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he was over there this time, had brought ah.....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I missed him.

GLENN ELLIOTT:ah.....ah.....a lady from the United States Attorney's office and the FBI female.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Met her, met her.

GLENN ELLIOTT: They were over there with Larry.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In fact I told the....I told 'em I said, 'Ifif.....you'll probablyyou'll pursue me... as good as you are, I'll do a crime and you pursue me and you can prosecute me'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....this is ah....we....the news....of course the news media is going to give you a hard time about stuff like that and that don't help any. And I just had to answer their editorial and that took thirty or forty-five minutes of my time, but I'd just taken about all of them.....off of 'em I could. They had just constantly, you know, messing around with something. Now of course ah....ah.....we had all.....we had access to all the help we needed. G. W.the captain came down here ah.....he brought a couple ofwe needed some Rangers.....Max was here, Weldon Lucas was here at one time.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Brantley come down?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Brantley was ah.....was still pretty well involved in that ah.....case of his up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pizza Hut murders?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, at that time, I don't think Brantley spent any time down here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would someone like from Company A out of Nacogdoches

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no.

ROBERT NIEMAN:would he of come up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, we didn't have anybody outside the company. Oh we did have ah.....ah.....Rangers from all over the state were giving us information. Oh we had a.....a pistol

was found in ah....underneath the.....between the mattress and box springs in Brownwood I think, just a few weeks or so after the murder and we got that pistol and ah....test fired it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know ya'll don't ever quit looking forfor.....and I do want this to go on the record, cause I remember Max Womack had found Lone Wolfe Gonzauillas' files on the Texarkana Phantom murders, back in what, was that '46 I think and they were getting ready to destroy them and Max got them and I have a copy of them. He let me make a copy of them. And he said, 'You can use whatever you want', but said, 'Don't mention what caliber gun it is'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He said, 'Cause we still look for that gun, we've never found the gun, but we still look for it'. And what, my god that was over fifty years ago.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you see the problem we had....you have when you've gotwhen you're working several different agencies too, is ah.....every once in awhile.....we had....we got some good trained investigative reporters, I won't say how good they are, but they're trained investigative reporters. And some of them will ah....can get something out of a guy pretty easy that ah.....and then not realizing it. And I think the word pretty well got out that we was.....we were looking for two different pistols and ah.....ah.....not long after it you know. But we had all kind of help, every Rangerthe Ranger down at ah....ah....Lufkin had some suspects and let us know about it and we was just getting calls from everywhere you know, and....cause it's.....even Lubbock . You know I went.....later on in this I spent four days out at Lubbock on this thing. And ah....just with.....just anywhere that there was any leads, we'd go. And people were trying to help us. And.....and the conversation you just can't imagine, half of the dopers in East Texas was trying to take credit for it when they was talking to their own people. Oh yeah you know, we was over at the Kentucky Fried Chicken the other eating a little chicken you know, and.....and they

wanted....you know, these people had that mentality, the dopers did and they was trying to influence other dopers. And plenty of folks bragged about being involved in it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Until ya'll questioned 'em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Until ya'll questioned 'em.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. And then they started trying to figure out how in the world can I get out of this tight. And mo.....and a lot of 'em would admit, 'Yeah you know we talked about it, but you know Mr. Elliott how we do stuff like that, we was taking that old dope and thought we was having a big time, but I don't know who did it you know'. But Mankin's name just kept coming up and coming up and coming up in this thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: When did it become.....when did it.....did you satisfy in your own mind that he was involved in this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I'll tell you what happened. Of course these guys taking this dope, a lot of it's got a lot of speed in it, their hair grows faster andand their nails grow faster and ah..... I don't remember just how long it was but ah..... Iit had ah....Mankin had got back in jail ah.....arrested on another....again on failure to pay child support. Well his daddy was always getting him out of jail, every time his mother and daddy would pay his back child support and they'd release him. So Iand I tell you what, this is something that a people don't understand, I'm thoroughly convinced that Jimmy Mankin, Sr. was cooperating with me. He was State Representative at that time, he got beat right after theand this is what beat him, help beat him, this....his son being a suspect in this murder. But I went to Jimmy's daddy and asked him to leave him in jail, not to get him out for a few days, said I wanted to talk to him and I wanted to get him off of dope you know, before I talked to him and he left him in there. And then when I

talked with him ah..... I found out.... I looked at his nail and it had grown pretty good, this particular nail. So II got him to sign a consent, because Dr. Stone had already told us that he needed the fingernail done. And so he signed a consent to search and I trimmed his nail. So ah....then Iand Dr. Stone wanted all his nails on all.....all fingers trimmed and wanted a blood test from him. So I carried him down to the County Health office there on Hwy 80, that old school building, and we got a blood test and I trimmed all ten of his fingernails and marked 'em which finger they came from, put 'em in separate packages and carried 'em to the Dallas County crime lab, along with the blood test. And ah.....so Dr. Stone then after he made his analysis of these, he says 'That is Jimmy Mankin, Jr.'s fingernail that under Joey Johnson's blue jeans'. Well.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Where did you find that fingernail on Joey Johnson?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I didn't find it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or where did they find it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: They found it in ah.....above the right hip pocket, inside the band, you know, inside under the belt line, that's where.....between the belt and his shirt ah.....his T-shirt. So then ah.....Mankin goes to the penitentiary, cause he's involved in this federal sting that they had wire tap and goes to the federal pen up at Texarkana and Dr. Stone then decides he wants another ah.....and the FBI got involved in the thing. And actually unbeknownst to me they had flown up there and had carried a witness up there to Texarkana and interviewed him andand ah.....and they was trying to help and of course they're a little more secretive about what they do than we are. If I'm working with you on something I'm going to tell you what I'm doing, I'm not going to hide it from you, unless I think you're going to go out and tell everybody. And I'm going to tell you I said, 'Now Bobby, I'd tell you but you're going to go tell everybody on the

street and I just can't do it'. And I'd tell you what you was doing wrong and I said, 'If you want to work with me well you know, let's do it this way. And if you won't run your mouth well I won't run mine and we'll work together'. And anyway I'm fixing to go up there, they decide they want another ah.....fingernail, the agent.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know why, I didn't ask why you know. Dr. Stone said he'd like to have it trimmed again and ah.....so you know, he could make another analysis I guess so.....to help prove in court, the more times you do it and he can show 'em.....the more times that you show 'em it's the same you know. And ah.....so they FBI knows that ah....they want this done and this is discussed at one of our meetings and they said, 'Well he's not going to give it to you', said, 'We've been up there and he....he won't give.....he's not going to cooperate anymore'. And I said, 'Well maybe he will, I'm going to go see him'. And he said, 'Well let me go with you'. He wanted to go with me and I said, 'No I don't want you going with me, I'm going by myself. I've got Jimmy Mankin, Jr. doing everything I've asked him to do and nobody with me so far so why should I want to take anybody along now you know'. Went up there got him out, come back with his fingernail, another trimming you know. Consent to search you know, signed it, got the copies of it. Well he'd been working in the machine shop and that was his.....that was his work chore up there andand....and of course his nails was all skinned up, he'd been using ah.....metal lathe and working on metal all the time. And of course some people and the federal folks were part of 'em, said he did it intentionally. But to.....you know, I give..... I give an old thief or a criminal his dues you know and I took up for him, had to take up for him. I said, 'Well you know, no I don't think so'. I said, 'Every nail he had was scratched up'. I said, 'He's working up there in a machine shop', and I said, 'You can't just....', he'd have to wrap that one

finger up to keep from scratching it up you know. And I said, 'I don't think it intentionally'. He didn't know I was coming up there to trim.....ask for his fingernails to be trimmed again. But I've trimmed his nails then, that's twice that I've trimmed his fingernails.....that one and trimmed all of them once. And ah.....ah.....but his daddy left him in jail that one time for me and.....the first time andand.....and that showed me something that he.....you know.....that.....he....he wanted to know, he would of liked to have known and he wants to know today. And I'm sure his being a father, and you're the same way, that that's pretty easy to understand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Sure.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.... I know they subpoenaed him over there at the Grand Jury and some thought that he tried to cover the thing up. And of course the word got out that he was influenced.....his influence.....he didn't have any influence, State Representative hasn't got that much influence to start with you know, if he'd of been a State Representative for forty years. Ah.....he may have been a friend of the District Attorney over there, but in my opinion the only reason this case wasn't tried is Bill Ferguson was hard headed to start with.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now who's Bill Ferguson?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He....he was District Attorney at the time over there that this happened.

ROBERT NIEMAN: At..?

GLENN ELLIOTT: At Rusk County. But ah.....ah.....the money it's going to cost to try it had more to do with it than anything else. In fact Bill was a little lazy too, but he didn't want to try it, cause he knew he was going to have to work for a year or two, everybody. And then of course we could of tried it over here but there was a question about ven.....about ah.....ah.....not venue but ah.....double jeopardy. If we try him here in Gregg County andhe could of been tried here for the same.....for the murder, but it's technicallyit was the wrong place to do it. And

Brabham had a good.....he was District Attorney here and he had good reason for that and we.....and.....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That would give Wayne Justice good grounds to of dismissed it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, for a new trial. But we didn't want to have to retry it so ah..... I don't know. Ah.... I was trying to think of some more of the key points in the thing. Gosh we'd ah.....of course later see ah....we find out that ah.....Mankin and his girlfriend Dopey had gone to Tyler early, after he got out of jail and after he got this pistol, he and his girlfriend go to Tyler or between here and Tyler, over at Chappel Hill and ah.....and this woman over there was selling dope andbut Mankin owed her a dope deal, pretty good one, I think several hundred dollars, maybe a little bit more like seven. She had been selling to him on credit and ah.....he went over there and tried to buy some more dope on the credit and she wouldn't sell it to him. And this is early in that evening and right after dark and he came back about two-thirty in the morning and paid his dope debt and bought some dope.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Hmmm.

GLENN ELLIOTT: So he broke earlier in the evening, we can put him in Kilgore at the.....ah.....Siesta Motel ah.....we can put him out at the Yanchak earlier that afternoon, in jail earlier than that, put him over at Tyler at little bit right after dark, put him back over there at three o'clock, two-thirty, three o'clock in the morning. Ah....so he's in the area, this is something you've got to do, you got to put a guy in the area you know, as part of the evidence, if you got to try somebody with circumstantial evidence. All right ah.....we got the fingernail ah.....ah....you know, that's his so ah.....(tape ends).....admit Bobby that we hadn't got the strongest case in the world. I mean you know, it ah.....we do not have the strongest case in the world against him, but we've got all the evidence that we're going to get and we've had it.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Twelve years.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well any idea, personal opinion, put it like you said, this will probably be long over before this ever comes to light, who the third and/or fourth person was?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh.....well, if he was there, his girlfriend has got to be with him, cause she.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's two, but do you.....

GLENN ELLIOTT:she was with him every step he made. It's possible that two people could of.....could of pulled this thing off, it's not.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Could.....is his girlfriend ever been a shooter though?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Do what?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you think she was a shooter?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh she could.....she would of been if he told her to do it and she was high on dope, you know. You know there's no reason to think Debbie wouldn't do it you know, because she was just as low as he was. And ah.....ah.....so I think there was probably a third one with them, but that's just athat's just a guess you know, so you just don't know. And of course we've got people that's going to testify that Mankin told them that he did this crime too.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I've heard there's going to be experts saying there that you can't go by these finger.....his fingernail that much.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh.....well, I'm sure that ah.....there is, but it's been upheld in the Supreme Court as evidence up in ah.....Kentucky I believe it is ah.....there's a case went all the way to the Supreme Court on that identification and it's been upheld as ah.....as scientific evidence, so I

think that'll pretty well knock that. You knowyou can.....you can get an expert to testify to nearly anything that you pay 'em to testify to you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if he's found guilty, do you think he'll roll over?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. No I don't think he will, I think he's had every opportunity in the world to roll over. Because you find a man guilty and give him a death penalty well he's got it you know and.....and ah.....and nobodyand I wouldn't want him..... I wouldn't ah..... I wouldn't let him if heif it was left up to me to have to give him leniency you know. Cause we worked on this thing on these years and the rest of 'em would just have to get theirs whenif it ever comes down to it you know. Oh yeah, there's going to beit's not going to be an easy case, I promise you, it is not going to be an easy case. It's.....and I'm.....I'm not all that ah.....ah.....proud of the people that I've seen in the AG's office that's doing the work on the case. But still it's.....somebody got interested in it and helped us and we wasn't getting any help otherwise and I've got to thank 'em for that. But ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why.....why didn't it go to trial or why wasn't charges brought in the eleven years?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the District Attorney in ah.....Rusk County just refused to take 'em. He just wouldn't take.....wouldn't even carry it to the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he.....he just didn't think there was enough evidence, that's what he said. And that....and....of course you got to know him you know and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is it Bill Ferguson still?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Bill Fergusonand then of course the guy that got elected after Bill Ferguson, the present District Attorney got elected and he ran as his platform that he was

going to bring it to the Grand Jury. But he never did. He was getting pressure from somebody in Rusk County, I guess the Commissioners, I don't know who, or somebody not wanting to spend all that money. Cause it's going to take a million dollars to try this case now most likely. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they changed the venue to Beaumont, will Gregg County....Rusk County still have to pay it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, sure. Yeah, it's going to cost 'em more you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It'd cost twice as much to try it in Beaumont as it would in Henderson cause they got to put every witness up down there in a motel room and feed 'em while their down there and ah.....and they wouldn't have to do that in Henderson. Cause most of the witnesses live in this particular area, they could subpoena 'em to court and let 'em come back the next day and go home and spend the night you know. Just like me and Stuart and bunch of the other guys, we can't drive back I can't drive back to Longview every night, not on that sixteen cents a mile they pay me to go to the Grand Jury, for sure.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well there's of course rumors flying all over, ah....is.....has evidence disappeared from the Sheriff's office?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't know any evidence over there that the Sheriff's office had.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or the DA or.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know we've heard all kinds of rumors .

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well all the evidence is in Dallas. And all the evidence we got is the fingernail. So yeah, things have.....one of the pictures disappeared. I mean, nobody could find one of the pictures and.....and we're all over at the Grand Jury.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Of the crime scene?

GLENN ELLIOTT:and there the picture is on the wall and William Brown had it up there on the wall, the picture they was looking for.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was the picture of?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a picture of the crime scene ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he had it hanging on the wall?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Framed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Behind.....it was back behind something, but it was ah.....it wasa lot of things that.... of course.....and it's easy for evidence to get ah.....disposed of with this length of time. Ah....but I think the evidence is there, if it hadn't of been they'd wouldn't have indicted him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well like I said, you know we've just heard all kinds of rumors in the papers and TV.

GLENN ELLIOTT: What we'd like.....of yeah, but you know what I've.....you've heard me say, don't believe what you read in the liberal press. Papers are trying to sell papers and they're going to put out stuff, you can tell a newspaper reporter everything that happened and when you read hisread it in the paper you won't recognize it. Ah.....this is ah....this is common, it's always been that way and I guess it's going to always be that way, I don't know. It's....it's.....everything I've ever been involved in has been that way. But ah....the main thing

about this is, it's the ah....the time.....the element.....the time element has just got away from us you know and.....and there's a lot of people that's.....probably not going to be able to find, some of them are dead. But I thinkwe would like to haveand tried to encourage ah.....and you've heard me say this ah.....Mr. Ferguson have an investigative Grand Jury. If we could of got some folks over there under oath and questioned 'em before a Grand Jury rather than sitting there in ain a little old room with maybe somebody interrupting you every few minutes for a phone call or something, you can just get so much more out of people when they're under oath in Grand Jury for fear of ah.....and you make a lot of cases on people for perjury you know. You know they're guilty as the dickens and.....but they lied before the Grand Jury, well convict 'em of something you know. I mean I'd rather have a man in the penitentiary for perjury if he's guilty of murder than I had for him walking the street and guilty of murder you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....I'm ah....I'm concerned about how the thing is going to come out, but I'm glad it's aired out. And ah.....we'll get to present whatand it's going to come out in the trial that the evidence has been there ever since day one, everybody has known about it, it's nobody trying to hide anything from anybody you know. Everything that's there has been there and every officer on the case done everything they could to try to get somebody to tell 'em about it you know. And this is all going to be documented and it's going to be on record thatand there's not going to be any question that we tried to solve the case as hard as we could.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Have you ever seen the community as, I don't know what.....looking for the right word here, ah.....upset or up in the air as they were on this case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think about Kelly Wilson up at Gilmer, but I don't know

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well there's athere's.....there's a comparison to be made there all right. Ah....yeah the citizens of Kilgore.....do you know they....the citizens of Kilgore put up \$50,000.00 in cash money, citizens reward, \$50,000.00!

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well if I knew I'd forgotten it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. There was ten friends of law enforcement over there put up \$5,000.00 a piece and I can name all ten of them I guess if I just had a minute.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Sonny one of them?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Buskin?

GLENN ELLIOTT:Boyd Boldin..... I don't know whether Buskin.....Buskin probably was ah.....but several other business men I know over there that ah.....they put up.....there's a \$50,000.00 in cash money put up and it was in.....it was in escrow in the bank. And it stayed there for several years. In fact I think they put a limit on it at our suggestion. Ah.....and it was for information leading to an indictment ah.....an arrest and indictment.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Changing the subject totally and we'll end for tonight, can you still put out a poster, wanted dead or alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I wouldn't think that would be ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I just wondered.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I wouldn't think that would be practical today, cause ah.....no, no that would not be in order. Ah.....they wished they could, but ah.....no, with the current system, that would be ah.....you'd get in trouble right away. Yeah, let's shut down for the day, we....and we can get started next week on ah....a lot of my I think in this I think I pick up ah.....Lucas next week and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: There's another bad murder right here, happens here in this area at the sameright after this isn't there?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man there's several.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, I meaninvolved a family or something.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, up at Gilmer, there's three got killed, a man killed his ah....his wife and two kids up at Gilmer. And then ah....ah....that killing up at Sherman where that ah....over that aircraft, there's three people killed up there in a hanger. And oh it's.....(ends for the day).

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, November 14, 1995. Continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Well Glenn, last week we worked on the Kentucky Fried Chicken killings and we've had a rather significant development yesterday when they let.....they dismissed all charges against Mankin, they said the fingernail DNA didn't prove conclusively that he was the killer. Any thoughts you want to put in on it at this point?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, yeah quite a bit. Of course ah.... I heard the same thing, but all I know about it is ah....is what I got from the news media of course and ah....andand of course which is a lot. And this is the AG's ah....press release, but ah....yeah, I was ah.... I guess more confused than I am anything else because ah....ah....we've always had to depend on our....our forensic people tofor information you know. And ah....and ah....and you and I have discussed before, and it think it's on tape here, I've ah....I have some experience in the forensic field and.....and.....and I know that when I go tell an officer, well you know, this lady was sitting right here where I'm sitting when at least one shot was fired, well this has got to be fact and it's got.....you know, it can't be a guess work, because these officers are going tothey've got to have that information. And whatever information that some expert gives them they rely on that to build their case, or not build it you know. And so....of course thethe fingernail which is a

.....our main evidence on Mankin, we have other circumstances that ah....other than that, but weyou know, like we put him in town, there's no question about him being in town that night. We know he was ah.....he was low on money earlier in the night, he had money later and ah.....other circumstances. And he popped off about it, he told people he was involved in it and of course this was not unusual, I think we've gone through that. Because there was plenty of other dopers over there did the same thing, they just.....they was making light of it you know. They was all acid heads and taking that old dope and wanting everybody else, all their associates, to think that they was the ones that did it you know, that they was involved.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was.....was he smart enough to know that they was all popping off about this for him to pop off, sayfigure that he would pop off too, saying well you know everybody was saying that?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I don't think he was smart enough at the time for that. I think at the time he wanted everybody to think that he was involved in it you know and I'm sure that, that would be his defense if ah....if when somebody gets on the stand, if they did, and say he told them that. But the point I'm trying to get to, wewe send the bodies to Dallas and Iand I'm partly responsible for us starting in East Texas using the Dallas County crime lab. I.... I thought it was the greatest thing that had ever happened and it is, it definitely is. And we'd been using local pathologists that ah.....and they didn't havethey didn't have the lab, they didn't have the equipment, they didn't have the experience and that's all those folks did up there. And they had all.....they just had lots of stuff that we had access to and....and we depended on them and we paid them to do this too, this was not free stuff. And we take this up there and they tell us that this James Earl Mankin, Jr.'s fingernail from the word go.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And they left no doubt?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No doubt.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Through trihibulations is that what.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Striations.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Striations. How do you spell that, do you know?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I don't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay. Anyway, that this was no doubtthis was James Earl Mankin, Jr.'s fingernail.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Now, not through you, I want to emphasis that right up front, but through other sources I have heard that you know, this case has been badly botched, that possibly.....that now that they.....the DNA that they just did wasn't on the right fingernail, that there's a mixture of blood in the....under the.....they found that would probably come from Mankin and I'm assuming it's Joey Johnson's since the nail was found on him, it may or may not have been, I don't know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it probably is going to be the lady that ah.....that had charge of the money's blood if there's any on it, but ah.....well the thing about it is ah.....yeah there's.....there's questions there. But see they had all ten of his fingernails that they could of ah....ah.....tested you know, I don't see how they could of..... I trimmed all of nails once up at Texarkana, if you remember meI believe we went into that. The nail that was found atat.....under Joey Johnson's ah....ah.....of course it was the only nail associated but you know, but they couldthey've got all ten of those other nails to check ah.....back.....of course they got his blood sample too you know. So I.... I don't know anything about DNA other than what I read but ah.... I know this ah.....if the Attorney General went ahead and indicted him I was under the

impression that they....that ah.....they had done the DNA stuff before the Grand Jury met. But now ah....on.....according to tonight's report there, they hadn't. I also have heard from a very reliable source, not the Attorney General's office, that a Dallas County ah.....people up there or the lab that does the DNA testing in Dallas now, I think it's an outside private agency, had ran four different tests and got four different results. Well this should of been made public at that time and of course this is what got 'em in trouble....and I'm glad that they was doing something, now don't get me wrong, I'm glad that the Attorney General.....cause nobody else was going to do it. But I'm afraid that....that....his main motive was politically motivated rather than trying to bring somebody to justice. Cause he'd call a press conference every time you looked over your shoulder and ah.....and we were.....you know, you can call a press conference when it's all over and say, 'Look here this is what we got a conviction on'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well now I now I stand to be corrected here, I may be wrong, but the way I understood that, the DNA that they came up with did not prove that it wasn't him, his DNA, it just didn't prove that it was.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's true, that's what.....well that's what I understand. But you see ah.....Dr. Stoneand I like Dr. Stone.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What's his first name, do you remember?

GLENN ELLIOTT: You know I don't..... I can't remember.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I can look it up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....he's ah....he was.....those folks are so good to me up there and.....and I could get anything they had. Man I'd go in there and went up..... I was up there regular, I'm talking about ah.....cause I learned a lot and....and ah.....and I had confidence in them. And when they told me something andand I just had all the confidence in the world. And Dr. Stone even

puts us.....brings us the literature where there's a doctor up East thatthat testified to this same striation identification, it was upheld in court and he was strong on it, I mean ah.....and he comes down here and.....and.....and he makes a special trip down here and meets with us and.....and says that he's willing to get in the courtroom and testify that, that was his fingernail.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Positively.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I have on reliable sources and it's not you, I want to emphasis right off hand first, very reliable sources, that the DA at that time, guy named Ferguson, I don't know his first name.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Down in Rusk County....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bill Ferguson.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Bill Ferguson, is now.....was working hand in hand with Mankin's defense attorney , giving him everything he knew.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I'm not surprised. Ferguson is ah....ah.....he is a light....he's real light and ah....I've always got along with him cause I had to, needed to, but he's not the kind of guy that ah.....I mean he's always....has been in the shadow kind of, of doing things wrong you know. And wasn't all the gung ho about prosecuting somebody.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well....you know, law enforcement like business or anything else I guess, has got one big thing in common, each person or agency or entity, whatever you want to call it, has it's responsibility. Once you've done your responsibility you pass it.....in this case the Texas Rangers....or law enforcement does their responsibility, then you pass it on to the DA in

this case. Do you feel clear in your mind that we, and I mean we the Ranger....or law enforcement, did your entity of this invest.....this case as well as it could of been done? Is there more that could of been done?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't.....there's not any question in my mind, but I'm never satisfied with what I do, I'm never satisfied. I....I....I always ah....I think I ought to be able to do a little bit more. I've neverI've.....I've worked a lot of cases, as you well know, we've gone over a bunch of them, but I'm never satisfied with ah....with my ah....actions, I always want to do a little bit more, I want to do better. And yes, but I....I'm the kind of guy that ah.....when it comes.....when I'm finished with my.....just like you said, and you can talk to any District Attorney I've ever worked with and I guess including Ferguson, ah.... I don't ah....here it is you know, he and Ion the Memere case, Ferguson and I didn't.....he let this guy....this boy plead guilty for killing his mother.....grandmother and grandfather, I think maybe he took fifteen years on a plea of guilty because he didn't want to try it. And the thing of had the death penalty.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why didn't he want to try cases?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he was lazy, I guess, he don't know how is another thing. If he's a good lawyer, you know, he'd of been out practicing law and he could of made a living practicing law andand he couldn't. He tried it a time or two, he worked for the liquor board and got run off from the liquor board cause....well they justthere was a lot of reasons. And ah....he went to work for a law firm down at Houston and the District Attorney over at ah....over there got appointed District Judge and nobody else wanted it at that time I don't think, so Ferguson was from Rusk County and he got appointed and was back in the DA's office, that was his second time to be in the DA's office. He left and went to work for the liquor board once. And ah.....this

is just....this is kind of typical for a county that size. Now they're paying those guys pretty good now. At that time theythey wasn't paying 'em all that much.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But isn't there something wrong legally even, I know ethically, there's no question in my mind that ethically Ferguson should.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well as long as you know thatknowany thing.....has any regard for ethics .

ROBERT NIEMAN: But what about legally?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I don't know about that, yeah it should be ah.....if he.....it should be conspiracy to ah....ah....if he....if he enters into any kind of agreement with a defense attorney and furnishes him information that he's obtained thatthat's ah.....that's vital in the case then he could be guilty of conspiracy to ah....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it would be just like you all of a sudden.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:in fact we know....both know a former Ranger that did just that and he just got thrown out of....not the retired Rangers deal, but did basically the same thing.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. So I don't know, it's ah....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Not thisnot on a murder, let me hasten to add.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Ah....see we had.... I had trouble with Ferguson during this time, he....he was ah....ah....that bunch over there and ah.....they was real jealous. They was afraid thatand this is the reason that at the beginning we set.....did most of our ah....command post work out of Rusk County . But they didn't have any place for us to interrogate anybody, there.....there was.....and it was just.....and after we worked and went for the first week or two

then we moved ourmost of our operation was in Kilgore, cause it was a lot more convenient, had better facilities and everything and we operated out of Kilgore. We had talked about that the other night and that's something I wanted to clarify. We....our command post was in Rusk County for awhile, but even....just like I I don't remember whether I told you about this fingernail or not. As soon as we got itwe didn't ah...Stone either called me or called Stuart Dowell, one of the two I don't remember which, but which ever one he called we called.....if he called me I called Stuart, if he called Stuart, Stuart called me, I can't remember, that's been twelve years ago. And ah....butand we.....we waswe had regular meetings with everybody involved, Gregg County Sheriff's office had officer assigned to it ah.....Kilgore police had a couple oftwo or three officers assigned to it, Rusk County, Rusk County District Attorney, the FBI ah....was trying to help us look into it all this time. And....and when we'd meet, at least once a week sometimes twice a week, in Henderson or Kilgore or ah.....one of the two and we'd discuss what we'd worked on. Well you see what we're doing, Ferguson he had an investigator, William Brown who was a good boy.

ROBERT NIEMAN: William?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Brown, and ah....he was always there and he's a good boy, I like William. And he and I and Prytle did the crime scene down at thewhere the bodies were found together. And ah.....we would get together and discuss what we'd done. On this fingernail deal well we didn't even tell..... I picked.....we agreed.....Stuart called and set a meeting up in Henderson, we used a courtroom and let's say ten o'clock in the morning, or nine or whatever time it was. I go..... I call Kilgore and I get a hold of the Chief and Prytle and I said we was going to have a meeting in the morning and got some good infor.....some information that we needed to discuss. I don't even tell them, they ride over there with me, I don't even tell 'em

about the fingernail until we get there. Stuart don't tell his.....because we don't want somebody to say, well you told....you know, you'd be surprised at the jealousy in law enforcement. And especially with the little old county like that over there. And Ferguson and them wasthey had their tail up over the dashboard half the time. And we made the announcement there and everybody heard it at the same time. Stuart and I already knew it, not one soul had we told. And.....and we told 'em what Ferguson.....ah....what Dr. Stone had said. Well we go on through that and later we have another meeting and we get..... I get information that this .38 pistol that we have now and the pistol that Mankin wasgot the day he got out of jail, the day that the murder was committed and he got out of jail, he had two weapons and they took them away from him. He went and he got thisacquired this .38 pistol that shaves lead real bad, it's worn bad and ah..... I found out who had this pistol that had been in his hands the day of the murder and got it. It was an ex-convict had it and he was afraid that if he showed up with it that he'd be charged with a felon in possession of a fire arm. And I had to assure him, I said, 'No we're not going to let that happen to you, I need that pistol, got to have it'. And he did....he still didn't....he sent it up there by his ah...ah....kind of common law mama, an old woman that helped raise him a little bit. And ah....so I had the pistol and got it to Tyler and we called another meeting and we had several things to discuss at this other meeting and we hadn't got to the pistol yet. Of course they can't make the pistol, they tell us you know, they'd already told us, the pistol had been over there a day or two and we'd been kind of sitting there sweating it out you know. And ah....and ah....the guy said, 'Well it could of been this pistol but I can't say that it was, because every time this pistol is fired it's so worn that it...the bullet changes, it wears some more and it's so loose and it's not....it don't shoot any pattern the same. Every one...every time it's shot it changes'. So they....their testimony was going to be it could of been this weapon but they couldn't say positive that it was,

which is fair but it sure....you know, if you got other evidence to go with it. And before we get to the pistol over there, Ferguson jumps up and says ah....'I understand that ya'll got a pistol that was involved in this and you....and you withholding that information'. And my answer to him was, I said, 'Ferguson..', and I cussed and I said, 'We're on your side partner, we're trying to solve this damn crime. Why should we want to hide something from the District Attorney that's got to prosecute', I said, 'That don't make any sense at all'. I said, 'Yeah, there's a pistol over there and yes it's ah....it's been test fired and yes it could be the pistol, but the ballistics people can't get up in court and say it is'. And ah....well he quieted down you know. But I mean this is how childish he was, he jumped up, he was made to, he was upset. But this is just a bunch of bickering and he and the Sheriff and some of the deputies over there and they was out tending to their cows in the evening andand feeding 'em and Bill was probably practicing law on side, helping somebody get a divorce or file a civil suit and Brown was the only guy that was working, you know, full time and he....of course he was having to do what the DA told him to. But we was putting all our time in on this damn thing you know. And....and it's....this is what we had to contend and a lot of times....and this was more and I'm not, you know, this was more ah....ah.....this was more back biting went on in that because of....and I just call it plain stupidity on Ferguson's part myself. And the rest of the guys over there I worked with good, but they....they wanted to solve the case. You know, I got into the pistol situation where this guy said, 'Yeah I got the pistol can I give it to Michael and let him take it to Tyler'. I said, 'I don't give a damn how it gets to Tyler, just so it gets there'. And I didn't see. Well see the Sheriff had done heard about it, he called the Sheriff and told him, 'Well Glenn wants this pistol and I can get it'. And well the Sheriff no doubt told him to get it but don't give it to him, give it to me. You know, I want toI got the pistol that committed the

murder...I, I, I. Well I...you know, that saved me a trip to Tyler you know. But that's childish, that's childish.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it's not putting those five dead bodies first.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no, huh uh, no. And that's kind of the way the thing was run over there, just between us girls. But ah...ah....that's ah...still back to the original thing, we....I'm disappointed and I still think Dr. Stone...I...I...I know him well enough I believe that he'd get up in the morning and testify in court. Of course if a DNA expert comes down from Washington and says well it couldn't be his nail, well of course it's going to....it's going to knock his testimony out.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know the military ah....they asked them to do this, cause they had a lot....they've had more experience in that than anybody. Cause all these....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well the reason they asked 'em was....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well they've done all these MIA's from Viet Nam and what not, they've had more experience than anyone, the military didn't want to do it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well somebody put a bug in Phil Gramm's ear. Phil Gramm asked 'em said, 'I hear your not wanting to do this'. The military said, 'No we don't want involved in this'. Supposedly the way the story I understand it went, the next day Gramm sent down to the Department of Defense saying I would like to see all your budget proposals for next year for review.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: All of a sudden the military remembered that they did want to do it and couldn't understand why they didn't already have it done.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well I don't know anything about that. But I'm not surprised. And that's something that....that's something that I would of done if I couldn't of got it done any other way, if I'd of wanted it done, that's....I mean I'd of handled it that way myself.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah. Well final question, was there any....I got one last question I want to ask, but is there any other points you want to add on this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I can't think of any.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is there any doubt planted in your mind, Jimmy Mankin, Jr. was one of the killers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, if I've got to believe what a forsenic crime expert tells me and I have to, then no there's no doubt. And the day that Dr. Stone comes down and tells me, said, 'Glenn I made a mistake', then I...then I'll come off of it you know. But see there's so many other circumstances surrounding this thing and....and ah...and it hadn't....didn't come together all that good either. And I told this guy today, in Ferguson's defense, when we first got the fingernail and it identified, well some of the guys thought he ought to issue a warrant right then. Well I kind of took up for Ferguson on that, I thought...you know, if we got this we can get more you know. I had that much confidence in my ability and....and some of the guys I was working with. But by golly we never did come up with a whole lot more you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you....you've told me from the start, when they indicted Mankin, you've told me from the start this case is weak.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He could very well walk.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, sure. And it was true. And we needed more evidence, we didn't.....and we worked like the devil to get it, but it just didn't fall together. I've never seen a case.....even the little girl that was.....had to be with him, if if.....one of them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Dopey Debbie?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and she set right.....and cried and told me..... I think Iwe got this on tape, but, 'Mr. Elliott I may have been there, I may have been there but I don't remember if I was'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Changing the subject just a little bit, you know her brother was on the DPS and served with Ronny Griffith for several years.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah? I didn't know that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, he was a Highway Patrolman.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Under what name? It wasn't Smith.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't know. I mean.....cause the reason....yesterday I had lunch with Ronnie and Iwe mentioned old DebDopey Debbie and he said, 'Yeah and her brother was with the DPS for about ten years'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Said they went.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I guess I remembered that, but I'd forgot it. But ah....let's get on into.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT:if you want to, to '84 here and we'll knock through it right quick. Ah....ah....this is mainlya lotmost of my work in '84 was on this ah....on this case, we'll go for a little....that thing starts at seven does it?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Eight o'clock.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh eight? Ah.....on the first week in January I'm.... I had to go to Dallas on a change of venue hearing on Cline Smith murder....there's a.....it was a young boy that ah.....student out at Le Tourneau that was picked up at the bus station here and murdered out here at the edge of town and ah.....they changed venue up to ah....and I worked with the Sheriff's office on it. And ah....and we.... I'm up in Dallas that first week for a hearing on that murder case. And then I'm in Henderson and Shreveport ah....the next day on the Kentucky Fried Chicken ah.....and ah.....also that week I'm in ah.....a state wit.....I'm in federal court as a witness in ah.....ah.....a case. Then I'm in Mt.....going on and leave Marshall and go to Mt. Enterprise on this murder investigation and spent Tyler and Kilgore the next day. Ah....the second week Mt. Enterprise, Kilgore, Tatum, Marshall, Tyler ah....Marshall, Kilgore ah....on the same case. I....I'm going through this hurriedly cause ah....I'm just trying to see.....following week I spent all the time on that case. I'm in ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: KFC?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Most of.... I had.....we stayed on this thing justjust all the time and we'll get so many leads on it and.....and ah....get so hoped up that the next one was going to be the ah.....all through the month of January of '84, except being in court, I'm working on this case. And ah....then on the 30th of January ah.....ah.....they had a police officer killed here in Longview on a drug arrest and ah....I was ah....out of town on ah....the night it happened and they called Stuart. I joined him on theit happened on the weekend and ah.....we worked on that a couple of days and....or three or four and got to.....found out this guy was a drug dealer and interviewed.... I got a statement from his ah....common law wife and.....and she came down. And ah....and that's.... I got off of it just a little bit and I'm right back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case some more that week. The month of February ah....the first week Iother than being a state witness in court in Carthage, Texas ah....two days ah....I spent all my time on that investigation. I arrested a faggot guy

for an armed robbery over in Tyler for somebody, probably was over there and somebody called and said....told me where he was, for some evidence or something. Ah....the rest of February I'm working ah....on this Kentucky Fried Chicken. White Oak called and they had a little problem with an oil field theft, I went by out there to check with them. But I never was to far off of it. And ah....the next week in the same thing and ah....I'm back in Carthage in court that week. Ah....and then I go before the Grand Jury in Marshall in the Henry Lucas case ah....in the meantime Henry had ah....ah.....confessed to killing this ah.... girl over at Marshall and lead us to the crime scene. And ah....and ah.....so I had to go over there and testify before the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He confessed to a lot of killings he probably didn't do, is there any doubt in your mind on this Marshall case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No.....no doubtno doubt ah....at all, no doubt at all. He's ah....it's just impossible for him not to have been there at this crime scene, I mean it's just impossible. Nobody knew and not even any of theany of our people in Austin knew the details like I knew it and nowhere in my report did I, you know, mention the road that we talked about. I think we've covered this one time or other down the line. And ah.....so ah.... I took a little time off to take care of that ah....and then I had to go to ah....ah.....Sulphur Springs that week, I guess we did our firearm training up there and this was February. Ah....back in Kilgore and ah....and I arrested a subject named Perkins on a Gaines County warrant for theFort Ah....you know you could do things like that and....and ah....and continue doing your investigative work you know. If somebody calls you, you know how I've always told you if somebodyan outside officer calls me and it don't take long to do it, why I'm going to go do it, cause I may need to be calling him tomorrow you know on this Kentucky Fried Chicken, and did call a bunch of 'em and they turned on. Ah....the following week I'm back there doing the same thing, all week long on the Kentucky Fried Chicken.

Ah....same thing ah..... I had to go to Dallas for a defensive driving course one day, they required us to take a defensive driving every five years, all the time we worked in the DPS and that took up a day. Ah....back in....we're down in March and ah.....ah....I'm back over on the case. I helped Walker County make a felony arrest on Will Yanchak, Yanchak was one of theone of our suspects in this case at the time we was working him and ah....this is where Mankin went.....Yanchak wife got Mankin out of jail the evening he got out and went....he went to their house.

ROBERT NIEMAN: How you spelling that Yanchak?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Y A N C H A K. And ah....so Walker.....we found out that ah....he was wanted in Walker County on a warrant so I went out andPrytle and I probably and arrested him. And ah....I'm in ah....in the second week in March I've got to go to Austin for an in-service school and instruct down there, so got to spend ah....ah....three days.....four days in Austin. Back in Kilgore on Friday and ah.....on this Kentucky Fried Chicken. The next week I spend ah...ah....all week long on it, go to Hallsville, Marshall, Shreveport. Ah....the next week Waskom ah....and Elysian Fields there was....there was....on a surveillance of possible bank robber. This is was something that was the problem brought up by the FBI and when the bank closes I'm back over to Kilgore on this Kentucky Fried Chicken. And the rest of that week that's where I spent on it, so the bank wasn't robbed obviously. Ah.... I spoke to the Pine Tree High School first of the next week and worked on this Kentucky Fried Chicken all that week. Henderson and Waco and Kilgore and I think Waco had arrested another one of our suspects down there in a possession of dope and I went down and talked with him and ran him on the polygraph. Ah....on ah.....April ah.... same thing, all over the East Texas area here. Had to provide security for Governor White on one day, obviously he was over here talking somewhere in this area. Ah....the next week ah....outside of going to Paris for firearms

training, it was all spent on the same case. And we're talking about this is.....you know, this is in ah....April the following year and we're still working on it every day, I'm talking aboutand putting in lots of hours. Ah....the same thing all the rest of that month. Ah.....Henderson and Waco again, Dallas ah.....May ah.....I'm in court as a state witness in the Ken Phillips case. Ah....in ah....in the Morgan's.....the murder had happened out here at the Morgan's by then, out here on Spring Hill Road where this man and his wife and little boy was killed you know, that they later got convictions on. And ah....I aided the city.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you work much on that case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I didn't have a chance to work much on it, but I worked some on it because ah....ah.....we thought there was a possibility there could be a tie, because everybody thought this was dope related out here. Of course I never was sure that was dope related over there. But ah....this....this boy that got killed was a voluntary policeman out at Eastat West Mountain and he'd been doing a lot of dope investigation on his own and ah....so I got in I I was....of course certainly interested in solving it you know and trying to see whether they were associated or not, the two cases. Ah....and we had a safe burglary in Kilgore, of course I was over there and they....they wanted me to go to.....to check on it. And ah....I'm in the Marshall area on this Morgan investigation. They'd spent some time down at Caddo Lake and ah.... and ah..... I went down there and got some information that the city needed. And ah....and then on the 24th day of ah....ah....May ah....I....I'm in Kaufman County, I met the DPS helicopter up there and take Henry Lucas to 86th District Court up there and he pled guilty for a murder there in Kaufman County. And I carried him back out to the helicopter, and this is the day that ah.... I went on into Dallas, and this is the day that they arrested the Bonnie and Clyde pair that had robbed the Windom bank and others.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And they had 'em under surveillance and ah...ah...that same day up in ah...ah...around Justin, Texas up above Denton and they was up there to rob another bank. And they had a stolen car andand ah....and they got spooked and went on back home, didn't rob it and abandoned the car, left it in a ...ah....out behind a cemetery up there in the country. And ah....they got a search warrant then....got back and ran a search warrant on 'em. And I was wanting to go over there so bad and I had Lucasthey had me tied with Lucas and then needed to be down here too. And ah....but ah....they had robbed my hometown bank and I was a little upset about that of course. And ah....most of the rest of the ah....that month ah....all over East Texas running leads on the two murders, now we got two. Ah....same thing ah.... I don't see anything new in there, just ah....just looking for suspects and ah....Tyler, White Oak, Marshall ah....Dallas, Grand Prairie. Ah.... I go to Grand Prairie and Iin this Morgan case, this ah.....there was a pickupthey took the Morgan car, they took the Morgan vehicle and.....which was an old Pontiac, it wasn't worthit wasn't worth anything much. But ah....and it was abandoned on Mother Francis Hospital parking lot of Tyler. And ah....so I get over to Tyler and see what the circumstance was around the....atat.....see where exactly where it was abandoned so I'd know something about it and see if I could interview any parking attendants or whoever there at the hospital and find out anything about the car and I got to be in Tyler anyway with some evidence and....and ah....on this otheron the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. And of course we was carrying guns over there on a regular basis for ballistics test. And ah.... I found out that the same day that the Morgan's were killed, and we knew pretty well what time of day they were killed, and ah....it was early, and the same daytheir car was found the next day abandoned, but that night there was a pickup stolen off of ah...Mother Francis Hospital parking lot. Well while I'm in Dallas here on the last....on the 11th day of May, Grand Prairie recovers

this pickup . And we'd had ah...I'd asked them to flag the pickup and ah....DPS alerted NCIC to let me know when and where it was recovered. Because lots of times they recover those vehicles and if you don't have 'em flagged as associated with another crime, you might not hear about it for some time, because the paperworkgets bogged down in paperwork and ah....somebody from Longview for instanceyou know, the pickup was stolen in Tyler and the murder happened here in Longview and we don't know that they're associated, but wethere's a possibility you know. This is....this is how you solve crimes, you gotthe fact that the stolen car was abandoned there on the parking lot from Longview associated with three murders and the pickup was stolen, well you got to assume that possibility the guy that did the murders and abandoned the car stole the pickup to get onfor transportation reasons. So they flagged I had this pickup flagged and they notified me and I was in Dallas already and ah....the Tyler police sent me a mess.....(side of tape ends) When they notified me that the truck had been recovered up at Grand Prairie well I got on the phone and called and talked with the detectives over there and they had.....they apprehended a black guy driving it. And ah....so I went on over there and the police from Longview, detectives I'd been working with here and they..... I talked to them and they was coming on up and I said, 'Well I'll wait til ya'll get there before I try to talk to him'. And you know, you show 'em that courtesy and ah....and so I went on over there, cause I, you know I wanted to find out something about him. And I go through his personal affects and ah....and ah..... I find a receipt in his billfold where he purchased some items from Skaggs Albertsons store, which is right across the.....diagonal across ah....the highway from the hospital over there in a shopping center, the same afternoon that the pickup was stolen. And he claimed that heof course his story was to the Grand Prairie police that, yeah some old....some boy hehe ran into him down on South Main andand ah.....asked him if he could use his

pickup and didn't know his name, you know stories like that. And of course recent possession was way out because the pickupthe....the....had been missing a month you know. So....so you got to prove recent possession to make a criminal case on stolen property you know. In other words if you catch a guy the next day after a vehicle is stolen or a television and he's still got it in his possession, but if you catch him a month later and he's still got it well you know, he can claim he got it from anybody you know. And....and ah....so we got this.... I got to checking this guy and looking in....and he had a few little old pieces of jewelry with him that didn't amount to anything and nothing came of it. But ah....officers from Longview got up there and we talked with him andand ah....he confessed to us and he admitted to later stealing the truck and he'd been to Carthage to court for another theft, a vehicle theft, that same day. And ah....we could put him in Carthage in court down there, I talked to his lawyer Bill Coats was his lawyer in Tyler and Bill was a good friend of mine and Bill was very helpful andif he could it was unusual, and of course he was District Attorney and a District Judge. And ah....so we pretty.....but we went ahead and ran him on polygraph anyway and ah....and ah....the next day, I spent the day up there and ah...and the night and pretty well eliminated him from being a suspect in the Morgan case cause.....but it was....circumstances were prettyboy and he was sweating, that guy was sweating he was. Ah.....and down in June and ah....ah....Caddo Parish called, they had.....they wanted some help in an aggravated robbery and I helped them a little bit while I was working on this thing. But most of the time ah....White Oak had aI'm over at White Oak ah.....yeah, this is interesting ah....ah....White Oak had a call and the ATF down at Beaumont was looking for a guy named Steven Bosby and ah....he was ah....White Oakthey'd been up there two or three times and they'd talked to the White Oak PD and....and ah....they was ah.....of course this is another case where officers wanted to be in on the big arrest. These ATF agents had worked a

case up on this guy and he was making guns down in that area, in the Houston and Beaumont area, and he had him a machine shop andand ah....they told the Police Chief out at White Oak about how dangerous he was and that....and asked him to watch out for him, if he comes in there to not do a thing, call them and they'd come up here and arrest him. Well the Police Chief....I'm out at White Oak working on something else andon this Kentucky Fried Chicken or the Morgan....probably the Morgan , but ah....it's kind ofit was a coincidence of course, but this guy was living out in the north edge of White Oak and it's not but about two miles over there from his trailer to where the Morgan's live. Cause they live out north of Spring Hill and it's.....you know, between White Oak and Spring Hill there's two or three miles is all there was. So this was kind ofconcerned me and so one of the Longview detectives and myself went out there, Henry Mise, and we talked to the Police Chief and I said.....and they said, 'Well the warrant is here for him'. And I said, 'Well let's go arrest him'. And they said.....Chief said, 'Well the ATF agents wants to be....', I said, 'Well the hell with the ATF agents', I said, 'We don't need any help to arrest a guy for them, and if they got probable cause to run a search warrant'. He's staying in a little old camper trailer that they just pulled up out there in somebody's back yard. And ah....so we went on out there and arrested him. Had a little trouble to tell you the truth, with his wife. Ah.... I went..... I kicked inwalked in the door, didn't kick it in and she..... I knocked on the door and she answered and I just walked in. And I told her I had warrant for her husband and she said. 'He's not here'. And I said, 'Well we're going to have to look'. And I had.... I had Henry outside with a shotgun and the Chief was out there somewhere. And ah....and she didn't want to let me back to the bathroom and she had a little baby in her arms. And this is.....this gets kind of touchy, she had about a two or three month old baby in her arms. I told her I said, 'Now lady I'm going to tell you what is fixing to happen'. I said, 'You're fixing to be

placed under arrest for interfering with an officer and I know your husband is bound to be back there in that bathroom cause you don't want me to go back there for some reason'. And I said, 'But I'm going', and I said, 'And you're going to go to jail and we're going to have to put this baby in protective custody somewhere'. Well of cause she heard the phone ringing then you know and ah....and everything. So we went ahead and executed the arrest and called ATF and of course theyand said, 'We got your boy up here you know'. 'Oh well we wanted to be in on the arrest'. 'Well I know you did, but you know if we'd set around here and waited on ya'll to have drove from Beaumont, we've got three or four officers tied up all day and he may have been gone by the time you got here'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when you're out on an arrest like that, do you have to have a warrant to go into a house?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You got an arrest warrant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Unless you ah.....unless you know he's in there for sure and ah....ah....and you know there's a warrant issued, you know have to have it in hand. But it's good to have it in hand.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I guess say, you're chasing criminal X, John Q. Jones.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, if you see him go in there.

ROBERT NIEMAN:you see him come in my house.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right on in there you go, yeah, yeah, you don't need anything. Ah....let's see, I'm back in court in June and ah....ah....and here in the Phillips murder trial, I don't even remember that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is that Inez Phillips?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Billups.....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh Billups.

GLENN ELLIOTT: 188th District Court, was witness in the Billups murder trial, I can't even remember that. And then I have to go on to Henderson the same week to court in a E.E. George theft case and I spent three days over there in Henderson. But Iwhile I'm over there I can still work on this Kentucky Fried Chicken and conduct some interviews and be available, took all week to try that case. Old Gordan Wilbert, one of the head lawyers of East Texas ah....represented that old boy and he....he really stayed up in court all day and they got an acquittal. Ah.... back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken ah....we're down in July ah....ah.....Attorney General's office was back up here working on some oil field thefts during that time. And we had a company meeting and ah....the same month and G.W. was the captain. And ah....I'm in Daingerfield and Mt. Pleasant ah....on this same case ah....they found a.....one of our undesirable's had got caught up at Mt. Pleasant with a bunch of glassware that he had stolen from ah.....oil well servicing company, Halliburton, and he set up a lab up there but never had got to cooking. I went up there and talked to him. Ah....Texarkana same week and Tyler a couple of times. In Dallas ah.....on the same case ah.....Carthage ah.....witness in court in an attempt murder case. On to Center and interviewed some people in this murder. Henderson, Kilgore, Overton, Tyler ah.....New London ah....Tatum assisting Hill County Sheriff's office in a murder investigation. Ah....anytime we get....you know, you help some other county and it's a murder especially welland we're looking for somebody for them well you got to think well maybe associated with this. And ah....the rest of the time I'm in ah....we're talking about working.....we're in July and the Morgan and the KFC and ah....I help Caddo Parish again.....Louisiana on a case in the Scottsville area. Ah....help serve some subpoenas for the

AG's office. Ah....ah.....back on the murder case in Kilgore and Overton and Tyler ah.....ah.....Tatum, Gladewater, Longview ah.....on the Martin case. Back in Kilgore the next day and Henderson. Ah....into August ah.... I had inspection by Captain McNelly, Inspector McNelly. I assist.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's the grandson or great grandson of the captain isn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. Assist Rappeach Parish, Louisiana in a search for a fugitive. Ah....these are all activity....ahlet's see.....took a little vacation in August. Ah.....Henderson and Giddings ah.....some of thesome more of those dopers got in a fight down in Giddings on the side of the road and got in a shoot out with a bunch of associates out of Kilgore. And I went down to Giddings and interviewed a female that was doing some talking and she was so high that she.....you know, you couldn't hardly ah....ah.....what she had to say didn't make sense, but I did find out a right smart more about their activities. And then I'm back in Mt. Pleasant the next day after I get back from Giddings and I'm working on that old boy up there that got caught with the lab, because he had a brother of one of our suspects was with him, living with him up there. And ah..... I found this guy for Rappeach Parish that same week and arrested him. Ah....back in Kilgore and Carthage and Longview on these murders. We're into September of '84 ah....still working on the Kentucky Fried Chicken in the Kilgore area and Dallas. Ah....ah....Carthage ah....Kilgore ah....Llano County ah.....sent some guys up here on a rape of a minor and I helped them a couple of days. I had to go out and interview an old gal that was working in a honky tonk here. And this was a minor child that ah....ah....it's a Ranger working that thing too, of course ah.... I never had worked very many child abuse cases, didn't have time. But he did down there.....well it's the boy stationed up at Dennison....at Sherman now. Ah....and ah....he was quite interesting, was pretty good at it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who is this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, if you'd asked me....ah....now.... I'll think of it in just a minute. Mt. Vernon....ah....I'm back up at Mt. Vernon in September, cause this guy had got caught in Mt. Pleasant had lived in Mt. Vernon prior to coming to Mt. Pleasant. And ah....I'm in Marshall as a state witness in a narcotic case, that's probably that lab that we caught over there. Ah....and back on the KFC ah....in Henderson and ah.....up to Dallas and ah....ah.... overnight. Ah....state witness in ah.....Harrison County in a (unintelligible).....case. Ah.....assist Louisiana officers in a search for a fugitive in the Waskom area, they must of had another jail break down there while I was over there in court. Ah....back ah.....Liberty City had awell we was having quite a few bank robberies during this time and ah.....ah..... I assisted.... I had to go around to the banks and make preparations ah.....to ah.....instruct them in things to do in case of a bank robbery. We did that though, we called on all of the banks. Back in Dallas for a....Paris for firearms training that month, and the month of September. Ah.....when did we decide Red got....ah... died?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was ah.....'79?

GLENN ELLIOTT: '79, yeah I believe that's right. Ah.....I'm in Dallas on October the 1st for a company meeting. And ah....ah... Tyler and Jacksonville on the Kentucky Fried Chicken. Ah....Overton, Kilgore, Marshall ah....helped Stephenville police department in an aggravated robbery investigation, Ranger Dendy. Ah.....in Longview working on the Morgan case a couple of days in October. Ah....assisted Dowell in a Railroad Commission oil field theft investigation. Back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken the last three days that week. Ah....back in Longview on the Morgan . To Austin ah....Gonzales and Waco on the KFC, that's onprobably went to the penitentiary down there somewhere, I don't remember just exactly what ah....but ah....that was a couple of days down that away. Come back into Waco and spent the night. Ah....in Carthage in

court that same week. Back in Kilgore ah....Kilgore in the KFC. Ah.....Tatum, Henderson on the same case, Kilgore. Ah....Kilgore and Tyler ah....oil ...ah....we're still on.....just about daily on that Kentucky Fried Chicken case. Ah.....in Marshall area assisting Houston police in a capital murder investigation. Ah...ah....this is....this.....this is another interesting case and ah....those officers came up here from Houston and....and....ah.... I met 'em in Marshall and we wound on up over at Kilgore. And their suspect lived out ah....outside of Kilgore and ah....we just missed him, he was motor.....rode a motorcycle. And ah.... I was working with Prytle and we was working on this Kentucky Fried Chicken and these officers from Houston....this was a murder case and this guy had killed a pawn broker down there. And I mean it was a brutal murder and....in the pawn shop. And ah....they had developed a lead on him and we went out and his mother wasdidn't cooperate with us too much. And anyway, they was around here awhile and we convinced 'em, you know, ya'll can stay as long as you want to, but you know wewe're going to try to find this guy. And ah....and they ah.....they left andand that same night well Prytle and I we ran all our leads out and ah....about ten o'clock that night I come in by the DPS office out on Lake Lammond Road and fill my car up with gas, cause I never did like to go home with an empty tank of gas. And when I pulled on to the parking lot ah....there was a motorcycle sitting there and ah.....talking to a girl in a pickup and it was the guy we was looking for. And I arrested him and ah..... I called Prytle and told him, cause Prytle had....was on his way home too cause we had left Kilgore at the same time, told him I had him and I notified Houston. I called Houston and talked to one of those detectives andand of course they hadn't been back in Houston all that long. And the one I talked to he said, 'I told my partner, said as soon as we left Kilgore they'll have that boy before morning'. So I tell you what I told Prytle the next morning, IIthe next morning he said, 'How did you.....how did you find that guy'. We'd

been looking for him heavy and because we were interested in him, see whether he might associated with some of our people that we had suspects in this case, he was from Kilgore and he'd been down to Houston. And I told Prytle I said, 'Well I was ah.....I was coming up 259', and I said, 'I saw this motorcycle and I lost him', and I said, 'I stopped and felt of the ground', and I said, 'I could feel a single hot tire track and I knew he turned left'. I put a story on old Prytle and I didn't tell him I just drove up, but finally I told him.....finally I told him the truth, you know, I said, 'Hell I just went out there to buy some gas....to fill up with gas and saw this motorcycle and I thought well I'll find out who's riding it you know and sure enough it was him'. Just luck that's all.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he put up any resistance?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No! Hell he wouldn't of been....we....I wouldn't of had to gone to Houston, I'd be like old Larry was about that, I wouldn't be trying this lawsuit if he had. No....but ah.... I had a little trouble with the girl, she didn't much want to get off the motorcycle. And I'm out there by myself and I'm expecting him to run and I was tired andand getting a little older then and didn't care anything about....but he was a young man. Ah....let's see, I arrested another guy, Bruce Butler, on a murder warrant the next day for Carthage. I'm in Kilgore and Jefferson ah.....doing some more tracking on this same murder case for Houston the next day. Ah....ah....oh and I recovered six stolen Martin gas meters in Kilgore on the 9th day of October, they were stolen out of Houston and I'm over there on this Kentucky Fried Chicken. And it was right out there in the area where we had some suspects and...and ah....I ran into these ah....oh I got.... I tell you, somebody called me and told me that this guy had bought these meters and I stopped by there to check on him and he admitted it and he told me who bought 'em from. Ah... assisted Harrison.....Harris County on a fraud investigation, and probably it was these same officers on that

murder. I'm back in Jacksonville and Tyler on ah.....the Kentucky Fried Chicken the same week. Ah....the same thing the following week ah....all that week I worked on the Kentucky Fried Chicken. I had to take off some time, they ah... well I tell you what, this must of been when my mother died, I see emergency leave.....yeah and ah....11th ah....1st of '84, yeah that's when we.....that's when my mother died.

ROBERT NIEMAN: She been sick long?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, she'd ah.....she was a cancer patient and she had been diagnosed and the doctor told us that she wouldn't live but six months and she lived six months and three days. My mother was tough, she....she wasn't.... she wanted to do a little bit more than what the doctor said. And ah....I'm back on the KFC the next week and spent time in Marshall, Fort Worth ah....Kilgore, Tyler. Ah....Fort Worth had arrested an old boy from out in West Texas that ah....went up there and searched his car and he....he had some....he had talked to somebody about the KFC deal. Ah.... I helped old Slick Alford ah....execute a warrant up in Pittsburg, must of been a pretty mean guy, for having....or he just wanted me to go up there with him or something, but we went up to Pittsburgh and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was Slick a Ranger down in Henderson County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....in '84, yeah, he was already in Henderson County by then . I'm in Center ah.....that same week ah... having a conference with the District Attorney there about a Grand Jury case that was set for Panola County and ah.....in a questionable death case. And this was not unusual, most of time it's good to go have a conference with the DA before you go to court on anything. A lot of them don't, they just hit you high and dry in the courtroom. The next week I'm inwe're getting into December and then I'm still on the Kentucky Fried Chicken . Had a questionable death out of Carthage ah....and then we had a kidnapping over at Marshall on the 5th

day of December of '84. And they held a guy for \$100,000.00 ransom ah.....and the Chief had called me and the FBI was called in on it. And ah....this was a time that I had the FBI agent with me, I don't know whether I told you this or not. I had a pretty brand new Dodge car ah.....and it was maroon....good looking car and ah.....where the headlights were covered on it and ah....when you closed 'em. And.....and ah.....these guys had kidnapped a guy that I knew over there and his name was Ware and I used to go to Church with him when we lived....we lived in Marshall. Nice man and he was a banker and a real estate man and he had a wood yard and he bought a lot of pulp wood. And ah....these guys went down and kidnapped him at his office at the wood yard and ah....and carried him out and blindfolded him and tied him up and was negotiating with his family for a \$100,000.00 ransom. And ah....so we was supposed to have made the drop and ah....we got over there and got set up on it good and I had an agent working with me and was in my car. And they was making the drop out on that new highway south of that loop, around north of Marshall and that's where they'd asked toto.....to meet them. And the boy....they got a little bit crossed up, but we're out there in my car and ah....and of course we'reand it's unmarked and I had my hat laying in the back seat and my necktie off, but had my gun belt on. And ah....we're going along there and it's just before dark and ah.....there's the dernest buck you ever saw come across the road and....and I popped him with my left front of my car. And he just went tumbling off in a ditch and ah....well I kept a going of course, cause I didn't want to....we....we was trying to catch this guy and I couldn't stop there on the side of the road and get out you know and him come by and say, 'Look there, there's a police officer', you know. And this FBI agent tried.....said, 'You just run over a deer, you got to stop'. And I said, 'No, I don't have to stop'. 'Yeah, you....well you damaged your car'. And I said, 'Well it's still a running', and I said, 'Don't you worry about it', I said, 'We can'twe're not going to jeopardize this man's live out here just for a damn automobile you know'.

And I said, 'If it quits running well we'll call and have somebody bring us another one'. And that was my attitude and that's what we did. And we went ahead....and I didn't look at that car untilbut the thing went sour and they got their wires crossed up. So the boy goes back home, we send him back home, we got him wired, we send him back home and he gets another call. Well when he gets the other call well they agree to meet somewhere else this time. So while their doing that well I go swap cars at the.....you know, I said, 'Well okay, we'll go use your car now because if we was to get into a chase I may have some frame damage or something', you know, but I don't know. But anyway we swap cars and that....we finally got the guys that night, arrested two of them and we got the man and ah....it was three o'clock in the morning by the time we got through taking statements from 'em. I start home and my headlight is shining down on the ground on that one side where I hit that deer. But ah.... I remember that case real good you know. But we....we.....we successfully ah....arrested those guys, nobody got hurt. I'm back on the Morgan case and the KFC and ah.....and the rest of December looks like there. Ah....and I have to go to Marshall and work a little bit more on that kidnapping case and tie up some loose ends on it. And ah....ah.... I spent some more time in Marshall the next week on it. Of course you know, if you get a case like that and you got to.... you got to get all the details to make your reports and make sure the District Attorney has got 'em all. I'm in Nacogdoches and Henderson that same month. And ah.....ah....plumb up until the 31st day..... I don't even know what happened Christmas Day here. I guess II don't even see that.....oh here we go.....yeah I took off Christmas Day. Ah.....thatthat knocks '84 out pretty good, so we'll shut down if you want to on that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, November 21, 1995, continuation of the life of Glenn Elliott. Glenn last week we finished the year 1984 and we're ready to start 1985.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right. On the 2nd day of January I of course was in Dallas at a company meeting, making a bunch of reports and we're still working on this ah....Kentucky Fried Chicken thing. Got right on back to Henderson, Kilgore and Gilmer that week .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Interruption here, did you notice when you was over in Kilgore yesterday that ah....they I drove through there Sunday and they had the whole inside gutted, they're getting ready to do something else with that building again.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh is that right, no I didn't pay any attention and I drove right by it. Ah....the following week I helped serve afirst of the week I served a felony warrant on Gary Kennedy for Freestone County, arrested him for Freestone County. Ah....that week I worked in Henderson and ah....on the ah....on this Kentucky Fried Chicken. I got called up in Morris County on a questionable death investigation and was....that's in Daingerfield, was up there the next day and the following day. Ah...back in Kilgore the latter part of the week, still working on this KFC deal. Ah...middle of the ah....next week I help Ranger Wadsworth out of Dallas investigate an armed robbery.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ralph?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ralph Wadsworth. And ah....I'm back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken. I'm in Tyler as a federal witness in ah....in court over there, a civil suit where a Longview policeman had shot a guy over here. This was a.... this was a strange thing too, it was ah.....ah....there's no reason for the city having to pay that guy, but ah....the courtthe Judge ruled before the jury got to hear the case, that they should make some kind of settlement and they did. But ah....this police officer had shot..... I think we got into that somewhere down the.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, a few weeks ago.

GLENN ELLIOTT:down the line. Yeah, but ah....the police officer was down on the railroad track looking for a guy and this was aa mentally retarded black guy and he ah....ah.....the same description, physical description of the guy they was looking for. And they had several officers down there and one was up on the bridge and he holl....radioed to another one, he saw him coming out and he was walking towards him and he had a jacket over his hand like that and he wouldn't drop it. And the officer kept hollering at him and he walked right up to him and he wouldn't drop it and he finally shot him. And when he dropped it he had a rock in his hand. And ah....but he's always fooling around pulling a toy pistol on somebody and he.....and this officer shot him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kill him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. And ah....and they sued and ah....and got a pretty good settlement I'm sure. Ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean, what.....what....just possible..... I mean, they told him to drop it, you didn't know whether that was a gun under there or not.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was the wrong black guy, they had a warrant for one that they was looking for was on the ground down there and this one answered his description and he ran out there and of course he didn't do what the police officer told him to and they feared for their life andbut this is the way the civil courts are operating now a days. And see the lawyers are strange. I went to Austin thatthat next....that same week and picked up a new DPS unit and I conferred with Captain Block, remained in Austin overnight.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lefty Block?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Lefty was a Senior Ranger Captain.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was he Senior?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. The next week I'm back in Kilgore on the Kentucky Fried Chicken and Henderson and Carthage. And I get called down in Panola County on a questionable death down there. And I have to go to Daytona Beach, Florida on the 23rd of January to retry this guy over at Marshall on that ah.....that killed this guy you know that throwed him out on the highway. And we..... I had to go down there and retry him, I spent three days down there and they convicted him again. I'm in Marshall as a state's witness ah.....in the Henry Lee Lucas case. Henry had ah....had made a voluntary statement that he killed that black girl over there andand they indicted him and tried him, he pled guilty in court. Ah....the following week I'm back in Kilgore and Rusk County on the KFC case. I helped ah.....Stuart Dowell on a bribery investigation ah....that week, I don't remember..... I think it was ah....probably a Railroad Commission employee. And I spoke to the Kiwanis Club. Back in Kilgore and Henderson the rest of that week and Mt. Enterprise on this ah....on the KFC case. Ah.....I'm in Longview on February 1st assisting Ranger Wesley Stiles in a murder investigation. And I remember vividly a lot of these things I can just remember just right off the top of my head just right quick. There was ice and snow, you can....if you get the Longview paper for February the 1st 1985 you....you can tell we had an ice storm and snow. The icy streets was all frozen over and Wesley called me and it wasn't....of course he was getting around good down there and he was on a murder case and needed some help tracing a gun. And I got a hold of Tony Valentino and he was at home and asked him if he could check his records. 'Well yeah I could but you're going to have to come get me, I'm not going to drive'. So I went by and picked Tony and his wife up and we drove out.....and Tony is always real good to law enforcement and we drove out to his store on Mobberly and got all the records and ah....and ah....called old Wesley and told him who ah....who bought the gun you know. And it was his

suspect, so that worked out all right. And then ah....the next week I'm over at Kilgore working on the KFC and ah....they had ah... one of the banks called and ah....some of the neighbors they had a guy missing over there from a liquor store. And it wound up that he had been ah....he had been carrying his deposits to the bank and putting 'em in the night deposit and he'd been ah....ah.....over depositing and he'd been beating the bank, he'd been getting a lot of ah....and he....he just went and bought him a little old motorhome and left the country. And ah....for a good while we....we thought somebody had ah....kidnapped him, we was going to find him dead you know. We had that Kentucky Fried Chicken thing and he was....he just left, locked his liquor store up and drove off and left it. And ah.....so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well on....on....let me ask you, on violent crimes during this period, I guess regardless on any violent crime you know, you immediately suspected a tie in?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we'dwe might not.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Considered it.....considered it.

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah, we considered it. You'd always wantyou'd want to go.....you'd want to get involved in every murder, in other words just like if somebody is up in this area that I'm looking for, from some other county, even though Jimmy Earl Mankin, Jr. was a suspect in this thing from the word go, any.....we had....we arrested a Mexican in Kilgore during this time that was wanted for killing four people down in Mexico and ah.....and we arrested him for the Mexican authorities. And of course we were.....and.....and we had eliminated him of course before we let him go and ah....to Mexico and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I imagine he was wishing you could pin something on him before he went back to Mexico.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah, he....he was.....he'd of liked to have stayed here there's no question about that. But ah....yeah, every.....every case that came up we was interested you know. And....and ah.....and hoping we could making a tie to it you know and make a case on this cause we wasn't doing a whole lot of good on that other. But we ran this guy down and ah.....after....after he'd been missing all that day and we found out he was having....what prob.....what he'd done to the bank over there right across the street. So it was pretty obvious by that time that he had ah.....and then we found out where he'd bought this motorhome, so all that we got to do is put out a APB on him and they picked him up later and ah.....andbut it took quite a bit of work. And I went on to Dallas that week and ah....we had a company meeting, I guess we couldn't have it cause of the weather earlier. I never did let the weather brother me, I couldn't stay at the house when it was bad so Ithere was always something to do. I went to Gatesville the following week to the penitentiary down there on the Hudgins murder case out of.....an old murder case over there at Kilgore happened in '81. Somebody down there in the ah....ah.... I think Gatesville was in juvenile detention center at that time and now it's a..... I believe it's nothing but women down there. It could of been that that's what was there then but Isomebody had indicated they knew something about that murder and I went down there to the pen and talked with them. I'm back in Longview the next day and spoke to the A & M club at lunch and continued to work on the KFC. I went to Houston that same week on the same case and ah..... I must of made a turn around to Houston, cause I see I drove 410 miles and worked thirteen hours that day, so I had to go to Houston and back no doubt. Ah.....and then the second week and ah.....third week in February went to Lubbock ah.....and this is another lead that ah.....on the black guy out at Lubbock that waswe couldn't even associate with Mankin. And you know, people don't realize this, I guess a lot of folks think maybe well we just we just zeroed in on Mankin after the fingernail and just blacked everything

else out, but you don't do that you know. I'm out here at Lubbock, I spend ah.....Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday and drive back to Sherman on Thursday, working out at Lubbock. And ah.....there was a black out there that ah....his daddy lived down at Mt. Enterprise and we later came back and went down to Mt. Enterprise and his daddy was a real good....just old country guy and ah.....ah.....went down there and interviewed him and ah.....this boy was a pigeon dropper is what he was. He was....he was.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: A what?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Pigeon drop, that's these guys that team up and go all over the country and one of them will play the smart guy and one the dumb one and he'llthe dumb one will get out at the Post Office and he'll see some pretty good looking business man driving a new car and he'll flash a roll of money and tell him his daddy just died and ... and it's a scam is what it is. And ah.....and the victim has always got to be greedy oror he's trying to get something for nothing. But that's what he was doing, but ah....we got....we was getting.....we got a lot of vibes from out there at Lubbock from a.....through the Sheriff's office out there and they just kept saying that ah.... that he had mentioned this ah.....Kentucky Fried Chicken deal and ah....and the people thinks he was involved. And ah.....so I spent those days out there at Lubbock eliminating him and ah.... I got back into Longview on Friday and helped Stuart serve some Grand Jury subpoenas on a case he was working on. Ah.....and we didn't serve that many subpoenas but ah....a lot of times you.....you want a subpoena served right then andand most Sheriff's departments you hate to call 'em and ask 'em to put your subpoenas on top, because everybody else is wanting their subpoena served to. So most the times we was working a case andand....and we needed to make sure that all subpoenas were served on it by a given date so that we could have assurance that the people would be in court, then we'd help do it you know. And so that's probably what we did here. Ah....the

following week ah...I'm in ah.... I'm assisting Titus County in that ah...in that pizza murder investigation where there was three people that had been killed up there. They had some suspects down here and I worked on that for two or three days, cause we hadtheir....some of their.....one of their suspects in the Kentucky.....in the ah.....in the Titus County pizza hut lived in Kilgore and he was a young guy. And we'd pretty well eliminated him already but we still, you know, there was some question about it. So ah.....I'm in Bossier City, Louisiana that week on the same.....on the same case. And ah.....the next week I'm back in ah.....well while I was over at Bossier and Shreveport the week before, I got a call on a arson and my friend Sonny Spradlin somebody had set his lumber yard on fire. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How much damage did it do?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It completely destroyed the lumber company over there, I mean burned it to the ground, and a huge one. And ah.....and the office and all and it was a.....it was a devastating fire. And ah..... I was..... I worked on that case in Kilgore, of course if your in the Kilgore area you know, you don't feel so bad about working on other cases even if you got that Kentucky Fried Chicken on your mind constantly, but you're working on something and that you're doing some good and you're right there in the area where you know if something comes up you know, you can get on it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let me....this is something I meant to ask last week and I forgot, did the Governor ever consider putting a task force on that KFC?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well we were a task force though.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But Iwell I mean, doing nothing but that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Governor didn't have any, we was....we was the Governor's task force. You know, I mean the Governor did the right thing, the Governor hadn't got any business sticking his

nose into criminal work, not at all, unless somebody asks for something. If we need the National Guard or something well we'll call the Governor and tell him. But ah....no, the Governor I don't know what the Governor considered, but he shouldn't of.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know up in Oklahoma City they.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, well that's politics, that's all they....somebody is sticking for there, you know, the politics. And ah....and we've got enough personnel in DPS to handle emergency in the State of Texas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well no, I didn't mean bringing in federal's, but I meanjust you know taking five, ten, twenty people, however many that.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I could of got all the help I wanted, and did get it. Cause all I'd had to of done is pick up the telephone and tell G.W. I need three more Rangers down here for a week you know and....and ah....in fact he sent.... he brought some in here to help ah.....conduct some of these interviews ah....when we first started....we set our hot line up and we was getting lots of calls and ah....butand I told him after about a week, you may as well send 'em home, because ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who were they?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah..... I thinkseveral of 'em in the company came, ah.....Max was up here quite a bit. Max came and ah....and of course I used Max a right smart, cause Iyou know, I enjoy being around Max and....and....but I didn't need everybody. And I think Wadsworth came down, I know Weldon Lucas came down ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what about Brantley?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, Brantley was still pretty well tied up on his case up there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pizza Hut?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. He was knee deep in that at that time pretty heavy. I don't think Brantley came down, he might have. But they were ah....ah....there was several Rangers down here. I think ah.... I can't name all of them, I don't remember all of them right now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's all right.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah.... I know they were here. I'm back in Dallas on the 1st day of March for aof course for a company meeting and ah....checking some stuff in the lab. Ah.....go to Carthage ah....had a questionable death down at Carthage. Ah.... I don't remember whether that's the old doctor or not ah....Briggs was the name. And then I'm ah.....I'm back over at Kilgore on this arson investigation and I got..... I got some lot of good leads on it and ah.... and eventually arrested three people on it. I'm to Mt..... I go to Mt. Pleasant that week and ah....and ah....on this Kentucky Fried Chicken thing, probably talking to Brantley and trying to compare notes with his people. Ah.... back on the arson investigation the next week. Ah....and ah.... I assisted Comal County in a capital murder investigation and arrested a guy ah.....who was a Mexican boy for this murder and took a statement from him. That's down around ah....San Antonio, I guess that's ah....that's Seguin or ah....Comal County, that may be ah....New Braunfels, that's what that is. And ah.....we arrested a Mexican boy for New Braunfels and he told us about killing the guy down there and we took a statement from him. Ah.....I'm in Tyler on this arson case, serve a subpoena on a guy in it. Ah....then I work some more on this Comal County murder, we had to gather some evidence that this guy had brought up here that he told us about in his statement. Ah....Louisiana officersStateState police called me to help them on a burglary investigation that week and I helped them a little bit. The following week I'm in Beckville.....back down to Beckville in this Briggs questionable death, and this has got to be the old doctor, I think I told you about this where his wife

had shot herself five times? I don't know whether we...did we get that on tape, I know we was bound to have somewhere down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Bound to be, but to be on the safe side let's do it again.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah...this is a case where ah....a Deputy Sheriff from Carthage called me and ah....he's a good boy, and he works for the DA down there now. And the Sheriff had....was convinced that.....this is a retired dentist that had bought him a place down out of Beckville in the country and he had, had a stroke and just barely could get around. And ah....he had ah....he had a neighbor that lived up the road just a little ways from him, who was a high school student and he'd ah....had called and asked him to come in from school.....when he got in from school the next day to come over and get him and haul him down in the bottom and help him get up in a deer stand. And he had a swivel built on ain a deer stand where he could shoot with his good right arm and he had no use of his left arm at all and ah....he wanted to kill him a deer and get that boy to load it for him and bring it back . And ah....so ah... the boy did and ah....when they got back in that evening well the boy carried the deer on to get somebody to process it and ah.....and the old man went in the house and he couldn't find his wife and he finally found her and she was setting in the bathtub back there in one of the bathrooms and she'd shot herself. And ah....at first she'd shot herself ah....three times in the side and I think I probably told you that....of course most people try to back out when theyright before the pull the trigger to commit suicide they....they'lla lot of 'em will have second thoughts and move the weapon some way or other, hoping that it won't happen, but wanting it to you know at the same time I guess. But anyway, she'd shot herself in the side and she'd bled quite a bit, but the pathologist said that ah....there wasn't any ah.....chance I mean she couldn't of died from any of the wounds there. And she moved around the house quite bit

and she came back in there and she found another pistol, a .45 automatic, and she set down in this Jacuzzi bathtub and shot herself in the chest and that was it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That did the job.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....the Sheriff thought that this old man had killed her outside and brought her in....they didn't think there was enough evidence....the Sheriff was a good parch man and ah....he hadwhen he went in the Sheriff's office and those city policemen down there, and a good fella but he just wasn't that good a law man (tape ends).....to Kevin and Kelly Jones and ah.....he showed me some Polaroid pictures that he'd made at the house and ah....of a bullet in the carpet and two or three other things and ah....and the bathtub. And ah....so I said, 'Well you know you can't....', of course a Polaroid is the worse thing in the world to take evidential picture....better than nothing at all you know, but just barely.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just barely.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....so ah.....we.... I said, 'Let's go out to the house'. So he called out and the doctor was there and we got out there and the old man was about to freeze to death, he was out of propane and he couldn't bring wood in and he was standing in front of the fireplace putting pieces of newspaper in it, trying to keep warm. It was cool, this was in March, but it was still cool. And ah....so Kevin told me said, 'I've already cleaned....', I said, 'Let's go down there and look at the blood stains'. And he said, 'Well I've already cleaned the blood stains up you know'. And I said, 'Well let's go look'. So we got in the bathroom there and Iand down at the end of the tub where she was ah.....he'd cleaned the blood up, but up on the other endit's a....it's a huge Jacuzzi tub big enough for two people and it was a nice, great big master bathroom. And ah.... I saw these ah....minute spots of blood up on the other end of the bathtub, on the tile. And I said, 'Kevin look here, let me show you something'. And I said, 'This is some blood that you didn't

even see'. And I said, 'Do you see these little specks here', and I said, 'Let me show you something'. And I got over in the tub and set down, put my feet in the tub and I said, 'That lady had to be setting right here where I'm setting when at least one of those shots were fired'. Old Kevin kind of grinned and he said, 'You remember that Polaroid picture I showed you of that bullet in the carpet'. I said, 'Yeah'. And he said, 'Look over your left shoulder here and I'll show you where it hit the carpet'. And right in line of where I told him she had to be sitting was this bullet in the carpet. And I said, 'There must of been a little blood here on the end of this....on this tub'. 'Yeah', he said, 'There was a little blood there, but I didn't see those little specks'. Well we went ahead and of course looked through everything, hoping we could find a note and we went through all her books in her bedroom and everything. But ah....she had been suicidal and had talked about it, but ah.....and she was looking out the window. And I didn't know which route that the old man and the sonand the boy.....neighbor took, but Iwhen she was sitting on that tub she was looking right out the bathroom window down across the pasture. And I said, 'Kevin I don't know what route they took', but I said, 'I bet you a dollar that they drove right down that fence row there'. And he said, 'That's exactly the route they took'. And I said, 'She was sitting here....she was watching 'em when they drove off, figuring on doing this while they was gone'. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well was she undressed or was she dressed?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, she was dressed and ah....but ah....she didn't shoot herself in the head you know, which women don't do, we talked about that. The same week I helped Caddo Parish in a theft investigation . And I'm back in ah...Rusk County on the Kentucky Fried Chicken . Of course we was getting leads all the time on ah....on that you know and we ran out every lead we got. The following week I'm in Marshall as a witness in District Court in the Ware kidnapping case. We went through that Ware case last week where the wealthy man was kidnapped and held for

ah.....hostage over there. And ah.....I had to go into Dallas ah....G.W. got a little upset about Henry Lucas' activities and some of the guys he thought was trying toHenry was trying to take some cases that wasn't his, and he definitely was. And I'm sure he took a few. And ah.....so he....he called us all in and we had to show himhad to give G.W. probable cause why we thought he did it. And I didn't have any problems, but I think Stuart did. I don't know whether he got into that or not. But ah....and then I'm ah....I'm a ah.....a witness in state's court in 188th District Court in the L.D. Reddy narcotic trial same week. I'm in Marshall in the 71st District Court again, this is on the Ware case we.... I guess we tried both of those boys. Ah....soand I arrested one of the guys in the arson ah.....of Sonny's lumber company that same week.

ROBERT NIEMAN: So did you solve that case, Sonny's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, got ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the reason he burned Sonny's place down?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well they did it for hire. There was three guys.....this boy....the guy that had it burned hired three guys to do it, it was over his wife.....his wife had left him and she had gone to work for one of Sonny's boys and ah....running a....he had put in.....Sonny's oldest boy had put in a.....things was booming in the '80's you know, mid '80's, things was going strong. And ah....one of Sonny's boys had put in a flower shop, among other things, he was....he was spreading out and they had a health store and they was just making money and going.....spreading out you know. And ah.....and this woman....this girl went to work for him and think they probably had a little affair, but she was separated from her husband, but he didn't like it and so he burnedhired the lumber company burned, retaliation is what it was. I'm in Long.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it reopen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Huh?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he ever reopen?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, he rebuilt it, from the ground up, it was just completely destroyed. Yeah, he built a nice building and ah....but it had been there for years, his daddy had the lumber yard there when he was a kid. And ah.... I assist Hardeman County in a missing person investigation, serve a subpoena ah.....in the Judy Heron murder. I cannot remember that, Judy Heron. Ah....no for Her....that's for Tarrant County. Well I guess.....no wonder I can't remember it. Ah....so IIthat's probably all I did on that, I saw that name when I was reviewing these reports. Next week I'm back on the KFC case. Ah....attend a company meeting over at Jefferson, we went....we spent the night, we had the Sheriff's all up there. Fed 'em catfish and ah....Chief Hacker and ah....Captain Block wasthey came up and ah....that was just like having two days off you know. Of course we had to do the work, Max cooked the fish .

ROBERT NIEMAN: Stuart went through ah....KF....or his KFC.....his DPS training with Lefty Block.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: They went in together.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah, I didn't remember that. And then I'm ah....I got....I'm in Longview that same week as a witness before the Grand Jury. Ah....and then I'm ah....assist Louisiana officers in a theft investigation and I'm back over at Kilgore on this arson investigation and arrested a second subject in that case. Ah.....the following week I'm in 188th District Court in the Simms rape case, don't remember that. Ah....to Marshall assisting Utsman theft investigation. Ah....attended the Armed Robbery Conference in Longview. Went to Nacogdoches that night and ah.....had an East Texas Peace Officers Directors meeting and we had a national Armed Robbery Conference here in Longview for three days and I was on the program on that and ah....doing what

else I could do you know, whilewhile there wasn't any activity. The following week ah.....I had a conference with the Gregg County District Attorney in this.....my arson investigation and preparing for the Grand Jury. Ah..... I went up the Linden and searched for three Cass County jail break suspects. Ah....and to Tatum assisting Fort Bend County in a search for a murder suspect, was working.....supposed to of been working down there at that ah.....power plant I think. And ah....I'm back in court ah....188th District Court that ah.....that week and continued looking for this guy for Fort Bend County. That's way out around Alpine somewhere isn't it, Fort Bend?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....the following week ah....ah..... I helped Nacogdoches arrest a guy on a felony warrant for ah....one of their deputies drove up from Nacogdoches and needed a little help and we located the old boy he had a felony warrant for, for bad checks. I'm back in Shreveport on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. Ah....and Gladewater and Carthage the next day on the same thing. I got a lead in Shreveport I guess it wound up, you know, needing to be over this way. Ah..... I instructed the first of that week in an advanced criminal investigative school here in Longview. Ah....back in Kilgore and Overton on the KFC case. Mt. EnterpriseI think Iwe finally located this black guys daddy down at Mt. Enterprise and he couldn't remember.....the boy was inin and out of his place. He'd come by there and he always had a woman with him, he....he....he operated his team with a woman and ah....but the old man never could.....we tried birthdays, holidays and everything else to try to put him in there at a certain time and we never could put him in this area....in this area other than his daddy just said he'd come through every once in awhile, always driving a good car and had somebody with him, would stay all night and they'd move on. And ah....I'm in Marshall ah....ah.....had a conference with the District Attorney about the Odis.... about the Henry Lucas and Odis Tool pending cases. And ah.....Kilgore and Palestine on the East

Texas lumber deal, I'm trying to locate the third guy to arrest in that. Daingerfield on an arson investigation , I can't remember that. Ah....left there and went to.....and ah....helped Panola County find a stolen tractor. I go to Paris for firearms and spend two days up there the same week. Back in Kilgore and Tyler ah....and Henderson on that on the KFC the latter part of that week. Ah.....in Longview and Marshall conferring with federal officers making preparations for security of Vice President George Bush, that was on 5-19-85. Ah.....he was in Marshall on the 20th, he landed in Longview ah....and we....he drove and went on to Marshall on.....they couldn't handle his plane over at Marshall and we went over there in a motorcade, he spoke and we brought him back. And ah... they had a motorcycle bandito here....when I got into the Gregg County Sheriff's office late that afternoon well some of the federal officers were there and ah.....they were....the federal officers were in here ah....this ah.....motorcycle bandito, Doug Shirley, had escaped out of the federal penitentiary up at Texarkana. And ah....and they had a warrant for him and they was trying to figure outand they....they was kicking it around up there at the Sheriff's office and they was all....a bunch of 'em dressed in their camouflage clothes and everything. And Doug was a....had a house out here on Tryon Road and Williams Road and he had a six foot board fence all the way around it, had closed circuit TV, we knew what he had and ah....we could see.....monitor all the outside. And ah....so they was worried about how they was going to get over that fence, and they had some dogs inside, to serve the warrant. And ah....and they'd been plan....try to get this thing done for some time. And I said, 'Well let's go do it before it gets dark'. And I said, 'I'll get...I'll get over the fence', I said, 'Don't ya'll worry about that'. And I said, 'I'll get the gate open for you'. And ah.... 'Well how you going to do it'. And I said, 'Well I'll...I've been over I've been over there before and got their attention out there', and I said, 'I'm going to pull my car up there to the fence and jump up on the hood and jump over it'. And they said, 'What are you going to do

about them dogs'. I said, 'I'm going to have my shotgun in my hand', and I said, 'I'm going to introduce it to those dogs if they give me any trouble'. Well this is what we did. And ah....we got in the house, I told the.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you shoot the dogs?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Naw, hell the dogs was not afraid of me. And ah....anyway ah....we got in the....we got inside and Doug's.... one of his wives....he had two wives and ah....one of them came out and ah....and they was ah....ah.....they ah....said, 'Mr. Elliott, why didn't you let me know and I'd of unlocked that gate'. And I said, 'Well that's all right', I said, 'It wasn't any problem'. But I said, 'You need to unlock it', because I said, 'We've got some more officers that are going to execute a search warrant here and we got a warrant for Doug'. And you know we was in that house, we could see up in the attic where he'd crawled around all up in there, and this was ah....this was in May, pretty warm and it was plumb hot. And ah....finally one of the officers hadwas looking under the bed ahin the back bedroom and ah.....he accidentally kicked the side of the wall and it was a false wall, it moved a little bit and we opened that thing and he was in there in a closet hid in there. And boy he was hot. And ah....and had three pistols laying on the floor. He was supposed to of been bad, but he wasn't bad, I had ah.....Doug would do anything Ihe later turned government witness and helped convict a bunch of motorcycle banditos in a big drug deal, international. And he's somewhere as a protected government witness right now. But ah....but they was afraid of him I think and ah....so we went out there and got him that afternoon. Ah.....and then the next day we had to inventory the items we seized out there and I spent another day working on that. And then we was trying to make a case on his wife for hindering the apprehension, because she had lied to us. And ah....ah....and then I helped..... I don't remember this one, the next day the New York..... I helped New York City officers in a search for a fugitive by the name of Keith Scott

Ryan from New York, he'd committed murder. Ah....I'm back in Kilgore that....that....latter part of that week, the last day I was back on the KFC deal. Ah....the following week in June ah.... I don't know why I didn't go into..... I got another lead on the Hudgins murder case that happened back in '81, I worked on it ah....a couple of days. Ah....and then I'm back in ah.....on the Kentucky Fried Chicken. And ah.... I go to Madisonville ah....that same.....that week and ah.....there was a bunch of 'em got in jail down there at Madisonville and ah....they was old dopers. And they ran their mouth pretty good down there, but they was just running their mouth, that's all they was doing, they didn't any of them have anything concrete to ah....to ah.... put on....put on us you know. But you got to go talk to 'em you know. The following....the next week I'm in Recklaw and Jacksonville assisting West Memphis, Arkansas officers in a theft investigation. Ah....Dallas conferring with Captain Burkes and Sergeant Wright ah....served two subpoenas in Tyler for Tarrant County. To Texarkana ah.... assisting Arkansas officers.... I guess somebody from Texarkana.....Max must of been gone cause I spent the night in Texarkana, I put in sixteen and a half hours and drive 350 miles that day. And in Texarkana assisting West Memphis, Arkansas officers in a theft investigation the next. I don't remember what that was, but Max was obviously out of town andand ah.....they sent me from Dallas up there on to Texarkana. Ah....the next week I'm in Longview as a state witness in 124th District Court and we're trying one of the guys in the.....for burning Sonny's lumber company, I guess he got a continuance cause I see the next day I'm on the....back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken deal. And ah.....and the next day I'm on it again and I arrested a third suspect on this arson case ah....ah.....that day. And ah....then I had to go over to Marshall that week and help Arkansas officers on a theft investigation. And ah.....and I'm still helping 'em in Longview area. The next week ah....back inon the KFC, I'm over in Henderson and Tyler that week. And I'm back up at Texarkana helping those officers there so I'm sure Max was on vacation, spent two days

more that week in Texarkana. I'm back in Henderson on the KFC the latter part of the week. Ah... I ah...the last day of June I go to Beaumont to attend the East Texas Peace Officers Association meeting and spend three days in Beaumont. I'm in.... I get back into Longview on a Tuesday and I'm in Dallas on Wednesday. Ah.....that's kind of the way my business went, just wherever the work was that's the way I'd go. Ah....I'm in Longview in court again on the following week, 124th District Court and ah...ah.....and then I'm....here's another case, this is a funny case here. I'm a witness in another case, a drug case here and an old boy named Guerrera who was out of Shreveport, Louisiana and he was a....ah.....we.....what.....the nearest thing we had to Mafia up this way ah.....we had a bunch of ex-convicts, we had Jerry Don Stuart who was ah...ah....I think we've already gone and put him in the pen on killing Pete Boykin. And ah.....Jerry was an ex-convict and he was back and forth to Shreveport, Guerrera was ahad been in the Louisiana State Penitentiary and he was a pimp and a gambler and....and you know and....and....he was pretty....with a name like that Louisiana thought he was associated with some of the Mafia out of New Orleans.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this the so called Dixie Mafia?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's what I was fixing to say, they....they just called it the Dixie Mafia and ah....anyway I'm.... I know Guerrera, I've known Guerrera ever since I've been a Ranger, because I'm in Louisiana so much and....and I know a lot of people associated Guerrera like ah....like ah....Jerry Don and some more of 'em from over here and then I knew some more people who was associated him on fencing stolen property from over here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well were these guys way past Jerry Jam.....Jerry Ray James, was that his name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....no, theyJerry Ray didn't knowJerry Ray knew.....he knew ah....Jerry Don because ah....all right, but he didn'tas a contact for him but he didn't.....he didn't drift over in Louisiana much, he spent most of his time in Texas and Oklahoma and New Mexico for some reason or other. And....cause most of hisa lot of his running mates were from out around Electra, Texas and ah....out in there and that's where they did a lot of their bank burglaries and stuff out there in West Texas. And this is a different bunch. But anyway, they're trying Guerrero and....and....up here in 188th District Court and I was not a witness in the trial because ah....a game warden caught him out here on the Sabine River and he met some guys out there and he had a bunch of dope. And the game warden became suspicious and he thought they hunt....hunting or fishing violation and that's what he was checking on and he found this dope. And so he of course called the Sheriff's office and they came out and they arrested Guerrero and ah.....so ah....and they was trying him and of course the District Attorney had asked me if I'd testify if they convicted him about ah.....his reputation. And of course that's what I was up there for. And I had ah....ah....we was having ah....of course the defense counsel was questioning us out of the presence of the jury to start with and ah....which is not unusual. And ah.....so Scappy Holmes, I'll never forget, Scappy was representing him and I'm sure Scappy got a pretty good fee. Well, he....on his ah....the only conviction he had in Louisiana and he got a fullhe got a full pardon from the Governor and ah.... I knew this cause I knew this issue. And the District Attorney had already told me, said, 'That's going to be an issue'. And he said, 'They're going to bring it up', and I said, 'Okay I'm prepared for it'. So ah....he did, sure enough Scappy got me on the stand and of course I went on ah....ah....as a state witness and the state asked me if ah....about his reputation, if it was good or bad. And I said it was bad. And so, that was all you know, that's about all you do and ah....so the defense comes up and Scappy is asking me....he holds up this piece of paper and he

said, 'Now Mr. Elliott', you know and he said, 'This is aare you familiar with the pardon that Mr. Guerrero got from the Governor of Louisiana'. And I said, 'Yes sir I am'. 'Well what do you think about that'. And I said, 'Well I'd be interested in how much he paid for it'. And I thought old Scrappy was going to fall through the floor. And ah....of course a lawyer don't generally ask a question that they don't know the answer to you know, and he did you know. But of course this was out of the presence of the jury. And we went over it there a little bit and youand of course he....he wanted....he tried to get me to make....he said, 'Do you think that...stuff like that goes on'. I said, 'I've heard that it's been going on for many years'. And but of course when I get in there and testify before the jury he don't ask me a question about that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He don't want to talk about that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: He don't ask anything about it. And I stayed back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken, we're in July now. And ah.... I had to go down to Marshall and check on a complaint about a dog fight, I guess the....our intelligence people probably stirred that up, cause they was always looking for something like that and I didn't.... I didn't... I don't like for folks to fight dogs but I had more to do than look for a dog fight. Ah....I'm in Dallas that week ah....back up to the crime lab on this KFC case, I don't know ah.... I don't remember whatwhat....for what purpose. Took a week's vacation in July. Ah....in Longview in court again ah....124th District Court the first of that week. Ah....in Dallas on ah....again on the 23rd on the Hudgins murder case. Ah.... I made a turn around to Dallas and back cause I see I drove 285 miles that day. To Carthage making preparations to provide security for Governor White's wife and conferred with the District Attorney down there about a pending case. Ah....most of the time when you had to go down there for like Governor security or something like that, well you got to go down there a little early and you got to be there, well you'd go in....it gives you a chance to talk with the District Attorney and

some of the court and maybe check a few case dispositions and the clerks case. Cause it's messed up a day for you anyway you know, cause you got to be there to protect whoever you're protecting. Ah.... I see where old Slick Alford was in Kilgore on the 25th of July for some reason or other, so he must of brought some information over from ah....Athens.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Slick's stationed at Athens at this time?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And ah....he's probably gothe's probably got some information, cause I think I remember going back on over there to Athens a little bit later on. Ah....the following week ah.... I got to go to Houston for this murder trial where I arrested that boy up here on the motorcycle, you remember me telling you about here a week or two ago. And ah....and ah.....so I'm a witness in court Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, come home Wednesday night from Houston in that case. Ah....I'm in Dallas the first of the next week ah....August the 1st, my birthday ah....a company meeting. Ah.....next week ah....Carthage assisting the Carthage police in the Osborne burglary investigation. Back in court in 124th District Court in Longview on Friday for a hearing. Ah....in court the next week and we ah....in this ah....arson case. And I took off from vacation. Ah....by this time we're having to ah.....ah.....we're having to take all our time off we can, holidays, if we work on a holiday we got to take another day and they done got into this 40 hour week stuff just solid, boy I mean you just had to continually lie about your reports or...or take....or...or you know, you got to show taking time off.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well who's big idea was this?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well this was....according to Austin and our captain, it came out of Washington you know. And I'm sure that the Unions had something to do with you know, they....they don't want people working and ah....and you know a lot of folks don't want to work. A lot of our employees probably didn't want to work and they was complaining about it you know.

And ah....ah....that's probably where it all....it all started according to them , that Washington threatened to ah....ah.....file some cases on some of the Supervisors in Texas, according to our Supervisor, but I don't think that happened. But anyway, they was....they kept on harping and we had to kind of do it. I got called out at ah...ah....on August 29th I started to work at midnight and ah....worked until six o'clock the next day.....next evening. Ah....we had a ah....little old drug task force here in Gregg County at that time and a boy named Parris, it's P A R R I S, ah....was an investigator and he was trying....he went to a house to arrest a guy over at Kilgore and ah....he shot him in the chest with a shotgun. And he had a bullet proof vest on and ah....boy it peppered him through that bullet proof vest. And ah....this old boy ah.....was named Tater Chip ah....and they called me and of course I did the investigation for 'em.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But it didn't kill him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No it didn't kill him. Ah....he....but ah.... I got a picture of him, I'll try to find it somewhere in the file.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Got his undivided attention though.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh man, I'm talking about it ah...it...it...and ah....of course I had to work on that for several days and ah....had to take some evidence to the lab in it and ah....of course I took his clothing and the shotgun and we ...we searched the house pretty good over there and ah....after it happened, put Tater Chip in jail. And I spent a good week on that and I worked on a few leads for KFC during that time. And I had to go over to Hallsville on Friday the 6th of September and ah....ah.....Governor White was there and ah....and ah....the same day after I got him airborne I went.... I helped Pike County, Mississippi in an armed robbery investigation. Ah....next week I'm back over trying to do....continue to do some work on this policeman getting shot and the Kentucky Fried Chicken, because thisthis boy was ahe was intohe was a dope salesman and a dealer

andand he was....he was associated with our main suspects in the KFC, this boy that shot the police officer. So this was kind of intertwined, you know it was easy to work because you're working the same people and you're getting information from thefrom both sides you know, is what you're doing. I'm in Henderson and Jacksonville that week and ah....on the same cases. Ah....the next week I'm assisting East Baton Rouge, Louisiana in a August 8th murder investigation, spent a couple of days on that. And then I'm in court again in Gregg County. Ah.....and the next week ah....ah.... I arrested the guy that actually hired these people to burn the East Texas Lumber Company, so that was four I had in custody on that. Ah....I'm assisting El Paso District Attorney's office in a capital murder investigation. Ah...I'm back in Kilgore on this policeman getting shot and the KFC case. I go to Athens and work a lead in Athens that week, so I guess that's something that Slick brought up a week or two before, but I'd got tied up in this officer getting shot and hadn't got time to get over there. And I'm still on the KFC and ah.... and like I say they... they was both ah....they was both ah....kind of close together and it ah....wewe wasn't losing any time working on both of them. I'm back on the KFC the next week, and we're in October, I'm back over to Athens again so ah... I think there's some folks over there on Cedar Creek Lake that we were looking at. And then Kilgore and ah....Carthage, same case. Ah....we're in the second week in October ah.....Nachitoches Parish, Louisiana called and wanted some help on a case and I helped them and then a couple of days in Kilgore. And I'm back in Henderson and I got to go up to Clarksville and take a statement from an old boy on this arson investigation that ah....he washe used to work at ah.....with ah....this main suspect, Barber, that hired the people to burn it. Ah.... I'm in Henderson assisting in an interview of a known offender associated with a Louisiana theFort Ah.... I think that was an old boy that brought a bunch of stolen property up here. I'm back.....back in Kilgore on the KFC and then the next day I....I find.....recover the property that this

guy was telling me about out of Nachitoches Parish, Louisiana valued at \$10,000.00, it was oil field equipment. Ah....then I had to go up to Paris for firearms training October the 9th, 10th. I'm back in Longview working on that Louisiana theft investigation. And ah....Kilgore had a safe burglary over at Maness ah....ah....furniture store in Kilgore ah.....first week....first part of the week of October 21st. We recovered \$15,000.00 in property that day and \$11,000.00 the next, \$15,000.00 the next and \$12,000.00 the next. They must of stolen a bunch of stuff besides.....they did, they got a bunch of television and stuff out of the store too, got the safe. But there....that week we recovered, 15, 30, 41, \$53,000.00 worth of property belonged to Bob Maness, you know Bob, he's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Maness Furniture?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. He had a store in Kilgore, I don't know whether he's still got one there, he's got one here in Longview too you know. Ah.....back in Henderson and Kilgore and ah....on the KFC andand ah....and working some on the Maness burglary at the same time. Ah....and back in court for a hearing here in 124th District Court. You know the court will wear you out, but a lot of those things the hearing won't last over two hours and you can go on and do your days work you know. Ah....I'm back in Kilgore working on the Maness case there and ah.... and Henderson and Orr City ah....trying to recover some more property. And ah.....and ah.....we had a company meeting here in Longview, well I tell you, we was up at Lake O' Pines and G.W. didn't want.....he wanted to call it Longview, so that's what we did you know. We used to call it Jefferson you know, but it didn't make any difference to me what you called it. Ah.....kept me from....the State buying my dinner, had to buy it myself, but that was all right. And ah....so ah.....I'm back with DA's office that same week, that got this arson case set for the 11th day of the month, which was the following week. And ah....I guess that's what we do then. And I'm in Dallas on ah....first day of

November and ah.....then we start trying this ah.....arson case. And by the way, we lost the dern thing and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That one of Sonny's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. Yeah, we lostthe others.....the ones that pled guilty to burning it but we....we lost the case on the guy that hired 'em. And that was when I had to.....the little run in with Mr. Hannah you know, who's now....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well refresh us on that. I remember it, but refresh us, why did ya'll lose it, how did ya'll lose it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well jury ah....just found him not guilty. We had three sorry old boys that was just as sorry asas made that he hired and ah....all the evidence we had was what they said you know. And of course we had evidence that he was....he was upset about his wife. And ah....and ah....but ah.....that's the....the jury you know sometimes, they're sympathetic anyway. Well we'd been.....I'd been on the witness stand all morning and ah....Hannah had been giving me hell all day long and he was a former United States Attorney you know. And he and I had, had a littlewe had disagreed on some things when he was U.S. Attorney. But he was....he had already the U.S. Attorney's office, cause he'd got run off, you know, they elected a new President and ah.....he....he got kicked out. And ah.... so he was back practicing law and he was harassing me and badgering me and ah....Judge Cheery called him down twice and ah....so the ah.....his main beef that afternoon, I got back on the stand, ah.....no it was that morning late, right before lunch, well ah....his main beef was that these guys had gone to a convenience store over there and bought their gasoline. Well the woman that ran the convenience store....and she....they told us what time they went there and ah....so we went there to try to identify 'em. Well the woman knew one of the kids, she said, 'He's in here all the time'. And said, 'You know, I see him in here nearly every day, he

don't live but two blocks from here'. But ah.....he didn'tshe didn't see any of the others. Well she couldn't be of any help to us so I didn't record her name. And Hannah made a big issue out of that and ah... 'Well Mr. Elliott can you get her name', you know and I said, 'Yeah I think I can'. So actually when we recessed for lunch I went on up to my office, called Kilgore and talked to Marvin A. Vince, the detective, he was with me, and Marvin knows nearly everybody in Kilgore. And I asked Marvin if he knew who she was and he....he didn't and I said, 'Well you think you can find out'. And ah....he said, 'Maybe old so and so will know'. And I said, 'Well you check that and I'll call so and so'. And Iand he didn't know who it was and so ah....to make a long story short, after lunch I go back up there and Hannah accosts me out in the hall and accused me ofhe said, 'Did you find that witness Mr. Elliott or does that witness exist'. And I'd already testified in court under oath that the witness exist and I'm not going to go in there and testify to no lie in open court. And ah....well that's when I collared him and ah....he ran in the court room and came back out with the bailiff. And the bailiff asked me what's wrong, and I said, 'There's not anything wrong except you better get that son-of-a-bitch back in the court room or I'm going to whip his ass'. Well they both ran back in the court room and the next..... I don't hear anything out of it until I get a letter through channel ah....ah....and Hannah had written ah....Director of the Department of Public Safety who was Adams at the time. And ah.... I had to make a report on it and that's all that ever happened to it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did Alvin say or did you....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Alvin Kourey hasn't said anything to me about that til this day. He knew better than to you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did you actually collar him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I punched him inI got him up against the wall and punched him in the stomach a couple of times with my finger. But I I just told 'em I was pointing at him and trying to make a point and I may have touched him, but I think I got his attention.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know, isn't he a District Judge now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: United States District Judge now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know David....Captain Byrnes told me, he said we got another Wayne Justice he's afraid, with him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's exactly right, that's exactly right. Ah....same week after I get out of that trail I'm in Longview assisting with the arrest of seven suspects in a sealed drug indictment. And ah....what we do....they...they...these guys would go out and make these drug deals and they'd call on us to help arrest 'em you know, which was good. And ah....we'd....we'd ah....get teams and I was team captain and I think I had ah....one drug guy and two Longview city policemen with me. This is funny, there was a police woman on this deal and ah....and she was colored and she hadn't been working just a few days. And we arrested three of our guys right quick, I think we had ah....well seven, we'd already arrested three and we arrested seven. And we went on to the next house and this was pretty early in the morning and we.... I like to operate in the day time and I finally got 'em doing that. And the house was locked up and ah....and I kept knocking and nobody would answer, so it was early in the morning so I just slipped a courtesy card out of my pocket and opened the back door and walked on it. That....that colored girl had never seen....but she....her and the policeman was right behind me, of course the guy wasn't there. But I told her, I said, 'We better lock this door back'. I'm back over toI'm back over to Henderson working on the Maness thing a little bit more and ah....that same week. We arrested all our people right quick that morning and we was inished you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't know. Ah.... I doubt it ah.... I doubt it, but he may have. I didn't see him as much, but Iyou know, unless our paths crossed, if we got into something that we ah....ah....you know, the other one needed to know, well we'd always do it. But ah.... Ithe next week I recovered a stolen tractor valued at \$10,000.00. Ah.... ah..... I'm back in Kilgore and ah....continuing this KFC deal. And we're getting into November now and let's.... I thought I was already in Nov....yeah, that's the latter part of November. Ah.....I arrested an old boy down at ah... Overton for.....on a felony warrant. And ah....then I went to Tyler and Gladewater assisting Hattisburg, Pennsylvania on a kidnapping investigation, I don't remember that, somebody wanted something run down. In December I'm in Dallas on the 2nd day of December, the 1st was on Sunday. Ah....I'm back in Kilgore helping Ranger Eddie Allman who's stationed up at Paris, on a theft investigation. Ah....back on the murder case on the 4th and then helping old Allman again and we wind up over at Gladewater on the 5th. And then on the 6th I'm in Kil....I'm over at Kilgore and there was a taxi driver over there got nearly beat to death out between Longview and Kilgore and I went out there and worked on that and we worked on that several days and we made a case on an old boy on it. Ah....I'm back in court again on ah....on this Lane capital murder, that was Tater Chip Lane, the one that shot the policeman, had a hearing in court there on December the 9th. Ah.... I worked on this Hadeway, the cab driver assault, for three or four days and ah....this was a pretty tough case, but we....we got some luck in it andand ah....we arrested an old boy named Clark for robbery, made a case on him. Ah.... I tried to help old Slick identify some oil field equipment that same week out of Henderson County. Ah.... I got....on the 16th I....I'm working on a conspiracy to commit murder and I can't ah.... I just can't ah.....it don't come to my mind, but I go to Dallas and ah....and I'm back in Kilgore and ah....and I help Ranger (Dee) Vickers out of Dallas ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Dee Vickers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, working on a tampering with government records investigation, which must of been vote....voter fraud. Ah.....back in Kilgore on this conspiracy to commit murder, and I just..... I can't.... that don't come to my mind.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Glenn when you can't remember the killings, you worked too many murders.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I guess so. Ah....and then I get another murder here on the 23rd of December. Ah....what happened on this thing is, there was a.....there was a murder over at Kilgoreactually it was a murder for hire. And ah....and this ah..... I got some informant information, there was a policeman here in Longview called me and ah.... and ah... told me that he had somebody that he wanted me to talk to. And this is another advantage of knowing people. And ah....we'll just....I'll kind of get into that while we're here and ah....cause it happened in December and ah...but most of the investigation went over into the next year and we'll stop. But anyway this ah....this woman was setting in her home at ah....over at Kilgore, right off of Stone Road, out in the east part of Kilgore, and she had her granddaughter laying between her legs and they was watching TV out on the den. And ah....there was a guy came to the kitchen door and there was a glass in the door, shot her with a .45 automatic through that door and killed her. And it was for hire. And of course we....nobody knew it then and ah....this ah....husband....her husband ah...he...he was ah...he had driven a beer truck for many years, I knew him, knew him well. Ah.... I believe he was in the house, I don't remember all the details about it right now, but ah....it wound up that his girlfriend and we didn't have any leads on the thing and ah....in fact we ran her husband on the polygraph right away. But it was pretty obvious that he was not doing to....the grand kid.....just a small grand kid sitting there.....it's a wonder it hadn't killed that baby. And ah....so I had heard about it, but they hadn't officially called me to help 'em on it. And they was kicking it around and I was over there

and been working on things but ah... I was fixing to start working on it, I knew that. And....and this ah.... I got this police officer called me and so I met with him and ah... and his source and I made an appointment to.....to meet with the person that was supposed to know about it. And ah.....so I got one of the Kilgore detectives to meet me and we ah....interviewed the wife of the boy that did.....committed the murder and she told that ah....about this girlfriend that had hired him to do it. So we set upwe....we ah....wired her and recorded her conversation and....and she called this lady that had paid her husband to do it and ah....trying to get some money out of her to pay a lawyer, cause ah....she told her that we was already on the case. So we got a recording of their conversation, of course the little old dumb girl did most of the talking. But ah....still we got enough information to arrest this woman and we made a case, it took a good while, we recovered the gun ah....that was involved, a .45 automatic that he boug.....got another boy to borrow from his mother. And it was a messed up thing and the guy.....we....we got some more guys that had been over there with him earlier ah....to case it out and to kill him.....to kill her and he....he got cold feet and leFort And I knew the boy, his name was Zane Stanley, he went to school out here at Spring Hill with my son, he was a good football player. But Zane would always run, he ah....he'd run every time you tried to arrest him and he was Indian and he was fast and he could run out in the woods and stay for....he was just hard to find. So ah....we located him, he was working out at Spring Hill for a guy that I knew and ah....and ah.....(side of tape ends). And ah.... I had.... I had found out that he'd be coming to get his pay check late that afternoon, that they'd put a little work in that they owed him. And so I was sitting out there.... I had a new car and ah.... I didn't think too many folks around here knew it, so ah... and there wasn't but one way in and out of that building. And so he drove up with another guy and went in to get his check and he didn't pay any attention to me when he went in, I noticed that. And it was dark and ah....at night and ah....early in the evening, so he come back

out.....well I called the officers and told 'em I said, 'Well what ya'll need to do is we need to take right here'. And one of them suggested well let's let him get out on the highway, and I said, 'No, you know, we get in a chase out there and get somebody hurt and Christmas traffic and all that'. And I said.... I told this deputy....we was out in the county and I said, 'You just assign.... I need one car, when I give you the signal, one of you pull up on the north side of his car and one pull up behind him and I'll cover the south side'. Andcause Iand I was sitting.....and sure enough here in just a minute they come out and I keyed the mike and told 'em what was going onand I waited til they got in the car, cause I didn't want him to run. As soon as he set down in the car well I picked up my mike and told 'em let's go, and I just got out of my car and he didn't have a chance to run, cause Ithey parked about two cars distance between...couldn't of parked between me and them. So we arrested him and then the same night we arrested this woman and ah...so....and of course there was a lot more work to do on iton that but we solved that case there just ah.... butbecause somebody told us you know. And then we had a lot of work to do too. And old Zane went to the pen and I get letters from him, he....that rascal ah....he made parole and came out and did real good and ah....and he quite.....just quite reporting to his parole officer, just....of course he'd get to drinking and ah....and of course you know, Indians get to drinking they just don't do nothing, yeah that's right and Zane's kind of that away. He.... you know, he's the kind of guy I wasn't no more afraid of Zane Stanley then I would be a mouse running across this floor here you know. But ah....he was ah....but he justhe was drinking and living the fast life and that woman shook some money in his face and he went over there and killed her.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he back in the pen after.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah he went back to the pen and I got a letter or two from him, he always writes good letters while he's in the penitentiary. You never hear from him when he's out you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well you know, old Stuart, when I interviewed him last Saturday, he...he made....you and him sound a lot alike and I'm sure a lot of you ex-Rangers do, he made the statement that he hears from old people that he sent to pen all the time.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, yeah. Most of the time they want something, but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well yeah, that's probably true.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But ah....but you know, I told you I think here the last week or so ago, I got this call from this guy down at Houston just this month and ah....and he was wanting to ah..... he thinks his mother got murdered here in the city back fifteen, twenty years ago. And ah....he thinks that there's a black guy here knows who did it. Well he said and hehe's trying to find him, he's a convict and he heard he was up at Dallas. Well I.... I got some contacts up at Dallas, so I call up at Dallas for him andand find out he's in Longview in jail, I didn't call here. I called down to the jail and ah....and so I made arrangements for him to come up and see him on Saturday. Of course the guy works all the time, he....he's straightened up and he was a good burglar, good. And ah....and could be beat a safe and did beat a bunch of 'em. But ah....and he'd been to the pen three or four times, I don't think he'll ever go back. But I called him, told him I said, 'I got arrangements made, this guy you want to see is in the Gregg County jail and you can come see him Saturday, all you got to do is see so and so and so and so'. Well that afternoon they called me from the jail and said, 'He's going....', said, 'Glenn that guys going back to the pen, the wagon is picking him up Thursday', and said, 'He won't be here Saturday'. Well I got to call him back and I said, 'Well you know, you got to wait, 30, 60 days and I'll find out and he's probably going to be sent down there

closer to Houston'. This boy was living in Houston. And I said, 'I'll fix it where you can visit him in the penitentiary'. And I will, you know. He wants to find out if the guy knows who killed his mama, I said, "All I want you to do is call the Ranger up here and tell him what information you get, if it'sif it's something that ah....indicates your mother was murdered'. She suffocated, was the cause of death and she was an alcoholic and she smoked and her husband went to the laundry mat and they owned a laundry mat....a little old store and he walked down there to check on the laundry mat and was gone two or three hours, come back and she was laying in bed dead and they said she suffocated. But Dennis thinks somebody killed her and ah....so as long as he's thinking that, until he talks to the people hehe's going to keep thinking it you know. Well shut down, what do you say.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We've had a pretty good day.

GLENN ELLIOTT
TEXAS RANGER, RETIRED
PART 7

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, November 28, 1995, continuation on the life of Glenn Elliott. Tonight we start on 1986.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, I think when we was....we was ending up '85, I was working on this ah.....what they called the Click murder over at Kilgore, this is where there is murder for hire and the lady was ah.....Click's wife was murdered and she was sitting in the living room and laying on the sofa watching TV with one of her grand babies sitting between her legs and this guy shot her in the head and killed her. You know I don't..... I didn't get in to that, that much but of course officers have to have ah....ah....they've got.....you got to use a little theory you know andand you don't always all agree, and I'm sure it's the same way in your business you know. And you kind of kick you ideas in, what you think about it, and somebody else kicks theirs in and you ah....but ah....ah....when ah.....the police chief there was Dick Headon at the time and when they called and asked me....well I tell you what, I had heard about the murder, but they hadn't solicited my help all that much and then I got this informant information and went over there to tell 'em about it. And ah....Chief told me he said, 'It's a....it had to be a professional job, the man was just too good a shot'. And I actually.....this old Indian boy was just lucky that he hit her, you know, I mean if he was trying to hit her, I mean it was unlucky for her but it.....and it didn't wind up that way. Andbut at that time Dick had it....he had the Mafia you know, somebody from the Mafia probably did it, crack shot. And of course it had all the signs of being.....you know, shooting through a little old glass door not much bigger than that piece of paper, not as big, half as big as thatand ah....hit her in the head you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Pistol or rifle?

GLENN ELLIOTT: .45 automatic, yeah. Ah....so I worked on that thing ah....oh for a good while and ah....well I arrested ah....on the 9th of January I think this thing happened in November and ah....arrested Zane Stanley ah.....for this murder out here at Spring Hill. And then the same day we arrested this ah....Faye McCormick who was the woman that hired him to do it. And ah...so....but there was a lot of work still to do on it after that. You know after you make an arrest in a murder case and I imagine in most cases you're probably half through with your work if you worked on it a good while you know, because you've got to just keep on and.....and ah.....gathering evidence and taking what evidence you have. And ah....I'm in Tyler ah.....on the same investigation. I'm in Longview as a state's witness ah.....in January and ah....in this ah....on the arson case against ah....Buddy Barber over at Kilgore, that's where they burned Sonny's lumber yard, spent three days in court on that. Ah.....then ah.....the next week I'm back on the Click murder in Longview and Tyler. Ah.... I go to Carthage onthat week on the Osborne burglary investigation, I must of got a lead on it or something down there. I'm back in Kilgore on the murder case and the rest of that week in Overton. Ah....the following week I'm continuing the Click murder, in fact we had a JP examining trial in Kilgore, had a hearing over there and ah....the question came up why we was using the Justice of the Peace in Kilgore. Ah....and I guess ah....ah....of course there's always a question, a lawyers going to make some question about something you know. I'm in Kilgore and Henderson on the same investigation and Lufkin and Gilmer that same week gathering.....getting stuff together on the same case. That's just a day off duty on that one. We're into February now of '86 and of course I'm in Dallas on the.....in Garland on the first working day. And we got a new ah.....change in reports and we got to listen to all that foolishness. And I'm back on the Click murder investigation, in Kilgore and Carthage and ah.....I assist Garland County, Arkansas on 2-2-86 ah.....Stoble kidnapping investigation. Arrested Joseph Stoble in Panola County, this guy Stoble

had ah....kidnapped one of his own kids and was ah....it was a....it was a divorce.....after divorce deal and he didn't have visitation and he was holding that kid for ransom. And in fact I've got the.....got copies of all the hundred dollar bills I think hemaybe it was ten thousand or five thousand, I don't remember what it was, but ah.....he'd been negotiating with these people and they thought he was up in Arkansas, called Carthage and the ah....the ah.....drop and everything was supposed to happen in Carthage. In fact we arrested another ah....ah.....person in Carthage the following day on the same offense. But ah.... I called ah.....Max was in Dallas for some reason or other and ah.....so I called the captain and told him what I had and I needed ah...ah....might need a little help down there. So he sent ah.....he told.....he sent Max down and I asked him to bring the van. And ah....so.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is G.W. still captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. So we had ah....he ah....Max came down in that oldwe had an old brown Dodge van at that time and perfect and ah.....cause we had some ah....ah.....one way mirrors in it so we could look outside. And we parked it down on this parking lot and ah.....Max was driving and the only problem with that, that old Chrysler.....Dodge had a little carburetor trouble and they....sometimes it was hard to start.....so.....to get going. But they came in and just as they was exchanging money well we rolled down there in that old van and I fell out the back end with a shotgun and Max came out the door and we arrested that old boy and recovered the money and recovered the child. And ah.....and so that was.....and then the next day we arrested another one down there that was helping him in the deal. Ah....I'm ah....conferring with the District Attorney the following week in ah....for an upcoming Grand Jury in Gregg County. Back on the Kilgore Click murder case. In Longview as a state witness before the Grand Jury in the Click murder case that week. Ah....I'm to Marshall to assist Panola County in a oil field theft investigation. And then I

have to work with Sergeant Wright on this Titus County ah....ah....triple murder up there, the ah....pizza place....deal. Ah....and I'm in Elysian Fields and Greenwood, Louisiana the next day on the same thing. G.W. had..... I don't know whether Brantley will go into this with you or not , but G.W. got the idea that Brantley didn't conduct good enough investigations and he was wrong on part of his suspects andand ah....G.W. had the sergeant to make an investigation. And Max had to go down into Louisiana and I did.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who was the sergeant?

GLENN ELLIOTT: James Wright was the sergeant. And of course he was just doing what the captain said, but it worked out all right, it all worked out okay, that Brantley was right. But G.W.....every once in awhile he'd get a burr under his saddle.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, you know, I'm not.....I know Brantley will say it because he'll say it to anybody that will listen you know, that he wouldn't wipe his behind on the best part of G.W.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he wasn't too cranky about it. Ah....neither was Rigler and ah....I

ROBERT NIEMAN: Rigler didn't like him at all.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No. I.... I had to spend the....right smart more time on this Click murder investigation the following week. I have to go to Jefferson and Gilmer ah....regarding an Upshur County questionable death ah.... I can't remember that. I guess....there was an old man got shot over a land disturbance between here and Gilmer and I don't know....this was '86, I don't know where Foster was, he may have been off. It was inanyway ah.... I had I had to conduct the investigation up in Upshur County. Could be that G.W. was upset at Brantley and he may of just sent me up there to aggravate him you know, I don't remember. And of course Brantley was still working that triple murder at that time and ...and ah....he may have been busy. But ah.... I had to go to Upshur County on a questionable, and it was ah..... I thought that ah....it was....there wasn't any

question....it was over a dispute over land. But the guy that done the shooting should of been indicted, but I never could get him indicted. And it was just kind of a touch and go. Ah... I'm in Kilgore and Tatum on this oil field investigation for Panola County and ah....that week. And ah...to Marshall ah....we're into March and of course I'm in Dallas the first working day of the month submitting reports and getting my six month evaluation. Ah.....this the only time that ah....that I ever got ah.....no I believe it was in '87, it was later on, I'll get to that later. G.W. kind of cut me right before he retired and I guess he may have retired in '86, I guess he did. This could of.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did he cut you?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh he.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do we need to get to it later.....or do we need to come to it later or now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....I'm not sure, I'll just have to ah.....may as well talk about it now. Oh, he was ah....he was just kind of that away. G.W. was..... I always got along with him pretty good and I got along with everybody that was my captain, cause heck you was supposed to you know. But I had a lot of things he'd do that I didn't like all that much but he didn't bother me, I was down here and my doing my job and he sure didn't interfere with that in any way. But ah.....he ah....he mentioned in my six month evaluation report that ah....that I didn't get alongthat I was a little too hard on ah....the Rangers in the company. And I probably was you know, cause I expectedyou know, I thought a Ranger ought to be a Ranger you know and I didn't make any bones about it. But I didn't I wasn't hard on 'em around their back, I'd look 'em in the eye and say you know.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well expand on that, I mean, what.....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he just saidhe made a remark that after the sergeant had made out my evaluation thatand he.....and I called his hand on it and ah....and he said he thought it was a

compliment. And I said, 'Well hell, that's no compliment you know', and I said, 'You're insinuating here that I can't get along with the troops'. And I said, 'We get along great'. And I said, 'You're the one that can't get along with 'em you know'. And ah...but he didn't ah....that's as far as it went right there and he.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I mean, what was he saying you was doing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he....he just said that I was cutting 'em a little bit heavy when I talked to 'em you know. And I was, I was tough on 'em you know. I said, 'Well did you', well for instance they was down here conducting the investigation on ah.....ah.....when the State Representative was ah.....and I was out of town on vacation. When I got back well he had the whole SWAT team down here and brought five people down here to investigate that case you know , which was silly. And it was Red Arnold that said, it's asinine. But that's the way G.W. would do things. He'd come down with his combat boots on and the tam and he thought that SWAT team was about the greatest thing that ever happened you know. And it wasn't. And ah....but they had been making some phone calls and they tapped the phone and they found out where the phonephone booth....call was originated and they run right out there and there wasn't anybody there. And I said, 'Well did you get any fingerprints'. Ah....Jim Gant spoke up and Jim... 'No there wasn't any need trying to take fingerprints on a phone booth, everybody using it'. I said, 'Well you go to a bank that's robbed', I said, 'Do you try to take any fingerprints in a bank'. 'Oh yeah'. Well I said, 'What's the difference', I said, 'Don't a bunch of folks use that bank'. And you know, that's the way I talk to 'em. Well I was trying to get a point over and that's....you know, and that may be wrong, but why should Ihow is Jim Gant ever going to learn to be a Texas Ranger if somebody don't teach him you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You know G.W. had a lot trouble I think with ah....you know, that little incident with you, and you know Brantley just despises him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....ah....Lewis didn't like him. One time on my interview I did with Stuart ah....Dowell, he said that he got a call, they was having a big SWAT meeting up in Paris. He drove all the way up there and said just as he drove in the driveway, he said G.W. come out and you know, don't bother to even get out of the car we got to go to Rusk. And of course he said G.W. knew all along that's where they was going but he sent him all the way to Paris and he jerked

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well geographically G.W. still didn't know where he was, that's another problem he had you know. You know, like the time that I think I told you, that hehe sent Max and I, we were in Dallas together and Max had come through Longview and ah....from Atlanta and went to Dallas with me. And he and I were going to come back through Tyler and do something and we get to Dallas and ah....G.W. sends us to ah....Naples to help narcotics. Well Lloyd Johnson and....from Sulphur Springs was there and so was ah...ah....Brantley from Mt. Pleasant and Don....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Paris guy would of been closer.

GLENN ELLIOTT:Don Anderson and Frank Kemp, they was all closer ah....ah....to Naples. We got to go from Dallas to Naples and then I got to takeno IMax met me in Tyler and I got to take Max all the way from Naples back to Tyler before weand I

ROBERT NIEMAN: And he's got to go back to Atlanta and you got to come to Longview.

GLENN ELLIOTT:yeah and he's got to go to Atlanta and I got to go to Longview. And I told G.W. this.....well now, 'Ya'll are the ones that are going'. So we went you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well on that incident, Stuart.....Stuart kind of blew up at him. Well he didn't kind of blow up, I won't use the exact words, but he told him that ah.....to his face, said, 'G.W. you could screw up an animal with a rubber hammer'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I helped ah....Webster Parish, Louisiana officers in a theft investigation that week and ah.....and I I had to do I was still working on that Johnson questionable death up in Upshur County. Ah....and then on March the 2nd ah.... I got a call for a....let's see....no this was a theft investigation for Longview PD, I was thinking that was another deal. Ah.... I had to go to Austin the first week ah....second week in March for in-service school and instructed and received instructions. And I worked on Saturday that week with the Crime Stoppers deal in Marshall. Ah....the following week ah.... I was helping Gregg County in a 4-30-84 Morgan murder investigation. Ah....I'm trying to think about which case that was ah....ah.... I worked on it quite a bit. Hughes Springs, Gladewater, Henderson.....Morgan, I'll think of it after while. I'm in Gladewater and Gilmer assisting Minden, Louisiana in a theft investigation and the Longview area continuing the Kentucky Fried Chicken investigation. Ah....still helping Longview police on a theft investigation and the Kentucky Fried Chicken. And then I took a few days vacation in March. Ah....I'm ah....last day of March I workedI'm in the Waskom area assisting Baxter County in a December 13th, '85 Frisco murder investigation, I don't remember that one either. And probably just worked on it that day, they was probably wanting me to contact a witness or run down a gun or something. I'm in Garland the first day of April working on reports and Kilgore that week in the Kentucky Fried Chicken. In Marshall assisting Baxter County in the Frisco murder investigation. Ah....Longview assisting Gregg County Sheriff in the....the ah....an aggravated assault investigation and arrested a guy for aggravated assault name Clements. Ah....White Oak and Gladewater assisting Webster Parish, Louisiana in a murder investigation. To Paris for firearms training. Lefty

Block was up there and the Captain Burkes and James Wright, so G.W. was still working then. In Paris the second day, we spent the night up there and ah.....we used to do all our training up there and had a good time up there, it was good ah....ah....Frank would generally get somebody to sponsor a meal. And ah....that's something that you'll find thatand it's....it's strange, all the time I was in this company we very seldom ever got entertained anywhere except in the east.....northeast Texas. Nobody else would have anybody that would invite us and we was constantly....had invitations down here, somebody you know.....next time ya'll shoot well call you know, I'd like to give you a fish fry or cook steaks or

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why was that do you think?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Ithey just don't ah.....they wasn't doing their homework as far as I'm concerned. Ah....I'm in ah....Kilgore assisting a murder for hire investigation ah..... I guess that's ah....that's ah....no that was another case where a guy had thought somebody was going to kill him and it really didn't work out that away. I'm in Longview as a witness ah....over at the Gregg County Grand Jury and I had an assault case, that was the cab driver that got robbed over at Kilgore and ah....back in the latter part of '85. Ah....I'm still working on this murder.....solicitation murder investigation the following week and ah....I helped Glade..... I helped Webster Parish, Louisiana over at Gladewater in an investigation of a theFort And I go to Kilgore and Center on a Kentucky Fried Chicken lead. To Kilgore and Louisi.....Shreveport, Louisiana helping Panola County in an oil field theFort Ah....I'm in Longview assisting McCollough County in a theft investigation, serve a subpoena in the same case for records. Ah....to Kilgore on the Kentucky Fried Chicken the following week for two days. Ah....and worked on the conspiracy to commit murder investigation. Ah....in Longview, gave a presentation to the Pine Tree school about the Rangers, appeared as a state witness before a Grand Jury in the Click case. Generally I'd....if I'd accept an

invitation to talk well I'd try to combine it with something where I knew I was going to be in town you know. I wasn't bad about.... I don't see how....you know, no I don't show any disrespectthere's no way that I could.....you could call me up and say, 'Glenn can you have lunch with me Tuesday', you know. Well it's kind of the same way now isn't it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But Iyou know ah....eating lunch with somebody will mess up your day. You know you can't plan a day, if you're going to be out of town especially you know, and most of the time you were out of town and it's just hard to I could eat supper with anybody just about any time, but not.....not lunch. Next week I'm in Henderson ah....working on a robbery case and had a conference with the District Attorney over there in reference to the Kentucky Fried Chicken. Kilgore and Tyler the same week ah....working on an attempt to bribe a jury investigation in the Barber case. Barber's daddy tried to bribe one of the jurors and I found out about it after the trial and ah.... I tried to make a case on him, but I couldn't. Ah....I'm back in ah....ah....May, the first working day in May, back in Dallas and I go to the crime lab on the Kentucky Fried Chicken while I'm up there. I'm in Longview assisting Gregg County in a robbery investigation. Ah....in Longview area working the Hud.....oh the Hudson murder investigation, all right this is ah.....ah.....that.... I remember it now, I mentioned it there awhile ago. This Hudson guy was a ah.....a ah.....foreman at Texas Eastman and he was found murdered out north of Longview. Ah....and this is where some of this ah....ah....solit.....ah....ah....conspiracy to commit capital murder investigation.....Hudson was found dead out here in his vehicle out ah....on ah....Seven Pines and Judson Highway, out on an oil lease out there. And ah..... I got called to the crime scene, which was good, these....these boys here....we had a bunch of young boys here in the Gregg County Sheriff's office in the criminal division and they ah.....they liked to call me. And I liked for them to, enjoyed

working with them. And ah....so we got....we got a lead on this Hudson and found out that his wife ah....had ah....hired some people to kill him. And we had a guy....was our first suspect in the case and we had him in custody back before this and talked to him and he tried to tell us this. And we didn't want to listen to him to tell you the truth, because he was....he was a scrounge old boy and ah....we just couldn't hardly believe it. His wife ah....ran the....she owned the bowling alley out there on Cotton Street, out there at Cotton and Lake Lammond.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oil Bowl.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, she ran it, she didn't own the building I don't believe, she the ran the bowling alley, had a good business out there. And he was a....he had a good responsible job with Texas Eastman and ah....but anyway we served subpoenas and ah....on that case and...and we...ah....and we arrested ah....a boy named Meador ah....ah....his sister-in-law I believe is the way it was and Ben Sheffield and Morris Finney ah....that week. But anyway, we made a case on ah....on this wife for conspiracy and ah....and also filed on the guy that done the shooting, he and his wife did the shooting. And ah....but it took a lot of work, I'm still working on it the next week in Longview and the area and Hallsville on the same thing. And WaskomI get called to Waskom andthe next week on a questionable death and this is a boy that ah.....gotkilled himself down there, he was having marital problems. But....and again it's hard to ah....it's hard to convince parents that ah....somebody can take their own life. This is a boy thatand he was a roughneck in the oil field, he smoked pot and drank beer and hung around honky tonks and he and his wife was having problems and he....and even giving his ball glove to one of his cousins and getting ready toyou know, everything he was doing was leading up to killing himself, but nobody believed he did it you know. But ah....we proved I think that ah....to her satisfaction that he....that he committed suicide. Ah....I'm back in ah....I'm in....I'm in Grand Jury as a state witness in this Hudson murder

case that week. And ah....Dallas ah.....to the lab with some evidence out of it. Ah....the following week I'm in Beckville and Henderson ah....still working on the Hudson murder. To Longview the same, Kilgore is the same, Orr City and Gilmer assisting Upshur County in the Harrison....Harrison murder investigation.....Orr City and Gilmer..... I can't remember that one right now, but it'll probably come to me in a little bit. Ah.... I got calledyou know I wanted to know what was going on, of course you know Ithey wouldn't I think the folks knew that I liked to know what was going on and just stayed busy all the time. I'm back on the Hudson case the following week, got to go to Tyler to the lab two days in a row. And ah....and I'm up at....back up at Orr City on that other ah....murder case and met James Wright up there. James liked to come out in the field and I was always glad to see him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he sergeant or had he gone to captain then?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was a Ser....no he was still a sergeant. Ah....Longview area continuing Hudson murder investigation. To Waskom and Harrison County, in Marshall conferring with the District attorney in reference to that questionable deathand Waskom, he's probably the one that called me, I imagine that ah....his wife and the mother had called the District Attorney, that's generally what happened. And ah.... I work on the Hudson case for two more days that week, had a lot to do on that case, it was a tough son of a gun, it was double tough. We ah....we had this boy that actually done....did the shooting that killed him, he called this woman from the jail and we taped the telephone conversation. And she acknowledged in the telephone ah....that she was....you know, involved and then we arrested her later on that day out at her house. I'm in Longview as a state witness in the Lane attempt murder case, that's where Tater Chip Lane shot the narcotic officer you know, over at Kilgore, with a shotgun. Ah....in Longview continuing the Morgan murder investigation. Ah....Marshall and Waskom continue Hayes questionable death..... I guess I

had to go back over there and talk to that lady again. I'm back in 188th District Court as a witness in ah....this Hadaway.....the cab driver's assault case. The guy must of pled guilty because it just took one day. Ah....no I'm back up to Paris the next day on the Hadaway assault investigation, I guess it was just a hearing. Ah....some Governor or somebody was in town on the 17th of June because ah....G.W. had changed it and we had to show providing security for elective officials and that's all we put down instead of security for the Governor and name him and that's the way he decided he wanted it put on the report. Ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well could each captain name how they wanted it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah pretty well, yeah you know Ranger's reports are just so youif you was to date it and signed it that's all Austin cared anything about it you know. Be sure that it's dated and signed. Ah....Longview ah....ah....police department called me at ah.....2:00 a.m. on 6-18th and ah....they had an attempt capital murder ah....ah....one of the police officers was assaulted by a boy that was ah....ah.... it happened out here at ah....at Eastman and 80, there was two girls witnessed a guy a purse out of their car and run coming out of the....oh....young people's honky tonk there on Eastman Road just north of 80 there on the east side.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh, Monoco's or something like that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, or something.....they've changed the name of it a hundred times. But ah....ah....they ah....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I have an interesting story about that place after we turn the tape off.

GLENN ELLIOTT: They came out of there and they saw him steal that purse and run and a bunch of guys got to chasing him and ah....there was an officer here named Vick who was a ah.....he was off duty. And ah....he was riding down Hwy 80 and ah....and he ah....saw the commotion and he pulled over and stopped and he saw the guy where he ran and they told him

what he'd done, that he'd stole something, and he ran up there and identified himself and caught the guy, in there behind that car wash that was on 80 there, towards where that new pawn shop was built. And at that time there wasn't anything in between 'em. Caught him out there in that field between that car wash and that pawn shop that's on the south side Marshall and 80.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would be Jack of Pawns wouldn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah I believe that's right. I stopped there today and bought a box of shells. Don't even remember the name of it. But anyway ah.....Vick caught that guy and they got....he got to fighting him. He identified himself, had his....had his shield and ah...and ah....in one hand and a pistol in the other. Told him who he was and the guy got down.....got old Vick down and ah....and he shot him in the chest and Vick was on the bottom, the policeman. And ah....so they.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: He shot the crook?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh huh. So of course he went to the hospital and ah....he was a young man.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did he live?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah he lived.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what....what....where would a policeman allow a guy to get that close to him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he caught him see, he caught up with him, he was chasing him. And he caught him andand ah....and he identified himself and ...and the guy just turned on him and started.....and hit him. And he had to.....you know it was eitheryou either catch him or let him go, one of the two you know, he had to get....he had to put his hands on him .

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, but I mean after he identified himself and everything else and when he started turning, I'd of shot him.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I guess when the guy stopped that he thought the chase was over. You know surprise, you don't.....if he'd of put him down or something well he'd of been criticized for that and I guess he was just trying.....but anyway, the thing cameit was a pretty touch and go thing and ah.... I took his clothing off the..... I went to the hospital. And of course his mother and daddy was there andand there wasn't anyway for us talking to him and we sympathized with them. You got to handle peopleyou know if I'd of gone in there gang busters and had started bad mouthing their boy.....well I didn't, I went in there and introduced myself to 'em and told 'em what I was there for, that I was investigating the incident and I was going to report to the Grand Jury and that ah....and that I needed his clothing and I'd.....it was....they were there in the room, they'd taken his....especially the shirt, cause I wanted to see the distance shot you know. So I got his clothes.....everything went just fine with the family and I said, 'Now we won't try to talk until he gets better and I hope things work out for you and I'm going to go take a statement from this police officer'. And did and ah....so later after this thing went to the Grand Jury I prepared a report of course and sent it tocarried it and testified at the Grand Jury later. And ah....the ah.... I got my ballistics test back and ah....of course they said it was a contact shot with the clothing, but the bodywe said the ah.....the body, well he didn't die, ah....the doctor told his lawyer that there wasn't any ah....residue on his body you know. And ah....so the lawyer is trying tohe's questioning me about it pretty heavy and I knew him and Iyou know, if you can try a case in the lawyer's office or in my office well you may as well do it you know. And he's....he's....of course he's thinking about suing the city, that's what he had in mind and then he's getting his client off without being filed on for burglary of an automobile and assault on an officer you know. And he....he made a point to me he said, 'Well you in your report and the ballistics report this says there was residue on the shirt', but he said, 'There's none on the body, how do you explain that'. And I said, 'Well you

read officer Vick's statement haven't you'. And he said, 'Yeah'. And I said, 'Well the man was on top of him, you read that didn't you'. 'Yeah'. I said, 'Well if he's on top of him fighting him and his shirts going to hanging down he's.....Vick's on the bottom', I said, 'You understand if Vick had been on top and shot him his shirt would of been laying down flat on his chest and he'd probably had some residue gone through'. You know some....and he accepted it and we never did....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's common sense.

GLENN ELLIOTT:never had any problem. And that's what you got to use, you got to use common sense in nearly everything you do, especially in law enforcement. If youyou just got to use it. But I worked on that case for you know, three or four days. And then for some unknown reason ah....G.W. changed the report system again and we got to go ah....ah....for another session in Garland on scheduling and reporting. And we're talking about over time you know and ah....that's just another ah....wasted day in my life. In July I'm still on the Vick case doing some work on it. Ah.... I go....I'm over....back over at Henderson again on the 3rd day of July on the Kentucky Fried Chicken and take off on the 4th. Ah....in Tyler onin the KFC case the first of the next week and Henderson the same. Ah....I'm in Texarkana ah....on the same case that week and ah....I'm back through Gilmer assisting Upshur County in an aggravated kidnapping and jail break. That's where McFaddin broke out of jail, Animal McFaddin, on the night of July 9, 1986. I guess I was in Texarkana when it happened and ah....so we worked up there in that area 9th, 10th, and 11th and he was arrested on ah....the night of the 11th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Recaptured?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, there in

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well do you want to tell us about that chase that wasmade all the papers around here for a long time. He kidnapped.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well he was charged with murdering two young people up in ah...ah....Wood County and....or from Wood County. I don't think it was ever completely determined where the murder happened, but their bodies were found up here in Upshur County, at a roadside....at a park, little old park or something, off of 155 up in Upshur County. And ah....they ah....McFaddin was a suspect all along and they made the murder case and ah....on him and they had him in jail there in Upshur County, because ah.... I guess because the bodies were found there in Upshur County, so they decided the venue probably lay in Upshur County. See that....of course that case was being worked the Rangers and the officers out of Wood County. And I had worked.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That was Brantley wasn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think they called Brantley on that case, I don't think Brantley was called in this thing until he kidnapped that jailer up there and broke jail, the same time I was. I don't know.....the Wood County officers was working the case and we had a Sheriff up in Upshur County at that time that didn't ah....didn't call on the Rangers much and he and Brantley didn't get along at all. And ah....because I went.... I responded to a bank robbery up at Ore City back there sometime when he was Sheriff and he really ah....ah....he just didn't know what to do all the time. He....he.....he I suggested we call the dogs out of the penitentiary up there for that bank robbery and he did and they was on the ground like I told you, twelve or fourteen minutes and had the guy in custody. But ah....anyway, this was a....ah....this case here was a.....it was tough and McFaddin was a bad guy, he was an old motorcycle bandito and he looked the part. And he got the drop on ah....ah....the jailer up there some way or other and kidnapped.....at Gilmer, and kidnapped the black female who was working there in jail as a jailer and dispatcher and she was Highway Patrolman's wife, black Highway Patrolman's wife up there. And ah....and they left out and he kept

her ah....let's see, all.....he kept her for ah....all of that night and released her the next night.....evening late.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you think you'd get her back alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Do what? Oh yes, I'd of....I'd of bet a black land farm that we'd of never seen her alive when he left there with her. Because he was....he was just that kind of guy you know, and her being a police officer and a police officer's wife. Ah....but he didn't, he turned her loose, they'd been staying.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: But had he assaulted her or anything?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, huh uh. Ah....they'd stayed in a box car, he kept her there in a box car overnight, they walked and ah....they ah....whatever vehicle they left in something happened to it, I believe they left in her car and ah.....it's kind of left me, but the trail went west out of Gilmer and up.....and they went up towards Hawkins and then walked the railroad track from ah....up towards Big Sandy. And walked the railroad track on in to Gladewater. And ah....McFaddin used to live in Gladewater and he knew Gladewater and they spent the first night in a box car there, according to her. And he released her I believe early the next morning, or sometime the next morning, probably pretty early. We were all up there for all of the duration . And ah....so ah....hewe had searched that house that he had lived in, it was vacant and we had searched it once I know of, I'd been in it once. Well ah....somewhere around eleven o'clock, ten, eleven o'clock that night....that last night on the 11th well somebody ah....told some officers up there that they thought they saw somebody move in that house, and there was a bunch of officers went in there and he was in there. Didn't give 'em any problem and he was arrested. But that was a pretty tough man hunt. That made Paul Harvey, I was listening to Paul Harvey one morning and he was telling the citizens of ah....Big Sandy.....he mentioned it on his program about Animal McFaddin. Ah....the next week in July I'm

in Carthage ah....ah.....Mrs. White is down there, the Governor's wife and ah....I went on to Waskom and ah....while Iafter I left Carthage I guess I had to touch a little more base down there on that Hayes questionable death, cause Iand I'm pretty close to Waskom when I'm in Carthage you know, and I'd always try toto....you know I probably went and talked to Ms. Hayes some more, the mother. Something else had come up and you have to do that you know, you got a mother that's.....her son has killed himself andand you can't just ignore her you know. And you tell her what you think but if she believes in you, then she's going to be satisfied, so I was probably trying to sell myself to her a little bit more. And....and didn't mindand that wasn't far from running to Carthage down there to do that you know. Ah....I'm working on the Kentucky Fried Chicken two more days that month. And ah....in Longview ah....providing security for elected officials, so I guess the Governor is in Long.....this must of been an election year. And then I took a little vacation then. So I guess Mark White's wife was in Carthage one week and he was in Longview the next no doubt. The next week I'm in Carthage ah....ah....in the ah....Brady aggravated kidnapping investigation, I don't remember that unless it's that ah....maybe had to do some more.....was that Brady.....no that wasn't that guys name from Arkansas, this was another case, I can't remember that one. I'll go.....(tape ends).....August I I must of got another lead on the Vick murder case because I I spent some timea day in Longview working on it, that could of been talking to an attorney or whatever. Ah....I'm back down to Carthage on this Brady ah....aggravated kidnapping investigation. I can't....that don't come to my mind yet. And I work on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case some more and on the Vick case some more that week. And ah.... I appear ah.....as a witness before the Gregg County Grand Jury on this ah....on Vick's ah....shooting this guy. And ah....trying to serve a..... I go on and leave the Grand Jury and go on to Tyler trying to serve a felony warrant ah....and I served it the next day in Longview. And

ah....ah....got a Grand Jury indictment . Take a little vacation in August. Ah....to Marshall attempting to arrest Rex Dubose on an oil field theft capias out of Panola County. Ah.....in Longview as a state witness in the Lane attempt capital murder case, spent two days there, we finally tried old Lane, Tater Chip Lane. Ah....on the 20th I'm in Dallas working on reports and conferred with Sergeant Wright ah.....ah.....about something. Took a few more days off. To Marshall assisting Marshall police in a Williams safe burglary, they.....old Johnny Williams got his safe broke into over at Marshall and Johnny's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Johnny Williams Ford?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Johnny's dead now, he ah....I tell you what, he had a lot of cash in that safe and ah.... I don't know what.....Johnny was a.....was ahe was a wheeler and dealer, he was ahe was too fast for anybody to keep up with. Johnny had him a girlfriend or two and one of 'em was working for him andand ah.....what prompted 'em to call me was ah.....Johnny hired a retired FBI agent friend of mine to.....he had retired and he was a special investigator and he had hired him andand he got over there and of course Bob liked to work with me andand ah....he got to police to call me. He said, 'Why don't ya'll call Glenn and get him to come over here and work on this'. And so ah.... I went over there and I could tell I wasn't sure that..... I wasn't really sure about what had happened over there to his safe. I didn't get interested in it. But ah.... I liked Johnny, he was raised and went to school with my daughter out here at Judson, he was a Longview boy. And this boy that had killed Mrs. Click had escaped jail in the meantime and ah..... I arrested him again on ah.....for jail escapee and ah.....that next week. And ah....so ah.... I guess James Wright is the captain then, I'm sure James made captain the first day of September 1986, because this is when David Byrnes comes to ah.....as sergeant and I go up and have awe have a

company meeting on the 4th day of September and Captain Wright and Sergeant Byrnes tells us about policy and procedure as it's going to be for them.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Big changes when James become?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, it was just a whole lot more laid back then it ever was and everybody could relax a little bit.

ROBERT NIEMAN: SWAT team done away with?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, SWAT team was kind of disbursed then and the boys had to go to work and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was ah.....did James just do away with it or did?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah..... I think ah.....it.....the SWAT team just never did get off the ground too far. They'd done a lot of training and a lot of going but they never did I think they decided they didn't need one that bad. You know you take by the time you get a man in Tyler and one in Sherman and one in Fort Worth and one in Gainesville together and.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Tyler.

GLENN ELLIOTT:and Paris, Texas ah....ah....well whatever the situation was, if it's not completed it's just about to you know by that time. It never was practical. Ah....I'm in Marshall assisting Harrison and the District Attorney and Attorney General's office in voter fraud investigation, that's on Friday. I worked Friday, Saturday over there on that and ah....carried the..... I remember we was ah.... it was....it was about absentee voting and we took all the people that were working in both sides on the absentee voting and ah.....we took handwriting specimens from all of them in those two days, Friday and Saturday and Sunday morning and I left ah.....and went to Austin. I had already prearranged that ah.....that they would ah....ah....handwriting would go to work on 'em Monday morning, so I had 'em down there and ah....and I spent the night in Waco,

probably with Bob Mitchell. Went on.....cause I left at six o'clock so I could be in ah.....went on to Austin and ah.....submitted my stuff to the lab and was back in Marshall that afternoon and worked on that for about a week. Ah....I'm in Harleton assisting Arkansas State Police on the Block murder investigation. Ah....still assisting Arkansas ah.....that's blacks instead of Block.....and ah.....worked in Kilgore and Tyler on the same case that week. I can't remember that case either but it had to be somebody from this area that they suspected. To Marshall and Shreveport, Louisiana continuing Williams safe burglary. Ah....so I must of got....we must of got a lead over at Shreveport and I went off over there, probably Stevens over there. We probably had lunch at Don's. And I worked in Hallsville and Kilgore on the same case. I'm back in Henderson on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case on the 24th of September. Ah....in Longview working on the same case. I...I..... I never could get that Kentucky Fried Chicken off my mind and any time anything come up on it well you know, I'd go on it, drop everything else. I'm in Greenwood, Louisiana the next week on a burglary investigation. To Paris, Texas assisting Bossier City, Louisiana in an investigation, I guess Frank had already quite by then, I don't know who was up at Paris, Eddie I guess, he's done.....he was gone somewhere. Ah....in Longview standing by for a court hearing on the Hudson case the first of October. I went into Dallas on the 2nd and ah....ah....talked to a Dallas police detective ah....Sparks, regarding the Morgan murder out here on Spring Hill Road. I guess homicide got some information up there at Dallas and I went up there and visited with them. Ah....in Longview working on the same case the next day, probably whatever lead I got. Back on the KFC case the following week and assisting the ATF officers in an arson investigation in Kilgore. Ah.... in Henderson and Marshall on the same case and Kilgore that week. So I must of got a pretty good....another pretty good lead on it. Kilgore and Henderson continuing the Kentucky Fried Chicken case the next week. Ah....Marshall and Carthage, to Marshall and Waskom

ah.....I'm in Longview assisting Gregg County searching for a fugitive escapee named Joe C. Perez. In Longview conferring with Gregg County District Attorney on upcoming Hudson murder case, they were getting ready to try him up here.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This Hudson, is it any relation to the Hudson printing people?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think so, no ah....ah....he liked to....he was a.....as I said, he was an Eastman employee and he....he played the book pretty good, he liked to.....there was quite a few bookies hung out, out there at thethey had a coffee shop out there at the bowling alley.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: You may be familiar it, that's the first time I was ever in it, when we worked this case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think I've been in it two or three times since I've been here, and I used to bowl a lot but

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. I worked ah.....again over there in OctoberI'm ah.....I'm working on the Kentucky Fried Chicken and then we're in court ah....that week onI'm on Sunday..... I don't know, I must of got a pretty good lead on that thing, I worked on a Sunday on the KFC. And ah.... I'm standing by in ah.....I'm probablymight of got thatone of those pistols or there ain't no telling what happened you know. Ah.....and then we're trying this Morris Finney for killing Hudson the next week. And ah....then ah.... I had to do some more work on the Vick case. And then we had a company meeting in Paris and ah.... and firearms ah.....for two days. And ah....back on the Finney case getting ready for trial. Ah.....the same thing the next week. To Marshall and Shreveport assisting in a theft investigation. Ah....back on the voter fraud in Harrison County with the.....and conferred with the District Attorney, we got our report back from Austin. And we.....it rained us out up at Paris obviously and we hadah....Max and I had to go to Greenville and ah.....and shoot

ah.....on the 30th. I think..... I remember we up to Paris and it just rained like the dickens up there and we couldn't shoot. And I'm back in Tyler and Henderson on the Kentucky Fried Chicken that week. To Marshall as a state witness in 71st District Court in the Woodkins capital murder, that's the case where the young butcher got killed over there that we talked about. And we thought the fireman was involved in it. And you know that fireman was a..... I don't know whether I mentioned it or not, but ah.....his name was Salistano and ah....it was a fireman and a guy that worked for the railroad that ah.....that.....and this is funny..... I mean it....it....you remember these things because things always come back to haunt people. But ah....Salistano and this ah....boy from the railroad and this victim were buddies. And they'd been....they smoked a little pot together all the time and we knew that. And ah....of course you know, well I was talking to Salistano and I'm trying.....you know, I said, 'You know I'm not concerned about it, I'm concerned but I'm not trying to make a case on you for smoking pot'. And they would never admit to smoking pot. And I noticed they arrested Salistano twice, I saw his name in the paper, he was still working for the Fire Department, for possession of marijuana once and something else again, just recently, I don't imagine he's working over there anymore. But that's been a long time ago and ah....he's still at it. Ah.... I'm in Marshall and ah....assisting Leon County Sheriff and Ranger Pannell in a murder investigation. And ah.... I come on back over here and ah....and I meet 'em over here and ah.....there is a.....and I go to Mt. Pleasant. And this is kind ofyou'll be.....this is.....this will interest you a little bit. The guy that currently owns the Reo Palm Isle, Carl Johnson, had loaned this guy in the tire business a million dollars and he and histhe bank that Carl's ah....on the board of directors up at Mt. Pleasant had loaned him another million. And he went into the tire business down at Waco and ah....was making a lot ofa killing. Carl was on the board and some more.....I'm sure some of the bank people were andand they was all driving cars that belonged to the tire company. And

this guy was a heck of a tire salesman. He had ah....three wives and ah....none of them knew that he was married to the others. And he was just busting around and ...and of course Carl is a suspect til today I guess, cause ah.....this guy was murdered, found under a bridge down there in central Texas. And Pannell and the Sheriff ah....ah.....came up here and they wasthey got some information out of bar talk up here that an old TV reporter had heard and ah.....and it was blown all out of proportion, that the Sheriff was involved, Bobby Weaver was the Sheriff at that time. And Bobby didn't even like Carl Johnson, wouldn't even go to the Reo. And ah....and that he and Carl were good friends and they had all this story going and.....but of course what the suspicious part of it was, Carl was the beneficiary on a million dollar insurance policy, because he had this loan on him and so was the bank up there....had an insurance policy on him. And of course they required him to take insurance in order to get this loan obviously. But it was ah.....it was pretty blatant. And Carl had been off with another old boy here, drunk a time or two and popped off about he wished he was dead you know. Cause they found out the old boy wasn't doing too good, he sold a lot of tires and made a lot of money but he was spending too much time with his woman folks. But anyway, he was murdered and ah....and they came up and I went on up to Mt. Pleasant and checked the bank records up there and got everything for them up there. And ah.....and I done somea lot of work on that thing for 'em and ah.... I tried to get 'em to present to a Grand Jury, but they never did, or a conspiracy level. But ah....it's still open.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was the victim's name?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't even remember. Ah...let's see if I wrote.....let's see if it's down there. No, I didn't write it....I've got it....I've got some reports on it somewhere. Ah....but I don't think this is good enough for us to get too much interested in.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was a.....cause I didn't work on it that much. We're back in court the next week still trying ah..... I guess winding up on Finney case. And then I had to go to ah..... I got called onto Jefferson to assist Panola County in a.....a murder had happened on the 5th and this is the 10th, Connor. And this is another murder where they found a guy that lived up in Marion County. Ah.....they found his car off in the river on the Panola County side of the river on Hwy. 59. Every.....everybody that would go to Panola County would dump bodies you know. And ah.....he had a Lincoln automobile, a pretty late model Lincoln automobile and ah.....and somebody reported it off in the river there and they called for a wrecker and got it out and got to messing around and found his body in the trunk, he'd been dead two or three days. And ah.... I worked on that thing for a good while. Ah.....then ah.... I arrested a guy during this time forin Panola County for a murder in Gregg County. But we didn't get a good lead on this case here for some time. Ah....and ah....this boy....we found out that the suspect tried to buy some tires in Marshall, Texas onand claimed this guy was his Uncle. And ah....so we arrested three guys eventually for killing Connor and ah.....and got a confession from 'em and ah....and verified the fact that he tried to buy tires and got him identified. And....and ah....but we had to work on that thing a whole lot. I'm all.....I'm on it all this next week. This is a case that ah....that ah.....this young deputy told me.....it was a compliment to me ah..... hehe told ah....he told his Sheriff, he said, 'I'm sure glad I didn't have to work with Mr. Elliott when he was young'. And he was the one that his wife wrote that letter for me, he bought one of those pictures you know and he told me, said that ah....that ah.....that the favorite saying that ah....that he always told her that he said that I told him.....we was working on this case and he had justhe had just got into investigative work then and he said I told him, said I could solve more cases spinning my wheels than I could setting on my ass in an office somewhere. And we was....we was just.....we was from Lone Star, Avenger and had to go over to

Louisiana and ah....we was all over the country and ah.....making progress on it you know. In fact we passed one of the suspects house and he recognized me and he called his lawyer and his lawyer called me and said, 'That boy wants to tell his part of that'. And I'd never talked to him. Passed his house, he saw me go by his house and recognized me and ah....called Vernon Solomon and ah....and I went ahead and talked to him and he told his part of it. But that took a good little bit. And ah... I'm in ah.....I'm in Jefferson as a witness before the Marion County Grand Jury in this case that month. And ah....so it started on the 8th and we get 'em indicted on the 25th, so that's pretty fast. Ah....Marshall police ah....ah....had an extortion....another extortion over there and I just happened to be going through Marshall and ah.....and there is a guy had called ah....Johnny Williams again was involved in this and demanded ah....so much money or he was going to blow up his business. And ah.....so they got in a real big hurry over there and they was fixing to send a young police officer out there and I'm in..... I'm down there with 'em and they was fixing to send him out there where this guy was supposed to be and he didn't.....and Johnny was running the thing. And he was demanding this and demanding that and he was there and he said, 'You better get him on down there cause it's fixing.....', I said, 'No that boy's not going out there til we get walkie-talkies out here for him to carry with him', I said, 'We're not sending him out there by himself, I don't give a damn if the guy does get away you know'. And we waited and got a walkie-talkie and he got in there and the guyJohnny drops in down there in his new car and drops the money off behind the old ah.....the ah....Gibson Discount Store had just closed over there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: In Marshall?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. The guy wanted it dropped behind.....this was in '86..... I imagined they closed a bunch of them back then you know and these closed here I think about then. And ah....they ah....we had the guy there with a walkie-talkie andand hid and ah.....Johnny drives

through there and drops the money offdrops a bag that's ah.....right out the.....looks like it might be money and the old boy comes and picks it up and this policeman arrests him and he calls us and we get in there and it was all over you know. But ah.... I wasn't going to send him in there without some communications you know, it wasn't.....wasn't that important. And ah....I'm back in Dallas on the 1st of December and ah....for a company meeting andand ah....submitting evidence to the lab up there. And I'm..... I spent some time in Carthage that next week tying that case up. And then I help Leon County again on this.... McCollum was this guy's name, the tire man, Mc capital C O L L U M, McCollum. Ah.....I'm back in Mt. Pleasant again checking I guess....back up there checking bank records. I'm trying to help Leon County cause ah.....I.....I thought it lay up here you know, I still think it did, I think we could of.....if we could of got a little bit better communication between us or something, that we could of probably solved that thing. Ah...I'm helping Wood County the next week in an oil field theft investigation, recovered some oil field property valued at \$4,500.00. I'm in Henderson the next day on the same thing. And I'm in Marshall ah....the next day on this.....back on this murder case for two days. In Longview to serve Grand Jury subpoenas for a Ranger in Brady on a theft case. And ah....we're in to the last of December, in Marshall had a court hearing in a case and went on to Shreveport to assist in the Martex theft investigation. Kilgore assisting Titus County in a murder investigation. And ah....that knocks out '86. You want to try to go through this last six months?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, let's do it next week if you don't care.

GLENN ELLIOTT: All right, that'll be fine. Yep, we got six more months and the Ranger hung his badge up.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Then we go to Chapter IV.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, the 5th day of December 1995. And Glenn tonight we finish up I guess your career. We're going to go up into the mid part of 1987 when you take off the badge.

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's right, August of '87, that would be it, that's the last day I worked. And ah....unless I can find those '66 reports or '67, which was ah....'65?

ROBERT NIEMAN: '66.

GLENN ELLIOTT: '66, is that the only one we lack?

ROBERT NIEMAN: '66 and I think we may have missed '72 or '73.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, well I....I'm aI give up on those. Well we're in the first part of '87 and ah...of course ah....in '86 there I was working on this murder case down in Panola County where these three guys had kidnapped this man up at Lake O' Pines and murdered him and....and ran him off in the river with his car down there in Panola County. And of course that's where the....until you find out different you know, you got....the venue lays wherever the vehicle....wherever the body is found you know. And if you can prove he wasn't there and ah....but ah....we went ahead and ah....you can try him there. But they had ah....they killed him down there in Panola County as I remember, so we went ahead and tried 'em down there. Ah...I'm in Garland ah....of course for monthly reports, remained overnight the first part of January in '87. Ah....had to....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is headquarters by now out there where it's at now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, it's in Garland, it's been in Garland a long time. Ah....let's see, we....the headquarters only moved twice.

ROBERT NIEMAN: It used to be downtown in that little old wood....that you got the duplicate of.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, yeah down....and then they moved out on ah....ah....Northwest Highway ah....when they reorganized and ah....that was in Garland then, but it was over there next to the Garland Airport. It's on further up Inter....635, where 635 is now. And ah....it's over there by the....that's where we had headquarters when I went on the Rangers and then they built the ah....of course the new building out there where it's at now. But ah...our....our headquarters....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Beltway and I-30.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Beltline, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Beltline and I-30.

GLENN ELLIOTT: We were ah....it's always been in Garland since I was a Ranger. Ah...I had to attend ah...defensive driving school in Dallas on the 6th day of January and ah....so we had our company meeting on the 5th. So ah....we had to take a defensive driving course every five years and all DPS employees still do. And I...I've had it once since I retired, because it's....I don't have to pay and go up there and take it with the Rangers and you get 10% deduction in your insurance you know and ah...and it's good to have one anyway. Ah....I get out of ah....come back into Longview on the 7th and assist Leon County in a murder investigation, and I'm sure that's that investigation where ah... I told you that ah...owner of the Reo Palm Isle, the current owner, had loaned all this money to a guy. And I helped 'em again ah....well I worked on it for about three days that week. Ah...I had some guys that was telling me something about it but ah...they....they was wanting to talk and...and not have to testify you know and that's kind of tough. And I think I told you, I tried to get them to ah...get an investigative Grand Jury going down there but they never could get the DA to do it. And I'm back on the thing....the same thing the following week, helping Leon County in the McCollum murder case. And ah....I get over to Marshall and Martex had a theft the same week. Ah....Kilgore and Henderson ah....I spent some time on the Kentucky Fried

Chicken that week. I'm in Texarkana on the 19th ah...ah....that's the first time that ah....I guess that ah....ah....David called me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: David?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Byrnes, he was the sergeant then and ah....he called me one Monday afternoon and ah....told me that he wanted to....needed some help and ah....Max was out of pocket on vacation or out of state or out somewhere and Brantley didn't feel like working that day, he had called him. And I never will forget, David said, 'I need somebody to do some work'. And I said, 'Well you found him'. And ah...I went to ah....Texarkana and there was a narcotic officer up there that had been doing a heck of a good job and he got ah....too tight with his informant and got to worrying about him. And he just about.... he stressed out it what happened to him and they thought he was going to kill himself. And he'd been taking drugs too and trying to stay awake, and this happened sometimes, it's not unusual. But this is what....the Chief of Police up at Texarkana had....he had been spending some government money and he wouldn't bring his reports in andand....and wouldn't file like he should and he had just got all messed up with his whole deal. He made a lot of good cases. So I get up there and ah....and we had talked to this....one of the informants and ah....ah....for some reason or other, I don't know what the 19th day of ah....January....can't be a holiday, but ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Wouldn't that be around President's Day?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It may be, cause I know I must of been off, cause I show going to work at three o'clock that day and quitting at midnight, but that could of been just because of....of the 40 hours week you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: 40 hour week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: But I know it was in the afternoon when I went to Texarkana and ah....cause I know David called me after lunch. And I remember I had my daddy over at the house, so it must of been a holiday.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That's around President's day.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I had my daddy and....and....setting out in the back yard and Catherine called and told me I was wanted on the telephone and I went in and it was David. So I got....I said....I told him to tell 'em I'd be up there in a couple of hours and I carried daddy back to the rest home and got dressed and drove to Texarkana. And I got up there and ah....before five o'clock I know and ah...and I talked with the Chief and we worked til midnight and I spent the night and worked til the next day and the next day. Ah....finally ah....I got out there and it come time to interview this old boy and he was at home. And ah...he'd been drinking a lot and some of them had talked to him on the phone and he was pretty.... he...he was kind of way stressed out. And ah....so I told 'em I said, 'Well I'm going to go out there and talk to old John'....or whatever his name was. Well they wanted to send two officers with me and I said, 'No I don't want anybody to go with me'. I said, 'You know this is a problem with yawl's department and him', and I said, 'You called me to investigate it you know and I'm going to do it, but I don't want....I don't want any of your people out there'. Well they thought he was going to hurt me you know. I said, 'No he's not going to hurt me'. And I called him on the telephone and told him who I was and I said, 'I need to talk to you', and 'Fix some coffee and I'll be out there in a little bit'. and I just....he told me how to get to his house, of course I already....they'd already told me. And I drove out there and had a....he met me at the door nearly crying. And he...he knew me, I knew him casually, but....and he said, 'Mr. Elliott I'm in such bad shape', he said, 'I just...', he said, 'I just don't know what to do with my life'. He said, 'I thought about taking my own life a time or two'. And he said, 'I just don't know what to do'. And I

said, 'Man, you know', I said, 'All you've got to do as far as I'm concerned right now', I said, 'The only thing you're doing wrong is that you're not...you're behind in your reports', and I said, 'You hadn't made an account for undercover money that you spent last month'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was this a Ranger?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No this was a narcotic....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh okay, okay, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT:officer for the City of Texarkana.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: He was a city officer. And I said, 'You're using some government money on a grant', and I said, 'They've got to account for it' and I said, 'And if you don't have records then you're in trouble, if you've got records where you spent all that money then get the damn things out here and get 'em filled out and let's get 'em downtown where they belong, and then we...then you can go down and resign any time you want to, or try to talk the Chief into letting you go back on patrol or whatever you want to do'. But I said, 'Right now the only violation of the law you're doing you...you've not, you're not accounting for the money you've spent for narcotics and that's what you've got to do'. And he set down there and I drank about three cups of coffee and he had all his records, he just hadn't got 'em in yet. And he made 'em out and I carried 'em in for him. And I said, 'I want you down there in the morning now and make up your mind between now and eight o'clock in the morning whether you want to submit your resignation to the Chief or what you're going to do'. I said, 'We've got to resolve this thing'. I said, 'You can't set out here at the house and they're not going to keep you on the payroll', and I said, 'You either got to quit or get fired one of the two and let's do it right now and so you can go on with your life'. I said, 'You're not going back into narcotics, you're not physically or mentally capable of going back into narcotics, and you

know it and I know it and the Chief's going to know it when he talks to you'. And that resolved the thing.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What did he do?

GLENN ELLIOTT: He went down there the next morning and turned in his ah...stuff and resigned. And ah...and that was just....he....he just....he was just....he was just....well I'm talking about....well I guess that's the first policeman I had ever seen that was just....I mean completely stressed out. He was just....and he'd been making some good cases too, been making some good narcotic cases. It wasn't....wasn't a crooked deal, he wasn't planting stuff on anybody, he just....by George he got to drinking and taking dope and he just couldn't handle it. And ah....and a lot of folks can't you know. And so I spent ah... three days up there on that and got it all worked out. And the last part I'm ah....well I got to go back up to Texarkana again that ah....I don't know what....I probably carried my report back up there on the 27th to the Chief is probably what I did, cause I made another trip up there the following week. And I'm back on that McCollum murder for Leon County and ah....did some more work on it for those boys down there. And I'm back on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case on the 29th.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What are you doing on it by now?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh probably ah....any lead I get you know, we're at the point now that you don't get out and try to hustle leads, but you'll get somebody that will call in, or some officer will say 'Well I talked to old so and so and he talked to so and so and said that so and so knew something you know'. Well I'd go look him up and see...try to run it down you know and see if there's anything ah....new happening on it. I'm back on it again the following week. Ah....then I got to go to Carthage on a Connor murder investigation on ah....the 3rd, that was that murder up at ah....so I still had a little to do on it, the one that they took out of Marion County. Ah....I'm in

Dallas ah....assisting Dallas County ah....in a child custody investigation....no, in Longview assisting Dallas County ah...somebody probably left Dallas County with a child and the court ordered 'em not to do it. That's unusual, I don't know...I just spent one....no, I spent two days on that. Ah...but you know, if a Dallas officer calls you and you're not too busy you want to help him, cause you know they've helped me a many a time up there. I'm in Marshall having a conference with the District Attorney ah...ah....on a....on getting ready to try the Kirkendal murder case over there and we had to loc....help 'em locate some witnesses. Kirkendal was the boy that got killed at the....you know I told you, where the polygraph operator told us that somebody else did it but they found out that they didn't have anything to do with it. Ah....we're into February of course and ah....ah....first on....I'm helping Caddo Parish ah....ah....Louisiana on a theft investigation and I go to Overton the next day helping on the same case. Ah....Longview and Harrison County had a Kenworth truck place was burglarized on the night of the 9th of February of '87 and they got a lot of parts out of it and ah...they called and asked if I could help 'em on it a little bit. And we found where the guy had parked the truck back in behind Kenworth there and ah....come up with some pretty good evidence on it. Seemed like we cleared that thing but I'm not sure, I can't remember now.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Are you ah...getting by this point, knowing that you've only got a little time left, to start....well I don't mean culling cases, but knowing there's no point in.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, no I ah....I never did get to that point.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Never did, no I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Knowing you're not going to finish 'em?

GLENN ELLIOTT: No I...no huh uh. No I I didn't do that. I had probablyI probably hadn't even made up my mind to retire at this time. I'm just kind of funny that away. I I was probably thinking about it, but I hadn't..... I hadn't made up my mind. I'd just....but II would of never..... I worked I worked criminal cases until the day before I retired and I would of taken another one if an officer had called me and said, 'Glenn I got a murder and I need some help', well I'd of been down there and knowing I was going to quit the next day.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah, yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Because ah.... I might could of done something that day, I was getting paid you know to work that day, so let's go do it. Ah.... I work on this McCollum case again on the 17th of February and the 18th and this thing could of been solved, I I just felt like it could of been solved and I was disappointed we didn't. Ah.... I'm helpingback in Marshall helping Caddo Parish, Louisiana on a theft investigation, probably that one ah.....ah.....and then I go to Carthage on this Kenworth burglary investigation, I think we recovered some of the parts down there at a trucking outfit. I'm back in Longview on the Kenworth burglary the next day. Marshall and Shreveport the following day, Henderson the following. Ah.... Iwe.....at this time we're having to update all of our pending cases, this is a new report system that we had out and it took a lot more time for reporting. And this is.....things like this probably prompted me toto retire sooner. Ah.... I never had to update a offense report or a case report or anything and we had newand ah.....and Mr. Adams brought that in with him ah.....from the FBI and there's nothing wrong with it. But you know, if you getif you spending half your time making out reports well what you.....you know you're wasting a lot of your damn time.

ROBERT NIEMAN: G.W. liked reports didn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, G.W., he.....he'd always change 'em and ah.....and making recommendations. And G.W. would draw up for the Senior Ranger Captain, he drew up most of the changes in our reports before ah.....ah.....Adams.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Who's the Senior now, is Clint still there? No, Clint's gone isn't he?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....yeah Clint's ah.....gone ah....it's going to be ah.....well Bill Wilson is gone, he's....he's been there and he died.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lefty Block?

GLENN ELLIOTT: So Lefty's in there now, Bill died and ah.....ah....back when I got this new car here last year in these reports well I had a little ah.....this is the first time this had happened and I never.....I never was bad aboutBill Wilson wanted the Rangers to have the best cars and he saw to it. If....if.....and the working Rangers and he didn't think the Captains ought to havehe wouldn't think about letting the captain give me his old car and the captain take a new one.....Bill Wilson. And if there was a Plymouth or a Ford down there he'd give the working Ranger the Ford and let the.....well Lefty comes in right before I get mythe last car I got and they had Ford's. And ah.....but G.W., there's a Ford down there and he wanted it and ah.....and Lefty let him have it. So when I went and got my car well I knew the Ford was down there, I knew it was supposed to..... I was supposed to have got it. But ah.... I said something to Lefty about it and he said, 'Well you need to go talk to your captain about that'. And I said, 'No I'm talking to the only captain I need to talk to about that'. I said.....you know, I said, 'All you got to do is tell me Lefty that you changed the policy since Wilson left'. And I said, 'That should of been your answer to me'. Of course Iyou know, I was always a little vocal.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is Block still alive?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. And ah..... I understand his health's not good though.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did Maurice succeed him?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....yeah, uh hum, yeah. Ah.....let's see, in Februarywe're into February now and I'm in 79th District Court on a change of venue hearing in the Woodkins capital murder case where they was trying to get a change of venue in it. Woodkins was the one that ah.....one of the ones that killed that Kirkendal boy. I'm in Longview assisting Charlotte County, Florida in the Flannagan extradition investigation ah.... I worked on that for two or three days. And then I go to Tyler and run an old boy on polygraph on the McCollum murder case ah.....that had given me a little information that I thought wasn't....might not be right. Ah.....in Kilgore and Henderson continuing the Kentucky Fried Chicken on the 9th of March. Ah....provide security for public officials ah....on the 10th, that had to be the Governor. The 11th I'm assisting Mansfield, Louisiana in a theft investigation in Panola County. Attend a company meeting in Orr City on the 12th for March. Ah....ah.....in Longview assisting Ector County in a 3-11-87 capital murder investigation. I think this Ector County case was one ah....Bobby I don't know, you was in the trucking business, but there was a trucker had killed a.....seemed like it was two women out there and threw 'em out on the side of the road.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What town is Ector County?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah.....Odessa.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Okay.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And ah.....they had some pretty good information on him. And I spent a lot of time around these truck stops here and in Greenwood, Louisiana and trying to help ah....ah.....help them work that murder case out there. And ah.....ah.....so I don't ah.... I think that's what that was. I'm in Austin on the 23rd of March conferring with Senior Captain Ranger Block regarding policy and procedure, I probably went down there to be at somebody's retirement party

or funeral, cause I don't.... I would not go to Austin just to confer with Block you know, and I don't have any other reason for being down there probably. That may have been Bill Wilson's funeral, seemed like Bill died about then. And ah....I'm back in Longview assisting McCollough County ah....on that ah....murder. Hughes Spring and Marshall the same. Tyler assisting ah....Ector County ah....on that murder investigation. Ah....we worked on that quite a bit. And ah....back the next....the following week I'm in Longview assisting Ector County in that....Amos was this....one of these women's name. Ah....Henderson and Tatum the same thing. Ah....ah....April, Dallas for a company meeting. Continuing the Kenworth burglary investigation and seemed like we recovered a short block up there. I'm in Beckville, Marshall and Carthage in one day there and I tell you what I was doing, they ah....ah....we were interviewing truck drivers that we knew were in that area at the time all this happened to see what they may have seen or didn't see, or heard or didn't hear you know. And ah....there was a trucking outfit down here at Beckville, old boy had been in the trucking business a long and he's got several pretty good trucks.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He's running for a bunch of reefers I think.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Refrigerated trailers.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And ah....he ah....he hauls chickens out of the Carthage area, frozen chickens.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Down there in the south part of....or south part of Beckville I think it is.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum. And we'd go interview those people about that and you had a truck in Odessa was at a truck stop at a certain time of day out there and I need to find out who the driver was and so forth. And ah....ah....we're in the 6th of April ah....Harrison County on the Williams safe burglary, that's ah....you know I told you Johnny Williams' safe was burglarized

there earlier and we've got another lead on it some way or other. And then I'm back on this Ector County case the next day and the next day. In Mt. Pleasant I'm checking a truck stop up there at ah....on Interstate 30 in Mt. Pleasant that ah....oh, what's the name of that little old community west of Mt. Pleasant up there, there's a truck stop out there, big one you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh yeah ah.....Winfield.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Winfield.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Truck stop there.

ROBERT NIEMAN:oh I've stopped at that truck stop a dozen times but I can't think of the name of it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: They run all together after awhile on you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well, that's kind of the way these are. Ah....ah.... I worked on that for Ector County though cause we thought we had.....they thought we had a chance and of course you know, somebody call me and ask me to do something, I'd do just what I'd want them to do for me. And ah....I'm in ah....in 124th District Court in the Vick assault case, that was the police officer that, that guy got down out here and he finally pled guilty. Ah....in Longview attempting to locate possible double murder reported to have occurred in 1984, somebody had reportedtold somebody that they had committedkilled two people and we couldn't find that. I'm in Mt. Enterprise on the 15th in the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. Ah....I'm back assisting McCollough County on a theft investigation, served five subpoenas for bank records. Ah.....to Marshall as a state witness in District Court on the 20th in the Hayes questionable death hearing. Ah....to McKinney area assisting Leon County in the McCollum murder investigation, I don't know what I did up in

McKinney, but probably had to run one of these boys down. Stayed in McKinney, worked up there a couple of days. I'm back in Kilgore on the Kentucky Fried Chicken case for two days that week. Ah....the last week in April in Palestine assisting Leon County in the McCollum murder investigation. Longview the same. Paris for a company meeting and firearms instruction for two days. Ah....first of May in Marshall area with Sergeant Byrnes continuing assistance to Leon County in the McCollum murder investigation. In Longview working on reports. The Gregg County District Attorney regarding ah....upcoming Click murder trial, we hadn't tried that boy for killing ah....Mrs. Click over there. In Marshall ah....continuing Martex theft investigation for two days. Carthage on the Connor murder. Ah....Longview continuing.....the DA wanted something else done, witnesses located in the Click murder, so I guess we're getting ready to try it pretty quick. Longview working on reports in the Kentucky Fried Chicken case. Fort Worth area continuing Kenworth burglary investigation. Ah....we recovered a short block that was taken out of there and some more stuff at one time, I guess that was it. To Henderson ah....ah....back on the ah....KFC, conferred with the Rusk County District Attorney, that would be the 1st and I was probably by that time trying to get him to do something you know for the Grand Jury, cause we kept after him pretty good. And I'm back assist.....work on that Leon County murder another day that week. Ah....and the following week the same, I'm back on it the first two days. I'm back in Dallas on the Kenworth burglary, remained overnight. Ah.....to McKinney out of Dallas on this Kenworth case. I'm in Marshall the next two days on the same case. (side of tape ends).....week in 123rd District Court in the Clark murder trial, I don't even remember which Clark.....what case that is. Kilgore and Henderson this ah.....LongviewLongview area assisting local officers in serving drug evidentiary search warrant. Obviously we had tosomebody needed a little help on a search warrant so I did. I didn'tI'd like.....I think I told you, I liked it for somebody else to work drugs,

I never did care about working drugs, I was glad somebody was though. I'm back in Tyler on this Leon County McCollum murder case in June. And ah.....ah.....I have to go back to Texarkana in June ah....on this internal investigation of the Texarkana police narcotic officer, I imagine there was some kind of hearing they was having down there on that then, because we pretty well had it resolved. Ah....in Henderson and Nacogdoches continuing Gregg County Kentucky Fried Chicken case. Ah....Carthage and Logansport, Louisiana assisting Panola County in the Hutchison aggravated kidnapping investigation. Marshall on the same case. Ah....ah.....in 188th District Court as a state witness in the 6-27-85 Click murder case, postponed until June 22nd. Kilgore area locating and interviewing witnesses in the Click case. Tatum same as above. Took off two days that week with time that I had worked too much for. Ah....we triedah.....last day....last week in June we tried the Click murder case and here in Longview and took ah.....one, two, three, four days to do that. I'm back in Marshall on that Kenworth ah.....burglary investigation the last day of that week. I attended the East Texas Peace Officers conference ah....in Longview ah....the next week, the last week in June. In July in Dallas, a company meeting first of July. Ah...James Wright was captain of course. Tatum, Easton assisting Panola County in a perjury investigation. Ah...Longview updating reports, that was another day all day you know, I'd spend....cause somebody in Austin thought I ought to send something down there for them to justify their job I guess. Kilgore, Overton area assisting Texas A & M Extension office in a possible theft, they'd lost some equipment over at the A & M Extension office. Of course most of the time if a state agency loses something they like....they like for a state officer to work on it as well as a local officer you know. Ah....Longview area continuing Harrison County Williams burglary investigation, Marshall the same, the same as above. In Longview area assisting New York State police in a rape investigation, I don't remember that. Ah....I'm back on it the next Monday though and ah....and Tuesday. Ah....I'm in Longview

having a conference with the District Attorney in the Hudson murder trial set for 7-20. Henderson and Jacksonville attempt to locate witnesses in the Hudson murder case for trial. Longview as a witness....so they tried it the next week on the 20th, spent two days in court on it. To Marshall as a witness in the Martex theft case, so I guess we made.....worked on that Martex, I don't remember what that was either. And I left there and went on to Carthage and ah....and ah....on a kidnapping investigation. Ah....Longview as a witness in the Hudson murder trial, two more days. Paris and Bonham continuing Vaughn kidnapping, I imagine ah.....I don't know what....why I had to go....I had to go to Paris and probably went on to Bonham just for the heck of it. Ah....in Dallas working on reports and correspondence and ah...and conferring with Chief Wright...Captain Wright. I imagine that's when I probably made up my mind to retire and went up there and wrote my letter, about the last of July. I think they wanted us to give 'em a month's notice. I was still helping New York State police on a sexual investigation....a rape investigation. Ah....I'm ah....working Kilgore some more on the Kentucky Fried Chicken that week. I'm back work....helped New York State police ah....again, two more days. So we're getting into August now and ah....that's my last month. I'm in Bossier City, Louisiana assisting TDC in a search for an escapee, Phillip Hutchison and David Lambert and arrested Lambert with the Louisiana officers over there that day. It was two guys that broke out of ah...ah...the penitentiary. Ah....on the 4th of August I'm in Marshall assisting ah....ah...Marshall in the Davis attempt capital murder investigation. Assist in the arrest of suspect the same day. Ah...I worked on it again the next day, in Dallas on the same the following day. Back in Marshall on the same case. See that's a....that's two weeks before I quit. I've done lost some reports here ah...ah...must be laying around somewhere. I work on this Davis capitalattempt capital murder investigation for two days there. I'm in the Paris area on the 11th on the Williams safe burglary investigation. I'm in Tyler on the 12th on the Davis attempt capital murder case out

of Harrison County. I'm in Marshall on the 13th to the Grand Jury as a witness in the same case. So ah....I'm down to the 15th and I run out of reports. I....that's what....I don't think....that's a....that's a....that's some for '86.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well next week.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: But what happened was....well let's....we've only got another ah...we got two more weeks there. I'll have to find them, I don't know what happened to those.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Do you remember your last case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: That's probably it right there. I have an idea that....I don't remember opening another case after this Davis ah...ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well next week is ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: But you see ah....see this is getting....I knew I was going...I'd already written my letter then, we had to write a letter thirty days in advance.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well next week, well as the...one of the news shows says, we'll ask the big question, why did you retire. And we'll do that next week.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Okay, well I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah....a couple of things I want to go back here into your career on, to kind fill in. Do you want to put...we'll talk about whether we want to put it in the book or not, but on the tape, you applied for the U.S. Marshall. And I think we've talked about this, but why did you want to be a Marshall? This was back in what, the '70's when you applied for the U.S. Marshallship?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well it was when ah...Reagan was elected President.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Would of been about 1980.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Ah....why did I want to be a Marshall?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did you want to leave the Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah...I'll tell you what ah....well I don't know why. I tell you why I wanted to be a Marshall, I'd already looked into my retirement and I can draw enough retirement at that time, with my time, and the Marshall's job is a hell of a paying job Bobby. Ah...the guys can live just about on their expense account if they work....if they're working hands and like to hittheir per diem is something you know, like \$75.00 a day to our \$35.00 at that time, whatever it was. And of course I'm....you know I'm the kind of guy that if I'd of been a Marshall I'd of been...I'd of been a Marshall, I'd of been a working Marshall, I wouldn't of been setting there behind the desk telling somebody else to go do something, I'd been going and seeing that it was done. And that was the main reason I wanted to be a Marshall. It wasn't that....nothing other than the money. It was a good paying job and I could of saved every penny that I made, I already had it figured out. I could live on my retirement and my per diem and ah...I could of saved ah....you know, \$70,000.00 a year and it was a four yearyou know you pretty well got a synch having it for four years and most of the time eight at least you know. President....very few one term Presidents. There's probably going to be a bunch of them for awhile until these things straighten out, but there wasn't then you know. And ah...so ah...I don't know, I guess I was already thinking at that time too about changing directions ah....ah....in my life maybe a little bit. Ah....but I have an idea that the money was the main thing. Because I never had made any money, and there was a good chance to make some you know, boy and save it you know. And I...I'm conservative as you well know and ah....ah....this is the reason I wanted to be a Marshall. It wasn't the idea...it was just like....I didn't have any big dreams of being a United States Marshall. There wasn't anything any higher than a Texas Ranger as far as I was concerned. But I could....I could see the point here where I could get in there and work four years or maybe eight years and set back and....and enjoy

myself and have something to enjoy it with you know. And that's the reason I wanted to be a Marshall. And no, I don't particularly care about putting it in the book, because that's....I didn't get it you know and who wants to.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well yeah and then...you won't say it but I will you know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Clint yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Clint Peoples showed his pettiness.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. Yeah Clint....oh I'd of got that job, I'm going to tell you something, I'd of got that job if it hadn't been for Clint. And ah....but I'm not that....I'm not bitter about it cause I....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I know you're not bitter about it, I just...like I said, it just showed Clint's pettiness.

GLENN ELLIOTT: I ah....I didn't show any ill feelings toward Clint, I never...Clint was never one of my favorite people anyway although he offered me a job one time as you well know, and I appreciated that. And he would have, but that was Jim Riddle see, Jim was his sergeant and Jim had influenced him in....in my direction you know. And I knew that, Jim didn't tell me that, but I knew it because ah...ah...I knew that Clint....you know I was nice to him and polite to him and...and ah....and would of made him a hand if I'd of got to work for him. Cause it wouldn't of bothered me working for him at all.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we're going to talk about....before we wrap all this up ah....I do want to talk about some people that had a big influence on your life, such as Max Womack and Red Arnold and Bob Mitchell, Jay Banks ah....Lewis Rigler and some others.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well Jay...see of course.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jim Riddles.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Max and...you know Max and I are close like brothers and ah...like he's told you. And ah...of course Max has influenced me just like a brother you know, I mean I like to do things with Max and for him you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we'll get into that. And Lloyd Webb I want to cover.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh listen, I want to say something good about Lloyd Webb ah....cause he taught me how to be a police officer.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And your dad.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well my dad taught me how to work you know and to fear God and respect my elders, that's what my daddy taught me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And maybe it wasn't ah...this is just me maybe more than anything, but I've kind of taken a liking to old Louie Tillman, we'll talk about him a little.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well all right, we'll get into that, we'll get into that, yeah that's good, that's real good. And I'll try to find these last two weeks. I thought they was in there. See I didn't go through these, I've been going through 'em and writing down you know and ah....what was in there and ah...and trying to read that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: This is Tuesday, November 12, 1995. And Glenn we started this back in February of this year and we're getting near the end of theend of the road. Ah...we lacked about two weeks....

GLENN ELLIOTT: It's moved on hasn't it.

ROBERT NIEMAN:we lack about two weeks before we had.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Before you retire.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....yeah ah.... I had left these reports at home ah....the other dayor laid 'em somewhere and misplaced 'em. Anyway, I work in....I'm still working on this ah....Panola County case where this guy was kidnapped and murdered from up in Marion County and I work on it three days that week. And then ah....the sergeant had called me and told me that I had some ah.....comp time I needed to take off and ah.....so I took off a couple of days of comp time. I guess I'd made out some cards, I didn't think I ever did, I didn't like to take....but I guess what I'd done is I had to on some assignment. We had ah.....and then I worked another case there in the ah.....ah....in August ah....that I forgot to talk about ah.....there was a Highway Patrolman named Davis over at ah.....Marshall had stopped a couple of guys out of Tennessee ah....and was hauling marijuana and ah....they got ah....they jumped him and knocked him down and he shot one of them. And while he was wrestling with the guy he shot the other one ran and jumped in the car and drove off. And ah.....and he had..... I think he shot the tire off of the car or something, I forget what, anyway it was.....this is happening during the night and we ah....Ronnie....Ronnie was here then of course.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ronny Griffith?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah....so we got ah...well I went on to Marshall, I called Ronnie.....they called me and I called Ronnie and ah....so ah....of course I beat him over there. And ah....he went ahead and shaved and put his necktie on and ah....but I knew....they'd told me an officer was ah....and I didn't explain it to Ronnie just....I guess....or he didn't take itbut I knew an officer had been involved in a shooting andand.....and he was bruised up pretty good andand had one on the ground and one in the hospital, so I hooked 'em on over there. And ah....and then Ronnie got there pretty soon....less than you know thirty minutes after I did I guess. And we ah....this is oh one or two o'clock in the morning and I never will forget old Ronnie asked me said....and we'd been pretty busy, we'd been doing something all the time and he said, 'Is it always

that busy down here'. And I said, 'No, sometimes it's busier'. But anyway, we got over there and went to the hospital and talked to the guy there in the hospital and he told me who the other one was and he hadn't told anybody. And ah...Ronnie was out talking with the Highway Patrolman and ah....and of course we had a lot of help out there and ah....and daylight came and ah....so I called.... we....we'd run everything out over there pretty good, had some dogs out there and they couldn't find him. And ah....there was some....we got some information that he had.....a truck driver had picked him up from ah....somebody I'd....somebody had volunteered this information that they saw a truck driver stop and get somebody. And ah.....so I called in on the radio and asked the city to check the motels and ah....and they did and ah.....he was at one of the motels. And he had made about three or four long distance calls to Tennessee and he had ah....we thought he'd flushed the dope down the commode, there was a lot of trash in the commode, but he'd got a lot of trash on him cause he had run through the bushes. And....and ah...but before we found him there was a crew that worked for the ah....oh I guess they worked out of the Sheriff's office ah....they were all ah....probation and....or something, part of their probationary ah....duties was to help clean up the highways. And the Sheriff had a deputy out there with a crew and they found this marijuana and there was several pounds in a....in a bag where he had thrown it out on the side of the road. And he threw it right next to wherea marked area where he could come back and get it. And ah....so ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Was you able to prove it was his?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah....well let's see, I believe we got some of his fingerprints off of the plastic ah....that's ah....as I remember it now. But anyway, we executed the arrest on him and ah....got that thing straightened out and that was all....a pretty good job. And we worked on that

several days. So that was.....that was just.....that was the last case that I worked on was that ah....ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what was the people's names in it, we need.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: I'll have to go back and look and Iand Ronnie probably made those reports himself, cause I I think I'm smart enough tothat.....cause I I told him, I said, 'You interview the fella.....I'll see Davis'. He's a narcotic officer now stationed here in Longview, and ah.... 'I'll find out

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we need to go back, Ronny Griffith was ah....from up here in New Boston, he was raised.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He became a Highway Patrolman and was over at Kilgore, when he become a Ranger he went up to Amarillo and was stationed up there several years and then he came down to Dallas, what a year or so ah....before he came over here and then of course he came over here and became your replacement.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. We had our.....my retirement party on August the 26th I'm sure, because I I show being in Marshall that day and ah....attending a company meeting and discussing Ranger policy and procedure with Captain Wright, Sergeant Byrnes and Colonel Gossett and....and they.....that was the day we had our....we had to have a meeting at the DPS office out there. Because at this time DPS still had a policy that if you had a company meeting you had to have it at a State facility. And you know, that's silly because we could of had it just a easily out at Rusty's ranch because that's where.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well where was the retirement party?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It was out at Rusty Howell's ranch, just down below the Josie place there on the opposite side of the road. Going past Joe....ah.....Josie's.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Martha Josie's?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, and it's before you get to where Mattie used to live, she lived further on down than where Josie's live now. Is that the same place you've been?

ROBERT NIEMAN: No, Mattie lived right where Martha Josie now lives.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I was thinking it was a little further down. Well maybe it'sno it's..... I know it's ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: There on the Karnack Road is where we're talking about.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, uh hum, yeah. Well Rusty Howell got a....property out there just beyond them ah....it's a nice place, he's got a pretty pipe fence all the way down the road.... I thought I pointed out to you when we went down there.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You did, you did you pointed.....what ah....what was your.....what was your thoughts that day ah....what was your thoughts.....I'd like to know, did you have anyhave a chance to have a private talk with Leo Gossett? I mean here's a.....you went through you rookie's together.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah we went through.....oh yeah, we went through school together. Yeah I talked to Leo.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Any reminiscing?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh yeah, sure that's what.....that's what retirement parties are for as far as I'm concerned, is to reminisce you know. I....every officer that was over there I could of told you three or four stories about and they could of probably told you more than that about me. Ah.....yeah, Gossett and I talked quite a bit, we talked ah....of course ah.....but we had a company

meeting there at the ah....but it didn't last long.....at the DPS headquarters there in Austin..... I mean in Marshall. They'd just built the new building out there and I expect we was out there a couplea hour and a half probably and drank coffee and passed around some reports and whatever they had to do. And Charlie Moore was there and ah....and see my car went to Lubbock and ah....he and Hickman came down and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: That Hickman.....Leo?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jim Ray make it up?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, Jim was there and ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I know Billy Crawford was there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh there was about four hundred and seventy-five people there and it was a stag party, we didn't invite the wives.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I've seen the tape of that retirement party. Of course everybody said some desired, wonderful things about you. I...I personally think that one of the highlights of that had to be when your son said.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh it was, yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:when Dennis got up.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that was ah....that was very appropriate I thought ah....after it was over, I didn't have any idea what Dennis was going to say and ah.....or what anybody was going to say you know. And I was glad that he wanted to say something you know. And ah....cause Dennis knew just about as much about ah.....my career as far as....he knew Ihe knew when the phone rang that I'm gone you know, I didn't make anybody any excuses and he's seen me get out.....heard me get out of bed a many a time and heard.....probably heard me when I drug in after.....many hours

after he'd been in bed a many a time in his life, because see I was on the Highway Patrol when Dennis was born of course. And ah.....and it's..... I think I've said before....you know I couldwe wore boots and I never did whip a necktie on at night when I got called out and I always had a change of clothes in the Ranger car, but on the Highway Patrol I guess there's been plenty of times in my career that I got up and got dressed and was probably driving ninety miles an hour within two minutes, just lots of times.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Just.....curiosity, I've often thoughtmeant to ask but never thought about it with you or any of the other guys, you wear real ties or clip ons?

GLENN ELLIOTT: We wore....we started wearing clip on ties when they started making 'em, on the Highway Patrol.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I would think that would be smart, I mean a guy grab a hold of you he couldn't use it as a choker.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, no I never did like..... I wore clip on ties some when I was a Ranger, but ah....ah.... I don't know, after I got in the Rangers and started wearing a business suit and you couldn't get a very good looking tie, a clip on tie or wearing a Ranger suit or whatever. And I wore a black tie most of the time when I was a Ranger, but ah.... I started tying 'em..... of course we....you know, we didn't have as much problem.....we wasn't dealing with as many people asas a....as a Ranger as we were as Highway Patrolmen, because we're out there every day and dealing..... and that's all we're doing is stopping and dealing with people. And as a Ranger you generally know who you're going after and you know, you know, whatwhat they're charged with and ah....and we never.... I never did try to work traffic. After I got to be a Ranger the captain said, 'We don't want youyou know if you see a drunk driver out there, call the Highway Patrol you know, and if you got time get him off the road, but we don't need you in justice court you

know, because you got too many other things to do'. So ah...we wasn't dealing with the people...as many people as we were as Highway Patrol. So I quite.... I got off the clip on ties after I got on the Ranger service.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Glenn the big question. You didn't....you retired before you had to.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Why did you retire?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well you know Bobby, I've thought about it and Iand I thought a whole lot about it since....since we've been doing this, cause you've asked me several times. And I've come to the conclusion that ah....it was a combination of things ah....changes that ah.... I I realize that I guess when I tried to get the Marshall's job back there, Iobviously I was feeling a little burn out then, not much but a little. Cause I I loved the Rangers so much and I knew that I had an opportunity to ah....to make some good money. And I wasn't that unhappy because you know, I don't remember when that was, I intended to get a letter out and find out exactly .

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think it was '80 or '81, somewhere in there.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, it was probably in '80. And ah....see I worked seven more years and ah....but I I I feel like that I must of been kind of getting a little burnt out. Because ah....soon after that I know that there was some people tried to talk to me about going to work for them that had an oil company. And I considered that pretty strong. But this Kentucky Fried Chicken thing was ah....in my craw pretty good and I just felt confident that ah.... I could.....we could bring that thing to a head you know, and I kind of felt an obligation to do that. And I think I probably stayed on a year longer than I would of worked ah....on account of that. Ah.... I was.....mymythat....now there's two things that I've mentioned already.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's.....on the Fried Chicken did.....do you feel that.....that you did everything you could, the reason it wasn't brought to a head wasn't the Rangers fault?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, no....and I think I've told you this Bobby, I never have been completely satisfied with my ah.....with what I do. I always think I could do something else, Iand I thinkwith a..... I think that's a good att....it's a good attitude for me now, I don't know whether it's a good attitude for everybody to have. I don't like to stop. In fact I want to tell you about this Kentucky Fried Chicken thing, when we got the fingernail ah..... I know the police chief and I know Stuart at that time thought we ought to get a warrant. Well my comment was, and I I made it and this isand you know I've talked about Ferguson being kind of lazy andand not the best District Attorney I ever worked with, but in his defense I made the statement, I said, 'Well you know if we got this we can get something else', you know. And we did get something else. Not enough obviously but ah....we....we....we made some progress after that, but I thought surely when they told us that you know, that well heck ah....we got our foot in the door now and we know where....we're going in the right direction and let's get out here and do it you know. And.....no, I've never.....I've never been satisfied with ah....and I've made some good cases and....and....but I tell you one thing, I've never been in the courtroom yet testifying in any criminal case anywhere that I didn't wish that I'd done something else. Cause a defense lawyer will just naturally bring that out in you. And for that reason ah... I don't guess I'd ever.... I I just..... I think, let's do a little bit more you know. And these officers I worked with will tell you, that you know, I'll drive 'em to thein the ground andand ah.....and I think that's where we need to go, you know, let's get it all and don't leave anything out. So those things on my mind and then ah....my dadI'd already lost my mother and ah.....and Ithat was a pretty tough deal cause you know, it's just.....a guy just don't like to lose his mama. And of course it was a whole lot easier for me to bury her than it was

to put her in a rest home and I had to put her in a rest room, she livedshe stayed in a rest home about six months before.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Here in Longview?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Same one my dad's in up there. So I'd been going to that rest home you know for....well ever since 1984 I guess.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Eleven, twelve years now.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. And I was there this morning, five-thirty. But ah....my dad then was ah....his health broke andand I saw the need to behe needed me, he needed me bad and I needed him you know. I thought a lot of my parents like everybody does, they....they did me good when I was a kid, I see the sacrifices they made for me. And ah.....so I I saw the need to spend more time with my dad. Cause lots of times I'd....maybe I'd get ready to go back and get his breakfast and I'd get a call, or I was over at Marshall that morning you know at thewhen this Highway Patrolman and all this, well my dad was looking for me there at the rest home you know, cause I was there every morning at six thirty then. And ah....and....so he...he was still able to get out and get around some and ah....I'm sure that, that influenced me some. And then I got to looking and you know, I mean we talk about Juaine when he quite some of these other guys.....I was working for two cents on the dollars. And ah....ah.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Ronnie influenced you some to didn't it?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh no, Ronnie didn't influence me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I meant that you had already told him

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well II knew Ronnie wanted to come down here to Longview and ah....and I knew he had a young daughter that was in school and ah.... I felt like she'd get a better education down here and enjoy it more and ah....but he didn't influence me any. I liked Ronnie and

I still like Ronnie ah....and ah..... I knew he wanted to come, but ah.... I don't think that was a factor.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what aboutyou know, the way things changed, I mean obviously from 1961 when you become a Ranger to 1987 when you retired, you had to see massive changes. I mean we've talked about the old merry-go-round. I mean they'd of hung you by your ying yang in '87 on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, oh yeah, uh hum. Well there was a bunch of changes. And I I could of I leaned to adapt to changes, I didn't like 'em all. What I didn't like so much, we were constantly having to spend more time writing reports that actually were meaningless. Ah....just like keeping a record on all those tim.....all your time off and overtime and all that stuff. It's not only the fact that you can't work, you got to spend a lot of time recording why you can't work and then if you did work and you got to keep a file and ah....and then they came along with updating the cases and it was taking extra time off from getting out here and solving cases. And....and ah.... and the paperwork was just ah....oh it was....it was building up. But it's probably where.... I know it's got to be worse now you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well a good example, one of the things you brought in tonight that we're going to use in the book, when you killed Mathis.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I mean your report was one very brief, short paragraph.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I can imagine today you'd have to write volumes.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well I wrote a letter to ah....to the Colonel after that, but it was justit was pretty much the same thing. And then I I actually ah.... I wanted.... I did that to

compliment ah.....this Task Force that was helping us on our surveillance and ah.... I always enjoyed working with people. I don't care, I work close with every law enforcement agency that would let me. And the FBI included and they....the FBI is not exactly done me exactly right all the way through my career. But I didn't let that interfere with my work because I know that if I can use the FBI to help me solve a crime, then it's helping the citizens of the State of Texas regardless of whether I like the FBI or not. I had a lot of friends in the FBI, don't get me wrong. But ah.... I wanted to utilize every agency and ever source that I could get because that's what Ithat's what ya'll are paying me for see. And I I would still work that away. I.... I don't getyou can get.... I might not like a Sheriff, but he's not going to know it you know, and I'm going to try to make him like me. And generally as a rule they will you know, if you just try hard enough . I....I've had some Sheriff's that I didn't feel all that comfortable around, but I knew I needed his jail, I knew I needed his help and.....and.....and if he needed mine especially. And then a lot of these cases like this last case ah....the murder, kidnapping and murder out of Marion County, well he spent....he was living in Harrison County and two of the other defendants was living in Harrison County. And they tried to buy some tires in Harrison County with his courtesy card, so I've got to work in Harrison County and....and I need to.... I need the help of the Sheriff. Got to have an office, got to have some place to set down and talk to these guys and take a statement from 'em. And so if I'm ah....I've got to get along with those officers over and want to.

ROBERT NIEMAN: With regularity, how long after you retired were you still appearing in courts and

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I guess ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN:with regularity, I mean I know there was times....you still....

GLENN ELLIOTT:well now it was ah....I guess ah....probably three years. Ah....the first three years I retired I was still going to court pretty good and then it kind of let up. And then let's see, December a year ago I had to go to Federal Court in Sherman and then of course I made two trips over to Henderson to the Grand Jury.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Kentucky Fried Chicken?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Uh hum. And I've testified ah....in court several times ah....about character....people's character that I had handled and they got in trouble again since I retired and the District Attorney would call me and ask me if I would come and testify that his character was bad, and I'd do that, and still would you know. I mean that's ah...I...I've....that part of it is....I'm willing to help anybody that I can and still today you know. And ah...and ah....but Iwe're talking about why I quit, so that's about all of the reasons, truthfully, because G.W. had already retired and ah....so you know, he and I got along pretty good, but he was touchy and....and the only time he bothered me really was when I went to company headquarters, but it didn't bother me then all that much. But....and he tried to get along, I mean he really did want to get along, but he just kind of didn't....his heart didn't know how.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well then you worked ah....well let me ask you first, do you remember your thoughts, what was it like that first morning to get up and not pin the badge on or strap the gun on?

GLENN ELLIOTT: It ah....I have not had one bad day. I knew if I wanted to go into law en.....back into law enforcement, I could go into law enforcement any time I wanted to. I...there's people here in Gregg County that had offered to put up any amount of money I needed to run for Sheriff of Gregg County, if I wanted to be Sheriff. They'd come to my house and talk to me about it. I could of gone to work ah....for several different people if I wanted to. And I could establish to

me a business of my own as an investigator if I wanted to. But I was just....I don't know, I still do a little work you know for folks, but ah....did some today.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But to get up and not be a Texas Ranger.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Didn't bother me a bit, did not bother me one bit. And I enjoyed every day I worked. I....but this is the kind of guy I am, when Iif I get through with somebody, you know somebody.... and this don't happen very often, but if it comes time that you know, I said, 'Well you know Bobby me and you we're not friends anymore'. Well buddy, that's it you know. I don't know what happened, something has got to happen you know, but I mean that's the way I am. I....when it comes time for decision making, I make my decision and I live with it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what have you done since you retired?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I have had probably the most enjoyment that I've ever had in my life.

ROBERT NIEMAN: You thoroughly enjoyed your retirement?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I have. I carry....I started carrying my dad up to Windom to the old farm where I was raised and.... and ah....we talked ah....he watched the progress that I was making ah....he didn't go every time I went because he got to where he couldn't. But most of the time when I was going to be up there a day or two for instance, well maybe my brother would bring him up there that...for one day. And he would....we'd ride him around and show him what I was doing you know. And ah...of course I've got to have something to do, but see then I...I got to go....I'd go over there and get his breakfast every morning, maybe had....my brother was generally there at lunch, I'd go back in the evening and see that he got his supper. Ah...I'd pick him up on the pretty days and either bring him up to my house or down to his house and of course we had to keep his place up and I'd be working out in yard raking or mowing or trimming or painting or whatever needed to

be done and he'd be sitting there and watching me and talking to me you know. And ah....I got to spend five good years....four, with my daddy and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: You didn't have anything left to say, you've said it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well it probab....you and D.L., your brother, ya'll weren't that close until your later years.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, that's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Had you gotten close before your dad died?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN: That must of made your dad feel real good.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well see, daddy didn't never know that we wasn't that close, really.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet he did.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I ah....I wasn't....I never did....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I bet your mama knew.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well my mother would tell you....and she....I've heard her tell folks ah....don't mess with Glenn you know too much.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah but like when you came in that time when you was a kid, from Washington, and started easing up those stairs, she didn't say D.L.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, that's right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Mama's know.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....yeah but ah....my brother and I, when he quit drinking that's when we started getting closer together and that was in the early '60's. And ah....I got him a job, I got him every job he ever had down here you know. And ah...and he stayed with this one you know,

out at Axelson. And ah...ah...and we started....we began to get close as soon as he quit drinking and started acting right well shoot man, I tell you what, we just....and he knew you know I...I helped him quit drinking. And even when he twisted off....first time he twisted off, I guess he went four or five years and....and then he got drunk one weekend and ah....and I found him out in a motel and ah....and of course we....we had a good talk you know and....and he...and he went on home and ah....and pulled up. But ah....that's all it took for us you know. It's just hard to get along with a guy that's ah...intoxicated all the time you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did you have much...well I guess it would be trouble, did you have much trouble with people still trying to call you and go around Ronnie?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. And I told Ronnie this, that's the last thing I told Ronny Griffith. Ah...I guess maybe a week or month after I retired, whatever it was, well they was still having company meetings in Dallas pretty regular then and ah....well Ronnie ah...would always ask me to go to Dallas with him to company meetings and I would go if I could. And I think the first time I went just he and I were going up together and I told him and I said, 'Now Ronnie', I said, 'I want to tell you something, old so and so called me last night', well I' and I told him you know who the Ranger was here you know'. And I said, 'You're going....', I said..... I think the very words I said to Ronnie, I said, 'Ronnie I spoiled a lot of these people around here, because when they'd call I'd go', and I said, 'And I didn't have to and I could of put it on the local officers where it needed to be', but I said, 'I...that's just the way I am'. And I said, 'Now you're....', but I said, 'You're the Ranger now and you ah....you're going to hear Glenn Elliott did it this way', well I said, 'All you got to do is tell 'em well Glenn Elliott is not the Ranger any more'. And I said, 'You're not going to hurt my feelings', I said, 'It'll probably get back to me', but I said, 'That's the best answer that you can give 'em and then they'll get off of your case and start trying to call you'. Well I got called

ah....oh about three weeks ago, I got a call from a former County Commissioner in Harrison County and ah....he had a problem and ah....he told me what it was and he said he had ah....he had bought a child's part of a farm that belonged to some black.....a bunch of black folks. One of the kids wanted to sell his part and it's never been divided. And he sold it and got a Quit Claim deed to 1/5 of 300 acres of land you know. And ah....well he found out they was cutting timber on it and one of the kids was selling the timber. And we're talking about a lot of timber you know and timber is bringing good money now and he'd already gone out there and they'd already paid this ah....party \$40,000.00. But he got a timber expert and ah....and a camera.....a video camera, which he did..... I suggested....asked him if he'd done this, recorded it, and he said he had but he hadn't done it, he hadn't found out where they was selling it. And ah....so he went and talked to these folks and didn't get much help, so he washe thought that it was theft from him you know. And I said, 'Well you better go to the District Attorney in Marshall and find out if it's theft first'. But I gave him Ronnie's number and I said, 'You can call Ronnie', but I said, 'You should call the Sheriff'. Well he don't like Green and ah....the Sheriff and I'm not going to call the Sheriff. And I said, 'Well you know D.T.', I said, 'I'm doing some work for the public', but I said, 'I don't think you can afford me and what I charge'. And I said, 'I'm not going to charge....I'm not going to go down on my price for you', and I said....but I said, 'You could do what I'd do', I said, 'You can find out where they're selling the lumber by following one of those trucks'. And I said, 'You got that much interest in it well at least you better be preparing for a civil suit'. I said, 'You can sue those people. If you own 1/5 of it and one of the other heirs give permission to cut well his part of it is all he can give 'em permission to do and they know it'. And I said, 'They've....I'm sure they've check the deed of records on the place, if they hadn't they should have'. And I said, 'You got....', but anyway he.....you know he called and he never did call Ronnie. He went on to see the District Attorney and

I'm sure the DA told him what to do or....or whether he had a case or not. He may have wound up and just told him you got a civil problem, go hire you a lawyer and sue 'em you know, is probably what he told him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, I'm not talking about necessarily your most satisfying or your favorite or your worse, or anything like that, but you worked a lot of high profile cases ah.....you were involved in, like Billy Sol Estes ah.....Kentucky Fried Chicken ah.....the serial killer, I can't think of his name off hand.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Lucas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lucas and Riggley ah.....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah.

ROBERT NIEMAN:which one sticks out the most of the high profile cases? And Lone Star Steel and the slant holes and the

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I tell what, I guess ah..... I tell you, did you see the news print on this ah....guys head was decapitated down there?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Uh hum, uh hum.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....they....you know, the news first report of that, they talked with one of the Sheriff's or the deputies down there and ah....and they tried....they built this up as a Mafia type killing you know and ah....it was....and that was pretty much of a challenge. The paper....the first report that came out of that thing, as I remember it, it was really splashed across I don't think I got a copy of that paper.

ROBERT NIEMAN: I think I saw in....in your scrapbook some stuff on that.

GLENN ELLIOTT: May....may.....okay maybe so, some of it inwhen we came back with him, but I don't think I had a copy of the original paper that reported it, aboutmaybe so. And ah....but anyway, they reported it as a Mafia type killing and ah....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I don't know Mafia decapitating much, a bullet in the back of the head.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well they didn't....we didn't know that he'd been shot in head until we found the head you know and that was a couple of days later, or a day later.....well the same day that I got called which would of been a day after the killing, but it was later up in the day. But anyway, that was a.....that was kind of a challenge in that ah.....the news found out that ah....thatand I guess I'd..... I don't know how I did it, I was in Louisiana and ah....called back over there trying to get a warrant. And for some reason or other somebody must of been.....when they found out that we had a warrant for this boy and you know you remember, I think I told you, and I I finally got a hold of the guy that was writing the story and asked him not to print it you know. And ah....and he didn't. And you could get people to still cooperate with you at that time, that wasthat was just about the time it started swaying though you know. Most of these reporters now, they want favors out of you but they....they won't honor you ...(side of tape ends).....they don't....if they knew they was going to get another they're going to go ahead and write it anyway now you know. But this guy didn't, he stood back and....and this case took a lot of work, it took a lot of work. And ah....in two different.....three different states and ah....and it was ah....and the conclusion was good and it was lucky you know. We.....we found out things.....actually it was four different states, it was Louisiana, Texas, Arizona andand ah....and Nevada. And ah.....it was the kind of case that things come together like you want 'em to. But still itthere was a lot of folks in Nevada was interested in it because ah.....this guy you know that was dead was a.....he had an occult there at Sparks College in ah.....in Reno and he was bad and ah....they....they'd been trying to

get him out there and it made a lot of news out there. And then he was down in Arizona you know and he.....and they ran him out of there and didn't get any help out of ah....Nevada trying to apprehend him you know or find out who he was actually, they....they just didn't go at it right or something. And ah.....that was a pretty high profile case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well the high profile cases like this, one like the Kentucky Fried Chicken or the Billy Sol Estes or whatever, how much more difficult are they to work than the I hate to use the word run of the mill, but the non high profile.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, well the only difference is that ah....you've got to deal with the news media more often in a high profile, which takes time. And ah.....and....and a little bit of diplomacy, a right smart of diplomacy really it takes, you don't always get it. But that's the only difference. You know, they'll detain you a little bit and slow you down and.....and ah....they never....it didn't never bother me any other way you know, cause ah....other than that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: You don't like to have the cameras..... I didn't you know, Iof course Iyou know, I'm not camera shy, but I wasn't like Clint, I didn't force my way in front of somebody, in front of a camera. But ah.... I just as soon them stayed at home until we got finished and then let us tell them what happened you know, but they wouldn't.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What was your ah.....most..... I assume the KFC was your most frustrating case, but other than that, what....?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, every case that I had that I didn't reach a conclusion on was frustrating to me, I don't care whetheryou know ah..... I don't get any more frustrated with KFC than I did any other case I ever worked. It was justand the problem there, it's another high profile case and you got the news media breathing down your neck and wanting to know, and of course that's

what they're trainedand I mean you know, you.....you get to talking to me you think I'm anti-news, I read the paper every morning religiously. And I did all through my career. But I got a lot of good crime news out of it and ah.... I still do, I read a case right now and try to profile it you know, as I'm reading it. And maybe I if I thoughthad any idea who committed it, I'd pick up the phone and call and tell 'em you know, and get a lot of enjoyment out of it. So ah.....no, as far as ah.....high profile, you want to solve 'em all, Bobby you want to solve every case you work on and you want to solve it bad and it's just as important to solve it, even though the news people are not that interested in it, it's just as important. Of course it's good for your department, it's good for your agency to get some good publicity. Ah....because it's good for the Rangers I think you know. If every Ranger got out and worked everyday and solved a lot of cases there would be a whole lot less....they wouldn't be writing....putting Maurice Cook and...and whatever that....Ron Stuart's picture on the front page of the paper unless they'd been working a case.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well what would be your most satisfying case?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, I was real pleased to sol....to get the Phillips case solved because Jack Phillips was a good guy, he was pro law enforcement ah....he was a quiet type of a guy. But ah...he was the type of man that you could call on if you needed something in law enforcement and ah...and he'd...he'd get behind you. And she was an elderly person and of course you know, we've all got soft places in our hearts for old people. She was a good woman that ah....and we worked on that thing two years, almost two years to the day, before we solved it. And of course Jack had called and...and this was ah.....called Jim Ray and he...he told me he did later, but it was after we solved it and he apologized to me, he said....and he told me....he apologized to me twice and he apologized to me earlier. And he had called Jim...he had called the Colonel and at that time Pat Spear was still the Director I guess when that thing happened, maybe....ah....well I'm not sure.

Anyway, he called the Director...I know that he knew Pat well, cause you know Pat used to be stationed in Gladewater. And ah...he ah...he was...they referred him to Jim Ray who was Chief of criminal law enforcement and he went...he talked to Jim and told him he thought I might...that I needed some help up here on this case. And Jim told him if I needed any help I'd call Jim. And he said, 'No Glenn don't need any help, if he did he'd done been calling down here'. And then he told ah...he said, 'Well he thought maybe he might get somebody else you know, that I...that had a little more experience or something than I did'. And Jim told him he said, 'I got...you got the best hand in the State working on that case'. Well that made me feel pretty good. And of course that...that...I had...that...that ah....also gave me a little bit more incentive to ...of course I...I want....you know I wanted to solve it anyway, I wanted to solve every case I ever opened. But it was a....that was a satisfying case, cause when it started falling together....and then it really fell together. And that...that's what....that's it, the ultimate goal isis victory you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, let's talk about...we've already discussed your dad pretty well, people that's ah....had an influence, not necessarily whether you even liked them or not, but people that had an influence on you. Ah...I got to start with old Louie Tillman in the service and I just took a liking to Louie.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well old Tillman....yeah, well Tillman ah....did any have good influence on me, I promise you that much. Old Tillman ah....he liked to drink beer and he liked to have a good time, tell a joke and of course ah...I guess I enjoyed both of 'em a whole lot and I have in my time. And ah....ah....Louie was not ah...he was a good country boy, but he was just full of mischief and fun and he was the kind of guy that you really need to get...run into when your.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Foot loose and fancy free.

GLENN ELLIOTT:how many thousands of miles away from home you know were we. Ah...and...and knew....I know I spent two Christmas' away from home in the service and I was a little homesick at times, there's no question about it. See I'm already married and Diane is born and ah...Tillman ah...was ...he was just the kind of guy that would make you laugh and smile and want to ah...join in with him and have a good time you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well months and months ago when we started this, you made the statement and in your book I've used the quote, you know, 'I can honestly say...' or to that affect, I don't remember the exact quote now, but.... 'I've never known anyone I liked better than Louie Tillman'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah. Well I liked him, I sure did and ah....yeah, I liked Tillman. He ah...of course you know I ah...I guess to really....if you....to really get to know me and you'll find out, Tillman had, had a few problems, in the service even. And ah....and we had another guy in our outfit that had some problems, we brought him between islands under arrest and ah...and...and I was the underdog. There's always had....there's been a place in my heart for underdogs. Ah...I don't know why, you know, I guess that's the reason I could get along with these old convicts so well. You know they'd tell me things, I'm not lying to you Bobby, I've had people tell me things that sent 'em to the penitentiary you know, and they just do it and just keep on doing it. And...and I know that I had a way with the underdog, because ah....I'd look back and even in high school, well I didn't always associate with the preacher's son you know and go places with him, I was liable to go with the boot legger's boy you know, whoever. And ah...but ah...I know that I've....I've picked the underdogs out a whole lot in my life and ah...I'm not saying that old Louie was a...exactly an underdog, but he wasn't....he didn't teach any Sunday School classes when we was over there in the islands.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about Lloyd Webb?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I tell you what, I think I told you....if I didn't I want to ah....if I was successful at all in law enforcement I'm going to give Webb credit for it. Because he was my first partner ah....he had 12 1/2 years experience with the Highway Patrol when I went to work for him....with him and I say for him because ah....I did everything he told me to do. And ah....Webb was firm, very firm, but he was courteous and ah...he ah....he didn't pick any....pull any punches, he'd....if you was wrong ah...he'd tell you what you did wrong and ah...tell you what he was going to do. And he'd go ahead and do it and I'd help him you know. And ah....he was....he was lots of fun ah....I never will forget the first social we went....we were invited to and we got invited to a lot of socials because we was the only Highway Patrolmen here and these people would ask us to come by their lake house and eat fish with 'em late in the evening or come by the office party or maybe they'd be having a function somewhere where we stopped to drink coffee and they'd always want us to be a part of it and eat with 'em or whatever. And I never will forget one of the first functions that I went to with Webb, well he told somebody I could play the piano. 'Oh he's a piano player'. I think they was looking for somebody to play the piano you know. Well of course that....and I always had a little foolishness in my....you know and I paid him back a bunch of times. I don't know whether Ihe and I ah....we got along good but we would nip at each other. He was always talking about me....you've been to Windom, Texas and ah....he'd laugh you know, when somebody would ask me where I was from and I'd say Windom, Texas you know and he'd....old Webb would always make some kind of remark about it you know. And of course he was from Houston, he was raised in Houston. And so we were down at Palestine, Texas one time working the Dogwood Trails, we used to always go to Palestine, Texas about three weekends and work traffic when they had the Dogwood Trails. Of course Palestine was in the Tyler district then....Highway Patrol district. So we were down there one weekend, and just to show youhe and I had fun, you

know I like to have fun, you got to have a little fun as you work. And ah...we walked in this restaurant to eat lunch and I recognized the waitress and she didn't recognize me, but she had married a guy from Windom, Texas and he worked for the railroad and he had since been transferred to Palestine. And ah....of course she had never seen me in a Highway Patrol uniform and I guess that's probably the third time I'd ever seen her. But she was just the type of individual that you remember. And so she brought our lunch and we engaged in a little casual conversation as you do with the people that's waiting on you and ah....and I think she was asking us questions about the Dogwood Trails, first one thing and then another. And Webb was carrying on a conversation with her and it kind of quieted down for a second and I said, 'Young lady', I said, 'Will you do something for me please'. She said, 'Oh yes sir'. And I said, 'Well my partner here is a...', I said, 'He's a...raised in Houston', and I said, 'Hadn't been around very much'. I said, 'Will you tell him where Windom, Texas is located'. And she said, 'Yes, it's five miles east of Honeygrove and twelve miles west of....I mean twelve east of Bonham and five miles west of Honeygrove and the population is.....', and I didn't say anything else. Didn't say anything, old Webb didn't either you know. We got in the car and he said, 'Who was she'. And I said, 'I'd never seen that woman before in my life'. But ah....anyway, we had fun like that and Webb was the kind of guy that ah....that he liked to have fun and....and we'd do things like that to each other. But we never had....we never played pranks, I never was....I never thought a police officer ought to play pranks on anybody. But ah....but we'd have a lot of fun with each other, joshing each other. But he was just a....he was lots of help to me and he was a good domino player and I liked to play dominos. He and I played dominos on our days off a whole lot, we'd go fishing together and this was something that they don't even recommend ah....in patrol school, that you spend a whole lot of time with your partner on your time off. Because you're spending....we was spending six days a

week, twelve, fourteen hours a day together for 5 1/2 years. Webb and I enjoyed each other ah....on our days off and like I say, we'd go fishing together. I know the first time he carried....we went fishing. It was the funniest thing you....I bought....there was a guy leaving here going to Korea and ah....going into service when we was having the Korean conflict and I hadn't started fishing then. I...I never had....I never owned a rod and reel and ah....until I moved to Longview, Texas. And this guy was going to the service and he had a tackle box and a rod and reel and he wanted ten dollars for both of them. And I had ten extra dollars so I bought it and I knew Webb liked to fish and he'd been after me, let's go fishing. So we ah....we patrolled up to Hawkins one day and our radio....and it was when...when ah....the Gladewater unit....they had a unit in Gladewater then and they were off, so it must of been on Wednesday, I think they took off Wednesday and we took off Thursday. So we patrolled....I think we got called up to an accident up there between Hawkins and Big Sandy. And we got up there and we carried our fishing gear in the trunk and ah....so he said, 'Let's ride on up here to Lake Hawkins', there was an old boy, a retired Dallas policeman was running it and ah.... 'and cast a few times'. Well we pulled our patrol car back in there and saw him and parked it there where we could hear the radio, got out with our uniforms on and ah....and I got this ah....I got my rod and reel and the first two or three casts I was back lashing and I caught a fish. I caught more fish than he did and ah....this was funny of course you know, and he...and we just had the best time laughing about it you know, as you ever saw. And then we got....after I got to where I could fish pretty good we got to going to Caddo and he liked to fish Caddo Lake.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well when you're....when he moved on and you had a new partner ah...was there any difficulties?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, no, I never did have....ah....Kenneth Walker was my next partner and Webb made sergeant and had to move to San Angelo. He didn't actually move, his family

stayed here and he made....he knew that he was going to....that was probably in ah....'60....ah....'54 or '55 and ah.... he knew that he was going to get to come back to Longview in '57 when they reorganized anyway, if he didn't get to come back sooner, or come back to the Tyler district. So he went ahead and accepted the promotion, which I'm glad he did and I know he was glad he did too, because ah....see Webb was getting up there pretty good. And I got a....I got a boy fresh out of the Highway Patrol school named Walker and Kenneth's a good boy, he was the poorest driver, that was my only problem with Kenneth, he just didn't know how to drive a car. He didn't have any driving experience, he knew how to drive, but he just didn't have enough driving experience. And ah....he had never owned a car and ah....up until just a short time and he was going to school at Stephen F. Austin and working for the Fire Department and he lived about two blocks from the Fire Department. And ah....he walked to work and ah....I think the only time he ever drove a fire truck he had a wreck in it. But Kenneth just....he was a good guy, good officer, he lacked a littlehaving enough driving experience, but he got it pretty quick.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still living?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, he was....he left the department he ah....he and I worked together about 2 1/2 years and then they opened a station in Daingerfield and moved him up to Daingerfield and gave him a new patrolman, a rookie, and then I got Slick Alford, came here to work with me in '57....'55....no, yeahabout '56 I guess. And ah....Slick was the good driver, he had, had a lot of driving experience, he'd owned a car all his adult life and he'd been in the service and he was stationed in Caribou, Maine and he was driving back and forth from there to Tyler and....and ah....and ah....I've never....my partners, we never had any problems and both....that's the only two I ever broke in was ah....Walker and ah....and Alford.

ROBERT NIEMAN: What....what about your first Highway Patrol Captain?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Guy Smith was the first Highway Patrol Captain and ah....I guess there was a finer man that's never lived than Guy Smith. I know ah....I was instructed to report to Tyler and did ah....and I was going to have to be over there for two weeks. So we moved our stuff down here and ah....and then ah....Katherine and Diane decided to go back and stay in Windom until I got my duty over at Tyler. And ah....so I reported to Tyler.....my partner was taking a vacation, he was....he had twohe always liked to take off the first two weeks in June because he had kids in school and he had relatives out in Arizona and ah....he liked to go out there, his grandfather lived out in Arizona, they was close. So I was ah....I reported to Tyler and ah....I got....I rode a bus over there and ah...Guy SmithI had instructions to call him and it was on a Sunday evening, call him at home and he came by and picked me up. And the Highway Patrol headquarters ah....did we go....we probably....I don't know, we been through this?

ROBERT NIEMAN: Yeah.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, there ain't no use....

ROBERT NIEMAN: I just wanted to know what kind of influence he had....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh he had a lot of influence on me, he had a lot of influence on me. Guy Smith was a....he was a leader, he wasn't a pusher and he...Guy Smith ah....ah...encouraged me after he found....I took a test one time to be sergeant and I never mentioned the fact to him that I was interested in being a sergeant. And it was before my....it was when my partner took it and ah....Lloyd Webb. And ah...I decided, well I'll take it too you know and ah....knowing that I wasn't going to make it, but I thought well that'll give me a little experience you know. And so after Webb made sergeant well he came to me and he said 'Well Glenn do you want to be a patrol sergeant', and I said, 'Well you know, I don't want to be a Highway Patrolman all my life. I'm enjoying right now'. And he said, 'Well I'm glad to hear that you know', he said, 'You need to let us know'. And

I said, 'Well I took the test'. But anyway, you know, Guy Smith just as same told me you know, 'If you want to be a Highway Patrol Sergeant well some day you'll be one'.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah...Jim Ray?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well Jim has of course always been....you was talking about Louie being one of my favorites ah...he's not, he couldn't hold a candle to Jim, because ah....Jim Ray was a....when I came on the Highway Patrol, Jim was stationed in Athens on patrol. Jim was a good looking man, a distinguished looking man, he looked his part in a uniform. Cause Jim served time in the Army, Jim was educated, college degree ah...he thought out everything he did, he wasn't a ball of fire but he was always there. And ah...Jim ah...even before he knew it, he was...he was influencing me, because I knew....I liked the way Jim looked, I liked the way he worked, he was neat you know, he made good reports and ah...and he got along great with the officers where he was stationed. And all through Jim's career ah....Jim had a leave of absence during the Korean conflict and he ah....went back into the service. He was a...in the reserve, he was an officer and they called him back in the....when was that '54 or somewhere?

ROBERT NIEMAN: '50 to '54.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, somewhere in '50....I think about '53, '52 or '53 somewhere in there he went back in the service for a couple of years. And I hated to see him go. And he came back and visited before he reinstated, I saw him ah....he came...he was over there to one of our meetings and just drove by, he was just getting back. I don't remember whether he went back over to Korea, I think he must have, might have gone overseas. And ah....see Jim was a Provost Marshall during World War II and a pretty tough one. And ah....so anyway, I got to visit with him and he reinstated and then when he went on the Rangers....well when they assigned me to work that '57 strike up there well ah....of course Jim kind of took....and I...we...we...you know, I think I told you about the

pipe bomb and we....we arrested these...this guy and then we....they assigned Jim and I to talk to this one and he told....and you know we....Jim and I had some....we just had some good....good goals together. And....and his reports, I think I told you, this one time I got ah....I liked the best the ones that I saw in Dallas when I went in the Rangers. I looked at everybody's reports....and Bob Badgett made a good report, but I liked Jim's better than I did anybody. And I didn't want copying after Jim and I had some commendations on my reports, I have to tell you that, I did and I have to give Jim Ray credit for it because ah....it was his reports. Yeah Jim's....Jim's high you know, with me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jay Banks?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Jay Banks is high with me, I'll just have to tell you that right now. You know Jay is bitter and I read his books and I don't approve of that, but I like Jay Banks, he was a....he was kind of....he liked the limelight a little bit. But I tell you one thing ah....he'd...he'd....he was there when the lights wasn't on too you know. I mean, Jay was a....he was a hard nosed officer and tough. And I liked....and he offered me a job you know and if he'd of stayed on as captain up here I'd of got to work about eighteen months before I did in the Ranger service. And probably been stationed in Paris, Texas. And ah....which didn't....wouldn't of made any difference to me, I made a better hand down here because there's more going on and I knew....I already knew this area better. But ah...Jay was a....Jay Banks was high with me, I just have to tell you that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lone Wolfe Gonzauillas?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course, you know, I didn't ever get to work with Captain Gonzauillas.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But the reputation the man had.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well I....his reputation.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Did it...I mean, did it leave you something, you know, hey this is something that we have to live up to?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well no, I never ah...ah....you....I never did....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Or set the standard we need to follow?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well now I liked the standard, as far as that goes. The standard I like about Gonzauillas was ah....number one, he had respect, and you got to have respect if you make a hand. You've got to have respect, if you're not respected you can't do anything I don't guess. But I tell you about Gonzauillas, hehe implemented the first big change in reports. Well you know I'm not all that good....bad on wanting to fax all my reports andand you know....lap.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lap top computers?

GLENN ELLIOTT:computers and....but I always thought that you should make a....write enough down in your report that at least you could walk in the courtroom and give it to the District Attorney and make a good witness you know. And Gonzauillas did that, he...he got that started. And....and...and of course some of the things that Gonzauillas did made my job easier and you know I'll....I'll have to acknowledge that too you know. But I liked him, cause I've been with him on many occasions but I...I was glad to hear that Rigler, when I was listening to the tape that you made with your interview with Rigler, see Gonzauillas had never mentioned a bunch of his cases to me and he never mentioned 'em to Rigler you know. I thought maybe that I was left out for some reason or other. But he was just not the boastful type of individual.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well I remember one of my favorite stories about him, I asked Rigler, I don't know whether it's on the interview or not, I asked him ah....I said ah.... 'What would ah....about people, Gonzauillas and about people'. And he said, 'Oh yeah, he'd talk about these people'. And I said, 'What about the people he didn't like'. And he said, 'Well he just wouldn't

talk about 'em'. Well you know I got another project, Bob Goss and I said, 'What did he say about Bob Goss'. He said, 'He never talks about him'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well ah....you know Gonzauillas ah....I enjoyed being around him, he was always super nice to me, he was a gentleman, his wife was a lady. They ah....he was sober, he was not loud, he was not braggative, he was just the same every time you saw him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Picture a Ranger and that's what a Ranger should look like.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah, yeah. He looked the part and he had a look out of eyes, a deep look out of his eyes. But....and he never complained, he never bragged and he was always willing to...you know, he was there for you if you needed him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Lewis Rigler?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Rigler....Rigler and I are two different individuals, completely different. Now I know ah...ah...the last few years Rigler didn't like to Gainsville, and I don't blame him because he was already beginning to build his empire up there and he didn't like to leave Gainsville and I don't blame him a bit in the world. Cause ah....but I was always ready to get out and go somewhere. But this is where....the only place we differed, we both believed that guys that was out here stealing ought to be in jail you know. And Rigler he believed that strong you know. And he's helped me, my goodness alive, I remember...you was talking about the East Texas merry-go-round, you know I think I told you one of the first major cases that I worked and I thought I needed a little helped, it was a pretty good case and ah....Rigler ah...I...this started up there in Grayson County and Woody Blanton was still Sheriff. And I went up there and we...well I had to....I arrested an old boy in Box Springs, I think I told...we've gone through that, had to chase him, got stopped by the police and like to got put in jail going up there. And got up there and we got...set down with this old boy that night and cleared his business up you know. And he told us who all was with him and Rigler was

there with me you know. And he was....you know I think I told you, he bought a used car the next day out of the newspaper, sight unseen, but that's the way Rigler was. He could....he could do three or four things at one time, and I could too. You know, I mean, I've never been one, and never will be, that will say, well I'm busy, you know I can't help you on that I'm working on something else. No, tell me what you got you know and I can...I'll....I'll....do on it what I can you know. And just like last Saturday, I told you, you know I'm on top of a house helping a guy deck a house last Saturday evening and it's freezing nearly all evening you know. And I could....and I'm going to that party Saturday night, and did you know and....and...but I can do two or three things the same day myself and they don't have all be in the same direction and Rigler's the same way. And we're....we're a whole lot alike in that way and we expect a whole lot out of a lot of folks too. I expect a guy to carry his load and so does Rigler. I got a letter from Rigler this week.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Oh you did?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I couldn't hardly read it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Is he still (unintelligible)....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah he's ah....well I had sent them a Christmas card and Joyce had been to Nashville, Tennessee but he couldn't go because he's on two or three boards up there. And of course you know I know that bank board probably pays him four, five hundred dollars every meeting, maybe a thousand, depends on what size bank they got and Rigler loves to make that money. And ah...and he don't like to get out of Gainsville. And he's complaining because Dallas and Fort Worth is growing too close to Gainsville, getting too big. But he's still reminiscing, he mentioned four or five of the old Rangers names in his letter and I was glad to hear from him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....

GLENN ELLIOTT: He's my friend, I...I...I probably wouldn't of been a Ranger if it hadn't...I know I wouldn't have been a Ranger if Rigler....and he was very instrumental inand he and Jim Ray and Red, in helping me.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Jim Riddle?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course Jim Riddle was my favorite of ah....all the Rangers. I mean I loved Jim Ray, but ah....you know, you're talking about a guy that you've known all your life just about it you know.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well he's more than just a fellow law officer to you.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, right.

ROBERT NIEMAN: He was your coach, your teacher.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Former school teacher and neighbor and you know....and he and my dad ah...I tell you, Jim Riddle was living with his mother and daddy and driving a '37 Ford car that was wore out and he was buying....the school was poor, we had a good baseball team but we didn't have any money. And Jim was buying the bats and the baseballs out of his own pocket most of the time I'm sure, because they'd take up a little collection, my dad would always...he always wore a snap brim hat and he....we'd have a pretty good crowd....the baseball team, and daddy would grab that hat and...and...and start hitting bleachers you know trying to get a little money to keep the baseball team there in the high school going. And Jim whipped my butt several times and I needed it every time and ah....and he and I worked some cases together. We worked an old boy...old James Hugh Leggett that ah...well as a matter of fact Clint took credit for everything in his credit and I doubt if Clint ever saw James Hugh Leggett. Ah....but he was captain of Company F at the time and we cleared up a lot of burglaries. I had a warrant...I'd already worked Leggett and ah....when they caught him down at Austin. And ah...Jim didn't even know that he had any business up here

and that's....Jim said I was the first officer he asked about, he said, 'I want to talk to Glenn Elliott, I'm going to straighten my business out, but I want to talk to Glenn Elliott before I leave here, cause he's done put me in jail on a case in Longview that I did'. And he said, 'I got a bunch more up there'. And ah...but yeah, Jim...and you know Jim was the kind of guy like I think I told you, I was out at Monahans to court one time andand drifted back into Midland there about four forty-five one afternoon and thought I'd go....I needed some gas and we'd already started....they'd started asking us to pump our own gas then cause we was ah....it was saving us a whole lot of money and we had gas pumps all over the state. I was just running around by the Midland office to gas up and hoping I could see Jim and sure enough he was there and ah....and he was ah....he filled my car up with gas. I said....we set in there and drank coffee and he thought I was going to go home and stay all night with him. And ah... I said, 'Jim I got to get some gasoline, give me the key to the pump'. 'No come on out here'. He went out there and filled my car up with gas and was going to charge it to one of his units, wasn't even going to let me pay for it. And I said, 'Well let's let...let's let Company B get it in their budget'. But anyway, I said, 'No I'm headed to Longview, Texas I got some work to do down there tomorrow'. But ah...you know I set out there and talked to him for an hour or so I guess and walked out of there.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: How long did it take you to quit calling him coach or Mr. Riddle and go to Jim?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well, after ah....I didn't call him Jim til ah....after I went to work for the DPS. Of course I didn't get to see a whole lot of Jim for the first ah....few years, you know he was stationed in Lubbock at the time and then he made Ranger and went to Jacksborough. And ah....Jim taught a class down there in our school, in my patrol school, and ah....I got to visit with him then.

And ah....then ah...when he made sergeant and moved to Austin well I got to see him pretty regular then.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well did he ever tease you or....well I....I'm saying...use more tease for lack of vocabulary, 'Well I remember this boy I used to bust his butt'.

GLENN ELLIOTT: No, I tell you what, he didn't cause ah...ah...he never....I don't guess we ever even....we....most of the time we was talking about Ranger business or DPS business. See ah...Jim liked to work, he was a working Ranger and he loved to....he loved to see a Ranger work and I enjoyed working with him and around him.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....Bob Crowder?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course Crowder was no doubt the best Ranger captain that I ever had. Ah...Crowder was a....see I didn't know ah...ah....captain and Mrs. Crowder belonged to the same Church that we got to, Church of Christ. I didn't know what Church he belonged to and he didn't know what Church I belonged to when I went on the Ranger service. And a short time after....ah...captain's daughter and ah...son-in-law both died within a year of each other and they had to raise two of their grand kids and they were young. And they was bringing 'em down here to Hawkins to a retreat one weekend, a Church retreat, somewhere up there and ah....and captain liked to eat at Johnny Cace's. And they decided to come on to Longview and go to Church and have lunch at Johnny Cace's. And he visited our Church. And we were....and they were a little late getting there, but they had....the service....I think they had sang one song and...and ah....and Katherine and ah....and my kids were....we was sitting about midway and I think...well our daughter....I think Dennis was sitting with some of his friends. But anyway, captain and Mrs. Crowder and their two grand kids came in and they seated them about two or three isles ahead of us. Of course I had to get up and go down and shake hands with 'em and ah....that was a pretty

good bind for he and I that ah...we didn't know we had you know. And ah...but he was just good to me, he'd ah...he's ah....I think I told you once before, I had two Supervisors, Glen Warner, captain....after Guy Smith made Major, when they reorganized in '57 well Warner came to Tyler as a captain, he was sergeant in Dallas. And ah....Glen Warner and Bob Crowder both had told me on more than one occasion that I worked harder than II didn't have to work as hard as....we like...we appreciate what you're doing, but you don't have to work that hard if you don't want to. And ah...and of course I liked to work see and it did not bother me and I...I was.... I appreciated what they said but it didn'tI didn't slow down any.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....Homer Garrison?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well of course I ah...and Pat Spear was a good friend of mine, real good friend of mine and Pat Spear influenced me a whole lot. Leo Gossett was a good friend of mine, we went through patrol school together and a good guy. And Adams did a good job with DPS after he came in there. But of course Homer Garrison was the best Director the Department of Public Safety had while I worked for 'em, you know, that was what I'm trying to lead after I tell you. I just had...you know I've told you my Carl Estes story about him and ah....ah....he was just the kind of guy, when I carried my little old two paragraph letter down there in 1955 or '56, asking to transfer to the Rangers, I carried it in his office and he treated me just....just as good as he ever treated anybody that went in there I guess, you know. And ah....and I have always remembered and I'm sure all these other Directors would of done the same thing, but I felt a little out of place you know, at that time. But I've never felt out of place in his office after that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Ah....Bob Mitchell?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Bob and Max and myself probably are as close as.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well let's just do then all three, let's just this....let me re-ask that. Bob Mitchell, Red Arnold and Max Womack?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Ah....well I guess Red and I were terribly good friends. I don't think we ah....ah....and I liked to be around Red, I liked to work with him, we never did get as close, like the brother close, as I got with Mitchell andand ah....Max. I don't know whether it was the age difference or

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well Red had a drinking problem.

GLENN ELLIOTT: And Red had a problem, yeah Red had a little drinking problem. And....and ah....but his drinking problem never did interfere with mine and his friendship. Ah....ah....now the latter years.... well the Lone Star Steel thing ah....Red kind of let us down a little bit and ah...but I got to thinking, see Red had been on a right smart longer than me. Red was burnt out, he was burned down plumb out you know and that alcohol was no....I mean it didn't....wasn't helping any you know. But ah....I tell you ah....it's just three guys that ah....I enjoyed being around. But I enjoyed Max and....and I guess and ah....Bob a little bit more probably because our ages was a little bit closer together. And we were....all three of us were members of the Church of Christ ah....that's kind of strange you know. And ah....ah....of course Red was a member....Red was a Baptist and ah....and Red worshipped God and he believed in God. And ah....I'm not taking anything away from Red, I guess Red and I had already had....we had been working together a long time you know, and we got some new blood in here you know. And of course I ah....with Bob....Bob and I are closer together, we ride to Dallas together and back all the time, we had more companion cases the first year Mitchell was in Tyler than Red and I had, had probably all together and we was sharing part of Bowie County at one time. And ah....see when Red and Jim and I would get together, maybe once a month, somewhere in the district if it had to be under bowed arch tree

somewhere and you know, in the sunshine and we'd get together....but it's kind of hard to do cause ah....see ah...we didn't have that many Rangers. And ah....until Red....until Mitchell and Max came along, of course Max was after Mitchell, but not too long ah....we still had a pretty big area to cover and it's kind of hard to get together ah....unless you're working a companion case. And...and of course we did that with Red and Jim, but most of the time that kind of case would be an old burglary that I'd have that was wanting to clear up some stuff in their area or that they had was wanting to clear up some in mine. And we'd get together under those conditions, but it generally took us awhile to.....and we'd meet at a few socials around. But we was close, we was real close.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well how big affect, if any, I'm sure it had some, when Red committed suicide?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I don't think it ah....the only affect it had on me it probably....of course I'd make a poorest alcoholic in the world, I would, I truthfully would. Cause I've drank too much a time or two and ...and I couldn't function the next day nothing like I needed to and do my job, so anything that interferes with me doing my job I'm not going to do much of it. Ah....that ah...that part of it ah...I'd say affected me some you know. In other words I didn't want to grow up and be like Red you know, is what I'm trying to tell you. But you know I think I've told you, I helped old Red, we carried him to the hospital, we carried him to the Veterans Hospital and....and through all of his troubles ah....it was just a learning experience for me. Of course I'd already been through it with my brother, but it's still an experience. And ah....of course you got to have a....you got to have a real deep feeling for somebody that you've worked with as much as....and Red was ah....Red would teach....he wanted you to learn everything he knew about law enforcement. Red Arnold didn't hold back anything. He....if he thought he could teach me how to do something he'd been doing he'd do it you know and I appreciated that you know. And Red and I were close now, I mean

we...we...we were close but it just seemed like that ah....that I got just a little bit close to Max and...and...and Bob for some reason or other.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well wasn't Red and Jim Ray awful close?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Well yeah, they were because they're closer to the same age.

ROBERT NIEMAN: But you were a little more ageyou know like that age thing you were saying.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Yeah, yeah. They ah...well they was ah....what Red was about fifteen years older than me I guess, you know. And ah....ah....he never did act like that....that caused any problem. But of course here now, the three of us got....we were tight, now Red and Jim and I were double tight until these other boys came along. And for some reason or other we just kind of....Red and I we wasn't seeing each other near as much. When Max got to Atlanta andand....and Bob was in Tyler and...and ah...and Bob and I were working together a whole lot more. And of course Bob and I spent that time together up there at Daingerfield (side of tape ends).....Bob would of.....he looked like a Ranger you know andand he made a good one, he made a good Ranger. But you know I'll tell you ah.... they was trying to get somebody to make sergeant you know and ah....I show you how close Bob and I was ah.... you know Ithey had already offered me a sergeant's job a couple of times and ah.....and they sawwas pretty sure I wasn't going to take it and....and so they got after Mitchell to see if he would and Mitchell....I'm the first one he called I guess. And he....he wants me to be....he said, 'Why don't you take that job', you know and he said I said, 'Bob I just don't want it partner, you go ahead and take it', because I said, 'I'veI've turned it down a couple of times and I'm just content doing what I'm doing, I don't want to move to Waco or Midland or anywhere and I want....I'm making a Ranger Private and that's what I want to do'. So Bob went ahead and took it. But he's.....that's the kind of friend he was, I mean he....you

know he....he didn't want to take the job if he thought there was any chance that I'd....that I'd rather have it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Anybody else I haven't brought up that you'd like to mention?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh, I can't think of it right now, you know I probably.....

ROBERT NIEMAN: What about the ah....want to.... I guess my last question would be ah....what about the Texas Ranger Association Foundation, is that....

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh I'm....I'm proud of that ah....and some of my friends you know, as you well know, organized that thing. Sonny Spradlin and ah....and Steve Darney are the ones that dreamed this thing up. Ah...what they were doing, I think you know what they was doing, they was ah.....they had decided that it would be good to have a little get together down at Austin once a year andand ah....and enter....and entertain some of the retired Rangers.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Austin or Waco?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Waco I mean. And ah....and they started doing that and it's costing 'em about seven hundred....about five or seven hundred dollars a piece to do that you know. And they was.....each man was sponsoring somebody every year. And Steve and Sonny just got to thinking, well you know if we can establish a foundation then we can put this money up one time and.....and get enough of 'em to do the same thing across the state and let it be self sufficient from now on. And by George they got.....they got busy and done it.

ROBERT NIEMAN: And done it.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Along with a bunch of other friends like yourself come along. You've come along late see, if you'd of been there early well we'd of done had them thousand memberships sold you know. But ah.... I like it, I like it, I hate it because....for it to be any controversy in it and of course I guess there's controversy in everything, but there's not much in this. But ah....you get a

bunch of people together it's hard to please everybody you know. But they do a good job and we got a bunch of good business men that ah....ah.....like Ray Hargrave that you....that you've met and you've met nearly all of 'em by now. But we got a bunch of high class people in this Association and we've got a bunch of high class people on that board. And they spend a lot of their time and money keeping this thing straight, which is not an easy job. Because this is a tax free association number one and that....and that creates a problem in itself because of the IRS andand.....and the guidelines that you have stay with in order to keep your tax exempt ah....ah....status, so that's a big job. And ah....you're going to find out, you'll be on that board one of these days andand....and about twice a year they spend the biggest part of a day tending to business all day long and then whoever is President probably has to spend, oh I'd say ten to fifteen days a year of his time you know, which isthat's not much but it's a whole lot for a business man. I'm proud of it, I really am.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well, any regrets?

GLENN ELLIOTT: I just regret that I didn't ah....probably do better than what I did. That's the only.....no I.... I don't have any regrets for not taking promotions, I don't have any regrets forfor the job that I tried to do, I just wish that.... I know I made some mistakes you know, who hadn't you know. But I've learned by every one of them. And ah....ah I know this that ah..... I made 'em a hand and there can't anybody say I didn't. And that's.....that's probably back to my retirement, that's..... I had seen some Rangers that ah....in the past that didn't do anything the last two or three years they worked and I made up my mind.... I I that's something that I would never do, I wouldn't coast. I was going to work til I got ready to quit and then I was going to hang it up and that's what I did. And I'm proud I did that.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well ah.....any final words that you want.....for five or ten generations of Elliotts down the road or future Rangers?

GLENN ELLIOTT: Oh...I'd ratheryou know I'd rather say somethingthe Elliotts probably won't ever be any....not any of my immediate family probably ever go into law enforcement I don't think, of course I don't have anyall of my grandchildren are girls and of course that don't mean any of 'em won't go into law enforcement, but as I'm alive they probably won't. And ah....I'd ah.... I guess ah....the advice that I'd want to give I'd like tofor the Rangers to know and....and prospective law enforcement people, that ah....that I think that if they're not motivated to want to serve the public then find 'em another profession to go after. Cause we got too many people drag their feet now in law enforcement, you know that's what Ithat's my life, that's what I know about. You....you.....you know about the trucking industry andand what you're doing ah.....there's no place in law enforcement for feet draggers. There's plenty of them there, but there's not a place for 'em. And of course I'd feel the same way if I was hiring out to do anything, it's just the idea that ah....ah.....but in law enforcement it stands out more than it does in other jobs. It's gold brickingwe've had unions in nearly every profession and of course they....they encourage don't do this it's somebody else's job, but now they're trying to getof course the union in the....the....and got 'em in law enforcement in some areas. But ah....a guy will get out there and do his job the people will reward him for it and he'll be rewarded himself. I feel rewarded, you know, that's the way I feel. I knowthey had a little old deal for me down at Carthage and they....and you'd thought thatthat..... I don't.... the way they was talking you know Iwhen I got up I told 'em I said, 'You know ya'll been talking about me here for ten minutes', and I said, 'All I was doing is what ya'll was paying me to do', you know, and that's the way I feel about it. That's it partner.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Well we started this back in February.

GLENN ELLIOTT: Shut her down tonight.

ROBERT NIEMAN: Shut her down.

THE END